

A COURSE
OF
MANDARIN LESSONS,

BASED ON IDIOM,

BY

REV. C. W. MATEER, D.D., LL.D.



SHANGHAI:
AMERICAN PRESBYTERIAN MISSION PRESS.

1892.

MVR

PL1111
M25

TO
STUDENTS OF MANDARIN,
THIS EFFORT
TO REMOVE THE DIFFICULTIES AND OPEN THE WAY TO A MORE THOROUGH ACQUISITION
OF THE
CHINESE SPOKEN LANGUAGE
IS
RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED.

PREFACE.

IT is now twenty-five years since I began to make lessons for beginners in Mandarin. I had at that time little thought of ever printing them, or of the extent to which they would finally grow. At first I made only twenty lessons, but subsequently added a few at a time, until the number reached fifty. The plan originally adopted was substantially that which has now been wrought out to completion. These fifty lessons were copied out and used by beginners for about ten years, when, upon the arrival of a considerable number of new missionaries in Shantung, I revised the lessons already made and added others on the same plan, increasing the number to one hundred and seven. The extent to which these were copied and used, led me, about five years ago, to take up the whole work with a view to preparing it for publication. I extended and perfected the plan, added new lessons and thoroughly revised and recast the lessons already made.

The plan of the course is its distinguishing feature. Each lesson is constructed **Plan.** to illustrate one or more idioms which constitute its "subject;" the word idiom being taken in a somewhat loose and comprehensive sense. The subjects were not evolved by the application to Chinese of Western grammatical principles and ideas, but were gathered directly from the Mandarin colloquial by a careful observation of its peculiar forms and methods. They are somewhat heterogeneous, it is true, but not more so than the language they are intended to teach. The plan is believed to afford a number of important advantages, of which the following are the chief:—

1. It facilitates a thoroughly progressive arrangement by which the peculiarities of the language are set forth in a natural order, proceeding from the simpler to the more complex and difficult.

2. The student instead of groping his way through a maze of bewildering idioms, explained in a hap-hazard way in notes and vocabularies, and often falling a victim to false and hasty generalizations, has given to him in each lesson an intelligible idiom, which is fully explained in the subject, and strongly impressed by the abundant illustrations contained in the lesson. These idioms thus become to the student so many landmarks of progress, and by their acquisition he is made master of the whole structure of the language.

3. The subjects of the lessons, which embrace all the most difficult and important features of the language, being thus singled out and made prominent, are, on this account, much more carefully explained and illustrated than would be the case on a different system.

4. The fact that the lessons are composed of detached and independent sentences, gives opportunity for the introduction of a wider range of subject matter and of style and idiom than could be secured on any other plan.

5. A large number of the lessons bring to view classes of particles and of key words approximately synonymous, yet differing in use and their shades of meaning. By the study of these lessons the student will acquire a range and variety of expression not easily acquired in any other way. The prime defect of many Mandarin speakers is that having got a hold of one such word or expression, they are content to ring the changes on it alone, all oblivious to the fact that there are various other cognate forms of similar import yet differing by varying uses and shades of meaning. The result is a monotonous style, wanting both in vigor and perspicuity.

That the plan incidentally involves some disadvantages, is freely admitted. All great gains involve minor losses. The chief disadvantages are the following :—

1. The arrangement according to idioms necessitates the keeping back of certain common and useful forms of expression for an inconveniently long time. This difficulty was frequently felt in arranging the order of the lessons. It drew from my Chinese assistant the remark, that each particular lesson seemed to be clamoring to get in first. The difficulty, however, will not be felt by the learner, and the disadvantage it might otherwise be to him, has been largely obviated by admitting many such words and phrases by way of anticipation, and will be further obviated by following the method of study recommended. (See Introduction : Directions to the student.)

2. Lessons which introduce a considerable number of nearly synonymous words are liable to confuse the learner with distinctions for which he is not yet prepared, and which his memory cannot retain. This difficulty, which results from the richness of the language, may be largely obviated by a judicious method of study. While going over the whole lesson carefully, let the student *fix* in his memory one or two of the more important words for present use, not being too much disturbed that he is not able to retain the others. When subsequently they are heard in conversation or met with in books, they will seem like old acquaintances, and will in this way presently become familiar and their accurate use be acquired.

3. The sentences being disconnected, are harder to understand and more likely to be misunderstood than if they stood in connected discourse. While this is no doubt true, it is largely obviated by accurate translations and by suitable notes and explanations, and is more than compensated by the superior opportunity thus afforded for the ready introduction of every class of idiom and every style of expression.

The prevalent style is colloquial, because the object of the book is to teach **Style.** the spoken language as distinguished from the language of books ; nevertheless there will be found, especially in the latter half, a considerable mixture of high

Mandarin and of expressions taken from books. I shall probably be criticised for introducing too much colloquial and too many localisms. To this criticism I would reply, that there is much misconception as to the extent to which many of these so called localisms prevail. It does not follow that every expression not commonly seen in Mandarin books, is necessarily local. I have found by investigation that many such expressions are practically general. Moreover, a useful expression that prevails throughout two or three provinces and has an authorized writing, is not to be rejected as local. A man may not himself desire to use all these colloquial forms, yet it is very important to understand them when used by others, as they constantly are by the Chinese. The chief advantage which the Chinaman has in conversation over the average foreigner, is his ability to use and to understand these colloquialisms. It must not be supposed, however, that every sort of colloquialism known to the author or his assistants, has been introduced. Care has been taken to exclude purely local expressions, especially such as have no authorized writing, as also to exclude, to a considerable extent, that useless colloquial verbiage which characterizes all dialects to a greater or less degree, and which is unnecessary and undesirable in one who would use the Chinese to its best advantage.* As far as possible local peculiarities are noted as such and are not repeated.

A more important argument for the use of colloquial is, that general Mandarin, as it is called, is too narrow in its range to answer all the ends of speech, and has constantly to be reinforced both from colloquial and from *Wên-li*. If the speaker of it attempts to go beyond the narrow range of thought which it covers, he will find himself at a loss for words, and will be compelled to resort to round-about forms and labored explanations, in striking contrast with the straightforward and expressive language of him who commands the abundant resources of the colloquial. He may indeed call in the assistance of the *Wên-li*, if his attainments are adequate, but it will be at the expense of speaking in a pedantic and pretentious style unintelligible to the great majority.

Another point worthy of attention, especially on the part of those who desire to persuade and impress others in public address, is that labored phraseology and paraphrastic expressions are fatal to oratory, which requires not only weighty and impressive thoughts, but also vivid and expressive language which fulfils its office as the arrow flies to the mark.

On the other hand it is not unlikely that I shall be criticised for having introduced too much book language. With reference to this criticism, I would say that very few learn Mandarin who do not at the same time wish to know something of the book style. Moreover, the line of demarcation between Mandarin and *Wên-li*, is but vaguely defined. They pass into each other by insensible gradations. It will be found also that the book language of these lessons consists almost entirely of those ready-made and pithy book ex-

* By useless verbiage I mean the ever-recurring and superfluous use of such words as 了, 着, 的, 個, 嗎, 呢, 來, 去, etc.

pressions, with which good Mandarin speakers and writers enrich and adorn their style, and which frequent use has made generally intelligible. With these expressions every one who aims to be a good Mandarin speaker, should be familiar.

The Chinese sentences which constitute the lessons have been gathered **Materials.** from all quarters. After the subjects were made out and arranged, Mandarin literature was searched for suitable illustrations, and what were found were copied under their appropriate lessons. All extant Mandarin literature was considered a legitimate field from which to gather. Much more might have been gathered from Chinese novels but for the difficulty of finding in them any full sentence fairly representing the language of common life. The result of this search was that under most lessons, much more material was gathered than was required, thus giving a choice of the best. Many sentences also were specially constructed by a number of different teachers, particularly in the case of lessons embracing colloquial idioms not often found in books.

The sentences have been chosen not only so as to illustrate the various idioms of the lessons, but pains was also taken to have them embrace as wide a range as possible of words and ideas. In them will be found the language of domestic, social, literary and official life; of art, science, commerce, business, history and religion. It should be remarked however, that there was no intention to *teach* history, science, religion or morals, but simply to exhibit and illustrate the Chinese language. That they do in fact contain much useful information about China and the Chinese people, is an incidental advantage of no mean value.

The manner of their preparation implies that the sentences are truly Chinese in thought, style and idiom. With the exception of the short, simple sentences in the first twenty or thirty lessons, the author has scarcely composed a single sentence in the book. Not only so, but in the sentences made to order by teachers, or in emendations made in sentences taken from books, he has left the Chinese teachers to their own spontaneous judgment, *never in any case controlling or overruling them.* Of course the Chinese will not meet the approval of every teacher, for Chinese writers criticise and find fault with each other just as Western writers do.

The translations are, in the main, literal, being however less and less **Translation.** literal as the lessons advance. The student must not expect, however, that every word in the English will have its corresponding word in the Chinese. The structure of the languages is too radically different to make this a possible thing. Strict conformity to the meaning of the original has been more aimed at than elegance of language. Neglect of some of the less important words of the Chinese sentence would oftentimes have greatly exalted the elegance of the translation. It was felt however that in order to learn the language accurately, the student ought to have a thoroughly faithful and accurate translation as a guide. As far as possible, very colloquial Chinese has

been rendered into colloquial English, and more stately Chinese into more elegant English.

The statements and illustrations of the subjects have been wrought out **Subjects.** with especial care, and contain the most useful and important matter in the book. In them are comprised all the important idioms of the language. The English headings are but brief approximations, and must be taken with some degree of allowance. The subjects were originally worked out in Chinese, and these English headings were an after-thought. In many cases it was found very difficult to give a brief English heading that fairly represented the subject.

The definitions of words and phrases are brief, but are nevertheless **Vocabularies.** intended to include all the common *Mandarin* uses of the words. The meaning appropriate to the lesson under which the word or phrase occurs, is italicised for the convenience of the learner. This method of giving a full definition, and italicising the one needed, has a number of important advantages which make it a decided improvement over the more common method of simply giving the definition required in the given case. (1) It prevents the student from learning a secondary meaning at the first without knowing it to be such. (2) While learning the one meaning of a character the student has constantly before his mind the fact that it has other meanings, and as he refers again and again to the meaning required, he will unconsciously become more or less familiar with the others. (3) It renders the student independent of a dictionary, thus saving much time and trouble in looking for words. (4) The vocabularies will be found to contain many definitions not given in any dictionary or vocabulary extant.

The notes are somewhat miscellaneous in their character. The larger number **Notes.** are given to the explanation of unusual idioms and difficult constructions. Phrases too long for convenient definition in the vocabularies, are explained in the notes. Questions concerning the proper characters to be used in particular cases, as also the probable analysis of abnormal phrases, are discussed in the notes. In order to elucidate the meaning of sentences, numerous explanations have been given of historical, political, social, literary, educational, religious and many other matters, so that the student, while learning the language, is also learning many other useful and important things about China and the Chinese. Much time and care have been bestowed on the preparation of the notes, and it is hoped they will prove not the least useful part of the book.

In projecting and constructing the lessons the most difficult question that **Dialects.** confronted the author was that of dialect. The lessons first made were confined to the Shantung dialects, and to have carried out and finished the course on that plan, would have very greatly lightened the labor involved, but it would have limited the usefulness of the book to a single province. On the other hand, to have rejected everything, that savored of a difference of dialect, would have compelled a style far too high for colloquial Mandarin, and would thus have defeated the main object in view. The

only practicable alternative was to compare and combine a variety of dialects, which onerous task has accordingly been attempted. In order to exhibit the practical results, the plan of parallel readings has been introduced. (See Introduction : Explanations.) The lessons have been constructed with reference to the dialects of Peking, Chinanfu, Chefoo, Nanking and Kiukiang,—all that the circumstances of the author enabled him to compass. In order to compare these dialects, the lessons have been twice revised by the aid of Peking teachers, twice by the aid of Nanking teachers, once by the aid of Chinanfu teachers, and once by the aid of a Kiukiang teacher ; in addition to which they have been revised, in whole or in part, by one or more of the best foreign speakers of Chinese in these several places. Pekingese has received a larger share of attention than any other dialect, partly because it is the court dialect, but chiefly because there were more published helps by which it may be known.

In carrying out this plan, a vigorous effort has been made to construct a course of lessons free from the predominant influence of any one dialect ; although it is perhaps too much to expect that the author and his Chinese assistant should be able to free themselves from all partiality to their own dialect. It should be remembered, however, that those who are acquainted with only one dialect, are not altogether competent judges in the premises, for, missing many of the peculiarities of their own dialect and finding others instead, they naturally attribute the difference to the undue influence of the author's dialect, not knowing that those who speak the dialect of the author will equally miss many of its peculiarities and find others in their stead. It is hoped that the plan pursued will not only make the book useful to all students of Mandarin, but will at the same time afford many valuable hints as to the comparison of dialects.

It was with great reluctance that I finally decided to propose **System of Spelling.** a new system of spelling. The preparation of the lessons was well advanced before this step was decided upon, and the elaboration of the system has consumed much time and materially delayed the publication of the work. The most natural thing would seem to have been to use the system already most in vogue : viz., that of Sir Thomas Wade. I found, however, that this system would not spell my own dialect, nor in fact any other dialect than Pekingese, and that unless I left all the other dialects to shift for themselves some other system must be used. It was proposed for a time to give both Wade's and William's spellings, and a specimen page was so printed, but the more the subject was canvassed the more evident it became that such a plan would greatly encumber the book and serve no adequate purpose. Several other plans were canvassed but rejected as unsatisfactory. Inasmuch as in language and idiom the book represents several different Mandarin dialects, it was strongly felt that a system of spelling ought to be provided, adapted to the spelling of these dialects, and comprehensive enough to embrace them all without violating its own consistency. As no system now extant fulfilled, or even approximated, these requirements, the author felt constrained to

propose a new system. In doing this he has not, however, done what would have been much more simple as well as satisfactory to himself; viz., proposed *de novo* an original system, but has followed strictly in the line of his predecessors, making only such changes as seemed to be demanded by the exigencies of the case. If the system wins its way, it may become an important step towards a general system comprehensive of all Mandarin dialects.

The spelling given in the vocabularies is that heard in Peking. This spelling is chosen, because Pekingese is the court dialect and more popular than any other. In order, however, to afford opportunity for the insertion of a second spelling, a space has, in all cases, been left either after or underneath the Peking spelling. This has considerably increased the space required for the vocabularies, but will, it is believed, be a very valuable feature to all who use another dialect than the Pekingese.

For the convenience of the student all that concerns each lesson,—
Arrangement. Chinese, translation, subject, vocabulary and notes,—are brought together in one place. A convenient and practicable arrangement for accomplishing this end, proved to be a matter of no small difficulty, especially as the lessons and their parts were not, and could not be made, of a uniform length. In the first twenty lessons the several parts are printed in order successively. This was found to inconveniently separate the related parts, and also to make the columns of Chinese characters too long in some cases and too short in others, with no chance for adjustment. Accordingly at the twentieth lesson a different and better plan was adopted; viz., to carry the Chinese text and translation from page to page along the top, and the other parts in the same way along the bottom. This plan avoids the defects just mentioned and gives opportunity to adjust the parts of each lesson to the pages of the book. An apology is due to the student for this change of plan. The first twenty lessons are printed in a somewhat larger Chinese type. This was done because, at the first, students find it easier to distinguish the characters when printed in large type.

A full syllabic index has been prepared, including all the words and
Indices. phrases defined in the vocabularies, subjects and notes. This will enable the learner to find any word or phrase at any time. It is also proposed to prepare and print as soon as practicable, indexes according to the other dialects to which the lessons are specially adapted, viz., Nanking, Kiukiang, Weihien and Têngchow, which will be furnished and bound with the book at a small additional charge. An index of the single characters by radicals, is also added, by means of which characters may be found when the Peking spelling is unknown. Having the single character the phrases under it may also be found.

My first and chiefest acknowledgments are due to my
Acknowledgments. Chinese assistant, Rev. Tso Li Wên (鄒立文), who has given fully four years of constant and diligent labor to the collection and

preparation of the Chinese text. He has also investigated with me dialectic differences and has given unstinted and enthusiastic labor to the work in all its details.

Hardly less are acknowledgments due to my wife, who has contributed much in every way to the perfection of the work,—much more than her modesty will allow me to acknowledge.

Special acknowledgments are due to Rev. C. Goodrich, D.D., Rev. J. Wherry, D.D. and Rev. S. E. Meech of Peking, who kindly acted as advisers in the application of the new system of spelling to the Peking dialect. To them every question was referred, and in accordance with their verdict every point was decided.

I wish also to acknowledge my indebtedness to Rev. C. Goodrich, D.D. of T'ungchow, Rev. J. Wherry, D.D. and Rev. J. L. Whiting of Peking, Rev. P. D. Bergen of Chinanfu, Rev. J. C. Ferguson of Nanking, Rev. F. W. Baller of Ganking and especially to Rev. J. R. Hykes of Kiukiang, for many important criticisms and suggestions, both in general and in particular. Thanks are due to Rev. J. A. Silsby and Mr. A. Kenmure for valuable assistance in correcting and revising the proofs.

Finally, thanks are due to the Board of Missions of the Presbyterian Church and to my own mission in Shantung, for their generous kindness in affording me the time and opportunity to carry forward and complete this undertaking, and see it safely through the Press.

With thankfulness to the kind providence of God which has guided and preserved me and my assistant to the end of this work, do I now send forth the book on its mission; earnestly desiring that it may be of great service to many who are preparing themselves to preach the Gospel to the Chinese. But for the hope that such would be the case, I should not have been willing to turn aside for so long a time from the more congenial work of teaching and preaching.

C. W. MATEER.

July 1st, 1892.



CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION.

Mandarin ix	Writing xxii
Characters x	Advice to Student xxii
Syllables x	Explanations xxiv
Spelling xi	General Remarks xxv
Powers of Letters—Vowels xii	Table of Radicals xxvi
" " Consonants xiii	Radical Ode xxix
" " Remarks xiv	Tone Exercises xxxiii
Syllabaries xv	Aspirate Exercises xxxvi
Tones xvi	Peking Sound Table xxxvii
Aspirates xix	Nanking " " xl
Rhythm... .. xx	Kiukiang " " xlii
Radicals xx	T'engchow " " xlv
Double Readings xxi	Weibien " " xlvi

LESSONS.

Introductory Lesson.	
Lea. 1. The General Classifier 個 2	Lea. 52. 人, as a Personal Suffix... .. 125
" 2. Demonstrative Pronouns 這, 那 5	" 53. Passive Forms, 被, 教, 叫 128
" 3. Personal Pronouns 7	" 54. The Instrumental Verbs, 使 and 用 130
" 4. The Possessive Particle 的 10	" 55. Futurity, 將, 待 and 得 133
" 5. The Enclitics 子 and 兒 12	" 56. The Disjunctive Conjunction 或 135
" 6. The Common Prepositional of Place 在 15	" 57. Approximation, 差不多, 幾乎, etc. 138
" 7. Sign of the Past Tense 了, 已經... .. 17	" 58. The Comparative Degree, 更, 強, 似, 如, etc. 142
" 8. The Direct Interrogative Particle 嗎 20	" 59. Assent and Dissent, 願, 愛, 甘心, etc. 145
" 9. Here and There, 這裡, 那裡 22	" 60. The Final Particle 罷 148
" 10. The Auxiliary Verbs 來 and 去 25	" 61. Euphonic Endings, 嘛, 咯, 啊, 哪, etc. 151
" 11. The Instrumental Verb 拿 27	" 62. The Auxiliary of Reciprocity 相 153
" 12. Common Connectives 和, 也, 又, 再... .. 29	" 63. The Pronominal of Reciprocity 彼此 156
" 13. Common Future Forms, 就, 必要 32	" 64. Adverbial Numerals, 一回, 一次, 一遍, etc. 158
" 14. Common Sign of the Subjunctive 若 35	" 65. The Immediate Past, Limited by the Present 161
" 15. Intensives, 最, 頂, 挺, 很, 至, 歸得 37	" 66. Distributive Pronouns, 各, 每, 逐 164
" 16. Common Time Particles 40	" 67. Distribution by Repetition 167
" 17. Compound Relative and Indefinite Interrogative Particles 甚麼, 呢 43	" 68. Classifiers, 標, 科, 乘, 雙, 口, 副, 劑, 間, 根, 堆, 正 169
" 18. 的 Joined to Adjectives 46	" 69. Miscellaneous Uses of 好 173
" 19. Adjectives reduplicated for Emphasis 48	" 70. Yes and No, 是, 唔, 好, 中, 可以, etc. 176
" 20. The Auxiliary Verbs 着 and 之 50	" 71. Causative Verbs, 教, 使, 令 and 給 179
" 21. The Reflexive Pronoun 自己 53	" 72. The Expletive 家 183
" 22. Affirmative-Negative Question 55	" 73. 發, Expressing Development 186
" 23. 的 Joined to Verbs... .. 57	" 74. The Auxiliary Verb 開 190
" 24. Intensives of Excess, 太, 或, 過於, etc. 59	" 75. " " 住 192
" 25. The Dative, 給, 替, 把, 與 62	" 76. " " 到 195
" 26. Special Postpositions, 前, 後, 左, 右, etc. 64	" 77. Causal Particles, 因為 198
" 27. Four Common Classifiers, 把, 塊, 件, 位 66	" 78. Illative " 所以, 因此, 故此 201
" 28. The Instrumental Verbs 把 and 將 68	" 79. Receptive Verbs, 受, 接, etc. 204
" 29. The Auxiliary Verb 起 70	" 80. Thus, 這麼着, etc. 207
" 30. 上 and 下, as Auxiliary Verbs 72	" 81. The Exceptive Conjunction 都 212
" 31. Negation and Affirmation with Auxiliaries 74	" 82. Forbidding, 別, 休, 莫 214
" 32. Definite Locatives, 這頭, 那頭, etc. 76	" 83. Concessives, 任, 憑, 管, etc. 218
" 33. Reduplication of Verbs 78	" 84. Colloquial Pronouns, 咱, 俺, 俺 222
" 34. The Interrogative Personal Pronoun 誰 80	" 85. 多 as an Interrogative 225
" 35. Indefinite Pronouns, 都, 凡, 衆, etc. 82	" 86. Totality, 滿, 合, 渾, etc. 228
" 36. Modal Particles, 這麼, 那麼, 怎麼, etc. 85	" 87. When, 幾時, 多會, etc. 231
" 37. Interrogatives of Manner and Place 怎麼, 那麼, 那裏, 那兒 87	" 88. 了 as an Auxiliary 234
" 38. Four Common Classifiers, 條, 隻, 頭, 匹 89	" 89. Miscellaneous Uses of 呢 247
" 39. 的 Denoting the Agent and the Material 92	" 90. Various Uses of 當 240
" 40. The Auxiliary Verbs 出 and 進 94	" 91. The Auxiliary Verbs 動, 倒 and 犯 244
" 41. The Auxiliary Verbs 過 and 回 96	" 92. " " 及, 送 and 掉 247
" 42. Classifiers, 本, 行, 部, 根, 管, 套, 句, 釘 99	" 93. Initial Interjections, 阿, 噫, 呸, etc. 249
" 43. The Auxiliary Verb 得 101	" 94. Corresponding Conjunctions, 雖...却, etc. 254
" 44. The Various Uses of 就 104	" 95. Disjunctives, 但, 然, etc. 257
" 45. 那, with the Classifiers 107	" 96. Approximation, 大半, 大概, etc. 260
" 46. The Compound Relative 所 109	" 97. Still, 仍, 仍然, 照舊, etc. 263
" 47. The Specific Suffix 頭 112	" 98. The Auxiliary 處 265
" 48. Numeral Adjectives, 幾個, 多少, etc. 114	" 99. Comparison, 比, 似, 像, etc. 269
" 49. Restrictive Particles, 只, 光, 單, 但 117	" 100. Classifiers, 陣, 座, 場, 枝, 鋪, 根, etc. 272
" 50. Quality by Opposites 119	" 101. The Auxiliary Verbs, 盡, 定, 完, 成 275
" 51. Definitive Combinations 122	" 102. " " 見, 透, 破 279
	" 103. The Modal Affix 法 282
	" 104. Necessity, 務, 必, 須, 纔, etc. 285

INTRODUCTION.

MANDARIN.

MANDARIN, or official language as it is called by the Chinese, is in its essential features the language of the people in all the eighteen provinces, except the coast provinces south of the Yang-tsi.* It may be divided into Northern, Southern and Western Mandarin; and is often further distinguished by provinces, as Honan Mandarin, Shantung Mandarin, etc. Northern Mandarin is largely dominated by Pekingese which, being the court dialect, is the most fashionable, and is the accredited language of officials throughout the empire. Southern Mandarin is more widely used and is spoken by a larger number of people than Northern Mandarin. It is not, however, as homogeneous and includes more words and phrases which cannot be written, being more or less allied to the non-Mandarin dialects of the South. Shantung lies between the two extremes, and its Mandarin may be approximately characterized as Central. The western part of the province is much influenced by Pekingese, with which it has its chief affinities. The eastern portion has hard initial consonants and is in other ways related to Southern Mandarin. The people of this part of the province are the descendants of a large migration from Hupeh and southern Honan.† Being quite off the track of emigration from the North, the dialect has remained comparatively un-

changed, not having been affected by the tide which has been flowing from the North for several hundred years. It has fewer words and phrases, which cannot be written by significant characters than any other dialect with which I am acquainted, and represents the purest hard sounds now heard in China.

An attempt has been made to adapt the present course of lessons to both Northern and Southern Mandarin. With this end in view they have been repeatedly revised by the aid of teachers from Peking, Chinanfu, Nanking and Kiukiang. No opportunity has been found to make any satisfactory comparison with the Mandarin of Western China. In some cases two or more forms of expression have been found necessary, which have been inserted in parallel lines, the Northern form being on the right and the Southern on the left. These parallel readings generally represent forms of expression, for which there is no equivalent that is everywhere current. For a full explanation of these readings, see Explanations at the end of this Introduction. The student can adopt whichever reading his teacher approves. This method, besides accomplishing the special end in view, has this incidental advantage, that while the student need not learn the forms not current in his own locality, the fact that they have passed under his

* The term 官話, as applied by the Chinese to their own language, seems to imply that originally it sprang up when the people spoke a language different from that of the official class; that is to say, it probably took its rise when a large proportion of the people were not Chinese proper, but aborigines,—subdued and governed by Chinese rulers. It is well known that the Chinese came into China from the North and West. This led to their gradually driving the aborigines southward and eastward—a process which has been going on for at least four thousand years. During this process, and especially in its earlier stages, when the aborigines were many and the Chinese few, there was much commingling of races and admixture of language, the conquered learning the language of the conquerors (which they would naturally call “*officer talk*”), yet at the same time modifying it to a large extent, as has ever been the case in similar circumstances. This amalgamation of language prevailed along the head of the wave of conquest, which gradually pushed its way southward and eastward, and as different aboriginal languages were encountered, gave rise to different dialects, resulting finally in what are now the non-Mandarin coast dialects of the South. In the meantime the body of the wave was behind, and being continually

reinforced by fresh immigration from the North, it maintained a practically pure Chinese. This supposition, as to the relation of the southern coast dialects to Mandarin, is strengthened by the fact that these coast dialects depart much more from the written language (which was purely Chinese) than does the Mandarin. All this is quite independent of the numerous changes which during these ages Mandarin has undergone within itself.

† It is related in the Topography of P'êng-lai that at the close of the Yünn dynasty a man named Chang Liang-pi (張良弼), then governor of Hupeh, raised a force of over thirty thousand men, having his head-quarters near 襄陽府. Being left without support, he gathered together the families of his soldiers and gradually retreated to the promontory of Shantung, where he took possession of the country and maintained his independence for a time, but by and by submitted to the new dynasty. Tradition gives the whole number who came with him as about 200,000, and reports that he drove out or killed many of the original inhabitants. The general truth of these statements is attested by tradition pervading the whole people, by the use of pure, hard sounds, and by the different character of the people.

eye, will broaden his knowledge of the language and give him an advantage in communicating with persons using a different dialect.

Mandarin is usually distinguished as general or *t'ung-hsing*, local, colloquial and book Mandarin.* *T'ung-hsing* Mandarin consists of all such words and phrases as are everywhere current, and are capable of being written by authorized characters. Local Mandarin consists of all such words and phrases as are local in their use, not commonly found in books, nor capable of being written by authorized characters.

Colloquial Mandarin includes all the words and phrases, both *t'ung-hsing* and local, which are in common use in any given locality. Book Mandarin consists of words and phrases taken from the literary style, which are not ordinarily used in speaking but are found in Mandarin books, being used to supplement the deficiencies of the *t'ung-hsing* Mandarin, as well as to add to its dignity and elegance. There are no definite lines of demarcation between these classes of Mandarin. Every man has his own standard.

CHARACTERS.

CHINESE writing is ideographic, and derived, no doubt, from a hieroglyphic original. Its origin, however, is not certainly known, dating back as it does into the obscurity of prehistoric times. The meaning of each character is fixed, but the sound given varies greatly in different places. The great standard dictionary of the Chinese language, prepared under the patronage of the Emperor Kanghi, contains upwards of 41,000 characters, but the greater part of them are either duplicates or obsolete. Dr. Williams' dictionary contains over twelve thousand characters, but of these some are duplicates and many are very rarely used. The whole text of the Chinese classics contains 4,754 different characters. There are probably not much over six thousand characters in general use at the present day. Of these many are used only in the literary style. Of characters used in written Mandarin there are not over four, or at most five thousand. An average educated Chinese speaker will not use over about two thousand five hundred to three thousand, and the best speakers not over three thousand five hundred to four thousand.

Chinese characters were primarily intended to write the literary style, which is in a sense a language by itself. It is only written, and is incapable of being used as a means of oral communication, except in ready made phrases, for reasons which the student will see as he proceeds. Using these characters to write Mandarin is, to some extent, an adaptation.

This adaptation is, however, quite natural and has in turn given new meanings to many characters, while it has also given rise to not a few new characters. The study of Mandarin serves as an invaluable introduction to the study of the literary style or wên-li 文理.

Many characters have two or more meanings according to the connection in which they are used. These changes of meaning are not more numerous nor more difficult to follow than the same kind of changes in the meaning of words in Western languages. Many characters also have two or more pronunciations or readings. (See Double Readings.)

Chinese characters are concreted symbols, which are never modified for the purpose of inflection or conjugation; hence there is no interdependence of words in respect to case, number, person, mood or tense. The syntax of the language depends entirely upon the order or arrangement of the words. Not only are the characters without any inflection but they are not modified to express related or derivative ideas, as are so many of our primitive nouns and verbs in English. Ideas expressed in English by such terminal syllables as *ness, able, ure, ion, ling, er, etc.*, are expressed in Chinese by the use of two or more independent characters, each preserving its own individuality and joined together by no closer bond than mere juxtaposition.

SYLLABLES.

THE most remarkable thing about Mandarin sounds is the smallness of their number. In the various Mandarin dialects there are on an average only about four hundred separate syllables or sounds. The use

of tones increases these sounds to about twelve hundred. The words in use are of course many more, say three or four times as many. Hence arises the necessity of repeating the same sound in several

* *T'ung-hsing* (通行) means *everywhere current*, and is so much more expressive and convenient than any corres-

ponding English term that I shall take the liberty of using it.

senses. These several senses are distinguished to the eye by different characters, as the words *heir* and *air*, or *pair*, *pear* and *pare* in English. If the words were distributed uniformly to the several syllables and their tones, the difficulty arising from so much repetition of the same sound, would be much less than it is, seeing they are in fact very unevenly distributed. Many syllables are wanting in one or more tones, and one or two characters in one tone are often mated by a score or more in another tone. Some syllables have only two or three characters in all, while others have several score. In practice the difficulty is overcome by various devices, the chief of which consists in joining the words in pairs, so that they may mutually designate each other. See Lesson 52.

Mandarin is distinguished by the fact that nearly all its syllables end with a vowel. Its only consonant endings are *n* and *ng*. The Southern non-Mandarin dialects have in addition syllables ending in *k*, *m*, *p* and *t*.

The Chinese language is commonly regarded as monosyllabic, yet many of its syllables have an intermedial vowel and are in fact dissyllables. The

Chinese, however, take no account of this fact, and foreigners have followed them in regarding all words as single syllables.

For the purpose of analysis and spelling, the syllables are separated into *initials* and *finals*. The initial consists of the consonant sound or sounds which form the first part of the syllable, and the final, of the vowel or vowel combined with *n* or *ng*, which forms the second part of the syllable. Syllables beginning with a vowel have no initial. The intermedial vowel is regarded as a part of the final. The use of initials and finals offers the best means of analyzing and classifying the sounds of any given dialect, as also of comparing one dialect with another. In native dictionaries the pronunciation of words is indicated by initials and finals. The initial of one character and final of another are taken and joined together to spell the syllable required; thus *ma* and *kén* spell *mén*, *kwei* and *lang* spell *kwang*, etc. This is not an original Chinese idea but was derived from foreigners. Several native dictionaries have also been arranged according to initials and finals as being more convenient for reference than that according to radicals.

SPELLING.

ENGLISH letters cannot be made to represent Chinese sounds perfectly, so that spelling is at best but an approximation. Its use, however, if not a necessity, is at least a very great convenience. A good system of spelling, well adapted to his own dialect, will save the learner much labor and many mistakes. For reasons given in the preface, the author has not used any of the systems of spelling now in vogue, but has constructed a modified system better adapted to the requirements of the case.

The system of spelling used in Dr. Williams' dictionary fails, partly because it is inconsistent with itself, and partly because it adopts a standard, the *Wu Fang Yüan Yin*, which, so far as the spoken language is concerned, is obsolete, not being correct at the present time anywhere in China.

The most popular system, that of Sir Thomas Wade, is inconsistent with itself, quite ignores the relationship of Pekingese to other dialects, and seems to be constructed as if to preclude its application to any dialect except the Pekingese.

The system of the China Inland Mission is consistent with itself, and is, in many respects, an excellent system. It is, however, only a system of initials and finals adapted to Southern Mandarin—

the power of particular letters being left undefined so that they may be varied according as the key characters vary in different dialects. This plan, while it serves a certain purpose, is but an approximation and is quite inadequate as a general system of spelling.

The system now proposed is based chiefly on the systems of Sir Thomas Wade and the China Inland Mission, and, while supplementing them largely, only departs from them so far as is necessary to secure the end in view. The chief points of superiority claimed for this system are the following, viz. :—

1. It is simple. The powers of the letters are defined almost entirely by referring to their use in English, and as few diacritic marks are used as is possible in the circumstances.

2. It is self-consistent. The spelling of the English language is conspicuously *inconsistent*, but no *system* of spelling, made to order, should deliberately embody in it such a radical defect as this. Consistency is absolutely essential to the intelligent application of the same system of spelling to several dialects, and as a guide to the spelling of all new sounds.

3. It is comprehensive. The system in its present form has a range of initials and finals sufficient to

include at least the dialects of Peking, Weihien, Chefoo, Nanking and Kiukiang, and is capable of easy extension on the same lines.

4. It is discriminating. It brings a number of dialects into accurate comparison, giving to each a complete system of its own, without violating the rights of others. In this way it affords a decided advantage to those who may wish to change their dialect or to learn several dialects.

The following are the principle changes that have been made in the systems of Sir Thos. Wade and the China Inland Mission, with the reasons for making them.

1. Final *o* is made long *o*, and Wade's final *o* is changed to *o*̄. Long *o* final is required in Southern and Central Mandarin. The sound indicated by Wade's final *o*, is not really *ō*, but *o*̄, as he himself defines it.

2. Final *i* of the C. I. M. system has been adopted rather than Wade's *ü*, because the sound is more nearly allied to *i* than to *u*; moreover, this was the writing originally used for this sound by Edkins, Medhurst and others.

3. *Ss* is changed to *s*, and *tz* is changed to *ts*. *Ss* has simply the power of a single *s* and nothing more, and is therefore superfluous. *Tz* might do for the unaspirated sound, but *z* is by its nature incapable of combining with an aspirate, so that *tz'* is by necessity pronounced *ts'*, which fact is recognized by Sir Thos. Wade when he defines *tz'* as "like *ts'*." Analogy also requires *ts*, because the difference between the two initials now in question is simply and solely in the initial letter *t*, and this fact should be indicated in the spelling.

4. The final *h* of Wade's system is discarded in all cases, because it is required in Southern Mandarin as the distinctive mark of the fifth tone. It has been assigned to this office ever since Chinese sounds began to be spelled with foreign letters.

5. *W* is substituted for *u* in the Northern dialects as it generally represents the sound more accurately, and is more in accordance with the English usage of the letters *u* and *w*. *U* is retained in Nanking, where it marks a pronunciation distinctly different from that heard in the North and West.*

6. The C. I. M. initial *u* and *i* have been replaced by *w* and *y*. It is contrary to the usage of the

English letters to use *u* and *i* as initials with the consonantal powers of *w* and *y*.

The following key to the powers of the letters will serve to define the system:—

Vowels.

a, Final or followed by *ng*, as *a* in far, star. In certain syllables of some dialects, when *a* is followed by *n* final, it has the sound of *a* in man as pronounced by Americans. In nearly all dialects *a*, preceded by *w* and followed by *ng*, is broadened to the sound of *a* in fall. The Chinese do not appreciate these variations, but regard the sound as the same. On this account foreign systems of spelling have not felt it necessary to indicate the difference.

ā, As *a* in ask, last, as pronounced by Americans.

e, As *e* in met, pen. When standing alone as a final, it is pronounced as if doubled, thus *che* is pronounced *che-e*.

é, As *e* in her, perch. When standing alone as a final, it is also prolonged as if doubled.

i, Final or followed by a vowel, as *i* in machine, ravine. When followed by *n* or *ng*, it is shortened to *i* in chin, pin.

ī, Final, as *i* in chin, pin.

ï, The final vowel sound heard in such words as table, noble, etc. when separated from the preceding bl.† *o*, As *o* in go, so.

u, As *u* in rule, or *oo* in fool. When followed by *n* or *ng*, it is shortened to the sound of *u* in pull, or *oo* in good. When followed by a vowel, it combines with it and approximates the sound of *w*.

ü, Commonly called French *ü*, is not found in the English language. It is the French rather than the German *ü*, that is, it does not incline so much to long *e* as does the German *ü*.

æ, As *æ* in aerial, save that the accent falls on *a*, and the sounds of the two letters are more nearly joined together. This sound can scarcely be considered Mandarin. It is only heard in the region of Chinkiang and Yangchow, and is probably imported from Soochow. The writing of this sound by the present system would be *eii*, which is a very undesirable combination. *Æ* is adopted because it is

* Before making this change, I addressed a circular to all the missionaries of over five years' residence in Chili, Manchuria and Shantung, asking their opinion as to which letter best represented the sound. Over nine-tenths of the replies were to the effect that *w* was preferable.

† Prof. Bell, the well-known author of "Visible Speech or Universal Alphabets," says the final vowel sound in the words able, noble, etc., corresponds with this sound as he heard it from the lips of several Peking speakers in the Chinese embassy in Washington City.

- already in use in Soochow and Shanghai. It is often written *æ*.
- ai*, As *ai* in aisle or as *i* in mine. In some sections the two vowels are heard separately to a greater or less extent.
- ao*, As *ou* in loud, proud. Occasionally the vowels are heard slightly separated.
- au* or *ɑ*, As *a* in fall, or as *au* in haul. In Mandarin this sound is only heard in the South, where it takes the place of *a* final in the North. It is heard in Soochow and Shanghai, and is there always spelled *au*.
- ei*, As *ei* in weight, or as *ey* in grey.
- éi*, With *é* and *i* distinct, and with the powers given above. Strike out *n* from money and you have the syllable *méi*.
- éei*, With *é* and *ei* distinct and with the powers given above. Omit *nd* and *ne* from mundane and you have the sound *méei*.
- éo*, With the powers given above, *o* being somewhat more distinct than *é*; or, the vowel sounds in burrow when all the consonants are withdrawn. The circumflex is sometimes omitted on the ground that the combination sufficiently distinguishes the sound. It is better, however, to write *éo*.
- ia*, With *i* and *a* distinct, and with the powers given above, the accent being on *a*.
- iai*, With *i* and *ai* distinct, and with the powers given above, *ai* being accented.
- iao*, With *i* and *ao* distinct, and with the powers given above, *ao* being accented.
- ie*, As *ee* in re-enter, re-enroll. When preceded by *y* the *i* is partially occluded and *ie* approximates *e*.
- iei*, With *i* and *ei* distinct, and with the powers given above, *ei* being accented.
- io*, As *eo* in re-open.
- iu*, As *eu* in Peru when the *r* is dropped. In some dialects the accent inclines to the *i* and in some to the *u*. There is, in some dialects, much confusion between *io* and *iu* as finals. They are probably the same final modified by tone and by accidental circumstances.
- oǎ*, As *oa* in Gilboa, or in coalesce. The *a* is very short and it is to mark this fact that it is written *ǎ*. Some hear the final sound as short *ü* (*u* in hut) and it might perhaps with equal propriety be so

* Sir Thos. Wade defines the sound of *ou* as, "In reality *éo*, the vowel sounds of burrow when all the consonants are withdrawn." This identifies the sound with that of *éo* in Southern Mandarin, as given above, which is certainly not correct for Pekingese, in which alone the sound is heard. Elsewhere in Northern and Central Mandarin the corresponding sound is either *éo*, or simply *ó*. In this case, as in

- written. The sounds of the two letters are not perfectly distinct, but coalesce to some extent, approximating the sound of *é*. The departure from full *oǎ* is greater or less in different places, and according to different ears. In case of doubt it is better to give the preference to *é*, leaving *oǎ* as a distinct double sound.
- ou*, With the vowels distinct, and with the powers given above, or, as *ou* in volute when the *l* is dropped, and the accent thrown on the first syllable. The sound of *u* is comparatively slight, *o* being much the stronger of the two sounds.*
- ua*, As *ua* in dual with the accent thrown on the *a*.
- uai*, With *u* and *ai* distinct, and with the powers given above, *ai* being accented.
- uei*, With *u* and *ei* distinct, and with the powers given above, *ei* being accented.
- uél*, With *u* and *é* distinct, and with the powers given above, *é* being accented.
- ui*, With the vowels distinct, and with the powers given above—the vowel sounds in gluey.
- üa*, The *ü* as above, and the *a* flattened to *a* in man, antic. The combination only occurs in final *üan*.
- üe*, With *ü* and *e* distinct, and with the powers given above. When used as a final the *ü* is accented, and when followed by *n* or *ng*, the *e* is accented.
- üei*, With *u* and *ei* distinct, and with the powers given above, *ei* being accented.

Consonants.

The initials *ch*, *k*, *p*, *t* and *ts*, are somewhat softened from their sounds as heard in Great Britain, and much softened from their sounds as heard in America, yet not so much as to quite pass into the corresponding, *j*, *g*, *b*, *d* and *dz*. In some words and in some localities they do, however, become very nearly equivalent to these sounds,

In the initials *ch'*, *k'*, *p'*, *t'* and *ts'*, the aspiration is somewhat stronger than is usual with these letters in America, and very much stronger than is usual in Great Britain. Their force will be obtained approximately by first vocalizing the English letter, and then following at once with the final with an *h* prefixed; thus *ch-ha* for 茶, or *t-ha* for 他. An Irishman ought to give these aspirates to perfection.

several others, Sir Thos. Wade seems to have been misled in his description of Peking sounds by the Nanking sounds which he had previously learned. It is a question whether after all the final *u* is really anything more than the imperfect *u* necessarily formed by the vocal organs in falling back to their normal position after a full final *ó*.

h, Is aspirated a little more strongly than is usual in English. When followed by *i* or *ü* it includes the sound of *y*, making it equivalent to *h* in hue or hew, that is, the Greek χ . *h* final is used as the distinctive mark of the fifth or entering tone.

hs, "A slight aspirate preceding and modifying the sibilant, which, however, is the stronger of the two consonants." To pronounce it correctly requires that the teeth be somewhat more separated and the tongue brought more to the front than in pronouncing *sh*.* It is *always* followed by *i* or by *ü* in the final. In Pekingese *sh* is never followed by *i* or *ü*.

j, is approximately *s* in fusion, or *z* in brazier. It is only used in Pekingese. The corresponding sound in Southern Mandarin is more guttural and therefore more allied to the untrilled English *r*.

jr, Is a combination of *j* and *r*, which more nearly represents this peculiar initial as heard in Central Mandarin than either *j* or *r* alone.†

k, When followed by *i* or *ü*, includes the sound of *y*, being like *k* in kindness, as formerly pronounced in English, viz., kyindness.

ng, Has the same power as in English, and is used both as a final and as an initial.

r, Not trilled, but as usually spoken in America.

sh, Is in some dialects pronounced just as in English, in others the tongue is somewhat retracted from its normal position in giving *sh* in English.

sr, Place the tongue as if to utter initial *r*, and then, without changing its position, say *s*, followed by the faintest possible *r*.

tsh, As *tsh* in potsherd,—a combination representing the transition sound from *ch* in the North to *ts* in the south, being neither *ch* nor *ts*, but an amalgamation of the two sounds.

tsr, Place the tongue as if to utter initial *r*, and then, without changing its position, say *ts*, followed by the faintest possible *r*.

Both analogy and consistency would require that the syllables 希, hi or hsi, 欣, hin or hsin, 行, hing

or hsing, also 幾, ki, 斤, kin, and 經, king, should be spelled hyi or hsyi, kyi, etc., but the general custom in all systems has been to drop the *y*, assuming that it is included in the initials *h* and *k*, as provided above. The student should take special note of this provision, with regard to the power of *h* and *k* before *i* and *ü*.

Remarks.

The above letters and combinations are supposed to provide a consistent spelling for all the sounds found in the dialects of Peking, Chefoo, Weihien, Nanking and Kiukiang. Other Mandarin dialects may contain sounds not provided for, in which case it will be necessary to make new combinations, and perhaps add new diacritic marks. Any additions made should be strictly consistent with the system as already defined.

The sound of many syllables is considerably modified by the tone. Thus in Peking, words ending in *ui* are, in the first and second tones *ui*, and in the third and fourth *uei*. In Têngchow words ending in *ien* are, in the second and third tones *ien*, and in the first and fourth, *ian*. These tonal variations differ greatly in different dialects. In such cases, it is neither necessary nor desirable to have two spellings. The student will presently learn by experience to make the necessary allowance for such variations. That spelling should be chosen which analogy or history indicates as the fundamental sound. It is a great pity that the usage in this respect is not more uniform and consistent than it is. The fifth tone makes a still more decided change on the fundamental syllable, inasmuch that in many cases it is quite dissociated from it; on this account, as well as because this tone is already distinguished by a special terminal letter (*h*), it is doubtless best to conform the spelling to the sound.

No combinations of English letters can completely represent all the minor distinctions of even one dialect, much less those of a number of dialects. A

* The above definition is that given by Sir Thos. Wade, but its accuracy is open to question. A careful analysis of the sound will show that the sibilant precedes the aspirate rather than follows it, not however combining with it to form the sound represented by *sh* but retaining its own separate force and followed by the *h* as a distinct sound. The original sound in most cases was *hy* (that is, *h* in hew) and is such still in many places. Within the last two or three hundred years it has been modified by prefixing an *s* without however essentially changing the *hy*; thus, 欣 was originally hying (written hing) and has now come to be s-hing. The sound represented by *sh* is not a simple joining of *s* and *h* but a new elementary, which is also expressed in English by *c* as

in emaciate, by *s* as in nauseate and by *t* as in negotiate. The sound now in question differs from it in that *s* and *h* each retains its own special sound following in order. It is doubtless better, however, to write the sound *hs* and so avoid confounding it with *sh*. It may be regarded as similar to *wh* in the English words when, what, etc. which are pronounced as if written hwen, hwat, etc.

† Much breath has been spent, both North and South in discussing whether this initial is *j* or *r*. It is in fact a combination of the two sounds. It begins with *j* and ends with *r*, and *jr* is no doubt the best way to represent it, both North and South.

certain margin or suppleness must be given to the spelling of each syllable, especially for the many minor modifications made by change of tone. In

every dialect also, there are occasional stray sounds which may be regarded as accidental variations, and need not be provided for in a syllabary of the dialect.

SYLLABARIES.

A SYLLABARY is an alphabetic arrangement of all the syllables in a given dialect, with all the characters ordinarily used in writing that dialect distributed under these syllables. In some cases the characters are arranged in columns according to their tones, and in others they are simply given in order, the tones being indicated by figures. A good syllabary is a great help in acquiring a correct knowledge of a given dialect. It shows clearly what sounds are in the dialect with the correct spelling of each, which is a very important matter to a beginner, whose ear is not yet trained to distinguish sounds. It also shows the tone of every character, and thus enables the student to verify his own hearing of the sound, and serves also to prompt his memory in the absence of his teacher. It further serves as a valuable *vade mecum* to all who essay to write Chinese, giving so readily the character you want and *know*, but cannot quite recall.

In the nature of the case a syllabary can only include one homogeneous dialect. To attempt more than this is to invite difficulties and defeat the end in view. Every city or district, having a dialect peculiar to itself, should have its own syllabary. It is well worth the while of older residents to prepare a syllabary for the use of beginners, albeit its usefulness is very far from being limited to beginners. The analysis of syllables and tones which its preparation requires, will very likely bring to light some previous mistakes and misapprehensions, and lead to a more consistent and accurate pronunciation of the dialect. For the guidance and help of any who may undertake to make a syllabary, I offer the following suggestions:—

1. Canvass the dialect and gather out as far as possible all the different syllables it contains, choosing a key character for each.

2. Spell these sounds *provisionally* and arrange them in a table by means of the key characters, bringing like initials into the same line, and like finals into the same column.

3. Go carefully over the several initials and finals, and compare all those in the same line or column, and examine closely whether in each case they are really the same. In respect to the finals be

especially careful that you are not misled by tonal variations. As far as possible compare characters in the same tone, changing the key characters for this purpose if necessary.

4. Train your teacher to understand what you are doing, especially teach him to understand the idea of comparing sounds by finals, so as to get his assistance in classifying.

5. Having arranged your syllables in alphabetic order with ample spaces, get your teacher to classify by the guidance of the key characters, all the common characters in your dialect,—arranging them by tones under each syllable. If your teacher is able to distinguish clearly the tone from the other elements of the sound, he will do this work without difficulty; if not, you will have to check over his work very carefully.

6. In arranging the characters under the tones, especial care will be required to see that your teacher does not simply follow the Wu Fang Yüan Yin, instead of the real tone of his dialect. A man of moderate scholarship, especially if he be familiar with light literature, will probably do this work better than a literary graduate, because he will more easily free himself from the theoretical tones, and because he will not be so impervious to a new idea.

Until your teacher is really able to throw away the tone-book and trust simply to his *ear*, he will be but a broken reed in the making of a syllabary. The fact that he *says* he understands the distinction between the book tone and the spoken tone, does not prove that he really does do so, or that he is in fact able to depend upon his ear and ignore the book. It is of course understood that purely *wên-li* characters have no established tone in colloquial. For such the teacher will of course refer to the book.

7. This classification of all the common characters of the dialect, will probably elicit the fact that a few rare sounds have been omitted—perhaps that some sounds which are different have been confused, or *vice versa*. After these corrections are made, make a careful review of the whole work, comparing and testing by means of the initials and finals, to see whether the whole work is at the same time consistent and exhaustive.

8. Only after you have made this thorough analysis and classification of the sounds of your dialect are you ready to settle the final spelling of the several syllables. In doing this, attend to the following points: (1). Use all the English letters *consistently* and according to the powers given them in the table of vowels and consonants. (2). If these sounds are not enough for the emergency, then use new combinations or additional diacritic marks, defining them carefully and making them consistent with the system as it already exists. (3). In spelling words with intermedial vowels which end in *n*, note that these endings have a relationship to vowel endings of the same class, thus *tien*, *mien*, *lien*, etc., are related to *tie*, *mie*, *lie*, etc.; *yüen*, *shüen*, *chüen*, etc., are related to *yüe*, *shüe*, *chüe*, etc. Now these syllables, viz., those with intermedial vowels, are the ones which chiefly develop tonal variations by changing *en* to *an*. In such cases, if there be any doubt whether the ending be *en* or *an*, the existence of the corresponding vowel endings in *e* or *a* should determine which is the normal sound and mark the other as a tonal variation. (4). The intermedial *i* in such sounds as *lien*, *liu*, etc., should not be dropped

when *y* becomes the initial. It is indeed occluded by the cognate sound *y*, but the *final* is still the same as in *lien*, *liu*, etc., and should be so written, retaining the *i*. It will be found that the Chinese consider the final the same, whether it be preceded by *y* or by *l* or by any other initial.

9. Let your syllabary make just as many distinctions of sound as the Chinese make and *no more*. The only exception that I would make to this rule is in the case of the confusion of final *n* and *ng* and initial *n* and *l* in Southern Mandarin. For the sake of facility in consulting dictionaries, and of understanding other dialects in case of removal, it would be well to keep up these distinctions, although they do not exist in your own dialect.

10. A complete syllabary should include double readings. Such double readings as are mere accidental variations unattended by a change of meaning, may be indicated by a star—the character having the same mark under both its readings. Double readings, attended by a change of meaning, should be indicated by numbers at the upper right hand corner of the character, *one* indicating the primary reading and *two* the secondary.

TONES.

TO give a clear and satisfactory exposition of Chinese tones, is a task of no small difficulty. The fact that they differ so greatly in different localities, and are so wholly foreign to the distinctions we are accustomed to make in sounds, coupled with the fact that ears differ as much perhaps as tones, will account, to some extent, for the multifarious and contradictory things which have been written about them. Whether the present attempt to elucidate Mandarin tones, will succeed any better than those which have preceded it, remains to be seen. I shall treat the subject entirely from the practical standpoint.

1. Tones are not musical notes, but are rather intonations or inflections of the voice. There is nothing in Western languages corresponding to them, and they can only be acquired by close atten-

tion to, and imitation of, a Chinese teacher. In Southern Mandarin there are five tones, as follows, viz.:—1. *Shang p'ing shêng*, or upper level tone; 2. *Hsia p'ing shêng*, or lower level tone; 3. *Shang shêng*, or rising tone; 4. *Ch'u shêng*, or vanishing tone; 5. *Ju shêng*, or entering tone. From Northern Mandarin the fifth tone has disappeared, the characters originally under it being distributed to the other four—chiefly to the second, or lower level tone.* In one or other of these tones all Mandarin words are spoken. Tones are not something added to the sound, but are an original and integral part of it. They do not *modify* the sense in any particular way, nor convey any *special* meaning of any kind. They simply serve to distinguish one word from another, showing that they are two and not one.

* It is a question whether tones were originally an element of the Chinese language proper. It seems not unlikely that they were acquired from the languages spoken by the aborigines who dwelt in the land before the Chinese entered it. This hypothesis is favored by the fact that the aboriginal languages, still extant in China, all have tones, as also the language of the Shan tribes bordering on Burmah. It is also favored by the fact that the non-Mandarin dialects of the South, which are probably the result of admixtures of

Chinese with aboriginal dialects, all have *more* tones and lay more *stress* on tones than does the Mandarin. Mandarin shows a disposition to throw off tones, as if they were really foreign to it. Thus within the last four hundred years the fifth or entering tone has entirely disappeared from Northern and Central Mandarin, where it formerly prevailed. The indications are that it will ultimately disappear from Southern Mandarin.

2. It is worthy of special remark that the relationship of tones as such, is not known or recognized by the mass of the Chinese people. They learn the tones as they learn the other characteristics of their sounds—by imitation of their elders; and to their apprehension the different tones of a given syllable are simply different words. Having different sounds and different meanings, and being represented by different characters, their tonal relationship is a thing not thought of. The theoretical knowledge of tones is confined to scholars, and with them it is not a knowledge based on their own spoken language, but is acquired as a theory laid down in their books.

3. Tones have been indicated in various ways by writers on the Chinese language. When indicated on the Chinese character, the most common plan is that adopted by Dr. Williams in imitation of the Chinese method, viz.,—by small semicircles at the four corners of the character. When indicated on the Romanized spelling, the most convenient plan is that adopted by Sir Thos. Wade, viz.,—by the use of numbers at the upper right hand of the spelling. The fifth or entering tone is indicated in the spelling by a final *h*. The following example shows the tones marked in both ways:—

1st tone or	上平聲	<i>Shang p'ing shêng</i>	夫	Fu ¹ .
2nd " "	下平聲	<i>Hsia " "</i>	符	Fu ² .
3rd " "	上聲	<i>Shang shêng</i>	府	Fu ³ .
4th " "	去聲	<i>Ch'u " "</i>	父	Fu ⁴ .
5th " "	入聲	<i>Ju " "</i>	福	Fuh.

The tones are usually given by Chinese teachers in the above order, and form a sort of chime, which every learner should acquire, as it will enable him to recognize and locate the tone of any word he may hear.

4. The names of the tones do not truly describe their characters. This is especially true of the two level tones. In a large part of Shantung the 上平, or upper level, is in fact a lower level, and the 下平, or lower level, is an upper level. In Peking the 上平, or upper level, is not properly a level tone at all, nor is the 下平, the former being an upper quick falling tone, and the latter an upper quick rising tone. The term 入, entering, is not a correct description of the fifth tone, which is an abrupt

aspirated ending. Dr. Edkins says that the terms 平, 上, 去, 入, "do not in the majority of cases represent the actual effect of the sound on the ear. When first adopted they must have represented the tones of the dialect spoken by the writer who selected them, but when applied according to universal practice, to the sounds given to the same characters in other parts of the empire, they convey no idea of the actual pronunciation." This is perhaps a little strong for Mandarin. In Eastern Shantung, aside from the inversion of the *upper* and *lower* levels, the names are fairly descriptive of the fact.

5. Tones are of two kinds, viz.,—practical and theoretical. The practical tones are those which are actually used by the people in speaking, and differ widely in different localities. The theoretical tones are those which are given in the 五方元音 *Wu Fang Yuan Yin*, or, "Original Tones of the Five Regions." The compiler of this work was from Southern Chili, yet he professes to give the syllables and tones of the Southern Mandarin, which then no doubt extended well to the north. Exactly what he made his standard in fixing the tones, it is not easy to see. At the present time they are not correct anywhere in China, albeit the book is the authorized standard for determining tones throughout the whole empire. Every Chinese scholar is familiar with the tones as given in this book, and when a teacher, who is not specially trained, is asked the tone of a word, he will generally reply according to the book, and not according to the tone that he himself actually uses in speaking. This latter, in fact, he does not generally know, or rather he does not *recognize* it as such. To be of service in teaching a foreigner, a Chinese teacher must be trained to distinguish tones by his ear, rejecting and ignoring the artificial standard of the books. Unless thus trained he will very likely mislead the learner by giving the theoretical instead of the practical tones.*

6. For the purpose of rhyming, tones are divided by the Chinese into two classes, called *p'ing* (平), level, and *tsé* (仄), deflected. The former includes the *shang p'ing shêng* and the *hsia p'ing shêng*; and the latter, the *shang shêng*, *ch'u shêng* and *ju shêng*. With this distinction every Chinese scholar is familiar. He will readily tell to which class any given word

* I once heard a lady in North China complimenting her teacher on the accuracy of his tones, adducing as proof the fact that they invariably agreed with the tones given in Williams' Dictionary. I asked her how about the *Ju shêng*; she replied that he gave her these as readily as the others.

He was in fact giving the theoretical tones, including the *Ju shêng*, to which he gave a theoretical pronunciation, which he imagined was the *Ju shêng*. He was thoroughly misleading his pupil as to the real pronunciation of his dialect.

belongs, his standard being not the actual spoken tones, but the *Wu Fang Yuan Yin* and sundry rhyme books based upon it. In writing poetry it is only allowed to rhyme a *p'ing* with a *p'ing* and a *tsé* with a *tsé*. This is in fact the principal, if not the only, purpose that this distinction serves.

7. The tones of words vary in different localities; that is, any given character may be one tone in one place, and another tone in another place. The most frequent change perhaps is from the first tone to the second, and *vice versa*. The second and fourth tones also often exchange places. These changes of tone are very numerous, and often occur within very short distances, such as would show very little, if any, perceptible change in syllables. The number of these changes is far greater than any one would suppose, who has not made the matter a subject of special inquiry.

8. The manner of rendering the tones differs in different localities; that is, a given tone is not the same sound in one locality that it is in another, though called by the same name. It is, so to speak, intoned in a different way. For example, the third tone in Peking, is made by depressing the voice below its natural key and ending with a strong rising inflection. In Eastern Shantung, the same tone is made by beginning in a natural key and ending with a rising inflection. In Chinanfu, the same tone begins high and rises still higher. In fact the four tones, as given in Peking, are all rendered differently in Eastern Shantung; not only so, but in Chinanfu they are rendered still differently from those heard in either place. Each new locality has a new rendering of the tones. These variations know no law, and seem to be practically endless. There is, in many cases, a certain degree of similarity in the rendering of the same tone in different places, yet not such as to make it certainly recognizable, or prevent its being confounded with other tones.

9. The normal tone of a word is often changed by its position in a compound word or phrase, as also by its position in a sentence. Thus the words 東 *tung*¹ east, and 西 *hsi*¹ west, are both in the first tone, but when combined in the word 東西, a thing, they are not spoken *tung*¹ *hsi*¹, according to the proper tones, but *tung*¹ *hsi*², the tone of *hsi* changing from the first to the second. So also 慈悲, merciful, is not spoken *ts'ei*² *pei*¹, according to the original tones, but rather *ts'ei*² *pei*⁴, the tone of *pei* changing from the first to the fourth. In like

manner 伶俐, ingenious, is not spoken *ling*² *ch'iao*³, according to the normal tones, but *ling*² *ch'iao*⁴, the tone of *ch'iao* changing from the third to the fourth. Again, take the expression 你要打我嗎, *Are you going to strike me?* Now 我 is normally in the third tone, but as spoken in this phrase, it changes to the fourth. If its proper tone be retained, the emphasis is thereby thrown on it, and the expression would mean, *Would you [dare to] strike me?* Once more, take the sentence 爺有娘有不如己有, *To have a thing in your father and mother's possession is not so good as to as to have it in your own possession.* Here 娘 is normally *niang*² and 己 is *chi*³, but as spoken in this sentence they both change to the fourth tone. In general it may be said that there are few sentences of any length spoken, in which there are not, for one cause or another, changes in the normal tone of one or more of its words. These changes are complicated and subject to no known general law. The following hints embody as much as the author has learned by experience, and will, it is hoped, be of some service to the student.

(1.) Accented words, both in phrases and in sentences, retain their normal tones.

(2.) Strong emphasis on a word forming part of a clause, is likely to obscure the tone of the succeeding word,—generally changing it to the fourth tone.

(3.) In dual combinations, which include the vast majority of phrases, the first character generally takes the accent, and in this case the second character, if not already a fourth tone, generally changes to a fourth tone; that is, to the natural falling inflection.

(4.) In case the meaning of the second character of a dual phrase predominates and takes the accent, then it retains its normal tone, and the tone of the first character generally changes, or is at least obscured, especially if it is a level tone.

10. How may an accurate knowledge of tones be acquired, is a question which confronts every student of Chinese. Two distinct methods have been followed, and each has its advocates. One method is to learn the tone of each character as a distinct act of memory in each case, so that the tone is as certainly known as the other elements of the sound. The other method is to regard the tone as an integral part of the sound, which need not be theoretically separated from it, and so proceed to learn both words and sentences by a direct and untrammelled imitation of a teacher, as a Chinese child imitates its parents. Each method has its advantages

and disadvantages. The first method will give greater confidence and accuracy in the use of isolated words, but it imposes a heavy burden on the memory, and its ultimate benefit is neutralized to a considerable extent by the changes required by composition and rhythm, and by the danger that the speaker will adhere too much to the fundamental tone, to the great injury of his speaking. The second method is easier to one who has a good ear, and will make a fluent and natural speaker. There is danger, however, that such a speaker will miss his bearings when he attempts to isolate or emphasize a particular word, especially if it is not a very common one.

On the whole, I would recommend a combination of the two methods. Let the student first practice the tone exercises faithfully with his teacher, until he has caught the chime and can distinguish with certainty the tone of any single word his teacher pronounces. The foundation is now securely laid, and he can go on with confidence to learn words and phrases. In memorizing single words, let the tone always be regarded as an integral part of the sound, so that the word is not regarded as properly heard at all until the tone is heard—for in point of fact there is no Chinese word without a tone. In case of uncertainty in catching a tone from a teacher, it is not best to ask him the tone, nor to suffer him to tell you, but have him repeat the word, telling *him* the tone as a check if necessary. In repeating phrases or clauses after the teacher, attention should not be directed chiefly to the tones

of the words, but rather to a close and accurate imitation of the sounds, both in general and in particular. If this method is faithfully carried out, the student will come to think less and less about tones, while he will speak the language with greater and greater accuracy. He will in fact acquire the ear of a native, and both hear and speak the language in blissful forgetfulness of tones.

11. Opinions vary as to the relative importance of tones in learning and speaking Chinese. Since they are an integral part of all Chinese speech, their general importance may safely be assumed. Seeing, however, that they vary so much in different localities and yet the people of these several localities understand each other without serious difficulty, it may safely be assumed that their *relative* importance is not so great as is sometimes represented. In order, however, to be understood with readiness and precision, and not offend the ears of the hearers, an accurate rendering of the tones is essential. Even as a basis for acquiring such a style as may be understood in several cognate dialects, the very best thing is the thorough knowledge of the pronunciation of some *one* dialect. The Chinese understand, and can make allowance for, the differing tones of different dialects, but they do not understand Anglicised sounds that have *no tone*. He who neglects tones or other peculiarities of his own dialect, and attempts to acquire what some are pleased to call a "general dialect," will end by not speaking real Chinese at all; *for there is no spoken Chinese without tones, nor any that is free from dialectic peculiarities.*

ASPIRATES.

IN the non-Mandarin dialects of the South there are sounds beginning with *j, g, b, d* and *ds*, also two sets of sounds beginning with *ch, k, p, t* and *ts*, which are distinguished as unaspirated and aspirated, the latter being generally written with a reversed elevated comma following the letter. In Mandarin the initials *j, g, b, d* and *ds* are not found, but only the two classes of sounds represented by *ch, k, p, t* and *ts*, distinguished as unaspirated and aspirated. These English letters really represent neither sound correctly. In the one case the aspiration is weaker than Englishmen generally use with these letters, and much weaker than Americans (who aspirate more strongly than Englishmen) generally

use. In the other case the aspiration is somewhat stronger than that given to these letters by Americans, and much stronger than that given by Englishmen.

The unaspirated sounds are not really *j, g, b, d* and *ds*, as beginners are apt to imagine, though they approximate these letters, and in a few cases become almost, if not quite, equivalent to them. If the learner has difficulty in properly softening *ch, k, p, t* and *ts*, it would be better to give them flat *j, g, b, d* and *ds*, than to run the risk of confusing them with the aspirates. There is this at least to be said in favor of such a pronunciation, that while the Chinese may not quite approve it, they will not misunderstand it.* It is very important that the

* Seeing that neither *j, g, b, d* and *ds*, nor *ch, k, p, t* and *ts*, perfectly represent the true sounds, it is a question whether in Mandarin it would not be better to write the un-

aspirated sounds with the former letters and simplify the system of spelling by abolishing that awkward *ˊ*. It is as easy to vary from *j, g, b, d* and *ds*, as it is to vary from *ch, k, p, t* and *ts*.

student of Chinese should get this distinction clearly in mind at first, which he ought readily to do by practising the table of aspirates with a good teacher. Ridiculous and mortifying blunders sometimes result from mistakes in aspirating. I once heard the announcement made from the pulpit that there would be a rooster in the church on a certain evening instead of saying a prayer-meeting, as was intended.

The Chinese do not recognize the relationship

existing between aspirated and unaspirated sounds— simply regarding them as independent sounds. They only learn to compare and classify them when taught to do so by foreigners. The aspirates in Mandarin do not vary with different dialects so much as do the tones, but are exceedingly uniform from North to South. When, however, Mandarin is compared with the Southern coast dialects the variations are very great, whole classes of sounds changing from aspirates to unaspirates or *vice versa*.

RHYTHM.

A Chinese sentence may be constructed with faultless idiom, and each word be pronounced with perfect accuracy, and yet the sentence be almost or quite unintelligible, simply from want of proper rhythmical emphasis. By rhythmical emphasis is meant the relative amount of emphasis given to the several words, their distribution into groups, and the rapidity or slowness with which they are severally spoken. It is highly important to every speaker that he should acquire the art of speaking in correct rhythm, and by consequence, with proper emphasis. Such acquisition will be invaluable in making his speech easily intelligible and in making it sound natural to the Chinese ear. The same thing is true to a greater or less extent of all languages.

In addition to listening carefully to the spoken language heard every day and striving to imitate it, the best way to acquire a proper rhythm is to practice reading closely after a good teacher. Let the teacher read a short clause *in an easy, natural tone*, and the student follow, imitating faithfully both the pronunciation and the rhythmic cadence of the teacher. Then let the teacher read the next clause and the student follow, and so on. The teacher

should not read too far at once, lest the student be unable to retain the rhythm in his mind. Special care should also be taken that the teacher does not read in a recitative or affected style. Chinese teachers have a strong proclivity to read in that measured sing-song in which they recite their classics; and oftentimes when told that this is not what is wanted, they become impressed with the difficulty of what is required, and resort at once to a loud pompous style which upsets all proper rhythmical emphasis, and is the farthest possible from the easy natural conversational style that is wanted. If the student has not a trained teacher, he should ask the assistance of a friend who speaks Chinese to explain to his teacher what is wanted, and give him a few lessons on natural reading. Half an hour's practice in reading each day will be a relief from the severer labor of memorizing, and will work wonders in enabling the student to speak Chinese, as the Chinese speak it. It should be remembered, however, that merely reading after a teacher will be useless, if not worse, unless the rhythmical emphasis of the teacher be really and faithfully imitated.

RADICALS.

THE Chinese have analysed their numerous written characters so far as to arrange them in two hundred and fourteen classes, each class having a common part called its radical. The Chinese name is 字部, character class, or 字母, character mother. Many of the more complex ones are compounded of those which are simpler. It would be a distinct advantage if the number of the radicals were considerably reduced. The radical was chosen in each case because of its relationship to the meaning of the character, to which it generally gives more or less of a clue. The other part of the character has been

named the phonetic by foreign sinologues, because in most cases it determines, or at least suggests, the sound. The Chinese have no special name for it. Nearly all modern characters are made up distinctly of a radical and a phonetic, the one indicating the meaning and the other the sound. The same is true of many ancient characters, but not by any means of all.

The meaning, form and order of these two hundred and fourteen radicals, should be memorized. It will be a hard task, but it will repay the student well. Over one hundred and sixty of them are

themselves characters in common use, and will require to be learned in any case. Moreover, all characters are built up from them, and the student will find that after learning them, Chinese characters will lose to a great extent their strange unmeaning look, and will become more familiar and intelligible. These radicals and their combinations will become so many hooks on which the memory can fasten, and so retain the characters in its keeping. The best time to learn the radicals is at the very outset, before attempting to learn other characters. The mind is then fresh and unoccupied, and will retain what it gets with a much firmer grasp than it will that which is crammed into it after it is already sated with five hundred or a thousand characters.

These radicals are, in a sense, the Chinese alphabet—the only one, at least, that they possess. Most native dictionaries are arranged in the order of these radicals, particularly the great standard imperial dictionary of Kanghi. Most foreign dictionaries of Chinese are syllabic, but in all cases of uncertainty as to the standard spelling of a character, recourse has still to be had to a radical index. In looking up characters by radicals, it will save much time and vexation to know either the order of these radicals or the number of each one. Many, perhaps most, students of Chinese have undertaken to learn the numbers. This is no light task in the first place, and it is a rare thing that the numbers are retained permanently in the memory, save in the case of the comparatively few radicals which are in constant demand. The Chinese do not learn the radicals by number, but, having them arranged in groups according to the number of their strokes, they learn the order in which they stand. This is no doubt the better and more effective way,—being in fact the way we use our own alphabet in consulting a dictionary. In

order to assist the memory and lighten the task of learning these radicals in their order, the Rev. J. A. Silsby of Shanghai has, at the request of the author, woven the 214 radicals into a mnemonic radical ode, which is appended at the end of the table of radicals.

How to recognize the radical of a character is a question of some importance to a beginner. Unfortunately no invariable rule can be given, but the following directions will be of some service:—

1. Consider whether the character itself is or is not a radical.

2. The great majority of characters consist more or less evidently of two parts, either right and left, or upper and lower, or inner and outer (a top and a side joined counts an outer). In case one of these parts is a radical and the other not, then that which is a radical, is the radical of the character; as, 站, 挨, 悔, etc.

3. If both parts be radicals, then:—

(a) The left hand part is the radical, except in the case of 刀, 力, 文, 斤, 彳, 彡, 欠, 戈, 斗, 邑, 見, which generally stand on the right.

(b) The lower part is the radical, except in the case of 身, 竹, 艹, 穴, 日, 酉, 雨, 爪, 父, 山, 宀, which generally stand at the top.

(c) The outer part is the radical. This class is comparatively small.

4. It may be observed in general:—

(a) That the most prominent radical in a character is likely to be its governing radical.

(b) Some radicals almost always govern the character in which they appear; as, 身, 竹, 見, 宀.

There are of course some exceptions to these rules, yet they are quite as true as such rules generally are. For characters to which no rule applies, reference may be had to the list of difficult characters usually given in both native and foreign dictionaries.

DOUBLE READINGS.

MANY Chinese characters have two readings, and a few have three readings. The most of these changes of reading are attended by a change of meaning. Those which are not attended by a change of meaning, are mere accidental variations, the remnants probably of dialectic admixtures. In some dialects there are many more of them than in others. I have tried in all cases to give the reading, which is most

prevalent, favoring the colloquial rather than the book reading.*

Of readings which vary the meaning with the sound, the variation, in by far the greater number of cases, is tonal; in a comparatively few cases one character is read in two syllables. No general principle characterizes these changes, though a large number of those depending on tone, consist in the change from verb to

* On an average, about one character in five has a double reading, and of these double readings, about three-

fourths are attended by a change of meaning, the other fourth being accidental variations.

noun, or from noun to verb or adjective, similar to such words as con'-flict and conflict' or gal'-lant and gallant' in English. It still remains true, however, in Chinese as in English, that by far the larger number of such changes of meaning are *not* attended by any change of pronunciation. I have not noted all the double readings given in Dr. Goodrich's Pocket Dictionary, because many of them are peculiar to Peking. I have noted all which seemed to prevail in as many as two dialects. In other cases, viz.,—those in which the distinction seemed local, or was inconsistent in different dialects, I have adhered to that reading which was judged to be the primary reading of the character. For the variations made in such cases by different dialects the student will have to depend on his teacher. It is very likely also that some of the distinctions which have been made, will be found to be incorrect in some dialects. In some cases also the subsequent use of a word will be found inconsistent

with the general distinction of meaning as first made.*

The whole subject of double readings is surrounded with difficulties. If only one dialect be considered, it is *comparatively* easy to fix the readings, though even then there is more or less both of uncertainty and inconsistency. When, however, three or four or more dialects are considered together, there is no small amount of confusion and contradiction. If each dialect of Mandarin had such a carefully prepared vocabulary as Dr. Goodrich has given to the Pekingese, then an intelligent and valuable comparison might be made. As it is at present, only a general approximation is possible.

I have made no attempt whatever to conform the spelling of double words, or of phrases, to the tonal changes introduced by composition. For these the student will have to depend on his teacher and on his ear.

WRITING.

WRITING Chinese will be found a useful exercise for every student. It will be a grateful relief from the tedium of direct memorizing, while it will serve to give a more accurate knowledge of the characters and help to fix them in the mind. The Chinese consider that a character is not *really* learned until it can be, not only recognized, but also written. The best way to learn to write, is to get a teacher to write a copy of simple characters in large hand, place this underneath the *thin* Chinese paper and trace the characters as Chinese schoolboys do. Use a Chinese pen and write in regular Chinese order and style, taking lessons from your teacher's example. You will soon see that your teacher writes the left hand side before the right, and the top before the bottom, and that he makes the horizontal strokes before the perpendicular stroke which crosses them, etc. Having acquired the art of tracing characters

in a fair hand and in proper order of strokes, proceed to copy out a part or all of the lesson for the day. All the while you are copying, you will be having an exercise in recalling and fixing the characters in your mind.

The difficulty in writing is not in learning to handle the pen properly and write neatly, but in knowing what character should be used in each case, and in recalling readily and accurately its form and composition. How much time it will pay the student to spend in writing Chinese, will depend on his special gifts, together with the requirements of the work in which he expects to engage. Every student can learn to write a fair Chinese hand, and will find it quite an advantage to be able to do so, but to be a *ready writer*—recalling all needed characters readily and using them accurately, requires natural aptitude, together with constant and long-continued practice.

ADVICE TO THE STUDENT.

READ over the Introduction carefully. You will not understand it all, but it will serve to give you a useful general idea of the work you are undertaking. Give especial attention to the system of spelling and to the powers of the letters as there defined. You

cannot spell words properly or consistently until you are familiar with the powers to be given to the letters. A student who imagines that he can spell Chinese words without any special system, will soon find himself involved in confusion and inconsistency,

* This is one of the perplexing things that beset the path of one who undertakes to make a vocabulary. A Chinese scholar gives a clear and evident general distinction between the two readings of a character, and all seems plain. The

trouble comes when it is discovered that the distinction will not carry out consistently, but is contradicted by usage. For instance see 離 and 離.

and will presently be unable to tell what sound he meant to express by his own writing.

2. Commit the Introductory Lesson to memory. This will serve you as a temporary means of communication with your teacher.

3. Learn the radicals thoroughly according to the directions given with the Table of Radicals.

4. Practice the tone exercises until you have mastered the "chime" and can distinguish readily the tone of any character your teacher pronounces. At the same time also practice the aspirate exercises until you have mastered the difference between an aspirated and an unaspirated sound.

5. Having fitted yourself thus far, begin with the lessons proper and learn them carefully until the Chinese can be given readily by looking at the English. Review frequently, and so continue until about sixty lessons have been well mastered, which will require five or six months of steady work.

6. Having laid this foundation, strike out with more boldness. Take a new lesson each day and get it as well as you can, and so go on without halting or turning back, till you have gone over one hundred and ninety-six lessons. I give this advice for several reasons:—

(a). It will relieve the tedium, perhaps discouragement, of bald, hard, committing to memory, and will bring something fresh each day.

(b). The same characters and phrases will be turning up again and again, so that by the time you are through, you will be gratified to find that though imperfectly learned at their first appearance, many of them have nevertheless "stuck."

(c). This plan will give you a comprehensive view of all the important idioms in the language and avoid the danger of missing some entirely by stopping short of the end.

7. Having reached the end, return to the sixtieth lesson and review *thoroughly*, which you can now do with ease and with a fuller comprehension of the various idioms brought to view.

8. As soon as you can put two words together, begin to talk, not only with your teacher during hours of study, but at other times, with all the Chinese about you. Be sure that the more you talk, making the best use you can of the phrases you have learned, and picking up others, the faster you will learn Chinese. Talking will take the place of exercises in translating English into Chinese, and your key will be the fact of your being understood.

9. Do not assume that the English spelling really represents the true pronunciation of your dialect. He who does this will certainly speak with a marked foreign brogue. The true pronunciation of each syllable should be learned from your Chinese teacher. The spelling, being approximately correct, will serve to *recall* the sounds, but should never be allowed to *determine* them.

10. Speak distinctly and not too fast. Foreigners are often better understood than the Chinese themselves, chiefly because they enunciate more distinctly and speak more slowly.

11. Try to avoid long and involved sentences. Break up your thoughts into short ones. This is the chief secret of perspicuity in Chinese.

12. Be content to turn your thoughts around and split them up, and do them over into Chinese style. They may seem to you to have lost much in the process, but they will be far more forcible to the Chinese than in the foreign form in which you would prefer to have them. He who would use the Chinese language effectively, must learn to think as well as to talk in Chinese.

13. Do not fail to learn to read, as well as to speak, Mandarin. The two things naturally go hand in hand and mutually help each other. The additional labor involved in learning to read whilst learning to speak, is not great. Even ladies whose time is limited, will not find the task nearly so great as is often imagined. It is needless to say that ability to read will be a great power in the hands of its possessor. It is worthy of remark that one who does not learn to read, scarcely ever learns to speak *well*.

14. Learn as much colloquial as you can and do not be afraid to use it. It is a mistake to suppose that colloquial is necessarily inelegant, or unacceptable to the ears of the people. There are times when a stately literary style is becoming, as in conversation with officials or with educated men, but for the varied wants of everyday life, it is far from being the most useful or effective. In preaching, a certain amount of dignity is no doubt important, but this is not in the least inconsistent with a free use of colloquial. The freshness, directness and pithiness which the colloquial adds to "general Mandarin," are almost, if not quite, essential to really effective public address. In preaching especially, an elegant classical style with its high-sounding book phraseology, is worth but little as compared with an attractive colloquial style, which will catch the ears and win the hearts of the people.

15. Unless for special reasons, always learn the dialect of the place in which you reside. You will learn it more easily, as every one you meet will be your teacher, and you will avoid the confusion and discouragement of trying to learn one dialect while you are hearing another. The very best foundation on which to build a knowledge of several dialects, or of "general Mandarin," is an accurate knowledge of some one dialect.

16. Remember that the chief thing in learning a language is memory. The Western mind is given to reasoning and philosophizing, but the exercise of this faculty is largely thrown away in learning a new language, especially such an unscientific language as the Chinese. Don't begin, therefore, by attempting to investigate the logical principles that underlie the

structure of the language, but take it on faith, and make it your chief business to *cram* the words and phrases of the lessons as fast as possible. This is the shortest and surest road to success.

17. Do not stop learning Chinese at the end of one or two years. Cultivate the habit of *listening* to the language of the Chinese whom you hear speaking. Seize every *new* expression and appropriate it, investigating it with your teacher if necessary. If you allow yourself to fall into the habit of passing new words and expressions by, simply gathering the speaker's meaning in a general way from the words you already know, you will presently cease to hear any new words at all, and your knowledge of Chinese will remain practically stationary.

EXPLANATIONS.

ALL *single* characters are defined in the vocabularies, but *phrases* which first occur and are defined in the subject, are not afterwards repeated in the vocabulary.

2. As a rule all the leading Mandarin meanings of characters and phrases are given, but meanings confined to the *wén-li*, are not generally given. The more primitive meaning is usually given first, and the others in order.

3. Many Chinese characters are used with almost equal facility as nouns and as verbs, as adjectives and as adverbs. In such cases the vocabulary has not detailed the meaning in the several parts of speech, but gives only that one which is most normal to the character, leaving the others to be inferred from the connection in each case.

4. That meaning of a word or phrase which occurs in the given lesson, is printed in italics. Sometimes on account of the structure of the sentence, the translation contains none of the meanings in exact form. In such cases none are italicized. When a character is used in a phrase which greatly modifies its proper meaning, so as to make it doubtful on which of its meanings the phrase is founded, then none is italicized. When two or three meanings given to a character are practical equivalents, none is italicized.

5. When a character has two readings attended by a difference of meaning, the second reading is noted at the end of the definition. The word *also* indicates that the other reading has not yet appeared,

and the word *see*, that the other reading has already appeared and been defined.

6. When a character has two readings not attended by any change of meaning, they are both noted in the vocabulary when it is first defined, but when it subsequently occurs in phrases, only one reading, the most common or suitable one, is given.

7. The spellings in the vocabularies are in accordance with the Peking sounds, but a space is left after or underneath each spelling for the writing in of a second spelling to suit the student's particular dialect. The student should not write in these spellings hap-hazard, but first master the system of spelling as applied to his own dialect and then write them in carefully, going to a syllabary in cases of doubt (if he is so fortunate as to have a syllabary of his dialect). If he has an index for his dialect, this will afford a guide in all cases. It will be found that a large proportion of Pekingese spellings apply equally to other dialects. The best and most labor-saving plan is to underscore the Peking spellings which prove to be correct, and erase the others, writing in the correct spelling. If this is done with the learning of each lesson, it will save much time and confusion on review.

8. In the subjects and vocabularies (N.) stands for Northern Mandarin; that is, that which is spoken in Peking and vicinity; (C.) stands for Central Mandarin which, in this case, is limited to that spoken in Eastern Shantung; (S.) stands for Southern Mandarin, which means, in this case, that spoken on the lower Yangtze, especially that of Nanking. These indica-

tions are only approximate, and being in some cases given on the authority of one teacher, are not always to be depended on. When a phrase is local, but the limits of its use are unknown to the author, it is marked (L.); that is, local. Words and phrases the use of which is confined to classical or book style, are marked (w.); that is, *wén-li*. All words and phrases which are unmarked, are supposed to be *t'ung-hsing*, or at least approximately so. A wider examination will no doubt show that some of these are also more or less local.

9. In the duplicate readings in the Chinese text, the one on the right hand is the Northern form, and the one on the left, the Southern. In some cases three readings are given, which are arranged in order with the Northern one on the right. In some cases a duplicate reading consists of a Northern and Central, or a

Central and Southern—the other section not being represented, for want of information. In all such cases the more northerly reading is to the right. In a few cases both forms are *t'ung-hsing*, but are not equally applicable in the given connection. In such cases attention is called to the matter in the notes. These parallel readings are *supposed* to be synonymous. That they differ slightly in many cases, is unavoidable. The translation conforms to the right hand reading. When the difference is considerable, a second translation, conforming to the other reading, is given in parenthesis.

11. Duplicate readings, especially in the case of common phrases, are not generally repeated in full. One reading is used alone and then the other, preference being given to that which is supposed to have the wider range of use.

GENERAL REMARKS.

GRAMMATICAL science has never been applied to the Chinese language. There are of course principles of construction embedded in it, but they have never been developed and systematized. Educated Chinese have no guide in writing or speaking their language save their own ear and the particular precedents established by usage. As a consequence the language, as at present spoken, has in it many anomalous forms and usages which are really at variance with the underlying principles of the language.

2. In China, literary taste and skill have thus far expended themselves almost entirely on the *wén-li*. Elegance in speaking is neither taught nor cultivated. Teachers correct and criticize with great pains the *wén-li* essays of their pupils, but allow them to speak any way they choose. In talking, every man is a law unto himself, and individual peculiarities abound to a phenomenal extent.

3. The introduction of Christianity and of Western thought into China is giving a marked stimulus to Mandarin literature; and mission schools cultivate care and correctness in speaking as well as in writing. These things are a beginning, and will certainly increase and develop in the future, and they will tend gradually to elevate and purify the Mandarin. The tendency of the times also is towards a lower and more diffusive style of *wén-li*, approximating, in some

measure, the model of the spoken language. There is little doubt but that ultimately Mandarin, enriched, corrected and dignified, will come to be the written, as well as the spoken, language of China.

4. Chinese has generally been regarded as a very difficult language to learn. The difficulty chiefly concerns the writing. The spoken language is of course more difficult to an English speaker than a cognate European language, but not more difficult than other Asiatic languages.

5. To pick up a limited knowledge of colloquial, which will answer for household or business purposes, is quite easy; but to acquire a fluent, idiomatic and comprehensive knowledge of the language, answering to all the departments of life, requires diligent and persevering study.

6. Four things are important in order to speak good Chinese:—

(a). To put the words and clauses in their proper idiomatic order.

(b). To give to the words and phrases their proper rhythmical emphasis.

(c). To give to the words their correct syllabic pronunciation.

(d). To give the aspirates and tones correctly.

These things I regard as important in the order in which they have just been enumerated.

TABLE OF RADICALS.

IN the following table the radicals are arranged in classes according to the number of strokes in each, and in the order in which they usually stand in dictionaries. They are numbered in order from one upwards—albeit the Chinese never number them. Each radical is spelled according to the Peking sound, and space is left for writing in a second spelling. The meanings given are brief and suggestive, rather than exhaustive. A considerable number of the radicals are contracted or modified in composition. The modified form is given in each case at the side of the full form. Some forty six or seven of the radicals are obsolete as independent characters, being now only used as radicals in composition. They are indicated in the table by an asterisk (*).

The best way to learn the radicals is *first* to learn

the shape and meaning, associating these things together; then proceed to learn the sound and the order. If the student uses another dialect than Pekingese, he should get a competent person to write in the spelling according to his own dialect. The radical ode which follows the table will, no doubt, furnish the easiest method of learning the order. If however any one is inclined to learn the order direct, he will find that the easiest way is to sing the radicals over and over until he is familiar with the names and order. Then have them written out on a sheet of paper and sing them over, guided by the characters alone. Finally sing them over entirely from memory. They will need frequent rehearsing in order to keep from forgetting them.

1 Stroke.			
1 <i>I</i> ¹	一 One, unity.	23 <i>Hsi</i> ³	匸 to conceal.
2 <i>Kun</i> ³	丨* to pass through, an upright.	24 <i>Shi</i> ²	十 ten.
3 <i>Chu</i> ³	丶* a point, a dot.	25 <i>Pu</i> ³	卜 to divine.
4 <i>P'ieh</i> ³	丿* a stroke to the left.	26 <i>Chie</i> ²	卩 a seal, a joint.
5 <i>I</i> ^{1,4}	乙 a curve, one.	27 <i>Han</i> ⁴	厶 a ledge, a cliff.
6 <i>Chūe</i> ²	丿* a barb, a crook.	28 <i>Si</i>	彑 selfish, perverse.
		29 <i>Yu</i>	又 and, again.
2 Strokes.			3 Strokes.
7 <i>Er</i> ⁴	二 two.	30 <i>K'ou</i> ³	口 a mouth.
8 <i>T'ou</i> ²	宀* a cover, a hat.	31 <i>Wei</i> ²	凵* an enclosure.
9 <i>Jen</i> ²	人 亻 a man.	32 <i>T'u</i> ³	土 earth.
10 <i>Jen</i> ²	儿* a man, the legs of a man.	33 <i>Shi</i> ⁴	士 a scholar, a sage.
11 <i>Ju</i> ^{3,4}	入 to enter, into.	34 <i>Chi</i> ³	夕* a step, to follow.
12 <i>Pa</i> ^{1,2}	八 eight.	35 <i>Ts'ui</i>	彳* walking slowly.
13 <i>Chiung</i> ³	冂* a limit.	36 <i>Hsi</i> ^{1,2}	夕 evening.
14 <i>Mi</i> ⁴	冃* to cover, a cover.	37 <i>Ta</i> ⁴	大 great.
15 <i>Ping</i> ¹	冫* ice, icicle.	38 <i>Nü</i> ³	女 woman, daughter.
16 <i>Chi</i> ^{1,2}	几 a bench.	39 <i>Tsi</i> ³	子 son, child.
17 <i>K'an</i> ³	凵* a receptacle, a box.	40 <i>Mien</i> ²	宀* a roof.
18 <i>Tao</i> ¹	刀 刂 a knife, a sword.	41 <i>Ts'un</i> ⁴	寸 an inch.
19 <i>Li</i> ⁴	力 strength.	42 <i>Hsiao</i> ³	小 small, little.
20 <i>Pao</i> ¹	勹* to wrap.	43 <i>Wang</i> ¹	尢 尢 尢 weak, lame.
21 <i>Pi</i> ³	匕 a spoon, a ladle.	44 <i>Shi</i> ¹	尸 a corpse.
22 <i>Fang</i>	匚* a chest, a case.	45 <i>Ch'e</i> ⁴	艸* a sprout.

- 46 *Shan*¹ 山 a hill, a mountain.
 47 *Ch'wan*¹ 川 mountain streams.
 48 *Kung*¹ 工 labor, a workman.
 49 *Chi*³ 己 self.
 50 *Chin*¹ 巾 a napkin.
 51 *Kan*¹ 干 to oppose, a shield.
 52 *Yao*¹ 小* small, tender.
 53 *Yen*³ 广 a roof, a shelter.
 54 *Yin*³ 爻* moving on.
 55 *Kung*³ 井* joined hands.
 56 *I*⁴ 弋 a dart.
 57 *Kung*¹ 弓 a bow, archery.
 58 *Chi*⁴ 彘* a pig's head, pointed.
 59 *Shan*¹ 彘 hair, plumage.
 60 *Ch'i*⁴ 彳* a step.

4 Strokes.

- 61 *Hsin*¹ 心 忄 小 the heart.
 62 *Koa*¹ 戈 戈 a spear.
 63 *Hu*⁴ 户 户 a door.
 64 *Shou*³ 手 扌 the hand.
 65 *Chi*⁴ 支 攴* a branch, a prop.
 66 *P'u*¹ 支 攴 to rap, to tap.
 67 *Wen*² 文 文 literature, ornament.
 68 *Tou*³ 斗 斗 a peck, a bushel.
 69 *Chin*¹ 斤 斤 an axe, a catty.
 70 *Fang*¹ 方 方 square.
 71 *Wu*² 无 无 without, not.
 72 *Ji*⁴ 日 日 the sun, a day.
 73 *Yue*^{1,4} 日 日 to speak.
 74 *Yue*⁴ 月 月 the moon, a month.
 75 *Mu*⁴ 木 木 wood, a tree.
 76 *Ch'ien*⁴ 欠 欠 to owe, to be deficient.
 77 *Chi*³ 止 止 to stop.
 78 *Tai*³ 歹 歹 bad, vicious.
 79 *Shu*¹ 殳 殳 a pole; to kill.
 80 *Wu*^{2,4} 毋 毋 to deny; do not!
 81 *Pi*³ 比 比 to compare.
 82 *Mao*² 毛 毛 hair, wool.
 83 *Shi*⁴ 氏 氏 family name.
 84 *Ch'i*⁴ 气 气 breath, vapour.
 85 *Shui*³ 水 水 water.
 86 *Hwo*³ 火 火 fire.

- 87 *Chao*³ 爪 爪 claws.
 88 *Fu*⁴ 父 父 father.
 89 *Yao*² 爻 爻 crosswise.
 90 *Ch'iang*² 爿* a bed, a frame.
 91 *P'ien*⁴ 片 片 a slice, a splint.
 92 *Ya*² 牙 牙 a tooth.
 93 *Niu*² 牛 牛 a cow, an ox.
 94 *Ch'üan*³ 犬 犬 a dog.

5 Strokes.

- 95 *Yüan*² 玄 玄 sombre, black.
 96 *Yü*⁴ 玉 王 a gem, a precious stone.
 97 *Kwa*¹ 瓜 瓜 a melon, a gourd.
 98 *Wa*³ 瓦 瓦 a tile.
 99 *Kan*¹ 甘 甘 sweet.
 100 *Sheng* 生 生 to live, to produce.
 101 *Yung*⁴ 用 用 to use.
 102 *T'ien*² 田 田 a field.
 103 *P'i*³ 疋 疋 a roll of cloth.
 104 *Ni*^{1,4} 疒 疒 disease.
 105 *Pod*^{1,4} 𠂔* 𠂔* back to back.
 106 *Pai*² 白 白 white.
 107 *P'i*² 皮 皮 skin, bark.
 108 *Min*³ 皿 皿 a dish, a platter.
 109 *Mu*⁴ 目 目 an eye.
 110 *Mao*³ 矛 矛 a halberd, a lance.
 111 *Shi*³ 矢 矢 an arrow, a dart.
 112 *Shi*² 石 石 a stone. [revelation.
 113 *Shi*⁴ 示 示 a divine omen, a
 114 *Jou*³ 示 示 a footprint.
 115 *Ho*² 禾 禾 grain of any kind.
 116 *Hsüe*^{2,4} 穴 穴 a cave, a den.
 117 *Li*⁴ 立 立 to set up, to erect.

6 Strokes.

- 118 *Chu*² 竹 竹 the bamboo.
 119 *Mi*³ 米 米 rice.
 120 *Si*¹ 糸 糸 raw silk.
 121 *Fou*³ 缶 缶 crockery.
 122 *Wang*³ 网 网 a net.
 123 *Yang*² 羊 羊 a sheep.
 124 *Yü*³ 羽 羽 wings, feathers.
 125 *Lao*³ 老 老 old.

126	<i>Er</i> ²	而	still, yet.
127	<i>Lei</i> ³	耒	a plow.
128	<i>Er</i> ³	耳	the ear.
129	<i>Yü</i> ⁴	聿	a pen, a pencil.
130	<i>Jou</i> ⁴	肉	月 flesh, meat.
131	<i>Ch'en</i> ²	臣	a statesman.
132	<i>Tsi</i> ⁴	自	self.
133	<i>Chi</i> ⁴	至	to, to arrive.
134	<i>Chiu</i> ⁴	臼	a mortar.
135	<i>Shé</i> ²	舌	the tongue.
136	<i>Ch'wan</i> ³	舛	to oppose, error.
137	<i>Chou</i> ¹	舟	a boat, a ship.
138	<i>Kén</i> ⁴	良	perverse, limited.
139	<i>Sé</i> ⁴	色	color.
140	<i>Ts'ao</i> ³	艸*	艸 grass, herbs.
141	<i>Hu</i> ¹	虍*	a tiger.
142	<i>Ch'ung</i> ²	虫	an insect.
143	<i>Hsüé</i> ^{3,4}	血	blood.
144	<i>Hsing</i> ²	行	to go, to travel.
145	<i>I</i> ¹	衣	永 clothes.
146	<i>Yü</i> ⁴	西	西 to cover, west.

7 Strokes.

147	<i>Chien</i> ⁴	見	to see, to perceive.
148	<i>Chüé</i> ³	角	a horn, a corner.
149	<i>Yen</i> ²	言	words, to speak.
150	<i>Ku</i> ^{1,3}	谷	a valley.
151	<i>Tou</i> ⁴	豆	beans, pulse.
152	<i>Shi</i> ³	豕	a pig, swine.
153	<i>Chai</i> ⁴	貝	a reptile.
154	<i>Pei</i> ⁴	貝	a shell, precious.
155	<i>Ch'ü</i> ^{3,4}	赤	flesh color, naked.
156	<i>Tsou</i> ³	走	to go, to walk.
157	<i>Tsu</i> ²	足	the feet, enough.
158	<i>Shén</i> ¹	身	the body.
159	<i>Ch'é</i> ¹	車	a cart, a coach.
160	<i>Hsin</i> ¹	辛	bitter.
161	<i>Ch'en</i> ²	辰	time.
162	<i>Choa</i> ⁴	走*	走 to go, to run.
163	<i>I</i> ⁴	邑	邑 a region, a city.
164	<i>Yu</i> ³	酉	ripe, must, wine.
165	<i>Pien</i> ⁴	采	to pluck, to sort out.
166	<i>Li</i> ³	里	a Chinese mile.

8 Strokes.

167	<i>Chin</i> ¹	金	gold.
168	<i>Ch'ang</i> ³	長	long.
169	<i>Mén</i>	門	a door, a gate.
170	<i>Fou</i> ⁴	阜	阜 a mound, plenty.
171	<i>Tai</i> ⁴	求*	求 to reach to, to attain.
172	<i>Chui</i> ¹	隹	birds.
173	<i>Yü</i> ³	雨	rain.
174	<i>Ch'ing</i> ¹	青	blue sky.
175	<i>Fei</i> ¹	非	no, wrong.

9 Strokes.

176	<i>Mien</i> ⁴	面	the face.
177	<i>Koa</i> ²	革	raw-hide.
178	<i>Wei</i> ²	韋	leather.
179	<i>Chiu</i> ³	韭	leeks.
180	<i>Yin</i> ¹	音	sound.
181	<i>Yie</i> ⁴	頁	a leaf, the head.
182	<i>Feng</i> ¹	風	wind.
183	<i>Fei</i> ¹	飛	to fly.
184	<i>Shi</i> ²	食	to eat.
185	<i>Shou</i> ³	首	the head, first.
186	<i>Hsiang</i> ¹	香	incense.

10 Strokes.

187	<i>Ma</i> ³	馬	a horse.
188	<i>Ku</i> ³	骨	a bone.
189	<i>Kao</i> ¹	高	high.
190	<i>Piao</i> ¹	髟*	hair.
191	<i>Tou</i> ⁴	鬥	to quarrel, to fight.
192	<i>Ch'ang</i> ⁴	鬯*	herbs, essences.
193	<i>Li</i> ⁴	鬲	a tripod, an urn.
194	<i>Kwei</i> ³	鬼	a demon, a ghost.

11 Strokes.

195	<i>Yü</i> ²	魚	a fish.
196	<i>Niao</i> ³	鳥	a bird.
197	<i>Lu</i> ³	鹵	crude salt.
198	<i>Lu</i> ⁴	鹿	a deer.
199	<i>Mod</i> ⁴	麥	wheat.
200	<i>Ma</i> ²	麻	hemp.

12 Strokes.

201	<i>Hwang</i> ²	黃	yellow.
202	<i>Shu</i> ³	黍	millet.

203 <i>Hoa</i> ⁴	黑	black.	210 <i>Ch'i</i> ²	齊	regular, even.
204 <i>Chi</i> ⁴	黻	embroidery.		15 Strokes.	
	13 Strokes.		211 <i>Ch'i</i> ³	齒	front teeth.
205 <i>Min</i> ³	黽	frogs.		16 Strokes.	
206 <i>Ting</i> ³	鼎	a tripod.	212 <i>Lung</i> ³	龍	a dragon.
207 <i>Ku</i> ³	鼓	a drum.	213 <i>Kwei</i> ¹	龜	a tortoise, a turtle.
208 <i>Shu</i> ³	鼠	a rat, a mouse.		17 Strokes.	
	14 Strokes.		214 <i>Yoa</i> ⁴	龠	a flute, a pipe.
209 <i>Pi</i> ²	鼻	the nose.			

THE RADICAL ODE.

BY REV. J. A. SILSBY.

THE following ode will relieve the student of much labor in learning the meaning and order of the radicals. It will serve as a continuous ladder, with suggestive and ever-varying rounds, which the student can mount with vastly greater ease than he can climb the bare pole of arithmetical numbers. Not only is the first acquirement made easier, but the memory will retain the ode more firmly and recall it more readily than it will the bare numbers.

HOW TO BEGIN.

One Stroke.

Beginning with *unity*¹, just as you ought,
 You next make an *upright*², and then make a *dot*³;
 Make a *stroke to the left*⁴, then a *curve*⁵ and a *crook*⁶,
 And you've summed up the use of one stroke in a book.

一
 丨
 丿
 乙 丿

A RIDDLE.

Two Strokes.

Two hats^{7 8} on one *man*⁹! See, that *tramp*¹⁰ walking fast,
*Enters*¹¹ slyly at *eight*¹², e're the *limit*¹³ is passed.
 A *cov'ring*¹⁴ of *ice*¹⁵ hides a *bench*¹⁶ and a *box*¹⁷,
 A *sword*¹⁸ of great *strength*¹⁹ is *wrapped up*²⁰ in old socks,
 A *spoon*²¹ in a *case*²² is *concealed*²³ with *ten*²⁴ knives;
*Divine*²⁵ what this means, and then ask the old wives,—
 Why that *seal*²⁶ on the *cliff*²⁷, made by some *selfish*²⁸ hoax,
 Should let a *conjunction*²⁹ end up the two strokes.

二 亻 人 儿
 入 八 冂
 冫 冫 几 凵
 刀 力 勹
 匕 匚 匚 十
 卜
 冂 厂 厶
 又

CONSOLATION FOR AN UNFORTUNATE WIDOW.

Three Strokes.

Three smacks on the ³⁰ mouth! an ³¹ enclosure how sweet!	口	口		
Which ³² earth's greatest ³³ sage ³⁴ follows ³⁵ slowly to greet.	土	土	夕	夕
This ³⁶ evening ³⁷ great ³⁸ lady, your ³⁹ son had a fall	夕	大	女	子
From a ⁴⁰ roof that was ⁴¹ forty-one ⁴² inches too ⁴³ small.	山	寸	小	
He is ⁴³ lame, not a ⁴⁴ corpse, and some ⁴⁵ sprouts from the ⁴⁶ hill,	尤	尸	中	山
Washed in ⁴⁷ streams by the ⁴⁸ workmen, will keep him quite still.	川	工		
Wrap ⁴⁹ self in a ⁵⁰ napkin; make ⁵¹ shields for the ⁵² tender;	己	巾	盾	女
Give ⁵³ shelter to orphans; ⁵⁴ move on, their defender!	广	走		
⁵⁵ Joined hands follow Cupid's ⁵⁶ dart, shot from his ⁵⁷ bow:	井	弋	弓	
Eat ⁵⁸ pig's head; don ⁵⁹ plumage; his ⁶⁰ footsteps you know.	豕	彡	彡	彡

SUNDRY REFLECTIONS.

Four Strokes.

If your ⁶¹ heart be once pierced by a ⁶² spear as you stand,	心	戈		
Then the ⁶³ door of eternity's surely at ⁶⁴ hand	户	手		
When you've mastered this ⁶⁵ branch of the language, be sure	支			
You've but ⁶⁶ tapped at the portal of ⁶⁷ literature.	支	文		
Though we measure with ⁶⁸ bushels and ⁶⁹ catties and ⁷⁰ squares,	斗	斤	方	
Yet ⁷¹ without the ⁷² sun's light we could not sell our wares.	无	日		
Why ⁷³ speak of the ⁷⁴ moon with such rapture my dove?	日	月		
To the shade of the ⁷⁵ wood do we ⁷⁶ owe our first love.	木	欠		
⁷⁷ Stop, ⁷⁸ vicious man, ⁷⁹ kill not! ⁸⁰ Deny not my prayer;	止	歹	母	
Can life be ⁸¹ compared with those locks of red ⁸² hair?	比	毛		
One's ⁸³ family name is as dear as his ⁸⁴ breath;	氏	气		
Through ⁸⁵ water and ⁸⁶ fire he'll defend it till death.	水	火		
The ⁸⁷ claws of a kitten, my ⁸⁸ father once said,	爪	父		
Should never scratch ⁸⁹ crosswise, nor climb on a ⁹⁰ bed;	交	片		
And a ⁹¹ splint twixt the ⁹² teeth, puts an end to all jokes,	片	牙		
While an ⁹³ ox and a ⁹⁴ dog will end up the four strokes.	牛	犬		

SAD DEATH OF TWO JEWELERS.

Five Strokes.

Two ⁹⁵ *sombre gem* ⁹⁶ merchants once ate a ⁹⁷ *cucumber* :
 They slept on some ⁹⁸ *tiles*, and how ⁹⁹ *sweet* was their slumber !
 But ¹⁰⁰ to live was no ¹⁰¹ *use* ; in a ¹⁰² *field* at their ease,
 In ¹⁰³ *dry goods* rolled up, they were killed by ¹⁰⁴ *disease*.
 Back to back they were laid, dressed in ¹⁰⁵ *white* ;—'twas their wish.,
 With the ¹⁰⁷ *skin* of the cucumber placed in a ¹⁰⁸ *dish* !
 Then an ¹⁰⁹ *eye*, ¹¹⁰ *lance* and ¹¹¹ *dart* were engraved on a ¹¹² *stone*,
 As an ¹¹³ *emblem divine* of the ¹¹⁴ *foot-prints* now flown ;
 This stone, midst the ¹¹⁵ *grain* in a ¹¹⁶ *cavernous den*,
 Was ¹¹⁷ *erected* to finish five strokes of the pen.

95 玄 96 玉 97 瓜
 98 瓦 99 苴
 100 生 101 用 102 田
 103 疋 104 疋
 105 穴 106 白
 107 皮 108 皿
 109 目 110 矛 111 矢 112 石
 113 前 114 沟
 115 禾 116 面
 117 立

AN ECCENTRIC OLD STATESMAN.

Six Strokes.

"Our ¹¹⁸ *bamboo* and ¹¹⁹ *rice*, ¹²⁰ *silk* and ¹²¹ *crocks*, I am told,
 Our ¹²² *nets*, ¹²³ *sheep* and ¹²⁴ *quills* must be taxed as of ¹²⁵ *old*.
 And yet we ¹²⁶ *plow* on for this fool with long ¹²⁷ *ears* !"
 "Stick a ¹²⁹ *pen* in his ¹³⁰ *flesh*," cried a boatman with jeers.
 The ¹³¹ *statesman himself* now arrived with a ¹³² *mortar*,
 The ¹³³ *tongue* that ¹³⁴ *opposed* him he'd smash and make shorter !
 The ¹³⁷ *boat's* ¹³⁸ *perverse* skipper, with red ¹³⁹ *colored* face,
 He tied up with ¹⁴⁰ *grass*, and dismissed in disgrace.
 But when ¹⁴¹ *tigers* and ¹⁴² *insects* drew ¹⁴³ *blood*, he thought best
 To ¹⁴⁴ *travel* for ¹⁴⁵ *clothing* and skip to the ¹⁴⁶ *west*.

118 竹 119 米 120 糸 121 缶
 122 网 123 羊 124 羽 125 老
 126 雨 127 耒 128 耳
 129 耒 130 肉
 131 臣 132 自 133 至 134 臼
 135 舌 136 舛
 137 舟 138 艮 139 色
 140 脚
 141 屯 142 虫 143 血
 144 行 145 衣 146 西

BEWARE OF THE SERPENT.

Seven Strokes.

Seven strokes we now ¹⁴⁷ *see*, and a ¹⁴⁸ *horn*,—fateful ¹⁴⁹ *word* !
 In the ¹⁵⁰ *valley* ¹⁵¹ *beans* grow, and of ¹⁵² *pigs* a whole herd ;
 Great ¹⁵³ *reptiles* their ¹⁵⁴ *precious* young offspring are feeding ;
 With legs bare and ¹⁵⁵ *naked* a lad ¹⁵⁶ *walks* unheeding ;
 His ¹⁵⁷ *foot* gets a sting and his ¹⁵⁸ *body* soon dies ;
 A ¹⁵⁹ *coach* brings his mother : how ¹⁶⁰ *bitter* her cries !
 'Tis high ¹⁶¹ *time* to ¹⁶² *run* from a ¹⁶³ *region* so vile,

147 見 148 角 149 言
 150 谷 151 豆 152 豕
 153 豸 154 貝
 155 赤 156 走
 157 足 158 身
 159 車 160 辛
 161 辰 162 走 163 邑

TONE EXERCISES.

THE following tone exercises are not intended as a means of learning the tone of particular words, but as a means of acquiring the special *intonation* peculiar to each tone, and of learning the chime formed by these tones when given in regular order. Two tables are given, one for Northern and one for Southern Mandarin. All the syllables are not represented in the table, because in some cases it was impossible to find characters agreeing in the different dialects. Many syllables are originally deficient in one or more tones. A few of these are given, but the majority are not. The number of syllables given are abundant for the purpose for which the table is intended. Some syllables seem to be repeated, which shows that in another dialect the given syllable divides into two. The student should go over these

exercises carefully with his teacher a number of times, or until he can give and distinguish each tone with certainty, and can chime them together to the satisfaction of his teacher. This will soon be accomplished if he has an average ear, and will give strict attention to the business in hand. No phrases are given in illustration of the tones of the several syllables, because this is not considered to be the most profitable method of study. The tones of particular words are best learned in connection with the characters taken separately, as they occur in the course of the lessons, and the modifications made by composition and collocation are best learned from words and phrases as they stand together in sentences. Every lesson is, in this sense, a tone exercise.

NORTHERN TABLE.

嗽渣义 彰昌招遮真琛征稱雞啣欺棲加槍交踐嗟尖千牽知
 熬關茶纏嘗着哲 臣 成吉卽旗勝 墻 喬捷 錢鉗姪
 襖 諂鞫廠沼者枕糾整逞己擠起 甲槍絞巧姐剪淺遣
 傲乍杈鞫丈唱兆浙震趁政秤記祭氣砌價噲叫竅借箭倩欠智

癡侵驚輕楸究抽居區捐圈噉諸樽初穿裝窗忠充 翻方非
 持秦擎 綢局渠拳决 除難船 牀 蟲兒 罰煩房肥
 尺寢景頃酒久醜舉曲捲犬蹶炙杵楚喘焚闖腫龍爾法反紡匪
 叱噉敬慶就救臭句去眷勸 歷住處音串壯創仲銃二鑿飯放廢

紛夫咳慙蒿喂 劉 駒忽歡荒灰昏烘西希鰕箱香消枵些先掀星
 墳扶孩含臺痕活喉胡環皇回魂紅席翕匣詳响降 邪 寫癩險擗
 粉府海罕汗浩恨禍後戶患混惠橫細戲下象向笑孝瀉線限姓

典須暄醫 該剛康高樞姑枯官光 詭規虧空鍋鑿 撈 撩
 刑徐懸移人儒 扛 稿口古苦管廣 狂 揆 國藍狼勞梨聊
 幸序 棺意刃褥盖 坳沈稿口古苦管廣 詭規虧空鍋鑿 撈 撩
 幸序 棺意刃褥盖 坳沈稿口古苦管廣 詭規虧空鍋鑿 撈 撩

遛 零領另	羅 留柳六	嚙 爐櫓路	龍 龍龍弄	媽 麻馬馬	埋 買賣	顛 滿慢	貓 毛卯貌	煤 美味	濛 蒙猛夢	眯 迷米密	摸 魔抹默	嘆 囊擥驢	鏡 惱鬧	尼 你膩	年 撚念	姪 牛鈕拗	挪 諾糯	疤 拔把罷	般 板半	潘 盤盼	包 電飽抱	拋 袍跑敲		
烹 朋棒碰	鼻 筆敝	批 皮劈庇	標 表鏢	飄 標漂票	邊 匾遍	偏 便編片	拼 貧品化	兵 秉病	波 駁播簸	坡 婆播破	嘆 葡普舖	三 傘散	桑 嗓喪	蘇 俗塑	離 隨髓碎	商 賞尙	燒 韶少邵	賒 舌捨赦	身 神審慎	升 繩省勝	失 十式	詩 時使試	書 熟暑恕	梳 孰菽數
衰 滓率	絲 死四	嗒 達打大	獸 歹代	丹 膽旦	貪 談坦炭	當 黨蕩	湯 糖舂燙	滔 逃討套	燈 等橙	低 敵底地	梯 條體替	挑 條挑耀	揸 點店	天 田話	廳 亭挺聽	多 奪朶剝	拖 駝度橐	偷 投透	督 毒賭鍍	端 短斷	吞 屯褪	通 同統痛	猜 才彩菜	簪 僭攢贊
餐 殘慚儂	遭 早造	操 槽草糙	謔 走奏	付 村存寸	宗 總粽	齟 齟次	嚮 頑晚萬	汪 王枉旺	威 惟委位	溫 文穩問	窩 我臥	烏 無武物	了 牙雅軋	央 羊養樣	腰 遙咬要	爺 爺野夜	煙 顏眼硯	音 銀引印	英 迎影硬	迂 魚禹欲	冤 原遠願	暈 雲允運	憂 油有右	癩 容永用

SOUTHERN TABLE.

哀 挨矮愛	安 昂俺暗	鑿 熬襖傲	叉 茶岔察	章 掌丈	昌 腸敞唱	昭 找兆	抄 潮炒	真 診鎮	稱 呈逞秤	抽 紬丑臭	之 旨至姪	癡 馳恥滯赤	忠 腫眾	充 蟲寵銃	諸 煮住	樞 除杵處黜	專 轉篆	川 椽喘串	而 耳二	番 煩反飯	方 房訪放	非 肥匪肺	紛 墳粉忿	風 馮捧鳳
數 扶釜富福	孩 海害	愁 寒罕早	蒿 毫好浩	駒 侯吼後	亨 痕很恨	希 喜係隙	蝦 遐下瞎	香 降响向	驕 爻曉孝	掀 嫌顯限	典 形幸	呵 河火賀盒	轟 洪哄閏	呼 湖虎戶忽	花 划化滑	荒 皇幌晃	歡 環緩宦	輝 回毀惠	昏 魂渾混	喧 懸喧	衣 移倚義益	該 改蓋	甘 敢幹	堪 砍勘

ASPIRATE EXERCISES.

IN order to facilitate the acquisition of the distinction between aspirates and non-aspirates the following tables of exercises have been arranged. It was found impossible to make one table answer for both Northern and Southern Mandarin; hence one is given for each. Each table gives all the syllables to which the distinction applies. In all dialects a few syllables capable of making the distinction are deficient either in the aspirate or the unaspirate. These of course are not given. Some syllables seem to be repeated, which is caused by the splitting of the syllable by a different dialect. In all cases, except those which are specially marked, the tone of the two

characters is the same, thus eliminating this complication whilst the distinction of aspiration is being acquired.

The student should go over this table repeatedly with his teacher, carefully imitating his pronunciation. In general the greater danger lies in not aspirating strongly enough the aspirated sound. It should be specially noted by the student, that mere stress or force of voice is not necessarily aspiration. It is the position of the tongue, not the amount of breath, that makes the difference. Let the student get a clear apprehension of what aspiration means and the whole difficulty vanishes.

NORTHERN TABLE.

2	3	1	1	1	4	1	2	1	1	1	3	2	4	2	1	1	1	1	1	
關	展	張	招	遮	振	爭	疾	機	家	江	矯	潔	見	直	金	精	京	楸	究	迴 ³
茶	諂	昌	超	車	趁	撐	齊	欺	掐	腔	巧	茄	欠	遲	欽	清	輕	秋	丘	窮 ²
1	4	4	2	4	1	1	1	3	1	1	3	1	4	4	1	3	1	3	3	
州	眷	句	決	君 ¹	駐	專	莊	追	準	忠	該	趕	綱	告	個	歌	諷	更	狗	古 ³
抽	勸	去	癩	羣 ²	處	穿	窗	吹	蠢	充	開	砍	康	靠	刻	科	肯	坑	口	苦
1	4	1	1	4	3	1	4	4	4	4	4	4	4	1	4	3	3	1	1	4
瓜	怪	官	光	貴	滾	工	過	罷	敗	扮	謗	報	貝	奔	迸	筆	表	慙	編	殞
誇	快	寬	誑	愧	網	空	闊	怕	派	判	胖	砲	配	噴	碰	撥	漂	撇	偏	聘
1	3	3	1	4	1	3	4	3	4	1	1	1	1	1	4	2	3	1	1	4
兵 ¹	波	捕	打	呆	蛋	當	島	得	登 ¹	底	掉	爹	顛	丁	多	豆	毒	短	堆	敦
平 ²	坡	普	塔	胎	炭	湯	討	忒	滕 ²	體	跳	帖	天	聽	拖	透	徒	瞳	推	吞
1	3	3	4	1	3	4	4	4	4	1	1	4	1	1	4					
東	紮	宰	讚	臧	早	仄	贈	坐	奏	租	躓	最	尊	宗	自					
通	擦	探	諺	倉	草	測	躓	錯	湊	粗	攪	脆	村	聰	次					

SOUTHERN TABLE.

1	3	1	1	1	1	4	1	1	1	1	3	1	1	1	3	3	4	1	4	
齋	展	張	招	渣	遮	振	貞	周	知	卓	忠	主	專	庄	追	準	改	幹	剛	告
差	諂	昌	超	叉	車	趁	稱	抽	痴	綽	冲	處	穿	窗	吹	蠢	愷	看	康	靠

5	3	1	5	1	3	5	5	4	1	4	5	1	3	1	3	1	4	1	4	5
革	狗	根	及	江	狡	甲	結	見	斤	竟	脚	鳩	果	公	古	瓜	怪	官	逛	國
客	口	坑	乞	腔	巧	恰	怯	欠	欽	慶	却	邱	可	空	苦	誇	快	寬	况	闊
4	4	1	4	4	4	4	3	4	5	4	4	5	1	5	3	4	5	4	4	
貴	棍	君	拜	扮	半	謗	保	罷	別	辯	倍	白	奔	必	表	殞	兵 ¹	薄	布	代
愧	困	羣	派	盼	判	胖	跑	怕	撇	片	配	迫	烹	匹	標	聘	平 ²	潑	鋪	太
1	3	3	5	5	1	4	5	5	4	1	1	1	3	1	1	3	5	1	3	
丹	擋	島	答	跌	顛	豆	得	登 ¹	的	吊	丁	多	冬	宰	簪	髒	早	節	尖	奏
貪	倘	討	踢	貼	天	透	特	疼 ²	剔	跳	聽	拖	通	采	餐	倉	草	切	千	湊
5	1	5	1	1	1	3	1	3	4	5	1	1	4	1	4	1	5	3	1	1
則	爭	疾	將	焦	津	井	楸	子	坐	爵	宗	租	聚	鑽	罪	尊	毒	短	堆	敦
策	撐	七	槍	鋏	親	請	秋	此	錯	雀	聰	粗	趣	攪	脆	村	禿	腫	推	吞

PEKING SOUND TABLE.

The following List of Syllables represents the application of the new system of spelling to the Peking dialect.

The points of departure from Sir Thos. Wade's system, are briefly as follows:—

1. Final *o* is changed to *oa*.
2. *U*, when followed by a vowel other than *i*, is

changed to *w*; when followed by *i*, the *u* is retained.

3. Final *ü* and final *ih* are both changed to *i*.
4. Final *eh* is changed to *ie*.
5. *Ss* is changed to *s*, so that *ssü* becomes *si*, and *tz* is changed to *ts*, so that *tsü* becomes *tsi*.
6. Final *h* is discarded in all cases.

See remarks at the end of the table.

阿	A, Nga	兆	Chao	楷	Ch'iai	角	Chioä	除	Ch'u	君	Chün
叻	Ai, Ngai	潮	Ch'ao	江	Chiang	卻	Ch'ioä	追	Chui	羣	Ch'ün
安	An, Ngan	這	Chei	槍	Ch'iang	酒	Chiu	吹	Ch'ui	爵	Ch'üoä
昂	Ang	這	Ché	交	Chiao	秋	Ch'iu	準	Chun	却	Ch'üoä
傲	Ao	車	Ch'é	巧	Ch'iao	窘	Chiung	春	Ch'un	孤	Chwa
乍	Cha	真	Chén	姐	Chie	窮	Ch'iuung	中	Chung	歛	Ch'wa
茶	Ch'a	臣	Ch'éh	且	Ch'ie	知	Chī	充	Ch'ung	拽	Ch'wai
齋	Chai	正	Chêng	賤	Ch'ie	池	Ch'ī	聚	Chü	揣	Ch'wai
柴	Ch'ai	成	Ch'éng	錢	Ch'ien	拙	Choä	取	Ch'ü	專	Chwan
占	Chan	祭	Chi	進	Chin	綽	Ch'oä	卷	Chüan	川	Ch'wan
詔	Ch'an	齊	Ch'i	親	Ch'in	畫	Chou	犬	Ch'üan	壯	Chwang
章	Chang	家	Chia	井	Ching	抽	Ch'ou	決	Ch'üe	牀	Ch'wang
昌	Ch'ang	恰	Ch'ia	清	Ch'ing	主	Chu	缺	Ch'üe	搨	Ch'woä

額	É	訓	Hsün	刻	K'ei	兩	Liang	那	Na	跑	P'ao
恩	Èn	學	Hsüoä	根	Kên	了	Liao	奶	Nai	倍	Pei
哼	Èng	乎	Hu	肯	K'ên	列	Lie	男	Nan	陪	P'ei
兒	Èr	回	Hui	更	Kêng	連	Lien	囊	Nang	本	Pên
法	Fa	混	Hun	坑	K'êng	林	Lin	鬧	Nao	盆	P'ên
反	Fan	紅	Hung	哥	Koä, Kê	另	Ling	內	Nei	扇	Pêng
方	Fang	花	Hwa	可	K'oä, K'ê	畧	Lioä	嫩	Nên	朋	P'êng
非	Fei	懷	Hwai	狗	Kou	留	Liu	能	Nêng	比	Pi
分	Fên	換	Hwan	口	K'ou	羅	Loä	你	Ni	皮	P'i
風	Fêng	黃	Hwang	古	Ku	陋	Lou	娘	Niang	表	Piao
佛	Foä	火	Hwoä	苦	K'u	路	Lu	鳥	Niao	票	P'iao
否	Fou	衣	I	棍	Kun	論	Lun	捏	Nie	別	Pie
夫	Fu	染	Jan	困	K'un	龍	Lung	念	Nien	撇	P'ie
哈	Ha	讓	Jang	工	Kung	驢	Lü	您	Nin	扁	Pien
害	Hai	繞	Jao	孔	K'ung	戀	Lüan	寧	Ning	片	P'ien
寒	Han	惹	Jê	瓜	Kwa	畧	Lüe	虐	Nioä	賓	Pin
杭	Hang	人	Jên	誇	K'wa	掄	Lün	牛	Niu	貧	P'in
好	Hao	扔	Jêng	怪	Kwai	畧	Lüoä	挪	Noä	兵	Ping
赫	Hei Hé	日	Ji	快	K'wai	亂	Lwan	辦	Nou	平	P'ing
很	Hên	若	Joä	官	Kwan	馬	Ma	奴	Nu	波	Poä
恆	Hêng	柔	Jou	歛	K'wan	買	Mai	嫩	Nun	破	P'oä
恆	Hoä Hé	如	Ju	光	Kwang	慢	Man	濃	Nung	剖	P'ou
河	Hou	瑞	Jui	况	K'wang	忙	Mang	女	Nü	布	Pu
後	Hsi	潤	Jun	規	Kwei	毛	Mao	虐	Nüe	普	P'u
希	Hsia	絨	Jung	規	K'wei	美	Mei	虐	Nüoä	撒	Sa
下	Hsiang	輓	Jwan	果	Kwoä	門	Mên	媛	Nwan	賽	Sai
向	Hsiao	恰	Ka	闊	K'woä	夢	Méng	訛	Oä	散	San
孝	Hsio	卡	K'a	拉	La	米	Mi	偶	Ou	桑	Sang
些	Hsien	改	Kai	來	Lai	苗	Miao	巴	Pa	掃	Sao
限	Hsin	開	K'ai	懶	Lan	滅	Mie	怕	P'a	色	Sê
欣	Hsing	甘	Kan	浪	Lang	面	Mien	拜	Pai	森	Sên
形	Hsioä	看	K'an	老	Lao	民	Min	派	P'ai	僧	Séng
學	Hsiu	剛	Kang	累	Lei	名	Ming	板	Pan	傻	Sha
休	Hsiung	炕	K'ang	勒	Lê	謬	Miu	盼	P'an	曬	Shai
兄	Hsü	告	Kao	冷	Lêng	摩	Moä	邦	Pang	山	Shan
須	Hsüan	考	K'ao	李	Li	謀	Mou	旁	P'ang	賞	Shang
旋	Hsüe	給	Kei	倆	Lia	墓	Mu	包	Pao	少	Shao

舍	Shè	算	Swan	參	Tie	草	Ts'ao	宗	Tsung	翁	Wèng
身	Shên	大	Ta	貼	T'ie	賊	Tsei	從	Ts'ung	我	Woă
聖	Shêng	他	T'a	店	Tien	則	Tsê	鑽	Tswan	武	Wu
時	Shi	歹	Tai	天	T'ien	策	Ts'é	竄	Ts'wan	牙	Ya
手	Shou	太	T'ai	定	Ting	怎	Tsên	妒	Tu	挨	Yai
書	Shu	單	Tan	聽	T'ing	參	Ts'ên	土	T'u	羊	Yang
水	Shui	炭	T'an	丟	Tiu	增	Tséng	對	Tui	要	Yao
順	Shun	當	Tang	多	Toă	層	Ts'êng	退	T'ui	言	Yen
耍	Shwa	湯	T'ang	妥	T'oă	子	Tsi	敦	Tun	夜	Yie
衰	Shwai	道	Tao	豆	Tou	次	Ts'i	吞	T'un	音	Yin
拴	Shwan	逃	T'ao	頭	T'ou	坐	Tsoă	冬	Tung	迎	Ying
雙	Shwang	得	Tei	雜	Tsa	錯	Ts'oă	同	T'ung	約	Yoă
說	Shwoă	得	Tê	擦	Ts'a	走	Tsou	短	Twan	有	Yu
絲	Si	忒	T'é	在	Tsai	湊	Ts'ou	團	T'wan	用	Yung
索	Soă	等	Têng	才	Ts'ai	祖	Tsu	瓦	Wa	魚	Yü
搜	Sou	疼	T'êng	贊	Tsan	粗	Ts'u	外	Wai	原	Yüan
素	Su	地	Ti	殘	Ts'an	嘴	Tsui	萬	Wan	月	Yüe
碎	Sui	替	T'i	葬	Tsang	催	Ts'ui	王	Wang	雲	Yün
孫	Sun	甲	Tiao	倉	Ts'ang	尊	Tsun	爲	Wei		
送	Sung	挑	T'iao	早	Ts'ao	寸	Ts'un	文	Wên		

REMARKS.

1. The exception made in substituting *w* for *u* (viz., when it is followed by *i*) is in deference to the views of my Peking advisers. Guided by my own hearing of the sound, as given by Peking teachers, I would have preferred to write *wei*, and so make the adoption of *w* uniform. Neither *u* nor *w* are equally fitting in all cases, but in any given dialect it is better to adhere to one or the other.

2. Of the final *ui*, Sir Thos. Wade says that "it is *uei* in some tones." It may be added that in many places it is *uei* (or *wei*) in all tones, which indicates that this is the normal sound and *ui* the tonal variation. It is unfortunate, seeing that it is *uei* in some tones, that this was not chosen as the writing, thus avoiding a distinction in finals which probably does not exist. A discriminating analysis will, I think, show that the final in *hui*; as, 灰, 回, 悔, 惠, is not really different from that in *k'wei*, as 虧, 魁, 愧, 愧, or *lei*, as 勒, 雷, 縲, 類, etc. Chinese teachers, when they understand the idea of classifying sounds, will not fail to class these finals together.

3. Of the finals *ien* and *üan*, Sir Thos. Wade says that in some tones *ien* changes to *ian*, and that in some tones *üan* changes to *üen*, and further that the two have the same peculiarity with regard to the final sound. It seems very strange under these circumstances that he did not spell them both *en* or both *an*. The fact that we have a number of final *ie* and a number of final *üe* but no final *ia* or *üa*, creates a strong presumption that *en* is the normal sound and *an* the tonal variation. It would be a distinct improvement if *üen* were substituted for *üan*, thus removing an unnecessary inconsistency.

4. Final *ün* represents a sound which is practically the same in Peking that it is in other Mandarin dialects. The general consensus of opinion in Central and Southern Mandarin is that it is better written *ün*. Sir Thos. Wade says of it, "It is inflected as if an *i*, very faint and rapidly pronounced, intervened between *ü* and *n*." If spelled *ün* it would avoid an apparent discrepancy between Pekinese and other dialects, where none exists in fact.

5. Final *eh* occurs in only one syllable, viz.—*yeh*. Although *y* coming before *i*, occludes it to a considerable extent, yet the analogy of *lie, mie, tie*, etc., indicates that the *i* belongs there, and in some tones especially, its force is quite discernible. The Chinese regard 烈滅貼 as having the same final with 也.

6. It would simplify the system, and be an improvement rather than otherwise, if *yen* were spelled *yien* and *yu* were spelled *yiiu*. These finals are not *in fact* different from those of *tien, mien, lien*, etc., or of *tiu, miu, liu*, etc. The *i* is indeed occluded by its union with *y*, so that it is scarcely heard, yet analogy shows that it is there, and in some tones its presence is distinctly felt.

7. Final *ih* of Sir Thos. Wade has been combined with *i* (representing *ü*), for the reason that the distinction between it and *ü* is more imaginary

than real—being largely the effect of differing initials. My Peking advisers say that a slight distinction is perhaps made in Peking, but certainly not such a distinction as is indicated by Sir Thos. Wade's description of the power of *i* in *ih*; viz,—“as *i* in chin, chick, thing.” Practically no distinction is heard in Chili outside of Peking. In Southern Mandarin the two sounds are regarded as identical.

8. In his syllabary recently published, Dr. Goodrich has rejected Sir Thos. Wade's *ho, lo* and *k'o* in favor of *hê, kê* and *k'é*, as more accurately representing the Pekiugese sounds. If this change had come to the author's knowledge in time, it would have been adopted throughout. As it is, the uncertainty as between *ê* and *o* has occasioned no small trouble, and frequent inconsistency.

NANKING SOUND TABLE.

THE following list of syllables represents the application of the new system of spelling to the Nanking Dialect. *U* is retained, because it represents the sound more accurately than *w*. Syllables containing it are pronounced so as to bring out the vowel force of *u*—often making the syllable sound like a dissyllable. The addition of *-h* to a syllable

indicates the existence of a fifth tone, spelled by the addition of *h* to the regular spelling. All fifth tones which modify the spelling of the fundamental syllable, together with all whose fundamental syllable is unknown, are inserted in alphabetic order.

See remarks at the end of the table.

阿 A	這 Che—h	揣 Ch'uai	方 Fang	希 Hi—h	換 Huan
叻 Ai	車 Ch'e—h	專 Chuan	法 Fauh	偕 Hiai	黃 Huang
安 An	真 Chên	川 Ch'uan	非 Fêei	向 Hiang	花 Huau—h
昂 Ang	臣 Ch'ên	壯 Chuang	分 Fên	孝 Hiao	回 Huei
傲 Ao	正 Chêng	牀 Ch'uang	風 Fêng	下 Hiau—h	或 Huêh
阿 Au	成 Ch'êng	抓 Chuau	否 Fèò	歇 Hieih	混 Huên
齋 Chai	書 Chêò	追 Chuei	夫 Fu—h	限 Hiein	許 Hū
柴 Ch'ai	抽 Ch'êò	吹 Ch'uei	害 Hai	欣 Hin	靴 Hūei—h
占 Chan	知 Chī—h	拙 Chuêh	寒 Han	形 Hing	喧 Hūein
謔 Ch'an	池 Ch'ī—h	準 Chuên	杭 Hang	學 Hioh	訓 Hūin, Hūing
章 Chang	着 Choh	春 Ch'uên	好 Hao	兄 Hiong	衣 I—h
昌 Ch'ang	綽 Ch'oh	額 Êh	哈 Hau	休 Hiu—h	改 Kai
兆 Chao	中 Chong	恩 Ên, Êng	赫 Hêh	火 Ho—h	開 K'ai
潮 Ch'ao	充 Ch'ong	偶 Êò	很 Hên	紅 Hong	甘 Kan
乍 Chau—h	主 Chu—h	兒 Êr	恒 Hêng	乎 Hu—h	看 K'an
茶 Ch'au—h	除 Ch'u—h	反 Fan	後 Hêò	懷 Huai	剛 Kang

坑	K'ang	工	Kong	兩	Liang	念	Nein	培	P'éo	僧	Séng
告	Kao	孔	K'ong	了	Liao	能	Néng	比	Pi—h	叟	Sào
考	K'ao	古	Ku—h	林	Lin	你	Ni—h	皮	P'i—h	矚	Shai
革	Kèh	苦	K'u—h	另	Ling	娘	Niang	表	Piao	山	Shan
客	K'èh	怪	Kuai	留	Liu	鳥	Niao	票	P'iao	賞	Shang
根	Kèn	快	K'uai	羅	Lo—h	寧	Ning	賓	Pin	少	Shao
肯	K'èn	官	Kuan	龍	Long	牛	Niu	貧	P'in	儂	Shau—h
更	Kéng	欸	K'uan	路	Lu—h	椰	No—h	兵	Ping	舍	She—h
坑	K'èng	光	Kuang	亂	Luan	濃	Nong	平	P'ing	身	Shên
狗	Kèo	况	K'uang	論	Luen	奴	Nu	波	Po—h	聖	Shéng
口	K'éo	瓜	Kuan—h	論	Luén	媛	Nuan	破	P'o—h	時	Shi—h
記	Ki—h	誇	K'uan	驢	Lü—h	女	Nü	布	Pu—h	句	Shoh
奇	K'i—h	規	Kuei	買	Mai	阿	O—h	普	P'u—h	書	Shu—h
界	Kiai	魁	K'uei	慢	Man	翁	Ong	染	Ran	衰	Shuai
楷	K'ai	國	Kuèh	忙	Mang	拜	Pai	讓	Rang	拴	Shuan
江	Kiang	闊	K'uèh	毛	Mao	派	P'ai	繞	Rao	雙	Shuang
腔	K'iang	棍	Kuén	馬	Mau—h	板	Pan	惹	Rèi	水	Shuei
交	Kiao	困	K'uén	滅	Meih	盼	P'an	熱	Rèh	順	Shuén
巧	K'iao	居	Kü—h	面	Mein Meing	邦	Pang	忍	Rén	西	Si—h
家	Kiau—h	去	K'ü—h	美	Mèi	旁	P'ang	扔	Réng	相	Siang
痴	K'iau—h	厥	K'üei—h	麥	Mèh	包	Pao	柔	Réu	小	Siao
絮	Kieih	竊	K'üei—h	門	Mèn	跑	P'ao	日	Rih	心	Sin
怯	K'ieih	巷	Küein	夢	Méng	巴	Pau—h	弱	Roh	性	Sing
見	Kiein, Kieing	犬	K'uein	謀	Méu	怕	P'au	絨	Rong	修	Siu
欠	K'iein, K'ieing	君	Küin	米	Mi—h	別	Pei—h	如	Ru—h	絲	Si
金	Kin	羣	K'üin	苗	Miao	撇	P'eih	軟	Ruan	所	So—h
欽	K'in	來	Lai	民	Min	扁	Pein Peing	銳	Ruei	送	Song
輕	King	懶	Lan	名	Ming	片	P'iein P'eing	潤	Ruén	素	Su—h
輕	K'ing	浪	Lang	謬	Miu	倍	P'èi	賽	Sai	算	Suan
脚	Kioh	老	Lao	摩	Mo—h	陪	P'èi	散	San	碎	Suei
卻	K'ioh	拉	Lau—h	母	Mu—h	白	P'èh	桑	Sang	孫	Suén
窘	Kiong	列	Leih	奶	Nai	迫	P'èh	掃	Sao	須	Sü—h
窮	K'iong	連	Lein	男	Nan	本	P'èn	撒	Sau—h	雪	Süeih
救	Kiu	勒	Lèh	囊	Nang	盆	P'én	些	Sei—h	旋	Süein
求	K'iu	冷	Léng	鬧	Nao	崩	P'èng	先	Sein	巡	Sün
哥	Ko—h	陋	Léu	那	Nau—h	朋	P'èng	色	Séh	歹	Tai
可	K'o—h	李	Li—h	捏	Neih	褒	P'èu	森	Sén	太	T'ai

單 Tan	替 T'i—h	擦 Ts'au—h	親 Ts'in	聚 Tsü	文 Wên
炭 T'an	巾 Tiao	姐 Tsei—h	井 Tsing	取 Ts'ü	挨 Yai
當 Tang	挑 T'iao	且 Ts'ei—h	清 Ts'ing	嗟 Tsüei—h	羊 Yang
湯 T'ang	定 Ting	賤 Tsein Tseing	酒 Tsiu	全 Ts'üein	要 Yao
道 Tao	聽 T'ing	錢 Tsein Ts'eing	秋 Ts'iu	俊 Tsüin	牙 Yau—h
逃 T'ao	丟 Tiu	則 Tsêh	子 Tsī	姍 Tu—h	夜 Yei—h
大 Tau—h	多 To—h	策 Ts'êh	次 Ts'ī	土 T'u—h	言 Yein Yeing
他 T'au—h	妥 T'o—h	怎 Tsên	坐 Tso—h	短 Tuan	音 Yin
爹 Tei—h	冬 Tong	增 Tsêng	錯 Ts'o—h	團 T'uan	迎 Ying
貼 T'eih	同 T'ong	層 Ts'êng	宗 Tsong	對 Tuei	有 Yiu
店 Tein Teing	在 Tsai	走 Tsêo	從 Ts'ong	退 T'uei	約 Yoh
天 T'ein T'eing	才 Ts'ai	湊 Ts'êo	祖 Tsu—h	敦 Tuên	用 Yong
得 Têh	贊 Tsan	祭 Tsi—h	粗 Ts'u—h	吞 T'uên	魚 Yü
特 T'êh	殘 Ts'an	齊 Ts'ī—h	鑽 Tsuan	武 U—h	月 Yüeh
等 Têng	葬 Tsang	將 Tsiang	竄 Ts'uan	外 Wai	原 Yüein
疼 T'êng	倉 Ts'ang	槍 Ts'iang	嘴 Tsuei	萬 Wan	雲 Yüin
豆 T'êo	早 Tsao	焦 Tsiao	催 Ts'uei	王 Wang	
頭 T'êo	草 Ts'ao	俏 Ts'iao	尊 Tsuên	瓦 Wau—h	
地 Ti—h	咱 Tsau—h	進 Tsin	寸 Ts'uên	爲 W'ei	

REMARKS.

1. In Nanking, initial *n* and *l* are not distinguished. Some of the people say *l* and some say *n*, and all are unconscious of the difference. Both syllables are given in the table according to the usage of general Mandarin. If students of Nankingese will take pains to acquire this distinction and keep it up, it will do their Nankingese no harm, and will be a very great advantage in case of removal to another dialect, or in conversing with persons from the North or West.

2. Final *n* and *ng*, especially when following *i*, are confused in the same manner as initial *n* and *l*. Both syllables are given in the table

according to the usage of general Mandarin, and for the same reason as in the case of initial *l* and *n*.

3. There is a difference of opinion in Nanking as to whether 這, 車 and 舍 should be spelled with *e* or *ê*. The older spelling is *ê*, the newer, *e*. Personally I hear the sound rather *e* than *ê*. All the other syllables with this final, are confined to the fifth tone and become *êh*, save 月 which inclines strongly to *eh*.

4. Final *ên* is not so clearly *ê* as in Pekingese, but rather a sound between *en* and *ên*. The balance of opinion is in favor of writing it *ên*.

KIUKIANG SOUND TABLE.

哎 Ai	潮 Ch'ao	這 Chei	臣 Ch'ên	着 Choh	除 Ch'ü—h
阿 Au	乍 Chau—h	車 Ch'ei	書 Ch'êo—h	綽 Ch'oh	揣 Ch'wai
章 Chang	茶 Ch'au—h	占 Chein	抽 Ch'êo—h	中 Chung	壯 Chwang
昌 Ch'ang	折 Châh	諾 Ch'êin	知 Chī—h	充 Ch'ung	床 Ch'wang
兆 Chao	轍 Ch'âh	真 Chên	池 Ch'ī—h	主 Chū—h	抓 Chwau

拙	Chwáh	兄	Hsiung	見	Kien	勒	Láh	男	Nan	怕	P'au—h
缺	Ch'wáh	乎	Hu—h	欠	K'ien	累	Lei	囊	Nang	白	Páh
追	Chwei	紅	Hung	金	Kin	論	Lên	鬧	Nao	迫	P'áh
吹	Ch'wei	壤	Hwai	欽	K'in	陋	Léo—h	那	Nau—h	倍	Pei
準	Chwén	黃	Hwang	經	King	李	Li—h	內	Nei	陪	P'ei
春	Ch'wén	花	Hwau—h	輕	K'ing	兩	Liang	嫩	Nên	本	Pên
專	Chwoan	或	Hwáh	脚	Kioh	了	Liao	癩	Néo	盆	P'én
川	Ch'woan	回	Hwei	卻	K'ioh	烈	Lieih	愛	Ngai	褒	P'éo
耳	Êr	混	Hwén	救	Kiu—h	連	Lien	安	Ngan	咏	P'éo
反	Fan	換	Hwoan	求	K'iu—h	林	Lin	昂	Ngang	比	Pi—h
方	Fang	衣	I—h	窮	K'iuang	另	Ling	傲	Ngao	皮	P'i—h
法	Fauh	啟	Kai	哥	Ko—h	掠	Lioh	額	Ngáh	表	Piao
非	Fei	開	K'ai	可	K'o—h	留	Liu	恩	Ngên	票	P'iao
分	Fên	甘	Kan	古	Ku—h	羅	Lo—h	偶	Ngéo	別	Pieih
否	Fèo	看	K'an	苦	K'u—h	亂	Loan	我	Ngo—h	撇	P'ieih
夫	Fu—h	剛	Kang	工	Kung	龍	Lung	你	Ni—h	扁	Pien
風	Fung	炕	K'ang	孔	K'ung	買	Mai	娘	Niang	片	P'ien
害	Hai	告	Kao	怪	Kwai	慢	Man	鳥	Niao	賓	P'in
寒	Han	考	K'ao	快	K'wai	忙	Mang	捏	Nieih	貧	P'in
杭	Hang	卡	K'au—h	欸	K'wan	毛	Mao	念	Nien	兵	Ping
好	Hao	革	Káh	光	Kwang	馬	Mau—h	寧	Nin or Ning	平	P'ing
哈	Hau	客	K'áh	况	K'wang	美	Mei	虐	Nioh	波	Po—h
赫	Háh	根	Kên	瓜	Kwau—h	麥	Méh	牛	Niu	破	P'o—h
很	Hên	肯	K'ên	誇	K'wan	門	Mên	挪	No—h	半	Poan
後	Héo	狗	K'êo	國	Kwáh	謀	Méo	媛	Noan	盤	P'oan
火	Ho—h	口	K'éo	關	K'wáh	米	Mi—h	膿	Nung	布	Pu—h
希	Hsi—h	記	Ki—h	規	Kwei	苗	Miao	女	Nü	普	P'u—h
皆	Hsiai	奇	K'i—h	魁	K'wei	咩	Miei—h	啊	O	踴	Pung
向	Hsiang	界	Kiai	棍	Kwên	面	Mien	拜	Pai	朋	P'ung
孝	Hsiao	江	Kiang	困	K'wên	民	Min	派	P'ai	讓	Rang
下	Hsiau—h	腔	K'iang	官	Kwoan	名	Ming	板	Pan	繞	Rao
血	Hsieih	交	Kiao	寬	K'woan	摩	Mo—h	盼	P'an	繞	Ráh
限	Hsien	巧	K'iao	來	Lai	滿	Moan	邦	Pang	熱	Ráh
欣	Hsin	家	Kiau—h	懶	Lan	墓	Mu—h	旁	P'ang	惹	Rei
形	Hsing	痲	K'iau—h	浪	Lang	夢	Mung	包	Pao	人	Rên
學	Hsioh	結	Kieih	老	Lao	您	N'	跑	P'ao	柔	Réo—h
休	Hsiu—h	茄	K'iei—h	拉	Lau—h	奶	Nai	巴	Pau—h	雲	Ruên
										日	Rih

弱 Roh	雙 Shwang	湯 T'ang	多 To—h	將 Tsiang	冬 Tung
染 Roan	要 Shwau—h	道 Tao	妥 T'o—h	槍 Ts'iang	同 T'ung
如 Rū—h	脫 Shwáh	逃 T'ao	短 Toan	焦 Tsiao	外 Wai
賽 Sai	瑞 Shwei	大 Tau—h	團 T'uan	俏 Ts'iao	萬 Wan
散 San	順 Shwèn	他 T'au—h	在 Tsai	姐 Tsiei—h	王 Wang
桑 Sang	拴 Shwoan	得 Táh	才 Ts'ai	且 Ts'iei—h	瓦 Wau—h
掃 Sao	西 Si—h	特 T'áh	贊 Tsan	賤 Tsien	瓦 Wau—h
撒 Sau—h	相 Siang	兌 Tei	殘 Ts'an	錢 Ts'ien	爲 Wei
色 Sáh	小 Siao	退 T'ei	葬 Tsang	進 Tsin	文 Wèn
碎 Sei	些 Siei—h	敦 Tèn	倉 Ts'ang	親 Ts'in	惡 Wo—h
森 Sèn	先 Sien	吞 T'én	早 Tsao	井 Tsing	丸 Woan
叟 Séo—h	心 Sin	豆 T'èo—h	草 Ts'ao	清 T's'ing	武 Wu—h
賞 Shang	性 Sing	頭 T'èo—h	哨 Tsau—h	爵 Tsioh	翁 Wung
少 Shao	削 Sioh	地 Ti—h	薩 Ts'au—h	雀 Ts'ioh	挨 Yai
傻 Shau—h	修 Siu—h	替 T'i—h	則 Tsáh	酒 Tsiu	羊 Yang
舌 Sháh	絲 Si	吊 Tiao	策 Ts'áh	秋 Ts'iu	要 Yao
舍 Shei	所 So—h	挑 T'iao	罪 Tsei	子 Tsi	牙 Yau—h
善 Shein	算 Soan	參 Tiei—h	崔 Ts'ei	次 Tsi	液 Yei—h
身 Shén	送 Sung	鐵 T'ieih	怎 Tsén	坐 Tso—h	有 Yèo—h
手 Shéo—h	歹 Tai	店 Tien	寸 Ts'én	錯 Tso	言 Yien
時 Shi—h	太 T'ai	天 T'ien	走 Tséo—h	鑽 Tsoan	音 Yin
嗽 Sho—h	單 Tan	定 Ting	湊 Ts'éo—h	竄 Ts'oan	迎 Ying
書 Shū—h	炭 T'an	聽 T'ing	祭 Tsi—h	宗 Tsung	啣 Yo—h
衰 Shwai	當 Tang	丟 Tiu	齊 Tsi—h	從 Ts'ung	用 Yung

REMARKS.

1. Initial *l* and *n* are occasionally confused, but for the most part they are distinguished in the same way as in general Mandarin.

2. With respect to final *n* and *ng*, syllables in *an* and *ang* are generally distinguished; final *én* is used exclusively, final *éng* disappearing entirely; final *in* and *ing* are confused to some extent, especially in the native city, but the dialect, as a whole, makes the same distinction that is made in general Mandarin.

3. *K* before *i* approximates *ch*, especially in the aspirates, but still is decidedly not *ch* as heard in Pekingese. The syllable *k'ing*, in particular, becomes practically *ch*, and might, with propriety, be so written.

4. Final *á*, or *áh*, is confined to the 5th tone, and is peculiar to the Kiukiang dialect. Rev. J. R. Hykes, who has arranged the syllabary as

here given, regards it as the 5th tone of syllables in *ai*. It is so regarded by native scholars in Kiukiang. Judging from analogy it looks as if it were rather the Kiukiang modification of *éh*, as heard in other Southern Mandarin dialects. It is a singular fact that nearly all 5th tones in *éh* are without a fundamental syllable.

5. In the syllables 占 and 善 the vowel is a full clear *ei*, and quite different from 見, *chien*, and others of the same class.

6. The termination *én* is not as distinctly *én* as in Pekingese, but tends more or less towards *en*. This is especially the case with the syllable 人, which is in fact *ren*.

In the syllable 雲 *ruén* the *u* is quite short and cannot be represented by *w*. In fact the difference between 人 and 雲 is well expressed by *ren* and *ren*.

TÊNGCHOW SOUND TABLE.

阿 A	分 Fên	黃 Hwang	欽 K'in	果 Kwoă	夢 Mêng
阿 Ai	分 Fêng	回 Hwei	輕 King	闊 K'woă	米 Mi
安 An	否 Fo	混 Hwên	輕 K'ing	拉 La	苗 Miao
安 Ang	夫 Fu	火 Hwoă	角 Kioă	來 Lai	滅 Mie
傲 Ao	哈 Ha	衣 I	卻 K'ioă	懶 Lan	面 Mien
傲 Chang	害 Hai	蛤 Ka	救 Kiu	浪 Lang	民 Min
昌 Ch'ang	寒 Han	磔 K'a	求 K'iu	老 Lao	名 Ming
兆 Chao	杭 Hang	改 Kai	窘 Kiung	累 Lei	謀 Mo
潮 Ch'ao	好 Hao	開 K'ai	窮 K'iuung	勒 Lê	墓 Mu
祭 Chi	黑 Hê	甘 Kan	勾 Ko	論 Lên	那 Na
齊 Ch'í	很 Hên	看 K'an	口 K'o	冷 Lêng	奶 Nai
姐 Chie	恆 Hêng	剛 Kang	古 Ku	李 Li	男 Nan
且 Ch'ie	希 Hi	炕 K'ang	苦 K'u	倆 Lia	囊 Nang
賤 Chien	下 Hia	告 Kao	工 Kung	兩 Liang	關 Nao
錢 Ch'ien	偕 Hiai	考 K'ao	孔 K'ung	了 Liao	內 Nei
進 Chin	向 Hiang	個 Kê	居 Kû	列 Lie	您 Nên
親 Ch'in	孝 Hiao	刻 K'ê	去 K'ü	連 Lien	能 Nêng
井 Ching	歇 Hie	根 Kên	決 Küe	林 Lin	你 Ni
清 Ch'ing	鞋 Hiei	肯 K'ên	癩 K'üe	另 Ling	娘 Niang
酒 Chiu	限 Hien	更 Kêng	卷 Küen	畧 Lioă	鳥 Niao
秋 Ch'iu	欣 Hin	坑 K'êng	犬 K'üen	留 Liu	捏 Nie
爵 Choă	形 Hing	記 Ki	君 Kün	隴 Liung	念 Nien
絆 Ch'ôă	學 Hioă	奇 K'í	羣 K'ün	陋 Lo	寧 Ning
踪 Chung	休 Hiu	家 Kia	瓜 Kwa	羅 Loă	牛 Niu
主 Chü	兄 Hiung	恰 K'ia	誇 K'wa	路 Lu	濃 Niung
除 Ch'ü	後 Ho	界 Kiai	怪 Kwai	龍 Lung	耨 No
全 Ch'üen	乎 Hu	江 Kiang	快 K'wai	驢 Lü	挪 Noă
額 Ê	紅 Hung	腔 K'iang	官 Kwan	馬 Ma	奴 Nu
恩 Ên	許 Hü	交 Kiao	款 K'wan	買 Mai	膿 Nung
呼 Êng	穴 Hüe	巧 K'iao	光 Kwang	慢 Man	女 Nü
兒 Êr	喧 Hüen	結 Kie	况 K'wang	忙 Mang	偶 O
法 Fa	訓 Hüin	怯 K'ie	規 Kwei	毛 Mao	巴 Pa
反 Fan	花 Hwa	見 Kien	魁 K'wei	美 Mei	怕 P'a
方 Fang	懷 Hwai	欠 K'ien	悞 Kwên	末 Mè	拜 Pai
非 Fei	換 Hwan	金 Kin	困 K'wên	門 Mên	派 P'ai

板 Pan	普 P'u	送 Sung	挑 T'iao	增 Tsêng	瓦 Wa
盼 P'an	撒 Sa	耍 Swa	參 Tie	層 Ts'êng	外 Wai
邦 Pang	賽 Sai	衰 Swai	貼 T'ie	子 Ts'i	萬 Wan
旁 P'ang	散 San	拴 Swan	店 Tien	次 Ts'i	王 Wang
包 Pao	掃 Sang	雙 Swang	天 T'ien	走 Tso	爲 Wei
跑 P'ao	桑 Sao	水 Swei	定 Ting	湊 Ts'o	文 Wên
倍 Pei	碎 Sei	順 Swên	聽 T'ing	坐 Tsoǎ	我 Woǎ
陪 P'ei	色 Sê	大 Ta	丟 Tiu	錯 Ts'oǎ	武 Wu
被 Pê	森 Sên	他 T'a	豆 To	祖 Tsu	翁 Wung
破 P'é	僧 Sêng	歹 Tai	頭 T'o	粗 Ts'u	牙 Ya
本 Pên	儂 Sha	太 T'ai	多 Toǎ	宗 Tsung	挨 Yai
盆 P'ên	賞 Shang	單 Tan	妥 T'oǎ	聰 Ts'ung	羊 Yang
崩 Pêng	少 Shao	炭 T'an	雜 Tsa	抓 Tswa	要 Yao
朋 P'éng	西 Shi	當 Tang	擦 Ts'a	<small>No character.</small> Ts'wa	矮 Yei
比 Pi	舍 Shie	湯 T'ang	在 Tsai	拽 Tswai	夜 Yie
皮 P'i	善 Shien	道 Tao	才 Ts'ai	揣 Ts'wai	言 Yien
表 Piao	心 Shin	逃 T'ao	贊 Tsan	專 Tswan	音 Yin
票 P'iao	聖 Shing	兌 Tei	殘 Ts'an	川 Ts'wan	迎 Ying
別 Pie	手 Shiu	退 T'ei	葬 Tsang	壯 Tswang	有 Yiu
撇 P'tie	勺 Shoǎ	得 Tê	倉 Ts'ang	牀 Ts'wang	約 Yoǎ
扁 P'ien	松 Shung	忒 T'é	早 Tsao	追 Tswei	用 Yung
片 P'ien	書 Shü	敦 Tên	草 Ts'ao	吹 Ts'wei	魚 Yü
賓 Pin	說 Sh.üe	吞 T'ên	罪 Tsei	準 Tswên	月 Yüe
貧 P'in	尋 SLüin	等 Têng	崔 Ts'ei	春 Ts'wên	原 Yüen
兵 Ping	絲 Si	疼 T'êng	則 T'é	妒 Tu	雲 Yüin
平 P'ing	搜 So	地 Ti	策 Ts'é	土 T'u	
剖 P'o	索 Soǎ	替 Ti	怎 Tsén	冬 Tung	
布 Pu	素 Su	甲 Tiao	岑 Ts'ên	同 T'ung	

REMARKS.

1. The dialect of Têngchow is remarkable for the small number of its syllables and for the clearness with which they are distinguished. The sounds also depart less from normal English sounds than those of most Mandarin dialects—the only elementary sound in it not heard in English being ü.

2. The hard sounds are all pure hard—showing no tendency whatever towards *ch*; nor does *h*, when followed by *i* or *ü*, show any tendency to change to *hs*. Both *ch* and *sh* are pronounced quite as they are in English.

3. The double readings, due to accidental variation, are very few. This is, no doubt, due to the comparative isolation of the promontory, and the absence of admixture of other dialects. Pekingese has more than ten times as many such variations.

4. The termination *iu* shows a strong tendency to pass into *éu* or *io*. In some tones of certain syllables the final *o* is quite distinct. The predominant sound, however, is *iu*.

5. The termination *ien* changes in the 1st and 4th tones to *ien*, and the termination *üen* changes

in the 1st and 4th tones to *üan*. It is evident, however, from analogy that *en* is the normal sound, and *an* the tonal variation.

6. In the 1st and 4th tones *ing*, after *ch* and *k*, tends to pass into *ieng*—a tonal variation

which need not be recognised in a table of sounds

7. The syllables *ch'ien* and *shün* are stray-sounds from some outside dialect, and are confined,—the former to 全 and the latter to 巡 and one or two other characters.

WEIHEN SOUND TABLE.

阿 A	風 Fêng	性 Hsing	蛤 Ka	金 Kin	闊 K'woä
章 Chang	否 Fêo	修 Hsiu	磕 K'a	欽 K'in	古 Kwu
昌 Ch'ang	佛 Foä	誦 Hsiung	改 Kai	經 King	苦 K'wu
兆 Chao	夫 Fu	須 H-ü	開 K'ai	輕 K'ing	拉 La
潮 Ch'ao	哈 Ha	旅 H-üin	甘 Kan	救 Ku	來 Lai
真 Chen	害 Hai	雪 Hsüe	看 Kan	求 K'iu	傲 Lan
臣 Ch'en	寒 Han	巡 Hsüin	看 Kan	求 K'iu	浪 Lang
畫 Ch'êo	杭 Hang	紅 Hung	剛 Kang	窮 K'iuang	老 Liao
抽 Ch'êo	好 Hao	許 Hü	炕 K'ang	工 Kung	冷 Léng
占 Chuan	赫 Hei	喧 Hüan	告 Kao	孔 K'ung	陋 Léu
韶 Ch'ian	很 Hen	穴 Hüe	格 Kei	居 Kū	李 Li
這 Chie	恆 Hêng	訓 Hüin	刻 K'ei	去 Kū	倆 Lia
車 Ch'ie	候 Hêo	花 Hwa	根 Ken	卷 Küan	連 Lian
正 Ching	希 Hi	懷 Hwai	肯 Ken	犬 K'üan	兩 Liang
成 Ch'ing	下 Hia	換 Hwan	更 Kêng	君 Kün	了 Liao
知 Chi	偕 Hiai	黃 Hwang	坑 K'eng	羣 Kün	列 Lie
池 Ch'í	限 Hian	回 Hwei	狗 Kêo	腳 K'üa	林 Liu
拙 Choa	向 Hiang	混 Hwen	口 K'êo	却 K'üoä	另 Ling
綽 Ch'oa	孝 Hiao	火 Hwoä	記 Ki	瓜 Kwa	界 Liöä
主 Chü	竭 Hie	乎 Hwu	奇 Ki	誇 K'wa	留 Liu
除 Ch'ü	欣 Hin	衣 I	家 Kia	怪 Kwai	隴 Liung
專 Chwan	形 Hing	染 Jran	恰 K'ia	快 K'wai	羅 Löä
川 Ch'wan	休 Hiu	讓 Jrang	界 Kiai	官 Kwan	路 Lu
準 Chwen	兄 Hiung	繞 Jrao	見 Kian	款 K'wan	龍 Lung
春 Ch'wen	西 Hsi	柔 Jêo	欠 K'ian	光 Kwang	驢 Lü
兒 Êr	斜 Hsia	惹 Jrie	江 Kiang	况 K'wang	界 Lüe
法 Fa	先 Hsian	人 Jrin	腔 K'iang	規 Kwei	亂 Lwan
反 Fan	相 Hsiang	如 Jru	交 Kiao	魁 K'wei	累 Lwei
方 Fang	小 Hsiao	絨 Jrung	巧 K'iao	棍 Kwen	倫 Lwen
非 Fei	些 Hsie	輦 Jrwan	結 Kie	困 K'wen	馬 Ma
分 Fen	心 Hsin	若 Jrwoä	怯 K'ie	果 K'woä	買 Mai

慢	Man	濃	Niung	破	P'òǎ	雙	Srwang	雜	Tsa	全	Tsh'üan
芒	Mang	挪	Noǎ	布	Pu	誰	Srwei	擦	Ts'a	俊	Tsh'ün
毛	Mao	奴	Nu	昔	P'u	朔	Srwoǎ	在	Tsai	爵	Ts'üoǎ
美	Mei	膿	Nung	撒	Sa	素	Su	才	Ts'ai	雀	Ts'üoǎ
門	Men	女	Nü	賽	Sai	送	Sung	贊	Tsan	子	Ts'i
夢	Mêng	媛	Nwan	散	San	算	Swan	殘	Ts'an	次	Ts'i
謀	Mèo	餒	Nwei	桑	Sang	碎	Swei	葬	Tsang	扎	Tsra
米	Mi	巴	Pa	掃	Sao	孫	Swen	倉	Ts'ang	茶	Ts'ra
面	Mian	怕	P'a	塞	Sei	大	Ta	早	Tsao	齋	Tsrai
苗	Miao	拜	Pai	叟	Séo	他	T'a	草	Ts'ao	柴	Ts'rai
滅	Mie	派	P'ai	僧	Séng	歹	Tai	賊	Tsei	踮	Tsran
民	Min	派	Pan	賞	Shang	太	T'ai	策	Ts'ei	產	Ts'ran
名	Ming	盼	P'an	少	Shao	單	Tan	偕	Tsen	找	Tsrao
摩	Moǎ	邦	Pang	身	Shen	炭	T'an	增	Tséng	抄	Ts'rao
墓	Mu	旁	P'ang	善	Shian	當	Tang	層	Ts'èng	窖	Tsrei
那	Na	包	Pao	舍	Shie	湯	T'ang	走	Tséo	拆	Ts'rei
奶	Nai	跑	P'ao	聖	Shing	道	Tao	湊	Ts'éo	箴	Tsren
男	Nan	倍	Pei	手	Shiu	逃	T'ao	即	Tshi	岑	Ts'ren
囊	Nang	陪	P'ei	十	Shi	得	Tei	妻	Ts'hi	爭	Tsréng
鬧	Nao	本	Pen	勺	Shoǎ	忒	T'ei	尖	Tshian	撐	Ts'réng
內	Nei	盆	P'en	書	Shü	等	Téng	前	Tsh'ian	鄒	Tsréo
能	Néng	崩	Péng	順	Shüin	疹	T'éng	將	Tshiang	愁	Ts'réo
禱	Nèo	朋	P'éng	絲	Si	豆	Téu	鎗	Tsh'iang	之	Ts'ri
艾	Ngai	剖	P'éo	索	Soǎ	頭	T'éo	焦	Tshiao	匙	Ts'ri
安	Ngan	比	Pi	沙	Sra	地	Ti	俏	Tsh'iao	卓	Tsroǎ
昂	Ngang	皮	P'i	晒	Srai	替	T'i	節	Tshie	錯	Ts'roǎ
傲	Ngao	扁	Pian	山	Sran	店	Tian	切	Tsh'ie	助	Tsru
厄	Ngei	斤	P'ian	梢	Srao	天	T'ian	進	Tshin	楚	Ts'ru
恩	Ngen	表	Piao	色	Srei	甲	Tiao	親	Tsh'in	中	Tsrun
偶	Ngéu	票	P'iao	森	Sren	挑	T'iao	井	Tshing	冲	Ts'run
你	Ni	別	Pie	生	Sréng	參	Tie	清	Tsh'ing	抓	Ts'run
念	Nian	撇	P'ie	樓	Sréo	貼	T'ie	酒	Tshiu	孤	Ts'run
娘	Niang	賓	Pin	師	Sri	定	Ting	秋	Tsh'iu	No character.	Ts'rwa
鳥	Niao	貧	P'in	疏	Sru	聽	T'ing	踪	Tshiu	拽	Ts'rwa
捏	Nie	兵	Ping	耍	Srwa	丟	Tiu	從	Tsh'iu	揣	Ts'rwai
甯	Ning	平	P'ing	率	Srwei	多	Toǎ	聚	Tsh'iu	庄	Ts'rwang
牛	Niu	波	Poǎ	拴	Srwan	安	T'oǎ	取	Tsh'ü	窗	Ts'rwang
										窗	Ts'rwang
										道	Ts'rwei

吹 Ts'wei	崔 Ts'wei	團 T'wan	王 Wang	羊 Yang	魚 Yü
祖 Tsu	尊 Tswen	對 Twei	爲 Wei	要 Yao	原 Yüan
粗 Ts'u	寸 Ts'wen	退 T'wei	文 Wen	夜 Yie	雲 Yüin
宗 Tsung	妒 Tu	敦 Twen	翁 Wèng	言 Yian	約 Yüoä
聰 Ts'ung	土 T'u	吞 T'wen	我 Woä	音 Yin	
鑽 Tswan	冬 Tung	凡 Wa	武 Wu	迎 Ying	
竄 Ts'wan	同 T'ung	外 Wai	牙 Ya	有 Yiu	
罪 Tswei	短 Twan	萬 Wan	挨 Yai	用 Yung	

REMARKS.

1. Syllables which in most other Mandarin dialects begin with initial *s* and *ts*, are in Wei-hien divided into two sets, one set having simply *s* and *ts* as in other dialects, and the other set having *s* and *ts* modified by *r*.

2. The characters under the Pekingese initial *hs* divide into two classes, one taking *hy* and the other *hs*, the former embracing characters read *hy* in Southern Mandarin, and the latter those read *si*.

3. *Tsh* represents a sound which is neither *ch* nor *ts*, but a combination of the two. It is always followed by *i* or *ü*, whilst *ts* alone is never followed by *i* or *ü*.

4. All final *n*'s are nasal, so that the *n* is scarcely audible.

5. In final *en* the sound of the vowel is obscured by the strong nasal, so that it is difficult to tell whether it should be written *en* or *èn*. There is a difference of opinion as to which is the better writing.

6. The syllables *chen*, *ch'en* and *shen* show a strong tendency towards *chin*, *ch'in* and *shin*, and the syllables *ching*, *ch'ing* and *shing* show a similar tendency towards *chèng*, *ch'èng* and *shèng*. In both cases the sounds are really admixtures of the clear *i* of the district to the east, with the *e* or *è* of the region to the west.

7. In the syllables *chü*, *ch'ü* and *shü* the *ü* is not pure, but lies between *ü* and *u*.

COMPARATIVE CHART.

THE foregoing five tables are combined in a comparative chart, printed in colors and inserted as a frontispiece. This chart shows in detail the relation of the several dialects to each other. So

far as possible the same key characters have been retained throughout. The preparation of the chart has entailed much labor, and its printing considerable expense.



一 書中並列之句，皆係不通行者，先生可擇其行者教之，如俱不行，而另有他話與之意同，亦可隨意示明。

一 西人學習官話，原非易事，未免常有忘記與錯亂之時，爲先生者，應當耐性，屢說覲述，教示不倦，方爲善於教導者也。

一 書中旣無話不說，所用之字，未免有希見罕用者，雖覺生索，却經名士批過，大都憑衆人之識見而定，故有以爲非者，亦未可憑一人之識見而改也，其中亦有無心之錯字，書後業已指明，先生從而改之可也。

例言

夫人之教話，原非中國之常事，故所請之先生，未必盡得要訣。今余不揣鄙陋，畧舉數端，以誌於下。

一 當知此書，非爲人之學文而作，乃爲學話而作也。且所編之話語，亦非效法書中句法，特以工雅爲貴，乃摹倣口中句法，以自然爲貴也。爲先生者，宜詳辨之。

一 此書所記之四聲，非憑五方元音而定，乃憑北京之語音而定。蓋中國之四聲，處處不同，論及說話，各當以本地之聲氣爲準，不可拘於五方元音，亦不可拘於此書，祇當推敲本地之語音，憑己之耳韻，聽其爲何聲，卽言其爲何聲也。

一 中國書中，雖有五聲之說，然而北方祇有四聲，蓋入聲獨南方有之，而北方諸省，已將此聲混於餘四聲內，故在北方教話之先生，可將入聲之說，置之不論，祇留心分辨四聲可也。

一 若學者請先生誦讀，自己隨而學之，則先生誦讀之時，務要出於自然，使其輕重快慢，各得其當，聲音不可太高，亦不可故作腔調，一如誦經讀文者然。

一 如學者吐字不清，未得字之眞音，先生則當立即示明，使其說得恰對，蓋於初時學錯，以後雖欲改之，亦深難矣。卽於平素說話之間，亦當爲之留意，一有不對之處，卽當言明，不可聽其錯誤，而絕不理也。

官話類編序

此書之作，原爲西人學官話而作也。所謂官話者，非言盡爲官場中話，乃言通行之話也。狄公有志於此書，由來久矣。自二十年前，卽有所積蓄。近來五六年間，與僕專作此事，嘔心吐膽，不知凡幾。論此書之作法，係依話語之樣數，分作二百題目，每題一課。凡話語之種類式樣，以及如何變轉，如何接連，此二百題，俱已賅括。至若課中散語，非盡自編，更博覽聖諭廣訓，好述傳，西遊記，水滸，自邇致等書，擇其言語之佳者，按題分列，且語中所論，則甚周徧。凡農工商賈，官場日用，無不俱備。總爲發明各題之用法，而加之於諸事也。故學者如能學熟此二百課，其話語已足用矣。如能精通此二百題，而說話之妙訣，則已得矣。且此書之成，並非一人之力。曾經分發北京濟南南京九江漢口等處，批過數次。又曾親往各地，協同諸位名士，詳加批閱。終則合此諸批，一一審定。要必以通行者爲是，兼有不通行者，則並列之。其列法，北京在右，南京在左。如有三行並列，卽山東居其中也。是故用此書者，非但可得通行之益，卽不通行者，亦可確知南北終有何不同也。卽所繙之英文，以及所講所註者，亦經南北有名之西士批閱，務求與漢語適合，字義恰對，並爲南北酌定字音，使各方知其共有幾音，而各音係何聲氣。復按字音字部，將書中所用之字與話，各作一指要錄，令學者便於觀查。故此編旣成，於有志學官話者，豈特爲小補哉。時在光緒十八年，歲次壬辰，夏季中澣。

鄒立文序

A COURSE .

OF

LESSONS IN MANDARIN.

INTRODUCTORY LESSON.

- 1 先生 好啊 ¹⁵
Teacher well?
How do you do?
- 2 先生 貴 姓
Teacher honorable name?
What is your honorable name?
- 3 我 賤 姓 王
My humble name Wang.
My name is Wang.
- 4 請 先生 坐 在 這裏
Please, sir, sit at here.
Please sit here, sir.
- 5 現在 九 點 半 鐘 好 念 書
Now nine half o'clock good to study.
It is now half-past nine o'clock: it is time to study.
- 6 這個 東西 叫 甚麼
This thing called what?
What is this thing called?
- 7 這個 字 是 甚麼
This character is what?
What is this character?
- 8 我 沒 聽 清楚 請 再 說
I not hear distinctly. Please again say.
I did not hear distinctly. Please say it again.
- 9 請 先生 聽 我 說 得 對 不 對
Please, sir, listen I say correct not correct.
Please, sir, listen if I say it correctly.
- 10 我 不 懂得 請 慢慢 的 說
I not understand. Please slowly speak.
I do not understand. Please speak slowly.
- 11 請 先生 等 一 等 我 就 回 來
Please, sir, wait a wait: I presently return come.
Please wait a moment: I will return presently.
- 12 今天 念 彀 了
To-day study enough.
I have studied enough for to-day.
- 13 明天 九 點 鐘 再 念
To-morrow nine o'clock again study.
To-morrow at nine o'clock we will study again.
- 14 火 不 燂 要 柴 伙 要 煤
Fire not burn. Want wood. Want coal.
The fire will not burn. Bring wood. Bring coal.
- 15 這 兩 個 說 法 那 個 更 好
These two speak ways which better?
Of these two forms which is better?
- 16 出 氣 不 出 氣 答 出 氣
Out breath not out breath? Ans. Out breath.
Is it aspirated? Ans. It is.

LESSON I.

THE GENERAL CLASSIFIER.

There is in Chinese a large class of words joined with substantives as classifiers, there being some sort of affinity, real or imaginary, on which the classification is based. In general, each noun has a fixed classifier, though a few nouns have two or more. We have in the case of a few nouns in English a somewhat similar usage: thus we say, a flock of sheep, a pane of glass, five head of cattle, two stalks of corn, etc. When these classifiers happen to correspond to similar forms in English, they may be translated; in all other cases they are untranslatable. Pidgin English has summed up the whole class in the one word "piece." Thus, "one piece of man," is the English equivalent of 一個人, *i¹ ko⁴ jén²*.

Classifiers are only used when a definite number is spoken of, and hence have been by some called *numeratives*.* Beyond this merely negative rule, no definite directions can be given for the use

* I prefer the term *classifier*, because these words are only adjunct to the matter of enumeration, which is still effected by the proper numerals. Their primary office is to classify.

of these classifiers. The only adequate rule is usage.

Most concrete nouns will take a classifier; but some will not; especially such as express time, space, or quantity; such as, day, year, inch, mile, ounce, catty, etc. These classifiers will be illustrated at length in a number of future lessons.

The present lesson is limited to 個, which may be called the general classifier. It is applied to such nouns as have no special classifier, and *may*, upon occasion, be applied to almost any noun, as a substitute for the special classifier. The idea of 個 is that of mere individuality, and hence it is by far the most extensively used of its class. It is the only classifier that can be applied to an abstract noun. It is often written 箇, and its abbreviated form is 个.

些 may be regarded as the plural of 個. As such it is joined with 這 *chê⁴* and 那 *na⁴*, as in the next lesson. When used alone it is always used indefinitely, as in (22), (23) and (24). It is often preceded by *one*, the two words together meaning *same*.

VOCABULARY.

- 個 *Ko⁴*. One, a single one; a unit; the general classifier:—See Sub.
 些 *Hsie¹*. A little, a few; somewhat; an adjective of comparison often answering to the English termination *er*. Forms the plural of 個:—See Sub.
 一 *I¹*. One; the first; the same; at once; a, an; a few; the whole.
 二 *Er⁴*. Two; the second; the cardinal number two.
 兩 *Liang³*. Two; a couple, a few; a pair, double; an ounce, a tael of silver.
 三 *San¹*. Three; thrice. Also read *sa¹*.
 四 *Si⁴*. Four; all around.
 五 *Wu³*. Five; a perfect number.
 六 *Liu⁴*. Six. Often pronounced *lu⁴* by literary men.
 七 *Ch'i¹*. Seven.
 八 *Pa¹*. Eight.
 九 *Chiu³*. Nine.
 十 *Shi²*. Ten; complete.

- 人 *Jén²*. A man; mankind; human; a person:—Les. 52.
 男 *Nan²*. A male (of the human species); masculine; a son.
 男人. A man; a husband.
 女 *Nü³*. A woman; a girl; a wife; a lady; female (of the human species).
 女人. *Nü³ jén²*. A woman; a wife.
 先 *Hsien¹*. Before; formerly; previous; early.
 生 *Shêng¹*. To bear, to produce; to beget; to be born; to excite; to live, to exist; unripe, raw; unacquainted.
 先生. A teacher. A style of address applicable to all educated men, and generally applied to any genteel stranger. It is the nearest equivalent of Mr. that the Chinese language affords.
 師 *Shi¹*. A leader; a model; a teacher, a master; a metropolis.
 娘 *Niang²*. A girl, a young lady; a mother.
 師娘. Wife of an educated man; Mrs.

母 *Mu*⁸..... A mother; female.
 師母. Wife of an educated man:—Note (5).
 學 *Hsiōd*⁸ or *hsüē*⁸ or *hsiao*⁸. To learn; to
 imitate; learning, science,
 doctrines; a school or place of learning. The
 second and third readings are peculiar to Peking.
 學生 *Hsüē*⁸ *shéng*¹. A pupil, a scholar; a
 disciple.
 字 *Tsi*⁴. A written character; a word; a writ-
 ing; a name; a title.
 門 *Mén*². A gate, a door; an opening; a profes-
 sion, an occupation; a class.
 月 *Yüē*⁴..... The moon; a month.
 房 *Fang*². A room; a house: an office or bureau;
 a wife.
 堂 *T'ang*². A mansion, a hall; an official room;
 a court; a church, hospital, or
 large shop; the persons assembled in a hall.
 學堂. *Hsüē*⁸ *t'ang*². A school room, a school.
 學房. *Hsüē*⁸ *fang*². Same as last:—Note (10).
 錢 *Ch'ien*². Copper cash; money; wealth; the
 tenth part of a tael, a mace.
 是 *Shì*⁴. The verb to be; is, am, are; it is so,
 yes; that which ought to be, right.
 年 *Nien*². A year, a revolution of the seasons.

 天 *T'ien*¹. Heaven; the sky, the air; a day;
 a season; Providence; God.
 禮 *Li*². Worship; a ceremony, a rite; deco-
 rum; offerings; ceremonial gifts.
 拜 *Pai*⁴. To reverence, to kneel to; to worship;
 to visit, to pay one's respects to.
 禮拜. Worship; a week; the Sabbath day.
 千 *Ch'ien*¹. A thousand; an indefinite number;
 many.
 吊 *Tiao*⁴. To condole with; to suspend or lift,—
 as by a cord; a string of cash, equal
 in most places to a thousand, but in some places
 to five hundred, or even less,—as in Peking.

百 *Pai*⁸. A hundred; the whole of a class;
 numerous; all.
 小 *Hsiao*⁸. Small; petty, mean; junior, infe-
 rior; a concubine.
 零 *Ling*². A fraction; a remainder; a cipher.

 有 *Yu*⁸. To have, to possess; to be, to exist;
 in replies,—yes.
 好 *Hao*⁸. Good; right, proper; fit; fine, grace-
 ful; very. Also read *hao*⁴.
 好些 *Hao*⁸ *hsie*¹. A good many, a considerable
 number:—Note (22).
 口 *K'ou*⁸. The mouth; an entrance or opening;
 a hole; a port for trade; speech;
 pronunciation. A classifier:—Les. 68.
 門口 *Mén*² *k'ou*⁸. A gateway; the recess out-
 side of a gate.
 些個 *Hsie*¹ *ko*⁴..... } Some; a few:—
 一些 *I*¹ *hsie*¹..... } Note (22-3).
 大 *Ta*⁴. Great, big; noble; chief, important;
 very; entirely. Also read *tai*⁴.
 一大些 *I*¹ *ta*⁴ *hsie*¹. A great many, a large
 number.
 李 *Li*²..... A plum; a common surname.
 太 *T'ai*⁴. Too; very, extreme:—Les. 24. A
 term of respect, mostly applied to
 women.
 太太. An officer's wife, Madam. Applied by
 way of compliment to very old women
 of any rank.
 老 *Lao*⁸. Old, aged, venerable; a term of re-
 spect, Sire; out of date; stale; in
 Pekingese, a long or protracted time. An intensi-
 ve:—Les. 140.
 爺 *Yie*². A father; a grandfather. A title
 used in addressing divinities, officers
 and titled gentlemen.
 老爺. Sir, Your Honor,—applied to all inferior
 officers, and to men of wealth who have
 honorary degrees; a maternal grandfather.

課 一 第

TRANSLATION.

八⁸ 七⁷ 六⁶ 五⁵ 四⁴ 三³ 兩² 一¹
 個 個 個 個 個 個 個 個
 門 字 學 師 先 女 男 人
 ○ ○ 生 母 娘 生 人 人 ○

- | | |
|------------------|---------------------|
| 1 One person. | 5 Five ladies. |
| 2 Two men. | 6 Six pupils. |
| 3 Three women. | 7 Seven characters. |
| 4 Four teachers. | 8 Eight doors. |

○李老爺是個好人。○房老爺有三吊五百錢。
 天。○三千零零五個錢。○李太太有十八九個學生。
 人。○一千六百零八個男人。○一年有三百六十五
 一些個女人。○學房有好多些個學生。○門口有五六個
 ○十一個月零七天。○先生有好些錢。○門口有
 百四十個女人。○一百零六個錢。○一年零八個月。
 個錢是一吊。○一百五十個人。○十九個小錢。○二
 年。○三十天是一個月。○七天是一個禮拜。○一千
 九個月。○十個學房。○十一個錢。○十二個月是一

- 9 Nine months.
- 10 Ten school rooms (or schools).
- 11 Eleven cash.
- 12 Twelve months are one year.
- 13 Thirty days are a month.
- 14 Seven days are a week.
- 15 One thousand cash are a string.
- 16 One hundred and fifty men.
- 17 Nineteen small cash.
- 18 Two hundred and fifty women.
- 19 One hundred and six cash.
- 20 A year and eight months.
- 21 Eleven months and seven days.
- 22 The teacher has a good many cash (or, much money).
- 23 There are some women at the door.
- 24 There are a good many scholars in the school room.
- 25 There are five or six men at the door.
- 26 One thousand six hundred and eight men.
- 27 There are three hundred and sixty-five days in a year.
- 28 Three thousand and five cash.
- 29 Madam Li has eighteen or nineteen pupils.
- 30 Li Lao Yie is a good man.
- 31 Fang Lao Yie has three thousand five hundred cash.

NOTES.

2 Chinese has two words for two; viz, 二 and 兩. The former is the regular cardinal number, and is generally used when speaking of abstract numbers; while the latter is used of persons and things. Their appropriate places can only be learned from usage.

3 女人. A female man, as 男人 is a masculine man. 人 is generic for the race, though commonly used as masculine.

5 The wife of an educated man is called 師娘 in the North, and in the South 師母. In Nanking 師娘 is also used, but is considered a little less respectful than 師母, being applied to the wives of tradesmen and shop-keepers.

10 Both 學房 and 學堂 are intelligible anywhere, but the former prevails in the North and the latter in the South.

11 The Chinese has no such contracted forms as eleven, twelve, twenty, thirty, etc., but the numbers are given in full.

12 Verbs in Chinese have no modification for number; hence 是 is used alike for singular and plural.

13 The student will notice that the classifier is used with 月, but not with 年 or 天. There is no accounting for such freaks of usage.

16 The "and" is supplied. In Chinese, numerals are strung together without any connecting word.

17 "Small cash" are counterfeit cash made smaller or thinner than the legal coin, and are slipped in between the others and counted as good cash. When receiving money in small sums the receiver throws out these small cash, and demands that they be replaced with good ones. Brokers make a business of buying these small cash at a discount and paying them out a few in each hundred for good ones. These 小錢 are also called 私錢 *Sī chien*, illicit cash.

19 The omission of a digit in the midst of a number is indicated in Chinese by the word 零. When two or more places are omitted, two *ling's* are generally used (always in mathematical language.):—(28). *Ling* is also used when a lower denomination follows a higher,—as (21).

22 The use of 個 after 些 is an anomalous form much used in Peking, but confined to Peking and its vicinity.

23 Lit.—The door mouth has some women; i.e., there are some (or several) women at the door. The verb 有, to have, is frequently used in this way for the verb 有, to be. 一些 is rarely heard in Peking, being replaced by 些個. In Southern Mandarin the 一 is often omitted and 些 used alone.

25 The "or" is understood. Whenever two digits follow each other in this way, "or" is understood between them.

29 The 十 here belongs to both 八 and 九; or in literal English, ten, and eight or nine.

LESSON II.
DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

這 This { These words, when not followed by
那 That { a special classifier, are generally fol-
lowed by 個 or 些. Sometimes the 個 and 些
are omitted, the sense remaining approximately
the same. When followed by 些 the meaning is

plural; viz, *these* and *those*. The 些 sometimes
takes an 一 before it, which modifies the sense
a little, making it equivalent to *this or that lot*
of, etc. Thus, 這些東西 means *these things*, but
這一些東西 means rather, *this lot of things*.

VOCABULARY.

這 *Ché⁴ or ché¹*. This; here; now; this place
..... or thing. The second pro-
nunciation is colloquial, and probably a contrac-
tion of 這一.

那 *Na⁴ or nei⁴*. That; there; that place, or
..... thing, or time. The second
pronunciation is colloquial, and probably a con-
traction of 那一. Also read *na³*.

沒 *Mod² or mei²*. To die; to disappear; *no, not*.
..... In Mandarin 沒 is always
followed by 有, expressed or understood, and, ex-
cept when 有 is used as a principal verb, always
puts the idea in the perfect tense. When 有 does
not follow, it is generally read *mei²*.

問 *Wén¹*. To ask; to demand of; to examine
..... a case; to convict.

學問 *Hsüé² wén⁴*. Learning; scholarship;
..... knowledge; information.

音 *Yin¹*. A sound of any kind; a musical note,
..... a tone; *the sound of a word*.

不 *Pu⁴*. Not, no; with adjectives it answers to
..... the prefixes, *un, dis*, etc.

聽 *T'ing¹*. To hear; to listen to understand.
..... Also read *t'ing⁴*;

使 *Shi²*. To command; to send; to use; to
..... cause, to effect. An instrumental
verb:—Les. 54.

用 *Yung⁴*. To use, to employ; to cause; to
..... need; useful. An instrumental
verb:—Les. 54.

筆 *Pi²*. A pen, a pencil, a style; a stroke in a
..... character; an item in an account.

難 *Nan²*. Hard, difficult; irksome. Also read
..... *nan⁴*.

地 *Ti⁴*. The earth; a place, a spot; the ground,
..... the floor.

方 *Fang¹*. A square; a place; a rule; a pre-
..... scription; to compare; then,
thereupon; a classifier:—Les. 147.

地方. A place; an occasion; a situation to
work or to live.

落 *Lo⁴*. To descend, to fall; to let down; to
..... enter,—as an account. Also read
lao⁴ and la⁴.

落地. Same meaning as 地方, but used only
in the South.

會 *Hui⁴*. To collect; to know how; *can*,—used
..... of acquired ability; expert; a fra-
ternity; a joint-stock company; a church.

能 *Néng²*. Power; ability; to be able; *can*,—
..... used of natural ability; compe-
tent; talented.

說 *Shwo¹*. To speak, to say; to narrate; to
..... reprove; words, sayings. Also
read *sui⁴*.

官 *Kwan¹*. An officer of any class; official; the
..... government.

話 *Hwa⁴*. Words, talk; *spoken* as opposed to
..... written language; to speak.

官話. Official language; the court dialect,
Mandarin.

病 *Ping⁴*. Illness, disease; a defect; a vice.
.....

契 *Ch'í¹*. To eat; to drink; to suffer, to bear.
吃 } The second is a short form of
writing.

飯 *Fan⁴*. A meal; food; rice or millet (cooked).
.....

東 *Tung¹*. East; sunrise; the place of honor.
.....

西 *Hsi¹*..... West; western; foreign.

東西. A thing; a worthless fellow.

實 *Shí²*. Real, solid; true, honest; the results.
.....

在 *Tsai⁴*. To be in or at; at, in, within; pres-
..... ent; depending upon; to be alive.

實在. Really; truly; verily; in fact.

要 *Yao⁴*. To want; to need; necessary, import-
..... ant; to intend; to be about to;
sign of future:—Les. 13.

開 *K'ai¹*. To open; to explain; to begin; to start; to write out; boiling hot. An auxiliary verb:—Les. 74.
 寫 *Hsie³*. To write; to compose.
 實話 *Shi² hwa⁴*. The truth; the facts.
 聽說 *T'ing¹ shwoa¹*. To obey; to be obedient.

請 *Ch'ing³*. To request; to invite; please; to engage or hire,—as a teacher, etc.
 老實 *Lao³ shi²*. Honest; trustworthy; steady; gentle (of an animal).
 窮 *Ch'iong³*. Exhausted; poor; to exhaust, to search out; the end.

課二第

TRANSLATION.

這¹個人沒有學問。○那²個人沒有錢。○這³個音不好聽。○這⁴些小錢不好用。○這⁵個筆不大好。○這⁶些字難學。○那⁷個落地方不好。○這⁸個人不會說官話。○那⁹個人有病不能吃飯。○這¹⁰些東西實在不好用。○不要開那個門。○那¹¹些人沒有飯吃。○那¹²個學生會寫好些字。○這¹³個人不說實話。○那¹⁴個人不會寫字。○這¹⁵個字實在不好寫。○那¹⁶個人不要這些小錢。○這些話實在難學。○請¹⁷先生寫這個字。○那¹⁸個學生不聽說。○太¹⁹大不能吃這個飯。○這²⁰個地方有一好些個人。○那²¹個小學生不大老實。○那²²個地方沒有好人。○那²³個地方沒有個

- 1 This man has no learning.
- 2 That man has no money.
- 3 This syllable is not pleasant to hear.
- 4 These small cash are not good to use (will not pass).
- 5 This pen is not very good.
- 6 These characters are hard to learn.
- 7 That place is not good.
- 8 This man cannot speak Mandarin.
- 9 That man is ill, and is unable to eat.
- 10 These things are really not usable.
- 11 Do not open that door.
- 12 Those men have nothing to eat.
- 13 That scholar can write a good many characters.
- 14 This man does not speak the truth.
- 15 That man cannot write.
- 16 Truly this character is not easy to write.
- 17 That man will not take these small cash.
- 18 These words are truly hard to learn.
- 19 Will you (teacher) please write this character?
- 20 That scholar does not heed what he is told.
- 21 The lady cannot eat this food.
- 22 There are a good many men in this place.
- 23 That small pupil is not very steady.
- 24 There are no good men in that place.
- 25 There is not a good man in that place.

先生實在窮。 錢○這²⁹個老
學生要六個 窮人○這²⁸個
個地方沒有 個好人○這²⁷
地方沒有 好人○²⁶那一個

- 26 There is not a single good man in that place.
27 There are no poor people in this place.
28 This pupil wants six cash.
29 This old teacher is exceedingly poor.

NOTES.

3 The verb to be is here understood. Its omission is very common.

4 使 is very common in Northern Mandarin, but not in the South, where 用 is always used.

5 不大好. Not great good; i.e., not very good.

7 地方 is everywhere current, 落地 is only used in the South.

9 飯 is added to 吃 in order to specialize the syllable *ch'i*, as that *ch'i* which has 飯 for its object. Adding the object to the verb in this way, when nothing more is really meant than the action of the verb, is a very characteristic Chinese idiom. In the fifteenth sentence we have another example in 寫字. See Lesson 51.

12 沒有飯吃. Lit., No have rice to eat; i.e., have nothing to eat.

19 Lit., I invite the teacher to write this character. "Teacher" is here used instead of "you," for the sake of politeness.

20 聽說. Lit., hear saying; i.e., obey orders. Both words are here used out of their primary senses. 聽, to hear, is used in the sense of to listen to, to obey; and 說, to speak, is used in the sense of commands or instructions. The former changes its tone, but the latter does not. The translation approximates the primary sense by turning the term into a relative clause.

24 The plural is here implied, as it often is. The 25th sentence shows how the singular is expressed, and the 26th shows how the addition of an 一 emphasizes the singular.

LESSON III.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

我 I, or me.

你 You, or thou, or thee.

他 He, she, him, her, it;—used freely of men and beasts, but sparingly of things. As the Chinese make no distinctions of gender or case, one pronoun answers for all.

們 The sign of the plural; usually added only to the personal pronouns, but sometimes to other

words denoting persons. It is never added to words, denoting things. The second and third personal pronouns are often used in the plural without 們. In polite language 們 is often added to 我 and 你 when only one is meant. This is especially the case in Pekingese.

The above are the regular personal pronouns. There are besides these a number of colloquial pronouns which will be introduced by and by:—Les. 84.

VOCABULARY.

我 *Wo*³. I, me, mine, we, us.

你 *Ni*³. You, thou, your. When formally addressing superiors 你 is generally replaced by the title of the person addressed.

他 *T'a*¹. He, she, him, her, it; that one; the other.

們 *Mén*¹. Sign of the plural:—See Sub.

早 *Tsao*³. Early; soon; beforehand.

朝 *Chao*¹. The dawn, the morning, early. Also read *ch'ao*². ㄉ

早飯 *Tsao*³ *fan*⁴. Breakfast:—Note (2).

朝飯 *Chao*¹ *fan*⁴. Breakfast.

來 *Lai*². To come; to effect; the future. An auxiliary verb:—Les. 10, and 113.

明 *Ming*². Bright; evident; brilliant; intelligent; to explain.

白 *Poa*² or *pai*². White; plain, easy to comprehend; obvious; without rank; without price, freely; in vain. The second reading is confined to Pekingese.

明白. Lit., clear white; plain; to understand; satisfactory,—as a bargain; intelligent, shrewd.

告 Kao⁴. To announce to a superior; to tell of; to accuse or impeach; to proclaim.

訴 Su⁴. To tell, to inform; to state in reply or defense.

告訴. To inform, to tell. In this combination su⁴ is frequently corrupted into sung⁴.

可 K'é³ or K'ōā³. To be willing, to permit; to be able; may, can, might. Before a verb it forms a verbal adjective:—Les. 180. Also read k'é².

以 I³. To use; to take; to, towards, by; an instrumental verb:—Les. 145. Has a great variety of uses in wen li.

可以 Can, may; will do, will answer the purpose; as a reply,—yes:—Les. 70.

等 Têng³. An order or class; equal, like; to wait; such like, etc.; a sign of the plural:—Les. 188.

等一等 Lit., wait one wait; i.e., wait a little, presently; hold!

時 Shī². Time; a season; an hour; an occasion, an opportunity.

候 Hou⁴. To wait; to expect; a time.

時候 Time, duration; a certain time.

去 Ch'ü⁴. To depart; to go; to go out or away; to separate, to reject; past, gone; an auxiliary verb:—Les. 10.

還 Hwan². To return; to repay; to surround or revolve; still, even, furthermore, yet, also, and. As a conjunction it is often read Han³ or Hai² or Ha². It sometimes merely serves to intensify, and is incapable of translation.

晌 Shang³. Noontide, noon.

午 Wu³. Midday, noon; the Chinese hour which begins at eleven and ends at one o'clock.

中 Chung¹. The middle, the center; in the middle of, within; medium; to accomplish, to be sufficient. Also read chung⁴.

晌飯 Shang³ fan⁴. The noontide meal, dinner:—Note (15).

午飯 } The noontide meal,
中飯 } dinner:—Note (15).

正 Chêng⁴. Correct, just, legal; upright, not awry; regular, orthodox; at the time, just; plus (+). Also read chêng¹.

事 Shī⁴. An affair; business; that which is done, an act; to serve; to manage.

情 Ch'ing². The seven passions taken together; viz., 喜 joy, 怒 anger, 哀 sorrow, 懼 fear, 愛 love, 惡 hatred and 欲 concupiscence; the desires; lust; the facts or circumstances of an affair; a case.

事情. An affair; business; a matter.

管 Kwan³. A tube; a flute; to rule, to control; to care for, to manage; a classifier:—Les. 42.

給 Chi³ or Kei³. To give; to supply; sign of dative:—Les. 25. The reading kei³ is confined to Pekingese; in Central Mandarin it is often, perhaps generally, read k'i³.

知 Chi¹. To know, to perceive; sensible of; to inform; knowledge, wisdom.

道 Tao⁴. A road or path; a doctrine or principle approved by the mind; the right way, duty; to speak, to talk.

知道 To know, to be acquainted with.

曉 Hsiao³. Clear, luminous; the morning, the dawn; to understand, to know.

得 Te². To get, to obtain; to succeed; to be come, to accomplish. An auxiliary verb:—Les. 43. Also read tei³.

曉得 To know, to comprehend.

理 Li³. To govern, to regulate; reason, the rule of action; a principle; to think of; to regard.

道理. Reason; doctrine; what is right.

晚 Wan³. Evening, twilight; late, tardy; the latter or last.

夜 Yie⁴. Night; darkness.

晚飯 Wan³ fan⁴.
夜飯 Yie⁴ fan⁴. } Supper.

課三第

TRANSLATION.

我 ⁶	這	他 ⁵	沒	能	○	有	朝早	他 ¹	| 1 He has not eaten breakfast. 2 I have three hundred cash. 3 They can not come. 4 I have no money. 5 He cannot write this character. 6 I do not understand this character.
不	個	不	有	來	○	三	飯	沒	
明	字	會	錢	○	他 ³	百	○	沒	
白	○	寫	○	我 ⁴	不	錢	我 ²	吃	

27 明天是禮拜六，我們不學話。
 25 這個時候，他們還沒吃晚飯。○你可以告訴他，禮拜四來。○
 23 請先生給我一吊五百大錢。○這個事情，我們不能不告訴先生。
 21 不能給你。○這個事情，我實在不知道。○他不明白這個道理。○
 18 這個飯，我實在不能吃。○這個時候，他們正吃飯。○這個東西，我
 沒吃。○這個事，你不管。○這個事情，你不好告訴他。○
 17 不能去。○這個禮拜，我不能來。○你去告訴他，等一等。○我們還
 16 沒吃。○這個事，你不管。○這個事情，你不好告訴他。○
 15 一等。○我們沒有地方寫字。○他不會開這個門。○那個時候，我
 14 不能去。○這個禮拜，我不能來。○你去告訴他，等一等。○我們還
 13 沒吃。○這個事，你不管。○這個事情，你不好告訴他。○
 12 不能去。○這個禮拜，我不能來。○你去告訴他，等一等。○我們還
 11 一等。○我們沒有地方寫字。○他不會開這個門。○那個時候，我
 10 不能去。○這個禮拜，我不能來。○你去告訴他，等一等。○我們還
 9 這個字。○先生要你說實話。○他不能不告訴你。○你們可以等

- 7 The teacher wants you to speak the truth.
- 8 He can not but tell you.
- 9 You may wait a little.
- 10 We have no place to write.
- 11 He can not open this door.
- 12 At that time I can not go.
- 13 This week I can not come.
- 14 You go and tell him to wait a little.
- 15 We have not yet eaten dinner.
- 16 You can not but attend to this affair.
- 17 You must not tell him of this business.
- 18 I really can not eat this food.
- 19 They are just now eating.
- 20 I can not give you this article.
- 21 This business I positively do not know.
- 22 He does not understand this doctrine.
- 23 Please, teacher, give me three thousand cash, (or, one thousand five hundred big cash).
- 24 We can not but tell the teacher of this affair.
- 25 At this time they have not yet eaten supper.
- 26 You may tell him to come on Thursday.
- 27 To-morrow is Saturday, we will not study.

NOTES.

2 In speaking, the 有 is very often omitted after 沒, especially in the North. When writing, however, teachers will generally insist on using it; especially is this so in the South. As often in Chinese, the practice belies the theory. When 有 is omitted, the 沒 is generally read *mei*, which is presumably a contraction for 沒有; albeit in the North *mei* is frequently heard with 有 following. 朝飯 for "breakfast" appears to be used only in Shantung.

8 We have here two negatives making a strong affirmative, which is a common Chinese idiom.

9 The "you" is emphatic; that is, the person addressed is contrasted with some one who is not required to wait: unless so used the 你們 would generally be omitted.

14 等一等 is in the infinitive by the construction of the sentence, which is the only sign the infinitive has in Chinese.

15 In Peking, 午飯 is used, and in the South, 中飯, while 晌飯 is used in Shantung. In Chi Nan Fu, however, 晌午飯 is generally used.

16 The object is here placed before the verb, which is quite a common idiom in Chinese. It gives prominence to the object and force to the expression.

17 不可 means, *must not*, and has more or less the force of a command. It is entirely *tung hsing* (通行); i.e., everywhere current. 不好 means, *ought not*, or *should not*, and implies an impropriety. It is extensively

used in this sense, both in Central and Southern Mandarin, but is rarely heard in Pekingese.

21 知道 is rarely heard in Nanking or the South; 曉得 almost entirely superseding it. 曉得 is also used in the North, but somewhat sparingly.

23 In a large part of North China it is the custom to call ten cash twenty, fifty a hundred, and so on, in all cases (except in numbers under ten) giving a number which is double the actual number of the cash, and sums of cash when so designated are called 小錢, *small cash*. When, on the contrary, it is desired not to reckon double, but to call a cash a cash, they say 大錢, *large cash*. Numbers under ten are not doubled, but the word 大 is added by way of distinction. The 小錢 are also called 京錢, *capital cash*, because this

method of reckoning originated in Peking. In places near the border line between these methods of reckoning, the terms "large" and "small" are applied to all sums of cash. Elsewhere it is understood,—in the North that any given sum of cash is double, and in the South that it is the real number.

Thus we see that 小錢 may mean either counterfeit cash or cash reckoned double, according to circumstances.

25 晚飯 is used both in Pekingese and in Southern Mandarin, but 夜飯 is generally used in Shantung.

26 The days of the week are numbered as so many days after the Sabbath. The Sabbath itself is called 禮拜日, or more commonly simply 禮拜. This terminology was introduced by the Roman Catholics.

27 學話 *learn words*, i.e., have a lesson.

LESSON IV.

THE POSSESSIVE PARTICLE.

的 is the common sign of the possessive case. It serves for both our forms of the possessive; viz., the "'s" and the "of." It is often omitted and the possessive implied by the mere juxtaposition of

the words. This is especially the case when two possessives follow each other.

的 has other important uses which will appear by and by:—Les. 18, 23 and 39.

VOCABULARY.

的 *Ti*¹. Sign of the possessive:—see Sub.; also Lessons 18, 23 and 39. Also read *ti*².

數 *Kou*⁴. To draw a bow to its full; enough, adequate.

錯 *Ts'od*⁴. To confuse; to mistake or err; *wrong*, to be wrong; excepting.

懂 *Tung*². Disturbed; to understand, to perceive. Read *twi*³ in some places.

懂得 *Tung*² *té*³. To understand, to comprehend.

該 *Kai*¹. To owe money; *ought, should*; what is proper or right; the aforesaid.

親 *Ch'in*¹. To love, to be attached to; to show affection for; a relative, kin; one's own. Also read *ch'ing*⁴.

母親 *Mu*² *ch'in*¹..... Mother.

不是 *Pu*² *shi*⁴. A fault; a sin; a wrong. Note in this phrase 不是 read *pu*².

隨 *Sui*². To follow, to comply with; to permit; as, according to; whenever.

便 *Pien*⁴. To accord with; convenient, opportune; at hand, ready; then, so, just:—Les. 191. Also read *p'ien*².

意 *I*⁴. Thought, intention, *idea*; meaning; opinion.

思 *Si*¹..... To think, to consider; to desire.

意思 *I*¹. Intention; sentiments, opinion; *meaning*.

衣 *I*¹. Clothes, garments; a case or covering of any kind.

裳 *Shang*¹..... Skirts, petticoats; clothes.

衣裳 *Shang*¹. Dress, clothes (personal, not bed clothes).

看 *K'an*⁴. To see, to look at; to examine; to regard as; mock,—as a mock persimmon. Also read *k'an*¹.

好看 *Hao*² *k'an*⁴. Good to see, beautiful, admirable. 好 is joined to many other words in the same way as 好聽, good to hear, &c.

對 *Tui*⁴. Parallel scrolls; to correspond, to suit; to answer, to respond; consistent with; opposite; a pair. A classifier, Les. 140.

合 *Hwo*². To shut the mouth; to unite; suitable; able; according to; harmonious; together; the whole; product (math.) A classifier:—Les. 140.

式 *Shi*⁴..... A form, a pattern; an example.

合式 *Hwo*². According to pattern; suitable; appropriate.

容 *Yung*² or *jung*². To contain; to tolerate or bear with; air, manner; face, countenance.

易 *I⁴. Easy; without care; remiss; the mutations of nature, change; to exchange.*
容易 *Easy, facile.*
規 *Kwei¹. A pair of compasses; a regulation, a law; a custom.*
矩 *Chü⁴. A carpenter's square; a law; a custom; a pattern.*
規矩 *Custom; usage; propriety; order, method.*
樣 *Yang⁴. A model, a pattern; manner, style; way, fashion; sort.*
氣 *Ch'i⁴. Vapor, steam; gas; air, breath; the ether; spirit, temper; any feeling that produces excitement, as anger, hatred, etc.; air, aspect.*
生氣 *Sheng¹ ch'i⁴. To get angry, to be excited by passion.*

力 *Li⁴. Strength of body or mind; energy; properties or strength of anything.*
力氣 *Physical strength, prowess; force.*
比 *Pi³. To compare; to assort; to equal; an illustration:—Les. 58.*
國 *Kwo². A state, a country, a kingdom, a nation; governmental. Read kwei² in many places.*
中國 *Chung¹ kwo². The Middle Kingdom, China.*
外 *Wai⁴. Outside; foreign; extraneous.*
外國 *Outside kingdoms; each and all foreign countries.*
課 *K'od⁴. A lesson, a task; a series.*
多 *Tod¹. Many, numerous; much; mostly; very, excessive:—Les. 48.*

課 四 第

TRANSLATION.

○ 李¹⁹先生的學堂房沒有規矩。○ 這²⁰個人的官話實在不知道這個地方的規矩。○ 先¹⁸先生的話我聽不明白。他¹⁵沒有明白你的話。○ 這¹⁶個東西不合我的式。○ 我¹⁷式。○ 他¹³的意思容易明白。○ 這¹⁴不是他男人的事。○ 看。○ 李¹¹先生的意思正對。○ 你¹²先生的意思不大合的便。○ 他⁹不明白我的意思。○ 師¹⁰母的衣裳實在好他母親的不是。○ 這⁷個東西是我的。○ 我⁸不能隨他。○ 他⁴的學問不大。○ 他⁵不懂得我的話。○ 你⁶不該說我的錢不設。○ 老²爺的話不錯。○ 你³不要管我的事。

- 1 My money is not sufficient.
- 2 Your Honor's words are correct.
- 3 Do not meddle in my affairs.
- 4 His scholarship is not good.
- 5 He does not understand my talk.
- 6 You ought not to speak of his mother's faults.
- 7 This article is mine.
- 8 I can not accommodate myself to his convenience.
- 9 He does not comprehend my idea.
- 10 Your clothes are very beautiful, Madam.
- 11 Mr. Li's idea is exactly right; [or, your idea, Mr. Li, is exactly right.]
- 12 Your teacher's idea is not quite suitable.
- 13 His idea is easily understood.
- 14 This is not her husband's business.
- 15 He did not understand your language.
- 16 This thing does not suit me.
- 17 I do not understand the customs of this place.
- 18 I do not understand what you say, [or, the teacher says.]
- 19 Mr. Li's school room has no discipline.
- 20 This man's Mandarin is ex-

字, 不大多。
寫。○這²⁵一課的生
的字, 比外國的難
比他的。○中國²⁴
○他²³女人的力氣,
生氣, 這是我的錯。
矩。○請老爺不要²²
爺, 沒有這樣的規
好聽。○我們的老²¹

- ceedingly pleasant to hear.
21 Our master has no such custom.
22 Please, sir, do not get angry; this is my mistake.
23 His wife's strength is greater than his.
24 Chinese characters are more difficult to write than foreign ones.
25 There are not very many new characters in this lesson.

NOTES.

2 Your honor, is but a make-shift translation. The 老爺 is used, for the sake of etiquette, to avoid the use of the pronoun. This polite form is used in addressing officials, superiors, strangers, etc. It is, however, far from being universal custom in every day life, especially in the familiar intercourse of family and friends. As the English language does not afford any adequate means of rendering such indirect address, I shall hereafter translate simply by the pronoun "you" as the equivalent of the title, whatever it may be.

3 不要 *no want*, is a common and mild form of forbidding. The 你 is best omitted in the translation.

14 The 個 is here omitted, as it often is, especially when not followed by its noun.

16 我的 is here interjected between the parts of the compound term 合式.

20 A more elegant translation would be, *This man speaks Mandarin beautifully.*

21 The attachés of an official all speak of him as 我們的 so-and-so, meaning thereby "the official with whom we are connected."

23 Lit.—*His wife's strength compared with his is great.* This is the ordinary method of formal comparison. There are a variety of other forms of comparison, for which see Les. 58, 99. The term 女人 is here used for wife, as it often is when there is no occasion or desire to show any special respect.

LESSON V.

THE ENCLITICS 子 AND 兒.

子 A child, a son.

兒 An infant, a son.

Both of these characters are added to words to individualize them, and mark them as nouns. Some words take one and some take the other, while many take either at pleasure. A few nouns never take either of them. The two answer substantially the same purpose.

子 is a little more dignified than 兒. 兒 has in most cases more or less of a diminutive force.

子 is more used in Southern Mandarin, and 兒 in Northern Mandarin, especially in Pekingese. Both 子 and 兒 are more used in spoken than in

written Mandarin. Their excessive use, especially that of the latter, marks an uneducated man, or a careless speaker. 兒 is usually spoken so as to coalesce with the word to which it is joined; thus 錢兒, is not pronounced *Ch'ien-er*, but *Ch'ier*. Many of the Chinese are scarcely conscious of the fact that they are adding this 兒 to their words. In Nanking, especially, most teachers will aver that it is not used, and will protest against writing it, while in fact it is much used, though not so much as in Peking.

兒 is also used in forming adverbs of time and place:—Les. 8 and 16.

VOCABULARY.

子 *Tsi*³. A child, a son; a boy, a lad; an heir; a seed or kernel; a sage:—see Sub.

兒 *Er*². An infant; a son; a boy:—see Sub.

桌 *Choa*¹. A table, a stand.

乾 *Kan*¹. Dry; exhausted; clean. Also read 干 *K'ien*².

淨 *Ching*⁴. Pure, undefiled; clean; only, simply.

乾淨. Clean, unspotted.

法 *Fa*². A law, a statute; an art, a method; the rules or methods of any science; legal punishment:—Les. 103.

姑 *Ku¹*. A polite name for women, especially young and unmarried women; lenient, yielding.

閨 *Kwei¹*. Women's apartments; unmarried girls; feminine.

姑娘 *Ku¹ niang²*. A girl, an unmarried lady; Miss; a daughter:—Note (4).

閨女 *Kwei¹ nü²*. A virgin, a girl, a young lady; a daughter.

花 *Hua¹*. A flower, a blossom; variegated; to spend money; pleasure; vice; raw cotton.

椅 *I³*. A chair, a seat.

坐 *Tso⁴*. To sit, to squat; to sit in judgment, to remain.

婆 *P'ou²*. An old woman; a mother.

老婆 *Lao³ p'ou²*. A wife; an old woman; a woman servant:—Note (8).

老太 *Lao³ t'ai⁴*. An old woman; an old lady, (Nankingese.)

家 *Chia¹*. A household, a family; home; domestic; a sect; a profession. An enclitic:—Les. 72.

裏 or **裡** *Li³*. A lining; inside, inner, in; within. The two forms are used indifferently.

家裡. Home; family; wife; wife and children.

過 *Kwo⁴*. To pass by or over; to exceed, to surpass; to spend time; to transgress; a transgression; beyond, further; excessive; than, rather; an auxiliary verb:—Les. 41.

日 *Ji⁴*. The sun; a day; days, times; the day for a thing.

過日子. To make a living; to live; to spend money for necessary expenses.

銀 *Yin²*. Silver; money; cash.

換 *Huan⁴*. To remove; to exchange; to barter.

頭 *T'ou²*. The head; front; top; chief; first; best; the beginning or entrance; the end. A classifier:—Les. 38. Also see Les. 47 and 143.

老頭 *Lao³ t'ou²*. An old man; the old man of the house.

歲 *Sui⁴*. A year of one's age; years, age.

孩 *Hai²*. A child; a youth; a boy.

生日 *Sheng¹ ji⁴*. Birthday.

出 *Ch'u¹*. To go out; to issue, to manifest; to surpass; to eject; to sacrifice; to beget; to be born. An auxiliary verb:—Les. 40.

出門 or **出門子** *Ch'u¹ mén² tsi³*. To go from home, to travel; to get married (said of the woman):—Note (16).

閣 *Koa²*. An upper room; a balcony, a veranda; female apartments; a council chamber.

出閣. To marry, to wed, (said of the woman).

尖 *Chien¹*. Tapering, pointed; wedge like; a point, the apex. 333 555

刀 *Tao¹*. A sword; a knife; a quire of paper ranging from fifty to two hundred sheets.

快 *K'ai⁴*. Glad, cheerful; prompt; quick, rapid; sharp, keen.

辮 *Pien⁴*. To plait, to braid; the Chinese queue.

書 *Shu¹*. A book; a letter; documents; to write.

書房 *Shu¹ fang²*. A school room; a study; a library.

杏 *Hsing⁴*. An apricot.

三 *Sa¹*. Three, a contraction of 三個. See *san¹*.

賣 *Mai⁴*. To sell; to betray; to make game of.

僱 *Ku⁴*. To hire; to engage the services of.

媽 *Ma¹*. An old woman; a mother; a waiting woman.

老媽 *Lao³ ma¹*. A servant woman; a nurse; among the Manchus, mother.

看 *K'an¹*. To watch, to guard, to look after:— See *k'an⁴*.

娃 *Wa²*. A baby, an infant. Usually doubled, 娃娃:—Note (23).

叫 *Chiao⁴*. To call; to cry out; to name; to sing,—as an insect; to tell, to do; to induce; to cause; sign of passive:—Les. 53.

名 *Ming²*. A name; the given name; a person; fame, reputation; a title.

小名 *Hsiao³ ming²*. A small or pet name:— Note (24).

學名 *Hsü³ ming²*. A school name.

這¹個桌子不乾淨。○他的²法子不合式。○你³不可學他的樣子。○他⁴有兩個兒子。一個⁵閨姑娘。○那些⁵花兒實在好看。○這⁶些椅子不好坐。○我⁷不要這個小房子。○他⁸的家裏不會過日子。○他⁹不能不過窮日子。○三兩銀子該換五吊多錢。○他¹¹該我兩吊多錢兒。○那¹²個老頭子沒有兒子。○這¹³五個老婆子有七十多歲。○他¹⁴的孩子沒有力氣。○李¹⁵老爺的兒子明天過生日。○衣¹⁶先生的女兒還沒出門¹⁷。○這¹⁷個筆沒有尖兒。○我¹⁸的小刀兒不大快。○外¹⁹國人沒有辮子。○不要²⁰開書房的門兒。○這²¹些杏子賣錢一個。○一²²天不過能學二十五六個生字兒。○李²³師娘要僱一個老媽兒看娃娃。○他²⁴的小名兒叫年子，他的學名兒我不曉得。

TRANSLATION.

- 1 This table is not clean.
- 2 His plan is not suitable.
- 3 You must not follow his example.
- 4 He has two sons and one daughter.
- 5 Those flowers are certainly beautiful.
- 6 These chairs are not fit to sit on (or, not comfortable).
- 7 I do not want this small house.
- 8 His wife can not economize.
- 9 He can not but be a poor man.
- 10 Three ounces of silver ought to sell for over five thousand cash.
- 11 He owes me more than two thousand cash.
- 12 That old man has no son.
- 13 This old woman is over seventy years old.
- 14 His child has no strength.
- 15 To-morrow is Mr. Li's son's birthday.
- 16 Mr. Li's daughter is not yet married.
- 17 This pen has no point.
- 18 My pocket knife is not very sharp.
- 19 Foreigners have no queues.
- 20 Do not open the school-room door.
- 21 These apricots sell for three [large] cash apiece.
- 22 One can learn only twenty-five or six new characters in a day.
- 23 Mrs. Li wishes to hire an old woman (or, a nurse) to take care of her baby.
- 24 His little name is called Nient-si; his school name I do not know.

NOTES.

4 There is great diversity in Mandarin in the use of terms for girl or young lady. In Shantung the common term is 閨女. The term 姑娘 is also used of the daughters of officers and educated men. In Peking 閨女 is used

when speaking of one's own daughter, while 姑娘 is used in other cases. In Southern Mandarin both terms are used with varying frequency, and besides them, as expressive of greater respect, 小姐 (little sister) is used. The terms 女

兒 and 女子 are also frequently used, both in the North and in the South, especially for daughter, for which the Chinese has no distinctive word.

8 The term 老婆 is often used (generally in Shantung) by the common people for wife, but is more or less disrespectful. When thus used the accent is thrown on the 老. 子 or 兒 is frequently added. 家裏 means properly home, but is often used for that which is most important in a home; viz., a wife. The expression 過日子 is very suggestive, in view of the hard to mouth way in which most of the Chinese live.

12 子 and 兒 are used indifferently after 老頭. When 兒 is used, the two words are often pronounced as if the *er* were in the middle of the *t'ou*; namely, *lao t'rou*. In this case, as in other similar cases of corrupt pronunciation, it is not necessary to imitate the corruption.

13 老婆子 here means an old woman, the emphasis being on the 婆. With an odd perversity, they put the emphasis on the 老 when the woman is young, and not when she is old. 老太 is Nankingese.

15 The first birthday of a child is specially observed. Afterwards little notice is taken of birthdays, except in the case of old people and officials.

16 出閣 is the more correct term, though 出門子 is much used in some places. In Kinkiang 出門子

is only applied to the marriage of a widow, while in Chinanfu it is used of harlots. If 子 be omitted, or if it be replaced by 兒, the phrase means to go on a journey.

18 小刀兒 means a pocket knife, while 刀 or 刀子 means a large knife, or a sword.

21 三個錢一個. *Three cash [for] one.* The Chinese inserts no word answering to our word "for."

23 The prevalent term for nurse is 老媽, though 老婆兒 or 老婆子 is used in some places in this sense. In Nanking 媽媽 is also used in the same sense. In the South 娃娃 is commonly applied to little children, in the North only to babies, or (more commonly) to earthen dolls.

24 Boys at first receive a 小名, or more elegantly, a 乳名 *ju³ ming², milk name.* When they start to school, a new name is given them by the teacher, which becomes their proper name through life. If they never go to school, a new name is usually given them by their parents before their manhood, which is called a 大名. The parents, especially the mother, often call them by their "little name" as long as they live. Besides these two names, young men usually take a 號 *hao⁴ or title,* and many of them also receive a 外號 *wai⁴ hao⁴, nickname.* It is considered the proper thing to address a grown man by his *hao⁴, especially in writing.*

LESSON VI.

THE COMMON PREPOSITION OF PLACE.

在 At, in:—it precedes the noun and is generally followed by a postposition after the noun; as if we should say in English, *to the wall-wards,*

instead of, towards the wall. The most frequent postpositions are 裏, 外, 上 and 下. 在 is sometimes omitted or understood, as in (18) and (24).

VOCABULARY.

上 *Shang⁴.* Above, upon; high, ancient; before; superior; excellent, exalted; Heaven; imperial; on, near. Also read *shang⁴.*

下 *Hsia⁴.* Below, underneath; low, vulgar; poor in quality; next; a time; once; to descend; to fall,—as rain.

父 *Fu⁴.* A father; an ancestor; a senior.

父親 *Fu⁴ ch'in¹.* Father.

城 *Ch'eng².* A citadel; a walled city; the wall of a city.

住 *Chu⁴.* To stop, to cease; to dwell, to live in; to endure. An auxiliary verb:—Les. 75.

躺 *T'ang⁵.* To lie down; to sprawl.

牀 *Ch'wang².* A bed; a lounge; a sled.

樓 *Lou².* A loft; a tower; an upper floor or story; a house of two or more stories.

底 *Ti⁵.* The bottom; below, underneath; low, menial; to the end; the original copy or draft.

底下 *Ti⁵ hsia⁴.* Beneath, underneath.

鋪 *P'u¹.* To spread out; to arrange, or lay out in order.

看書 *K'an⁴ shu¹.* To read, to study.

打 *Ta⁵.* To strike, to beat; to fight; to bastinado; to do, to perform; by, in, through:—See Les. 124.

敲 *Ch'iao¹.* To pound, to tap, to rap on; to beat,—as a drum.

打門 *Ta⁵ mén².* To knock at the door:—Note (10).

敲門 *Ch'iao¹ mén².* To knock at the door.

叫門 *Chiao⁴ mén².* To halloo; to knock at the door.

炕 *K'ang*⁴. To dry, to bake; a brick bed or divan heated by a fire underneath. Much used in North China.

紡 *Fang*⁸. To spin, to twist into thread or yarn.

線 *Hsien*⁴. Thread, either cotton, woolen, silk, or flaxen; a fine cord; a clue, a trace; a ray,—as of light; a streak or vein.

棉 *Mien*². The cotton plant.

棉花 *Mien*² *hwa*¹. Cotton, raw cotton, cotton wool.

小女兒 *Hsiao*³ *nü*³ *ér*². A little girl; a younger daughter.

院 *Yuan*⁴. A walled enclosure; a yard; a public institution,—as a hospital, an asylum, a college, etc.

帽 *Mao*⁴. A cap, hat, or head covering of any kind.

放 *Fang*⁴. To let go, to liberate; to indulge; to lay down; to open out; to send forth; to stretch, to extend.

地下 *Ti*⁴ *hsia*⁴. Below, on the ground, on the floor.

舖 *P'u*⁴. A shop, a workshop; a store; a stage of ten *li* on official roads.

店 *T'ien*⁴. A large shop; an inn:—Note (17).

街 *Chie*¹. A thoroughfare, a street.

買 *Mai*³. To buy, to purchase.

買賣 *Mai*³ *mai*⁴. Business, trade.

少 *Shao*⁸. Little, not much; few; a little while; seldom; slightly; to owe; wanting. Also read *shao*⁴.

攔 *Kod*¹. To lay on, or down; to put or place carefully; to hinder.

碎 *Sui*⁴. To break to pieces; fragments, bits.

零碎 *Ling*² *sui*⁴. Fragments, broken pieces; odds and ends, remnants.

窗 *Ch'wang*¹. A window; a window sash.

臺 *T'ai*². A turret; a fort; a stand; a platform, a pulpit; a title of respect to officers and others.

窗臺. A window-sill.

要飯 *Yao*⁴ *fan*⁴. To ask for food from door to door, to beg:—Note (23).

做 *Tsou*⁴ or *tsod*⁴. To do, to act, to perform. Constantly interchanged with **作**. Also read *tsu*⁴.

課六第

在地下。○我的衣裳在樓上。○在桌子
 在院子裏看孩子。○你的帽子不好放
 上。○大姑娘在家裏紡棉花。○小女兒
 敲門。○他不在家。○他母親有病病
 裏看書。○在上有天，在下有地。○不用
 ○李師娘在樓上鋪牀。○李先生在家
 兩個人躺在牀上。○在樓底下沒有人。

我的父親不在家。○我的母親還在。○
 他們在城裏住。○我住在東門外。○他

TRANSLATION.

- 1 My father is not at home.
- 2 My mother is still living.
- 3 They live in the city.
- 4 I live outside the east gate.
- 5 They two are lying on the bed.
- 6 There is no one down stairs.
- 7 Mrs. Li is up stairs making the beds.
- 8 Mr. Li is at home (or, in the house) reading.
- 9 Above is heaven, below is the earth.
- 10 You need not knock at the door; he is not at home.
- 11 His mother is lying on the k'ang sick.
- 12 The eldest daughter is in the house spinning.
- 13 The younger daughter is in the yard watching the baby.
- 14 You should not put your hat on the floor.
- 15 My clothes are up stairs.
- 16 There are a good many books on the table.

子，在西門外做買賣。
 兩個在書房裏看書。○李老爺的兒
 飯。○院子裏的花，實在好看。○他們
 窗臺上。○有一個老頭子，在門外要
 子上。○這些零碎東西，你可以擱在
 一百多學學房。○這些書可以擱在桌
 堂裏，有二十多個學生。○在城裏有
 街上。○東街上的買賣不少。○在學
 上有好些書。○他父親的鋪子，在大

- 17 His father's shop is on the great street.
- 18 There is no little business on the east street.
- 19 There are over twenty pupils in the school room.
- 20 There are over one hundred schools in the city.
- 21 You may put these books on the table.
- 22 These odds and ends you may put on the window-sill.
- 23 There is an old man outside the gate begging.
- 24 The flowers in the yard are truly beautiful.
- 25 They two are in the school-room studying.
- 26 Mr. Li's son is doing business outside the west gate.

NOTES.

2 在 is here used as a verb meaning, *to be alive*. This is the common way of saying that any one is still alive, and 不在 of saying that he is dead.

5 I have translated this sentence as referring to present time; but for any thing that appears in the words themselves, it might with equal propriety be rendered, *they were lying on the bed*. The correct sense must be gathered from the connection. The want of tense endings in Chinese leaves a great deal of the language in this uncertain state.

6 在樓底下 Lit., *at the loft underneath*. The 底 might be omitted, and in some sections generally is omitted. 人 at the close of this sentence is equivalent to *one*. It is constantly used in this indefinite sense for, *any one, any body*, etc.:—Les. 52.

9 在上 *At the above*. The absence of a noun leaves 上 as the noun. The same is true of 下 in the next clause. This form of expression is often used to call heaven and earth

(embracing the Chinese idea of God) to witness to the sincerity of the speaker.

10 Both 打 and 敲 are used of knocking at the door. In some places one is more used, and in other places the other. 敲 is the more proper and elegant of the two words. 叫門, *to call the gate*, is also largely used in the same sense. The book term is 叩門 *K'ou⁴ mén²*.

12 Might also be translated, *my eldest daughter*, etc.: which is correct, would depend on who is the speaker. In some places 棉 is omitted, and 紡花 used alone.

14 Note the difference between 底下 (6) and 地下.

17 In the south 店 is used for *shop* instead of 鋪子, and an inn is called 客棧 *k'ò² ch'án⁴* or 客寓 *k'ò² yu⁴*.

23 要飯 is commonly used for begging, though 討飯 *t'ao² fan⁴* is more accurate.

LESSON VII.

SIGN OF THE PAST TENSE.

了 is added to verbs to denote that the action is complete, and hence past. In speaking it is generally shortened into *le²*. It is also used as an auxiliary verb:—Les. 88.

已經 denotes past time, but always with a reference to the present, or to some given past or future time; thus answering to both the perfect and pluperfect tenses. It is stronger, however,

than *have* and *had*, and for this reason *already* is frequently added in translating. 已經 immediately precedes the verb, except as separated by the negative particle. When it precedes a verb 了 always follows, though 了 is often used without a preceding 已經.

The future perfect form is too complicated for this lesson.

VOCABULARY.

- 了 *Liao*³. Fixed, concluded; to bring to an end; to complete; intelligent:—See Sub., also Les. 88.
- 已 *I*³. Now, already, just;—See Sub. At the end of a clause,—no more, enough.
- 經 *Ching*¹. To pass through or by; already, then:—See Sub. To manage; laws, canons; classical books. Also read *ching*⁴.
- 張 *Chang*¹. To extend; to increase; to proclaim; to boast, a surname. A classifier, Les. 42.
- 錢舖 *Ch'ien*² *p'u*⁴. A bank, a broker-shop.
- 錢店 *Oh'ien*² *tien*⁴. A bank, a broker-shop. Southern.
- 黃 *Hwang*². Yellow; the imperial color; blasted; to fail in business.
- 倒 *Tao*³. To fall over or down; to fail in business:—Les. 91. Also read *tao*⁴.
- 斤 *Chin*¹. An axe; a catty equal to one and one-third English pounds.
- 走 *Tsou*³. To go; to run; to travel; to depart.
- 大老爺 *Ta*⁴ *lao*³ *yii*³. A title of respect higher than 老爺:—Note (4.)
- 丁 *Ting*¹. A full grown man; an individual; a surname.
- 死 *Si*³. To die; dangerous, mortal; urgent, intense; firm, fixed; a closed passage; an auxiliary verb:—Les. 183.
- 壞 *Hwai*⁴. To spoil, to injure; to perish; spoiled, rotten; dilapidated.
- 賠 *P'ei*². To make up a deficiency, to lose; to confess a fault and make amends.
- 賒 *Shé*². To lose money in trade.
- 賺 *Chwan*⁴. To sell at a profit; to gain; to earn.
- 尋 *Hsin*³ or *hsün*². To seek, to investigate; commonly, usually; to gain, to make money.
- 完 *Wan*². To finish; finished, completed; entirely:—Les. 101.
- 活 *Hwod*². Living, lively; bright, cheerful; to be alive; open; moveable; work, livelihood.
- 忘 *Wang*⁴. To forget; to neglect.
- 記 *Chi*⁴. To remember; to record, to note down; a history; a mark, a sign.
- 忘記. To forget.
- 鄉 *Hsiang*¹. A village; the country; a region; rude, rustic.
- 熟 *Shu*² or *shou*². Ripe, mature; cooked, well cooked; acquainted with; intimate, friendly.
- 點 *Tien*³. A black spot, a speck; a dot, a comma; an hour by a foreign clock; a little, a particle; speckled; to punctuate; to erase; to nod; to light,—as a lamp.
- 半 *Pan*⁴. To divide in two; a half.
- 鐘 *Chung*¹. A bell; a clock,—so called because it strikes.
- 工 *Kung*¹. Work; skill; a workman; a job, a piece of work; a day's work.
- 夫 *Fu*¹. To assist; a husband; a man; a distinguished man; an exalted lady. An affix:—Les. 190.
- 工夫. The time spent in doing anything; time; leisure; work; skill acquired by practice.
- 客 *K'od*⁴. A guest, a visitor; a stranger; a passenger; a dealer; a customer.
- 客堂 *K'od*⁴ *t'ang*². A guest room, a parlor.
- 客房 *K'od*⁴ *fang*². A guest room, a parlor.
- 一會 *I*¹ *hui*⁴. A short space of time, a while; presently, after little.
- 當 *Tang*¹. What is suitable or just; ought; adequate to bear responsibility; to act as, to be; to meet; to occur; when, at the time of; as, then:—Les. 90. Also read *tang*⁴.
- 心 *Hsin*¹. The heart; the mind; the will; affections, desires; the middle.
- 小心 *Hsiao*³ *hsin*¹. To be careful, cautious, prudent.
- 火 *Hwod*³. Fire, flame; excitement; anger; fever; inflammation.
- 燒 *Shao*¹. To burn; to kindle; to roast; hot, feverish.
- 上 *Shang*³. To go up, to ascend; to go into; to hand up; the third tone. See *shang*⁴.

第七課

張先生的錢店舖已經倒黃了。我在街上買了三斤棉花。我已經吃了飯。大老爺已經走了。他的事情已經說明白了。我已經等了三天。丁先生的母親已經死了。他在城裏住了好些日子。沒有法子，事情已經壞了。他們的買賣做賠了。張老爺的錢已經花淨了。他做了一年買賣，賺了一百五十兩銀子。做完了活，你可以來告訴我。我已經吃穀了。這個字我忘記了。他在鄉裏住了一年。這一課，我們已經學熟了。先生已經放了學。已經過了時候，先生還沒有來。這些話，我們已經學了兩天。我五點半鐘到了家。他已經寫了三點鐘的工夫，還沒寫完。等他來了，可以請他到客房坐一會兒。你當小心那個火，不要燒了房子。他的孩子已經不上學了。

TRANSLATION.

- 1 Mr. Chang's bank is already bankrupt.
- 2 I bought three catties of cotton (or, cotton wool) on the street.
- 3 I have already eaten.
- 4 The Prefect has already gone.
- 5 His business is already satisfactorily settled.
- 6 I have already waited three days.
- 7 Mr. Ting's mother is already dead.
- 8 He lived in the city a long time.
- 9 There is no help for it, the business is already ruined.
- 10 They have done a losing business.
- 11 Mr. Chang's money is already all spent.
- 12 He did business one year and cleared one hundred and fifty taels.
- 13 When you have finished your work, come and tell me.
- 14 I have already eaten enough.
- 15 I have forgotten this character.
- 16 He lived in the country a year.
- 17 This lesson we have already well learned.
- 18 The teacher has already dismissed school.
- 19 It is already past the time, and the teacher has not yet come.
- 20 We have already been learning these sentences for two days.
- 21 I reached home at five and a half o'clock.
- 22 He has already been writing three hours, and has not yet finished.
- 23 When he comes you may invite him into the parlor to sit a while.
- 24 You should be careful of the fire and not burn the house.
- 25 His boy has already quit school.

NOTES.

1 There is some uncertainty whether 黃 for "bankrupt" should not rather be written 荒 *hwang*¹ and read *hwang*². 倒 is the more widely used of the two forms.

4 The prefix 大 is not considered as properly belonging to a Hsien magistrate, though generally given to him. It is given of right to a Prefect and to sundry military officers. 大人 is given to a Tao T'ai and a Governor.

5 說明白了 means to discuss and agree upon a bargain, or a business arrangement of any kind. See Les. 109.

7 Might with equal propriety be rendered, *has already died*.

9 The natural object of the verb here stands as its nominative, and by virtue of its position makes the verb passive. This is a very common idiom,—more common in fact than

the regular passive with 被:—Les. 51. There are several other examples in this lesson.

11 花淨 Lit., *spent clean*; i.e., *all spent*.

13 完 is frequently added to verbs as an auxiliary to mark the completion of the action:—Les. 101.

15 This sentence might follow the English order, and read 我忘記了這個字, but is more thoroughly Chinese as it is.

19 The translation supplies "it is" and "and," illustrating how the Chinese does without such little words as these, so frequent and so useful in English.

20 話 commonly means *words*, but in this connection should be translated *sentences*.

24 那個, "the," but used of some particular fire referred to by the speaker.

LESSON VIII.

THE DIRECT INTERROGATIVE PARTICLE.

嗎 The sign of a direct question; i. e., a question that may be answered by yes or no. The Chinese do not indicate a direct question, as we do, by a rising inflection, but by the addition of this special word at the end of the interrogative clause. The character 麼, *mo*, is often written instead of 嗎, and some teachers will insist on always writing 麼, but incorrectly.*

麼 is joined to other particles (see Les. 17 and 35) to ask an *indirect* question, of which it is the proper sign. In speaking, both sounds (*ma* and *mo*) are heard, *ma* being the more frequent.

* NOTE.—嗎 formerly meant to revile, but is now entirely superseded by 罵, leaving 嗎 as the proper and distinctive sign of a direct question. Pedantic teachers object to it because it is a modern and colloquial character.

VOCABULARY.

嗎 *Ma*¹. Direct interrogative particle:—See Sub.

林 *Lin*². A forest, a grove; a *surname*.

認 *Jen*⁴. *To know well*; to recognize; to acknowledge; to confess.

識 *Shi*⁴. *To know*; to recognize; to be versed in; knowledge.

認識. *To know*, to be acquainted with.

認得. *To know*, to recognize.

爐 *Lu*². Any vessel for holding fire; a stove; a furnace. A classifier:—Les. 140.

火爐 *Hwo*² *lu*². A stove.

怕 *P'a*⁴. *To fear*, to dread; to apprehend; lest, perhaps.

撒 *Sa*¹. *To scatter*; to sow; to let loose; to let go.

扯 *Ch'e*². *To pull apart*; to tear; to drag or haul.

說 *Hwang*². Incoherent talk; exaggeration; lies.

撒謊. *To tell lies*, to lie.

扯謊. " " " " "

算 *Swan*⁴. *To count*, to reckon; to estimate, to regard; a calculation, a scheme.

罪 *Tsu*⁴. A crime, a sin, a fault; a violation of law or order; punishment; retribution; suffering.

兄 *Hsiung*¹. An elder brother; a senior, used after names as a term of respect.

弟 *Ti*⁴. A younger brother; a junior; a cousin.

兄弟. A younger brother or cousin.

答 *Ta*¹. An answer; to answer; to respond to; to recompense.

講 *Chiung*². *To converse*; to explain; to discuss; to preach; to discuss; to make a bargain.

敢 *Kan*². *To dare*, to venture; presuming, bold. With 不, in polite phrase,—I can not, I would not presume.

疼。好大這他²¹在家飽了明天沒有識
 過好樣沒親家你嗎了走有這
 嗎嗎說親你曉老嗎走嗎個
 答是○先生還看見○張○客¹⁹○他
 我的頭不還敢見嗎。爺不
 吃打算還

- 18 Has he not yet gone? Ans. He proposes to go to-morrow.
- 19 Have the guests already finished eating (eaten to the full)?
- 20 Do you not know that Mr. Chang is not at home?
- 21 If he had not seen with his own eyes, would he venture to speak thus?
- 22 Are you not well? Ans. No, my head aches.

NOTES.

6 看 here means, to think. Seeing, being the chief means of acquiring knowledge and forming judgments, is put figuratively for the act of judging.

7 The plural form is used in Chinese because the silver consists of irregular pieces which are to be weighed.

8 Lying is not practically regarded by the Chinese as an offense against morals, though it is so in theory. The term 罪 comes very far short of expressing the Christian idea of sin. 還 is here untranslatable. It expresses surprise, and adds emphasis to the question.

9 兄弟 means younger brother, though 兄 alone means elder brother, and 弟 alone means younger brother. There is no accounting for this anomalous combination. When the order is inverted; viz., 弟兄, the phrase means brothers, including both older and younger.

13 還, if read without special emphasis, is intensive, and may be rendered even. If, however, it be emphasized,

it assumes its proper meaning, and must be rendered, still, "Do you still dare to say," etc.

16 The conditional idea is here implied, as is often done in Chinese. It is indicated, partly in the order of the sentence, and partly by the emphasis given in speaking. (21) is similar. In ancient times the eastern side of the house, or court, was occupied by the proprietor, or host, the west being given to guests; hence the meaning of 東家. For this use of 家 see. Les. 72.

20 The first clause is spoken affirmatively, and the second interrogatively. Mr. Chang is not at home; {don't you know?}

22 不大好 not very well. 大 after a negative is often thus used as an intensive, equal to very. 不好過 Lit., not passing over well; i.e., not in good health. It is Southern Mandarin, and somewhat stronger than 不大好. Notice how the English idiom requires the answer to be "no," while the Chinese makes it "yes."

LESSON IX.

HERE AND THERE.

這裡 Here, in this place.

這兒

The first " " " " and regular form, and should always be used in public discourse, or when dignity is important. The second is the short colloquial form. It is much more used in Northern than in Central and Southern Mandarin. It is not heard at all in Nanking.

那裡 There, in that place.

那兒

These two forms correspond to those above, and the same remarks apply.

此地 In this place, here. Used only in Southern Mandarin, where it largely supersedes 這裡.

VOCABULARY.

此 Ts'í². . . . This, there; here; now:—Les. 63.

成 Ch'eng². To finish; to become; to fulfil one's part; to terminate; complete; the results; the quality of a thing:—Les. 101.

年成 Nien² ch'eng². The harvest, the season.

說話 Shwoá¹ hwa⁴. To talk, to speak, to converse.

閒 Hsien². Repose, leisure; at ease, unoccupied; idle, indolent; vacant.

閒話 Hsien² Hwa⁴. Chit chat; gossip; conversation.

冷 Ling³. Cold, chilly; indifferent; offended; lonesome; unusual.

熱 Jé⁴. Hot; to heat; feverish; ardent, warm-hearted; interested; zealous.

鬧 *Nao*⁴. *Bustle, tumult; to scold, to rail, to make a disturbance.*
熱鬧 或 **鬧熱**. *Bustling, busy; interesting.*
 The first form is Northern, the second, Southern.
清 *Ch'ing*¹. *Pure, clear; incorruptible; clear,—as a tone; settled,—as an account.*
靜 *Ching*⁴. *Still, quiet; mild, peaceable; silent; pure; impassable.*
清靜. *Quiet, undisturbed.*
傢伙 *Chia*¹. *Tools, furniture.*
傢伙 *Hwo*³. *Goods, furniture.*
傢伙. *Household furniture; utensils; tools; a bold, reckless fellow.*
傢使 *Chia*¹ *shi*³. *Utensils; tools. Local in Shantung.*
木 *Mu*⁴. *Wood; wooden.*
匠 *Chiang*⁴. *A mechanic, a workman, an artizan.*
木匠. *A carpenter; a joiner.*
手 *Shou*³. *The arm; the hand; a hand, a person; skill; actions, doings.*
藝 *I*⁴. *Skill in doing; expert; a craft, an art; an accomplishment.*
手藝. *Manual skill, handicraft, workmanship.*
住家 *Chu*⁴ *chia*¹. *A dwelling house; to be at home.*
講書堂 *Chiang*³ *shu*¹ *t'ang*². *A preaching place, a chapel.*
過晌 *Kwo*⁴ *shang*³. *The afternoon.*
過午 *Kwo*⁴ *wu*³. *The afternoon.*
情理 *Ch'ing*² *li*³. *Reason; right; common sense.*

纔 *Ts'ai*³. *Near in time; just, just now; and then; thereupon:—Les. 65.*
害 *Hai*¹. *To injure, to hurt; to damage; fearful of, anxious about.*
害怕 *Hai*⁴ *p'a*⁴. *To fear; to be frightened.*
藏 *Ts'ang*². *To hide, to conceal; to store up; stores. Also read tsang*⁴.
躲 *Tod*³. *To conceal oneself, to hide; to slip away, to escape.*
好說 *Hao*³ *shwo*¹. *Easy to speak; proper, grammatical. In answer to a compliment,—You flatter me.*
強 *Ch'iang*². *Violent, headstrong; firm; relying on force; sturdy; an excess, a remainder; better than, superior to:—Les. 58. Also read ch'iang*³, *chiang*⁴, and *chiang*¹.
傅 *Fu*⁴. *To superintend; a tutor, a teacher; a skilled workman; to lay on,—as colors.*
司 *Si*¹. *To control, to preside over.*
務 *Wu*⁴. *To bend the mind to, to strive; business, duty; must, by all means.*
師傅 *Shi*¹ *fu*¹. *A teacher, an instructor; one who has pupils or apprentices; a master workman, a head-man.*
司務 *Si*¹ *wu*⁴. *Same as above, but used only in the South.*
一點兒 *I*¹ *tien*³ *er*². *Read i*² *tier*³. *A very little; in the least.*
找 *Chao*³. *To supply what is deficient; to look for, to seek, to search for.*
徧 *Pien*⁴. *Everywhere; the whole; entire; to pervade.*

課 九 第

TRANSLATION.

說閒話。○這裏熱，那
 說話。○在那兒不好
 ○你們不要在這裏
 爐。○他不在這裏住。
 地方。○那裏沒有火
 嗎。○此這那地兒裏
 ○你這那地兒裏是個
 ○這裏沒有你的事情。
 請先生在這裏坐。○

- 1 Will you please sit here?
- 2 There's nothing here that concerns you.
- 3 Is it a good year with you?
- 4 This is an orderly place.
- 5 There is no stove there.
- 6 He does not live here.
- 7 You must not talk here.
- 8 It's not proper to gossip there.
- 9 It is hot here and cold there.

裏冷。○這裏。○此這¹²這裏¹⁰熱鬧。○你這些傢伙使，可以放在這裏。○過¹⁴地裏¹⁴的木匠，沒有好手藝。○這裏是住家，不是講書堂。○過¹⁴午¹⁴晌¹⁴先生可以在這裏寫字。○這裏的買賣大那裏的買賣小。○木匠的傢伙不在這裏。○這兒的買賣人，實在不講情理。○他在這裏，坐了半天纔走了。○他害了怕，這裏兒講說裏兒。○這裏的話，比那裏的話好說。○你們那裏的規矩，比我們這裏好強。○木匠師傅在那裏嗎？答：我沒看見。○他是在這裏，是在那裏，我一點兒不曉得。○我已經找遍了，實在不知道他放在那裏。

- 10. It is bustling here and quiet there.
- 11 These tools of yours you may put here.
- 12 The carpenters of this place are not skillful.
- 13 This is a dwelling house; not a chapel (or, a preaching hall).
- 14 You may write here this afternoon.
- 15 The business here is large; there, it is small.
- 16 The carpenter's tools are not here.
- 17 The people here are very unreasonable.
- 18 He sat here half a day before he left.
- 19 He was afraid and hid himself here and there.
- 20 The language here is easier to speak than the language there.
- 21 Your customs there are better than ours here.
- 22 Is the carpenter there? Ans. I have not seen him.
- 23 Whether he is here or whether he is there I have not the least idea.
- 24 I have already searched everywhere; I have really no idea where he put it.

NOTES.

1 This sentence would be equally good if written 請先生坐在這裏.

3 lit., *Is you there's year good?* The Chinese takes the liberty of putting "there" in the possessive case.

4 規矩 is properly a noun, but is here used as an adjective. It is a very common thing for Chinese words and phrases to be used as several parts of speech. Such transitions must not surprise the learner.

11 A 的 is implied after 你. This idiomatic form gives almost exactly the same force as the form of the translation. 傢伙 is chiefly used in Shantung, while 傢伙 is used both in the North and South.

12 好 drops out of the translation. It might be preserved by turning the sentence about thus: *The skill of the carpenters of this place is not good.*

13 住家, a live-home; i.e., a private residence. This sentence would be appropriately used to visitors or strangers who were intruding into private rooms or buildings where it was not convenient to have them go, a chapel being understood to be a public place where any one may go.

14 過午 is Southern and 過晌 Northern, though either would probably be understood in most places. 過晌午 is

also heard in some places, and the Nanking teacher insists on 中飯後.

17 In this connection 講 is more widely used than 說. Chinese teachers explain 情理 as including both the affections and the reason, but in actual use it is confined almost entirely to the latter.

18 "Half a day" is here, as often, used as an exaggeration, meaning a considerable time, or at least more time than befitted the circumstances. The turn of the sentence here requires 纔, then, to be translated before.

19 了 is elegantly inserted between the parts of the 害怕 instead of coming after it. "Hid himself here and there;" lit., *hid here and skulked there.*

21 There ought of right to be a 的 after 這裏 and before 強, and it would often be so said. The fact that it can be omitted and the incongruity not be noted by a Chinese teacher, shows that no proper analysis is applied to their spoken language.

22 師傅 means properly a master or teacher in any art or profession. It is used throughout the North. Teachers along the Yang Tsi reject it, however, and substitute 司務, which would be wholly inadmissible in the North.

LESSON X.

THE AUXILIARY VERBS 來 AND 去.

There is in Chinese a large class of auxiliary verbs which are joined to other verbs to qualify or limit their meaning. Of these the simplest

are 來 to come, and 去 to go. They are auxiliary verbs of direction, and may be joined to any verb conveying the idea of motion.

VOCABULARY.

起 *Ch'í*³. To rise, to stand up; to begin; to raise up; to produce; to open out the meaning of; the origin:—Les. 29 and 126.
 賊 *Tsei*² or *tsé*². A thief, a robber, a bandit; an insurgent, a rebel.
 偷 *T'ou*¹. To steal, to pilfer; underhand, secretly.
 牲 *Shéng*¹. Sacrificial animals,—the horse, ox, lamb, cock, dog and hog.
 牲口 *Shéng*¹ *k'ou*³. Domestic animals, especially work animals,—the horse, cow, mule and donkey.
 跑 *P'ao*³. To run, to gallop; to run off, to flee; to walk; to travel.
 喊 *Han*³ or *hsien*³. To call, to call to; to vociferate, to halloo.
 擡 or 抬 *T'ai*². To carry between two; to raise; to lift; to elevate; to praise.
 轎 *Chiao*⁴. A sedan chair, a palanquin.
 撤 *Ch'é*⁴. To remove from; to recall; to set aside.
 搬 *Pan*¹. To remove; to transport; to move; to bandy, to discuss.
 箱 *Hsiang*¹. A box; a trunk; a casket; the body of a cart.
 灰 *Hui*¹. Ashes; soot; dust; lime; ash colored; disheartened.
 土 *T'u*³. Earth, soil, clods; dust; territory, lands; native; local.
 擲 *Tan*³. To brush off with a duster, to dust; a feather duster.
 狗 *Kou*³. A dog; petty, contemptible; vile.
 奪 *Tou*³. To take by force, to snatch; to carry off; to criticise.
 搶 *Ch'iang*³. To rob by violence; to snatch; to dispute and struggle for.
 食 *Shi*². To eat; food; a meal; to take back, to retract.

發 *Fa*¹. To send forth; to dispatch; to prosper; a tape; to ferment; to show forth; to pay out money:—Les. 73.
 帶 *Tai*⁴. A sash, a girdle, a garter; a bandage; a tape; a zone; connected with; to take along with, to conduct:—Les. 110.
 支 *Chi*¹. A branch, to pay out; to draw money; to diverge; to withstand.
 捎 *Sao*¹. To select; to take along with; to send with another:—Note (15).
 綿 *Mien*². Soft, cottony; floss; drawn out as a thread; enduring; connected.
 綿衣裳 *Mien*² *i*¹ *shang*¹. Wadded garments.
 王 *Wang*². A king, a ruler; royal; a surname. Also read *wang*⁴.
 接 *Chie*¹. To receive; to succeed to, to follow; to unite; to join on, to splice.
 送 *Sung*⁴. To accompany, to see a guest to the door; to send; to go on purpose to take; to make a present; to give as a free gift.
 關 *Kwan*¹. To shut,—as a gate; to bar; a custom house or barrier; a suburb; to belong to, to concern; consequences, results.
 關東 *Kwan*¹ *tung*¹. East of the 山海關, or eastern end of the great wall, Manchuria.
 寄 *Chi*⁴. To lodge, to transfer; to entrust to, to send a letter or message.
 襖 *Ao*¹. An outer garment, a robe, a coat.
 當 *Tang*⁴. To pawn, to pledge; to consider or regard as; instead of, for, as; suitable, proper:—Les. 90. See *tang*¹.
 討 *T'ao*³. To manage; to search; to ask for, to beg; to bring upon; to provoke.
 厭 *Yen*⁴. Satiated; distasteful, hateful; to dislike, to loathe.
 討厭 *Hateful, disagreeable, provoking.*

第十課

請先生起來。○賊偷了我的衣裳去了。○張先生的牲口跑去了。○可以喊兩個人來擡轎子。○這些傢伙可以使撤去。○他已經搬去了。○他的衣裳箱子已經搬來了。○桌子上有土灰可以擲去。○大狗搶奪了小狗的食去。○這三個箱子還沒有發去嗎。○他沒有力氣不能起來。○有一個人從西院子過來。○我的兄弟帶了一百兩銀子去。○他的錢已經支去了。○請王先生明天帶我的綿衣裳來。○說來說去還是那些話。○他們四個人擡轎去接王大人。○生子已經跑去告訴他的母親了。○這些東西你還沒送去嗎。○這是兩個錯字可以點去。○你借了我的筆去明天要送來。○丁先生的兒子從關東寄了信來。○他借了我的大襖去當了五百錢。○王老三的兒子在這裏跑來跑去實在討厭。

TRANSLATION.

- 1 Will you please get up? (or, Will the gentleman please get up?)
- 2 A thief stole away my clothes.
- 3 Mr. Chang's animal ran away, (or, has run away).
- 4 You may call two men to carry the chair.
- 5 You may take away these dishes.
- 6 He has already moved away.
- 7 His box of clothing has already been brought.
- 8 There is dust on the table, brush it off.
- 9 The big dog snatched away the little dog's food.
- 10 Have these three boxes not yet been forwarded?
- 11 He has no strength, he can not get up.
- 12 A man came over from the west courtyard.
- 13 My younger brother took with him a hundred taels of silver.
- 14 He has already drawn his money.
- 15 Will Mr. Wang please bring along my wadded clothes to-morrow?
- 16 He talked and talked, but it was still the same thing over and over.
- 17 They four went as chair-bearers to meet General Wang.
- 18 Shêng-tsi has (or, had) already run off to tell his mother.
- 19 Have you not yet taken these things [to their destination]?
- 20 These are two erroneous characters; you may strike them out.
- 21 The pen which you borrowed of me you must return to-morrow.
- 22 Mr. Ting's son has sent a letter from Manchuria.
- 23 He borrowed my overcoat and pawned it for five hundred cash.
- 24 Wang the Third's boy is here running back and forth most provokingly.

NOTES.

4 The translation fails to convey fully the direction, or command, implied in the Chinese. The use of 叫 implies that there are professional chair-bearers within "call." Where there are none such, the term 找 *chao*³, to seek, would most likely be used.

9 食 food, is used in Mandarin only in certain phrases.

10 In the south 隻 *chi*¹ is generally used as the classifier of "boxes."

15 捎 means, to bring, take, or send along with, the implication being that the purpose of going is aside from the matter in question. It is not used in Southern Mandarin, where 帶 takes its place, although 帶 only serves to replace it in part.

16 說來說去 is a highly idiomatic expression, meaning to repeat over and over again, or to talk around a thing without coming to the point. There is nothing in the sentence to indicate whether the time is past or present; whether it should be translated in the third person or in the second. It defies all attempts at a literal translation.

17 When an official in travelling approaches a city over which he has jurisdiction, etiquette requires that officials of

a lower rank go outside of the city to a greater or less distance to "receive" him. A military officer entitled to be addressed as 大人 would generally be of rank corresponding to that of Brigadier General.

19 Note how the object is here placed first.

21 This sentence implies a relative clause, without formally expressing it. See Les. 46.

22 Here 帶 will not replace 捎, and 寄 is somewhat *wén*.

23 It is a common practice in China to borrow clothing, or other articles, for the purpose of "making a raise" by pawning them.

24 The sons of a family are numbered according to their ages, and are frequently designated by these numbers added to the family name, either with or without an intervening 老. The eldest, however, is not called 王一 or 王老一, but 王大 or 王老大. The use of 老 does not indicate that the person in question is old, but simply that in age he is the third. A child in arms may be so called. Not only are the sons of one man thus numbered, but the sons of brothers, living together, are all counted as own brothers and numbered in the order of their ages.

LESSON XI.

THE INSTRUMENTAL VERB 拿.

拿 or 拿 to take, to bring, is much used as an instrumental verb. It nearly always takes after it either 來 or 去. It is sometimes rendered as a verb, but is often best rendered by an instru-

mental preposition. The frequent use of instrumental verbs, of which there are a number, is a characteristic feature of Chinese construction. See Les. 28, 54 and 143.

VOCABULARY.

拿 *Na*². To lay hold of, to seize; to arrest; to take; to bring:—See Sub.

拏 *Na*². Same as 拿. The two forms are used indiscriminately.

杯 *Pei*¹. A cup; a goblet; a tumbler.

水 *Shui*³. Water; a fluid; a stream; clear, limpid; gentle.

柴 *Ch'ai*². Brush; firewood; fuel.

柴伙 *Ch'ai*². *Hwoá*⁸. Firewood; fuel.

燈 *Téng*¹. A lamp; a lantern.

巾 *Chin*¹. A napkin; a neckcloth; a cap or turban.

手巾 *Shou*³ *chin*¹. A handkerchief; a towel; a napkin.

擦 *Ts'a*¹. To scatter; to brush; to wipe; to rub; to scour.

措 *K'ai*³. To brush away, to wipe lightly with the hand. In Shantung read *ts'ai*¹.

淚 *Lei*⁴. Tears; to weep.

眼淚 *Yen*³ *lei*⁴. Tears.

盡 *Ching*⁴. Entirely, wholly; just. Also read *chin*⁴.

哄 *Hung*⁸. The hum of a crowd; to cozen, to deceive; to coax, to soothe.

紙 *Chi*³. Paper, stationery; a document.

取 *Ch'ü*³. To lay hold of; to take, to bring, to assume another's place; to select.

洋 *Yang*². The ocean; foreign; vast, wide.

自 *Tsi*⁴. From, commencing at; self, myself; personally:—Les. 21.

取燈 *Ch'ü*³ *téng*¹. Matches:—Note (7).

洋火 *Yang*² *hwoá*⁸. Matches.

自來火 *Tsi*² *lai*² *hwoá*⁸. Matches.

洗 *Hsi*³. To wash, to bathe; to purify; to rinse.

片 *P'ien*⁴. A leaf, a flake; a strip; a card; a section. A classifier:—Les. 125.
 座 *Tsō*⁴. A seat, a place, to sit. A classifier:—Les. 100.
 位 *Wei*⁴. A seat, a throne; position, dignity; proper. A classifier:—Les. 27.
 座位. A seat, a place to sit; an honorable seat; dignity.
 牆 *Ch'iang*². A wall of stone, brick or mud.
 筲 *T'iao*³. A coarse broom.
 筲 or 帚 *Chou*³. A broom.
 筲筲. A corn broom.
 掃 *Sao*³. To sweep, to brush; to clean up; to clear off, to rid. Also read *sao*⁴.
 鉛 *Ch'ien*¹. Lead; leaden.
 鉛筆 *Ch'ien*¹ *pi*³. A lead pencil.

行 *Hsing*². To go, to walk; to act, to do; to prevail; to be customary; to serve as, to answer. Also read *hsing*⁴ and *hang*².
 籠 *Lung*². A cage; an open basket; to cover; to entrap. A classifier:—Les. 125.
 燈籠 *Téng*¹ *lung*². A lantern.
 鞭 *Pien*¹. A whip; a lash, a cut or stroke of a whip; to flog.
 小人 *Hsiao*³ *jén*². The mean man, a depraved and contemptible fellow,—a classical term; a boy, a child.
 作 *Tsō*⁴. To act, to do; to become; to make; work; a workman; workmanship. Also read *tsu*³.
 下作人 *Hsia*⁴ *tsō*⁴ *jén*². A worthless fellow; a blackguard.
 貨 *Hwō*⁴. Goods; merchandize; stock.
 常 *Ch'ang*². Constant, ordinary; ever, always; habitually.

第十課

TRANSLATION.

拿¹一杯水來。○拿²一點柴伙來生火。○你去拿
 個燈來。○拿⁴手巾揩擦去眼淚。○他⁵盡拿實話哄
 人。○紙⁶沒有了,可以拿錢去買。○拿⁷自來火來
 點燈。○拿⁸熱水還洗不乾淨嗎。○可以拿我的
 片子去請他。○沒有¹⁰座位兒,可以去拿椅子來。○
 你拿我的東西去送人,還有這個理嗎。○那¹²牆
 上有灰,可以拿筲筲來掃去。○拿¹³鉛筆寫字,還
 能擦去。○拿¹⁴手打他,還不行嗎。○到¹⁵八點鐘,你
 可以拿燈籠去接我。○他¹⁶拿我的話,不當話。○

- 1 Bring a cup (or, glass) of water.
- 2 Bring a little wood and kindle the fire.
- 3 Go and bring a lamp.
- 4 Take your handkerchief and brush away the tears.
- 5 He just deceives people by means of the truth.
- 6 The paper is all used up: you may take [some] cash and go and buy [more].
- 7 Bring a match and light the lamp.
- 8 Can you not wash clean, even with warm water?
- 9 You may take my card and go and invite him.
- 10 There are no seats: go and bring some chairs.
- 11 Is it reasonable for you to take my things to make presents to other people?
- 12 There is dust on that wall, bring a broom and sweep it off.
- 13 If you write with a lead pencil, you can rub it out.
- 14 Will it not answer to strike him with your hand?
- 15 At eight o'clock you may

你的活。師傅，你不好拿我的傢伙做
 中國的貨，當外國貨賣。○林
 百兩銀子來買貨。○他常拿
 來比我。○李老三拿四千八
 當理說。○你不好拿下作人
 帽子來。○我看你盡拿不是
 打他。○你上書房去拿我的
 這¹⁷個牲口不走，可以拿鞭子

- bring a lantern to meet me.
 16 He paid no attention to what I said.
 17 This animal will not go; you should whip him up.
 18 Go to the school room and bring my hat.
 19 In my opinion you are just putting wrong for right.
 20 You must not take me to be a mean fellow.
 21 Li the Third brought four thousand eight hundred taels of silver to buy goods.
 22 He constantly sells native goods for foreign goods.
 23 Mr. Lin, you should not take my tools to do your work.

NOTES.

1 In this first sentence 拿 is a principal verb. So also in the third.

4 We might with equal propriety translate, "Take a handkerchief and wipe away your tears." The Chinese could readily express the "your" by inserting 你的, but they would rarely do so except for the sake of special emphasis. 擦, to wipe, to scour, is not often used of tears, the more common word being 揩, to brush, or wipe away, and which in this connection is read ts'ai.¹

5 "Just" is only an approximate rendering of 淨 or 盡, which is much used, as here, with the general sense of entirely, wholly, etc. The 盡 suits the meaning best, and is preferred at Nankin, where also, its ordinary reading is correct. The idea in the sentence is, that the speaker creates an impression in advance, which is contrary to the facts, and then states the facts in such a way that they are disbelieved.

The 人 at the close is used indefinitely:—Les. 52.

7 取燈 is the literary name for matches, 自來火 is the commercial name, and 洋火 the name most commonly

used by the people. Besides these names, matches are in some places called 觸燈, Ts'u² têng¹, strike lamps.

9 A card in the hand of a messenger is the proof that he is authorized to speak for the party whose card he bears.

10 The form of the sentence implies that more than one chair was wanted; hence, "some" is supplied in the translation.

11 人 is here used in contrast with 我, and hence means other people, or another man. 還 is used intensively.

13 The subjunctive idea is implied rather than expressed. The sentence might perhaps with equal propriety be rendered, Writing done with a lead pencil may be rubbed out.

15 拿燈籠去接我. We should certainly say "come" rather than go. The Chinese in such cases always speak from the standpoint of the person addressed.

16 Lit., He took my words not as words; i.e., he disregarded what I said. For this and similar uses of 當, see Les. 90.

20 Lit., You ought not to take a mean man to measure me; i.e., you should not liken me to a mean man. 好 and 當 do not convey quite the same meaning; the former refers to propriety, the latter to duty.

LESSON XII.

THE COMMON CONNECTIVES.

和 With, together with, and. The Chinese language has no equivalent for "and." This word 和 is made to do duty for it, and foreigners are generally inclined to use it too much. The Chinese very often allow mere juxtaposition to suggest or imply the idea we convey by "and."

也 In wén-li (文理 the literary style) a final particle marking the completion of the idea. In Mandarin it means, also, likewise. Before 是 it serves to strengthen the idea, but is not generally translatable:—See (17). Before 不 it implies a

doubt, or alternative, which is sometimes, though not always, equal to whether. When used twice in succession the first is untranslated and the second rendered, and also.

又 Again; moreover; still. Followed by 不 it is disjunctive.

再 Again, a second time; henceforth.

This lesson only introduces the common uses of these words, without attempting to illustrate them fully. There are also a number of other words of the same class:—See Les. 110.

VOCABULARY.

- 和 *Hod² or hē² or hwo²*. Harmony, agreement; to be at peace; to mix; to unite; *with*, etc.:—see Sub.
- 也 *Yie³*. Also, and, likewise:—see Sub.
- 又 *Yu⁴*. Also, and; furthermore; and then; again:—Les. 170.
- 再 *Tsai⁴*. Repeated; a second time; then; again; still, henceforth.
- 仗 *Chang⁴*. Weapons; to fight, to come to blows; a battle, a *fight*, to rely on.
- 架 *Chia⁴*. A frame, a stand, a rack; staging, scaffolding; to support; to ward off. A classifier:—Les. 125.
- 打仗 *Ta³ chang⁴*. To fight a battle; to fight; to come to blows:—Note (2).
- 打架 *Ta³ chia⁴*. To fisticuff, to come to blows.
- 再三 *Tsai⁴ san¹*. Again and again, repeatedly.
- 往 *Wang³*. To go; to go away, to depart; past; formerly.
- 來往 *Lai² wang³*. Intercourse, communication, dealings.
- 面 *Mien⁴*. The countenance, *the face*; the surface; the side; honor; reputation:—Les. 26 and 125.
- 路 *Lu⁴*. A road, a path; a way of duty or action; a sort, a class.
- 一路 *I¹ lu⁴*. Together with; a sort, or kind; the same kind:—Les. 106.
- 嘴 *Tsui³*. A bird's bill; *the lips*; the snout; a mouth; a spout; an aperture.
- 善 *Shan⁴*. Good, virtuous; goodness; merit; meek, docile; skilful.
- 惡 *O⁴*. Bad, vicious; evil; ugly, vile; wickedness. Also read *wu⁴*.
- 天生 *Tien¹ Sheng¹*. By birth, by nature; naturally, originally.
- 仇 *Ch'ou²*. An enemy, a competitor; hatred, animosity; proud.
- 敵 *Ti²*. An opponent, a competitor; an enemy; an equal; to withstand; to fight.
- 仇敵. An enemy, a foe; an antagonist.
- 萬 *Wan⁴*. A myriad; ten thousand; many; every one; all:—Les. 104.
- 爐灰 *Lu² hui¹*. Ashes.
- 回 *Hui²*. To desert, to turn back; to return; to repent; a *time*, a *turn*; a chapter in a novel; Mohammedan:—Les. 41 and 64.
- 緊 *Chin³*. To bind fast; urgent, pressing; instant; confined, tight.
- 要緊 *Yao⁴ chin³*. Urgent; important.
- 交 *Chiao¹*. To join; to deliver up; to communicate with; to copulate; trade; *intercourse*, *friendship*.
- 交往 *Chiao¹ wang³*. The intercourse of friendship; dealings.
- 聲 *Sheng¹*. A sound; a voice; the tone of a word; reputation; to make known.
- 聲氣 *Sheng¹ ch'i⁴*. Sound, voice.
- 亮 *Liang⁴*. Clear, bright; lustrous; open.
- 無 *Wu²*. None; not having; without, wanting:—Les. 121.
- 益 *I²*. To increase; to benefit; beneficial; advantageous; full:—Les. 123.
- 無益. Useless, unprofitable.
- 值 *Chi²*. To meet, to be worth; to sell for; value, price; worth while.
- 定 *Ting⁴, 175*. To fix, to settle, to decide; really, certainly; at rest, fixed:—Les. 116.
- 主 *Chu³*. A ruler, lord, master; a host; to rule; to show what is to be.
- 主意 *Chu³ i⁴*. Will, determination; to decide, to make up the mind.
- 勸 *Oh'üan⁴*. To exhort; to admonish; to encourage; to advise.
- 同 *T'ung²*. Together; all; united; the same, alike; identical; to unite, to harmonize; and, with, etc.:—Les. 110.
- 爹 *Tie¹*. Papa, daddy.
- 眼睛 *Ching¹*. The pupil of the eye; the iris.
- 眼睛 *Yen³ ching¹*. The eye; the eyes.
- 耳朵 *Er²*. The ear; a handle, an ear.
- 耳朵 *Tou²*. A cluster; a lobe; a head of flowers; a pendant. A classifier:—Les. 125.
- 耳朵. The ear lobe; the ear.
- 聾 *Lung²*. Deaf; hard of hearing.
- 同窗 *T'ung² ch'wang¹*. A school-mate.
- 戚 *Ch'i¹*. To pity; mournful; near related; relatives, kindred.
- 親戚 *Oh'in¹ ch'i⁴*. Relatives not of the same surname.

課 二 十 第

○我⁵和他沒有來往。○他⁶不還錢，又不見面。○我⁷和你^一路^兩去^個不好嗎。○我的⁸父親
 在家裏和客說話。○他⁹嘴裏是一樣，心裏又是一樣。○善¹⁰人和惡人，天生是仇敵。○
 丁¹¹百萬又和他兄弟打架。○拿¹²爐灰擦，也不能擦乾淨。○我¹³已經告訴你三回，你又
 忘¹⁴了¹⁶嗎。○這¹⁴個禮拜，你¹⁷不去也不要緊。○他¹⁵不是個好人，你再不可和他交往。○
 和他¹⁶說話，該大一點聲^兒。○你¹⁷和他說到天亮，也是無益。○你的¹⁸女人不講情理，你
 也不講情理嗎。○他的¹⁹房子和地，也不過能值一千吊錢。○我²⁰已經告訴你不用再
 來，你又來了嗎。○他²¹已經定了主意，勸他也是無益。○我的²²兒子和他的女兒同^年歲。
 ○他的²³老^父親^親眼睛也花了，耳朵也聾了。○告²⁴訴他，和告²⁴訴我是一樣。○他是²⁵我的

TRANSLATION.

- 1 He and I are not on good terms.
- 2 You must not fight with people.
- 3 I have already spoken to him repeatedly.
- 4 There is some reason in what you say.
- 5 I have no intercourse with him.
- 6 He will not pay me, nor even see me.
- 7 Wouldn't it be well for us to go together?
- 8 My father is at home talking with the guests.
- 9 In his mouth is one thing, in his heart another.
- 10 The good and evil are by nature enemies.
- 11 Ting Pê Wan has had another quarrel with his younger brother.
- 12 It cannot be scoured clean, even with ashes.
- 13 I have already told you three times: have you forgotten again?
- 14 It is no matter, even if you do not go this week.
- 15 He is not a good man: you must have no more dealings with him.
- 16 When you speak to him you should raise your voice a little.
- 17 Talk to him till daylight and it will be of no avail.
- 18 Are you going to talk unreasonably as well as your wife?
- 19 His house and land are not worth over one thousand strings of cash.
- 20 Have you come again, after I told you you need not come any more?
- 21 He has already made up his mind: it is useless to exhort him.
- 22 My son and his daughter are the same age.
- 23 His old father's eyes are dim and his ears deaf.
- 24 To tell her is the same as to tell me.

會他可林又王²⁶親是
道講以師來太太戚。我的
理一和娘了，太○的又

25 He is my schoolmate and also my relative.

26 Old Mrs. Wang has come again. You (Mrs. Lin) may preach to her a while.

NOTES.

2 打架 is the more general and proper term for "to fight." 打仗 is, however, largely used in Shantung in this sense, and in Kiukiang 打降 is used.

4 也 is represented by *some* in the translation. It gives the idea of a concession on the part of the speaker that "you" also have some show of reason on *your* side; as if we should say, *Well, yes, what you say is reasonable.*

7 The addition of 兩個 is a common idiom. It conveys the idea that you and I are to be companions. The 一路, which is the Southern form, does not give quite the same sense. With it the translation should be, *Wouldn't it be well for me to go along with you?*

10 天生, *Heaven born*; i.e., *by nature.* The sentiment of the sentence is too strong for Chinese ethics.

18 In the South 記 is always used with 忌; in the North it is often, perhaps generally, omitted.

16 大 is here translated as a verb. We might, however, supply a verb and translate, *When you speak to him you should speak with a little louder (greater) voice.*

18 The first clause does not affirm what is said, but assumes it as a fact.

19 也 is lost in the translation. It was introduced into the sentence by something that preceded, and with which the assertion concerning the worth of the property is brought into comparison. Its force may be approximated by emphasizing the word worth. 能 would be omitted by many. Its presence implies a hypothesis;—"in case they were sold."

22 When speaking of ages, 歲 is commonly used. In this case Nanking Mandarin prefers 年, which is only so used, however, when joined with 同. Notice that in this sentence the verb to be is omitted.

24 It is here assumed that the person referred to is a woman; hence 他 is rendered "her."

LESSON XIII.

COMMON FUTURE FORMS.

就 To approach; just now, forthwith.

必 Certainly; must, determined on.

要 To want, to need.

These three words are all used to express the future. The first expresses what will immediately or speedily follow;—often equal to, *just now, at once, forthwith, etc.*

The second expresses what will necessarily or certainly follow;—often equal to, *surely, must.*

The third expresses what will probably follow, or what the person intends should follow; generally rendered simply *will* or *shall*.

要 is often joined with 就 or 必, in which case it largely loses its own special signification.

These words do not always require "will" or "shall" in the translation. They are often equivalent to, *about to, going to, etc.* The future is often implied without any special word, by the mention of a future time; as, 我明天去, *I to-morrow go*; i.e., *I will go to-morrow.*

VOCABULARY.

就 *Chiu*⁴. To approach; to accompany; to complete, to finish; to accommodate; then,—in time or in argument; *just now, at once*:—See Sub., also Les. 44.

必 *Pi*⁴. A strong affirmative; *certainly will*:— See Sub. Must; necessarily; positively:—Les. 104 and 116.

教 *Chiao*¹. To instruct, to teach; to command; doctrine, tenets. Also read *chiao*⁴.

館 *Kwan*⁸. An inn; a club house; an assembly hall; an exchange; a saloon, a restaurant; a school-room; a school.

天父 *T'ien*¹ *Fu*⁴. Heavenly Father:—a Christian term.

保 *Pao*⁸. To protect; to defend; to be surety for, to warrant; to keep safe; to insure.

護 *Hu*⁴. To protect; to aid; to convey, to escort;

保護. To protect, to guard; to screen from.

本 *Pên*⁸. The origin, root; source; cause; radi- cal; the beginning; native; capital, principal; proper, own; this; the present; a volume; a document. A classifier:—Les. 42.

三字經 *San¹ Tsi⁴ Ching¹*. The Trimetrical Classic, —a primer containing an epitome of Chinese philosophy and history.

散 *San⁴*. To scatter; to dissipate; to disperse, to separate. Also read *san⁵*.

收 *Shou¹*. To receive; to quit,—as work; to gather; to harvest; to wind up.

後 *Hou⁴*. After, subsequent; behind in place; then, next; in future; an heir.

隨後 *Su² hou⁴*. Forthwith, presently, at once.

念會 *Nien⁴ hui⁴*. To memorize, to master:— Note (11).

眼看 *Yen⁵ k'an⁴*. About to; on the point of, on the verge of; evidently.

眼見 *Yen⁵ chien⁴*. Same as 眼看.

電 *Tien⁴*. Lightning; electricity.

電線 *Tien⁴ hsien⁴*. A telegraph wire, or line; the telegraph.

立 *Li⁴*. To stand up; to set up; to institute, to establish; to appoint; to draw up a contract; just now, soon.

立時 *Li⁴ shi²*. Instantly, at once, forthwith:— Les. 162.

傳 *Ch'wan²*. To transmit; to hand down; to promulgate, to propagate; to summon, to subpoena. Also read *chwan⁴*.

好事 *Hao⁵ shi⁴*. Virtuous deeds; deeds of benevolence or charity; alms.

存 *Ts'én²*. To preserve; to maintain; to retain; to lay by, to keep; to put on deposit; a balance to credit.

耽 or **耽** *Tan¹*. To obstruct; to prevent; to hinder.

誤 *Wu⁴*. To mistake, to be in error; to hinder; an unintentional wrong, a fault.

耽誤. To hinder, to prevent; to spend in vain; to miss an opportunity.

轉 *Chwan⁵*. To turn over or about; to reverse; to turn over to; on the contrary, on the other hand; to comprehend; to veer—as the wind:—Les. 112. Also read *chwan⁴*.

風 *Féng¹*. The wind; air; manner, style; fashion, example; fame, reputation.

雨 *Yü⁵*. Rain; a shower.

劃 *Hwo¹*. To split open; to rend; to give up, to risk, to sacrifice:—Note (23).

拼 *P'ing¹*. To reject; to brush away; to risk. to sacrifice.

睡 *Shui⁴*. To sleep; to nod or doze.

趕 or **趕** *Kan⁵*. To pursue; to hurry; to drive; by, by the time:—Les. 144.

歇 *Hsie¹*. To rest; to stop, to leave off; to take a vacation; to quit business.

關門 *Kwan¹ mén²*. To shut the door; to quit or wind up business.

安 *An¹*. Quiet; rest; peace; at ease; to tranquilize; to place; to put to rights.

息 *Hsi²*. A respiration; to breathe; to sigh; to rest; to put a stop to; interest.

安息日 *An¹ hsi² ji⁴*. The Sabbath day.

課三十第

TRANSLATION.

八 天 就 回 來 。 ○ 這 個 事 。

要 回 家 。 ○ 我 家 去 住 七

工 。 ○ 過 三 四 個 禮 拜 。

不 多 時 候 。

他 的 買 賣 必 要 賠 本 錢 。

李 先 生 一 會 兒 就 來 。

害 怕 。

天 父 必 保 護 你 。

到 這 裏 來 教 學 。

館 。

不 用 。

等 一 等 我 就 去 。

他 要 。

- 1 Wait a little and I will go.
- 2 He intends to come here to teach school.
- 3 You need not fear: the Heavenly Father will certainly protect you.
- 4 Mr. Li will come presently.
- 5 His business will certainly be a losing one.
- 6 In a short time the carpenters will quit work.
- 7 After three or four weeks I will return home.
- 8 I will go home and stay seven or eight days and then return.

我要先和你說明白。○你¹⁰可以先走，我隨後就到。○這¹¹本三字經，不多日子就念會了。○等¹²兩三天，我必要去見他。○客¹³來了，我就必來告訴你。○還¹⁴沒寫完嗎，答眼¹⁵見¹⁶就寫完了。○用¹⁷電線打¹⁸信，立時就到了。○我¹⁹就要在這裏傳道理。○要²⁰作好²¹事，必要先存好心。○不²²先說明白了，這個法子就不行。○這²³個法子怕²⁴要²⁵不行。○這²⁶個法子必不行。○不要²⁷耽誤工夫，起來就走。○已²⁸經²⁹換³⁰了東北風，我看必要下雨。○我³¹拼³²上³³一³⁴夜不睡，趕天亮也必送去。○不³⁵用再去請他，等一會兒他就來。○我³⁶看他的買賣，快要歇³⁷關³⁸門了。○王³⁹心清在安息日上，必要到講書堂。

- 9 I want to have a clear understanding with you about this matter beforehand.
- 10 You may go ahead: I will be there presently.
- 11 I can master this Trimetrical Classic in a few days.
- 12 Wait two or three days and I will certainly go and see him.
- 13 When the guests come I will certainly come and tell you.
- 14 Have you not yet finished writing?
Ans. I shall finish in a moment.
- 15 A letter sent by telegraph is there at once.
- 16 It is my purpose to propagate religion here.
- 17 If you would act right you must first have a right heart.
- 18 If you do not first have a clear understanding this plan will not work.
- 19 This plan will probably not succeed.
- 20 This plan will certainly not succeed.
- 21 Do not waste time: go as soon as you get up.
- 22 The wind has changed to the north-east: I think it will certainly rain.
- 23 Even if I give up the whole night to it I will not fail to deliver it to you by day-light.
- 24 You need not go again to invite him: wait a little and he will come.
- 25 In my opinion his business will soon close up.
- 26 Wang Hsin Ch'ing will certainly be at church on the Sabbath.

NOTES.

2 This sentence might mean, *He wants to come here to teach*. Which meaning the speaker intended would be indicated by the emphasis and the connection. 教館 is rarely heard in the North, and 教學 as rarely in the South.

6 收工 is more widely used than 散工. The 收 is used from the standpoint of gathering tools, etc., and putting them in order for leaving.

11 Nothing in the sentence indicates whether "I" or "you" should be used in translating. 念 means, *to chant, or drone*, and 念會 means to rhyme over till you "know it," as school boys say; that is, to memorize.

13 客來了 *The guests having come; i.e., when the guests come.*

14 眼見 *eye seeing; i.e., in sight, just at hand; nearly always followed by 就*. The two forms are quite equivalent.

16 The translation does not quite give the full force of the 就: the idea is that just now and here I purpose to propagate religion.

17 Might with equal propriety be rendered, *Whoever would act right must first have a right heart.*

19 要, as here used, is more or less local: it should be read with a slight emphasis, and expresses a strong presumption; whereas 怕 properly expresses apprehension.

22 換 is more common in the North, 轉 in the South, though both forms would probably be understood either North or South.

23 The expression 劃上, or 出上, or 拼上, has a peculiar force very near to our word *sacrifice*;—*I will sacrifice*

the whole night, etc. The three forms are not precisely equal in force, nor are they everywhere alike current. 劃 is most used in the North, 拼 in the South. In Kiukiang 破不得 also is used in the same sense, but how analysed it is not easy to see.

LESSON XIV.

THE COMMON SIGN OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

若 If, should, supposing.

若是 If, should, supposing.

As a conjunction, 若 means the same without 是 that it does with it. Whether 是 is added or not depends chiefly on euphony.

There are a number of other words of similar meaning and use, which will be introduced by and by:—See Les. 132.

This lesson illustrates in a measure how the Chinese language expresses moods and tenses without any endings or even special forms.

VOCABULARY.

若 *Jod*¹. Like; as; same as; *if, perhaps, supposing*:—See Sub.

挑 *T'iao*². To provoke, to irritate; to tease; to mix, to stir up; to rip open; to carry,—as a lantern. Also read *t'iao*¹.

唆 *Sod*¹.....To incite; to set at variance.

挑唆 To sow discord; to incite to contention.

提 *T'i*². To raise up; to bring to notice; to mention. Also read *ti*¹.

出頭 *Ch'u*¹ *t'ou*². To take the lead, to put oneself forward.

別 *Pie*². To separate; to distinguish; to depart; different from, another. Also read *pie*⁴.

罪人 *Tsui*⁴ *jèn*². A sinner:—a Christian term.

悔 *Hui*³.....To repent; to change.

改 *Kai*³. To change, to alter; to reform, to amend.

悔改 To repent and reform; to repent.

獄 *Yü*⁴.....A prison, a jail.

地獄 *Ti*⁴ *yü*⁴. Hell:—a Buddhist term adopted by Christianity.

悞 *Wu*⁴. To deceive; false; to hinder. Constantly interchanged with 誤.

罰 *Fa*².....A punishment; to fine; to punish.

幸 *Hsing*⁴.....Fortunate, lucky; blessed.

虧 *K'wei*¹. Shortness of breath; a deficiency; a defect; to injure; owing to; in consequence of.

幸虧 Fortunately; luckily; a happy chance.

幫 *Pang*¹. To help; to assist; to add on a piece; a company, a set:—Les. 140.

助 *Chu*⁴.....To assist, to help.

幫助 To assist, to help.

真 *Chên*¹. True; sincere; genuine; in reality; truly, in fact.

良 *Liang*². Good, gentle, mild; excellent of its kind; natural, instinctive.

良心 *Liang*² *hsin*¹. Conscience; a desire to do right.

罵 *Ma*⁴. To rail at, to scold; to call names; to revile.

分 *Fên*⁴. A part, a share; one tenth; a candareen; rank, lot; the duties of a station. Also read *fên*¹.

步 *Pu*⁴. To walk; a step, a station; a pace of five Chinese feet, a way, a course. A classifier:—Les. 125.

地步 *Ti*⁴ *pu*⁴. Rank; position; footing; circumstances.

胖 *P'ang*⁴.....Fat; hearty.

天分 *T'ien*¹ *fên*⁴. Natural endowments, talents, gifts.

應 *Ying*¹. That which is right, ought; suitable, proper; to assent. Also read *ying*⁴.

許 *Hü*². To grant, to allow; to acquiesce; to permit; to promise; to betroth; many, very:—Les. 130.

應許 *To promise; to consent.*
 剝 *Pod¹ or pa¹. To skin; to peel off; to uncover; to tear off; to fleece.*
 肯 *K'en⁸. To be willing; to assent, to allow.*
 待 *Tai⁴. To wait; to expect; to treat, to behave towards.*
 管保 *Kwan⁸ pao⁸. To guarantee, to warrant; you may be sure.*

府 *Fu⁸. A library; a store-house; an encyclopedia; a palace; a mansion.*
 府上 *Fu⁸ shang⁴. A gentleman's house; your residence.*
 望 *Wang⁴. To hope for, to expect; to look towards; to see from afar; hopes.*
 拜望 *Pai⁴ wang⁴. To pay one's respects to, to call on.*

課四十第

TRANSLATION.

若是¹⁶不罵我，我還能打他嗎。¹⁵他若真窮到這個地步¹⁷，還能這樣胖嗎。¹¹
 若是天分好，二年也能學會了。¹⁷他又應許二十還錢，若是到了日
 良心。¹³我們在路上若不坐那一會兒，這個時候早到了。¹⁴若是他
 是不來，我們就沒有法子。¹²若王老三真說了這些話，他實在沒有
 就回來了。¹⁰若是明天再不學，我必要罰你。¹¹幸虧你來幫助，你若
 還你。⁸罪人若不悔改，死後必下地獄。⁹若沒有事情耽誤，六天我
 提。⁶你的兄弟若不出頭，別人還能出頭嗎。⁷若是他不還你，我就
 唆，事情早成了。⁴你若等用，我就給你。⁵若是他不先提，你也不要
 若是你去，我也要去。²若是先生知道，他必要打你。³若沒有人挑

- 1 If you go I also will go.
- 2 If the teacher knew it he would certainly whip you.
- 3 If no one had meddled, the affair would have been concluded long ago.
- 4 If you are waiting to use it, I will just give it to you.
- 5 If he does not first mention it, you need not mention it.
- 6 If your younger brother does not take the lead (or, come to the front), can any one else do so?
- 7 If he does not repay you, I will repay you.
- 8 If sinners do not repent, after death they will go to hell.
- 9 If there is nothing to prevent, I shall return in six days.
- 10 If by to-morrow you still have not learned it, I will certainly punish you.
- 11 It's fortunate you came to our help: if you had not come we should have been in a dilemma.
- 12 If Wang the Third really said these things, he certainly has no conscience.
- 13 If we had not sat down that time on the road, we should have been there before this time.
- 14 If he had not reviled me, would I have struck (or, thrashed) him?
- 15 If he were really as poor as this, would he still be so fat?
- 16 If his talents are good, he can learn it even in two years.
- 17 He has again promised to pay by the twentieth: if at that time he still does not pay, I

來 這 知 不 管 人 裳 要 子
拜 裏 兒 道 肯 保 這 〇 剝 再
望 就 府 〇 你 樣 若 他 不
了 早 上 是 也 待 是 有 的 還
了 過 在 是 是 你 有 衣 我

will strip off his clothes.
18 If any one should treat you in this way, I'll guarantee you also would protest.
19 If I had known your residence was here, I should have come over before this to call upon you.

NOTES.

2 This sentence might be rendered, *If the teacher had known it he would certainly have whipped you*, or, *If the teacher finds it out he will certainly whip you*. These distinctions which the English expresses so admirably, the Chinese does not express, although it might be made to express, or at least indicate them; thus the first, by inserting 早 *Tsao*,³ *early*,—若是先生早知道, etc.; and the second by inserting 後來 *Hou⁴ lai³*,³ *afterwards*,—若是先生後來知道, etc.
3 The Chinese might with equal propriety be arranged, 若你的兄弟不出頭, etc., and this is the *grammatical order*. The Chinese, however, do not hesitate to leave the first words without any logical construction; in fact they

prefer this order. The grammatical incongruity is something they neither understand nor appreciate.
9 The use of 了 at the close implies that the return would be within, or by the end of the six days; without it the meaning *might* be that the party would *start back* in six days.
13 Lit., *at this time early have arrived*; i.e., *before this time*. Notice how the Chinese attains to the idea of "should have been."
15 分兒 will not pass in the South, though 地步 is equally good in the North.
17 "Strip off his clothes;" i.e., to hold for security.

LESSON XV.

INTENSIVES.

最 Excessively, exceedingly, very. More used in the South than in the North.

頂 The top; the best or highest in character or quality,—thus making the superlative. Less used in Southern than in Northern Mandarin.

挺 To stretch, used as a kind of super-superlative in place of 頂. It is a question whether *t'ing* is not simply 頂, aspirated in order to strengthen it.

很 Excessive; joined to adjectives, it forms an intensive, often equivalent to a superlative. It

is often preceded by 得 (or 的), in which case the two words follow the adjective they qualify. The literal meaning is, *to the point of excess*, but in use, the meaning is not essentially different from that of 很 alone.

至 Very; most; wholly. As an intensive it is chiefly used with adjectives of time or quantity.

誠得 Very, exceedingly. This term is much used in Central Mandarin, but not at all in the South, and but little in the North. There are sundry other intensives:—See Les. 137.

VOCABULARY.

頂 *Ting³*. The top, the summit; the crown; to carry on the head; to put one thing for another; to serve as; *very, in the highest degree*:—see Sub. A classifier:—Les. 125.

最 *Tsui⁴*. To carry to the extreme; *very, exceedingly*:—see Sub.

很 *Hên³*. Stern, harsh, etc., often used for 狠; *very, excessively*:—see Sub.

誠 *Ch'êng²*. Sincere; real; perfect in virtue; *really, verily, certainly*.

誠得 *Ch'êng² t'ê³*. Very, exceedingly:—see Sub.

挺 *T'ing³*. To straighten; to stiffen; resolute, decided; *very, exceedingly*.

至 *Chì⁴*. To arrive at, to reach; the end, the summit; to, at, even to; respecting; *the greatest degree of, most, very*:—see Sub., also Les. 144.

利 *Lì⁴*. Sharp, acute; advantageous; fortunate; gain, profit; interest on money; covetous; to benefit.

利害 *Lì⁴ hai³*. Severe, stern; violent; fierce; powerful.

論 *Lun*⁴. To discourse upon; to criticise; to reason, to think over; an essay; a full account of; *according to*; as to, with reference to.
 公 *Kung*¹. Public, common; general; just, *equitable*; the male of animals; husband; added to surnames as a term of respect.
 公道 *Kung*¹ *tao*⁴. *Just*, righteous; fair, impartial.
 大師傅 *Ta*⁴ *shi*¹ *fu*⁴. A head cook, a steward.
 弄 *Lung*⁴ or *nung*⁴ or *nou*⁴. To do; to handle; to manage; to toy or trifle with; *to prepare or cook food*.
 身 *Shên*¹. *The body*; the main part of a thing; self. A classifier:—Les. 147.
 量 *Liang*². To estimate, to judge; *a measure*, a limit; capacity to eat or drink; liberal minded; calibre. Also read *liang*⁴.
 身量. Stature, size.
 高 *Kao*¹. High; *tall*; loud; eminent; excellent; old; high-priced; good.
 心眼 *Hsin*¹ *yen*³. *Disposition*, character; plans, tricks.
 詭 *Kwei*³. *To deceive*, to cheat; malicious; perverse.
 詐 *Cha*⁴. To deceive, to impose upon; *artful*, cunning, false.
 詭詐. *Crafty*; deceitful; treacherous.
 遲 *Ch'i*³. Slow, dilatory; *late*; to delay; to procrastinate.
 潤 *T'ao*². To scour; to wash rice or gold; to stir about; to clean,—as a well; *to excite*; to fidget.
 潤氣 *T'ao*² *ch'i*⁴. *Provoking*; troublesome; mischievous; fidgety:—Note (10).
 喜 *Hsi*³. Joy, delight; *to be pleased with*; to give joy to; to rejoice.
 歡 *Huan*¹. Joy (in expression); glad, merry; *to rejoice*; to gladden.
 喜歡. To be pleased with, *to like*; to rejoice.
 瘡 *Ch'uang*¹. A sore, a boil, an ulcer. In some places, the itch.
 一回 *I*¹ *hui*². Once, one time:—Les. 64.
 藥 or 葯 *Yao*⁴. *Medicine*; physic; chemicals.
 大道 *Ta*⁴ *tao*⁴. *The main road*, a highway; fundamental truth.

小道 *Hsiao*³ *tao*⁴. A by-road, a path.
 貴 *Kwei*⁴. Honorable; dignified; a term of respectful address; dear, high priced; *precious*; to honor, to value.
 重 *Chung*⁴. Heavy; weighty; severe; heinous; grave; *to honor*; to regard as important. Also read *ts'ung*².
 貴重. To value highly; *precious*; honorable; dignified.
 高貴 *Kao*¹ *hwei*⁴. Highly valued, *precious*; rare:—Note (15).
 物 *Wu*⁴. A thing; matter; *an article*; goods; a creature, a being.
 禮物 *Li*³ *wu*⁴. *Presents*; offerings.
 弟兄 *Ti*⁴ *hsiung*¹. Brothers, brethren.
 畝 *Mu*³. A Chinese acre,—about one-sixth of an English acre.
 臉 *Lien*³. The cheek; *the face*; the countenance; reputation; honor.
 盆 *P'en*². A tub; a basin.
 白天 *Pai*³ *t'ien*¹. Day-time, daylight.
 黑 *Hei*¹. Black; *dark*; cloudy; obscure.
 黑下 *Hei*¹ *hsia*⁴. At night, at dark.
 下黑 *Hsia*⁴ *hei*¹. At night, at dark.
 神 *Shên*³. The gods; *god*—in the heathen sense, a supernatural (good) being; the human spirit; superhuman, divine. Used by many for God.
 真神 *Chên*¹ *shên*². The true God.
 宰 *Tsai*³. To rule; *a ruler*; to slaughter and dress, to butcher.
 主宰 *Chu*³ *tsai*³. A ruler, the chief ruler.
 尊 *Tsên*¹. High, honorable; *eminent*; to honor, to dignify. A classifier:—Les. 140.
 尊貴 *Tsên*¹ *kwei*⁴. Honorable, lofty; great; exalted.
 聰 *Ts'ung*¹. Discriminating; *quick of apprehension* or perception.
 聰明 *Ts'ung*¹ *ming*². Discriminating; clever, intelligent; wise.
 幹 *Kan*⁴. *Skill, capability*; to attend to; to follow a calling; affairs, business.
 能幹 *Neng*³ *kan*⁴. Ability; *power*; might.
 布 *Pu*⁴. *Cloth* of any kind; to spread out; to diffuse; to publish.

第五十課

TRANSLATION.

他的狗頂利害。○這個人最講理，公道的很。○我的大師傅，誠得很會弄飯。○王老二的身量挺高。○你的小刀子兒快得很。○我看你至多有三十歲。○寫這本書，至少也要得三個月的工夫。○張五的心眼兒最詭詐。○他至早是禮拜四來，至遲是禮拜六。○這個小姑娘真淘氣，我頂不喜歡他。○你這個瘡，該常用水洗，至少一天一回。○這些藥挺頂利害，至多一點鐘吃一回。○還是走大道好，小路道誠得難找。○我打算十五六到家，至遲不過十七日。○這本書頂高貴重，你要小心用他。○送他這些禮物，也很可以。○他們弟兄三個，最多有四十畝地。○這個洗臉盆，至少也值四百錢。○西國的狗，白天裏最老實，到了下黑纔利害。○真神是天地的主宰，最尊貴，最聰明，最能幹。○這個布頂好頂好，我也要去買他的。

- 1 His dog is exceedingly fierce.
- 2 This man is very reasonable;—exceedingly just.
- 3 My cook can prepare first-class food.
- 4 Wang the Second's stature is exceedingly tall.
- 5 Your pocket-knife is extremely sharp.
- 6 I take you to be, at most, thirty years old.
- 7 To write this book will take, at the very least, three months' time.
- 8 Chang the Fifth's heart is very deceitful.
- 9 At the earliest he will come on Thursday; at the latest on Saturday.
- 10 This little girl is very provoking (or, mischievous): I dislike her exceedingly.
- 11 This boil of yours you should frequently wash with water;—at least once a day.
- 12 This medicine is very powerful: at most, take it but once an hour.
- 13 It is better, after all, to go the main road; the small road is exceedingly hard to find.
- 14 I propose to reach home on the fifteenth or sixteenth, or, at the latest, by the seventeenth.
- 15 This book is very precious, you must be careful how you use it.
- 16 To make him these presents will answer very well.
- 17 The three brothers have, at most, but forty mow of land.
- 18 This wash-basin is worth, at the very least, four hundred cash.
- 19 Western dogs are very docile in the day-time: it is only when night comes that they are fierce.
- 20 The true God is Lord of heaven and earth, very great, very wise and very powerful.
- 21 This cloth is first-rate; I also will go and buy of him.

NOTES.

2 The second clause is in apposition with the first, and supplementary to it. The clauses should be separated by a short pause.

3 In some places, especially in the South, 弄飯 completely supplants 做飯.

6 The Chinese generally say 有, not 是, in speaking of ages.

7 得 as here used is read *tei*³ in Peking, but retains its normal sound in Shantung. It is never used in this way in the South, 要 being used instead.

9 晚, in the sense of late, is rarely used in the South, being nearly always replaced by 遲.

10 洵氣 Lit., *stir up anger*; i.e., *provoking, vexatious*, in which sense it is used in most places. In some places, however, notably in Peking, it is used in the sense of *mischivous, fidgety*, which leaves out of view all reference to the person affected. The "anger" excited is evidently that of the party affected by the "mischief."

11 的 is to be understood after 你, and in similar cases is often expressed. The construction is thoroughly Chinese; viz., *your this boil, for, this boil of yours*.

13 The 還 at the beginning of this sentence implies that a mistake had been made in going by the small road, or at least a question is raised as to which road to take.

15 高貴 as used in Shantung means, *precious, rare*, in the sense of being hard to get or hard to replace. In Peking it is only so used of persons. It is replaced in the South by 貴重, which adds to its ordinary meaning that of rarity or preciousness.

16 很可以 Lit., *very can do*; i.e., *will do very well*.

19 下黑 or 黑下. Both forms are used in the North, the one in some places, the other in other places. In the South 夜裡 is chiefly used, 黑下 being heard in some places.

21 頂好 is repeated for emphasis, which is a very common idiom. The 他 at the close refers to the person of whom the cloth was bought.

LESSON XVI.

COMMON TIME PARTICLES.

今日 or 今天 To-day.

明日 or 明天 To-morrow.

昨日 or 昨天 Yesterday.

The two forms are used indifferently in most places. In Nankin the forms with 日 are rarely used.

今兒 or 今兒個 To-day.

明兒 or 明兒個 To-morrow.

昨兒 or 昨兒個 Yesterday.

These are colloquial forms in constant use. The addition of 個 is peculiar to Pekingese.

前日 or 前天 Day before yesterday.

後日 or 後天 Day after to-morrow.

前兒 or 前兒個 Day before yesterday.

後兒 or 後兒個 Day after to-morrow.

The addition of 個 is peculiar to Pekingese.

現在 } Now, at present. The two forms are

如今 } substantially equivalent, which one is used being chiefly a matter of euphony. If there be any difference, it is that the first is more definitely immediate than the second.

後來 Afterwards, in future, then.

以後 Afterwards, subsequently.

There are many other ways of marking time. See Les. 117 to 120.

VOCABULARY.

今 *Chin*¹. Now, presently.

前 *Ch'ien*². To advance; *before in time or place*; in the presence of; the former; previously; southern.

如 *Ju*². *As, like*; as if; according to; if, per- haps; to equal:—Les. 99.

昨 *Tsod*². Yesterday; recently.

現 *Hsien*⁴. To manifest, to display; *now*, at pres- ent; current; plain, apparent; for the occasion.

暖 *Nuan*³. Warm; bland, mild.

暖和 *Nuan*³ *hod*². Warm; to warm.

天氣 *T'ien*¹ *ch'ü*⁴. *The air, the atmosphere*; the weather.

清亮 *Ch'ing*¹ *liang*⁴. Refreshing, bracing, cool; pure.

大娘 *Ta*⁴ *niang*². A paternal aunt; applied at large as a term of respect to any elderly woman, *Mrs.*

大媽 *Ta*⁴ *ma*¹. Same as 大娘. Southern.

集 *Chi*². To flock together; to gather; to col- lect; to compile; a market or fair.

趕集 *Kan³ chi²*. To go to market:—Note (3).
市 *Shi⁴*. A market; to trade; a crowd; vulgar, low.
魚 *Yu²*. A fish.
初 *Ch'u¹*. To begin; *the first*, the beginning:—Note (4).
割 *Ko⁴*. To cut; to divide; *to reap*; to deduct, to take off.
收割 *Shou¹ ko⁴*. To reap, to harvest.
莊 *Chwang¹*. Growing grain; sedate, serious; well behaved.
稼 *Chia⁴*. Farming; standing grain; a sheaf.
莊稼. Standing grain; the crops, the harvest.
肚 *Tu⁴*. The belly, the abdomen; the temper or mind. Also read *tu³*.
晚上 *Wan³ shang⁴*. The evening.
下晚 *Hsia⁴ wan³*. The evening.
饅頭 *Man³*. Steamed bread or cakes; bread.
饅頭 *Man³ t'ou²*. Bread,—always steamed by the Chinese, but in foreign families the term is used of baked bread.
饅 *Mod²*. Steamed cakes or rolls. In use always doubled.
蒸 *Cheng¹*. Steam, vapor; *to cook by steaming*; to distil; to decoct.
考 *K'ao²*. Ancestors; *to examine* a candidate or a pupil; to question.
考書 *K'ao² shu¹*. To hear a recitation. A foreign term.
妥 *T'ou²*. Secure, safe, firm; *satisfactory*, all right; ready:—Les. 109.

起身 *Ch'i³ shen¹*. To start to go anywhere.
結 *Chie¹*. A knot; to knot, to tie; to bind by a contract; to set, to stiffen; *strong, vigorous*; to bear,—as fruit. Also read *chie²*.
結實 *Chie¹ shi²*. To bear fruit; strong, tough, vigorous, *robust*.
漢 *Han⁴*. A noted Chinese dynasty; Chinese; a large strong man; a man.
好漢子 *Hao³ han⁴ tsi²*. A strong man, a fine portly fellow.
宿 *Hsiu³ or su²*. A stage where one rests for the night; a night's rest; *to pass the night*, to lodge; a constellation.
出息 *Ch'u¹ hsi²*. Outcome, promise; profit.
野 *Yie²*. A waste; a common; a desert; the country; savage, wild; rustic, rude.
草 *Ts'ao²*. Herbs, grass; hastily, carelessly; the running hand; a rough draft.
丟 *Tiu¹*. To cast away; to throw aside; *to throw or pitch*; to lose.
定規 *Ting⁴ kwei¹*. To decide, to settle, to fix.
報 *Pao⁴*. To recompense; to revenge; to inform, to report; a gazette, a newspaper.
電報 *Tien⁴ pao⁴*. The telegraph; a telegram.
輪 *Lun²*. A wheel, a disk; a revolution; to rotate, to take turns.
車 *Ch'e¹*. A wheeled carriage; a cart, a barrow. Read *chü²* in *wên-li*.
火輪車 *Hwo² lun² ch'ê²*. A railroad car; the cars.

課 六 十 第

TRANSLATION.

○ 現⁶ 如 買 你 初 今 清 今¹
 明⁷ 在 今 五 明 三 天 亮 天 日
 兒 正 還 斤 天 日 明 好 高² 很 暖
 天 個 在 斤 魚 去 去 天 兒 些 大 和
 是 好 在 來 上 趕 是 大 媽 娘 天
 安 收 那 來 上 趕 是 大 媽 娘 天
 息 割 裏 來 上 趕 是 大 媽 娘 天
 日 莊 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎
 是 莊 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎
 安 莊 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎
 息 莊 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎
 日 莊 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎

- 1 It is very mild to-day, and the air is bracing.
- 2 Mrs. Kao's disease is somewhat better to-day.
- 3 To-day is the third, to-morrow is the fourth.
- 4 When you go to market to-morrow you may buy five catties of fish.
- 5 Are they, at present, still there?
- 6 It is just now time to reap the harvest.
- 7 To-morrow is the Sabbath.

輪車也必要行。
 個不能定規，可以等到明日再說。○如今電報已經行在中國，以後火
 還在，明日就丟在爐裏。○我從前沒見他，今天纔見了。○這個事情，今日
 再走不好嗎。○看他現在這樣用心，以後必有出息。○野地裏的草，今日
 來見我。○保住子很結實，後來必是個好漢子。○你在這裏住一夜，明日
 ○若是今天，兒個僱安了牲口，明天兒個我就起身。○王大人有信說，他後
 他。○後來的事情，你還能先曉得嗎。○現在已經到了時候，我要去考書。
 他不在家。○現在饅頭已經蒸好了。○在二月裏我見了他，以後再沒見
 ○我的肚子昨天疼了一天。○明天晚上，我要請客。○前天兒個我去見他，

- 8 Yesterday my belly ached the whole day.
- 9 To-morrow evening I want to invite company.
- 10 Day before yesterday I went to see him and he was not at home.
- 11 By this time the bread is already steamed.
- 12 I saw him in the second month, and I have not seen him again since.
- 13 Can you foreknow that which is future?
- 14 The time has now fully arrived; I must go and hear my class.
- 15 If I succeed in hiring animals to-day, I will start to-morrow.
- 16 General Wang has sent word saying that he will come to see me day after to-morrow.
- 17 Pao Chu-tsi is very hardy: in due time he will certainly be a robust man.
- 18 Will it not do for you to stay here to-night and go on again to-morrow?
- 19 Seeing he is so diligent now, he will no doubt turn out well hereafter.
- 20 The grass of the field to-day is, and to-morrow it is cast into the oven.
- 21 I never saw him before: I have only just seen him to-day.
- 22 This business cannot be settled to-day: wait till to-morrow and we will talk about it again.
- 23 The telegraph has already become an accomplished fact in China, and railroads will succeed by and by.

NOTES.

2 In many places — would be inserted before 些.
 3 In North China, markets are held in all the principal towns and villages every five days. They are always arranged so that the markets in a given neighborhood come in rotation. Tradesmen and small dealers follow these markets, usually attending one each day. Hence 趕集 comes to mean to go to market. Such markets are not prevalent in the South, where the business is mostly done by shopkeepers.

4 初 is applied to the first ten days of the month to distinguish them from the second and third ten; hence 初三 is the third, as distinguished from the 13th and 23rd. As we have no such distinction in English, the 初 disappears in the translation.
 5 Peking teachers object to 好 as here used, and would change to 現在正是收割莊稼的時候. This,

however, gives a slightly different sense; viz., it is just now (in the midst of) harvest time.

8 一天 one day; that is, the whole day.

11 The use of 得 in this connection is Pekingese.

13 還 is here intensive.

14 In this sentence 要 expresses both intention and necessity. 考書 is a term used in foreign schools: in native schools they have no occasion to use such a term; they use only 背書 *pei⁴ shu¹*,—repeat the books, and 講書 *chiang³ shu¹*, explain the books.

15 僱妥 to hire satisfactorily; that is, in this case, to succeed in hiring.

16 The Chinese seems to say that 王大人 received a letter; nevertheless, the meaning here is that a letter has come from 王大人. In a different connection 王大人 有信 might mean that *Wang Ta Jen* had received a letter.

22 再說 *Again speak*,—a common phrase for postponing any business, and including a promise to attend to it at some future time.

LESSON XVII.

COMPOUND RELATIVE AND INDEFINITE INTERROGATIVE PARTICLES.

甚麼 or 什麼 What, anything, something. The second is the colloquial form. In use, the final *n* of 甚 is always elided, and 什 is in most places pronounced in the same way as 甚. The 麼 is sometimes spoken *Ma* (嗎), but is never so written.

When 爲 precedes 什麼 the combination means, *because of what*; i.e., *why*. When followed by 人 the combination means *who*.

什麼 is also used indefinitely, meaning, *any, at all*; or with a negative, *none, not at all*.

Colloquially, 什麼 is in many places contracted into *sha⁴*. In other places 麼 is used alone for 什麼. Neither of these corruptions is heard in Eastern Shantung, but they prevail in the middle and western parts of the province, as well as in many other places, both North and South.

呢 the sign of an indirect question. Theoretically every indirect question should end with 呢. Practically it is very often omitted, and there seems to be no rule governing its use. It is more used in some places than in others. See also Les. 89.

VOCABULARY.

甚 *Shên²*. What:—see Sub., also Les. 188. Also read *shên⁴*.

什 *Shi²*. A file of ten soldiers; used as a contracted form of 甚.

麼 *Mod²* or *Ma²*. An interrogative particle joined with various words in asking indirect questions:—see Sub.

呢 *Ni¹*. An interrogative particle ending any question not answered by yes or no:—see Sub., also Les. 89.

爲 *Wei⁴*. For, on account of; because, wherefore:—Les. 77. Also read *wei²*.

姐 *Chie²*. An elder sister.

大姐 *Ta⁴ chie²*. Eldest sister.

大姐姐 *Ta⁴ chie² chie²*. Eldest sister.

針 *Chên¹*. A needle; a pin; a stitch; to prick.

針線 *Chên¹ hsien⁴*. Needle-work, sewing.

娶 *Ch'ü²*. To take a wife, to marry.

媳 *Hsi²*. A son's wife.

婦 *Fu⁴*. A wife; a married woman; a female.

媳婦. A daughter-in-law; a wife.

奶 *Nai²*. The breasts, the udder; to suckle; milk; a nurse.

奶奶. A paternal grandmother; also applied to any elderly lady; a wife (Nankingese).

快活 *K'wai⁴ hwo²*. Cheerful, in good spirits, happy.

味 *Wei⁴*. Taste, flavor; a delicacy.

開味 *K'ai¹ wei⁴*. To enjoy oneself; cheerful; to like; to have an appetite.

傢什 *Chia¹ shi²*. Utensils, tools, fixtures:—Note (6).

爭 *Chêng¹*. To wrangle, to contest; to strive for precedence.

爭鬭 *Chêng¹ nao⁴*. To wrangle, to quarrel, to dispute.

別字眼 *Pie² tsi⁴ yen²*. To altercation, to dispute, to quarrel.

行 *Hang²*. A row; a series or order; a guild, a trade; a mercantile establishment, a store. See *hsing²*, from which it is often dis-

tinguished by inserting a dot, thus—行; or by a small circle, thus,—行. A classifier:—Les. 42.

行市 *Hang² shi⁴*. The market price, the current rent rate.

動 *Tung⁴*. To move; to excite; to shake; to begin; to take action:—Les. 91.

動身 *Tung⁴ shên¹*. To move; to start.

調 *T'iao²*. To harmonize; to mix; to regulate; to intrigue; to induce. Also read *tiao⁴*.

治 *Chi⁴*. To govern, to rule; to heal, to cure; to oversee; to condemn.

調治. To treat a disease; to cure.

留 *Liu²*. To detain,—as a guest; to keep back; to hold on to; to delay.

留心 *Liu² hsin¹*. To be attentive, to give good heed.

一聲 *I¹ shêng¹*. One sound; a call; a cry, a shout, etc.

敬 *Ching⁴*. To honor, to show respect to; reverent; to worship.

尊敬 *Tsên¹ ching⁴*. To show respect to; to honor.

長 *Chang²*. Senior; an elder; a superior; to grow; to swell. Also read *ch'ang²*.

長上 *Chang² shang⁴*. Elders; superiors.

模 *Mo² or mu²*. A mold; a pattern, a model.

大模大樣 *Ta⁴ mu² ta⁴ yang⁴*. An ostentatious manner; braggadocio.

本事 *Pên² shi⁴*. Ability, capacity,—including qualities; resources.

差 *Ch'a¹*. To mistake; to differ; a fault, a difference; a discrepancy:—Les. 57. Also read *ch'ai¹* and *ts'è²*.

屋 *Wu¹*. A house; a room, an apartment.

好燒 *Hao² shao¹*. To burn well,—of fuel; to draw,—as a k'ang, or a stove.

冒 *Mao⁴*. To rush forward heedlessly; to rush or stream out; to feign; heedless.

烟 or 煙 *Yen¹*. Smoke; tobacco or opium,—as smoked.

毛 *Mao²*. Hair, fur, feathers; mould; tare of goods.

毛病 *Mao² ping⁴*. A fault; a peccadillo; a defect; an idiosyncrasy; a disease.

費 *Fei⁴*. To spend, to use; to lavish; outlay; waste; trouble.

多少 *To¹ shao²*. How much? a great deal, ever so much.

臨 *Lin²*. To descend; to approach; at the point of, about to; whilst.

任 *Jên⁴*. A trust, a duty; to bear, to sustain; to allow, to give rein to:—Les. 83.

任甚麼 *Jên⁴ shên² mo²*. No matter what; anything at all.

管甚麼 *Kwan² shên² mo²*. Same as the last, but not *t'ung* *hsing*.

課七十第

TRANSLATION.

子眼不來○你⁵這甚麼的什麼他¹
 甚是來弄⁶你⁵這裏麼的什麼他¹
 麼是為告壞⁶今天娶不來麼的什麼他¹
 行是為訴我壞⁶了不奶媳來麼的什麼他¹
 市為甚麼事我⁷的開快奶婦做針線呢○你⁴
 呢○你⁹們爭甚麼呢○
 ○你⁹們爭甚麼呢○
 ○你⁹們爭甚麼呢○
 ○你⁹們爭甚麼呢○

- 1 Why did he strike you ?
- 2 What [relative] is he of yours ?
- 3 Why does your oldest sister not come to sew ?
- 4 When you marry a wife here, what ceremony do you have ?
- 5 Why is it that you are not happy to-day ?
- 6 Having spoiled my tools why did you not come and tell me ?
- 7 What is it you are wrangling about ?
- 8 What is the price of silver at present ?
- 9 From what place did you start to-day ?

19 In the first clause 甚麼 is used to modify the abruptness of the request; as if we should say, *would it be at all convenient for you*, etc. This use of 甚麼 is more or less local. Some teachers would prefer the sentence written 你等一等好不好, etc., which is neither better nor worse, save that it throws a little more stress on the *waiting*.

20 模樣 is separated, and 大 repeated for rhetorical effect.

21 The proper structure of this sentence would demand the after father, but the Chinese omit it without feeling the incongruity.

23 Note how the pronoun is omitted where the English requires it.

LESSON XVIII.

的 JOINED TO ADJECTIVES.

When 的 is joined to an adjective it turns it into a noun of quality, approximating in sense to "the" joined to an adjective of quality in English; as 好的, *the good*, 壞的, *the spoiled*, etc. The translation, however, will vary very much with the circumstances of the case.

VOCABULARY.

- 粗 *Ts'u*¹. Rough; large; *coarse*; vulgar; gross, vile.
- 細 *Hsi*⁴. Fine; *small*; delicate; trifling; subtle; careful.
- 塊 *K'wai*¹. A lump; a piece:—Les. 27.
- 一塊兒 *I¹ k'wai⁴ êr²*. All together, all at once, in the lump.
- 嫌 *Hsien*². To dislike; to find fault with, to have an aversion to; fastidious.
- 酒 *Chiu*³. All spirituous liquors,—fermented, malted and distilled.
- 涼 *Liang*². Cool, cold; distant, cool.
- 桃 *T'ao*². A peach.
- 伶 *Ling*². Active; clever.
- 俐 *Li*⁴. Clever, talented; neat.
- 伶俐. Talented, smart; shrewd, quick-witted.
- 小的 *Hsiao³ ti¹*. Your humble servant:—Note (9).
- 友 *Yu*³. A companion, an associate; a friend.
- 教 *Chiao*⁴. To cause to do:—Les. 71; a party, a sect; a church. See *chiao*¹.
- 教友. One who belongs to the same society or church; church members; membership.
- 假 *Chia*³. False; feigned; hypocritical; if, supposing:—Les. 132. Also read *chia*⁴.
- 軟 *Juan*³. Soft, weak, tender; yielding; limber, pliable.
- 軟和 *Juan³ hoä²*. Soft, pliable; tender hearted.
- 世 *Shi*⁴. An age, a generation; the world; mankind; times; hereditary.
- 塗 *Tu*¹. Dull, stupid. Also read *t'u*².
- 糊 *Hu*². To paste; sticky; foolish, incoherent, nonsensical.
- 糊塗. Foolish, silly; stupid; demented.
- 穿 *Ch'wan*¹. To perforate; to string, to run on or through,—as cash on a string; to put on,—as clothing, to wear.
- 舊 *Chiu*⁴. Old; worn out, spoiled; ancient, venerable:—Les. 97.
- 新 *Hsin*¹. To renew; new; fresh; recent.
- 俊 *Chün*⁴. Superior; handsome, pretty.
- 標 *Piao*¹. A signal, a flag; a sign board; a ticket; a warrant; to make a signal; to inscribe; fine, beautiful.
- 緞 *Chi*⁴. Fine in texture; soft, elegant.
- 標緞. Pretty, handsome, lovely.
- 醜 *Ch'ou*³. Ugly, deformed, homely; disagreeable; shameful.
- 長 *Ch'ang*². Long,—in time or distance; constant; to excel. See *chang*³.
- 短 *Twan*³. Short in time or distance; brief; short-coming; few; wanting.
- 中 *Chung*⁴. To hit the centre; to happen according to; to fall into,—as a trap; fit, suitable. See *chung*¹.
- 中用 *Chung⁴ yung⁴*. Capable, efficient; with a negative,—worthless.
- 現成 *Hsien⁴ ch'eng²*. Ready; ready-made; ready to hand.
- 費事 *Fei⁴ shi⁴*. To spend effort; to take pains; laborious, troublesome.
- 樹 *Shu*⁴. A tree; plants in general.
- 矮 *Ai*³. Low, squat; short, small; to lower.

第十 八 課

我要買好的，不要壞的。○他要白的，不要黑的，○粗的，細的，不好合在一塊兒。○可以
 先用那些零碎的。○客嫌酒冷涼，再要熱的。○那個胖的，是他女兒。○這些桃子兒不
 大好，生的多，熟的少。○他一家人，都是很伶俐的。○你是甚麼人，○小的叫同喜。○
 教友也不能一樣，有真的，有假的。○沒有再好的嗎？答沒有，這還不算好的嗎。○有¹²
 軟和的，可以給我一個。○世上的人，聰明的少，糊塗的多。○在家裏穿舊的，出門穿¹⁴
 新的。○那一家有兩個媳婦，一個標緻的，一個醜的。○我看這是個公的，那是個母¹⁵
 的。○長的不合式，若是沒有短的，可以不買。○他一家人，老的老，小的小，一個中用¹⁷
 的也沒有。○家裏有現成的東西，現做也不費事。○院子裏的樹，有高的，有矮的，有¹⁹
 大的，有小的，有活的，有死的。

TRANSLATION.

- 1 I want to buy good ones; I don't want spoiled ones.
- 2 He wants the white, not the black.
- 3 It is not proper to mix the coarse and the fine together.
- 4 First use those odds and ends.
- 5 The guest complains that the wine is cold, and asks that the next be hot.
- 6 That fat one is his daughter.
- 7 These peaches are not very good: there are more green ones than ripe ones. (Lit., the green are many, the ripe are few).
- 8 The whole family are very clever.
- 9 Who are you? Ans. Your servant is called T'ung-Hsi.
- 10 Nor are church members all alike;—some are true and some are false.
- 11 Have you no better ones? Ans. No: are not these to be considered good ones?
- 12 If you have any soft ones you may give me one.
- 13 Of men the intelligent are few, the stupid many.
- 14 At home wear the old [clothes]; when you go abroad wear the new.
- 15 There are two daughters-in-law in that family; one pretty and one homely.
- 16 I think this one is a male and that one a female.
- 17 The long are unsuitable. If there are no short ones you need not buy.
- 18 The old are too old and the young are too young: there is not one capable person in the whole family.
- 19 There is ready material in the house: to make it when needed will be no trouble.
- 20 Of the trees in the yard some are high and some low, some large and some small, some alive and some dead.

NOTES.

5 In the South 涼 is very little used, 冷 quite taking its place. If 冷 were used in this connection in the North, it would imply that the wine was not only not hot (as it should be according to Chinese ideas), but cold—excessively cold.

7 In Peking 桃 never takes 子, and in Nanking it never takes 兒. In Chinanfu either may be used. In some places neither is used.

9 The question is supposed to be asked by a magistrate of one appearing before him. In such cases the party addressed generally speaks of himself as 小的, *the little one*, unless he is a literary man, when he calls himself 童生 *T'ung³ shéng¹*, or if he has a degree, simply 生.

10 也 indicates that the sentence is in addition to some previous statement, and, combined with the negative, has the force of "nor." The 能 does not appear in the translation. Its use intimates a difference in Christians as a matter of course.

12 *If*, is here clearly implied.

13 This sentence has reference to fowls, or to birds.

18 It would seem as if 太 (Lesson 24) ought to be joined with the second 老 and 小, and it might be so said; the correlation of the clauses, however, allows of its omission, which adds to the sprightliness of the style.

19 Note the opposite meanings which the two 現 here have.

20 Or, *there are high ones and low ones, etc.*

LESSON XIX.

ADJECTIVES REDUPLICATED FOR EMPHASIS.

Adjectives are often repeated for the sake of emphasis. This idiom is important and ever recurring. Most adjectives and some adverbs may be so

repeated. Adjectives when repeated generally become adverbs.

For the reduplication of verbs, see Les. 33.

VOCABULARY.

圓 *Yüan³*. Round, circular; spherical; to make round; to interpret a dream.

慢 *Man⁴*. Remiss; slow; sluggish, dilatory; supercilious.

慢慢的. Slowly; gradually; *presently*; by and by.

暗 *An⁴*. Dark; obscure; gloomy; secret; *covert*, stealthy; to one's self, mentally.

辦 *Pan⁴*. To administer; to manage; to transact, to do.

上當 *Shang⁴ Tang⁴*. To get cheated, to be victimized, to fall into a trap.

往往 *Wang³ wang³*. Frequently, every little while.

輕 *Ch'ing¹*. Light; to think lightly of; to slight; frivolous; *gently*.

笨 *Pèn⁴*. Stupid; dull of apprehension; awkward, clumsy; unwieldy.

蠢 *Ch'un³*. Simple, foolish, *stupid*, doltish.

着 *Chao²*. To become; to show; to cause. Also read *chò²*. See Les. 20, Sub.

急 *Ch'í³*. Impatient, anxious; hurried; uneasy; in extremity.

着急. Anxious, excited; eager; *impatient*.

稱 *Ch'èng¹*. To designate; to compliment; to weigh. Also read *ch'èng⁴*, and *ch'èn⁴*.

進 *Chin⁴*. To advance, to make progress; to enter, to go in, up, or on.

項 *Hsiang⁴*. The neck; a sort, an item, a class; a term (in algebra); *money*, funds.

進項. Income, receipts.

僅 *Chin³*. Barely; scarcely; only.

花費 *Hwa¹ fei⁴*. Expense, outlay.

打聽 *Ta³ t'ing¹*. To make inquiry, to find out by inquiring.

悄 *Ch'iao³*. Secret; quiet; private; anxious.

悄悄的. Secretly; clandestinely; *quietly*; be quiet, keep still.

漸 *Chien⁴*. Gradually, step by step; slowly.

衰 *Shwai¹*. To wear away, to decay, to decline; to fade.

敗 *Pai⁴*. To destroy; to ruin; to defeat; *enfeebled*; damaged.

衰敗. To decay; to fail, to grow infirm; to suffer defeat.

頹 *T'ui¹*. Broken down, ruined.

衰頹. To go to ruin; to grow infirm.

苦 *K'u*. Bitter; unpleasant; painful; *urgent*; afflictions, sufferings.

苦苦的. Earnestly, urgently; severely.

哀 *Ai*¹. To grieve for; to pity; to lament; to beseech; urgent, importunate.
 哀告 *Ai*¹ *kao*⁴. To beseech, to entreat; to importune.
 強 *Ch'iang*³. To compel, to force; to constrain; to strengthen. See *ch'iang*²; also read *chiang*⁴, and *chiang*¹.
 強嘴 *Ch'iang*³ *tsui*³. To deny in the face of evidence, to asseverate.
 倭 *Chiang*⁴. Unsubmissive, obstreperous.
 倭嘴 *Tsui*³ *chiang*⁴. Unreasonable talk; contradictory.
 離 *Li*². To leave, to separate from; to be absent; to scatter; from:—Les. 57.
 遠 *Yuan*³. Distant; to keep away from.
 逃 *T'ao*². To abscond, to flee; to hide, to skulk; to play truant.

逃學 *T'ao*² *hsue*². To play truant.
 應該 *Ying*¹ *kai*¹. Ought to, duty bound.
 躓 or 遭 *Tsao*¹. To meet; to endure; to happen; a time:—Les. 64.
 蹋 *T'a*⁴. To stamp; to tread on.
 蹋蹋 *T'a*⁴. To destroy uselessly; to abuse; to spoil.
 紛 *Fên*¹. Confused; many things at once.
 紛紛不一 *Fên*¹ *fên*¹ *pu*⁴ *i*¹. Confused, contradictory.
 悶 *Mên*⁴. Sad; melancholy, heavy-hearted; lonely; a feeling of oppression.
 樂 *Loi*⁴. Joy, pleasure; to rejoice, to be happy; to be pleased with. Also read *yoa*⁴.
 悶悶不樂 *Mên*⁴ *mên*⁴ *pu*⁴ *loi*⁴. Melancholy, discouraged.

第十課

TRANSLATION.

地¹是圓圓的。你²快快的去請他來。我³一慢慢的就
 去。他⁴是暗暗的說你的不是。這⁵個人常常和他
 兄弟打架。張⁶先生不會辦事，常常的上當。明⁷天
 我要⁸早起的^些起身。你⁸說這個話，明明不合情理。○
 往往有人看錯了這個事。○再¹⁰要你輕輕的關這個
 門。○這¹¹個孩子頂笨，上學也是白白兒的。○不用着
 急，慢慢的就明白了。○稱¹³了高高的一百二十斤。○
 沒有大進項，也不過僅僅的殼花費。○你¹⁵打聽明白
 了，可以悄悄的兒來告訴我。○人¹⁶過了四十歲，身子漸

- 1 The earth is round.
- 2 Do you go quickly and ask him to come.
- 3 I will go by and by.
- 4 He is covertly finding fault with you.
- 5 This man is constantly fighting with his younger brother.
- 6 Mr. Chang does not know how to do business. He is constantly being cheated.
- 7 To-morrow I want to start early.
- 8 What you say is plainly contrary to reason.
- 9 Men frequently make a mistake in this matter.
- 10 Hereafter I want you to shut this door gently.
- 11 This child is extremely stupid: it is useless for him to go to school.
- 12 Don't get impatient: by and by you will understand.
- 13 It weighed one hundred and twenty catties, good weight.
- 14 He has no great income,—no more than barely enough to cover expenses.
- 15 When you have found out clearly, come quietly and tell me.
- 16 When a man has passed forty, his strength gradually declines.

不樂,最容易生病。
 話,紛紛不一。○你常這樣悶悶
 不糟蹋人的東西嗎。○街上的
 的孩子也多的,你還能說他
 的逃學,應該重重的打他。○你
 以後要離他遠遠的。○他這樣
 的錯,你還這樣強嘴。○我勸你
 苦苦的去哀告他。○明明是你
 漸就衰頹了。○我的意思,還是

- 17 My idea is to go again and earnestly entreat him.
 18 Clearly it is your fault; and yet you asseverate in this way.
 19 I recommend you hereafter to keep far away from him.
 20 You ought to whip him severely for having played truant in this way.
 21 Your children also are quite numerous: would you venture to assert that they never abuse anybody's things?
 22 The reports on the street are contradictory.
 23 When a man is all the time so melancholy as this, it is very easy to become sick.

NOTES.

1 Peking teachers object to doubling 圓, but Southern teachers approve.

3 Both forms are in general use. If 一會兒 be used, the translation should be *presently*, instead of *by and by*.

6 上當 Some would write 檔, but the general custom of Chinese books is to write simply 當. The derivation of the meaning is not certain. Perhaps it is from the idea of a pawn or surety, implying that the party found himself suddenly placed in the power of another; or perhaps from the idea of an opening or empty space, implying that the party took for reality that which proved to be "thin air."

7 早些, properly, a little earlier.

13 The general custom in China, in weighing all kinds of coarse commodities, is to weigh with the end of the scale beam considerably above the level, and there is generally

some contest on the part of the purchaser to get it higher. Steelyards are nearly always made to weigh light in anticipation of this custom.

16 If the sentence were rendered, *His strength will gradually decline*, it would show more clearly the force of the 就, but it would not give the whole idea of the sentence so well.

20 We might with equal propriety render, *If he plays truant in this way, you ought to whip him severely*.

21 人 is used indefinitely for *anybody*.

23 Such expressions as 紛紛不一, and 悶悶不樂 in the next sentence, are taken from the book language. Mandarin is constantly spiced by such ready-made phrases, appropriated from the book language. By use they become familiar to the unlearned as well as the learned.

LESSON XX.

THE AUXILIARY VERBS 着 AND 之.

着 is the most important and widely used of all the auxiliary verbs. It expresses the carrying of the action of the principal verb into effect. It often gives the force of the present participle. It may be joined to almost any active verb; but is much more frequently joined to some than to others.

In Peking, when 着 immediately follows the verb, it is read *chao²*; but when 不 or 得 intervenes, it is always read *chao³*. This distinction of reading is confined to Pekingese.

之 is a *wén li* particle having various uses, one of which corresponds in a measure to the use of 着 as an auxiliary in Mandarin. It is used in Shantung and elsewhere as a substitute for 着, which, in Eastern Shantung, it largely replaces. It can not, however, be used with a negative, as 着 can. It is probably an old form which has been superseded by 着 in most places. It is sometimes heard both in Nanking and in Kiukiang.

VOCABULARY.

着 *Chod²*. To become; to cause; to happen; to send; to order; to place; yes, truly, exactly so; a move in chess:—See *chao²*.
 之 *Chi¹*. Sign of possessive in *wén lí*:—see Sub.
 某 *Mu³*. A certain person, so-and-so,—used when it is not convenient to use the name.
 想 *Hsiang³*. To think on; to reflect; to remember; to plan; to expect; to wish.
 空 *K'ung⁴*. An empty place, a crevice; vacant, unoccupied; time, leisure; a deficiency, a defalcation. Also read *k'ung¹*.
 黑夜 *Hei¹ yie⁴*. Night; at night.
 鎖 *Sod³*. A lock; to lock.
 專 *Chwan¹*. Singly, solely; bent on; special.
 靠 *K'ao⁴*. To lean upon, to rely on; to trust to; to be near; adjoining.
 指 *Chi²*. A finger or toe; to point at; to refer to; to direct; to rely upon.
 順 *Shun⁴*. To comply, to yield to; to obey; dutiful; convenient.
 丈 *Chang⁴*. A rod of ten Chinese feet; a senior; one worthy of respect.
 丈夫 *Chang⁴ fu¹*. A husband; a man (vir), a knight; a brave man.
 領 *Ling³*. A collar, a necktie; to receive from, to take:—Les. 79; to direct; to lead, to act as guide. A classifier:—Les. 125.
 引 *Yin³*. To draw out; to lead, to guide; to induce; to introduce; to thread,—as a needle; to quote; an introduction or preface.
 覺 *Chiod³ or chüe²*. To perceive; to be sensible of, to feel; to awaken, to arouse. Also read *chiao⁴*.
 覺得 *Chiod³ té²*. To feel, to be sensible of.
 照 *Chao⁴*. To enlighten, to shine; to front towards; to care for; to accord with; according to, as.

主人 *Chu³ jén²*. Master, employer.
 碰 *P'eng⁴*. To run against; to bump; to meet; to happen on.
 作聲 *Tso⁴ sheng¹*. To tell, to divulge, to let out a secret:—Note (14).
 暫 *Chan⁴*. A short time, briefly; for the time being, temporarily.
 且 *Ch'ie²*. Moreover, also, yet; further, besides:—Les. 138.
 暫且. Temporarily, for the time being.
 礙 *Ai⁴*. To hinder, to impede; to embarrass; to obstruct.
 妨 *Fang¹*. To hinder, to oppose; an impediment.
 礙事 *Ai⁴ shi⁴*. Matter; consequence; hindrance; generally used with a negative.
 關事 *Kwan¹ shi⁴*. Same as 礙事.
 妨事 *Fang¹ shi⁴*. Same:—Note (16).
 按 *An¹*. To act according to; as, according to. Also read *an⁴*.
 守 *Shou³*. To keep; to guard; to obey; to attend to; to protect; to associate with.
 好生 *Hao³ sheng¹*. Carefully, attentively. 生 is the form found in books, but the phrase is universally spoken *hao³ shing⁴*.
 慎 *Shén⁴*. To act carefully; cautious; attentive; considerate.
 好慎 *Haw³ shén⁴*. Same as 好生.
 磕 *K'oa¹*. To strike against; to knock.
 跌 *Tie¹*. To slip and fall, to tumble; to stumble; to fall:—Les. 92.
 念書 *Nein⁴ shu¹*. To go to school; to study; to repeat over and over.
 財 *Ts'ai²*. Riches, wealth; property, goods.
 貼 *Tie⁴*. To attach to; to paste to, to post; to make up a loss; adjacent.

第十二課

TRANSLATION.

着難。○ 黑⁵ 着容易。○ 做 空兒。○ 說⁴ 着先生。的 〇 你³ 該 等 想^〇 之着 打 你。 那² 個 人 他 有 力 氣。 某¹ 人 仗 着

- 1 The man referred to presumes on the fact that he is strong.
- 2 That man has a mind to beat you.
- 3 You ought to wait the teacher's leisure.
- 4 To talk is easy; to perform is difficult (or, talking is easy;

要，也是白費工夫。○正對着門，有對我生財四個字，貼在牆上。
 跌着。○他的孩子，跟着李先生念書。○他不想着還錢，你跟他
 着甚麼學甚麼。○我的小刀子，已經找着了。○好慎看孩子，不要
 不礙事。○穿着雨衣，下雨也不妨事。○你不按着規矩不行。○守
 他主人的意思行。○若在路上碰着他，不要作聲。○暫且留着，也
 在門口坐着說話。○王先生覺得我待他不公道。○他不肯照着
 着他的丈夫。○你不認得路，可以找個人來引着你。○他們兩個，
 話要緊，你該留心聽着。○你不要指着這個，說那個。○女人該順
 夜你該鎖着那個後門。○他專靠着他父親的錢，過日子。○這些

- performing is difficult).
 5 You ought to lock that back door at night.
 6 He depends entirely upon his father's money for a living.
 7 These words are important; you should pay attention to them.
 8 Do not address this one when you are speaking of that one.
 9 A woman ought to obey her husband.
 10 If you are not acquainted with the road, you should get a man to guide you.
 11 They two are sitting at the door talking.
 12 Mr. Wang feels that I treated him unjustly.
 13 He is not willing to act according to his master's wishes.
 14 If you meet him on the road, don't mention it.
 15 It's no matter if you do keep it for the present.
 16 When you have on rain clothes, it is no matter if it does rain.
 17 It will not do for you not to follow the rule.
 18 Men imitate those with whom they associate.
 19 My pocket knife has already been found (or, is already found).
 20 Take good care of the baby, and do not let him fall down.
 21 His son goes to school to Mr. Li.
 22 He does not intend to pay: it is a waste of time for you to dun him.
 23 Exactly opposite the door there are pasted on the wall the four characters, "May he who is opposite me make money."

NOTES.

8 The idea is, Do not pretend to be speaking to this one when you really mean that one;—do not whip one man over another man's shoulders.

11 Or, *They two were sitting at the door talking.* See Note, Les. 6. (5).

14 In many places 作聲 is read *tsu⁴ shêng¹*. It is also often written 做聲, and pronounced *tso⁴ shêng¹*.

N. B. 作 and 做 are both read *tso⁴* in Peking; but in most places the latter is read *tso⁴*.

15 Or, if referring to a person, *It is no matter if you do detain him for the present.*

16 妨事 is Southern Mandarin, though occasionally heard in the North. 關事 is frequently written 管事;

礙事 is more widely understood than either of these forms.

18 Or, *Men take to that with which they are constantly brought in contact.*

20 磕 is here used causatively, not meaning to strike, but to cause, or allow, the child to fall down and strike itself on the ground. (Chinese verbs are often so used.)

23 When it is desired to isolate a clause, or expression, and use it as a substantive, it is followed by a statement of the number of characters it contains. These characters are pasted up by the shopkeeper himself; but they read as if expressing the good wishes of the party on whose wall they are pasted.

課 一 十 二 第

LESSON XXI.

自 人 是 和 己 知 子 正 己 我¹
 家 是 我 他 的 己 的 人 去 自 己
 要 一 自 說 毛 的 應⁵ 他⁴ 我 的
 留 樣 己 說 病 朋 友 愛 自 不 放 心 錢
 着 的 一 各 這⁹ 我⁸ 自 己 如 己 打 自 己 不 殼
 用 使 罪 個 兒 不 是 自 己 自 己 打 自 己 先³ 打²
 喚 的 的 合 夥 的 好 意 思 自 己 不 知 道 自 己 的 嘴 巴 後 自
 自 不¹¹ 自¹⁰ 夥 的 買 賣 自 己 不 知 道 自 己 的 嘴 巴 後 自
 這¹² 能 給 你 我 殺

- 1 My own money is not sufficient.
- 2 I do not feel easy to send you alone.
- 3 Correct yourself before you correct others.
- 4 He slaps his own mouth (i.e., he talks inconsistently).
- 5 You should love others as yourself.
- 6 He is my confidential friend.
- 7 One does not know one's own faults.
- 8 I do not like to speak to him myself.
- 9 This is not a partnership business: it is my own.
- 10 To commit suicide is as great a sin as to commit murder.
- 11 I cannot give it to you; I want to keep it for my own use.
- 12 You ought to decide this thing yourself.

LESSON XXI.
THE REFLEXIVE PRONOUN.

自 Self; my own, his own, etc.

己 Self; private; selfish.

自己 Self. This term is joined with the several personal pronouns to make *myself*, *thyself*, etc. It is also used alone in these same senses, the antecedent being understood. It may sometimes also be translated, *oneself*. It is frequently

written, and more frequently spoken, 自家. Both 自 and 己 are used alone, but always in ready-made book phrases. When thus used, the 自 precedes the verb with which it is joined, while 己 follows it.

自各兒 or 自己各兒 His own, her own, etc. The second and fuller form is strongly colloquial. The Nanking equivalent is 自己一個.

VOCABULARY.

- 己 *Chi*⁵..... Self, oneself; private; special.
- 各 *Koa*⁴..... Each, every, all:—Les. 66.
- 打發 *Ta*⁵ *fa*¹..... To send, to dispatch.
- 放心 *Fang*⁴ *hsin*¹. To set the mind at rest, to be free from anxiety.
- 巴 *Pa*⁴. To adhere; a crust; a clamp; *the jaw*; a tail. Also *pa*¹.
- 嘴巴 *Tsui*⁵ *pa*⁴. The lower jaw; *the mouth*.
- 應當 *Ying*¹ *tang*¹. Ought, should, duty bound, under obligation.
- 知己 *Chi*¹ *chi*⁵. Intimate, confidential, devoted.
- 愛 *Ai*⁴. To love, to take delight in; to wish; to be sparing of, to grudge.
- 朋 *P'eng*²..... A friend, a companion.

- 朋友 *P'eng*² *yu*⁵..... A friend, an associate.
- 夥 *Hwo*³. A band, a company; a comrade, a partner; an accomplice.
- 合夥 *Hwo*³ *hwo*³. A partnership; to enter into a partnership.
- 盡 *Chin*⁴. To exhaust; finished, ended; empty; all, entirely; to the uttermost:—Les. 101, and 158. See *ching*⁴.
- 自盡 *Tsi*⁴ *chin*⁴. To end one's own life, to commit suicide.
- 殺 *Sha*¹. To kill, to put to death; to murder:—Les. 181.
- 殺人 *Sha*¹ *jèn*²..... To commit murder.
- 喚 *Hwan*⁴..... To call, to hail, to bid, to name.
- 使喚 *Shi*⁵ *hwan*⁴..... To use, to employ.
- 掛 *Kwa*¹. To be connected with, involved in; to brush against, to jostle. Also *kwa*⁴.

該是你是你自己拿主意。○不關他
 掛着他是他自己的錯。○沒有別人
 掛着他，是他自己。○跌倒了。○天地
 不能自己造自己。○這是他自家的。○人
 靠着自己的功勞，不能得救。○
 不用人送他，他自己能去。○你
 若不親自去，我怕這個事情，不
 能辦妥當。○他²⁰如今有二十來
 畝地，若是安分守己，也可以過

13 He is not responsible; it was my own mistake.
 14 Nobody touched him; he fell down of himself.
 15 Heaven and earth could not create themselves.
 16 These are his elder brother's spectacles; not his own.
 17 A man can not be saved by trusting in his own merit.
 18 He does not need any one to go with him: he can go himself.
 19 If you do not go your self, I fear this business can not be satisfactorily arranged.
 20 He now has upwards of twenty mow of land: if he is frugal and temperate he can make a living.

拐 Kwai³. To swindle, to decoy; to kidnap; to brush against, to jostle (L).
 造 Tsao⁴ or ts'ao⁴. To make, to build; to create; to act; to commence.
 哥 Koi¹. An elder brother; used as a suffix to show respect.
 哥哥. An elder brother:—Note (16).
 鏡 Ching⁴. A metallic mirror; a looking glass; a lens.
 眼鏡 Yen³ ching⁴. Spectacles.
 功 Kung¹. Merit; achievements; virtue.
 勞 Lao². To toil, to labor; to trouble; wearied, distressed, burdened.
 功勞. Meritorious deeds, merit.
 救 Chiu⁴. To rescue, to save; to liberate.
 親自 Ch'in¹ tsi⁴. Oneself; in person, in propria persona.
 妥當 T'ao³ tang¹. Satisfactory, in proper order or condition.
 安分 An¹ f'in⁴. To do one's duty; to fill one's proper station; to be frugal.
 守己 Shou³ chi³. To restrain oneself, to temperate.
 吃虧 Ch'i¹ k'wei¹. To suffer loss; to get the worst of the bargain.
 埋 Man². To conceal; to lay up; to accuse. Also mai³.
 怨 Yüan⁴. To hate, to feel bitter; to murmur at; malice; a wrong.

埋怨. To hold a grudge against; to find fault with, to murmur at.
 欺 Chi¹. To cheat; to deceive; to insult; to befool.
 欺哄 Chi¹ hung³. To deceive, to impose upon.
 底細 Ti³ hsi¹. The facts, the real state of the case.
 底裏 Ti³ li³. The same as 底細 (w).
 約 Yoi¹ or yie¹. To bind by contract, to agree with; to restrain; to estimate; a treaty; brief, condensed; about, nearly:—Les. 96.
 摸 Mo¹ or mu¹. To feel after, to seek; to guess; to follow a pattern.
 約摸. To estimate, to make a guess, to speak at random.
 表 Piao³. The exterior: to manifest, to make known; a guide; any instrument with a scale,—as a thermometer; a permit.
 表明 Piao³ ming². To make known, to show; to tell, to publish.
 表白 Piao³ pai². To show, to publish.
 跟從 Kên¹ ts'ung². To follow.
 克 K'oi¹. To be able; to subdue; to repress.
 克己 K'oi¹ chi³. To govern oneself, to deny oneself.
 背 Pei¹. To carry on the back. Also pei⁴.
 十字架 Shü² tsi⁴ chia⁴. The cross—from its resemblance to the character 十.

着跟早自好自²³要我找日子
 十從曉己約己自己嗎。吃着
 字我、得表摸不己○吃○
 架就了。白明着知欺你²²虧、這²¹
 跟當○好說。知道哄該還是你
 從克有²⁵不○底自小來埋自己
 我。己、人好、不²⁴裏細己。心、怨
 背要人用不○不

- 21 You brought this loss on yourself; and yet you come complaining against me.
- 22 You should be careful and not deceive yourself.
- 23 You should not speak at random, when you do not know the bottom facts in the case.
- 24 You need not publish it yourself: whether good or bad, people already know.
- 25 If any man will follow me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

NOTES.

2 放心 Lit., to let down, or lay down, the heart; similar to our phrase, "to set the heart at rest."

3 人 is here used for others, in opposition to self. So also in (5).

8 不好意思 is a very common phrase, which will not bear a literal analysis. It expresses a slight feeling of shame or embarrassment.

12 Lit., This thing is yours to decide.

14 是 might be omitted, but as used, it adds emphasis to the clause following it.

16 哥 is not repeated as adjectives are, for emphasis, but probably for the purpose of distinguishing the word from others, or as an indication of endearment. Names of relatives show a special tendency to double in this way: thus we have,—姐姐 *chie³ chie³*, elder sister; 妹妹 *mei⁴ mei⁴*,

younger sister; also 媽媽 *ma¹ ma¹*, mother; 爹爹 *tie¹ tie¹*, father; 爺爺 *ye² ye²*, grandfather; 奶奶 *nai³ nai³*, grandmother, etc. 父 and 母, however, are never repeated.

20 二十來. It is hard to see how this phrase comes to mean upwards of twenty. The 來 is nearly always pronounced *la*, and 個 is often added. In Peking it means about twenty—less or more; elsewhere it always means upwards of twenty, though not usually over twenty-five.

21 吃虧 is an infinitive clause, the object of the verb 找.

23 底裏 is not used in the North, save in one or two ready-made phrases. It is used in the South, but is a little bookish.

24 Note how the subjunctive idea is implied in 好不好.

LESSON XXII.

AFFIRMATIVE-NEGATIVE QUESTION.

Besides the form with 嗎, a direct question is very often asked by putting the idea first in the affirmative, and then in the negative, implying or offering an alternative in the answer; somewhat

as we do in English when we add "or not" to a direct question.

This form of question is much used, and is somewhat less categorical than that with 嗎.

VOCABULARY.

想家 *Hsiang³ chia¹*. To be homesick.

忙 *Mang²*. Busy, occupied; hurried.

帮忙 *Pang¹ mang²*. To help do extra work; to assist:—Note (5).

賬 *Chang⁴*. An account; a debt; a charge.

宜 *I²*. Right; fit, proper; suitable.

便宜 *Pein⁴ i²*. Convenient; serviceable.

方便 *Fang¹ pien⁴*. Convenient.

嫁 *Chia⁴*. To marry a husband.

出嫁 *Ch'u¹ chia⁴*. To get married (of the woman).

齊 *Ch'i²*. Even, uniform; on a level; complete; to equalize; at once; all.

陽 *Yang²*. The superior of the dual powers of nature; the sun; day; heaven; male; virility; the front.

太陽 *T'ai⁴ yang²*. The sun.

封 *Feng¹*. To appoint, to constitute officially; to seal; an envelope, a sealed packet. A classifier, Les. 125.

信封 *Shin⁴ feng¹*. A letter envelope.

營 *Ying²*. To plan, to attend to; to get a living; an intrenched camp; military.

了。一點事情，不知道他有什么工。夫沒有。○廚房的鍋破了。我去找個補鍋的匠來收拾他好不好。

你²⁶不放心，我找個保人行不行。○我要和他商議。

先生聽着，看對不對。○火盆裡的火，滅了沒有。○

不明白。○我²³給你三吊錢，穀不穀。○我要再說，請

他²¹說要來，便宜不便宜。○大米乾飯，先生吃不吃。○

書，你看便。○大錢，穀不穀。○

○這¹⁸兩天銀子行市，長了沒有。○四¹⁹百錢買這本

衣裳，洗完了沒有。○那¹⁵個飯壞了沒壞。○這¹⁶

膊，還疼不疼。○

- 15 Has that food spoiled?
- 16 Have you finished washing this week's clothes?
- 17 It is very cold to-day: are your feet frozen (or cold)?
- 18 Has the price of silver advanced these few days?
- 19 Four hundred cash for this book. Do you not think it cheap?
- 20 Do you eat dry rice?
- 21 He said he would come; but, after all, has he come?
- 22 Is this idea clear to you?
- 23 If I give you three thousand cash, will it be enough?
- 24 I will say it again. Please listen and see whether it is correct or not.
- 25 Has the fire in the fire-pan gone out?
- 26 If you are uneasy, would it do for me to get some one as security?
- 27 I want to consult him about a small matter: I wonder if he has time.
- 28 The kettle in the kitchen is cracked (or, broken): shall I not get a tinker to come and mend it?

NOTES.

2 好不好 has a different meaning here from what it had in the last lesson, and is read with a different emphasis.

3 你^想家不^想家 is the proper and more prevalent form; that is, the rule in all cases is, to complete the affirmative form before the negative is begun. The second form is much used in Shantung, and also to some extent in other places; though most teachers, if asked, would say that the first is the right one; because they have been accustomed to see it so in books. To adhere in all cases to the book form sounds labored and awkward.

4 To give the meaning in the translation, a slight emphasis should be thrown on 你. By a different emphasis the sentence might be made to mean, *This knife is yours, is it not?* To give this meaning the emphasis should be thrown, in the first form on the first 是, and in the second form on the second 是.

5 帮忙, to assist the hurry; i.e., to help with any extra work. Properly applied to assistance rendered freely; but often used of temporary work that is paid for.

7 Instead of repeating the principal verb in the negative form, 有 is made to stand for it. This is a common form.

13 For anything that appears in this sentence, it may have been addressed to Mrs. Li; in which case the meaning would simply be, *Is your throat well to-day?*

17 凍 properly means *frozen*, but is used in many places as an exaggeration for *very cold*,—*freezing cold*.

20 大米乾飯 is a Northern expression. In the South 飯 alone expresses it all, for the reason that they have no 小米, millet; and 飯, when used alone, is understood to mean *dry rice*.

27 不知道 do not know, is the common way of expressing "I wonder." The 道 is often omitted.

28 The Southern form is 補鍋的, a mender of kettles:—Les. 39. In the North a 小爐匠 is a travelling tinker who carries a forge and a small kit of blacksmith tools, and mends crockery, as well as iron, brass and tin ware.

LESSON XXIII.

的 JOINED TO VERBS.

When 的 follows a verb it gives it the force of a participial noun, or makes it equivalent to a relative clause. Thus, the first sentence might be

rendered literally, *His going is very quick*; and the second, *The money which he earned was not much*. While this is the analysis of this idiom-

第二十三課

LESSON XXIII.

學的多，又溫習的熟。○你學的恰對。○我¹²怕你說得的。○荒唐。○他¹³聽得的大對。○他¹¹用的慢的說。○我就畫兒畫的好不好。○這⁹個字繙堂掃的不乾淨。○你⁸看我這個快。○我⁶的父親，病得不輕。○客⁷花的錢不少。○這⁵個刀磨的不○伏³天下的雨很大。○這⁴個月他¹走的很快。○他²掙的錢不多。

- 1 He goes very fast.
- 2 He did not make much money.
- 3 The summer rains were very great.
- 4 There has been not a little money spent this month.
- 5 This knife is not ground sharp.
- 6 My father is very sick.
- 7 The parlor is not swept clean.
- 8 Look at this painting of mine, [and see] whether it is well painted.
- 9 This word is not translated quite right.
- 10 If you speak slowly, I will hear distinctly.
- 11 He used this comparison very appositely.
- 12 I fear you are speaking rashly: (or, I fear you spoke rashly).
- 13 He learned much, and also learned it well.

atic usage, a good English rendering will take a variety of forms, according to the connection.

得 may often be substituted for 的 without

appreciable change of meaning. Such substitution is more frequent in the South than in the North. It is possible that 得 was the original form.

VOCABULARY.

掙 *Chêng⁴*. To make money by labor, to earn; to break or tear away.

伏 *Fu²*. To fall prostrate, to humble oneself; to hide, to conceal; the hot season.

伏天 *Fu² t'ien¹*. The hot season, July 19 to August 18.

磨 *Mod²*. To rub, to grind; to sharpen; to argue; trials; a time:—Les. 64. Also *mod⁴*.

畫 *Hwa⁴*. A picture, a painting; a mark, a line; a stroke in a character. Also *hwa²*.

畫 *Hwa²*. To draw a line; to paint or draw; to line off. See *hwa⁴*.

繙 *Fan¹*. To open out; to translate, to interpret.

楚 *Ch'u³*. Sharp, painful; orderly; plain, distinct, clear.

清楚 *Ch'ing¹ ch'u³*. Clear, distinct; in order; settled,—as an account.

比方 *Pi³ fang¹*. A comparison; an illustration; for instance.

恰 *Ch'ia⁴*. Luckily, opportunely; exactly; just; at the exact moment.

荒 *Hwang¹*. Barren, waste; reckless, careless; empty; famine.

唐 *T'ang²*. To boast; dissolute.

荒唐. Unsteady; unreliable; wild; rash.

溫 *Wên¹*. Warm, tepid; mild, genial, kind; to practice, to become familiar with.

習 *Hsi²*. To practice; skilled; custom, habit.

習溫習. To repeat again and again, to practice.

肉 *Jou⁴*. Flesh; meat; fat, fleshy; corporeal. Also *ju⁴*.

煮 *Chu³*. To boil in water, to cook.

爛 *Lan⁴*. Cooked tender; soft, mellow; bright, brilliant; tattered; rotten.

湊 *Ts'ou⁴*. To gather together, to collect; to happen or hit upon.

巧 *Ch'iao³*. Skilful, ingenious; wily, shrewd; opportune.

湊巧. Opportune, in the nick of time; lucky.

櫃 *Kwei⁴*. A chest; a locker; a bureau; a safe; a cupboard; a sideboard.

正當 *Chêng⁴ tang⁴*. Square; level; straight, not awry.

蓋 *Kai⁴*. A cover, a roof; to cover, to roof; to build a house.

體 *T'i³*. The body, the whole person; a solid; the substance; to feel for; becoming; to embody; to realize; to pervade.

好的、穿的也是好的。
 之一。○我²⁵年輕的時候，家裏有錢吃的是
 地方，請寬恕我。○我²⁴賺的，沒有他的三分
 爐子，做的真巧。○我²³有甚麼得罪先生的
 的兒媳婦，如意不如意。○纔²²買的那個新
 太太生的，和氣唱的詩也頂好。○你²¹新將娶
 講究。○我¹⁹在路，上，大老爺的房子，蓋得少。○實²⁰
 體面。○正¹⁸王，大老爺的房子，蓋得少。○實²⁰
 的，不爛。○你¹⁶來的實在湊巧。○這¹⁷這¹⁵
 不爛。○你¹⁶來的實在湊巧。○這¹⁷這¹⁵
 官話，殼用的不殼用的呢。○這¹⁷這¹⁵
 官話，殼用的不殼用的呢。○這¹⁷這¹⁵

- 14 Is the Mandarin you have learned sufficient for ordinary use ?
- 15 This meat is not boiled tender.
- 16 Your coming is truly opportune.
- 17 This sideboard is not set straight.
- 18 Wang Ta Lao Yie's house is very elegantly built.
- 19 I spent a deal of time on the road.
- 20 Lady Lu is naturally amiable, and also sings hymns exceedingly well.
- 21 Does the daughter-in-law you have just gotten please you ?
- 22 That stove you have just bought is certainly ingeniously made.
- 23 If I have in any wise offended you, I beg you to pardon me.
- 24 What I cleared was (or, is) not the one third of what he cleared.
- 25 When I was young our family was rich; I ate good food and wore good clothes.

體面 *Ti³ mien⁴*. Genteel; honorable; *elegant*; fine looking.
 究 *Chiu¹*. To examine into, to search out; after all, finally, in the end:—Les. 127.
 講究. *Chiang³ chiu¹*. To explain; to discuss. In the South,—that which elicits commendation, fine, *elegant*.
 和氣 *Hoi³ ch'i⁴*. Peaceable; *amiable*.
 唱 *Ch'ang⁴*. To sing; to call out,—as a roll.
 詩 *Shi¹*. A poem, an ode, a hymn.
 將 *Chiang¹*. To take, to hold; an auxiliary verb:—Les. 28; to take a wife (L.); to

accommodate; to avail of; soon, presently; sign of future:—Les. 55. Also *chiang⁴*.
 如意 *Ju³ i⁴*. Satisfactory, *pleasing*, as you like it.
 得罪 *Te³ tsui⁴*. To offend, to sin against; I beg your pardon.
 寬 *K'wan¹*. Broad; spacious; *forgiving*, indulgent; to enlarge.
 恕 *Shu⁴*. To pardon; to excuse; indulgent; benignant.
 寬恕. To forgive; to be lenient, to be generous.
 年輕 *Nien³ ch'ing¹*. Young, youthful.

NOTES.

2 Or, *He is not making much money.*
 11 Might also be rendered, *The comparison which he used was very apposite.* The 這個 is here thrown in between the parts of the clause in a highly idiomatic way that should be noted by the learner:—see also (22).
 14 Or, *Have you learned sufficient Mandarin for ordinary use?*

17 正當 appears to be only used in Central Mandarin.
 19 耽誤工夫 sometimes means to be detained, but more frequently it means to spend time, or to waste time.
 21 The proper and everywhere current form is 娶. 將 is local in Shantung.
 24 沒有他的 is elliptical for 沒有他賺的.

LESSON XXIV.
 INTENSIVES OF EXCESS.

太 Too, excessive, very. The composition of this character indicates a sort of afterthought, in the form of a supplement to the character 大; by a dot, "great" is made to be, "too great."

第二十四課

LESSON XXIV.

○ 促 的 泡 沏 ○ 心 了 ○ 的 今¹
 他¹⁵ 了。 過 的 以¹⁰ 忒 ○ 如⁵ 的 衣 天 太 熱。
 做 的 ○ 於 茶 後 毒 那⁷ 今 天 太 熱。
 過 先¹⁴ 精 太 講 了。 些 水 太 短。 歹 憐 ○ 你²
 快 生 細 明 厚 醜 的 ○ 太 學⁹ 太 短。 歹 憐 ○ 說 的 太 快。
 不 寫 明¹³ 那¹² 煩 的 太 涼 ○ 我⁶ 我⁴ 的 太 快。
 大 費 天 個 絮 的 太 多 那⁸ 今 日 太 慢。
 仔 工 出 小 了 ○ 學 個 人 的 太 慢。
 細 夫 殯 姑 娘 早¹¹ 不 熟 的 太 慢。
 ○ 太 太 急 生 上 晨 熟 的 太 慢。
 我¹⁶ 大。

- 1 It is too hot to-day.
- 2 You speak too fast.
- 3 Your clothes are too dirty.
- 4 My clock is too slow.
- 5 The days now are too short.
- 6 I am too tired to-day.
- 7 That water is too cold.
- 8 That man's heart is too malignant.
- 9 If you learn too much you will not learn it well.
- 10 Afterwards there was too much repetition in his discourse.
- 11 The tea made this morning was too strong.
- 12 That little girl is by nature too precocious.
- 13 To have the funeral to-morrow will be too hurried.
- 14 You take too much time in writing.

忒 Too, excessive; an exaggeration of 太:—mostly used of things that are in some way displeasing.

過於 Too, excessive. 過 is sometimes used alone in the same sense.

過逾 Both words mean to pass over, or go beyond, and together mean, too much, beyond measure. The accent is on the second syllable, while in 過於 it is on the first.

過分 Beyond duty or propriety, outrageous.

VOCABULARY.

忒 *T'ei⁴*..... An excess; too, very:—see Sub.
 於 *Yu²*..... In, at, on; with, by, as, so; than.
 逾 *Yu⁴* To pass over; to go beyond; to exceed; to omit; still, more.
 癩 *Lai¹*..... Foul, filthy (L.). Also read *lai⁴*.
 歹 *Tai²*..... Bad, vicious; perverse.
 癩 歹 *Unkempt; soiled, dirty (L.).*
 骯 髒 *Ang¹*..... Dirty.
 髒 *Tsang¹*..... Filthy; to dirty, to defile.
 髒 髒 *Filthy, dirty, foul, nasty.*
 乏 *Fa²* To be in want of; deficient; exhausted, weary, tired.
 毒 *Tu²*..... Poisonous; malignant; cruel.
 煩 *Fan²* Troubled; annoyed; perplexed, confused; grieved; urgent:—Les. 91.
 絮 *Hsu⁴* To repeat, to reiterate; prolix; to wad,—as a quilt; gossamer.
 煩 絮 *Repetitious, tautological.*
 晨 *Ch'en²*..... Morning, dawn.
 早晨 *Tsao² ch'en²*..... The morning.

早上 *Tsao² shang⁴*..... The morning.
 沏 *Ch'i¹*..... To steep or make tea (Pekingese).
 泡 *P'ao⁴* To steep, to soak; to draw,—as tea. Also *p'ao¹*.
 茶 *Ch'a²*..... Tea,—the plant or the infusion.
 醜 *Yen⁴*..... Strong,—as tea or coffee.
 厚 *Hou⁴* Thick; generous, liberal; large; intimate; strong,—as tea.
 精 *Ching¹* Unmixed; fine, subtle; expert, practiced; smart, ready; the essence; semen; an apparition.
 精明 *Ching¹ ming²* Smart, clever, quick witted, sharp.
 精細 *Ching¹ hsi⁴* Smart, clever, sharp; alert.
 殯 *Pin⁴*..... To carry to burial; a funeral.
 出殯 *Ch'u¹ pin⁴* To observe funeral rites; to have a funeral.
 促 *Ts'u⁴*..... To urge; urgent, pressing; close.
 急促 *Chi² ts'u⁴*..... Hurried, hasty.

分了, 我不能讓他。
 看你護諷他, 太過逾了。
 分的。○和熟人的利害人, 沒有像你這樣過
 輕了。○世上的利害人, 送他這點禮物, 過於
 你也說得太過了。○送他這
 也不可過於打算。○他有不是, 是不錯的,
 問得很好, 可惜忒張狂了。○人不可不打算,
 館不可過鬆, 也不過嚴。
 學不可過鬆, 也不過嚴。
 以少買一點。○這個學生過逾的。
 的嘴太直, 說話常得罪人。○若是太貴, 可

- 15 He works too fast, and is not very careful.
- 16 My manner of speaking is too straightforward: I am constantly offending people in my talk.
- 17 If it is very dear, buy a little less.
- 18 This pupil is excessively stupid.
- 19 In teaching it is not best to be too lax, nor yet too strict.
- 20 Ting Chia Mu's scholarship is very good: it is a pity he is so arrogant.
- 21 A man should make plans; yet he should not plan too much.
- 22 He was to blame it is true, and you also spoke too severely.
- 23 To give him this trifling present, is too meagre.
- 24 Of all the violent men in the world, you are the most outrageous.
- 25 It is not best to be too punctilious in our intercourse with intimate friends.
- 26 In my opinion, you ridicule him too excessively.
- 27 He insults me too outrageously; I can not submit to it [him].

仔 *Tsi*³. To carry; careful.
 仔細 *Tsi*³ *hsi*⁴. Careful, particular.
 直 *Chi*². Straight; upright; outspoken; straight-forward; purposely.
 拙 *Choa*¹. Stupid; unskillful, clumsy.
 鬆 *Sung*¹. To relax; slack, loose; easy going; flabby; by, spongy.
 嚴 *Yen*². Severe, stern, strict; majestic, dignified; close,—as a door.
 惜 *Hsi*¹. To compassionate; to regret; to be sparing.
 可惜 *K'oi*³ *hsi*¹. To be regretted; what a pity! Alas!
 狂 *K'wang*². Mad, raving; insane; rash, excitable; proud.

張狂 *Chang*¹ *k'wang*². Boastful; arrogant; pretentious.
 像 *Hsiang*⁴. Like, similar, as; a likeness; an image, an idol.
 拘 *Chü*¹. To grasp and hold; to restrain; to embrace; to adhere to.
 謹 *Chin*³. Diligent, careful; respectful.
 拘謹. Cautious, conservative; punctilious.
 譏 *Chi*¹. To ridicule; to mock; to satirize.
 譏諷. *Ch'iao*⁴. To blame, to scold, to upbraid.
 讓 *Jang*⁴. To yield, to allow; to esteem others; to waive; retiring; courteous.

NOTES.

3 癩歹 is very forcible, but more or less local. In the South 體 is used alone.
 7 那些水 might, with equal propriety, be 那個水. The plural form usually indicates a limited quantity, while the singular is quite indefinite.
 8 Lit., That man's heart is too poisonous; said of one who has no regard for the rights and feelings of others.
 11 沏 is Pekingese. 泡 is Central and Southern Mandarin. 厚 is Nankingese.

16 Lit., My lips are too direct. We attribute speech to the tongue, the Chinese, to the lips.
 18 拙 is Nankingese. In the North 拙 is not applied to the mind.
 21 過於打算 refers to one who is always changing his plans, or is too sanguine in his planning.
 26 We have in 太過逾, a duplicate intensive, which, however, is more elegant in Chinese than the redundant expression "too excessively" is in English.

第二十五課

LESSON XXV.

走。鞋。給。罪。不。○。替。給。替。給。他¹
 你。底。他。○。要。我⁶。你。我。我。臨。走、
 與。給。我。拔。提。請⁹。緊。的。寫。討。辦。拿。留。這、
 他。替。給。鞋。先。我。大。○。個。一。壺。留。這、
 平。上。你。也。是。給。與。給。不。能。小。口。開。五。百。錢
 三。兩。幣。掛。子。不。配。的。個。○。耶⁸。把。給。找。個。自。己。不。會。寫。緊。的
 銀。子。○。客¹²。到。你¹¹。替。給。我。○。影。本。仿。蘇。替。萬。人。贖。錢。能。我。的
 王¹³。明。天。要。我。捺。我¹⁰。贖。錢。能。我。的
 先。生。要。我。捺。我¹⁰。贖。錢。能。我。的

- 1 When he was starting, he left these five hundred cash for the servants.
- 2 Bring a pitcher of hot water for me.
- 3 Please do not fail to bespeak a wife for me.
- 4 If you can not write it yourself, I will write it for you.
- 5 Can you find a situation for me?
- 6 I can not lend him my overcoat.
- 7 If you have no money, no matter; I will trust you.
- 8 Jesus made atonement for the sins of all men.
- 9 Will you please write a copy for me?
- 10 I am not worthy to pull up his shoes.
- 11 If you stitch my shoe soles, I will hem your coat.
- 12 The guest will leave to-morrow; do you weigh for him three taels of silver.

LESSON XXV.

THE DATIVE.

^{kei'} 給 To give; hence,—to, for; when it follows the verb it means *to*, and when it precedes it, *for*. It is nearly always read *kei'* in Pekingese. Though properly unaspirated, it is generally aspirated in Central and Southern Mandarin. In Nanking, when used as the sign of the dative it is read *kei'*.

^{ti'} 替 To substitute; hence,—instead of, for. It always precedes the verb.

^{pa'} 把 To take (see Les. 27 and 28), is much used along the Yang-tsi for 給, when it means *to*, but

never when it means *for*. This use of 把 is not properly Mandarin, but is allied to the Southern coast dialects.

^{yu'} 與 To, the *wên-li* equivalent for 給 as a sign of the dative. Colloquially it is not so used in the North, but is used to some extent in the South, especially in the region of Hankow.

In the South, 替, 把 and 與 largely supercede 給, which is, however, the regular and recognized Mandarin form.

VOCABULARY.

替 *Ti'*. To take the place of; to do for or instead of; in behalf of; for.

把 *Pa'*. To take; to regard as:—an instrumental verb, Les. 28. A handful, a bundle:—a classifier, Les 27. *To*:—see Sub.

與 *Yu'*. To give; to transfer; as, rather; with, and; *to*:—see Sub., also Les. 110.

計 *Chi'*. To plan, to consider; to compute; a stratagem; a comrade.

夥計 *Huo'* *chi'*. A comrade, a companion; the employés in a shop.

壺 *Hu'*. A pot, a jug, a pitcher:—Les. 147.

開水 *K'ai'* *shui'*. Boiling water.

家口 *Chia'* *k'ou'*. Family; wife.

家小 *Chia'* *hsiao'*. A wife.

處 *Ch'u'*. A place, a spot; a circumstance:—Les. 98. A classifier, Les. 125. Also *ch'u'*.

地處 *Ti'* *ch'u'*. A place, a locality; a situation; a berth (L).

賒 *Shé'*. To buy or sell on credit, to trust; to borrow.

耶 *Yie'*. Father; a *wên-li* final particle implying doubt.

保²³子他媽娘在南街給王二爺當媽。 臺上。 ○ 我²²們日用的飲食，今日賜給我們。 ○ 能換給你。 ○ 那些釘子，你給我拿來攔在窗。 你坐下我說給你聽。 ○ 你²⁰打算兩不找，我不的天下，讓給舜。 ○ 我¹⁹有一個最熱鬧的故事。 我¹⁷自己不能定規，請你替我拿個主意。 ○ 我¹⁸是王大老爺的信，到了北京，可以交與他。 ○ 這¹⁶是我好不好，答好，我正打算託你給我換錢。 ○ 一會兒我就給你送去。 ○ 你¹⁵不用你自己來拿。 替我代了一個月的館。 ○ 不用你自己來拿。

- 13 Mr. Wang taught school a month in my stead.
- 14 You need not come for it yourself: I will take it to you presently.
- 15 Would you sell (i.e., in exchange for cash) me these dollars of yours? Ans. All right: I was just about to ask you to sell them for me.
- 16 This is Wang Ta Lao Yie's letter; when you reach Peking you can give it to him.
- 17 I can not come to a decision myself: will you please make the decision for me?
- 18 Yao yielded the empire to Shun.
- 19 I know a very interesting story: sit down and I will tell it to you.
- 20 If you expect to trade even, I can not trade with you.
- 21 Bring those nails and put them on the window-sill for me.
- 22 Give us this day our daily bread.
- 23 Pao-tsi's mother is nurse on the South street for Wang Er Yie.

蘇 *Su*¹..... To revive, to come to life again.
 耶穌 *Jesus*.
 贖 *Shu*³..... A pledge; to redeem, to ransom.
 影 *Ying*³..... A shadow; a picture, an image.
 仿 *Fang*³. To imitate; a model; a copy to write by.
 格 *Ko*². To examine thoroughly; to influence, to affect; a line, a rule; a limit.
 仿格. A copy to write by:—Note (9).
 影本 *Ying*³ *pên*³..... The same.
 拔 *Pa*². To pull up; to extirpate; to draw;— as a sword; to pinch and pull the skin as a counter-irritant, to cup; to excel.
 鞋 *Hsie*²..... Shoes, gaiters.
 配 *P'ei*⁴. An equal; a wife; to pair, to match; to accompany; to be worthy of.
 捺 *Na*⁴..... To stitch a shoe sole.
 幫 *Ch'iao*¹..... To hem.
 褂 *Kwa*⁴..... An upper garment, a coat.
 平 *P'ing*². Even, level; equitable; ordinary; peaceful; to level; to weigh in scales.
 代 *Tai*⁴. To substitute; for, in place of; a generation; a dynasty.

託 *T'oa*¹. To charge with; to entrust to; to ask one to do for; to rely upon.
 堯 *Yao*³. A celebrated sovereign of China, said to have reigned 103 years, beginning B. C. 2357.
 舜 *Shun*⁴. An ancient emperor, whose reign began B. C. 2255.
 天下 *T'ien*¹ *hsia*⁴. All under heaven, the world; China; the sovereignty.
 故 *Ku*⁴. The cause or reason of a thing; therefore; on purpose; of course; old; original; former; an affair.
 故事 *Ku*⁴ *shi*⁴. A legend, a story, an anecdote; a singular occurrence.
 兩不找 *Liang*³ *pu*⁴ *chao*³. To trade even, no boot.
 釘 *Ting*¹..... A nail, a spike, a peg. Also *ting*⁴.
 飲 *Yin*³..... To drink; drink. Also *yin*⁴.
 飲食 *Yin*³ *shi*²..... Food and drink.
 賜 *Si*⁴, *t'si*⁴. To give, to bestow; a benefit, a gift from a superior.
 南 *Nan*³..... South.
 媽媽 *Ma*¹ *ma*¹. Mamma;—in some places, grandmother, in other places a nurse:—Les. 5, Note (23).

課六十二第

LESSON XXVI.

後頭。○我¹⁰打
兩個孩
子。我
狗。常
是。你
子。是
住。在
外。頭
外。頭
看。見
說。話。
我。看
見。他
們。在
土。地
廟。後

- 1 I saw them behind the T'u-ti temple talking.
2 Right before your eyes, and you don't see it?
3 I was inside, and he outside.
4 There is fire inside the earth.
5 It is very cold outside.
6 My family live within.
7 Is the house in here yours?
8 Wan the Fourth's dog is constantly out biting [people's] chickens.
9 I just now saw your two children behind the house.
10 I propose to build a side room on the west side of the yard.

NOTES.

1 On leaving a Chinese inn, it is customary to give a small "tip" to the servants; not, however, so much as five hundred cash, unless one has been at the inn a number of days.

3 Marriages in China are arranged by go-betweens. This is a request to some one not to neglect the business entrusted to him. 辦, in the North, and 討, in the South, are only used with reference to a second wife. In some places 家口 means either wife, or wife and children; in other places it is confined to the latter meaning.

9 A 仿格, or 影本, is a page of "copy" written by the teacher in a large, fair hand. This copy the pupil places underneath his thin paper and traces the characters.

12 Chinese ideas of hospitality require that, in sending away a guest from a distance, you should make him a present of something for his journey.

18 It is related of the ancient emperor Yao, that he yielded the empire to his friend Shun, instead of leaving it to his son; which the Chinese regard as an unparalleled example of patriotism. The use of 天下 for China is a specimen of Chinese egotism.

22 This is from the translation of the Lord's prayer. The clause 日用的飲食 means literally, *the drink and food, used day by day*. It is high Mandarin, not readily understood save by constant use.

23 保子他娘 is a somewhat inelegant colloquial form, equivalent to 保子的娘.

LESSON XXVI.

Besides the postpositions of place, 裏, 外, 上, 下, given in Lesson 6, there are also such as 前, 後, 左, 右, etc., all which take after and combine with themselves the words 頭, *head*, 面, *face*, and 邊, *border*. We say, inside, outside, etc.; but

the Chinese go further and say, in-head, out-head, in-face, out-face, etc. The meaning in the several cases is substantially the same. Which form is most suitable in any case can only be learned by practise. The usage varies considerably in different places.

VOCABULARY.

邊 or 边 *Pien*¹. Edge; border; boundary.

廟 *Miao*⁴. A temple.

土地 *T'u³ ti⁴*. A local divinity:—Note (1).

眷 *Chuan*⁴. To love; to care for; kindred; family.

家眷 *Chia¹ chuan*⁴. Family, household; wife.

咬 *Yao*³. To bite, to chew; to involve in a crime; to bark.

雞 *Chi*¹. A chicken, a cock.

廂 *Hsiang*¹. A side building.

廂房 *Hsiang¹ fang*². A small house at the side of the court between other houses.

背 *Pei*⁴. The back; the rear; to turn the back on; to violate, to falsify; *in the shade*; to repeat. See *pei*¹.

撇 *P'ie*¹. To skim off; to throw aside; to leave behind, *to forget*; a stroke down and to the left in writing.

拴 *Shwan*¹. To bind up; to fasten or tie to; to hitch.

馬 *Ma*². A horse; warlike; cavalry.

在面邊的子下衙的馬和邊
 前聽你衣的在在是是馬○蓋
 頭見也服服在在是是馬○蓋
 走見了。○請先生上邊笑。○大個門裏住。○王老三在東巷
 你○請先生上邊笑。○大個門裏住。○王老三在東巷
 們在後頭跟着。○你的鞋可
 們在後頭跟着。○你的鞋可
 們在後頭跟着。○你的鞋可

- 11 At the east side of the house it is sheltered from the wind, and is quite warm.
- 12 I forgot my clothes inside.
- 13 The horse hitched in front of the large gate is your young master's, is it not?
- 14 Wang the Third lives in the innermost door in the east alley.
- 15 The upper side is the right side; the lower side is the wrong side.
- 16 The big child was on the inner side of the k'ang crying, and the little one on the outer side laughing.
- 17 If a man thinks to accuse you, wanting your inside coat, let him take the outside one also.
- 18 Did you also search in the drawer?
- 19 They were talking inside, and I heard them outside.
- 20 Please take the upper seat.
- 21 You should allow the teacher to go before, and you follow after.
- 22 You may take off your shoes without, at the side of the door.

少 *Shao*⁴. Young, juvenile; a youth; secondary; to be second;—See *shao*³.
 少爺 *Shao*⁴ *yii*². The son of an official.
 衙 *Hu*². A side street.
 衙 *T'ung*⁴. A side street.
 衙 *Hsiang*⁴, *Hang*⁴. An alley.
 巷 *Hsiang*⁴, *Hang*⁴. An alley.
 儘 *Chin*³. To finish; completely; all; the utmost:—Les. 137.
 反 *Fan*³. To return; to turn over; to reverse; to rebel; but, on the contrary:—Les. 112.
 哭 *K'u*¹. To cry, to weep, to bemoan.
 笑 *Hsiao*⁴. To laugh; to smile; to ridicule.
 衣服 *I*¹ *fu*². Clothing, dress.
 連 *Lien*². To connect; to join; following; even, still; and, together with:—Les. 110.
 由 *Yu*². The origin or antecedents; from, through; the cause or instrument; to let, to permit:—Les. 83.
 抽 *Ch'ou*¹. To take or draw out; to select; to smoke,—as a pipe.
 屈 *T'ü*⁴. A pad, a saddle-cloth; a buffer.
 抽屈 *T'ü*⁴. A drawer.
 聽見 *T'ing*¹ *chien*⁴. To hear; to perceive by hearing; to listen:—Les. 51.

脫 *T'ou*¹. To take off, to undress; to escape, to evade; to avoid.
 旁 *P'ang*². The side; sideways; near.
 旁邊 *P'ang*² *pian*¹. At or by the side; the side.
 颺 *K'ua*¹. To blow; to drive with the wind.
 左 *Tso*³. The left; second in position, a deputy; depraved, heretical.
 右 *Yu*⁴. The right; to honor; to aid.
 上頭 *Shang*⁴ *t'ou*². "Topside," the term by which inferiors designate their superiors, and the apartments in which they live.
 上邊 *Shang*⁴ *pian*¹. The same.
 開飯 *K'ai*¹ *fan*⁴. To set forth or serve a meal.
 罩 *Chao*⁴. To cover over; to shade; to surround and cover; a hollow cover; a receiver (for an air-pump).
 燈罩 *T'eng*¹ *chao*⁴. A lamp shade, a lamp chimney.
 骨 *Ku*³. A bone; the skeleton or hard part of anything.
 骨頭 *Ku*³ *t'ou*². A bone:—Les. 47.
 髮 *Fa*³. Hair, the hair on the head.
 頭髮 *T'ou*³ *fa*³. Human hair.

外淨了還南左書不²⁴外以
有○人²⁹○這²⁸沒有開邊邊架是在邊脫
頭○人的²⁹個燈罩飯天女的高上書廳在
髮裏頭裏頭裏嗎氣該頭面架子裏大風
頭裏頭裏面答太熱在右男²⁵裏實
有骨頭面不己○上²⁷○該的頭難
頭乾開頭邊這²⁶在是在走○在²³

- 23 A strong wind is blowing outside, and it is very hard walking.
- 24 If it is not inside the book-case, it is on the top.
- 25 The man ought to be on the left, and the woman on the right.
- 26 The climate here in the South is too hot.
- 27 Has the meal not yet been served to the family (or, guests)? Ans. It has.
- 28 This lamp chimney is not clean inside.
- 29 On the inside of one's head are bones, and on the outside, hair.

NOTES.

1 土地. The lowest god in China with magisterial functions. There is a *T'u³ ti⁴* temple, or shrine, in or near every village, and also one in every Hsien city. The gods in these many temples are all different individuals, though they all have the same birth-day, on which they are worshipped; viz., the second day of the second month. It is to this temple that the soul first repairs after death.

7 這裡頭的房子. Lit., *this inside's house*; i.e., *the house which is here within*.

17 The sentence is taken without change from the Mandarin N. T. It would be smoother colloquial if 着 were added to 想.

20 The English speaker is strongly inclined to put 在 before the 上, and the Chinese will allow it, but prefers to omit it.

24 This sentence might be taken indicatively; viz., *It is not in the inside of the book-case; it is on the top*. Which meaning it would convey, would depend wholly on the manner of saying it. The use of 高頭 in the sense of *on top*, or *above*, is exclusively Southern.

25 男的 and 女的 might, with equal propriety, be translated in the plural.

29 This sentence well serves to illustrate some of the uses of the word 頭.

LESSON XXVII.

FOUR COMMON CLASSIFIERS.

This lesson illustrates four of the most common classifiers:—See subject to Lesson 1. Other classifiers will be illustrated in a number of future lessons:—See Les. 38, 42, 68, 100, 125, 140 and 147.

把 To take,—classifier of things which have a handle, or can be held in the hand.

塊 A piece,—classifier of things in pieces, lumps or fragments.

件 To divide,—a classifier of wide application, used in general of particular articles regarded as separate wholes.

位 A seat of dignity,—classifier of persons, especially of such as are regarded as worthy of respect.

For full list of words falling under each of these classifiers, see Supplement.

VOCABULARY.

件 *Chien⁴*. To divide; an article, an item, a piece:—see Sub.

錐 *Chui¹*. An awl; to pierce.

剪 *Chien³*. To clip, to snip, to shear; shears, scissors, tongs.

鐵 *T'ie²*. Iron; firm, resolute.

皮 *Pi²*. Skin; leather; fur; bark; a covering; tare of goods.

菜 *Ts'ai⁴*. Edible vegetables.

園 *Yüan²*. A yard; a garden; a park; a large shop or saloon.

胰 *I²*. The caul; soap.

肥 *Fei²*. Fat, plump; rich; fertile.

皂 *Tsao⁴*. Black; lictors, runners.

肥皂 A kind of coarse native soap.

泥 *Ni²*. Mud, mire; mortar; clods, earth; dirt.

切 *Ch'ie¹*. To cut, to slice. Also *ch'ie⁴*.

課 七 十 二 第

LESSON XXVII.

布、把裏老切麟灰泥。件在好這¹
 太斧的爺。一○塊你⁸東在體用使把²
 枊子、水、○二¹¹西這不能○這³
 薄了。已可以倒太給事營很塊鐵⁵
 了。○壞了。○那把經走○外¹⁰合這⁷好作⁴
 ○這¹⁵把○你¹⁴把經走了。○頭來⁹請⁹不⁶
 把○你¹⁴把經走了。○頭來⁹請⁹不⁶
 椅子○你¹⁴把經走了。○頭來⁹請⁹不⁶
 底○你¹⁴把經走了。○頭來⁹請⁹不⁶
 下○你¹⁴把經走了。○頭來⁹請⁹不⁶
 有○你¹⁴把經走了。○頭來⁹請⁹不⁶
 灰土、我¹³這¹²瓶三位你下那⁶實

- 1 This awl has no point.
- 2 That pair of scissors is not usable.
- 3 This piece of iron is too long.
- 4 This fur coat is very genteel.
- 5 This piece of land would just suit for a vegetable garden.
- 6 That article can not be very expensive.
- 7 This piece of soap does not take out the dirt.
- 8 This business of yours is not according to reason.
- 9 Please cut me a piece of watermelon.
- 10 Three officers have arrived without.
- 11 The two ladies have already gone.
- 12 The water in this bottle you may pour into that pitcher.
- 13 This ax of mine is already spoiled.
- 14 That piece of foreign [cotton] cloth which you bought is too thin.

瓜 *Kwa*¹..... Melons, cucumbers, gourds, etc.
 西 瓜 *Hsi*¹ *kwa*¹..... A watermelon.
 瓶 *P'ing*²..... A pitcher, a jug, a bottle.
 倒 *Tao*⁴. To invert; to pour out; to empty, to vacate; on the contrary, but, still, then:—Les. 112. See *tao*⁸.
 斧 *Fu*⁸..... An ax, a hatchet, a cleaver.
 洋 布 *Yang*² *pu*⁴. Foreign cotton cloth, long cloth.
 枊 *Hsiao*¹..... Hollow; thin.
 薄 *Po*², *Pou*². Thin, subtle; a thin leaf; poor, mean, stingy. Also *po*⁴.
 枊 薄. Thin; thinness; thickness.
 响 午 *Shang*⁸ *wu*⁸..... Midday, noon.
 中 時 *Chung*¹ *shí*²..... The same.
 中 上 *Chung*¹ *shang*⁴..... The same.
 數 *Shu*⁸. To enumerate, to count; to censure. Also *shu*⁴ and *so*², *so*⁴.
 臭 *Ch'ou*⁴, *Hsiu*⁴. An offensive smell, stench; putrid, tainted; disreputable.
 終 *Chung*¹. The end, finis; all; the utmost; dead; to die:—Les. 127.
 終 身 *Chung*¹ *shén*¹..... Life-time, life.
 談 *T'an*². To talk about, to discuss; to chat; conversation; chit-chat.

閒 談 *Hsien*⁸ *t'an*². To talk familiarly, to chat; to gossip.
 鋤 *Cha*²..... A hinged shear or cutter.
 鋤 刀 *Cha*² *tao*¹..... A straw cutter.
 竈 *Tsao*⁴..... A furnace, a kitchen range.
 竈 臺 *Tsao*⁴ *t'ai*²..... A kitchen range.
 鍋 臺 *Kwo*¹ *t'ai*²..... The same.
 菜 刀 *Ts'ai*⁴ *tao*¹. A cleaver, a meat chopper.
 鏟 *Ch'an*⁸. A shovel, a scoop, a scraper; to level off, to scrape.
 勺 *Shao*³, *Shwo*². To ladle out; a ladle; a spoon; a spoonful.
 炊 *Ch'ui*¹..... To cook; a small broom.
 刷 *Shwa*¹..... A brush; to brush; to scrub.
 炊 箒 *Oh'ui*¹ *chou*⁸. A small broom or whisk used to wash dishes.
 刷 箒 *Shwa*¹ *chou*⁸..... The same.
 鍤 *Oh'a*¹..... A fork; a large pin.
 匙 *Oh'i*². A spoon; a key,—in which sense it is in Peking read *shí*⁴.
 羹 *Kéng*¹..... Soup, porridge; a spoon.
 調 羹 *T'iao*² *kéng*¹. A spoon,—usually made of wood or porcelain.

不知穀不穀。六把刀子、六把錘子、還有十二把調羹子、一把鏟子、一把勺子、一把刷、一把炒帚。○我有
有現成的沒有。○竈臺上、有一把菜刀、
在屋裏閒談。○我要買一把鋤刀、不知
爲一件小事打架。○我纔見二位先生、
話不妨說。○我們是一塊土的人、不可
經臭了。○這是你終身的一件大事、有
銀子是八件、你數了沒有。○那塊肉已
可以拿一把笤帚來掃去。○
15 There is dust under this chair; bring a broom and sweep it away.

16 Of the silver bought at noon there were eight pieces. Did you count them?
17 That piece of meat is already tainted.
18 This is the great affair of your life; if you have any thing to say, do not hesitate to speak.
19 We are natives of the same place, and must not fight about a small matter.
20 I just now saw the two gentlemen in the room chatting.
21 I want to buy a straw knife: I wonder if they are to be had ready-made.
22 On the cooking range are a meat chopper, a scraper, a dipper, and a whisk.
23 I have six knives and six forks, and also twelve spoons: I wonder if they are enough.

NOTES.

7 下 is here used as a verb, meaning to remove, or take out, the dirt. Foreign soap is called 胰子 in the North, and in the South, 肥皂, or 胰子肥皂.

15 椅子底下 means beneath the chair, not the under side, or part, of the chair, which would be 椅子下邊.

16 晌午 is the form used in the North, while 中時 and 中上 are used in the South.

18 Said by an officer to a girl brought before him in a matter concerning her marriage engagement.

23 Foreign spoons are called 匙子 in some places; in other places they are called 羹匙, *soup spoons*, or 調羹 *stirrers*; and in others, 勺子, *dippers*. The Chinese use spoons much less than we do, and they are generally made either of China-ware or of wood.

LESSON XXVIII.

THE INSTRUMENTAL VERBS 把 AND 將.

把 is used instrumentally of anything that can be taken, or held, in the hand, and often, by accommodation, of other things. Whether used as a classifier or as an instrumental verb is known by the connection.

將 as an instrumental verb is very similar in meaning to 把, but is a little more bookish, and is often used of affairs, and of mental operations.

These words may sometimes be rendered by *take*, but are generally best untranslated.

VOCABULARY.

裕 *Chiu*³. Lined, double.
另 *Ling*⁴. Separate; additional; another; besides, furthermore.
托 *T'oi*¹. To drag; to take by the hand; to implicate; to protract.
襟 *Chin*¹. The lapel of a coat; a collar.
托襟. The round collar on a woman's dress.

托領 *T'oi*¹ *Ling*³. The same. (N.).
護領 *Hu*⁴ *ling*³. The same. (S.).
掌 *Chang*³. The palm of the hand; a hoof; to grasp; to rule, to control.
巴掌 *Pa*⁴ *chang*³. The palm of the hand; a slap, a box.
帳 *Chang*⁴. A curtain, a screen; a plan.

課 八 十 二 第

LESSON XXVIII.

纔 ○ 請 要 子 生 護 托 托 櫃 在 孩
 放 可¹¹ 來。張 聲 掛 氣 讓 領 襟 領。裏。 在 皮 子
 鎗 以 把 揚 張。 上。 把 我 可⁵ 我⁴ 櫃 裏。 在 皮 箱 裏。 把
 把 把¹⁰ 把⁹ 我⁸ 打 以 把 我 把 火 弄
 孩 這 張⁹ 我⁸ 了 以 把 這 把 火 弄
 子 些 先 將 了 兩 火 這 這 燭 滅
 嚇 混 生 這 兩 巴 爐 件 件 了。
 哭 水 家 事 掌。 放 掛 子。 把 這 些 傢 伙 拿 去。 把
 了。 在 抽 屈 裏 頭。 倒 在 街 上。 他¹³ 不 肯 把
 ○ 他¹³ 裏 頭。 ○ 你¹² 上。 不 把 帳 他⁶ 新
 ○ 你¹² 上。 不 把 帳 他⁶ 新

- 1 The child has poked out the fire.
- 2 Take my double coat and put it in the leather trunk.
- 3 Take away these dishes and put them in the cupboard.
- 4 I intend to put a new collar on this gown.
- 5 You can set the stove outside.
- 6 He got angry and struck me two blows with the palm of his hand.
- 7 Go and hang up the curtains.
- 8 I will tell you this affair, but you must not spread it abroad.
- 9 Mr. Chang has gone home. Do you go and ask him to come.
- 10 Take away this dirty water and pour it out on the street.
- 11 You can (or, may) put the key in the drawer.
- 12 Your shooting off that gun just now frightened the baby till it cried.

掛 *Kwa⁴*. To hang up, to suspend; to dwell upon, to be anxious about. See *kwa¹*.
 揚 *Yang²*. To spread out; to publish; to scatter; to raise or lift up.
 聲 張 *Shéng¹ chang¹*. To noise abroad, to publish.
 張 揚 *Chang¹ yang²*. The same.
 混 *Hun²*. Turbid, muddy; dirty. Also *hún⁴*.
 鎗 *Yao⁴, yoa⁴, yüe⁴*. A bolt, a key.
 鑰 匙 *Yao⁴ shi²*. A key.
 鎗 *Ch'iang¹*. A gun, a pistol; a spear.
 嚇 *Hoi⁴, Hsiu⁴*. To threaten, to intimidate; to scare, to frighten.
 武 *Wu⁸*. Military, martial; majestic, stern.
 武 藝 *Wu³ i⁴*. Military tactics; skill,—of any kind.
 拳 *Ch'üan²*. The fist; to grasp in the hand.
 踢 *Ti¹*. To tread on; to kick.
 蹬 *Téng⁴*. To hurry; to step, to tread.
 踢 蹬. To spoil, to ruin; to squander.
 腹 *Fu²*. The belly, the abdomen; the seat of the mind; intimate, dear.
 心 腹 *Hsin¹ fu²*. In the heart; intimate, confidential.
 驢 *Lü²*. An ass, a donkey.

趙 *Chao⁴*. A long time; a surname.
 驕 傲 *Chiao¹*. Proud, haughty; to be proud of.
 傲 傲 *Ao⁴*. Proud, uncivil; to treat rudely.
 咧 咧 *Pa⁴*. The cry of a cockatoo.
 咧 哥 *Pa⁴ ko¹*. The cockatoo.
 賭 業 *Tu⁸*. To wager, to bet; to gamble.
 家 業 *Yie⁴*. Calling, profession, trade; estate, patrimony. In books,—a sign of the past.
 家 業 *Chia¹ yie⁴*. Family inheritance, estate.
 牢 搖 *Lao²*. A corral; a jail; firm, strong.
 搖 搖 *Yao²*. To move to and fro; to shake; to ring,—as a bell; tossed, disturbed.
 搖 椅 *Yao² i⁸*. A rocking chair.
 舅 舅 *Chiu⁴*. A maternal uncle.
 舅 舅. A maternal uncle. See Les. 21, Note (16).
 一 下 *I¹ hsiu⁴*. One time, one stroke, once.
 東 洋 車 *Tung¹ yang² che¹*. A jinricksha.
 馬 褂 *Ma⁸ kwa⁴*. A short outside coat.
 鈕 鈕 *Niu⁸*. A knob; a button; a pivot.
 鈕 襟 *P'an⁴*. A loop; a belt, a band.
 鈕 釦. A button loop.
 釦 釦 *K'ou⁴*. A button; a clasp; to button.
 釦 門 *K'ou⁴ mén²*. A button loop, a button hole.

馬褂子上的鈕兒都掙壞了。
 你的舅舅。○在街上，有個東洋車碰我一下，把
 椅子放在桌子旁邊。○你快去將這件事，告訴
 ○你該將這個意思牢記在心。○把那把大搖
 我拿來。○丁少爺常常賭錢，把家業糟蹋淨了。
 傲，把人看不在眼裏。○你把那個喇子，給
 東街，把王老三的小驢兒借來。○趙二爺太驕
 剪子弄壞了。○不要將心腹話告訴人。○你那把
 我的母親死去，把我撇了。○李子把我的那把
 自己的武藝教給人。○拳一脚，將人打死。○

- 13 He is not willing to teach his skill to others.
- 14 Between fist and foot he killed the man.
- 15 My mother died and left me.
- 16 Li-tsī ruined that pair of shears of mine.
- 17 Do not tell to others what is told you in confidence.
- 18 Do you go over to the East Street and borrow Wang the Third's donkey.
- 19 Mr. Chao the Second is too proud: he can not see other people.
- 20 Bring here that cockatoo's cage for me.
- 21 Mr. Ting's son is all the time gambling, and has wasted all his estate.
- 22 You ought to keep this thought always in mind.
- 23 Put that large rocking chair beside the table.
- 24 Go quickly and tell your (maternal) uncle of this affair.
- 25 A jinricksha ran against me on the street, and tore out the button-holes (loops) on my coat.

NOTES.

- 4 Lit., I intend to take this piece of gown, and besides [the original one] exchange a new collar.
- 6 The Chinese is similar in structure to the vulgar English,—"He got angry and took and struck me."
- 8 Or, If I tell you this affair, you must not spread it abroad.
- 10 混水 is not used in the South. It means muddy rather than dirty water.
- 14 一拳一脚 is spirited and very expressive. It does not necessarily mean, one stroke and one kick, but a few strokes and kicks.

- 16 李子 is a girl's name. It is common to name girls for fruits and flowers.
- 17 心腹話, words from the heart and belly; i.e., confidential secrets. The Chinese regard not only the heart, but also the belly, as the seat of knowledge.
- 18 When 小 precedes 驢, an 兒 is always used after it, thus showing the diminutive force of 兒.
- 19 把人看不在眼裡 Lit., takes men and sees them not in his eyes; i.e., disregards them.

LESSON XXIX.

THE AUXILIARY VERB 起.

起 is joined as an auxiliary to verbs indicating motion upwards, and, by accommodation, to many others. It sometimes has an inceptive force, and sometimes denotes progressive action, but is more

frequently used simply to express the completion of the action. It is generally followed by 來. For full list of verbs commonly followed by 起, see Supplement.

VOCABULARY.

廳 Ting¹. A hall, a parlor; a court room.
 廳房 Ting¹ fang². The central and main building in a compound; a reception room or hall.

羊 Yang². A sheep, a goat.
 腿 T⁴ui³. The leg, the thigh.
 弔 Tiao⁴. To condole, to pity; to suspend, to hang up,—as by a cord.

課 九 十 二 第

LESSON XXIX.

些 的 抱 些 先 喝 窗 把 明 趙
 方 筆 起 散 生 的 戶 羊 天 老
 甄 掉 他 錢 的 請 支 腿 早 爺
 該 在 來 給 書 你 撐 起 一 的
 按 地 來 我 架 把 來 起 點 磨
 規 下 來 我 子 這 來 起 一 房
 矩 請 把 穿 些 這 來 起 點 屋
 稜 你 這 起 來 個 藥 我 有 一 蓋
 起 來 給 個 賬 給 我 算 起 來 起
 來 我 孩 子 了 沒 有 起 來 請
 ○ 撿 掛 起 來 了 沒 有 起 來 請
 大 起 來 了 沒 有 起 來 起 來 請
 掛 起 來 了 沒 有 起 來 起 來 請
 子 起 來 了 沒 有 起 來 起 來 請
 還 這 我 以 這 傳 來 把 起 來 請

- 1 Mr. Chao has not yet finished building his main hall.
- 2 Will you please get up a little earlier to-morrow: I have some business to entrust to you.
- 3 Hang up that leg of mutton.
- 4 It is too warm in the room: you may raise the window.
- 5 This medicine is to be taken mixed with water.
- 6 Please reckon up this account for me.
- 7 Is Mr. Fu's book-case finished?
- 8 String up these loose cash for me.
- 9 The baby has wakened. You may take him up.
- 10 Hang up this picture.
- 11 My pen has fallen on the floor: please pick it up for me.
- 12 These square bricks ought to be piled up in order.
- 13 The large coat is not yet hemmed.
- 14 The officer gave the order, and they were put in confinement.

戶 *Hu⁴*. A door of one leaf; an opening; an individual; a household.
 窗戶 *Ch'uang¹ hu⁴*. A window.
 撐 *Ch'êng¹*. To prop; to fasten open; to pole, — as a boat.
 喝 *Hô¹*. To drink, to sip; a gurgling sound. Also *hō⁴*.
 散 *San³*. To fall apart or into disorder; scattered; a medicinal powder; odds and ends. See *san⁴*.
 醒 *Hsing³*. To awake; to rouse up; to startle.
 抱 *Pao⁴*. To infold; to hold in the arms; to compress; to cherish; to hatch.
 掉 *Tiao⁴*. To shake; to fall into or down, to slip or fall off:—Les. 102.
 撿 *Chien³*. To gather up; to collate, to sort.
 甄 *Chuan¹*. A brick.
 方甄 *Fang¹ chuan¹*. A square brick or tile for paving.
 稜 *Tod⁴*. A stack of grain; to pile up.
 吩 *Fên¹*. To order, to direct.
 咐 *Fu⁴*. To enjoin.
 吩咐 *Fên¹ fu⁴*. To command, to order; to charge.
 押 *Ya¹*. To escort; to arrest; to guard; to

suppress; to pawn,—in an unlicensed pawn shop. Also *ya²*.
 折 *Chê¹, Shê²*. To break in two; to annul; to stop; to decide, to discriminate; to bend; to abate, to discount.
 証 *Chêng⁴*. To testify, to prove; to remonstrate with.
 折証 *Chêng⁴*. To dispute, to wrangle.
 競爭 *Ching⁴*. To strive; to wrangle, to quarrel.
 爭競 *Chêng¹ ching⁴*. To dispute, to contend, to wrangle.
 字紙 *Tsi⁴ chî³*. Paper with characters on it, either written or printed.
 拉 *La¹*. To pull, to drag, to tug; to take by the hand; to buy on credit.
 扶 *Fu²*. To help, to assist, to uphold; to defend; to lean upon.
 站 *Chan⁴*. To stand up; to stand still, to stop; a day's travel.
 捲 *Chüan³*. To roll up; to curl; to seize.
 疊 *Tie²*. To fold; to reiterate.
 包 *Pao¹*. To wrap up; to contain; to undertake; to warrant; to plate; a bundle.
 袱 *Fu²*. A square cloth.
 包袱 *Fu²*. A square cloth for tying up bundles.

沒幣起來。押起來了。○七十五個。○起一件事來。○會兒就罵起來了。○紙都拾起來。○時候就下起雨來了。○手扶他起來。○這些衣裳該捲的捲起來。該疊的疊起來。後來用包袱包起來。

- 15 These remnants of cash amount in all to seventy-five.
- 16 Your speaking of this reminds me of a certain affair.
- 17 They two, having disputed a while, began to swear at each other.
- 18 I had gone but a little while when it began to rain.
- 19 Gather up all that paper with characters on it.
- 20 Jesus took the child by the hand and assisted her to rise, and she stood up.
- 21 Roll up such of these clothes as should be rolled up, and fold such as should be folded, and then tie them up in a bundle (large handkerchief).

NOTES.

- 1 蓋起來. If the emphasis be thrown on 蓋, the meaning is simply, *built*; if on 起來, the meaning is, *finished building*. When 起 is used alone, it necessarily takes the emphasis, and the meaning is, *finished building*.
- 4 支 is used in the North, 撐 in the South. The former means to *hoist*, the latter more properly means to *prop*.
- 8 穿. Some would write 串, as the more proper character, though its tone is not correct. If used, it should be read *ch'uan*¹.
- 10 Foreign pictures in frames are generally classified by 個, rather than by 張:—Les. 42.

- 14 一聲. One noise; that is, he gave one short peremptory order.
- 16 就 here means *at once*, as it often does:—Les 44.
- 18 起來 Seems inappropriate here. It is used inceptively.
- 19 It is considered a sin and a shame to defile paper with characters on it, and a meritorious thing to gather it up carefully and burn it, thus preventing its being trodden under foot, or defiled, by others. Written characters, being handed down from the sages of antiquity, are regarded as sacred, and hence to defile them is a species of sacrilege.
- 21 The form of expression in this sentence is very common in Chinese.

LESSON XXX.

上 AND 下 AS AUXILIARY VERBS.

上 is added as an auxiliary to verbs expressing motion upwards, and 下 to verbs expressing motion downwards. They are not confined, however, to verbs of motion, but are used freely with

many others. Besides the idea of motion, they sometimes express the success, or practicability, of the action.
To both of them 來 and 去 are frequently added.

VOCABULARY.

- 套 *T'ao*⁴. To go over and encase; a wrapper, a case; a snare, a trap; tedious, conventional. A classifier:—Les. 42.
- 筆帽 *Pi*³ *mac*⁴. A brass cap to protect the point of a Chinese pen.
- 筆套 *Pi*³ *t'ao*⁴. The same.
- 剝 *Tot*⁴. To chop, to mince; to cut off.
- 節 *Chie*². A limit of time, a festival; a verse,

- a section; temperance, moderation; to regulate. A classifier:—Les 147. Also *chie*³.
- 抄 *Ch'ao*¹. To hunt up; to write out, to transcribe; to confiscate.
- 盤 *P'an*². A platter, a plate; a market; an affair; to coil, to wind.
- 牛 *Niu*². A cow, an ox; kine.
- 構 *Kou*⁴. To drag, to pull; to implicate; to reach up to.

課 十 三 第

LESSON XXX.

筆硯請你給我送上來。○這¹⁴是天上掉下
 的工夫，纔求下來了。○在¹³下邊桌子上有
 水缸裏有一把匙¹¹子，你去撈上來。○半¹²天
 把椅子搬上去。○樓⁹上沒有座位，你把這兩
 給我構下來。○樓⁹上沒有座位，你把這兩
 可以⁷把這個盤子拿下去。○把⁸那塊牛肉
 把骨頭剝下來。○把⁶這一節書抄下來。○
 孩子⁴要上炕，你可以把他拉上來。○拿⁵刀
 寫上。○不要³乾了筆，該把筆套帽兒套上。○
 把¹你的鞋提上。○這²兩個字沒寫，請先生

- 1 Pull up your shoes.
- 2 These two characters have not been written. Please write them.
- 3 You should put the cap on the pen, and not allow it to get dry.
- 4 The child wants to get on the k'ang. Pull him up.
- 5 Take a chopper and chop off the bone.
- 6 Write out this verse.
- 7 You may take away this plate.
- 8 Take down that piece of beef for me.
- 9 There are no seats upstairs. Take up these two chairs.
- 10 I am come down by appointment of His Excellency.
- 11 There is a spoon (dipper) in the water kang. Do you go and rake it out.
- 12 It was half a day before my entreaties prevailed.
- 13 There are writing materials on the table below. Please bring them up for me.

派 *P'ai⁴*. A branch, a tribe; to appoint, to send; to distribute to each.

缸 *Kang¹*. A large jar for water, etc.

撈 *Luo^{1,3}*. To hook or haul out of the water, to dredge, to grapple for.

求 *Ch'iu²*. To ask, to beg; to pray; to search for, to aim at.

下邊 *Hsia⁴ pien¹*. Below; down stairs; the apartments of inferiors:—see Note (24), Les. 33.

硯 *Yen⁴*. An inkstone.

筆硯 *Pi³ yen⁴*. Pen and ink, writing materials,—pen, ink, paper, etc.

富 *Fu⁴*. Rich, affluent; abundant.

富貴 *Fu⁴ kwei⁴*. Riches and honor; wealth, opulence.

壓 *Ya⁴*. To bring into subjection; to conquer, to repress; to intimidate. Also *ya¹*.

玩 *Wan²*. To play or toy with; to ramble; to dawdle; to practice.

耍 *Shwa²*. To play with, to trifle; to make game of; to fence; to work at a trade.

玩耍 *To play, to amuse one's self; to dally with.*

玩玩. To play, to amuse one's self:—Les. 33.

腦 *Nao³*. The brain; gum camphor.

袋 *Tai⁴*. A bag; a pocket; a purse.

腦袋. The head; the wits; the mind.

輩 *Pei⁴*. A generation; a class, a sort.

老輩 *Lao³ pei⁴*. Grandfather; ancestors.

祖 *Tsu³*. Grandfather; ancestors, forefathers.

祖上 *Tsu³ shang⁴*. Ancestors.

降 *Chiang⁴*. To descend; to send down; to fall; to reduce in rank. Also *hsiang²*.

天使 *T'ien¹ shi²*. A heavenly messenger, an angel.

玻 *Po¹*. A transparent glaze.

璃 *Li²*. A vitreous substance like glass.

玻璃. Glass.

鴉 *Ya¹*. A raven, a crow.

鵲 *Ch'iao³, Ch'iao⁴*. The magpie, jackdaw and jay.

鴉鵲. The magpie.

喜鵲 *Hsi³ ch'iao³*. The magpie.

落 *Lao⁴*. To alight,—as a bird; to fall,—as a price; to put on account. See *lao⁴*.

課 一 十 三 第

LESSON XXXI.

歲上下 中國 掉不 的說 下。穿 這¹
 的上去。 國人 在水 上頂 說不上 不。個
 孩。○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表
 子。○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表
 自。○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表
 己。○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表
 還。○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表
 不。○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表
 會。○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表
 下。○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表
 來。○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表
 嗎。○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表
 ○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表
 我¹⁵。○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表
 不。○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表
 應。○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表
 他。○這¹³ 人做 裏○現⁹ 硬。挖 不上。表

- 1 I can not afford to buy this watch.
- 2 The shoes you bought for me are too small: I can not get them on.
- 3 We must go to-day. You can not detain us if you would.
- 4 I can not copy it in the space of one day.
- 5 His tongue is thick: I fear he will not be able to say it.
- 6 I can not carry this bucket of water.
- 7 The ground is frozen too hard: I fear you can not excavate it.
- 8 If you go with him, it is my opinion you will not be able to keep up.
- 9 If you depend on preparing this food after it is ordered, you will certainly not be able to do it in time.
- 10 My pocket knife has fallen into the water, and I can not get it out.
- 11 Watches come from abroad. The Chinese can not make them.
- 12 A fat man can not put on a lean man's trousers.
- 13 The whites of these eggs will not beat into a froth.
- 14 Is a boy four or five years old not able to get down himself?

瘦 *Shou⁴, Sou⁴..... Lean, thin, poor.*
 褲 *K'u⁴..... Trousers, pantaloons.*
 蛋 *Tan⁴..... An egg; a testicle.*
 潑 *P'od⁴. To scatter, to splash; to drip; froth; to waste.*
 沫 *Mo⁴..... Froth, foam; bubbles.*
 英 *Ying¹..... Flourishing; excellent; brave.*
 國 *Ying¹ kwod²..... Great Britain.*
 密 *Mi⁴. Thick, dense, close; fine, small; hidden; intimate; secret.*
 細 *Hsi⁴ mi⁴..... Fine; delicate; close.*
 坑 *K'eng¹. A pit, a hollow; a quarry; a mine; to entrap; to wrong.*
 頭 *Tou² shang²..... The forenoon.*
 上 *Shang⁴ pan⁴ t'ien¹..... The same.*
 填 *T'ien². To fill up; to make up a deficiency; to add on.*
 丸 *Wan²..... A pill; a small ball; a bullet.*
 藥 *Wan² yao⁴..... Pills.*
 咽 *Yen⁴..... To swallow, to gulp. Also yen¹.*

喘 *Ch'wan². To breathe; to breathe hard, to pant.*
 歎 *T'an⁴..... To sigh, to moan. To breathe. (s.)*
 元 *Yüan²..... The first, the original.*
 鏹 *K'oa⁴. A small ingot of silver or gold; paper money.*
 元鏹 *A small shoe of silver of about ten taels.*
 銀鏹 *Yin² k'oa⁴..... The same.*
 色 *Se⁴, Shê⁴, Shai². Color, hue; manner; expression of face; kind; quality; lust, vengery.*
 成色 *Ch'eng² se⁴..... Quality, touch.*
 足 *Tsu², Chü². The foot; enough, sufficient; to satisfy; entirely, in full.*
 一身 *I¹ shên¹..... The whole body.*
 腰 *Yao¹. The loins; the small of the back; the kidneys; the waist; the middle.*
 伸 *Shên¹. To stretch; to straighten; to explain; to right, to redress.*
 膀 *Pang²..... The upper arm, the humerus.*

實 在 覺 得 下 不 去 。 英 國 話 難 學 ， 怕 你
 學 不 上 來 。 我 的 眼 已 經 花 了 ， 細 密 針
 線 做 不 上 來 。 這 個 坑 一 上 半 頭 响 還 填
 不 起 來 嗎 ？ 這 九 藥 你 若 咽 不 下 去 ， 可
 以 用 水 送 下 去 。 我 有 個 心 疼 的 病 ， 到
 疼 起 來 ， 一 點 氣 也 歎 不 上 來 。 有 現 成
 的 樣 子 ， 還 做 不 上 來 嗎 ？ 這 三 個 元 銀 鏢 成
 色 不 足 ， 換 不 上 行 市 。 張 老 三 的 奶 婆
 一 身 病 ， 腿 站 不 起 來 ， 腰 不 起 來 ， 頭 擡
 不 起 來 ， 膀 子 也 揚 不 起 來 。

- 15 I felt that I could not but promise him.
- 16 English is hard to learn. I fear you will not be able to learn it.
- 17 My eyes have already failed, so that I can not do fine sewing.
- 18 Can you not fill up this pit in a whole forenoon?
- 19 If you can not swallow these pills, use some water to wash them down.
- 20 I am subject to pain in my stomach; and when the pain comes on, I can not get my breath at all.
- 21 Can you not make it, even when you have a ready-made pattern?
- 22 The quality of this ingot is below par. It will not exchange for market price.
- 23 Chang the Third's wife is diseased all over. She can not stand on her legs, nor straighten her back, nor hold up her head, nor lift up her arms.

NOTES.

● 現吃現做 means, to prepare food after it is ordered, or after the guest arrives and is ready to eat. 現 is constantly so used of anything done on, or for, the occasion, excluding previous preparation.

11 In this sentence 做不上來 indicates want of skill, and in the 9th, 做不下來 indicates want of time; but this distinction between 上 and 下 is merely accidental.

12 Some teachers insist on using 上, and others on using 下. In the former case, the conception is of pulling the trousers on to the legs, and in the latter, of putting the legs into the trousers.

13 沫 is the better and more widely used word for froth. The two terms for the white of an egg are both widely used.

14 下不來 is rejected by Southern teachers; for what reason is not apparent.

15 下不去 is similar in form (but not in elegance) to the slang phrase, "it won't go down."

20 心疼的病 seems to say that the pain is in the heart, but heart is here put for the stomach.

22 元鏢 is so called because it is the same shape as the 元寶, or large standard ingot of fifty taels.

LESSON XXXII.

DEFINITE LOCATIVES.

這 and 那 are joined with the words 頭, 面, 邊 and 處 to express this and that end, face, side or place. These forms are much more used in Chinese than are the corresponding forms in English. They may often be translated simply by here and there.

這頭 This end. } Applied to things having length; also to parties opposed to each other.
 那頭 That end. }

這面 This face. } Applied to thin articles with faces; also to opposing parties.
 那面 That face. }

這邊 This side or edge. } Applied to the borders, or margins, of things, and to places.
 那邊 That side or edge. }

這處 This place, or neighborhood. } Slightly bookish.
 那處 That place, or neighborhood. }

VOCABULARY.

窄 Tse³, Chai³. Narrow; straightened; narrow-minded, mean.

朝 Ch'ao². The imperial court; the sovereign; a dynasty; towards, facing. See chao¹.

窩 Wa¹. A low place; hollow, concave. Often written 凹.

河 H'ho², H'e². A river; a canal; a creek.
 兵 Ping¹. A soldier, troops, an army.

課 二 十 三 第

LESSON XXXII.

沒 邊 面 邊 這⁹ 兵。 面 細。 榜 薄。 這¹
 有。 兒 向 兒 面 〇 平。 〇 〇 邊 寬、
 〇 理 陽、 黑。 兒 我⁸ 那 那 這⁵ 這³
 人¹⁵ 偏。 那 〇 那 還 那 邊 寬、
 說 〇 〇 面 那 光 邊 實 在 〇 河⁷ 上、 那 頭 大、
 和 〇 〇 背 地 處¹¹ 滑 一 〇 〇 這²
 事、 〇 〇 〇 方 的 點 些。 〇 〇 這⁴
 不 〇 〇 這¹³ 人 不 好 交。 〇 〇 這¹⁰
 好 〇 〇 這¹³ 邊 兒 理 正、 那 〇 〇 這¹² 那
 護 〇 〇 這¹³ 邊 兒 理 正、 那 〇 〇 這¹² 那
 着 〇 〇 這¹³ 邊 兒 理 正、 那 〇 〇 這¹² 那
 這 〇 〇 這¹³ 邊 兒 理 正、 那 〇 〇 這¹² 那
 頭 〇 〇 這¹³ 邊 兒 理 正、 那 〇 〇 這¹² 那
 說 〇 〇 這¹³ 邊 兒 理 正、 那 〇 〇 這¹² 那

- 1 This side is wide, and that side is narrow.
- 2 This side is thick, and that side thin.
- 3 This end is large, and that end small.
- 4 This end is coarse, and that end fine.
- 5 This is to be the upper side, and that the lower side.
- 6 This side is level; that side is concave.
- 7 On this side of the river there were robbers; on that side, soldiers.
- 8 There is a deal of confusion over where I am: there are idlers around all the time.
- 9 This side is somewhat smoother.
- 10 Here it is light, and there, dark.
- 11 The people there are not fit to associate with. [shaded.
- 12 This side faces the sun; that side is
- 13 On this side the argument is fair; on that side it is forced.
- 14 The table has a drawer on this side; on that side it has none.

亂 Lan⁴, Luan⁴. Disorder; confusion; anarchy; tangled.
 雜 Cha², Tsa². Mixed; Confused; heterogeneous.
 亂 雜. Confused; disorderly; promiscuous.
 斷 Twan⁴. To break or snap in two; to put a stop to; to discontinue; to decide; certainly, positively:—Les. 116.
 光 Kiang¹. Light, brilliance; honor, glory; naked; smooth; only, solely; constantly:—Les. 49.
 滑 Hua². Smooth; slippery; polished; knavish, cunning; to slip and fall.
 光滑. Smooth; polished; shining.
 向 Hsiang⁴. Towards, facing; an intention; hitherto, heretofore; the points of the compass:—Les. 119.
 陰 Yin¹. A shadow, shady; dark; hades; the inferior of the dual powers of nature; female; secret, private.
 偏 P'ien¹. Deflected; excessive; partial; bent on, determined:—Les. 112.
 說 和 Shuo¹ ho². To make up a quarrel; to act as mediator.
 婿 Hsü⁴. A son-in-law.
 女婿 Nu³ hsü⁴. A son-in-law.

姑 爺 Ku¹ yie². Son-in-law,—a title given to a man by the servants and younger members of his wife's family.
 怪 Kwai⁴. Strange, monstrous; supernatural; a ghoul; to take offense at, to be surprised; very, unusually.
 冰 Ping¹. Ice; clear; crystallized.
 鐵 匠 T'ie³ chiang⁴. A blacksmith.
 濟 Chi³. To aid, to relieve; to effect, to further; to stop; clever, excellent.
 不 濟 Pu⁴ chi⁴. Inferior, poor, scrubby.
 分 Fèn¹. To divide, to separate; to apportion; to share; to distinguish. See fèn⁴.
 分 明 Fèn¹ ming². Clearly, manifestly.
 翻 Fan¹. To flutter about; to turn over; to change; to reverse; fickle.
 騰 T'eng². To ascend; to run; to move.
 翻 騰. To turn over, to rummage, to overhaul. In this phrase 騰 is, in most places, read t'eng².
 陣 Chên⁴. To set in array, a rank; an army; a battle; a burst or time.—Les. 100.
 隔 Ko², Chie². A division; to separate, to put or keep asunder; to prevent.
 釘 Ting⁴. To nail; to fasten. See ting¹.
 擱 板 Ko¹ pan². A shelf; a mantel.
 透 T'ou⁴. To pass through; to comprehend; through; thoroughly:—Les. 102.

下邊等一等，我上去給你問問。
 頭、掃掃地、抹擦抹擦桌子，這是一套兒的事情。○你²⁴在
 個樣子，真是揚揚得意。○早²³晨起來，洗洗臉，梳梳
 散散心。○他²¹到如今，還是戀戀不捨的。○看²²他
 灑，再加烙鐵²⁰燙烙。○這²⁰樣好天，你該出去逛逛，
 生氣太大，可以等他消消氣再說。○先¹⁹用水灑一
 的小刀借給我¹⁵用使¹⁵用使¹⁵。○現在他¹⁸
 天我要去見見他，問問他爲甚麼怪着我。○把¹⁷你
 臭了不是。○做¹⁵的時候，你沒嘗嘗鹹不鹹嗎。○今¹⁶
 拿¹³秤來稱一稱，看看穀數不穀。○你¹⁴不信，聞聞，是

13 Bring the steelyards and weigh it, and see if it is full weight.
 14 If you don't believe it is spoiled, smell it.
 15 When you made it, did you not taste whether it was salt or not?
 16 I intend to go to see him to-day and ask him why he is offended at me.
 17 Lend me (the use of) your knife to trim my finger nails.
 18 He is too angry just now: wait till his passion cools and we will see about it.
 19 First sprinkle with water, and then iron with a flat iron.
 20 In such pleasant weather as this, you ought to go out for exercise and recreation.
 21 Even to this time she can not give him up.
 22 Judging from his appearance he is quite elated.
 23 When you get up in the morning, the first things in order are, to wash your face, and comb your hair, and sweep the floor, and dust the table.
 24 Wait in the rear, till I go in and inquire.

NOTES.

1 上 is the more general word for winding a clock or watch. In Nanking 開 is used.
 4 In the translation, 再 is rendered before. A more literal translation would preserve its normal meaning; thus, — *Would it not be well to sit down a little and then go?*
 7 Some teachers insist on 提, instead of 題, in this sentence. The usage varies. There is authority for using both characters in the sense of, to mention.
 16 怪 is translated in the passive, though the construction is not properly passive. 怪 means to take offence, and hence, to be offended.
 17 In Peking the tone of 指 changes, in 指甲, to chí.
 18 We speak of anger cooling; the Chinese, of its melting.
 19 烙鐵 is properly either a branding iron, or a small goose for pressing seams; but the term is often used of foreign flat-irons. The second character changes its sound in many places to t'í', in Peking to t'ie'. 加烙鐵, add an iron; i. e., proceed, in addition, to iron them.

21 戀戀不捨. A book phrase, in which the first character is repeated and the opposite idea added with a negative. Phrases made on this model are common.
 22 揚揚得意. A book phrase, meaning to toss the head with a self-satisfied air.
 23 抹 is not read ma by the dictionaries; but the syllable ma is everywhere used, both North and South, in the sense of to wipe off, the idea of cleansing or removing being prominent; and 抹 seems to be the best character to which to attach this meaning. The tone differs in different places. Read mo², it means to rub on, the idea of adding something being prominent.
 24 In a yamen, or wherever there are servants or employes, to go into the presence of the officer, or head of the house, is to 上去; and his office, or residence, is referred to as 上邊; hence, also, the houses, or apartments, allotted to inferiors, are spoken of as 下邊. In the rear, seems to be our best approximation. It should be noted, however, that with the Chinese the apartments of subordinates are frequently, perhaps generally, in the front.

LESSON XXXIV.

THE INTERROGATIVE PERSONAL PRONOUN.

誰, who, is applied only to persons. It is properly interrogative, but is also used to mean some one, somebody, and with a negative, nobody or anybody. It is not much used along the Yang tsi, 那個 being used instead. It is understood, however, and but a short distance northwards begins to be heard. Its use is one of the characteristics of a pure Mandarin.

課 四 十 三 第

LESSON XXXIV.

今天能下雨不能，那個誰知道。得是個誰的。那誰裏看門的。些玩藝兒。○有那子的。叫麻子。是那誰。是那個誰。在門外。○在客堂。○在外面。○有那個誰。1
 1 Who is outside the door?
 2 Whom have you come to look for?
 3 Who was it that told you this?
 4 Who is outside calling at the door?
 5 Who is in the parlor playing the organ?
 6 Who is that pock-pitted man? Ans. It is the man Chang.
 7 Who has paint and does not rub it on her face?
 8 Whose playthings are these?
 9 Who is at home keeping house?
 10 Who is in the kitchen? Ans. No one.
 11 Whose is this paper-weight? Ans. I do not know whose it is.
 12 Every man stands up for his own employer.
 13 Do you think it will rain to-day? Ans. That, who can tell?

1 Who is outside the door?
 2 Whom have you come to look for?
 3 Who was it that told you this?
 4 Who is outside calling at the door?
 5 Who is in the parlor playing the organ?
 6 Who is that pock-pitted man? Ans. It is the man Chang.
 7 Who has paint and does not rub it on her face?
 8 Whose playthings are these?
 9 Who is at home keeping house?
 10 Who is in the kitchen? Ans. No one.
 11 Whose is this paper-weight? Ans. I do not know whose it is.
 12 Every man stands up for his own employer.
 13 Do you think it will rain to-day? Ans. That, who can tell?

VOCABULARY.

誰 *Shui*²..... Who? whose? whom? See Sub.
 那 *Na*³.... Which? who? See *na*⁴, also Les. 45.
 拊 *Fu*³. To pat; to lay the hand on; to play a stringed or keyed instrument.
 琴 *Ch'in*². A lute or harpsichord; applied to the piano, organ, etc.
 麻 *Ma*²..... Hemp; pock-marks; lively, quick.
 姓 *Hsing*⁴..... A surname; a clan.
 粉 *Fen*³. Powder of any kind, meal; chalk, powdered soapstone; to whitewash.
 搽 *Cha*¹..... To rub on, to smear, to spread over.
 看門 *K'an¹ mén²*.... To keep the gate; to watch.
 玩藝 *Wan² i⁴*..... Toys, playthings.
 圈 *Ch'üan*¹. A circle; a small circle; to encircle; to draw small circles as marks of punctuation or of emphasis.
 仿圈 *Fang³ Ch'üan¹*. An oblong brass ring used as a paper weight.
 鎮 *Chén*⁴. To press down; to keep in subjection; to guard; a large mart.
 鎮紙 *Chén⁴ ch'ih³*..... Same as 仿圈. (s.)
 姜 *Chiang*¹..... A surname.
 玉 *Fü*¹.... A gem, a pearl; precious; perfect.
 山 *Shan*¹.... A mountain, a hill; wild, untamed.
 羞 *Hsiu*¹.... To be ashamed; to blush; confused.

恥 *Ch'ih*³..... Disgraced; ashamed; to blush.
 羞恥 *Shame*, mortification; modesty.
 嚷 *Jang*¹. To chatter, to clamor about; to let out a secret. Also *jang*³.
 吵 *Ch'ao*³..... To clamor, to wrangle.
 饑 *Chi*¹..... Dearth; famine; hunger; straits.
 饑荒 *Chi¹ hwang¹*. Famine, scarcity; want of money, indebtedness; a difficulty, a scrape, straits.
 外人 *Wai⁴ jèn²*..... An outsider, a stranger.
 牌 *P'ai*². A shield; a signboard; a tablet; a permit; a notice; cards, dominoes.
 村 *Ts'un*¹.... A hamlet, a village.
 鄉村 *Hsiang¹ ts'un¹*..... A country village.
 體貼 *T'i³ t'ie⁴*. To put one's self in the place of another, to feel for, to sympathize; to appreciate.
 滋 *Tsi*¹. Humid; juicy; sap; numerous; to fertilize; to moisten; to grow; to stir up.
 滋味 *Tsi¹ wei⁴*..... Taste, feeling, sensation.
 切 *Ch'ie*⁴. Urgent, earnest; important; all, the whole.—Les. 105. See *ch'ie*¹.
 囑 *Chu*³..... To order; to enjoin upon, to charge.
 囑咐 *Chu³ fu⁴*..... To ^{exchange} exchange, to enjoin. to tell.
 隨便 *Sui² pien⁴*. At pleasure, as you like, at your convenience.

時候切嚴的也○的裏嗎呢。怕。○姜¹⁴
 他們的不是不能同²⁰瓜兒苦。○那¹⁶你¹⁵玉山
 正在氣頭上那誰個不要告訴。○你²³是○誰²¹
 隨便任誰不是滋味。○這²²不個○誰²¹
 誰不肯讓誰。○這²⁴當我

- 14 Chiang Yü Shan has no shame at all. He fears nobody.
- 15 Listen to that incessant clamor on the street. Who is raising a row with whom?
- 16 Who does not know that man's bad reputation?
- 17 There was no other (outside) person here. If it was not you, who was it?
- 18 Who is willing to admit that his own melons are bitter?
- 19 Who can hang up a "no trouble notice" at his door?
- 20 All living in the same village; who does not know every body?
- 21 No one can appreciate the feelings of my heart.
- 22 This is not my fault. Ans. If it is not your fault, whose is it?
- 23 You should strictly charge him not to tell anybody.
- 24 Just now they are in the height of their anger, and no one will yield to any other.

NOTES.

3 這 here refers to the thing told, not to the person telling it. The 的 at the end may be omitted. Its use or omission does not alter the sense, but changes the grammatical structure. Without it the translation should be, *Who told you this?*

7 粉 here means the white lead with which Chinese women paint their faces. The idea of the proverb is that one who has merit naturally wishes to display it.

12 A neat way of expressing the idea, that it is to every one's interest to stand up for the man through whom he gets his livelihood.

14 管 is colloquial, and prevails in Central Mandarin. 任 is more elegant, but is slightly bookish in the South, where 隨便 is chiefly used (23).

15 The translation given supposes the sentence to end with 呢. If 嗎 be used, the translation of the last clause should be, *Is it some one having a row with some one?* The emphasis thrown on the 誰 and on the 饑克 should be quite different for the different interrogative endings.

18 誰 is here equivalent to 自己. Its use in this connection is less general than that of 自己.

19 This sentence grows out of the custom of hanging tablets over the door with complimentary or sentimental inscriptions. Few families are so happy that they can hang up an inscription setting forth that they are free from care.

22 This sentence affords a good exercise in emphasis.

24 氣頭上 Lit., *On the top of their anger.*

LESSON XXXV.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

都 All. Its sense is comprehensive. When referring to two things previously spoken of, it is to be rendered *both*; and when used, as it frequently is, with a single person or thing, it has the force of *even*. It is frequently joined with the other indefinite pronouns as an expletive. It follows the noun.

凡 Every body. Its sense is distributive.

衆 All. Its sense is collective. It is ordinarily applied only to persons. It precedes the noun.

大家 All, the whole crowd.

大家 All, the whole family or party.

攏總 All, all together, the whole lot, *in toto*.

通統 All, every single one.

通身 All together, *en masse*.

For other words of this class, see Les. 158.

第三十五課

LESSON XXXV.

他¹ 心。○人³ 一家老少都病了。○念² 書寫字，都要專
 不知趣。○你⁵ 家裏都有甚麼人呢。○凡⁴ 事不可
 都來了嗎。○除⁷ 了這個，都可以拿去。○衆⁶ 位
 裏攏總有三千多兵。○他⁹ 那些話，通身都
 是假的。○你¹⁰ 的兩個孩子，都有天分。○大¹¹ 都
 家的見識不同。○他¹² 不論待誰，都是刻薄。
 ○我¹³ 家裏一個大錢都沒有。○山¹⁵ 東省，攏總
 都認得誰。○誰¹⁶ 都不認得。○山¹⁵ 東省，攏總
 有一百零八縣。○他¹⁶ 是甚麼時候走的，大

- 1 His whole family, old and young, are sick.
- 2 In both reading and writing, one should give undivided attention.
- 3 When a man gets old, both his back and his legs are unserviceable.
- 4 In every thing, a man should have a just appreciation of time and circumstances.
- 5 Who all are there in your family?
- 6 Have all [the gentlemen] come?
- 7 You may take away all except this.
- 8 There are here, in all, over three thousand soldiers.
- 9 That talk of his is all false.
- 10 Your two children are both gifted.
- 11 Our opinions do not all agree.
- 12 He treats every body meanly.
- 13 I have not a single cash in the house.
- 14 Whom all do you know in this place?
Ans. I do not know any body at all.
- 15 The Province of Shantung has, in all, one hundred and eight hsiens?
- 16 At what time he left, none of us know.

VOCABULARY.

都 *Tu¹, Tou¹*. A metropolitan city; all, including all, in general:—See Sub.
 凡 *Fan²*. All, everybody; common, vulgar; the world; mortal; earthly.
 衆 *Chung⁴*. A concourse; a majority; all; the whole; many:—See Sub.
 攏 *Lung⁸*. To collect together; to operate on; to draw or bring near.
 總 *Tsung⁸*. To unite in one, to comprehend; all, the whole; generic; generally, still, in any case; must be; a president:—Les. 10±.
 通 *T'ung¹*. To go through; to perceive; to make known; to communicate; pervading; current; everywhere, general; the whole of.
 統 *T'ung²*. A clue; the whole, general, entire; to control.
 專心 *Chwan¹ hsin¹*. Undivided attention; a single purpose; intent on.
 趣 *Ch'ü⁴*. To run quickly; to show alacrity; to regard pleurably; *taste, flavor*; graceful, sprightly.
 知趣 *Chi¹ ch'ü⁴*. To know the flavor, to have a sense of the fitness of things.

除 *Ch'ü²*. To exclude, to remove; to divide (math.); besides, *except*:—Les. 135.
 見識 *Chien⁴ shi²*. Opinion, sentiments; experience.
 刻 *K'oa⁴*. Insulting; *oppressive*; one eighth of a Chinese hour, or fifteen minutes; a little while. Also *koa¹*.
 刻薄 *K'oa⁴ pod²*. To insult, to oppress, to treat meanly.
 山東 *Shan¹ tung¹*. Shantung.
 省 *Sheng⁸*. A province; to diminish; to use sparingly, to save; to avoid; frugal. Also *hsing⁸*.
 縣 *Hsien⁴*. A county,—the district ruled by one magistrate.
 京城 *Ching¹ ch'ing²*. The capital.
 井 *Ching⁸*. A well; a pit; an excavation; a plot of ground.
 果 *Kwoa⁸*. The fruit of trees; really, truly; results, effects; reliable:—Les. 138.
 指頭 *Chi² t'ou²*. A finger, a toe.
 般 *Pan¹*. Sort, class; manner.

地方兒，甚麼緣故，甚麼法子，我都知道。

擲骰子，他家通攏總都會。○他辦這件是甚麼時候兒，甚麼

你²⁷們兩家鬧出開葛籐荒來。○他²⁹告狀，都是他挑唆的。○看牌²⁸，壓寶，

他收拾好了。○淹²⁶死了。○這²⁵些東西都亂七亂八²⁴，蹣跚²⁵的，可以

的人通通身。○不²³可凡事都一樣。○風²⁴颳翻了船，把船上

長短齊嗎。○實²³在難。○孩²²子們不能都一樣。○要²¹得衆人

的²⁰心，那實在難。○這¹⁹是大衆的事，我自己不敢作主。

○凡不結好果子的樹，就砍下來，丟在火裏。○京¹⁸城裏沒有

河水，喫的都是井水。○我的眼鏡，都是隨身帶着。○

家都不曉得。○我¹⁷的

- 17 I always carry my spectacles with me.
- 18 There is no river water in the capital. All the water used is well water.
- 19 This business concerns [us] all. I can not venture to decide it myself.
- 20 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.
- 21 It is a very difficult thing to please every body.
- 22 Children can not be all alike. Can the ten fingers be all the same length?
- 23 You must not follow the crowd in every thing.
- 24 The wind capsized the boat, and every body on board was drowned.
- 25 These things are all in confusion. Arrange them all in order.
- 26 This scholar is outrageous. He even dares to swear at his teacher.
- 27 You two families getting into a quarrel and going to law, is all of his getting up.
- 28 Card playing, thimble-rigging and dice throwing;—he is skilled in all of them.
- 29 I know all about when, and where, and why, and how, he did this thing.

一般 *I¹ pan¹*..... Alike, the same.

隨從 *Sui² ts'ung²*..... To follow, to accord with.

船 *Ch'uan²*..... A ship, a boat, a junk.

淹 *Yen¹*: To soak; to overflow; to drown; to tarry long.

淹死 *Yen¹ si²*..... To drown:—Les. 183.

亂七八蹣 *Lan⁴ ch'i¹ pa¹ tsao¹*. Topsy-turvy, helter-skelter, all in confusion:—Note (25).

滔天 *T'ao¹*..... To overpass, to reach beyond.

萬惡滔天 *Wan⁴ o⁴ t'ao² t'ien¹*. Wicked beyond bounds, outrageous, incorrigible.

葛 *Ko²*..... A long creeping vine.

籐 *T'eng²*..... A trailing plant; the rattan.

葛籐. Intercourse; a difficulty, an embarrassment; a scrape; a hanger on.

狀 *Chwang⁴*. Form, appearance; to accuse; an accusation, an indictment.

告狀 *Kao⁴ chwang⁴*. To accuse, to indict; to go to law.

壓寶 *Ya¹*..... To press down, to weight. See *ya⁴*.

寶 *Pao³*. Precious; a gem; a coin; a treasure; a complimentary term:—Les. 171.

壓寶. To play at thimble-rig:—Note (28).

看牌 *K'an⁴ p'ai²*..... To play cards.

擲 *Chi¹*. To throw down or at; to fling away, to reject; to shovel,—as earth.

骰 *Shai²*..... Dice.

緣 *Yen², Yüan²*. A facing, a binding; corresponding with something previously existing, a subtle affinity; because, therefore.

緣故 *Yen² ku⁴*..... The cause, the reason.

課 六 十 三 第

LESSON XXXVI.

嗎。那 恁 不 哭。的 補 他 你 嗎。你¹
 ○ 麼 麼 要 ○ 孩 觀 也 的 ○ 這
 那⁸ 些 再 他⁶ 子。你 不 兄 你² 麼 大
 麼 字、忍 那 恁 從 都 不 弟。不 可 的 人、
 樣 着 還 耐 麼 麼 來 用 ○ ○ 任³ 這 樣 欺 害
 我 不 會 記 你⁷ 你 這 ○ 一 些 麼 欺 害
 算。記 識 你 樣 麼 我⁵ 些 個 說。負 怕
 ○ 賬 識 你 樣 麼 我⁵ 些 個 說。負 怕

- 1 Such a great fellow as you, and still afraid?
- 2 You ought not to impose upon your brother in this way.
- 3 No matter what you say, he will not listen.
- 4 What! Have you used up all that lot of patches?
- 5 My baby has never cried so before.
- 6 Having abused you in that way, you should not suffer him any longer.
- 7 Knowing so many characters as that, can you still not keep accounts?
- 8 In that case, I will decline.

NOTES.

2 In Northern Mandarin necessity is generally expressed by 得, rather than by 要. In the South 要 is used.

13 都 in this sentence is used somewhat like our phrase, "at all."—I have not a cent at all in the house. Its use in this way is common, but not elegant. The sentence in the lesson is taken from a Pekingese book, yet a first-class Pekingese teacher, in reviewing this lesson, threw out the 都 and wrote 也.

17 都 here means, at all times; i.e., always. 隨身, following [my] body; i.e., with me.

18 吃的水, the water eaten; i.e., all the water used for domestic purposes.

21 得衆人的心, to get the hearts of all; i.e., to be acceptable, or pleasing, to all.

22 有長短, have some long and some short.

25 亂七八糟. The original and proper order of this phrase undoubtedly is, 七亂八糟, seven disorders, eight accidents;—a most expressive term for confusion.

26 萬惡滔天 is a book phrase; lit., ten thousand vices overtopping the heavens;—applied hyperbolically to a bad boy.

都 here includes all others, with the teacher as climax.

28 壓寶 is a method of gambling much practiced in some parts of China. It is somewhat similar to the game, or trick, called thimble-rig.

LESSON XXXVI.

MODAL PARTICLES.

這 麼 } Such, in this way, so, thus.

這 樣 }
 那 麼 } Such, in that way, so.
 那 樣 }

The more common and colloquial form is that with 麼. When so used as to involve a comparison, the comparison is completed by *as this*, in the case of 這麼; and by *as that*, in the case of 那麼.

恁 麼 } Such, in that way, so.
 恁 樣 }

The book pronunciation of 恁 is jén⁵, but as here used it is read nin³ or nén³ (the final n is elided

in use). It is a question whether 那 should not always be written, and read as 恁. The use of 恁, however, is not without authority.

怎 麼 } How, in what manner.
 怎 樣 }

The normal use of 怎 is interrogative (see next lesson), but it loses its interrogative force in some cases;—as when used in two correlative clauses (11) (15); or when preceded by such words as 任, 管, 不論, etc., (3) (13); or when immediately following a negative, (14). In some parts of Shantung, and perhaps elsewhere, 怎麼 is often incorrectly used instead of 這麼.

VOCABULARY.

怎 Tsén⁵. An interrogative particle generally followed by 麼; why? how? what?—See Sub.

恁 Nin³. Thus, so, such:—See Sub.

負 Fu⁴. To carry on the back; to assume; to turn the back on; to abuse; to slight; to be defeated; minus (math.).

欺負 K'i¹ fu⁴. To insult; to oppress.

了 恁²²也 麼 個 壞 麼 麼 你¹⁹路道、
 實 樣 不 哄 孩 了 重 意 這 不
 在 的 好 也 子 了 的 思 麼 能
 可 大 非 也 子 的 呢。停 不
 惜 胖 打 不 的 氣 肩 着 着、打
 子 孩 不 好 的 的 膀 兒 着 打
 子 行 那 亂 頭 兒 嗎。○ 你²⁰是 個 起
 死 ○ 哄 這 這 嗎。○ 怕 挑 個 起
 ○ 這²¹ 壓 這 甚 ○

one can not but walk unsteadily.
 19 What do you mean by lingering (or, stopping) in this way?
 20 Are you not afraid of injuring your shoulder by carrying such a heavy load?
 21 This youngster is hopping mad (jumping up and down with anger). No kind of coaxing does any good. Nothing will serve but to whip him.
 22 What a pity that such a fine, fat child should die.

NOTES.

3 怎麼 is here rendered *what*, though the force of the thought is *how*. We might render, *No matter how you put it*.
 4 More literally, *As many rags as that, and you have used them all up!* The 一 might be omitted, but its use adds emphasis.
 8 More literally, *In that case, you may count me out*.
 9 這點 is a contraction for 這麼點, or 這麼一點. The 麼 is not unfrequently dropped out in this way.
 13 不論怎麼樣. Here 麼 and 樣 are both used, and this is a not unfrequent form. 管那麼的 is a phrase much used in some parts. It answers to the English, *by all*

means. 那 is here read Na³. For the use of 的 see Les. 80.
 18 Or, *According to the way you represent it*.
 19 The two forms are not quite equivalent. 停 means, *to stop or refuse to proceed*; whereas 歇 means, *to be absent minded, or to loiter listlessly*.
 21 氣的亂路 "hopping mad." Some would write 迸, but I find no authority for using this character in this sense; while the meaning of 踏 is quite suitable, and it is also read péng⁴, as well as féng. The double way of putting the coaxing is a characteristic Chinese idiom; while the use of the word 哄 intimates that Chinese coaxing is chiefly *deceiving*.

LESSON XXXVII.

INTERROGATIVES OF MANNER AND PLACE.

怎麼 How? why?
 那麼 How? why?
 Notice, that when 那 is used interrogatively it takes the third tone.

那裏 } Where? The two forms are quite
 那兒 } equivalent in meaning, but the second is colloquial and somewhat undignified. It is rarely heard in the South.

VOCABULARY.

避 Pi⁴. To flee from; to avoid; to hide; to shirk; to stand aside.
 諱 Hui⁴. To shun; to remain silent.
 避諱. To avoid sacred names; to avoid a delicate or forbidden subject; to keep clear of.
 鈴 Ling². A small bell; a hand bell.
 襪 Wa⁴. Stockings, socks.
 抓 Chwa¹. To scratch; to tear with claws; to seize; to catch; to grab.
 鐲 Chod². A bracelet, a wristlet.
 推 T'ui¹. To push away; to secede; to shirk; to decline; to resign; to infer.
 磨 Mod⁴. A millstone; a mill. See mod⁴.
 推磨. To grind flour at a mill.

收成 Shou¹ ch'eng². The proceeds of the year, the harvest.
 心口疼 Hsin¹ k'ou³ t'eng². Pain in the stomach, dyspepsia.
 孫 Sun¹. A grandson; a surname.
 迂 Yü¹. Vague; addled, stupid.
 滯 Chi⁴. To obstruct, to stop; an impediment; dull witted.
 迂滯. Stupid, obtuse, doltish; obstinate.
 執 Chi². To seize; to lay hold of; to keep; to maintain; obstinate, set.
 拘執 Chü¹ chi². Obstinate, immovable.
 進學 Chin⁴ hsü². To get the first degree, to graduate.

第三十七課

LESSON XXXVII.

人、我、答、○、推、你、麼、着、○、你¹
 怎、有、不、他¹¹、磨、曉、不、了、搖³、怎¹
 麼、個、怎、從、就、得、來、呢、了、麼、沒³
 在、心、麼、那、誤、在、告、不、○、鈴、有³
 這、口、樣、裏、了。○、訴、來、○、○、你⁵
 件、事、上、疼、中、○、說、○、○、我⁵
 上、的、中、○、○、嗎、呢。○、你⁷
 這、病、兒、○、○、○、你⁷
 麼、不、的、○、○、○、你⁷
 拘、迂、○、○、○、○、○、你¹³
 執、滯、○、○、○、○、○、你¹³
 呢、○、○、○、○、○、你¹³
 ○、○、○、○、○、你¹³
 做¹⁵、○、○、○、○、○、你¹³
 活、○、○、○、○、○、你¹³
 怎、○、○、○、○、○、你¹³
 麼、○、○、○、○、○、你¹³
 不、○、○、○、○、○、你¹³
 按、○、○、○、○、○、你¹³
 明、○、○、○、○、○、你¹³

- 1 Why did you not go to church ?
- 2 Why is it that you have not sense enough to avoid an unpleasant subject ?
- 3 The bell has rung. How is it that you did not hear ?
- 4 Where did you find your stockings ?
- 5 What about the business I entrusted to you ?
- 6 When the stranger came, how is it that you did not come and tell me ?
- 7 Where did you catch it (or, arrest him) ?
- 8 Do you know where my bracelets are ?
- 9 How is it that you have not yet gotten the meal ready ? Ans. I was hindered by going to grind at the mill.
- 10 You were told to come quickly : how is it that you have come so late ?
- 11 Where did he come from, and where is he intending to go ?
- 12 How is the harvest this year ? Ans. Nothing extra : only ordinary.
- 13 How is it that you are so lean these days ? Ans. I have dyspepsia, and have no appetite.
- 14 Sun the Third is an intelligent man : how is it that in this business he is so stupid (immovable) ?

爲 Wei². To do, to effect; to act; to play the part of; to regard as. See wei⁴.
 行爲 Hsing² wei². Conduct, deportment, character.
 品 P'in². A kind, rank, order; a rule or guide; actions; a part in music.
 行 Hsing⁴. Doings, conduct, character. See Hsing² and hang².
 品行 P'in³ Hsing⁴. Deportment, character.
 橫 Hung², Hêng². Crosswise, transverse; to lie across. Also hung⁴.
 豎 or 暨 Shu⁴. To erect; to stand upright; upright; perpendicular; chaste.
 言 Yen². A word; a remark; a phrase; speech, talk; sayings; to say.
 語 Yü³. To talk with; to tell; words; phrases, sentences; language.

言語. Words, conversation; to speak, to tell.
 仲 Chung⁴. In the middle; a surname.
 添 T'ien¹. To add; to increase; to throw in.
 豫 or 預 Yü⁴. To prearrange, to prepare; beforehand; already.
 備 Pei⁴. To prepare; to provide for; ready; complete; entirely; all; wholly.
 豫備. To prepare, to provide; to anticipate.
 坐月 Tsot⁴, yüe¹. To lie in, to be confined:— Note (22).
 庇 Pi⁴, P'i⁴. To shelter, to cover; to protect. Properly p'i⁴, but usually spoken p'i⁴.
 護庇 Hu⁴ pi⁴. To shield; to protect.
 禍 Huot⁴. Evil, misery; calamity, disaster, woe; the judgments of Heaven.
 跳 T'iao⁴. To leap, to jump; to hop, to dance; to palpitate.

鹿你，你怎麼必得往禍坑裏跳呢。大家這麼護
 月子的東西。○這是怎麼說呢。大家這麼護
 我的女人添了一個小孩子，我要給他豫備坐
 仲先生，我今天不能來進館學問，怎麼着
 不論怎麼問，你也不言語，到底是怎麼着
 說你都不肯，你打算怎麼樣呢。○你這麼直哭
 怎麼樣。○這些話你怎麼沒早說呢。○橫說豎
 聽說那位馬先生的本事很好，不知他的品行
 呢。○我有意僱他看門，他的行為怎麼樣呢。○
 着時候呢。○他的學問不怎麼樣，那兒能進學

- 15 How is it that you do not do your work at the proper time?
- 16 His scholarship is only so, so. How could he get a degree?
- 17 I have a mind to hire him as a gate-keeper. What is his general character?
- 18 I hear that Mr. Ma's abilities are very good, but I do not know what is his general department.
- 19 Why is it that he did not speak of these things sooner?
- 20 No matter what is said, you dissent. What do you propose to do?
- 21 You do nothing but cry. No matter what one asks you, you make no reply. What is the matter with you anyhow?
- 22 Mr. Chung, I can not come to school to-day. Q. Why? Ans. My wife has presented me with a baby, and I must prepare for her the things necessary for her confinement.
- 23 What do you mean! When we are all protecting you in this way, why is it that you persist in courting disaster?

NOTES.

1 We might with equal propriety translate, *Why have you not gone to church?* The Chinese fails to mark the distinction between the imperfect and perfect tenses. 怎麼 is here equivalent to *why*, although its proper meaning is *how*. The same thing is true of "how" in the English phrase, "How is it that, etc.?" The sentence might be rendered, *How is it that you have not gone to church?*

3 If this sentence be made to end with 呢, the emphasis falls on "where"; if with 嗎, it falls on "know."

10 It is quite uncertain by whom the person was told to come quickly, but it is implied that it was either by the speaker, or by some one sent or instructed by him.

12 The force of 不怎麼樣 is, that there was nothing noteworthy about the crops, either good or bad; that is, they were average.

13 Note that 行為 may be applied to any one; but 品行 is properly applied only to persons of some social standing.

20 橫說豎說, *speaking crosswise, or speaking perpendicular; i.e., speaking as you will.*

21 怎麼的 is the common Southern form. It is sometimes heard in Peking, especially when the cause, or reason, is required; while 怎麼着 is used when manner is spoken of. See Les. 88, Sub.

22 月子. *A woman's confinement; also the month following it.* During this month the mother is supposed to sit on her k'ang, eat certain kinds of food, and be served by her husband and sisters-in-law. Such language sounds strange in the mouth of one who is a pupil in school; but it must be remembered that boys get married in China, and that such subjects as this are spoken of by them with the utmost freedom.

23 Lit., *what sort of a speech is this?*—expressing both surprise and reproof. 怎麼必得往禍坑裏跳呢. *Why must you go and jump into the pit of woe; i.e., why do you persist in bringing disaster on yourself.*

LESSON XXXVIII.

FOUR COMMON CLASSIFIERS.

條 A branch,—classifier of things distinguished for length, rather than for breadth or thickness.

隻 Single,—classifier of single things as distinguished from pairs, also of some animals.

頭 Head,—classifier of various animals.

匹 A pair,—classifier of horses, and of kindred animals; though the usage in different places is far from uniform.

For full list of nouns falling under each of these classifiers see Supplement.

課八十三第

LESSON XXXVIII.

隻隻隻 ○ 遠 睛 狗 穿 街 王¹
 金脚羊 這⁹ 五 疼 不 歪 總 老
 銅銅都 迷失條隻里。得 知 了。 有 二
 頭子。磨失迷牛 ○ 要 命。 跑 了。 他⁴ 是
 ○ 起 了 你 一⁸ 命。 了 那 騎 着 一 是
 這¹³ 泡 一 隻。 條 繩 子 走 去 了。 匹頭寶³
 隻條來 隻。 嗎。 子 不 那 條 路。 我⁶ 的 兩 隻 鞋 都
 腿了。 ○ 明¹¹ ○ 穀 可 以 用 兩 條。 要 能 眼
 筋骨李¹² 天 不 能 走 我 兩
 疼 小 姐 帶 着 兩
 隻條那 帶 着 兩
 腿生 兩 百 條。

- 1 Wang the Second is truly a portly fellow.
- 2 I think this street must be over three li long.
- 3 Both of Pao-tsi's shoes are worn crooked.
- 4 He was riding a large she-ass.
- 5 I wonder where that dog has run to.
- 6 Both my eyes pain me beyond endurance.
- 7 If we go by that road it will be further by at least five li.
- 8 One ropé is not sufficient. Use two.
- 9 Do you want to sell this cow?
- 10 A certain man had a hundred sheep, and he lost one (or, one got lost).
- 11 I can not go to-morrow. I have rubbed blisters on both my feet.
- 12 Miss Li wears two gold bracelets.
- 13 I have rheumatism in this leg, and on that one there is a boil.

VOCABULARY.

條 *T'iao*². A branch; a switch; an item; a section, a law. A classifier:—See Sub.
 隻 *Chi*¹. One of a sort or of a pair; single. A classifier:—see Sub.
 匹 *P'i*¹. A pair; a mate. A classifier:—see Sub. Also *p'i*².
 里 *Li*³. A place; a short closed alley; a *li* of three hundred and sixty paces, approximately equal to one third of a mile.
 歪 *Wai*¹. Deflected; askew, awry; *crooked*, aslant; depraved, wicked.
 騎 *Chi*². *To ride*; to sit astride. Also *chi*⁴.
 驢 *Ts'ao*³. The female of equine animals.
 命 *Ming*⁴. To command; to charge; an ordinance, a decree, commands, orders; fate, destiny, lot; *life*; living creatures.
 要命 *Yao*⁴ *Ming*⁴. To take the life; deadly, fatal; *unendurable*, terrible.
 繩 *Shéng*². A cord, a string, a rope; a line.
 迷 *Mi*². To delude; to fascinate; *confused*; stupefied; blinded; infatuated.
 失 *Shi*¹. *To lose*; to neglect; to err, to miss; to slip; to fail.
 迷失. To lose one's way; lost, confused.
 失迷. To lose possession of; lost, missing.

泡 *P'ao*¹. A bubble, a blister; See *p'ao*⁴.
 小姐 *Hsiao*³ *chie*³. Younger sister; *Miss*,—used in the South, also in Chinese novels.
 金 *Chin*¹. *Gold*; metal; money; precious; noble, honorable.
 銅頭 *Chou*² *t'ou*². A bracelet:—Les. 47.
 筋骨疼 *Chin*¹ *ku*³ *t'eng*². Rheumatism.
 島 *Tao*³. A hill in the sea, an island.
 打魚 *Ta*³ *yu*². To fish. See Les. 124.
 瓦 *Wa*³. Earthenware; tiles, bricks, flags.
 瓦匠 *Wa*³ *chiang*⁴. A mason, a bricklayer.
 偏口魚 *P'ien*¹ *k'ou*³ *yu*². The sole.
 蟲 *Ch'ung*². Worms, snakes, snails, insects.
 長蛇 *Ch'ang*² *ch'ung*². A snake.
 蛇 *Shé*². A serpent; treacherous, subtle.
 鴨 *Ya*¹. A duck.
 鵝 *Or*³, *E*². The domestic goose.
 攤 *T'an*¹. To open out; to share, to fall to; to divide amongst; a stall, a stand.
 菜攤 *Ts'ai*⁴ *t'an*¹. A stand for selling meat and vegetables.

騾子。○你²⁵把院子裏那匹小吧狗給我抓來。
 二爺家裏過的很寬綽。○養着一隻野貓。○養着兩隻鹿。○張²⁴的。
 ○菜攤子出着五隻山雞。○我買了七隻小雞兒。○兩隻野貓。○兩隻鹿。○張²⁴的。
 隻鵝。○我買了七隻小雞兒。○兩隻野貓。○兩隻鹿。○張²⁴的。
 牆跟底下有一條大長蛇。○冰河裏有十隻鴨子。○六
 ○孩子的兩隻手都凍的冰冰涼涼。○你²⁰快去看看。○南
 馬的力氣大呢。○大師傅上街買了三條偏口魚。
 了。○你¹⁷看是這匹馬的力氣大。是那匹
 有兩隻船打魚。○姜¹⁶瓦匠從房子上掉下來。跌壞
 瘡。○你¹⁴可以補一補這隻破襪子。○在¹⁵長山島前

- 14 You may darn (mend) this torn stocking.
- 15 There are two boats fishing to the south of the Ch'ang Shan Island.
- 16 Chiang, the mason, fell off the house and broke one of his arms.
- 17 Do you think that this horse has the greater strength, or has that one?
- 18 The cook went on the street and bought three soles.
- 19 Both of the child's hands are as cold as ice.
- 20 Go quickly and see! There is a big snake at the foot of the south wall.
- 21 There are ten ducks and six geese in the river.
- 22 I bought seven little chickens, two cocks and five hens.
- 23 On a huckster's stand were spread out, five pheasants, ten rabbits (or, hares) and two deer.
- 24 The family of Mr. Chang the Second are in very good circumstances. They keep a cow, and a donkey, and two mules.
- 25 Catch that small Peking dog in the yard for me.

菜狀 Ts'ai⁴ ch'wang²..... The same.
 山雞 Shan¹ chi¹..... A pheasant.
 野雞 Yie³ chi¹..... The same. ✓
 貓 Mao^{1,2}..... A cat.
 野貓 Yie³ mao¹. The wild cat. In Peking,—a hare.
 兔 Tu⁴..... A rabbit; a hare.
 鹿 Lu⁴..... A deer; a stag.
 綽 Ch'oi¹, Ch'ao¹. Spacious; generous; vague; many.
 寬綽 K'wan¹ ch'oi⁴. Wide, ample; liberal; in easy circumstances.

餘 Yü². Overplus; remainder; remnant; the rest; besides:—Les. 172.
 寬餘 K'wan¹ yü². In easy circumstances; ample; abundant.
 養 Yang³. To nourish; to bring up; to support; to take care of; to develop.
 騾 Loi²..... A mule.
 哈 Ha³. To sip; to laugh. Used as a phonetic and frequently read ho³ and k'a^{1,4}.
 吧 Pa¹..... Large mouthed.
 哈吧狗 Ha³ pa¹ kou³. The pug nosed Peking dog.
 吧狗 Pa¹ kou³..... The same.

NOTES.

1 條, applied to a man, implies that the individual is very tall, and inasmuch as 條 is not ordinarily applied to men, it suggests a tinge of ridicule.
 9 Cows are generally classified either by 隻, or 頭 (24), though 條 is used in Hankow.
 13 A leg is classified by 條, because it is long; and by 隻, because it is one of a pair. The latter is the more dignified.

15 When applied to hills, houses, streets, etc., 前 means south. Following the noun, it means south of;—as, 山前, south of the hill; when preceding the noun it means, the south, southern;—as, 前街, the southern street. In the same way, 後 means north.
 19 冰涼 ice cold. See Les. 141.
 25 Lit., Do you take that little Peking dog in the yard, and catch him for me.

珍珠的、城裏的、房屋和街道、都是精金的。
 榮華的地方、城牆是十二樣寶石的、城門是
 呢、答是跟班的和趕車的吵鬧。○天堂是頂
 細看還是個燒琉璃的。○外頭是甚麼人吵鬧
 ○你¹⁹這個菸袋嘴子、我乍見當是個玉石的、
 個做生意的。○街¹⁸旁有個算命的、擺着攤兒。
 的、財主也有鑲金的。○他¹⁷們的弟兄五個、有
 不、懂得用兵的事。○我¹⁶們的茶壺、都是鑲銀
 人、答我是個修理鐘表的。○我¹⁵是個念書的、
 伺候飯的叫擺桌子的。○你¹⁴是個做甚麼的

tsī, and the man who waits on table is called a pai-t'ai-ti.
 14 What is your occupation? Ans. I am a watch-maker.
 15 I am a literary man, and do not understand military affairs.
 16 Our tea-pots are all silver plated. Some of the rich have theirs plated with gold.
 17 Of the five brothers, four are business men.
 18 A fortune-teller has put up his stand at the side of the street.
 19 At first sight, I took this pipe mouth-piece of yours to be stone; but on looking more closely, I see it is glass.
 20 Who is making that disturbance outside? Ans. It is the servants wrangling with the carters.
 21 Heaven is a most glorious place: the walls of the city are of twelve kinds of precious stones; the gates are of pearl; the houses and the streets are all of pure gold.

出力 *Ch'u⁴ li⁴*. To exert one's self, to put forth strength.
 砌 *Ch'i⁴*. . . . To lay brick or stone, to build up.
 坯 *P'ei¹, P'i¹*. . . . Unburnt tiles or brick.
 墜 *Chi³*. . . . Sun-dried brick, mud brick.
 土坯 *T'u³ p'ei¹*. . . . Unburnt brick.
 土墜 *T'u³ chi³*. . . . Sun-dried mud brick.
 伺候 *Ts'i⁴, Si⁴*. . . . To wait upon, to serve.
 伺候 *Ts'i⁴ hou⁴*. . . . To wait upon, to serve.
 擺 *Pai³*. To spread out, to move; to scull; to sway to and fro; to strut; a pendulum.
 檯 or 台 *T'ai²*. . . . A table, a stage:—Note (13).
 修理 *Hsiu¹ li³*. . . . To regulate; to repair.
 鑲 *Tu⁴*. . . . To gild, to plate:—Note (16).
 財主 *Ts'ai² chu³*. . . . A rich man.
 生意 *Sheng¹ i⁴*. . . . Business, occupation.
 算命 *Suan⁴ ming⁴*. . . . To tell fortunes.
 乍 *Cha⁴*. At first; at first sight; unexpectedly, suddenly; for the moment.
 菸 *Yen¹*. . . . Tobacco; tobacco leaves.
 菸袋 *Yen¹ tai⁴*. . . . A tobacco pipe.
 石 *Shi²*. . . . A stone; a rock; firm; a picul.

玉石 *Yü⁴ Shi⁴*. . . . A gem, a pearl.
 琉 *Liu²*. . . . A fine kind of glass.
 琉璃 *Liu² li²*. Fine glass,—usually colored; glaze.
 燒料 *Shao¹ liao⁴*. . . . Clouded glass.
 吵鬧 *Ch'ao³ nao⁴*. To scold and wrangle; to make a disturbance.
 班 *Pan¹*. To make known; a rank, an order; a set; a troop:—Les. 140.
 跟班 *Kên¹ pan¹*. Attendants, servants of an officer.
 天堂 *T'ien¹ t'ang²*. The heavenly hall, heaven, the abode of the blessed—a term introduced into China by Buddhism.
 榮華 *Yung², Jung²*. . . . Glory, splendor; honor.
 華 *Hwa²*. Flowery, elegant; glorious, beautiful; ornate; China.
 榮華. *Glory, splendor, effulgence, grandeur.*
 珍 *Chên¹*. . . . Precious; rare; excellent; valuable.
 珠 *Chu¹*. . . . A pearl; a bead; fine, excellent.
 珍珠. *A pearl.*
 房屋 *Fang² wu¹*. . . . Houses, buildings.
 街道 *Chie¹ tao⁴*. . . . A street.

弄到底出不來進不去的。我裏看出來。○大²⁵叔若是不歡喜，都可以從眼睛看出實情來。○人²⁴歡喜來。○不加刑罰給他，問來。迷惑。○不²³難逃出他的圈套去。○已²²經受了魔鬼的害。你的稟帖，必傳不進去。答。我有法子能傳進去。

petition sent in. Ans. I have a plan by which it can be sent in.
 22 When you have been ensnared by the devil, it is hard to escape his toils.
 23 Without torturing him you will not get the truth out of him.
 24 Whether a man is pleased or not, can always be seen from his eyes.
 25 If you, uncle, positively will not do anything, you will put me in a very embarrassing position.

NOTES.

- 2 進 is here used as a principal verb. The subject of the lesson is illustrated by 出.
- 3 點出句子來. Lit., *point out the clauses*; i.e., *punctuate it*.
- 4 擡不進去. Note how the verb is left without either subject or object, both of which must be supplied from the context.
- 5 倒 does not here mean to lift the kettle and *pour out* the contents, but simply to *empty it*. In like manner, 取 does not mean to *take out* the kettle, but simply its contents.
- 7 不露出來的. The 的 here makes the clause relative, the antecedent being the clause, 掩藏的事. See Lea. 23.
- 9 A proverb applied to one from a vicious or disreputable family.
- 10 A witty saying, meaning that the person referred to, so far from being a *good man*, is *refuse*, whom good men have eliminated from their company.
- 15 甚麼 is without emphasis. If emphasized the

- meaning would be, I can not find out what fault he has.
- 17 姊妹 means properly, *sisters*, but is often used in the singular, either of an elder or younger sister. It is also sometimes used to mean both brothers and sisters; i.e., all the children of a family.
- 19 In the North, 掌櫃 is generally used of the *head-man* of any business. In the South, 老板 is used in place of it, and is also heard at sea ports in the North. 掌櫃 may be, and often is, an employé, in the office of *head-man*; but 老板 is the *proprietor*.
- 20 It really requires both 銀子 and 錢 to cover the idea of "money."
- 25 This sentence does not properly illustrate the subject of the lesson; but it has both 進去 and 出來 used in a very idiomatic way. 把我弄的出不來進不去的. *So circumstance me that I can neither go out nor come in*; i.e., *neither retreat nor advance*. The order is often changed to 進不來出不去的.

LESSON XLII.
 THE AUXILIARY VERBS 過 AND 回.

過, as an auxiliary verb, expresses the idea of *over*, either in respect of time, or of place. It generally takes 來 or 去 after it. When followed by 來, it indicates motion *over* and *towards*: when followed by 去, it indicates motion *over* and *away from*. In many cases the original idea of *motion* is lost in that of *change*.

回, as an auxiliary, expresses the idea of *turning back*. It also generally takes 來 or 去 after it. When followed by 來, it indicates motion *back* and *towards*; when followed by 去, it indicates motion *back* and *away from*. The range of its use is more limited than that of 過.

For full list of verbs followed by each of these auxiliaries see Supplement.

VOCABULARY.

竅 *Ch'iao*⁴. An orifice, an aperture; a cavity; the mind; the avenues by which the mind acquires knowledge; the *key* or *clue*.
 心竅 *Hsin*¹ *ch'iao*⁴. Power to comprehend, the understanding.

姪 *Chí*²..... A nephew, the son of a brother.
 賴 *Lai*⁴. To depend upon, to rely on; to assume; to *pretend*, to trump up; to accuse falsely; to deny, to ignore.
 賴學 *Lai*⁴ *hsüe*²..... To play truant. (s)

子纔甦醒過來了。○那²²一²³夜他病的頂重，昏過去了，好一會
 一點也沒有他。○朱老大²¹如今回過頭來，凡喫喝嫖賭匪類的事，
 發回去。○這²⁰十個煤油箱子，是在上海發錯了，我還要
 再送過去。○這¹⁹把筭篋，是你從廂房拿過來的，可以
 個青紅皂白來。○這¹⁸說過來說過去，到底沒說出
 子來定親，又頂回去了。○他¹⁷說過來說過去，到底沒說出
 奪了去的，我們今天還要奪回來。○南莊¹⁶上拿着首飾匣
 你搬過來不好嗎。○先生¹⁵用過飯了嗎，答偏過了。○他¹⁴
 去的時候，可以把他的傘帶過去。○那裏¹³沒有地方睡覺，
 我說說不過他。○孫¹²師娘在喫飯廳裏，你去請他過來。○你¹¹

- 11 With such a tongue as his, I am no match for him.
- 12 Mrs. Sun is in the dining room: go and invite her over.
- 13 When you go over you can take along his umbrella.
- 14 There is no place there to sleep. Would it not do for you to move over here?
- 15 Have you eaten? Ans. I have.
- 16 What they took from us, we must get back again to-day.
- 17 The folks of the south village brought a box of jewelry to settle the betrothal, but were sent back [with a refusal].
- 18 He talked the business over and over, and, after all, expressed no definite opinion.
- 19 This broom is one you brought over from the side house. You had better take it back again.
- 20 These ten boxes of kerosene oil were sent from Shanghai by mistake. I must send them back again.
- 21 Chu Senior has now reformed, and avoids every form of dissipation and profligacy.
- 22 That night he was very seriously ill. He fainted and it was a long time before he revived again.
- 23 Ten oily mouthed Pekingese can not get ahead of one tonguy Tientsinese.

NOTES.

2 It is a traditional idea that the mind receives knowledge through apertures in the heart, and the more of these apertures a man has, the quicker is his power of apprehension. 比干 (now canonized as the god of wealth) was reported to have seven such apertures in his heart, and the tyrant 紂王 had his heart cut out to see if it was so. 開竅 is to have these openings free of obstruction, thus admitting the light which gives knowledge. 轉過竅來 is to have these openings turned in the right direction, that so the light may find due entrance.

10 The 雞 at the close of this sentence might be omitted without detriment.

11 The more usual form is 說不過他. 說他不過 is an elegant transposition, which is also used in colloquial in some places.

12 Chinese houses have no distinctive "dining room." The terms 吃飯堂 and 飯廳, are only used in connection with foreign houses. 請過他來 is not precisely the same as 請他過來. In the first, the stress naturally falls on the word 請; in the second, it falls on 過. The first means to bring him over [by inviting]; the second means simply to

invite him to come over,—his coming, or not, being no concern of the party inviting.

15 用, as here used for eating, is in some places quite colloquial, and in others it has something of the stateliness of the word "partake." 偏過了, I have the advantage of you in that I have already eaten;—used when one happens on others while eating, or about to eat.

17 A present of jewelry to the bride elect, is always necessary to the settlement of a marriage contract. In this case the friends of the intended groom went with the presents in due form, supposing, or assuming, that the proposal was satisfactory; and were sent back again crestfallen, as is indicated by the use of the word 頂 or 碰.

18 沒說出個青紅皂白來, did not express a blue, red, black or white; i.e., said nothing to the point; ex. pressed no definite opinion or decision.

21 凡吃喝嫖賭, etc., has nothing to do with such vices as gluttony, drunkenness, licentiousness and gambling. These terms are linked together as a comprehensive summary of dissipation, and are all included in the term 匪類.

23 This is a pithy fling at the people of Tientsin. 油子和嘴子, as here used, are slang.

課 二 十 四 第

LESSON XLII.

○ 給 一 和 六 該 請
 ○ 我 本 他 套 另 再
 ○ 有 書 兩 個 請 記 給
 ○ 一 可 個 把 請 一 我
 ○ 十 惜 那 那 先 本 訂
 ○ 管 已 張 林 生 賬 個
 ○ 筆 經 林 檯 給 個
 ○ 兩 破 了 上 來 我 本
 ○ 錠 塊 了 今 天 好 講 這 部 康 熙 字 典 是
 ○ 墨 五 十 張 毛 邊 紙
 ○ 送 了 兩 張 地 圖 給 我
 ○ 兩 套 衣 服 好 換 着 精 漿 洗
 ○ 我 半 天 沒 會 過 意 來
 ○ 正 有 二 百 五 十 句
 ○ 本 千 字 文 正 有 二 百 五 十 句
 ○ 這

- 1 Please make another copy-book for me.
- 2 When you buy things for the scholars you should keep the account in a separate book.
- 3 That Kanghi's dictionary of mine is in six t'ao. [for me?]
- 4 Will you please explain this sentence
- 5 Do you and he go and carry up that bedstead.
- 6 A very good looking book: what a pity it is torn!
- 7 When you are out to-day, buy for me ten pens, two sticks of ink and fifty sheets of mao pien paper.
- 8 I have a friend who made me a present of two maps.
- 9 A person should have at least two suits of clothes, in order to change for washing.
- 10 When he made that remark, it did not occur to me for half a day what he meant.
- 11 The One Thousand Character Classic

LESSON XLIII.

CLASSIFIERS.

本 The root,—classifier of volumes of a book.
行 A row,—classifier of things in rows.
部 The sum,—classifier of books considered as wholes; i.e., as works or treatises, irrespective of the number of volumes.
張 To extend,—classifier of things presenting a large or plain surface.
管 A reed,—classifier of long tubular things.

套 A wrapper,—classifier of book covers and of things in suits, or sets.
句 A sentence,—classifier of clauses and sentences.
釘 An ingot,—classifier of pieces of silver and sticks of ink.
 For full list of nouns which take these several classifiers see Supplement.

VOCABULARY.

部 *Pu*⁴. The sum; a class or division; a radical; a tribunal; a Board; a court. See Sub.
錠 *Ting*⁴. A platter; an ingot; a stick of medicine or ink. See Sub.
訂 *Ting*¹. To bind into a book. Also *ting*⁴.
仿本 *Fang*⁸ *pén*³. A copy book.
字本 *Tsi*⁴ *pén*³. The same.
康 *K'ang*¹. Peace; vigorous; excellent.
熙 *Hsi*¹. Bright, glorious; harmonious.
康熙..... The emperor Kanghi:—Note (3).

典 *Tien*³. A canon; a statute or code; a law, an ordinance; a precedent, a reference; to mortgage; to manage.
字典 *Tsi*⁴ *tien*³. A dictionary.
墨 *Mei*⁴, *Mou*⁴. Ink; dark, black; writings.
毛邊 *Mao*² *pien*¹. A kind of heavy writing paper.
圖 *T'u*². A diagram, a chart, a map; to plan, to plot; to wish for, to aspire after.
地圖 *Ti*⁴ *t'u*². A geographical map.

五分洋錢。○我²²要²¹你給我做兩張書案，一
 以找甚麼墊起來。○買²¹一部形學，要得七角
 能念九十行生書。○這²⁰張桌子不穩當，可
 來。○李¹⁹天保那個小學生，真好天分，一天
 說三五句話。○請¹⁸你把那部書，給我套起
 不知誰借去了。○用¹⁷不着多工夫，也不過
 仿格子，要八個字一行。○我¹⁶那部舊天文，
 該找人打一個套。○請¹⁵先生給我打一個
 張山水畫兒，值二十兩銀子。○這¹⁴部化學，
 部格物入門，是木板印的。○馬¹³老爺有一

has just two hundred and fifty lines in it.
 12 This book of natural philosophy is printed from wooden blocks.
 13 Mr. Ma has one landscape painting which is worth twenty taels.
 14 You should find some one to make a t'ao for this chemistry.
 15 Please, teacher, rule for me a four column kè-tsi with eight characters in each column.
 16 I wonder who borrowed that old astronomy of mine.
 17 It will not require long; I only wish to speak a few words.
 18 Please put that book in the t'ao for me.
 19 That little scholar Li T'ien Pao is certainly gifted. He can commit ninety lines in one day.
 20 This table is not steady. Find something to prop it up.
 21 It requires seventy-five cents to purchase a geometry.
 22 I want you to make for me two book-

糲 *Chiang¹*. To starch. Also *chiang⁴*.
 漿 *Chiang¹*. Congee; broth; syrup; pus; to starch.
 洗 *Chiang¹ hsi²*. To wash and iron.
 文 *Wên²*. Lines, veins; striæ; variegated; elegant; civil; literary; scholarly; ornamental; a form,—as of prayer. A classifier:—Les. 125.
 千字文 *Chien¹ tsi⁴ wên²*. The One Thousand Character Classic.
 格物 *Koa² wu⁴*. Natural science.
 入 *Ju⁴*. To enter; to penetrate; to pay in or receive; to progress; income.
 印 *Yin⁴*. A seal, a stamp; to seal, to print, to take an impression of.
 化 *Hwa⁴*. To alter; to transform; to influence; to melt, to transmute, to decompose.
 化學 *Hwa⁴ hsüe²*. Chemistry.
 勒 *Lé¹, Lei¹*. To rein in; to restrain; to tie up; to exact unjustly; to strangle.
 仿格 *Fang³ koa²*. A ruled form placed underneath the paper as a guide in writing.
 天文 *T'ien¹ wên²*. Astrology; astronomy.
 穩 *Wên³*. Firm, constant; secure, stable; to put down; repose.

穩當 *Wên³ tang⁴*. Steady, safe, secure.
 墊 *Tien⁴*. To pay down; to wedge up, to shore up; a cushion.
 形 *Hsing²*. Form, figure, shape; body; manner, style; material; to give form to.
 形學 *Hsing² hsüe²*. The science of form, geometry.
 案 *An⁴*. A table, an official desk; a case in law; the records of a case; an affair.
 凳 *Têng⁴*. A bench; a stool; a form.
 蘇州 *Su¹*. A species of thyme.
 蘇州 *Chou¹*. A district larger than a hsien; a continent; a region.
 蘇州. Suchow.
 相 *Hsiang⁴*. To look at; to prognosticate; a minister of state; similar. Also *hsiang¹*.
 相公 *Hsiang⁴ kung¹*. A minister of state (ancient); the son of a gentleman; in Peking,—an actor.
 鑼 *Lou²*. A gong.
 鼓 *Ku³*. A drum; to arouse; to encourage; to bulge, to swell; to warp.
 鑼鼓. Gong, drum, cymbals, etc.,—used as an accompaniment in singing or acting.
 瓷 *Ts'i²*. Glazed crockery, China-ware.

套。百套百用了買州、我²³子、張
 五套錢。了了一給前—圓
 十瓷盆。又十了一王—桌
 個兩又買三套三回—六
 錢吊了了三套鑼四吊公蘇○
 一三三三鼓公蘇○

tables, one round table, six benches and one cane bedstead.
 23 The last time I went to Suchow I bought for Mr. Wang the Third a set of brass musical instruments, costing thirteen thousand four hundred cash, and two nests of stone-ware basins, costing two thousand two hundred and fifty cash for each nest.

NOTES.

1 The use of the classifier causes the dropping of the second character of 仿本, which is the more general term. Those who decline to drop the final 本, use the general classifier above.

3 Kanghi's dictionary is so called because made in the reign, and by the order, of the Emperor Kanghi, the second and most illustrious emperor of the present dynasty. A 套 is a number of volumes enclosed in one case. Large works are usually put up in 套 of six or eight volumes each.

5 The words 兩個 are inserted to indicate that the two are to form the pair which are necessary in order to 抬 a thing. They might, however, be omitted without special damage to the sentence.

6 The first clause is a rhetorical inversion for 一本好體面書, by which stress is thrown on the 好體面.

7 The sentence might also be rendered, — Go out to-day and buy me ten pens, etc. Which meaning was intended would depend wholly on the pauses made and inflection used.

9 In Peking, 漿 is generally written for to starch; but doubtless the proper term is 糳. When read in the 4th tone it means starch, and in the 1st tone, to starch. Where hard sounds are used, the sound of 漿, being soft, is incorrect. The term 糳洗 is a singular inversion of the natural order.

10 會 here means to apprehend, which is one of its more unusual meanings.

11 The book called 千字文 consists of one thousand common characters, arranged in two hundred and fifty measures of four each, no character being repeated.

12 入門, entering the door, is a common term in the titles of books which are introductory or elementary. 木板, a wooden block, or board, engraved with characters for printing. 木 is added to distinguish this style of printing from that with moveable types, which are called 活板. An electro-type plate is a 銅板.

14 化學 and 形學 (21) are names given by foreigners.

17 三五句話, three or five clauses of words. 三兩句, three or two clauses, is also sometimes used in the same way.

19 生書. A book, or portion of a book, which has not been previously seen, or learned.

21 When dollars were first used in China, there were no fractional coins, and the dollars were chopped into sectors and used instead; and from this came the term 角, which now means a dime.

22 Instead of putting their books in book-cases, the Chinese usually pile them on long tables at the side of the room.

LESSON XLIII.

THE AUXILIARY VERB 得.

得, as an auxiliary verb, expresses completion under the aspect of practicability, feasibility, or propriety. With a negative it strongly reverses these ideas. It is not unfrequently inserted between the principal verb and another auxiliary, in

which case it adds to the force of the affirmation:— Compare Les. 31. In speaking, it is often heard tai, which is simply a corrupt pronunciation. 的 is sometimes substituted for it, with very little, if any, change of meaning.

VOCABULARY.

邪 Hsie². Deflected from the right; depraved, vicious; heretical, illegal; corrupting; haunted.

免 Mien³. To avoid; to escape from; to evade; to let off, to excuse, to forgive.

憂 Yu¹. Grief, sorrow; anxiety; low spirited, melancholy; mourning.

解 Chie³. To open; to untie; to extricate; to dissipate; to dispel; to explain; to release. Also chie⁴. 55

渴 K'od². To thirst; to long for, to pant after.

近 Chin⁴. Near; recent; soon; to approach; similar.

謠 Yao². A tale, a rumor; a false report.

課三十四第

LESSON XLIII.

火。不。得。逃。去。是。也。脚。點。老。那。
 了。得。他。逃。了。○。是。謠。也。怨。脚。點。老。那。
 他。他。生。了。王。你。言。不。得。站。小。實。個。
 是。一。氣。法。家。信。得。牢。事。○。房。
 個。小。了。逃。裏。不。得。不。不。子。
 媳。不。了。不。這。得。怕。得。邪。
 婦。得。鬼。樣。潮。遠。大。得。住。
 凡。馬。不。濕。○。解。風。得。不。得。
 事。上。得。了。怪。○。救。搖。得。得。
 由。惹。你。得。這。不。得。近。得。
 不。起。你。得。話。得。渴。得。知。得。
 得。來。怪。瘡。得。也。說。得。那。道。得。
 來。怪。瘡。得。也。說。得。那。道。得。

- 1 That house is haunted and is not habitable. [docility.
- 2 Do not be deceived by his outward
- 3 Restraining momentary anger may save a hundred years of sorrow.
- 4 It is not worth while trespassing on your time with this trifling affair.
- 5 He who stands firmly on his feet, need not fear the force of a strong wind.
- 6 If you did not know, you are not then to be blamed for it.
- 7 Water at a distance will not quench (save from) thirst near at hand.
- 8 Those are all flying rumors unworthy of belief. [purpose.
- 9 This mode of speech will answer the
- 10 With such a damp house as this, it is no wonder you have the itch.
- 11 You may evade the law, but you can not escape the gods.
- 12 You provoked him. No wonder he got angry. [caught fire.
- 13 What shall we do? The stable has

謠言 Yao² yen². False reports, exciting rumors, alarming stories.

潮 Ch'ao¹. The tide; damp, moist.

潮濕 Shi¹. Wet, soaked; damp, humid.

潮濕 Damp, humid.

怪不得 Kuai⁴ pu⁴ tē². No wonder, well I never, sure enough.

疥 Chie⁴. A little sore; the itch.

王法 Wang² fa². The civil law; punishment.

鬼神 Kwei² shén². Demons and gods; the gods; supernatural beings in general.

惹 Je². To provoke, to stir up, to excite; to induce, to bring upon.

棚 P'eng². A shed, a stable; a tent.

疑 I². To doubt, to suspect; to surmise; to hesitate.

嫌疑 Hsien² i². Suspicion.

教化 Chiao⁴ hwa⁴. Education, civilization.

上天 Shang⁴ T'ien¹. Heaven (personified), the powers above, deity.

瞞 Man². To deceive; to hoodwink; to conceal the truth.

銅 Tung². Copper; brass.

倫 Lun². Regular; natural relationships; species, class.

人倫 Jen² lun². The five relations; viz.,—husband and wife, father and son, brother and brother, prince and officer, friend and friend.

雜亂 Cha² lan⁴. Same as 亂雜:—Les 32.

本分 Pèn² fèn⁴. Duty, obligation; the things becoming any station.

醉 Tswi⁴. Intoxicated, drunk; stupefied.

顧 Ku⁴. To attend to, to regard; to reflect on; to assist, to patronize.

制 Chi⁴. To govern; to limit; to hinder; to cause to do, to control.

鄰 Lin². Near, contiguous; a neighbor; a neighborhood.

舍 She⁴. To lodge; a shed, a cottage, a dwelling; my. Also shé².

鄰舍. A neighbor.

坊 Fang¹. An alley; a hamlet; a neighborhood; an honorary portal; a factory.

街坊 Chie¹ fang¹. Next door neighbors.

孝 Hsiao⁴. Duty to parents and seniors; mourning apparel; time of mourning.

他。○事¹⁵急¹⁵了，避¹⁷不得¹⁷嫌疑。○教¹⁶化¹⁶最¹⁶是¹⁶少¹⁶。
 不得¹⁷的。○欺¹⁷得¹⁷別人，欺¹⁷不得¹⁷上天。○我¹⁸有¹⁸
 一¹⁸把¹⁸舊¹⁸銅¹⁸壺¹⁸，用¹⁸使¹⁸不得¹⁸了。○瞞¹⁹得¹⁹過¹⁹人，瞞¹⁹不¹⁹
 過¹⁹神。○真²⁰的²⁰假²⁰不得²⁰，假²⁰的²⁰真²⁰不得²⁰。○人²¹倫²¹
 二²¹字²¹，是²¹雜²¹亂²¹不得²¹的。○那²²個²²人²²用²²不得²²，他²²
 不²²守²²本²²分²²，常²²喝²²醉²²酒。○我²³對²³你²³說²³一²³句²³話²³，
 使²³得²³使²³不得²³。○凡²⁴人²⁴在²⁴初²⁴生²⁴的²⁴時²⁴候²⁴，一²⁴刻²⁴
 也²⁴離²⁴不²⁴得²⁴父²⁴母²⁴。○我²⁵這²⁵二²⁵年²⁵，窮²⁵的²⁵實²⁵在²⁵過²⁵
 不²⁵得²⁵了。○人²⁶護²⁶顧²⁶自²⁶己²⁶，也²⁶得²⁶於²⁶理²⁶上²⁶下²⁶得²⁶去²⁶。
 ○我²⁷寫²⁷的²⁷字²⁷太²⁷不²⁷好²⁷，實²⁷在²⁷見²⁷不²⁷得²⁷人。○你²⁸

- 14 She is the youngest daughter-in-law, and nothing is under her control.
- 15 The business is urgent. One can not stop to guard against suspicion.
- 16 Education is most essential.
- 17 You may defraud others: you can not defraud Heaven. [not usable.]
- 18 I have an old brass tea-pot, but it is
- 19 You may deceive man (or, men): you can not deceive God (or, the gods).
- 20 The genuine can not be made counterfeit, nor the counterfeit, genuine.
- 21 The human relations must not be confused.
- 22 That man is not fit to be used. He will not behave himself. He is continually getting drunk.
- 23 Will you allow me to 'speak a few words with you?
- 24 Every man, when he is first born, is dependent every moment on his father and mother.
- 25 I have been so poor these two years, that I really have no way of living.
- 26 In looking out for himself, a man

孝順 *Hsiao⁴ shun⁴*. Dutiful to parents, *filial*.
 盼 *P'an⁴*. To look towards; to long for, to expect.

 盼望 *P'an⁴ wang⁴*. To look for, to hope for, to
 long for.

耀 *Yao⁴*. To illumine; effulgence, *splendor*.
 榮耀 *Yung³ yao⁴*. Splendor, *glory*; honor.
 趁 *Nien³*. To follow after, to pursue.
 拽 *Chwat⁴*. To throw away, to cast aside. (L.)
 Also *yii⁴*.

NOTES.

2 More literally, *It will not do to regard his appearance of docility.*
 3 A proverb somewhat *wên-li* in style.
 5 A proverbial couplet in rhyme.
 6 那 may here be regarded as standing for the matter referred to, and be rendered *it*; i.e., *what you have done*; or, it may be regarded as combining with 也 to form a conjunctive adverb, meaning, *then, in that case*. The translation given combines these views. It might seem most natural to make it stand for the first clause, and so render, *Your not knowing, is a thing you are not to be blamed for*. This, however, is not the correct sense.
 9 Note how 說 here takes three auxiliary verbs after it, each of which adds to and modifies the force of the principal verb. If the 過 were dropped out, the translation should be, *This language is admissible*.
 10 疥 is the general and proper term for *itch*; but in the South it is rarely used, 瘡, which properly means a boil, or sore, of any kind, being substituted for it.
 11 A common saying in the mouths of those who would exhort people to virtue. The term 鬼神 is a comprehensive classification of all spiritual beings. As a class, the 鬼 are inferior, subject to authority, uncanonized, and evil. As a

class, the 神 are superior, exercise authority, are canonized, and good. A canonized 鬼 becomes a 神. The attendants and messengers of the 神 are 鬼. Used impersonally, as a philosophical term in Chinese cosmogony and metaphysics, it refers to the (supposed) inferior and superior powers of nature, viewed from the spiritual side. 陰 and 陽 characterize these same powers from the physical side.
 13 了不得 is a common exclamation, when anything disastrous or alarming suddenly occurs. It properly expresses the idea that matters are beyond all remedy, but is often used as a mere exaggeration.
 14 This might also simply mean a *young* daughter-in-law, referring to her being recently married and young.
 16 The 最 is transposed for rhetorical reasons. The regular colloquial form would be, 是最少不得的. The sentence is from the Sacred Edict.
 17 The use of 別人, in the first clause, shows that 上天 is regarded as personal. This use of the word 人 is the only means that Chinese colloquial has of expressing personality.
 19 If the speaker were a polytheist, he would of course be understood as using 神 in the plural; but if a monotheist

下東○榮來的人在的來快制制
 西那³³耀○人捨街鄰○一不不
 就賊心我³²那不坊舍我³⁰點得了
 跑見裏如裏養得。現和你走我我
 了。我歡今盼養得你³¹你作天麼裏
 得喜的望得出看走了、十來回○
 得很了天上好兒不孝順實年得○
 急、不上的兒子順實年得是²⁹

must still keep within the bounds of reason. [fit to be seen].
 27 My writing is too poor: it really is not.
 28 You can do nothing at all to me.
 29 If you go with some speed, you can get back in two days.
 30 We have been neighbors for over ten years, and now that you are going away I am very loth to give you up.
 31 Look at the undutiful man. How can he bring up a good son?
 32 I am now looking for glory on high, and my heart is filled with joy inexpressible.
 33 The thief, seeing that I was pursuing him hotly, dropped the goods and fled.

he would be understood as using it in the singular. The want of a plural form leaves all such distinctions to be inferred from the circumstances or connection. Fewer mistakes are made in consequence than one would be ready to suppose.

22 酒 is here somewhat redundant. It is added to give additional force and perspicuity.

26 In some places the accent in 護自己, is thrown on the 己, contrary to the usual custom with the term 自己. The first 得 expresses necessity, being put for 必得. When 上 and 下 are used together, they generally mean above and below. Here, however, 上 attaches to 理, and 下 is used as a principal verb.

27 見不得人, not [fit] to be seen by men. The logical subject; viz., 人, is made the object, thus turning the verb into the passive form. 人 is used indefinitely:—Les. 52.

28 制不了. This phrase seems to be quite t'ung hsing, but there is a difference of opinion as to the proper writing. Some would write 治. The form 那裏去, or, as it is often spoken, 那兒去, is Pekingese. Teachers say that its peculiar meaning in this connection comes from the custom of banishing offenders beyond the borders.

33 The sound and meaning here given to 揀 are not recognized by the dictionaries. The word is very widely used, being found in the North, the Centre, and the South, and this character is established as the most suitable writing.

LESSON XLIV.

就.

就 has already been illustrated (Les. 13) as a sign of the immediate future, and has also been several times used, meaning at once. It has, however, a variety of other uses, of which the following is an approximate classification:—

1. It is used as a principal verb, meaning, to approach, to take advantage of, to be ready, to accommodate one's self to. (5) (13).
2. It is added as an auxiliary to a few verbs, giving the idea of, ready or satisfactory. (15) (26).
3. Before an active verb, and referring to past time, it means, just, then, at once, etc. (3) (6).
4. Joined with 是 it forms the much used phrase 就是, which has a variety of uses not easy to classify:—

- (1) At the opening of a sentence it means, even, even if. (1) (14).
- (2) In a subordinate clause it draws a conclusion, or states a consequence; and may be rendered, but, but somehow, so, etc. (4) (11).
- (3) At the end of a sentence it marks a decision, coupled with a concession; sometimes having the force of such phrases as, might as well, so I will, etc., but is often untranslatable. (18) (29).
- (4) As a reply, it means, that's so, all right, so be it. (28). See Les. 70.

就是 is one of the most important and ever recurring characters in colloquial Mandarin, and its skillful management marks an accomplished speaker.

課 四 十 四 第

LESSON XLIV.

就是藐視我，我也不怕。○已經定規就了，到這初
 人。○就着你的掃帚，把我的門口也掃一掃。○他就
 是說不出來。○鄭先生溫柔和平，凡事都肯將就
 ○就是這着。○人得時的時候，說怎麼樣就怎麼樣。
 ○這着。○話就是繙不出來。○不管他肯不肯，就是
 ○熱鍋點水。○他見事情不對，就拿起腿來走了。
 麼都很快。○就是太冒失。○收拾出飯來，可以就着
 出來。○你怎麼說的，就當怎麼做。○他不論做甚
 上。○你就是生氣，也是無益。○我實在惡心，就是吐
 你。○你就是生氣，也是無益。○我實在惡心，就是吐

- 1 Even if you do get angry, it will do no good.
- 2 I am exceedingly nauseated, but somehow I can not vomit. [would.]
- 3 You ought to do just as you said you
- 4 Whatever he does, he does very rapidly; the trouble is, he is too precipitate.
- 5 When you take out the rice, you can take advantage of the hot kettle to warm a little water.
- 6 When he saw the business was going wrong, he left without ceremony.
- 7 Somehow I can't translate this sentence.
- 8 No matter whether he is willing or not, this is the way it must be.
- 9 When a man is in favor [with the powers that be], whatever he says is law.
- 10 Even if you are not willing [to this arrangement], you should make some allowance.
- 11 He understands it, but somehow he can not express himself.
- 12 Mr. Cheng is mild and peaceable, and in every thing willing to make allowance for people.
- 13 I will take advantage of your broom to sweep before my door also.

惡心 *Ou³ hsin¹*..... Nauseated.
 嘔 *Ou¹*..... To vomit, to spit out. Also *ou³*.
 吐 *T'u⁴*..... To vomit. Also *t'u³*.
 風快 *Feng¹ k'wai⁴*. Quick as the wind, very quick, very rapid.
 冒失 *Mao⁴ shi¹*. Rash, imprudent, precipitate; fool-hardy.
 煇得 *Wu⁴*..... To warm, to steam. See *wu³*.
 得時 *Tê² shi²*. In favor, well circumstanced, in luck.
 願 *Yüan⁴*. To wish, to desire; to be willing; a vow, a votive offering.—Les. 59.
 願意 *Yüan⁴ i⁴*..... Willing, agreed.
 將就 *Chiang¹ chiu⁴*. To put up with, to tolerate, to make allowance for.
 鄭 *Cheng⁴*..... Serious; a surname.
 柔 *Jou²*. Flexible, pliant; soft; mild, gentle; complaisant; a flat in music.

溫柔 *Wên¹ jou²*..... Mild, gentle, meek.
 和平 *Huô² p'ing²*..... Peaceable, amiable.
 俯就 *Fu³*... To stoop; to bow down; to condescend.
 俯就 *Chiu⁴ fu³*. To accommodate to; to make shift; to make the best of.
 掃帚 *Sao⁴*..... A coarse broom. See *sao³*.
 掃帚 *Sao⁴ chou³*. A broom of coarse grass, or bamboo; the *sao⁴ chou³* plant.
 藐 *Miao³*. To slight, to look down upon; to express contempt in the looks.
 視 *Shi⁴*..... To inspect, to look at; to regard.
 藐視 *Shi⁴*. To show contempt, to disdain; to act superciliously; to treat scornfully.
 庚 *Keng¹*..... To alter; to bestow; age, years.
 柬 *Chien³*..... To select; to abridge; a card.
 庚帖 *Keng¹ t'ie³*. A card containing the horoscope of a betrothed person.

道不 就是 若是 ○ 我們 強留 對我 罵我 飯長
 過愁 是了。 是到 我²⁹ 們還 留我 我我 長大的
 日穿 不。 ○ 也 不 能 若 是 的 就 打 的 你
 子不 愁。 我³⁰ 願 強 是 不 心 打 打 打 打
 也兒 看 不 住 嗎 對 他 他 他 他 他
 就孫 你 改 嗎 他 他 他 他 他
 是又 現 我 嗎 他 他 他 他 他
 了都 在 用 嗎 他 他 他 他 他
 知喫 他 他 他 他 他 他 他 他 他

26 The price, I have settled with him at two hundred and sixty cash per catty.
 27 I was not raised on your rice: you have no right to whip me. Ans. If you insult me, I have a right to whip you.
 28 If it does not suit our wishes, he will not constrain us to stay; and if it does not suit his wishes, shall we insist on staying? Ans. Of course not.
 29 Nor am I willing to keep constantly scolding him. If, after all, he does not change, I will just discharge him.
 30 You have no anxiety about food or clothing, and your children and grandchildren are all doing well; it seems to me you ought to be satisfied.

NOTES.

2 惡心 properly means a wicked heart, but is put figuratively for nausea. In Peking, when thus used, the tone of 惡 changes from its normal tone of *oŋ⁴*, to *oŋ²*.

6 拿起腿來走了, *took up his legs and left*;—a colloquial phrase, meaning that he left suddenly and without notice. It is sometimes shortened into 拿腿走了.

9 得時 is here applied to one who is in the confidence and favor of a superior, so that his advice prevails and he can get whatever he wishes.

12 將就 and 就俯 are not precisely equivalent. 將就 is to tolerate, or make allowance for, the peculiarities of others; while 就俯 is to adapt, or accommodate one's self to, the peculiarities of others. In many places 就俯 becomes 俯就.

13 This sentence is an indirect apology for taking the broom. The use of 也 implies that the owner of the broom had just finished sweeping before his own door.

15 這初六日. The use of 這 points to the 6th of the current month. The 庚帖 is a folded card of red paper, on which is written the proposal, or its acceptance, as the case may be. The age of the party is given by means of the eight characters, marking the year, month, day, and hour of his (or her) birth; hence the name, *age card*. See Les. 117 Note (31). The exchanging of these cards by the hands of the go-betweens (媒人), constitutes the marriage engagement. The 媒柬 is a similar paper, and is used for the same purpose, but does not generally contain the eight 庚字, or *age characters*. 東帖 is another name for the same.

16 就 here expresses the speaker's impatience with a peculiar elegance and force, which the translation fails to convey.

19 就就, as here used, is not entirely *t'ung hsing*; it means to the point of perfect readiness, and differs slightly in meaning from 妥妥. The order of the last clause would more regularly be, 他怎麼又反復了. The 怎麼 is put first in order to give it additional emphasis.

20 誇海口, *brags with a mouth like the sea*.

21 就 is here repeated, but not as in the 19th sentence. The emphasis there required, is very different from that required here. The first 就 is an adverb, the second a verb.

22 The fact that 酒席 is the common, and in fact the only, colloquial term for a feast, is very significant. The second part of the sentence is only intelligible in view of the Chinese custom of sending round, when the feast is all ready, to invite the guests a second time.

24 哈喇 is probably the result of an attempt to say "cloth." The pronunciation of 哈 is very various. In Nanking, cloth is called *ha la*.

25 Of the three forms given, 得 is Pekingese, the other two are Central and Southern. 飯 may refer to rice specifically, or it may include the whole meal.

30 喫不愁穿不愁 is an inversion of the more natural order, 不愁喫不愁穿, made for the purpose of giving emphasis to the words 喫 and 穿. 知道過日子, *know to make a living*; i.e., they are not lazy or dissipated, but diligent and thrifty.

LESSON XLV.

那 WITH THE CLASSIFIERS.

那, which? is joined with all the classifiers. An 一 is often inserted between the 那 and the classifier, and *properly* belongs there in all cases. When emphasis is desired it is always inserted.

Thus used, 那 is not always strictly interrogative, but passes into the declarative form in the same way, and very much in the same circumstances, as "which" does in English.

第四十五課

LESSON XLV.

那個人人生來就是惡人呢。這四個小知道
 那一塊硯臺是他的。你說要找一個姓
 你看中那一個呢。○你○說○要○找○一個
 秦的，到底是你那個姓秦的。○這○兩○件○大
 套兒，合式，你就用那個。○這○兩○件○大
 褂子，你看那一件的針線好呢。○你
 來請先生坐席，是請那一位呢。○這
 認認這些筆，那一個管是你的。○這
 把椅子，我實在認不出那一把是他
 的來。○你們學格物，現在學那一本

- 1 Who is by birth a bad man ?
- 2 Who knows which inkstand is his ?
- 3 Which of these four pups do you fancy ?
- 4 You say you want to find a man by the name of Ch'in; but which of the Ch'ins ?
- 5 Just use whichever t'ao is suitable.
- 6 Of the sewing of these two large gowns, which is better ?
- 7 Which gentleman is it that you have come to invite to the feast ?
- 8 Examine these pens and see which is yours.
- 9 I really do not know which one of these three chairs is his.
- 10 Which volume of the natural philosophy are you now studying ?

VOCABULARY.

硯臺 Yen⁴ t'ai². An ink stone, an inkstand.
 看中 K'an⁴ chung⁴. To be pleased with; to prefer.
 秦 Ch'in². An ancient kingdom; name of a dynasty; nasty; a surname.
 衫 Shan¹. An unlined garment,—coat, shirt or jacket.
 赴 Fu⁴. To go to, to repair to; to attend; to hasten.
 赴席 Fu⁴ hsi². To attend a feast.
 坐席 Tso⁴ hsi². To sit at a feast, to go to a feast.
 辯 Pien⁴. To dispute; to argue; to criticise; to discriminate.
 辯論 Pien lun⁴. To discuss, to debate, to argue.
 希 Hsi¹. Rare, seldom; sparse; to expect; to delight in; almost, nearly:—Les. 57.
 罕 Han³. Rare, scarce; seldom, infrequent.
 罕希 罕. Rare, uncommon; to prize, to delight in.
 圈 Chüan⁴. An enclosure; a prison; a fold; a snare. See ch'üan¹.
 正 Chêng⁴. The first (month). See chêng⁴.
 芽 Ya². A germ, a sprout; the beginning.
 白菜 Pai² ts'ai⁴. Cabbage.
 黃芽菜 Huang² ya² ts'ai⁴. Cabbage.

獎 Chiang³. To exhort, to encourage; to commend, to laud.
 誇獎 K'wa¹ Chiang³. To praise, to eulogize; to boast, to brag.
 葡萄 P'u². The vine (grape).
 葡萄 T'ao². Used for its sound in 葡萄.
 葡萄 葡萄. The grape, grapes.
 棗 Tsao³. The buckthorn or jujube, commonly called date in China.
 彙 Hui⁴, Lei³. A class, a series; to sort.
 字彙 Tsi⁴ hui⁴. A vocabulary, an abridged dictionary.
 獅 Shi¹. The lion.
 虎 Hu³. The tiger; brave, fierce, cruel.
 老虎 Lao³ hu³. A tiger.
 熊 Hsiung². The bear. To domineer over, to victimize. (L.)
 種 Chung³. A seed; a sort, a kind. See chung⁴.
 獸 Shou⁴. A wild animal, a beast; brutal.
 野獸 Yie² shou⁴. A wild beast.
 兇 Hsiung¹. Inhuman; cruel; fierce; malignant.
 猛 Mêng³. Fierce; resolute; cruel; severe; suddenly, unexpectedly:—Les. 115.
 兇猛. Fierce, savage, ferocious, raging.

老虎、熊、這三種野獸，無論那一種都是最兇猛的。
 字彙、一部新的、一部舊的、先生要買那一部呢。獅子。
 葡萄、也有棗子兒，你願意喫那一樣呢。書舖裏有兩部
 的那個學生，是那一個，答就是那個頂小的。這裏有
 擔黃芽菜、兩頭兒都好，你要那一頭兒呢。你常誇獎
 肥就宰那一隻。○今日是正月那一天，答十三。○這一
 兒，你喜歡那一張呢。○可以到羊園裏去看看，那一隻
 都有滋味。○你看那匹馬好，你就騎那匹。○這三張畫
 個人辯論，是那一個有理。○我聽他的話，無論那一句
 呢。○這些銀子，你嫌那一錠成色不足。○先生聽這兩

- 11 Which of these pieces of silver is it with the quality of which you are dissatisfied?
- 12 Of the two whom you have heard debate, which do you think is in the right?
- 13 To my ears, every word he said was interesting.
- 14 Just ride whichever horse you like best.
- 15 Which of these three pictures do you prize the most (prefer)?
- 16 Go and look among the flock of sheep, and dress whichever one is fat.
- 17 What day of the first month is this? Ans. The thirteenth.
- 18 Both ends of this load of cabbage are good. Which end do you want?
- 19 Which is the scholar you are always bragging about? Ans. That smallest one.
- 20 Here are both grapes and dates. Which would you prefer to eat?
- 21 There are two dictionaries in the book-store; one new one, and one second-hand. Which do you wish to buy?
- 22 The lion, the tiger and the bear; all these three kinds of wild beasts are very fierce.

NOTES.

1 If the 呢 were omitted, this sentence would more naturally be taken to mean; "That man was by birth a wicked man. The two meanings might of course be distinguished by careful emphasis, even without the 呢. Every interrogative sentence in this lesson might end with a 呢; and if the language were regular and consistent with itself, would do so. As it is, some do, and some do not. The sentences are just as the Chinese teachers have made them.

2 Perspicuity would seem to require 呢 at the end of this sentence. Its meaning, as written, is entirely uncertain. It might be translated just as truly, Who would have thought it? That inkstand was his! As spoken, the meaning would be indicated by the emphasis.

4 The first 個 is here used somewhat as we use "one," meaning a man named so-and-so. The use of 到處 implies that there had been some misunderstanding about the person.

6 The Chinese here makes the comparison by simply asking which is good. See Les. 58.

9 Note how far the auxiliary 來 is separated from 出, and from the principal verb, 認.

11 Lit., These [pieces of] silver, you dislike which piece [because] its touch is not full.

13 Lit., [As] I heard his words, no matter which, all were interesting.

20 菜子 is Southern; 棗兒 is universally used in the North.

LESSON XLVI.
 THE COMPOUND RELATIVE.

所 A place,—a compound relative pronoun, meaning what, that, who, that which, the things which. The clause it introduces usually comes

between the subject and the predicate, and in all such cases ends with 的. In other cases the 的 is sometimes omitted, or replaced by 着.

第四十六課

LESSON XLVI.

備的。他一點也沒問。○
 行。○這就是所說的那位小令郎嗎。○我預
 事。來囉唆我做甚麼。○你小令郎的章程要
 賣了。也不做還所欠的債。○把這所有的東西辦
 得的也清楚。○他圓全。○我所有的有限所變
 他扯謊。扯得這樣圓全。○我學的東西都記
 撒鹽比他喫的米還多。○我所學的有限所記
 所喫的鹽比他喫的米還多。○我所學的有限所記
 練的多。所見聞的也廣。○少所見多所怪。○你
 你³我所提的事。我已經知道了。○他²所說的都是實話。
 我¹我所讀的書。都忘記了。○老⁴年人所經

- 1 I have forgotten all the books I learned.
- 2 Every thing that he says is true.
- 3 What you have mentioned I already knew.
- 4 The experience of old men is large, and their observation, wide.
- 5 He who has little experience has many surprises.
- 6 You have eaten more salt than he has rice.
- 7 What surprises me is, that he tells his lies with such proficiency.
- 8 What I learned was but little, and what I remember is not distinct.
- 9 Even if he should sell off all he has, it is not enough to pay off all the debts he owes.
- 10 This is something that he should attend to. Why do you come bothering me about it?
- 11 The plan you proposed will, I fear, not work.
- 12 Is this your little son that you spoke of?
- 13 He did not examine me on any thing that I had prepared.

VOCABULARY.

所 *Soa*³. A place, a locality; the cause by which:—
 see Sub. A classifier:—Les. 125.
 讀 *Tu*². To read aloud; to read carefully; to
 study. Also *tou*⁴.
 練 *Lien*⁴. To experiment on; to practice; to
 select.*
 經練 *Ching*¹ *lien*⁴. Experience
 見聞 *Chien*⁴ *wen*². Observation.
 廣 *Kwang*³. Broad, wide; spacious; extensive;
 large.
 鹽 *Yen*². Salt; saline.
 奇 *Ch*². Extraordinary, surprising, wonderful;
 strange; unnatural. Also *chi*¹.
 奇怪 *Ch*² *kwai*⁴. Remarkable, wonderful, sur-
 prising.
 全 *Ch*² *üan*³. Complete; entire; unbroken, per-
 fect; all, the whole:—Les. 158.
 圓全 *Yüan*² *ch*² *üan*³. Complete.
 限 *Hsien*⁴. A limit; a restriction; a few, a little;
 to limit, to set bounds to; to assign.

變 *Pien*⁴. To transform, to change; a turn in
 affairs; a revolution.
 變賣 *Pien*⁴ *mai*⁴. To sell off, to turn into
 money.
 欠 *Ch*² *ien*⁴. To be deficient; to owe; wanting.
 債 *Chai*⁴. A debt, an obligation.
 囉 *Lod*². Prattle; troublesome.
 囉唆 *Lod*² *sod*¹. Troublesome, embarrassing; to
 bother, to trouble, to worry.
 排 *P*² ³. To place in order, to arrange; to ad-
 just; to stretch; a row, a line.
 安排 *An*¹ *p*² ³. To arrange, to dispose; to pro-
 pose, to plan, to intend.
 鋪排 *P*² *u*¹ *p*² ³. To arrange, to distribute; to
 plan.
 章 *Chang*¹. A statement; statutes, rules, items;
 a chapter, a section; variegated.
 程 *Ch*² *eng*². A rule, a pattern; a regulation; a
 task; a road, a stage; to estimate.
 章程 *A plan; a set of rules; procedure; policy.*

所不在，無所不知，無所不能的神。
 所存的，意思，沒有神所不知道的話。
 都搶了去了。○那一夜進去一些個強盜，把他所積攢的，
 個錢。○那²¹我所算的數，和你所算的，正差十三
 虧空嗎。○我²⁰所算的錢多，所入的錢少，還能不拉
 餓荒。○他¹⁹年中所出的錢多，所入的錢少，還能不拉
 們在那邊所說的私體話，我在這邊都聽見了。
 們知道的，我們所見証的，是我們看見的。○你¹⁸
 們知道的，我們所見証的，是我們看見的。○你¹⁸
 他所應許的，都落了空。○我們¹⁷所說的，是
 半¹⁶年喫的。○就¹⁵是你自己所花的錢，也該記賬。

- 14 The grain gathered in one year is not sufficient for a half year's food.
- 15 Even what you spend yourself, you ought to keep an account of.
- 16 What he promised, all came to nothing.
- 17 We speak that which we know, and testify to that which we have seen.
- 18 We heard here all the private conversation you had over there.
- 19 The expenditures of the year exceeded the receipts. How could he help running in debt?
- 20 The amount, as I have reckoned it, differs from your count by just thirteen cash.
- 21 That night some thieves broke in and robbed him of all he had saved.
- 22 There is nothing that a man says, nothing that he does, not even any of the thoughts of his heart, that God (or, the gods) does not know.
- 23 The Lord of Heaven is the omnipresent, omniscient and omnipotent God.

令 *Ling*⁴. A law, an order; to command; to cause, to cause to do:—Les. 71; good, worthy;—a term of honor.
 郎 *Lang*². A gentleman; a son; a term of respect; evident.
 令郎. Your son, a son.
 糧食 *Liang*³ *shí*². Grain.
 空 *K'ung*¹. Empty, void; a hole, an opening; the firmament; emptiness. See *k'ung*⁴.
 落空 *Loa*⁴ *k'ung*¹. To come to nothing.
 見証 *Chien*⁴ *chéng*⁴. To testify; testimony.
 體己 *T'i*³ *ch'i*². Private, personal; secret, confidential:—Note (18).

私 *Si*¹. Private; selfish; partial; secret; underhand; illicit.
 防 *Fang*². A dyke, a levee; a defense, a protection; to ward off; to guard against.
 私防. Illicit savings; private, secret.
 虧空 *K'wei*¹ *k'ung*⁴. Debt, deficiency.
 盜 *Tao*⁴. A robber, a highwayman to rob.
 強盜 *Ch'iang*³ *tao*⁴. A robber, a bandit.
 積 *Chi*¹. To accumulate; to store up.
 攢 *Tsan*³, *Ts'wan*³. To collect, to pile up.
 積攢. To amass; to accumulate; to hoard.
 天主 *T'ien*¹ *Chu*³. The Lord of Heaven.

NOTES.

- 2 Or, *Everything that he said was true.*
- 5 A common saying, slightly *wén* in style.
- 6 A forcible way of expressing, that one is a great deal older and more experienced than another.
- 11 要 See Les. 13, Note (19).
- 18 體己 is widely used, but is not *t'ung* *hsing*. Note that 己 is here read *Ch'i*². In Peking the phrase is heard *t'i*³ *hsi*¹, but the writing of *hsi*¹ is not apparent.
- 21 搶了去了 We have here one 了 added to the principal verb, and another to the auxiliary. This is often

done for emphasis, but is not elegant. Both the 了 should be spoken *la*².
 22 This sentence was made by a Christian teacher. If a heathen teacher had had occasion to express such a sentiment, he would probably have said 上天 (Heaven Above) instead of 神.
 23 In these neat phrases 所 may be taken, either in its original sense as a noun meaning *place*, or as a relative pronoun meaning *that which*, and the sense will remain the same; thus showing how the 所 passes from the one meaning to the other.

課七十四第

LESSON XLVII.

喫 ○ 厭。頭。 ○ 少。 ○ 打 我¹
 不 ○ 我¹⁰老⁹ ○ 還⁸路⁷ ○ 有⁶ ○ 給⁴他。的
 愛 家 太 太 沒 上 隻 小 了 他 ○³指
 喫 裏 太 有 買 這 隻 小 必 得 一 天 日 疼。
 呢。 煮 了 兩 犁 頭 犁 些 火 輪 船 加 大 塊 陰 天 ○ 你²
 ○ 可¹¹一 個 了 怎 麼 耕 地 呢。 討 碼 排 一 排 嫌 頭 頭
 以 找 四 塊 頓 鍋 芋 頭 你 愛 他。 呢。 討 碼 排 一 排 嫌 頭 頭
 可 以 找 四 塊 頓 鍋 芋 頭 你 愛 他。 呢。 討 碼 排 一 排 嫌 頭 頭

- 1 My finger hurts.
- 2 You ought not to strike him with your fist.
- 3 It is cloudy to-day. The sun is not visible.
- 4 I gave him a large piece of bread, and yet he is dissatisfied.
- 5 These shoes are small. It will be necessary to stretch them with a last.
- 6 A large steamer has come along-side the wharf.
- 7 These small stones on the road are very annoying.
- 8 I have not yet bought a plow-share. How can I plow?
- 9 The old lady has two maid-servants to wait on her.
- 10 I have in the house a kettle of taros cooked. Are you fond of them?

LESSON XLVII.

THE SPECIFIC SUFFIX 頭.

頭 The head,—is added to many nouns to specialize them. No rule can be given as to what words will take 頭 after them. In general it may be observed, that words involving the idea of a lump, or of a point, take 頭 after them. When-

ever the addition of 頭 makes any special modification of the meaning I have defined the combination; in other cases I have not.

For full list of words taking 頭 after them see Supplement.

VOCABULARY.

棺 *Hsüen*⁴..... *A last*; to stuff, to fill in a cavity.
 碼 *Ma*³. Weights; a yard (meas.); an emporium, a mart, a jetty; abbreviated numerals.
 碼頭 *Ma*³ *t'ou*²..... *A jetty, a wharf; a mart.*
 火輪船 *Hwo*³ *lun*² *ts'wan*². *A steamship, a steamboat.*
 犁 *Li*²..... *A plow; dark; piebald.*
 鏟 *Hwa*²..... *A spade; a plow point or share.*
 鏡 *Ch'an*¹..... *To carve, to chip; a couller point.*
 鏡頭 *Ch'an*¹ *T'ou*²..... *A plow point, a couller.*
 犁頭 *Li*² *t'ou*²..... *The same.*
 耕 *Ching*¹, *Keng*¹..... *To till; to plow.*
 了 *Ya*¹..... *A fork; a slave girl; a daughter.*
 舌 *Shé*²..... *The tongue; the clapper of a bell.*
 唇 *Ch'un*²..... *The lips.*
 嘴 *Tsui*³ *ch'un*²..... *The lips.*
 腫 *Chung*³..... *To swell, swollen; boastful.*

波 *Pod*¹..... *A wave, a ripple; ruffled; vast.*
 稜 *Leng*²..... *A corner, an edge; an angle.*
 羅 *Lo*². *A net; a sieve; gauze; to spread out, to arrange; to bolt,—as flour.*
 波稜蓋 *Pod*¹ *leng*² *kai*². *The knee; the kneepan.*
 波羅蓋 *Pod*¹ *lo*² *kai*⁴..... *The same.*
 間 *Chien*¹. *A space, an interval; between; in the midst of; during; to set apart. A classifier.—Les. 68. Also chien⁴.*
 中間 *Chung*¹ *chien*¹..... *Between; in the midst.*
 節 *Chie*²..... *A joint, a knot, a length. See chie².*
 枕 *Chên*³. *A pillow; a rest for the back; a sock—et. Also chên⁴.*
 枕 *Chên*⁴. *To pillow on, to lean on; contiguous. See chên³.*
 駒 *Chü*¹..... *A colt,—under two years.*
 韉 *Lung*²..... *A halter.*

那裏知道，不帶轡頭，就是沒有法子騎他。
 木就好。○這²⁴麼一匹小高麗馬，怎麼必得帶轡頭呢，答你
 地作押頭。○我²³要鏤四條桌子腿，用甚麼木頭好呢，答
 個碓白，就是沒有杵頭子。○他²²借了二十吊錢，給人三畝
 濟南府車行裏當把兒頭。○一²¹年掙五十多吊。○他家裏有
 誰敢多嘴管這閒事。○這¹⁹事的盡頭就是死。○王²⁰日新在
 了。○這¹⁷個懷頭小一點，要一個大些的。○他¹⁸的對頭利害，
 高。○人¹⁶子沒有枕頭的地方。○那¹⁶個驢駒子，把轡頭掙壞
 了。○波¹³羅蓋兒是腿中間兒的骨頭節兒。○這¹⁴個枕頭太
 頭，把這個火爐墊起來。○他¹²的舌頭有病，連嘴脣子都腫

- 11 Get four pieces of brick and put them under the feet of this stove to raise it up.
- 12 His tongue is diseased, so that even his lips are swollen.
- 13 The knee is the joint in the middle of the leg.
- 14 This pillow is too high.
- 15 The son of man hath not where to lay his head.
- 16 That mule colt has broken his halter.
- 17 This end piece is a little small. I want one somewhat larger.
- 18 His opponent is violent. Who would venture to meddle in this business which does not concern him.
- 19 The end of these things is death.
- 20 Wang I Hsin is acting as head-man in the stage company in Chuanfu, at a salary of over fifty thousand cash a year.
- 21 He has a mortar in the house, but is short a pestle.
- 22 He borrowed twenty thousand cash and mortgaged three acres of land as security.
- 23 I want to turn four table legs: what wood is the best to use? Ans. Walnut is the best.
- 24 What necessity is there for having a bridle for such a little Korean pony? Ans. But you see, without a bridle it is impossible to ride him.

堵 *Tu³*. To obstruct; to close up; to fill in. A classifier:—Les. 140.
 堵頭 *Tu³ t'ou²*. A shutter, a plug; the end of a coffin, end of a drawer, etc.
 懷 *Hwai²*. To cherish; to think of; to put or carry in the bosom; to harbor, to remember against; the bosom, the heart.
 懷頭 *Hwai² t'ou²*. The ends of a coffin; a stop-gap; an end piece.
 對頭 *Tui⁴ t'ou²*. An opponent.
 多嘴 *Tod¹ tsui³*. To intermeddle with the tongue, to criticize the affairs of others.
 閒事 *Hsien² shi⁴*. Anything extraneous to duty; an unimportant affair, a private affair.
 車行 *Ch'e¹ hang²*. A cart company:—Note (19).

把頭 *Pa³ t'ou²*. A head-man.
 碓 *Tui⁴*. A mortar; a pestle. A foot-pestle. (s.)
 白 *Chiu⁴*. A mortar.
 碓白. A mortar,—of wood, stone or metal.
 杵 *Ch'u³*. A pestle, a beater.
 押頭 *Ya¹ t'ou²*. Property or goods given in pledge.
 鏤 *Hsüan⁴*. To turn in a lathe.
 楸 *Ch'iu*. A species of walnut.
 麗 *Li⁴*. Elegant, graceful; beautiful, bright.
 高麗 *Kao¹ li⁴*. Korea.
 轡 *P'ei⁴*. A bridle; the reins of a bridle.

第四十八課

LESSON XLVIII.

○ 吊 裏 買 子 改 盤 答 賣 你¹
 先¹¹ 錢。 一 的 我 一 纏 來 了 手
 生 ○ 年 我 改 了 幾 多 裏
 是 多¹⁰ 要 還 見 十 多 有
 行 少 多 給 他 數 錢 幾
 幾 差 少 你 的 人 ○ 他³ 個
 差 池 耗 幾 多 信 ○ 已⁷ 栗
 答 一 費 多 少 錢 ○ 老⁴ 子
 我 點 要 得 ○ 是 兄 來 了
 是 也 不 六 老⁹ 幾 多 若 那²
 排 行 第 九 緊 百 家 錢 日 多⁶ 多 少 少 個 人 牛 牛

- 1 How many chestnuts have you in your hand?
- 2 How much did that black piebald cow sell for?
- 3 How many of their men have come? Ans. Over ten have come.
- 4 How much travelling money have you still?
- 5 How many sons have you?
- 6 By altering it slightly it will answer.
- 7 I have had no letter from him for a long time.
- 8 I will give you as much as you paid for it.
- 9 How much do you require for home expenses per year? Ans. I need six or seven hundred strings of cash.
- 10 If it misses by a little, no matter.
- 11 Which of the brothers are you? Ans. I am the ninth.

NOTES.

2 There is no indication of time in this sentence. It might also be rendered, *You should not have struck him with your fist.*

5 鞋小. These two words here illustrate how, under certain circumstances, the Chinese language can be exceedingly brief.

8 This sentence might with equal propriety be rendered, *How can I plow when I have not yet bought a plow point?* Which construction was intended would be indicated by the manner of speaking. Of the three terms for *plow point*, the first is Pekingese, the second Central, and the third Southern. The article referred to is a triangular point of cast iron, which serves in place of both coulter and share. A Chinese plow is one of the rudest of their many rude implements.

11 In the North a 甌頭 is a brickbat, or piece of a brick, but in the South it is a whole brick.

13 Of the two terms for knee, the first is Northern and

the second Southern. In neither term are the first two characters properly significant. There are also other colloquial terms for knees. The book term is 膝 *hai*².

15 This sentence is introduced to illustrate, by contrast, the use of 枕 as a verb, with 頭 as its object.

20 A 車行 is an association of carters, which controls the whole business of carting in a city. They generally exact a fee from all carts entering the city which are not connected with them. 把頭 is variously used in different places, but always means a head-man of some kind. In the South 包頭 is used instead.

21 杵 is the proper word for a pestle, but is not used in the South. 確 is rather the stone head on the wooden handle of the pestle than the whole pestle.

23 楸 is used with different prefixes for several kinds of trees. 核桃楸 is walnut.

LESSON XLVIII.

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

幾個 How many? some, a few. Any special classifier may be substituted for 個. As an interrogative, 幾 is generally applied to comparatively small numbers.

多少 How many? how much? a little, slightly (6); much, a great deal (18).

幾多 How many? Used in the South

instead of 多少, but never heard in the North. 若干 How many? how much? a good many, a great many. Rarely used interrogatively in Mandarin.

數 Some, several, a few.

第 A series,—prefixed to a number makes it an ordinal.

心。爲要千○你的¹⁵着過算○
 ○我¹⁹還那飯事情○明天¹⁶的¹⁵幾有卸¹²
 有件事實沒辦天不孩個數人。○你¹⁴會¹³
 若干的不知操多足。你¹⁷還我¹⁸這有若
 的貨沒賣多少我¹⁸個若

12 How much coal do you propose to take?
 Ans. I propose to take five tons.
 13 There are only a few men of ability
 in the society (church).
 14 When you start, be sure to take a few
 cash to buy some biscuits.
 15 How old is your child this year? Ans.
 Five years.
 16 I can not start to-morrow, I have a
 lot of business not yet arranged.
 17 You are a beggar that does not know
 when he has enough.
 18 I can not tell how much anxiety of
 mind I have had on account of that
 affair of his.
 19 I have still a great many goods un-
 sold, and I can not tell how long it

VOCABULARY.

幾 *Chi*³. How much? a little, several:—see Sub.
 Also *chi*¹.
 干 *Kan*¹. To offend; to provoke; arms; concerning;
 consequence; a stem, the ten stems,—
 甲, 乙, 丙, 丁, 戊, 己, 庚, 辛, 壬, 癸; a few, some.
 第 *Ti*⁴..... A series, an order; but, yet, merely.
 栗 *Li*⁴..... The chestnut; firm, durable.
 兄 *Lao*³ *hsiung*¹..... Sir,—a term of respect.
 纏 *Ch'an*². To bind up; to bandage; to involve;
 to implicate; to bother.
 盤纏 *P'an*² *ch'an*²..... Road money.
 耗 *Hao*⁴. To spend; to consume, to use up; to
 make void; a rat, a mouse.
 耗費 *Hao*⁴ *fei*⁴..... To expend; expenses.
 池 *Ch'i*². A pond, a tank; a moat. *Regular,*
 *even.* (L.)
 差池 *Ch'a*¹ *ch'i*²..... Different from. (c.) (s.)
 卸 *Hsie*⁴. To lay aside; to put off; to vacate; to
 unload; to take delivery of.
 頓 *Tun*⁴. A ton,—a new character made to ex-
 press the foreign word "ton."
 餅 *Ping*³..... A cake; a biscuit.
 燒餅 *Shao*¹ *ping*³..... A baked cake.
 火燒 *Huo*¹ *shao*¹..... A baked cake.
 知足 *Chi*¹ *tsu*²..... To be satisfied, contented.
 操 *Ts'ao*¹. To hold; to manage; to drill; to exercise,
 to put forth; to restrain. Also *ts'ao*⁴.
 操心 *Ts'ao*¹ *hsin*¹. To take trouble, to charge the
 mind with, to be anxious.

兌 *Tui*⁴..... To exchange, to barter.
 舖底 *P'u*⁴ *ti*³..... Shop fixtures, outfit.
 生財 *Sheng*¹ *ts'ai*²..... The same. (s.)
 醫 *I*¹..... To heal; to cure; *medical.*
 醫道 *I*¹ *tao*⁴. *Medicine*; the practice of medi-
 cine, medical science.
 糶 *T'iao*⁴..... To sell (only used of grain).
 春 *Ch'un*¹..... *Spring*, vernal; joyous.
 乾 *Ch'ien*². Heaven; superior; a father; stable,
 firm. See *Kan*¹.
 隆 *Lung*²..... Surpassing; exalted; abundant.
 乾隆. *K'ienlung*,—the fourth emperor of the
 present Tartar dynasty.
 皇 *Hwang*². Great, imperial, august; a sovereign,
 *an emperor.*
 皇上 *Hwang*² *shang*⁴. The emperor; His Maj-
 esty.
 劉 *Liu*²..... To kill; a *surname.*
 壙 *Yung*¹..... A redoubt; an adobe wall.
 劉壙. A high official under the emperor *K'ien-*
lung, a native of Southern Shantung.
 街市 *Chie*¹ *sh'i*⁴..... A market street.
 目 *Mu*⁴. The eye; a principal man, a leader; *an*
 *index*; the mind; to designate; to eye.
 題目 *T'i*² *mu*⁴..... A text, a theme, a subject.
 翰 *Han*⁴..... A pencil, a quill; writings.
 約翰 *Yo*¹ *han*⁴..... John.
 腳力 *Chio*³ *li*⁴..... Freight, carriage.

又不知得等多少日子，纔能把生鋪底盤兌
 出人去。○請掌櫃的看看，我還欠着幾多錢。
 給子，○沒有幾多，也不過十兩八兩的。
 銀子，○沒有幾多，也不過十兩八兩的。
 他在醫道上，用了數十年的功夫。○
 秦三不知有多少糧食，直糶了一春家
 裏還有若干。○乾隆皇上，問劉墉說，你
 看這街市上，有多少人呢，劉墉說，不
 過是名利兩個人。○題目在約翰第一
 書，第二章，第三節。○買價若干，脚力若
 干，請賜一回音。

may be before I can dispose of my shop fixtures.
 20 Please, cashier, look and see how much I still owe. Ans. It is not much,—not over eight or ten taels.
 21 He has spent several tens of years at medicine.
 22 I wonder how much grain Ch'in the Third has. He has been selling all the spring, and he still has a great deal left.
 23 The Emperor K'ienlung asked Liu Yung, saying, "How many people do you think there are on this market street?" Liu Yung answered, "Only the two men, Fame and Gain."
 24 The text is in first John, second chapter and third verse.
 25 Please write me a reply stating the price and the freight.

NOTES.

1 Note that 栗, a chestnut, takes 子 after it, as also 李, a plum, but 梨, a pear, does not take 子 after it.

2 犁牛 is not used in the South, and 花牛 is not its exact equivalent. 犁牛 is a black cow with white spots, and 花牛 is a spotted cow of any color.

4 The meaning of 盤纏 is probably derived from the custom of carrying money in a belt encircling the waist. In colloquial the combination 盤纏錢 is often heard.

11 行 here refers to the order of succession in ages. It is sometimes confined to own brothers, and sometimes includes cousins of the same family name.

12 卸. We say, "How much will you have?" or, "How much will you take?" but the Chinese attribute to the buyer the act of the seller, and say, *How much will you unload?* In like manner they say of meat or cloth, *How much will you cut?* and of silver, *How much will you weigh?*

13 事 is here used as a verb meaning to *transact or manage business.*

14 火燒 are unleavened cakes, baked on both sides in a small oven. They are round, about an inch thick, and from four to six inches in diameter. They are sometimes made with sugar or dates in the inside. In the South 燒餅 is applied to the same kind of a cake, but in the North it is only applied to such as have sugar in them, or sesame seed on the outside. The usage varies very much in different places.

15 In inquiring ages, 幾 is only used of children, or of young persons in their teens.

17 Not to know 多少, is not to know the quantity befitting the circumstances. If 知足 is here equivalent in meaning to 不知多少 (of which I am not sure), then it is used somewhat out of its usual sense. The use of 你這個 gives a tinge of impatience.

19 兌 Here means to sell or dispose of as a whole, instead of selling off in detail.

20 We say "eight or ten;" the Chinese say *ten or eight.* The 兩 has to be inserted twice, otherwise the *ten or eight* would be eighteen. 的, at the end, is really superfluous. It gives to the Chinese something like the force of the English expression, "a matter of eight or ten taels."

21 It is worthy of note that 數 is thus used only with the round numbers ten, hundred, thousand, and myriad. When it precedes the number, as here, it means *several tens, several hundreds, etc.*; but when it follows, as in (3), it means *over or upwards of ten, but usually about a hundred or a thousand.*

23 不過, *not over, only*:—See next Les., Sub.

25 The style of this sentence is not colloquial, but such as would be used in a letter. 請賜一回音, *Please give one return word; i.e., Please write me a reply.*

課 九 十 四 第

LESSON XLIX.

不過走了五十里路。○¹²不可¹³但聽一面
 你不肯呢。○¹²第三日頂頭風很大，一天
 你¹¹是重，若是¹²不管他，怕要成個¹³結吧¹⁴子。
 裏只帶着二百錢。○¹⁰那個學生背書¹¹光
 二字。○⁸他是⁹撒謊。○⁷人過日子，只在勤儉
 孩子。○⁵只有一篇沒⁶騰起來。○⁴松林那個
 個牲口。○³他光會挑眼。○²我們¹兩個¹只僱一
 光你自己來了嗎。○²我們¹兩個¹只僱一

- 1 Are you the only one that has come?
- 2 We two will only hire one donkey between us.
- 3 He does nothing but find fault.
- 4 Your word alone is not sufficient proof.
- 5 There is only one leaf not yet copied.
- 6 That boy Sung Lin is always telling lies.
- 7 Making a living depends wholly on two things; viz., diligence and economy.
- 8 He always talks well, but never does well.
- 9 I have brought only two hundred cash in my pocket.
- 10 That scholar is given to repeating when he recites his lesson. If he is not controlled, I fear he will become a stutterer.
- 11 Why do you put forward your dissent, when your father and older brother are both willing?
- 12 The third day there was a very strong head wind, and we only went fifty li during the whole day.

LESSON XLIX.

RESTRICTIVE PARTICLES.

只 Only, merely, nothing but, wholly. Also used as a conjunction:—Les. 95.

光 Only, alone, nothing but, given to, even. 光 is colloquial, but entirely *t'ung-hsing*.

寡 Only, etc.—the same as 光. Used in Central and Southern Mandarin, but not in the North.

單 Only, simply, nothing but.

單單 Simply, solely, specially.

但 Only, simply, merely. As here used, 但 is not appreciably different from 單, save that its use seems to be limited to certain connections. It is also used as a conjunction:—Les. 95.

不過 Not exceeding, nothing more than, only.

VOCABULARY.

只 *Chi*³¹. Only, merely, nothing but; but, yet, however.

寡 *Kwa*³. Few, seldom; alone; but, only; continually:—see Sub.

單 *Tan*¹. Single, alone; odd,—as a number; a bill, a receipt; only, but, simply.

但 *Tan*⁴. Only; simply; but; whenever.

倆 *Lia*³. Two,—an abbreviation for 兩個.

挑眼 *T'iao*^{1 yen}³. To pick flaws.

憑 *P'ing*². To lean on, to trust to; proof, evidence; according to:—Les. 83.

篇 *P'ien*¹. A leaf,—of a book; a section; books. A classifier:—Les. 147.

松 *Sung*¹. The pine; enduring.

勤 *Ch'in*². Diligent; attentive; laborious.

儉 *Chien*³. Temperate, frugal, economical.

背書 *Pei*^{4 shu}¹. To turn the back to the teacher and recite a lesson, to repeat.

重 *Ch'ung*². To double; to repeat, to do over; again. See *Chung*⁴.

結吧 *Chie*^{1 pa}¹. To stutter, to stammer.

顯 *Hsien*³. Manifest, conspicuous; to exhibit, to make manifest; to render illustrious.

頂頭 *Ting*^{3 t'ou}². Opposing, contrary.

兩吊錢的票子。○劉²⁵先生取人，是但看人的外
 不求有功，只求無過。○我²⁴手²⁴下沒有現錢，只有
 藥²²老四說話太利害，光吹²⁴葫蘆²⁴子²⁴瞪²⁴眼的。○凡²³事
 幾天他們不講究別的，但講究怎樣得功名。○
 知道一件事，就是知道自己不知道甚麼。○這²¹
 你不要信他。○你¹⁹單顧眼前，不顧以後。○我²⁰只
 來，那有工夫管閒事呢。○他¹⁸不過對你說玩話，
 託，你怎麼單單託他呢。○¹⁷寡¹⁷正經事還忙不過
 先生單單喫這一樣，不喫別的嗎。○那個不可
 之詞。○不用¹⁴提人情枉費，就是光喫也不穀。○

- 13 It will not do to listen only to one side.
- 14 It is not enough for food alone, to say nothing of the claims of society and other incidental expenses.
- 15 Do you only eat this one kind, and eat nothing else?
- 16 Rather entrust it to anybody than to him.
- 17 I am not able to get through with my legitimate work. How can I get time to meddle in other people's affairs?
- 18 He is only talking in fun to you, you must not believe him.
- 19 You regard only the present moment, caring nothing for the future.
- 20 I know only one thing,—that is, I know that I myself do not know anything.
- 21 These few days they talk of nothing else save of how to get a degree.
- 22 Lan the Fourth talks too violently. He is all the time vociferating with glaring eyes.
- 23 Seek for merit in nothing; it is enough if you do not offend.
- 24 I have no ready money at hand; I have nothing but a two thousand cash bank note.

詞 *Ts'i²*. An expression, a phrase; words, language; a poem; a writing; to assure.
 人情 *Jên² ch'ing²*. Natural feeling, mercy, good will; the presents and acknowledgments which express goodwill.
 枉 *Wang³*. Illegal, by force; a wrong, a grievance; needless, to no purpose.
 枉費 *Wang³ fei⁴*. To spend to no purpose; money spent for unnecessary things; incidental expenses.
 正經 *Chêng⁴ ching¹*. Legitimate, proper, right; really, verily.
 玩話 *Wan² hwa⁴*. Jesting, in fun.
 眼前 *Yen³ ch'ien²*. Before the eyes, in the presence of; the present, now.
 背後 *Pei⁴ hou⁴*. Behind the back, in private; hereafter, the future.
 功名 *Kung¹ ming²*. An honorary degree.
 藥 *Lwan²*. A common surname.
 吹 *Ch'ui¹*. To blow, to breathe; to praise.
 鬚 *Hu²*. The moustache, the beard.

葫蘆 *Hu²*. A gourd, a calabash.
 蘆 *Lu²*. A reed, a hollow stemmed plant.
 葫蘆 *Hu²*. A gourd, a calabash.
 瞪 *Têng⁴*. To raise the eyebrows and stare; to glare on.
 現錢 *Hsien⁴ ch'ien²*. Ready cash; coin.
 票 *P'iao⁴*. A warrant; a ticket; a bank note.
 貌 *Mao⁴*. Outward mein; style, form, appearance; the face, the visage.
 財命 *Ts'ai² ming⁴*. Luck in business.
 增 *Tsêng¹*. To add, to increase, to augment.
 增光 *Tsêng¹ kwang¹*. To increase one's reputation, to shed lustre on.
 疑惑 *I² hwo⁴*. To suspect, to doubt; in suspense.
 勞心 *Lao² hsin¹*. To weary the mind, mental toil; to study.
 勞力 *Lao² li⁴*. To weary the body; physical toil; to labor.

情、勞、呢、麼、我、村、你、○、但、貌。
 是、心、○、單、一、也、一、若、看、○
 光、不、我²⁹、疑、個、都、家、是、他、掙²⁶
 勞、不、的²⁹、惑、人、增、增、是、的、錢
 力、力、事、是、在、光、光、了、財、不
 不、他、情、我、家、○、就、命、掙
 勞、的、是、偷、裏、不²⁸、是、怎、錢
 心、事、光、的、怎、只、一、但、樣、那

25 In choosing men, Mr. Liu is wholly guided by their appearance.
 26 Whether he makes money or not, depends entirely on what luck he has.
 27 If you get a degree, you will not only add luster to your own family, but you will shed luster on the whole village.
 28 I was not the only person at home. Why do you specially suspect me of stealing it?
 29 My business wears only on my mind, not on my body: his wears only on his body, not on his mind.

NOTES.

2 倆. This contraction is not used in the South.
 3 The use of 會 here is a little peculiar. It conveys the idea that the person is addicted to finding fault, or that this is his "forte."
 6 The 是 after 窮 or 光 is demanded by the Nanking teacher. In the North, the expression is better without it.
 8 好事 Commonly means *benevolent* or *charitable acts*, the accent being on 好; but here it means *to do right*, the accent being on 事.
 9 的 and 着 are here practically equivalent, the grammatical structure being, however, somewhat different. The Chinese frequently wear in front, connected with their girdle, a broad quilted or leather pouch, which answers the double purpose of a pocket and a purse. Its proper name is 跨兜子 K'wa⁴ ton¹ tsi³. It is often referred to, as here, by the term, 腰裏, on the waist. A string of cash is often carried by simply hanging it across the ordinary belt.

12 五十里路 *fifty li of road*. The 路 is added for euphony.
 13 一面之詞 is a book phrase adopted into the colloquial; hence the use of 之.
 16 Lit., *Who can not be trusted? Why do you specially entrust it to him?* That is, is there no one else to whom you could entrust it, that you go out of your way to entrust it to him? This is the Chinese interrogative way of expressing the idea given in the translation.
 22 吹鬍子, *to blow the moustache*,—to talk so excitedly that the saliva is blown out on the moustache. 吹葫蘆, *to blow a gourd*,—to talk in a loud vociferous way.
 23 This is a popular ethical principle, attributed to some of the Taoist philosophers. It would hardly commend itself to a Western mind.
 25 取人, *to take a man*; i.e., to choose, to select, to form an opinion of.

LESSON L.

QUALITY BY OPPOSITES.

When two adjectives of opposite meanings are joined together they form an abstract noun of quality: thus, much-little means quantity, far-near, distance, etc. The same principle is also applied to verbs, as come-go for intercourse, buy-sell for business, etc. The lesson illustrates

nearly all the common nouns thus formed. Not all opposites joined together are used in this way. They are often joined for enumeration (23), or for contrast (2),—of which the lesson contains a number of examples.

VOCABULARY.

是非 Shi⁴ fei¹. Right-wrong; moral; strife; trouble; criticism.
 好歹 Hao³ tai³. Good-evil; character; sense, propriety; somehow, any way.
 糊弄 Hu² lung⁴. To sham, to stave off; to make believe; to befool, to cozen.
 小米 Hsiao³ mi³. Millet, canary seed.
 粥 Chu¹, Chou¹. Soft boiled rice or millet, congee, gruel.

熬 Ao³. To cook by boiling; to simmer, to decoct; to endure, to persist.
 稀 Hsi¹. Loose, open; thin, scattered; thin, fluid; very, fully.
 稠 Ch'ou². Thick, dense; viscid, stiff.
 稀稠 Thin-thick, thickness, consistency, viscosity.
 津 Chin¹, Ching¹. A ford; saliva; sap.
 天津 T'ien¹ chin¹. Tientsin.

課十五第

LESSON L.

正還 ○ 包包 一 子 和 津 了 人
合 不 你 用 管 回 你 你 和 的 的 的 都
式 知 怎 回 管 來 沒 賭 買 買 個 有
○ 尊 麼 換 回 一 點 拈 個 賣 個 個
他¹³ 卑 說 話 動 靜 他 的 輸 贏 沒 有 小 是
做 上 下 一 點 輕 重 有 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 非
什 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 之
麼 一 點 輕 重 有 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 心
一 點 緊 慢 沒 有 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 嗎 好
○ 你¹⁴ 粗 細 大 半 是 了 敢 天⁴ 是 得

- 1 All men have a moral faculty.
- 2 Stave the matter off somehow or other, and it will be all right.
- 3 This millet gruel is cooked to exactly the right consistency.
- 4 The business of Tientsin is not so great as that of Shanghai.
- 5 If you don't believe, I am ready to lay a wager with you.
- 6 How can a donkey carry such a load as this? Have you not tried the weight?
- 7 I listened a while outside the gate: there was not the least sound [stir].
- 8 All who buy our goods have the privilege of returning them.
- 9 The distance by sea and by land differs by as much as (just) one half.
- 10 How is it that you speak without the least judgment?
- 11 As big as you are, and yet do not understand the respect due to your seniors!
- 12 The handle of this ax is exactly the right thickness. [does.]
- 13 He never gets in a hurry in what he

輸 *Shu¹*.....To rotate; to lose, to be defeated.
 贏 *Ying²*. An overplus; profit, gain; to conquer, to win; to excel.
 輸贏. Lose-win; a venture; a chance, a wager.
 駝 *T'oa²*..... A camel; to carry,—as a beast.
 馱 *Toa⁴*..... The load carried by an animal.
 掂 *Tien¹*. To heft in the hand, to lift and estimate the weight; to bob up and down.
 輕重 *Ch'ing¹ chung⁴*. Light-heavy; weight; judgment; discretion.
 動靜 *Fung⁴ ching⁴*. Motion-rest, motion; stir; noise; sound.
 包管 *Pao¹ kwan³*. To warrant, to assure, to guarantee.
 來回 *Lai² hui²*. Go-return; the round trip; return of goods.
 包用 *Pao¹ yung⁴*. To guarantee a thing to be suitable.
 回換 *Hui² hwan⁴*. To return, to send back; to revert; to exchange.
 旱 *Han⁴*..... Drought; rainless; land travel.

遠近 *Yüan³ chin⁴*.....Far-near; distance.
 詭 *Oa², É²*. To deceive, to defraud; false, erroneous. To differ (s).
 卑 *Pei¹*..... Base; plebeian; inferior; humble.
 尊卑 *Tsun¹ pei¹*. High-low, rank, position; the respect due to age.
 櫛 *Pa⁴*..... A wooden handle.
 粗細 *Ts'u¹ hsi⁴*. Coarse-fine; size, thickness; fineness; coarseness.
 緊慢 *Chin³ man⁴*. Activity-indolence; hurry, excitability.
 探 *T'an⁴*. To feel and search; to explore; to sound; to try; to spy out, to inquire.
 深淺 *Shên¹*..... Deep; profound, intense; very.
 淺 *Ch'ien³*. Shallow; superficial; light,—as a color; easy, simple.
 深淺. Deep-shallow; depth.
 大小 *Tu⁴ hsiao³*. Big-little; size; capacity; calibre, station, place.
 軟硬 *Jwan³ ying⁴*. Soft-hard; hardness; stiffness, rigidity.

心驕傲，不知自己的大小，必常惹出是非來。
 有一件大毛病，就是作事不知進退。
 樣，若不留心分別，那就不知好歹了。
 的高矮，沒有二十歲，也有十八九了。
 的，不穀。○中國²¹的冷熱，南北不同。
 窄不穀。○²¹日子。○長²⁰短和¹⁹厚薄。
 要他會過日子。○²⁰對。○標¹⁹厚醜俊。
 很好，就是平仄不對。○¹⁹標厚醜俊。
 有高低，不要光聽賣多少錢。○¹⁸這兩句詩，意思
 看大小怎麼樣。○¹⁶這管筆軟硬，怎麼樣呢。○¹⁷貨
 下去探探水的深淺。○¹⁵你穿穿這件馬褂子，看

- 14 Do you go down first and try the depth of the water. [about its size.]
- 15 Put on this short coat and see how
- 16 How is this pen for stiffness?
- 17 Goods differ in quality. Do not merely regard the price asked.
- 18 The sentiment of this couplet is very good, but the tones are not correct.
- 19 Looks are of no great importance, only so that she is thrifty.
- 20 The length and thickness are both sufficient, but the width is not sufficient.
- 21 The temperature of China is not the same in the North and in the South.
- 22 Judging by the height of his stature, if he is not twenty, he must be eighteen or nineteen.
- 23 When a man takes no pains to distinguish between loss and gain, he may be said to be without common sense.
- 24 In my opinion he has one serious fault; viz., he has no idea of prudence in what he does.
- 25 If a man is proud in mind, and without a just estimate of himself, he is sure to be constantly getting into trouble.

低 *Ti¹*. To lower; to droop; to sink; low; be-
 low; humble; common.
 高低 *Kao¹ ti¹*. High-low; height; rank; qual-
 ity; station.
 仄 *Tsè⁴*. Aslant, oblique, inclined, deflected.
 平仄 *P'ing² tsè⁴*. Level-deflected; tone.
 醜俊 *Ch'ou³ chün⁴*. Ugly-pretty; beauty, come-
 liness; looks.
 陋 *Lou⁴*. Low, mean; ill favored; sordid.
 醜陋. Ugly, homely, unsightly, repulsive.
 長短 *Ch'ang² twan³*. Long-short; length.
 厚薄 *Hou⁴ pao²*. Thick-thin; thickness.
 枵厚 *Hsiao¹ hou⁴*. Thin-thick; thickness.

寬窄 *K'uan¹ chai³*. Wide-narrow; width, am-
 plitude, breadth.
 冷熱 *Lêng³ jé⁴*. Cold-hot; temperature.
 高矮 *Kao¹ ai³*. High-low; height, size.
 損 *Sun³*. To diminish; to abridge; to wound; to
 spoil; to injure; loss; damage.
 分別 *Fèn¹ pié²*. To separate, to distinguish.
 退 *T'ui⁴*. To draw back, to retreat; to back out,
 to refuse; to excuse; to yield.
 進退 *Chin⁴ t'ui⁴*. Advance-retreat; prudence;
 judgment.
 居 *Chü¹*. To live in, to reside; to remain in a
 condition; dwelling.
 居心 *Chü¹ hsin¹*. To have or maintain a cer-
 tain state of mind.

NOTES.

1 之 takes the place of 的, because 是非之心 is a book construction.
 2 It is a question whether 好歹, as here used, illustrates the subject of the lesson. The sentence, however, illustrates an important principle of Chinese polity.
 3 Though the two forms are somewhat different, the idea

expressed is the same. The first, or right hand form, might be rendered more literally, *The consistence to which this millet is cooked is just right*; and the second, *This millet gruel is so cooked that it is neither too thin nor too thick, but just right*. This method of using two negatives with words of opposite qualities, is a common way of expressing that a thing is medium, or just right.

課一十五第

LESSON LI.

就是結堅說眼⁶我⁵艱眼書應¹
 是實固。話。看願難。淚。怎當
 後悔了。○。○兩意最把麼愛
 也女⁹找⁸他⁷週生憐能衣裳會寫惜
 不能兒⁹鎚⁸的⁷歲日憫磨煉人的心性。○你²
 更已經打砸一子、還憐憫誰。○他³沒
 改。過一打砸一點也。○困⁴哭的
 這¹⁰門、就不會○。○苦、的念

- 1 You ought to improve your time.
- 2 If you have never been to school, how can you write?
- 3 The tears he wept wet all his clothes.
- 4 Poverty and hardship are very effective in disciplining a man's character.
- 5 Whom I wish to have mercy on, I will have mercy on.
- 6 A child almost two years old, and yet not able to talk!
- 7 His resolution is not at all stable.
- 8 Get a hammer and pound it and it will be firm.
- 9 When a girl is once married, there is no undoing it, even if she does repent.
- 10 Verily it is fatiguing to travel in this hot season.

4 天津. The proper and general pronunciation of 津 is *chin*¹, but in this name the general custom in Chili is to pronounce it *ching*¹.

6 The original reading of 馱 was *t'oi*, and its meaning, to carry a burden; but it is now rarely used in this sense, being superseded by 駝. It is generally read and used as given in the vocabulary.

8 包管來回 is a set form for expressing the idea that goods are sold with the privilege of returning them, if not satisfactory. The expression 包用回換 is Southern, and means to guarantee the exchange of an article unsuitable in size.

9 能 and 正 give a different sense. 能 implies a sort of estimate or opinion of the speaker, approximately expressed by the phrase as much as; while 正 fixes it at just this amount.

11 Not to know, in this case, implies censure. The 上 下 repeats the idea of 尊卑, and is added both for emphasis and for rhythm.

12 擗 is a wooden handle, and 把 a bone handle. This is one of those fanciful distinctions with which Chinese writing abounds.

13 一點緊慢沒有. He has not the least fast or slow; that is, he neither can nor will hurry.

18 Tones are divided into two classes, called 平 and 仄. The former includes the 上平聲 and 下平聲, that is the two level tones; and the latter, the 上聲, 去聲 and 入聲, that is the three deflected tones. The rules of Chinese versification require that level tones should be rhymed together, and deflected tones together.

19 會過日子 is a very expressive phrase. It includes the ability, diligence and thrift which make the most of every thing.

LESSON LI.

DEFINITIVE COMBINATIONS.

Chinese being a monosyllabic language, and the number of syllables limited, the consequent repetition of the same syllable renders it absolutely necessary that some means should be adopted to distinguish the different meanings of the same syllable. This is done to the eye in writing, by the different composition of the characters, analogous to different spellings in English, as *here* and *hear*. In speech it is done by combining with the given syllable another defining syllable or word, this combination forming, practically, a dissyllabic word.

There are three principal classes of these combinations.

First.—A word of similar meaning is added, so that each serves to distinguish the other. This device is used, with verbs,—as in 看見; with

nouns,—as in 規矩; and with adjectives,—as in 明白.

Second.—The object is added to the verb where it would not otherwise be needed, and where other languages would regard it as redundant,—as in 說話, 吃飯, etc.

Third.—A defining word is prefixed,—as in 頭髮. English has a somewhat similar use in a few words,—as in *eyebrow*, *wheel-barrow*.

Illustrations of all these classes have occurred in previous lessons, as it was impossible to avoid such constantly recurring forms. This lesson has been deferred to this place that the student might be better able to understand and appreciate its principles. The constant use of these combinations forms one of the prime distinctions between Mandarin and Wenli.

他呢。實在說給他覺、酒、蜜、章、伏
 一點兒。○你知道少教訓，你很厭惡他。○李老不用寫信，我述說
 ○外頭他常生氣，要緊要躲避
 天陰天氣，這樣輕薄先生
 陰天，有月亮也看
 聽就是了。○李老不用寫信，我述說
 這是個大事。○李老不用寫信，我述說
 這不能喫飯嗎。○李老不用寫信，我述說
 還不能喫飯嗎。○李老不用寫信，我述說
 要八十個錢一斤。○李老不用寫信，我述說
 一點次序沒有。○李老不用寫信，我述說
 天走路，實在辛苦。○李老不用寫信，我述說
 書內雜亂無

- 11 The book is all in confusion; there is not the least order in it.
- 12 There is a man on the street selling honey. He asks eighty cash per catty. [eat?]
- 13 If you can not drink wine, can you not
- 14 His not being able to sleep at night is a serious matter.
- 15 It is not necessary to write a letter. I will tell it over to him, which will answer every purpose.
- 16 Li the Eighth is continually slandering people. I thoroughly detest him.
- 17 You scape-grace! You are certainly ill-bred. How is it that you are so disrespectful to your teacher?
- 18 Knowing that he is given to getting angry, you should by all means keep out of his way.
- 19 It is cloudy out of doors; you can not see, even with the moon.

VOCABULARY.

愛惜 *Ai⁴ hsi¹*. To love fondly; to spare; to begrudge; to improve time.

光陰 *Kwang¹ yin¹*. Time.

困 *K'un⁴*. Exhausted, wearied; troubled; needy, to besiege, to hold in durance.

困苦 *K'un⁴ k'u³*. Poverty; trouble.

艱難 *Chien¹*. Difficult; distressing; hardship.

難 *Nan⁴*. To harrass, to persecute; difficulty; embarrassment. See *nan⁴*.

艱難. Difficilty, straits, trials, hardship.

磨煉 *Mo⁴ lien⁴*. To discipline; to train; to refine; to learn by experience.

性 *Hsing⁴*. Nature, disposition, spirit; property, quality.

心性 *Hsin¹ hsing⁴*. Natural temper; character, disposition.

憐 *Lien²*. To pity, to commiserate.

憫 *Min³*. To mourn for; to pity.

憐憫. To pity; to have mercy on; to commiserate.

週 *Chou¹*. To revolve, to turn round; a year.

週歲 *Chou¹ sui⁴*. A full year.

堅 *Chien¹*. Stable, firm, strong; durable, lasting; resolute, constant.

固 *Ku⁴*. Secure; constant; pertinacious; fixed; assuredly.

堅固. Firm, stable, immovable, fixed.

鎚 *Ch'u²*. A hammer; a mallet; a club.

砸 *Tsa²*. To pound; to knock; to crush; to shiver to pieces.

過門 *Kwo⁴ mén²*. To get married (of the woman).

後悔 *Hou⁴ hui³*. To be sorry for, to repent; to change the mind.

更 *Keng¹*. To change, to alter; to repair, to amend. Also *keng⁴*, and *ching¹*.

更改 *Keng¹ kai³*. To alter, to change; to amend; to undo.

辛 *Hsin¹*. Bitter, toilsome; grievous.

辛苦 *Hsin¹ k'u³*. Toil, weariness, fatigue,—especially that of a journey.

內 *Nei⁴*. Inner, internal, interior; in; among; a wife.

次序 *Tsü⁴*. Second, inferior; order; a time.

次序 *Hsü⁴*. Order, a preface to a book.

次序. Regular order, order of precedence.

蜂 *Feng¹*. A bee; a hornet, a wasp, etc.

蜜 *Mi¹*. Honey; nectar; honeyed.

蜂蜜. Honey.

述 *Shu⁴*. To narrate; to tell in order.

述說 *Shu⁴ shwo⁴*. To tell over in order, to rehearse.

惡 *Wu⁴*. To hate, to dislike; averse to. See *od⁴*.

厭惡 *Yen⁴ wu⁴*. To detest, to abominate.

訓 *Hsün⁴*. To instruct; instruction, precepts.

知不覺就悲傷。 覺就快樂若有悽慘的事不知辦。 事。○若²⁴有歡喜的事不知辦。 强。一○個柔軟弱不能一塊兒辦。 心的形像。○他²³們一個剛。 了。○人²²的言語行爲就是人內。 見。面。的。頭。髮。和。眉。毛。都。白。 惡。毒。事。來。呢。○不²¹過。三。年。沒。 狠。毒。事。來。呢。○不²¹過。三。年。沒。 温。柔。和。平。那。能。做。出。這。樣。的。 不。見。○看²⁰這。人。的。外。貌。真。是。

- 20 Judging from this man's appearance he is eminently kind and peaceable. How could he do so cruel a thing as this?
- 21 It is not over three years that I have not seen him, and his hair and eyebrows are all white.
- 22 A man's words and deeds are the counterpart of his mind.
- 23 They two,—the one firm and the other yielding, can not do business together.
- 24 When one has cause for rejoicing he unconsciously becomes joyful, and when he has cause for sorrow he unconsciously becomes sad.

教訓 Chiao⁴ hsün⁴. To teach, to instruct, to indoctrinate.
 輕薄 Ch'ing¹ pao². To treat disrespectfully, to contemn, to slight.
 躲避 Toa² pi⁴. To avoid, to keep out of the way of, to shun; to flee from.
 月亮 Yue⁴ liang⁴. The moon.
 狠 Hên³. Cruel, harsh; intractable.
 狠毒 Hên³ tu². Cruel, relentless; savage.
 惡毒 Oa⁴ tu². Cruel, savage, brutal.
 眉 Mei². The eyebrows.
 眼眉 Yen³ mei². The eyebrows. (L.)
 眉毛 Mei² mao². The eyebrows.
 形像 Hsing² hsiang⁴. Likeness; image; counterpart, figure.
 剛 Kang¹. Hard, unyielding; intrepid; sharp (music); recently, just now; Les. 65.

剛强 Kang¹ ch'iang². Firm, resolute; headstrong; violent.
 弱 Joa⁴, Jao⁴. Weak, feeble; pliable, yielding; decayed.
 軟弱 Juan³ joa⁴. Weak, yielding; infirm; delicate; debilitated.
 柔弱 Jou² joa⁴. Pliable; tender; delicate.
 快樂 K'wai⁴ loa⁴. Glad, joyful, happy.
 悽 Ch'ei¹. Grieved, sad; vexed.
 慘 Ts'an³. Hard-hearted, cruel; wounded in mind; miserable.
 悽慘 Sorrowful, sad; grieved; melancholy
 悲 Pei¹. To feel for, grieved, sorrowful.
 傷 Shang¹. To injure, to wound; to distress, to grieve; mortified.
 悲傷 Distressed in mind, sorrowful, sad.

NOTES.

- 2 Or, You have never been to school; how can you write?
- 11 雜亂無章 is a book phrase meaning without order or method; in confusion. Adding a word of opposite meaning with a negative, is a common rhetorical device of Chinese style.
- 12 蜂蜜 is honey, but 蜜蜂 is a honey bee.
- 13 When one has declined wine, this language is used by way of insisting on his eating the more.
- 15 "Which will answer every purpose," is an approximate paraphrase of 就是了.
- 16 給人說壞話. To disseminate evil reports about a man, or to speak evil of a man privately, so as to do him an injury.
- 17 少教訓 expresses the idea that the boy has not been properly taught by his parents or teachers, and also that he has not profited by his teaching; hence it means ill bred,

- unmannerly. 訓 is sometimes omitted and 少教 used alone. 少調教 is also used in some places. The tone of 教 is in violation of the distinction of tones usually made. See chiao¹ and chiao⁴. My Peking teacher says in explanation that simply to teach is chiao¹ but that to teach with authority is chiao⁴.
- 19 Judging by analogy from 日頭, we would expect to find 月頭 instead of 月亮,—which however is never used; again judging by analogy from such words as 眼淚, we would expect 月亮 to mean moonlight, while in fact it simply means the moon. It illustrates the principle of the lesson, but not any of the three classes specified.
- 22 內 is doubtless added to 心 in order more clearly to distinguish it from 身, the body, which in many places has the same sound as 心.

課 二 十 五 第

LESSON LII.

老 王 他 人 沒 有 負 人 人 不 是 他³ 他¹
 婆 婆 ○ 有 有 人 打 的 不 不 騙
 子 子 不¹⁴ 甚 影 ○ 個 事 特 能 人 是
 善 要 麼 子 兒 在¹⁰ 死 救 這⁷ 的 虧 負 人 好 手。
 會 多 好 的 家 救 人 救 個 大 胖 孩 子 嗎。 ○ ○ 這²
 挑 帶 處 呢。 ○ 他¹³ 淨 哄 人 沒 人 弟 得 希 罕 會 做 糊 倒 吾
 唆 東 西 ○ 他¹³ 淨 哄 人 沒 人 弟 得 希 罕 會 做 糊 倒 吾
 人 打 架 上 ○ 光 光 熊 欺 ○ 學¹² 敬 ○ 那¹¹ 常 欺 打⁸ 弄 這 ○
 ○ 光 光 熊 欺 ○ 學¹² 敬 ○ 那¹¹ 常 欺 打⁸ 弄 這 ○
 好 事 不 怕 人 ○ 王 老 讓

- 1 He is an adept at swindling.
- 2 This language is purely evasive.
- 3 He can not wrong any one.
- 4 You should not injure others to benefit yourself. [up anger?]
- 5 Are you not thus purposely stirring
- 6 I am incapable of doing anything to befool people. [ting.]
- 7 This great fat baby is truly captiva-
- 8 When you strike, strike hard; and when you help, help effectively.
- 9 These brothers are constantly insulting people.
- 10 If you are not respectful at home, you will not be respected abroad.
- 11 He is simply deceiving you, there is not a shadow of such a thing.
- 12 What good is there in learning to worry people?
- 13 We can not allow him to impose upon us in this way.
- 14 Do not take along many things, they are only an incumbrance on the road.
- 15 The old woman Wang is very clever at stirring up a fight.

LESSON LII.

人 AS A PERSONAL SUFFIX.

The word 人 is added to verbs to generalize them. It may sometimes be rendered *people*, or *a man*, but is generally untranslated; or rather, its force is comprehended in words which express the idea of the verb and it combined. When a contrast is expressed or implied, it is equivalent to

others. When joined to verbs expressing emotions, they become causative; as 氣人, in (5), and 希罕人, in (7). Sometimes both uses are found in the same word,—as 恨人, in (27), and in (28). This use of 人 is very extensive. It may in fact, if occasion require, be added to almost any transitive verb.

VOCABULARY.

騙 P'ien⁴. To take advantage; to cheat; to swindle; to defraud.
 好手 Hao³ shou³. Skilled in any art; an expert, an adept.
 吾 Wu². I, my (w.); to excuse; to delay.
 支吾 Chi¹ wu². To evade; to make excuses; to prevaricate.
 糊倒 Hu² tao³. To make all sorts of excuses; to tergiversate.
 虧負 K'wei¹ fu⁴. To be deficient; to wrong, to defraud.
 特 T'ei⁴. Single; special; purposely; specific;— Les. 159.

特意 T'ei⁴ i⁴. On purpose; specially.
 難為 Nan² wei². To harrass; to worry, to annoy; to maltreat; difficult.
 好處 Hao³ ch'u⁴. Good, benefit, advantage:— Les. 98.
 累 Lei⁴. To involve, to implicate; to trouble; to incumber; to embarrass. Also lei³.
 纏磨 Ch'an² mo². To pester, to tease.
 輕看 Ch'ing¹ k'an⁴. To look down upon, to despise, to esteem lightly.
 重看 Chung⁴ k'an⁴. To have regard to, to esteem.

怕人沒好事。○你這個纏磨人的毛病，真討人嫌。○¹⁸ 攔碰着那樣的無用的老婆，你說愁人愁人呢。○你¹⁹ 輕看人，人還能重看你嗎。○他²⁰ 那個耍笑人的脾氣，到老也不能改。○看他凍的那個樣兒，真可憐人。○沒有²² 體貼人的心，那能作出照應人的事來呢。○這²³ 種藥不可多喫，多喫能²⁴ 毒傷人。○恭敬人，是交朋友。○頂要緊的道理。○我²⁵ 懶怠去見他，他²⁶ 光是吹呼人。○他²⁷ 牢籠人的法子，百發百中。○從²⁸ 來沒看人，是最容易犯的兩樣毛病。○

- 16 Virtue does not fear the light; that which fears the light is not virtuous.
- 17 This habit you have of pestering people is exceedingly offensive.
- 18 But doesn't it worry a man to have such a worthless wife as that fall to his lot?
- 19 When you look down upon others, will others esteem you?
- 20 That disposition he has to make fun of people, he will not amend as long as he lives.
- 21 It is really pitiable to see him suffering so from the cold.
- 22 How can one show kindness to others when he has no feeling of sympathy for them?
- 23 This kind of medicine should not be taken in large doses; if taken in large doses it is injurious (poisonous).
- 24 The most important principle in our intercourse with friends is to be courteous.
- 25 I am loth to go to see him; he is given to storming at people.
- 26 His methods of entrapping people are invariably successful.

要笑 *Shwa³ hsiao⁴*. To ridicule, to make fun of; to hoax.
 脾 *P'i²*. The spleen; digestion; disposition.
 脾氣 *P'i² ch'i⁴*. Disposition, temperament, idiosyncrasy.
 可憐 *K'oa³ lien²*. To pity, to have mercy on.
 應 *Ying⁴*. A response; an echo; to fulfil, to respond; to promise; correlative.
 See *ying¹*.
 照應 *Chao⁴ ying⁴*. To protect; to care for; to show kindness; to entertain.
 能 *Neng³ kou⁴*. Can; able to.
 恭 *Kung¹*. To treat with veneration; to revere; to show respect; decorous, reverent.
 恭敬 *Kung¹ ching⁴*. To show respect, to reverence, to honor.
 怠 *Tai⁴*. Rude, idle; lazy; remiss.
 懶怠 *Lan³ tai⁴*. Disinclined, loth.
 呼 *Hu¹*. An expiration; to call out to; to speak to; to invoke; to cry aloud.
 吹呼 *Ch'ui¹ hu¹*. To talk loud, to storm at, to blow up.

擻 *Ch'eng¹*. To rebuff; to insult; to scold.
 牢籠 *Lao² lung²*. To entrap; to dupe; to impose upon; to victimize.
 恨 *Hèn⁴*. To hate, to dislike; to be indignant; spite; vexed, sorry.
 犯 *Fan⁴*. To offend; to transgress, to violate; to be exposed; to assault; an accused criminal; worth while.
 躁 *Tsao⁴*. Hasty, flurried; nervous, irascible; damp, muggy.
 急躁 *Chi² tsao⁴*. Worried; irritable; out of patience.
 歇息 *Hsie¹ hsi²*. To rest; to stop.
 催 *Ts'ui¹*. To urge, to press; to importune.
 量 *Liang⁴*. To measure the quantity or size of; to think over, to deliberate. See *liang³*.
 體量 *T'i³ liang⁴*. To feel for, to sympathize with.
 巫 *Wu¹*. A sorceress, a witch, a medium.
 巫婆 *Wu¹ p'oa³*. A sorceress, a witch.
 愚 *Yu¹*. Simple, stupid, rustic; used in letters for "I"; to cheat, to befool.

見這
樣累
人的
孩子
一時
也不
下
手懷
真
是恨
人。○
問了
半天
也沒
問出
一句
話
來。實
在急
躁人。
○來
家還
沒歇
息過
來。
你就
又催
他走
怎麼
這麼
不體
量人
呢。
○他
女人
是個
巫婆
最能
惑弄
人。
○古
語說
善門
難開
善門
難閉
你看
賙濟
人
是個
容易
事嗎
○人
若
有了
作賊
的名
聲不
但自
己本
家丟
人
就是
親友
也都
跟着
丟人
○我
們從
外國
乍來
的時
候一
句話
也不
會說
實在
急悶
人。

- 27 To deceive and to hate are two faults very easily committed.
- 28 I have never seen such a troublesome child; it will not leave one's arms for a moment. Truly it is vexatious.
- 29 I am out of all patience; after questioning him for half a day I have found out nothing.
- 30 He has just got home and is not yet rested, and you forthwith urge him to go again? Why are you so inconsiderate?
- 31 His wife is a sorceress and well versed in the art of deceiving.
- 32 The old saying is: The door of charity is difficult to open, and equally difficult to shut. Do you think relieving the poor is an easy thing?
- 33 When a man has the reputation of being a thief, not only is his own family disgraced, but his relations and friends are involved in the disgrace.
- 34 When we first arrive from the foreign country we can not speak a single word, which is very embarrassing.

愚弄 Yü¹ lung⁴.....To deceive, to befool.
 惑弄 Hwo⁴ lung⁴.....To beguile, to befool.
 古 Ku³.....Ancient, old; of old; antiquity.
 古語 Ku³ yü³.....An old saying; a tradition.
 賙 Chou¹.....To give alms.

賙濟 Chou¹ chi⁴. To give alms, to relieve the
 poor.
 名聲 Ming³ sheng¹.....Reputation; fame.
 本家 Pen³ chia¹. Original home; native place;
 own family.

NOTES.

- 3 The inability is supposed to be moral.
- 4 損人利己 is a neat and expressive book phrase, often heard in colloquial. The 損人 carries with it a telic force, so that the proper connection is not "and," but "in order that." When 人 is correlated with 己, it always means others.
- 5 這 here refers to whatever the person in question had been doing or saying. 氣, which is usually a noun, is here used as a verb, and, as expressing an emotion, is used causatively.
- 6 The inability here also is such as depends on moral causes.
- 8 Approximately equal to, "what is worth doing at all is worth doing well." Note the force of 個.
- 9 他, being in apposition with 弟兄們, is plural. The 們 may be said to be added to both words at once.
- 15 In 老王婆子, the 老 is placed first to emphasize it. When 善 is used in the sense of *skillful*, it is nearly always followed by 會.
- 18 老婆 is here used somewhat depreciatingly for *wife*. Marriage is regarded as a lottery, as is intimated in the use

- of the word 攤. The Chinese has a touch of grim humor which the translation does not bring out.
- 23 能教 is quite t'ung-hsing, but is much more used in Northern than in Central and Southern Mandarin.
- 26 百發百中 In a hundred arrows, a hundred hit the centre;—a ready made Wen-li phrase, expressing with equal elegance and force the idea of *invariably*.
- 28 下 is used as a verb. 下手 does not form a phrase as it usually does. 恨 is used causatively and conveys very strongly the idea of *vexation*.
- 31 A 巫婆 is a sorceress, who, by burning incense, making motions, and repeating prayers and incantations, induces her patron divinity to visit her and give the assistance or information which she desires.
- 32 The difficulty in beginning charity is that the clamors of the beneficiaries will not allow one to stop. These clamors, if not responded to, easily pass into violence.
- 33 In this sentence, which is from the Sacred Edict, 親友 is Wen-li rather than Mandarin. For Mandarin it should be expanded into 親戚, 朋友.

課三十五第

LESSON LIII.

的銀子，被強盜搶去，心裏很憂愁。○我
 李¹³大有輪了官司，功名也被革了。○
 笑。○好好一部書，可惜叫蟲子咬了。○
 罵的不好。○不要說大話，免得被人嗤
 ○凡動刀的，必被刀所殺。○他¹⁰叫我辱
 了。○聽⁸說姜瓦匠的腿，教石頭砸斷折了。
 等叫。○我得罪了。○兩⁷個孩子，都被你慣壞
 踢。○他⁵被叫雲彩遮了。○好⁴人常被壞人
 太³陽被叫雲彩遮了。○我的腿教狗咬了。○
 我¹被你害苦了。○

- 1 I have been grievously injured by you.
- 2 My leg has been bitten by a dog.
- 3 The sun is hidden by clouds.
- 4 Good men are constantly being vilified by the wicked. [word to say.]
- 5 I reproved him so that he had not a
- 6 Liu Hsien Shêng was offended by me; (or, I offended Liu Hsien Shêng).
- 7 Both children have been spoiled by you.
- 8 I hear that Chiang the mason's leg has been broken by a stone.
- 9 Every one that takes the sword shall be killed by the sword.
- 10 I was roundly berated by him.
- 11 Do not talk boastfully, and you will avoid being ridiculed.
- 12 What a pity that such a fine book should be worn eaten.
- 13 Li Ta Yu lost his suit, and his degree was also taken away.
- 14 He was very much grieved because his silver was carried off by robbers

LESSON LIII.

PASSIVE FORMS.

被, to suffer,—is used to form the passive, and is the regular and proper passive form of the language. In the North its use is largely confined to the more stately language of books and of literary men. In the South it is much more extensively used, being the ordinary form used on all occasions.

教, to teach, or 叫, to call,—is also used to form

the passive, and, in the North, is the generally used colloquial form. It is only occasionally used in the South. Peking teachers generally use 叫, while Shantung teachers prefer 教. In purely Chinese mandarin books the two characters seem to be used indiscriminately.

教 is the older, and 叫 the more modern form.

VOCABULARY.

被 *Pei*⁴. A bed quilt or comforter; to suffer; by, from; sign of passive;—see Sub.
 雲 *Yün*². Clouds, fog; shaded; numerous.
 彩 *Ts'ai*³. Variegated, colored; beautiful, gay.
 雲彩. A cloud.
 遮 *Ché*¹. To screen; to shade; to hide, to intercept; to protect.
 慣 *Kuan*⁴. Habitual, accustomed to; addicted to; inured to; to indulge.
 辱 *Ju*⁴. To insult; to dishonor; to rail at; to outrage, to debauch.

辱罵 *Ju*⁴ *ma*⁴. To rail at, to berate.
 嗤 *Ch'i*¹. To laugh; to laugh at.
 嗤笑 *Ch'i*¹ *hsiao*⁴. To laugh at; to ridicule; to sneer at.
 蛀 *Chu*⁴. Insects that eat books or furs; to eat as these insects do. (L.)
 官司 *Kwan*¹ *si*¹. A lawsuit, a case in court.
 革 *Koá*². To change; to degrade from office; to strike off; skin, hide; armor.
 憂愁 *Yu*¹ *ch'ou*². Grieved, sorry, sad.

二十吊錢現在被人揭告了。○皂班的王頭私下說詐了
 所告的人叫作被告。○皂班的王頭私下說詐了
 多日沒見，必是叫誰拿去了。○告人的叫作原告，
 來，我們有甚麼話回答呢。○在這裏有一本聖書，
 打了一拳，我等叫他踢了一腳。○若以後教人問起
 王元通那個酒徒，已經被衙役捉去了。○他等叫我
 善被人騎。○若不被人挑唆，他不能這樣生氣。○
 可惜你聽他的話，教他耽誤了。○人善被人欺，馬
 打碎了。○王老四真有本事，你們都被他哄了。○
 的袍子，被火燒了一個大窟窿。○醋瓶不知叫誰

- 15 A large hole (or, cave) was burned in my gown by the fire.
- 16 I wonder by whom the vinegar bottle was broken.
- 17 Truly Wang the Fourth is sharp; you were all deceived by him.
- 18 It is a pity you listened to his advice, and thus were hindered by him.
- 19 When a man is good he is imposed upon, and when a horse is good he is ridden.
- 20 If he had not been stirred up by some one, he would not have gotten so angry as this.
- 21 That drunkard Wang Yüan T'ung has already been arrested by the constables. [a kick.]
- 22 I struck him a blow, and he gave me
- 23 If hereafter we are questioned by any one, what have we to say?
- 24 There was a Bible here, but I have not seen it for a long time; it must be that some one has taken it away.
- 25 The man who brings suit is called the plaintiff, and the man against whom suit is brought is called the defendant.
- 26 Wang, one of the head lictors, illicitly extorted twenty thousand cash, and is now being prosecuted for it.
- 27 A dog whose owner I do not know,

袍 *P'ao*³..... A long dress coat.
 窟窿 *K'u*¹..... A cellar, a hole in the ground.
 窟窿 *Lung*²..... A cavity, an orifice.
 窟窿 *Lung*. An orifice, a hole.
 洞 *Tung*⁴. A cave, a dell; a gorge; a cavity, a hole; to see through.
 醋 *Ts'u*⁴..... Vinegar, pickle.
 徒 *T'u*². A follower, a disciple; a low fellow, a ruffian; futile, in vain.
 酒徒 *Chiu*³ *t'u*²..... A drunken fellow.
 衙役 *Ya*²..... A court house, a tribunal; an office.
 衙役 *Yi*¹. To minister to, to serve; underlings, policemen.
 衙役. Official attendants; underlings in a yamen, constables.
 捉 *Choi*¹..... To seize; to arrest; to catch; to answer
 回答 *Hui*² *ta*¹..... To answer, to respond.
 聖 *Sheng*⁴. Intuitively wise and good, holy, sacred; sage, wise.

聖書 *Sheng*⁴ *shu*¹. The Holy Scriptures, the Bible.
 原 *Yüan*². A plateau; origin, beginning; natural; originally, really:—Les. 1:26.
 原告 *Yüan*² *kao*⁴..... The plaintiff.
 被告 *Pei*⁴ *kao*⁴..... The defendant.
 皂班 *Tsao*⁴ *pan*¹..... Policemen; lictors.
 私下 *Si*¹ *hsia*⁴..... Private, illicit, clandestine.
 說詐 *Woi*³ *cha*³. To extort, to squeeze; to accuse falsely.
 揭 *Chie*¹. To lift up,—as a cover, to raise up; to bring to mind; to state to superiors.
 揭告 *Chie*¹ *kao*⁴. To reveal and accuse, to charge, to prosecute.
 偷嘴 *T'ou*¹ *tsui*³..... To steal food.
 棍 *Kun*⁴..... A stick; a club; a knave.
 索 *Soi*¹. A cord, a rope; to tie up, to bind; to demand; to search into; a rule.

索、第二、一回、惑是、是實、明明、真教、去了、了一、來偷、
 也是、第二、回被、是謊、實話、明對、教人、了。棍、嘴、
 害怕、見了、蛇咬、話。他、他、人、○、子、教、
 的。黑、了、了、○、頭、還、說、的、了、福、出、我、打

came in to steal something to eat, when I struck him a blow with a stick and drove him out.
 28 Liu Kwoa Fu has been deceived until he is over suspicious. Even when you tell him the plain truth he suspects it is a lie.
 29 He who is once bitten by a serpent, is startled the next time at the sight of a black rope.

NOTES.

7 慣壞, to spoil by indulging in the practice of vicious habits.

12 吐 is more or less *wén*, 咬 being largely used in the same sense.

15 洞 as here used is exclusively Southern. It is used in the North of a rat hole, or of any hole or cavity in a solid, which is used to contain or secrete something, but not of a hole which perforates.

19 A common saying made humorous by a play on the words 欺 and 騎, which have the same sound, differing only in tone.

22 The active form gives the sense accurately and brief-

ly. The sentence may be translated passively thus: *He was struck a blow by me, and I was struck a kick by him.*

26 皂班 is one of the divisions or classes of underlings in a *yamen* whose business it is to act as lictors or executioners. The classes are usually divided into sections, each having a head. These headmen are distinguished by their surnames.

Hence 王頭 is that one of the headmen of the lictors whose name is Wang.

27 偷嘴, to steal a mouth; i.e., to steal something to put in the mouth.

28 哄怕了, applied to one who from being repeatedly deceived, becomes excessively suspicious.

LESSON LIV.

THE INSTRUMENTAL VERBS 使 AND 用.

使 and 用 are both in common use as instrumental verbs. They may sometimes be translated as verbs, but are generally best rendered by an instrumental preposition. In most cases the sense is quite the same whether 使 or 用 be used, though

there is often a choice in regard to rhythm; also in certain phrases or connections one is used and not the other. In Southern Mandarin 用 is used almost exclusively, 使 being rarely heard.

VOCABULARY.

杵 *Hsien*⁴. A pole; a wooden shovel, a shovel.

雪 *Hsue*². Snow; snowy; to whiten.

撮 *Ts'oa*¹. To take with the fingers; a pinch; a handful; to gather up, to scrape up; to manipulate; to make a resumé.

碗 *Wan*². A deep dish, a bowl.

舀 *Yao*². To bale out; to dip up or out.

裁 *Ts'ai*². To cut out garments; to cut, to trim; to diminish; to regulate, to plan.

縫 *Feng*². To sew, to stitch. Also *feng*⁴.

裁縫. A tailor.

鐵裁縫 *T'ie² ts'ai² feng²*. A sewing machine.

.....

文章 *Wen² chang¹*. A literary essay.

調 *Tiao*⁴. A tune; rhythm, style; to transfer, to move; mobile. See *t'iao*².

絞 *Chiao*². A pivot, to shear, to cut off.

摩 *Mo*¹. To rub with the hand; to handle; to rub together. Also *mo*².

摩 *So*¹. To rub in the hand.

摩挲. To stroke affectionately; to toy with.

搓 *Ts'oa*¹. To rub between the hands, to twist; to scrub by rubbing.

摩搓 *Mo¹ ts'oa¹*. To stroke with the hand, to fondle, to toy with. (s.)

鉋 *Pao*⁴. A plane; to plane, to level off.

推鉋 *T'ui¹ pao⁴*. A carpenter's plane.

課 四 十 五 第

LESSON LIV.

鉛字活板印的，你看清楚不
 呢。○就這塊板不平，用
 子。○寫信給先生，必該用
 ○說。○慣了這個調兒。○他
 用。這裏沒有石頭砌牆，都
 這。包起來。○洗臉有愛用
 包。○西國做針線，用鐵裁縫
 ○可以。○用木杵把這些雪
 西。○做針線，用鐵裁縫的多。
 用。○用木杵把這些雪擲出
 木。○做針線，用鐵裁縫的多。
 杵。○把這些雪擲出去。○用
 把。○把這些雪擲出去。○用
 這。○把這些雪擲出去。○用
 些。○把這些雪擲出去。○用
 雪。○把這些雪擲出去。○用
 擲。○把這些雪擲出去。○用
 出。○把這些雪擲出去。○用
 去。○把這些雪擲出去。○用
 個。○把這些雪擲出去。○用
 碗。○把這些雪擲出去。○用
 舀。○把這些雪擲出去。○用
 一。○把這些雪擲出去。○用
 點。○把這些雪擲出去。○用
 水。○把這些雪擲出去。○用
 來。○把這些雪擲出去。○用

- 1 Take the wooden shovel and clear away the snow.
- 2 Take a bowl and dip up some water.
- 3 In western countries most people do their sewing on sewing machines.
- 4 Please take some paper and wrap up these medicines.
- 5 For washing the face some like to use hot water, and some like to use cold.
- 6 We have no stones here for building walls; all our walls are made of pounded earth.
- 7 In writing essays, I have become habituated to this style.
- 8 He sent word by telegraph, and could not go into particulars.
- 9 If you use the scissors with your left hand again, I will cut off one of your fingers.
- 10 When you write to your teacher, you should use a sheet of nice paper.
- 11 Wang Lao Yie was pleased with the child and stroked its head with his hand.
- 12 When you are too stingy to use a good pen, how can you do good writing.
- 13 This board is not level (even); take a plane and plane it for me.
- 14 This book was printed with movable lead type. See how distinct it is.
- 15 If it will not brush clean with soap, then try a little acid on it.

活板 *Hwa² pan³*. A form or page of movable type, movable type.
 強水 *Ch'iang² shui³*. Mineral acids.
 試 *Shi⁴*. To try; to experiment; to test; to tempt; to examine.
 本地 *Pên³ tì⁴*. Native; this place.
 紅花 *Hung² hwa¹*. The safflower.
 染 *Jan⁵*. To dye; to taint; to infect; to catch a disease; to soil; to imbue; to vitiate.
 品紅 *P'in³ hung²*. Aniline red.
 風爐 *Fêng¹ lu²*. A small earthen furnace.
 糞膠 *Fên⁴*. Ordure, dung; manure; vile, refuse.
 膠 *Chiao¹*. Glue; gum; to glue; sticky; obstinate; stupid.
 粘 *Chien¹, Nien²*. To paste, to stick, to glue.
 天文鏡 *T'ien¹ wên² ching⁴*. A telescope.
 星 *Hsing¹*. A star, a planet; a spark; a dot.

土星 *T'u³ hsing¹*. The planet Saturn.
 環 *Hwan²*. A ring; a bracelet; to encircle.
 戒 *Chie⁴*. To warn, to caution; to guard; to refrain from; precepts.
 戒尺 *Chie⁴ ch'í³*. A ferule; a ruler.
 戒方 *Chie⁴ fang¹*. A ferule; a ruler. (s.)
 體統 *T'í³ t'ung²*. Dignity, propriety; becoming, decorous.
 知府 *Chi¹ fu³*. The magistrate who presides over a 府, a prefect.
 捐 *Chüan¹*. To subscribe money, to contribute; to buy a title or an office.
 科 *K'od¹*. A class; a rank; a gradation; a rule; to classify; an examination. Les. 68.
 科甲 *K'od¹ chia³*. Literary graduates above the rank of 舉人; viz. 進士 and 翰林.

個知府，那些窮科甲，還能做甚麼呢。

人，有錢就有功名，你看仲經堂，硬用銀子捐了一

若是拳打脚踢，就失了先生的體統了。○如今

大光環套着，實在好看。○先生打學生，該用

膠上就行了。○用天文鏡看土星，見外邊有一

粘上。○莊稼來呢。○不用使釘子釘，用膠

糞，怎能長出好風爐子。○便宜。○種莊稼不使

一¹⁸錢沒有，還想着買這個買那個，你使甚麼買呢。○

都是用紅花染的，不會用品紅染。○本地的好紅布，

淨，可以再有一點強水試一試。○¹⁶手中一個大

- 16 All native cloth of good red color is dyed with red flowers. We do not know how to use aniline red.
- 17 You haven't a cash on hand, and yet you want to buy this and buy that. What will you buy it with?
- 18 Cooking for one person is most conveniently done with a furnace.
- 19 When you farm without using manure, how can you grow a good crop?
- 20 You need not nail it; gluing it will answer the purpose.
- 21 When you look at Saturn with a telescope, you see around it a large ring of light which is very beautiful.
- 22 When a teacher whips a pupil he should do it with a ferule. If he strikes with his fist and kicks with his foot, he loses his dignity.
- 23 With people nowadays, to have money is to have a degree. Look at Chung Ching Tang, how he bought, out and out, the office of prefect. What can these impecunious graduates do?

NOTES.

1 For *shovel* some would write 掀, but the balance of authority is in favor of the character in the text. There is great diversity in regard to the word meaning to *shovel*. As used in eastern Shantung, 擲 expresses the idea perfectly, but its use is local. 撮 is widely used, but it means to *scrape up* (usually into a dust pan or 簸箕), rather than to shovel. Chinanfu teachers reject both words and write 除, while Kiukiang and Hankow teachers write 鏟.

8 In scientific books the telegraph is generally called 電報. When it was introduced into China the people dubbed it 電線.

9 Chinese parents constantly threaten their children in just such a reckless way as this. The children soon learn to know what such threats amount to.

10 Note how this sentence, as also the 12th, 19th, 21st and 22nd, all have hypothetical clauses introduced in the translation by "when," without in any case having a hypothetical particle.

14 The translation does not fully bring out the force of 就. Its use implies that the subject had been referred to before, and the speaker takes this opportunity of showing a specimen of the printing: as when we say, "there, this book, etc."

18 The "furnace" here referred to is the small earthen furnace used by the Chinese, having holes in the bottom, and a raised rim for supporting a tea kettle or a stew-pan. They burn either charcoal or grass and sticks, and are fanned or blown with a small bellows; hence the name, *wind furnace*, which is used in the South.

20 The translation only *implies* the instrument, which is fully *expressed* in the Chinese.

22 戒尺 means a *ferule*, both in the North and in the South, but in the South it is only applied to the ferules used by officers, while 戒方 is applied to the ferule used by a teacher.

23 硬 here means, *sole, sheer*; that is, the party bought his office by the sheer use of money, overriding all the proprieties of the case. The theory of Chinese examinations is that they are for the purpose of bringing to light the talented men, and a high degree is theoretically a passport to office. As is generally the case in China, theory and practice differ. Money will get almost any office without a literary degree, and the degree without the use of money rarely, if ever, procures an office. The government openly sells its titles and offices, and the money paid for them is facetiously spoken of as *contributed*. 甲, being the first of the ten stems, or cyclical characters, is used to denote first in rank, meaning that they excel the others with whom they are examined, and hence are rewarded with a degree.

第五十五課

LESSON LV.

在將近三十年了。○聽他的口氣將
 來還能有多大出息嗎。○他到中國現
 必要還清。○你想他從小就自是將
 天將要下雨。○請你寬容我，我將來
 還待得你磨拳頭。○看風雨表這樣下
 ○託他我不放心，將來必得我自己去。
 ○耶穌道理，將來必要傳遍天下。○
 病將來不能好。○你們待要回去嗎。
 如今正在將成未成的時候。○他的

- 1 It is just now on the point of being settled.
- 2 He can not, I think, get well of his disease.
- 3 Are you about to return?
- 4 The Christian religion will certainly be preached in all the world.
- 5 I am not satisfied to entrust it to him. I will probably have to go myself.
- 6 What are you showing your fists and rolling up your sleeves for? Are you going to strike me?
- 7 Judging from the way the barometer is falling, it is going to rain.
- 8 Please have patience with me and I will pay thee all.
- 9 Seeing he has been so self-willed from his youth, do you think there is any great outcome in him?
- 10 It is now nearly thirty years since he came to China.
- 11 Judging from his talk, he is intending

LESSON LV.

將待 AND 得 INDICATING FUTURITY.

In addition to its use as an instrumental verb, (Les. 28) 將 is also used to express the near future, combining with it more or less of the idea of probability. It generally takes 來 after it, which does not sensibly modify its meaning (2) (9). The combination however often takes after it, either 必 (17), or 要 (11), or 必要 (4), by which the meaning is modified in each case.

When 將 is used alone with an intransitive or nenter verb, it expresses simple proximity (10), (16), (23).

待 is used in some places to express futurity, including the idea of purpose or oughtness. In other places 得 is used in the same way. In a general way it may be said that 待 is used in Central and 得 in Southern Mandarin. 待 is used occasionally in the North, but is always followed by 要.

The use of both 待 and 得 is quite colloquial, albeit they frequently give a shade of meaning which no other word will quite replace. It is a question whether 待 is not in this case simply a mispronunciation of 得.

VOCABULARY.

- 未 Wei⁴. Not yet, never; the hour from 1 to 3 o'clock P. M.:—Les. 152.
- 遍 Pien⁴. Everywhere; all, the whole; entire; to go around, to pervade:—Les. 64 and 86.
- 搨 Lu¹. To strip; to wipe off; to rub down.
- 風雨表 Fêng¹ yü³ piao³. A barometer.
- 下落 Hsia⁴ lao⁴. To fall, to descend.
- 下降 Hsia⁴ chiang⁴. To descend.
- 寬容 K'wan¹ jung³. To be lenient, to be merciful, to be indulgent.

- 自是 Tsi⁴ shi⁴. Self-opinioned; self-willed; arrogant, overbearing.
- 口氣 K'ou³ ch'i⁴. Manner of speaking, talk, phraseology.
- 追 Chui¹. To pursue; to trace or follow up; to overtake; to reflect on.
- 追究 Chui¹ chiu¹. To follow up; to investigate; to ferret out.
- 養活 Yang³ hwo³. To nourish; to support.
- 啞 Yu³. Dumb, silent.

他水水的時候有苦難啞吧門的只能子兒來
 待龍的。是用時候有苦難啞吧門的只能子兒來
 住龍的。○用扁擔人把他也幫他。○初九日天將亮
 下○隨杖繩子、轆轤水車、將來必有換
 我他的便、他○要待這件左右兩
 也不攆他。○要待這件左右兩
 他○要待這件左右兩

to go into business, and does not
 propose to carry his education very
 far.
 12 What is there to investigate? There
 isn't a shadow of such a thing.
 13 You can not earn money; you only
 know how to spend it. By and by
 who is going to support you?
 14 What can I do with one who is a
 prospective relative? I will just
 have to bear the loss in silence.
 15 When I am in trouble he will not
 help me: by and by when he is in
 trouble I shall not help him.
 16 Just before daylight on the ninth,
 he was arrested by the officers of the
 law.
 17 In China, at present, water is raised
 with a carrying pole, a rope, a wind-
 lass, or a water wheel; by and by
 some will certainly change to pumps.
 18 Let him follow his own convenience.
 If he wishes to go I will not keep
 him, and if he wishes to stay I will
 not send him off.

啞吧 *Ya³ pa¹*..... Dumb, silent.
 苦難 *K'u⁸ nan⁴*..... Distress, trouble, calamity.
 差 *Ch'ai¹*. To send another; to commission; one
 sent; an official messenger; a waiter.
 See *ch'a¹*, also *ts'²*.
 差人 *Ch'ai¹ jên²*. An official messenger; a con-
 stable.
 打水 *Ta³ shui³*. To draw water, to carry water.

 扁 *Pien³*..... Flat, thin; to flatten.
 扁擔 *Pien³ tan⁴*..... A flat carrying stick.
 杖 *Chang⁴*..... A staff, a cane; a club; a pole.
 擔杖 *Tan⁴ chang⁴*. A carrying stick with a chain
 and hook at the ends.
 轆 *Lu⁴*..... A grooved wheel; a pulley; a roller.
 轤 *Lu²*..... A windlass; a pulley.
 轆轤. A windlass.
 水車 *Shui³ ch'è¹*. A chain or elevator pump:—
 Note. 17.
 龍 *Lung²*..... A dragon, a sea serpent; imperial.
 水龍 *Shui³ lung²*..... A pump; a fire engine.
 攆 *Nien³*. To expel summarily, to put or turn
 out, to drive out.
 默 *Mo⁴*..... Secret, quiet; in the mind.

悄默聲 *Ch'ao³ mo⁴ shêng¹*. To keep quiet; on
 the sly; silence!
 好 *Hao⁴*. To love, to be fond of; to be addicted
 to. See *hao⁸*.
 帶累 *Tai⁴ lei⁴*. To encumber, to obstruct; to
 clog, to impede.
 陷 *Hsien⁴*. To fall into, to sink; to involve; to
 entrap, to inveigle.
 帶陷 *Tai⁴ hsien⁴*..... To encumber, impede.
 舉 *Chü³*. To raise with the hands, to lift up; to
 recommend; to move; a proposition,
 an affair; all, the whole.
 薦 *Chien⁴*..... To introduce, to recommend.
 舉薦. To recommend, to mention with favor.
 丟臉 *Tiu¹ lien³*. To lose face, to be put to
 shame.
 推脫 *T'ui¹ t'oi¹*. To make excuse; to evade; to
 draw back, to shirk.
 然 *Jan²*. Certainly, yes, so; but, then, however:—
 added to many words to give empha-
 sis or express certainty, see Les. 94, 97, 115, 119.
 不然 *Pu⁴ jan²*. Not certainly, no; otherwise;
 if not.
 一時 *I¹ shi³*. At one time, at once, on the spur
 of the moment.
 接待 *Chie¹ tai⁴*..... To receive; to entertain.

一時沒法接待。給他個信，不然去這麼些人，怕他時候，可以坐下喫兩袋菸，先差人他，實在沒法推脫。○你們將到的他，又怕他給我丟臉，待要舉薦你丈夫窮一輩子。○我待要帶你去。你這樣好喫懶做的，將來要帶累你。○²¹悄悄不作聲兒的，真就是咽不下去。○²²要回他幾句話，又怕得罪他。○²³難，不知將來怎麼辦纔好。○我待要

- 19 This business is beset with difficulties. I do not know how it will be best to manage it.
- 20 If I should make any reply to him, I fear I should offend him; yet I really can not swallow it in silence.
- 21 So gluttonous and lazy as this, you will most likely keep your husband poor all his life.
- 22 I am afraid to recommend him, lest he puts me to shame; yet if I do not, I have no way of excusing myself.
- 23 When you get nearly there you can sit down and smoke a couple of pipes of tobacco, while you send some one forward to give him word; otherwise, I fear he may find it difficult to entertain so many on the spur of the moment.

NOTES.

7 下落 or 下降 is an inversion of the usual order, the auxiliary being made the principal verb. The difference is, that the usual order is commonly transitive, while the inverted order is always intransitive.

14 一個沒過門的親戚, a relative who has not yet crossed the door; i.e., the young lady through whom the affinity is to take place is not yet married. 他這個啞吧虧, this dumb loss of his; i.e., this loss which he has inflicted on me, and which I must bear in silence. By a characteristic metonymy the dumbness and loss, which really pertain to the speaker, are construed with the other party.

15 The 也 might be represented in the translation by an also, but the sense is better expressed and the sentence smoother without it.

17 When wells are shallow, the bucket is let down on the hook of the *tan chang* into the well, and drawn up by hand. When the well is too deep to reach the water in this way, a rope is tied to the bucket and the water drawn up hand over hand. In watering gardens, and in case of deep wells, a windlass is used. In raising water from a river or canal for irrigation, a species of inclined chain pump is used. It is usually driven by a large horizontal wheel with cogs, turned by an ox or donkey.

21 The phrase 好吃懶做, hankering after good eating and lazy at work, is most commonly applied to girls and young women. It expresses the worst fault a virtuous woman can have.

23 Note the different use of 差人 from that in (16). The two words there form a phrase; here they do not.

LESSON LVI.

THE DISJUNCTIVE CONJUNCTION.

或 is the regular word meaning or, but is not nearly so much used as we use or in English. In many, perhaps in the majority of cases the disjunctive idea is implied in the structure of the clauses, as (11); numerous such cases have already occurred in previous lessons. 是 is often joined with 或 for the sake of rhythm.

Whether—or, is formally expressed by 或 repeated, but is also frequently expressed by correlate clauses, without any special word (9), (15).

Either—or, is sometimes expressed by one 或 (14); sometimes by two (6), (8).

或者, or else, is a wen-li phrase, but not unfrequently used in Mandarin. It also means perhaps, possibly. When a double question is asked, giving an alternative, the second clause is often introduced by 還, which, in such cases, means or, (4), (13), (16). It generally gives a slight preponderance to the second alternative.

第五十六課

LESSON LVI.

○你¹¹喝湯呢，還是學官話的書，是寫的呢，是印的呢。○身¹²不曉得是這着好，是那着好。○客是要該給他幾個酒錢纔對。○我現在沒有主意，快說，或東或西，到底是怎麼樣。○或多或少，可以。○或⁶銀子或當頭^當，求你借點給我。○你⁷票子呢。○這⁵個藥一天喫四回，或是五回都非就明白了。○是⁴都要現錢呢，還是要幾張肥皂，就洗乾淨了。○可以³去問問他，或是或去，或不去，等明天再說。○用²一點鹹，或是

- 1 Wait till to-morrow before deciding whether to go or not.
- 2 Use a little soda or a little soap, and it will wash clean.
- 3 You can go and ask him, and you will know whether it is so or not.
- 4 Do you want it all in copper cash, or do you want a few notes?
- 5 This medicine may be taken either four or five times a day.
- 6 Lend me a little I pray you, either of money or of something to pawn.
- 7 Whether this or that, say quickly how it is.
- 8 Whether much or little, you ought by rights to give him a cumshaw.
- 9 I am undecided at present whether it is best this way or that way.
- 10 Does the gentleman wish to drink rice water or tea? Ans. Either will do.
- 11 Is the book from which you are learning Mandarin written or printed?
- 12 When you are physically so weak as this, you ought to eat more good food, or take some tonic medicine.

VOCABULARY.

或 *Hwo⁴*. Doubtful; moreover, perhaps, if, may; or, either:—see Sub.
 者 *Chē²*. This, that which; what;—a *wen-li* particle with many uses. It takes the place of 這, and of 的 as used in Les. 23 and 39. It is occasionally used in Mandarin.
 鹹 *Chien²*. Barilla or impure soda,—it is about half caustic and half carbonate.
 當頭 *Tang⁴ t'ou²*. Something pawned, or given in pledge.
 湯 *T'ang¹*. Broth, soup, gravy; *rice water*; a warm spring.
 身體 *Shén¹ T'í²*. The body, the physical frame.
 補藥 *Pu² yao⁴*. Tonic medicine, tonics.
 礦 *Kung²*. Ore; a mine; the matrix of a gem.
 虛 *Hsü¹*. Vacant, empty; untrue; *simulated*; unsubstantial; exhausted; humble; space.
 勢 *Shí⁴*. Authority; influence; dignity; strength; form; condition.

虛張聲勢 *Hsü¹ chang¹ shéng¹ shí⁴*. To make demonstration or feint, to make a flourish of trumpets.
 帝 *Tí⁴*. A ruler, a potentate, an emperor; a god; Heaven.
 關帝 *Kwan¹ tí⁴*. The god of war.
 戲 *Hsü⁴*. To play, to jest, to make fun; a theatrical play, a comedy.
 蓬萊 *P'ing²*. Overgrown, tangled. (w).
 蓬萊 *Lai²*. A thistle; untilled land. (w).
 蓬萊. A district or county in Eastern Shantung.
 遊 *Yu²*. To saunter, to ramble; to travel for amusement, to make a circuit.
 遊逛 *Yu² kwang⁴*. To saunter about, to take a walk, to visit for pleasure.
 逛景 *Kwang⁴ ching²*. To view the country, to enjoy the scenery.
 素 *Su⁴*. Plain; simple; pure; contented; formerly; usually.
 平素 *P'ing² su⁴*. Commonly, ordinariness.

不¹⁹必是去你¹⁷人病下還是補體
 知是遊是看,了,個是藥這
 他病景遊是,也,押當○聽軟
 念了,呢。○他¹⁸上關帝廟去聽戲呢,還是虛張聲勢呢。○
 書了,或者他平素不是失信的人,今日沒來,○
 是或者他平素不是失信的人,今日沒來,○
 圖希圖是遇見要緊的事,不能脫身。○
 需圖成名呢,還是要預備做生
 成名呢,還是要預備做生

- 13 I hear that you are going to open a silver mine at your place. Is it true? or is it false?
- 14 Mere empty talk will not do. You must either leave a pledge or find security.
- 15 The letter simply said he was sick, not telling whether his sickness was severe or not.
- 16 In Your Excellency's opinion are they really going to fight? or are they simply making a feint?
- 17 Do you want to go to the temple of the god of war to hear a theatrical play? or do you want to go to P'êng Lai Kwoā to saunter about (enjoy the view)?
- 18 He is ordinarily not a man who breaks his word. His not coming to-day must be owing to sickness, or else some important business has turned up so that he can not leave.
- 19 I do not know whether he is studying in order to get a degree, or whether he is preparing himself to go into business.

失信 *Shi¹ hsin⁴*. To break one's word, to vio-
 late a promise.
 遇 *Yu⁴*. To meet; to occur, to happen.
 遇見 *Yu⁴ chien⁴*. To meet; to happen on.
 脫身 *T'oa¹ shên¹*. To escape; to find leisure;
 to leave.
 需 *Hsi¹*. Required, needful; usual; necessary.
 需圖 *T'u² hsi¹*. To desire; to want; to aim; to
 seek after.
 希圖 *Hsi¹ t'u²*. To desire; to seek for; to
 scheme.
 成名 *Ch'êng² ming²*. To get a degree.
 付 *Fu⁴*. To give to, to hand over, to pay.

交付 *Chiao¹ fu⁴*. To transfer; to deliver to; to
 hand over to; to commit to.
 音信 *Yin¹ hsin⁴*. News, word,—specially that
 which is sent by letter.
 壽 *Shou⁴*. Age, years; birthday; aged.
 壽數 *Shou⁴ su⁴*. Age in years; life.
 天命 *T'ien¹ ming⁴*. Fate, the decree of Heaven;
 the endowment of heaven.
 稱呼 *Ch'êng¹ hu¹*. To designate, to call; to ad-
 dress.
 上帝 *Shang⁴ ti⁴*. The Ruler Above, the Supreme
 Ruler. Used by many for God.

NOTES.

1 The translation implies that the person to go was the person addressed. The Chinese, however, leaves this quite undecided. It might also mean, *whether I go or not, wait till to-morrow to consider.*
 4 Bank notes are largely used in China, but their circulation is entirely local. Usually they are only current in the city in which they are issued.
 7 或東或西, *whether east or whether west; i.e., either this or that.*

10 The water in which rice has been boiled is much used as a drink,—especially just after meals. It is usually called 飯湯.
 14 The 空 is twice used for emphasis. The Southern form replaces the second 空 with 白, but in other connections 說白話 means to fib, to tell "white" lies.
 17 關帝, the Chinese god of war, also called 武帝.

天主、或稱呼上帝、都可以。
 呢、答、或稱呼天父、或稱呼
 定。○真神²³可以怎麼稱呼
 的壽數長短、都是天命所
 或者得着他的音信。○人²²
 不亮的時候、他可以回家、
 把丈夫交付天主、盼望天
 冷或熱。○哈²¹拿定了主意、
 也不冷、也不熱、我願你或
 意。○我知道你的行為、你

- 20 I know your works, that you are neither cold nor hot. I would you were either cold or hot.
- 21 Hannah made up her mind to commit her husband to God, hoping that by daylight he would come home, or else that she would get word from him.
- 22 Whether a man's life be long or short, is fixed by the decree of Heaven.
- 23 How is the true God to be addressed? Ans. Either Heavenly Father, or Lord of Heaven, or Supreme Ruler, may be used.

His name as a man was 關羽. He lived in the second century, in 解州, in the province of Shansi, and is reputed to have been originally a seller of bean-curd. He subsequently joined Liu Pei, and in course of time became a celebrated general. He was finally taken prisoner and put to death by beheading. He was canonized by Hwei Tsung, of the Sung Dynasty, in the 12th century A.D., and in the Ming Dynasty was raised to the rank of 帝. The present dynasty has put especial honors upon him, conferring on him the pompous title 協天大帝, *The Great Sovereign (or God), Peer of Heaven*, and causing many temples to be built to him. He has a temple in nearly every village. Theatricals are generally held in connection with temples. Each temple has some set day in the year, on which special worship is offered and

theatrical performances are given. These theatrical displays are in fact a part of the worship, being supposed to be pleasing to the gods.

蓬萊閣. A noted temple at Têngchow, built on a high rock overlooking the sea. 遊景 does not form a phrase in the same way as 遊遊, which consists of two verbs of similar meaning. 遊景 is a verb with its object, and means, to look at the view, to survey the scenery.

22 或 might be twice inserted; thus, 人的壽數或長或短, which would make the meaning more explicit. In order to make the meaning clear as the sentence stands, it is necessary to speak the words 長短 slowly and emphatically, each with its proper tone, and with a distinct pause between them.

LESSON LVII.

APPROXIMATION.

Mandarin has a large variety of words to express the general idea of approximation, each having its own peculiar use and shade of meaning. In regard to a number of these phrases the usage differs in different places, and some of them are decidedly colloquial.

差不多 Almost, about.

差不許多 Almost, very nigh, very little difference. (n. and c.)

差不幾多 Almost, very little difference. (s.)

差不離 Nearly, somewhere about, near the mark, fair, passable.

差不離形 About, not far from the mark.

差不來往 or 不差來往 Approximately.

差一點 Nearly, within a little.

差不着一點 } Almost, all but, within a hair-breadth.

差不錯 Correct, all right, no mistake:—Les. 70.

不離 Not far off, fairly good, all right.

不離經 The same.

不大離 Not very far off, not so bad, fair, near the mark.

不大離經 The same. (s.)

不大離形 The same (n. and c.)

不大差什麼 No great difference, about the same.

幾乎 Nearly, almost, well nigh, very near.

課七十五第

LESSON LVII.

這件¹子太破了，那一件還²不大³離⁴經⁵。你是多日⁶沒有見他的字，這以後寫的⁷真正⁸不錯。○我看你⁹二位的年紀，差也差不多。○我的烟袋，昨日差一點¹⁰，叫人拔了去。○別的¹¹莊稼都不¹²離¹³經¹⁴。就是蕃麥¹⁵，瞎了。○如今英文，差不多¹⁶通行天下。○前天榮喜¹⁷從樓梯上掉下來，幾幾乎¹⁸跌斷¹⁹了氣。○就是不能²⁰背的一點不差，也要得²¹不大²²離²³經²⁴。○這一路紙，比²⁵那一路紙怎麼樣呢？²⁶答²⁷：差不²⁸差²⁹甚³⁰麼，都是好³¹手。○許³²來往³³多³⁴往來³⁵。○他³⁶們兩個的³⁷手藝，不大³⁸差³⁹甚⁴⁰麼，都是好⁴¹手。○許⁴²來往⁴³多⁴⁴往來⁴⁵。○我⁴⁶們纔到了河中⁴⁷，一⁴⁸添⁴⁹，差不⁵⁰離⁵¹形⁵²。我就賣給你。○我⁵³們纔到了河中⁵⁴。

- 1 This [garment] is too ragged; that one is fairly good.
- 2 You have not seen his writing for a long time; of late he has been writing very well indeed.
- 3 I judge the ages of you two gentlemen differ very little, if they differ at all.
- 4 Yesterday a man very nearly snatched away my pipe.
- 5 All the other crops are fairly good, but the buckwheat is a failure.
- 6 The English language is now current almost all over the world.
- 7 Day before yesterday Yung Hsi fell down stairs and was stunned almost to death.
- 8 Even if you can not repeat it exactly, yet you ought to come very near it.
- 9 How does this kind of paper compare with that? Ans. They are approximately the same.
- 10 There is no considerable difference in their skill; they are both good workmen.
- 11 Come back, come back! Add a little more, and if you come anywhere near the price, I'll sell to you.
- 12 Just when we had reached the middle of the river, a great rise of water

VOCABULARY.

幾 *Chi*¹. A few; nearly, about; time, chance; to approximate. See *chi*³.
 真正 *Chên¹ chêng⁴*..... Really, truly, indeed.
 蕎麥 *Ch'iao*³..... Buckwheat.
 麥 *Mai*⁴, *Mod*⁴..... Wheat.
 瞎 *Hsia*¹. Blind; ignorant; reckless. *To fail, to come to nought, to miscarry.* (N., C.)
 英文 *Ying*¹ *uên*²..... The English language.
 通行 *T'ung*¹ *hsing*²..... Everywhere current.
 樓梯 *Ti*¹..... A ladder; stairs; a step ladder, steps.
 樓梯 *Lou*² *t'i*¹. A stairway, a ladder to an upper story or loft.
 絕 *Chüe*². To cut off; to interrupt; to sever; to terminate; very, extremely:—Les. 116.
 沖 *Ch'ung*¹. To strike or dash against; to carry away; to steep.

傳言 *Ch'wan*² *yen*²..... A report, a rumor.
 寸 *Ts'un*⁴..... An inch (Chinese); a very little.
 家當 *Chia*¹ *tang*⁴. Patrimony, property, wealth, fortune.
 家私 *Chia*¹ *si*¹..... The same.
 撞 *Chwang*⁴, *Oh'wang*⁴. To pound, to thump; to beat upon; to strike or run against; to cheat, to cozen.
 撞倒 *Ch'wang*⁴ *tao*³. To strike and overturn, to push over:—Les. 91.
 崖 *Ai*², *Yai*²..... A precipice; a bank; a shore.
 坡 *P'oi*¹. A declivity; a slope; a hill; a terrace, a bank.
 趕緊 *Kan*³ *chin*³. Diligent, assiduous; to hurry, to push.
 上緊 *Shang*⁴ *chin*³..... The same.
 估 *Ku*¹. To estimate, to reckon, to think, to set a price, to appraise. Also *ku*⁴.

希孔和王作清在場中的文章怎麼樣呢？
 說了一會兒說來說去，差一點弄弄鬧鬧，弄結了。
 量着做不起來也不差甚麼。
 差不差一點掉在坡崖子底下。
 大的家口多一點。
 經形了。論他弟兄兩個的家私也差不多，就是老
 壓死。不用再寬二寸，我看再寬一寸，就不大離
 我聽見一個傳言說，他在路上翻了車，幾乎叫車
 一年半的人，就是沒有五十歲也。差不多。
 間，就下來了大水，差沒一點被水沖去。○那不是

- came and we were all but carried away.
- 13 That man is not in his teens; if not fifty, he is not very far from it.
- 14 I heard a report that on the way his cart upset, and he came very near being crushed to death.
- 15 It need not be two inches broader. If it is one inch broader it will, I think, be about right.
- 16 As to wealth, the two brothers are about the same, but the elder has somewhat the larger family.
- 17 Both children were knocked down by the animal, and came within a very little of falling down the bank.
- 18 If we work diligently, I calculate we can finish, or at least come very near it.
- 19 I talked with him a while yesterday evening, and our talk came very near ending in a quarrel.
- 20 What do you think of the essays Liu Hsi K'ung and Wang Tsoä Ch'ing wrote for the examinations? Aus. Very fair. Both have a prospect of getting their degree.

估量 *Ku¹ liang⁴*. To consider, to calculate, to guess.

扭 *Niu⁸*. To twist, to wrench; to wring; to sprain; to wriggle.

鬧掙 *Nao⁴ ning²*. To get into a quarrel, to altercation.

弄扭 *Nung⁴ niu⁸*. The same. (c.)

弄結 *Nung⁴ chie¹*. The same. (s.)

孔 *K'ung⁸*. Excellent; the peacock.

場 or 場 *Ch'ang⁸*. An open plot of ground; an arena for drill, examinations, theatricals, etc. Also *ch'ang²*.

指望 *Chi³ wang⁴*. Hope, prospect.

自從 *Tsi⁴ Ts'ung²*. From the time.

元寶 *Yüan² pao⁸*. A shoe or ingot of silver containing about fifty taels.

象 *Hsiang⁴*. The elephant; form, image; an emblem, a resemblance.

氣象 *Ch'ü⁴ hsiang⁴*. Aspect, appearance, mien, air.

舉動 *Chü⁸ tung⁴*. Actions; bearing, behavior; move.

親事 *Ch'in¹ shi⁴*. A marriage alliance, matrimonial affairs.

炸 *Cha⁴*. To burst, to fly to pieces; bits. Broken coal (N.) Also *cha²*.

裂 *Lie⁴*. To crack open; to split; to tear.

炸裂. To split in pieces, to burst, to fall through.

霍 *Hwo⁴*. The rapid disease, the cholera.

霍亂病 *Hwo⁴ lwan⁴ ping⁴*. Cholera.

瘋 *Feng¹*. Leprosy; palsy; rabid; insane, demented; any nervous disease.

合算 *Hoi² swan⁴*. To reckon up, to take the aggregate; on the whole; profitable, paying.

圍 *Wei²*. To surround; to invest; to besiege; a wall round a village, a fortification.

一連 *I¹ lien²*. One after the other, consecutive, together with; even also.

都有進學的指望。○世上真有些會說話的人，差不離的話，叫他一說，就說活了。○自從他兒子帶了兩個元寶來，就大改氣象，在舉動言語之間，覺着正經不錯。○這門親事，若不是我去的早，差不多又炸裂了。○他纔得了家信說，他父親前日害癩亂病，幾乎死了。○正走到十字路口，從南來了一條大瘋狗，差一點把我咬着。○請問老兄，這兩條路走那條好呢？答南路近一點，北路好走一點，合算起來，差不許多。○長毛來的時候，我那莊上的園子，被他一連困了五天，幾幾乎就困破了。

- 21 Truly there are some men in the world who know how to talk. They will take up almost anything, and say it so as to make it seem real.
- 22 Ever since his son sent him the two ingots of silver, his aspect has greatly changed; both in his bearing and in his talk he feels himself decidedly worthy of regard.
- 23 If I had not gone early, this marriage proposal would, most likely, have fallen through again.
- 24 He has just received a letter from home, saying, that day before yesterday his father was seized with cholera and came very near dying.
- 25 Just when I had reached the street crossing, there came from the southward a large, rabid dog, and he came very near biting me.
- 26 Will you please tell me, my friend, which of these roads I had better go? Ans. The south road is a little nearer, the north road is a little better; so that, on the whole, there is very little difference.
- 27 When the rebels came, they besieged the wall of our village for five consecutive days, and came very near breaking it.

NOTES.

1 The classifier 件 is here put for the noun, and hence takes the 子. Such an abbreviation is only allowable in colloquial.

3 差也差不多, differing, still do not differ much,—a common idiomatic form.

7 跌斷了氣, to fall so as to break or stop the breath; i.e., the life. For a temporary suspension of breathing, a different word is commonly used. 斷 and 絕 are auxiliaries, used only with a few verbs.

9 The second 紙 might be omitted without detriment to the sentence.

11 This is the language of one who has just refused an offer, and the customer has started to go.

13 一年半, an exaggerated form of expressing that one is not young.

15 再 does not here mean again, but in addition.

17 It is worthy of note that 差一點 means practically the same as 差沒一點 or 差不着一點, notwithstanding the fact that the one seems to say the opposite of the others.

21 差不多的話, words which are almost; i.e., almost any story or incident which has even the least semblance of truth or reality. 說活了, lit., to speak alive; i.e., they can talk so well that in their mouths the most improbable things put on the aspect of reality.

22 舉動言語之間 is a wèn-li phrase which use has

made intelligible, although it would be somewhat pedantic, if used in addressing an uneducated man. 正經不錯, lit., proper and no mistake; i.e., both self-satisfied and self-important.

23 門 is the classifier of 親事, and its use as a classifier is almost limited to this one thing. 炸裂 is usually pronounced as if written 炸離.

24 家信 may be either a letter from home, as in this case, or a letter addressed to those at home. 害 is to be taken passively.

25 十字路口, the place where two streets cross,—the term being derived from the character 十. In some places 路 is omitted, and in others 街 is substituted for it.

26 請問老兄 is a polite manner of addressing a stranger, when asking for information of any kind.

27 長毛 is abbreviated from 長毛賊, long haired robbers. This is the name generally given by the Chinese to the adherents of the great Taiping rebellion of 1850 to 1865. They were so called because they did not shave their heads, as the Chinese are all required to do by the present Tartar dynasty. In some parts of China—notably in Shantung, the larger villages generally have adobe walls around them, as a protection against armed robbers. In some cases walls (generally of stone) are built for greater protection, on the tops of hills, by several villages in common, and to these the people flee with their valuables in case of danger. 我那莊, that village of ours.

課八十五第

LESSON LVIII.

他¹ 娘有、不如自己² 有。○我³ 比⁴ 不⁵ 上⁶ 他的能幹。○這⁷ 塊
 洋錢、比那塊強。○你⁸ 看那⁹ 個強、答¹⁰ 我看這¹¹ 個強。○這¹² 塊
 人是比萬物更尊貴的。○火¹³ 棍兒短、強似手撥。○
 規。○點¹⁴ 蠟燭不及點燈。○送¹⁵ 東西體面。○城¹⁶ 裏的風氣、
 大不及城外的。○我¹⁷ 看他的學問、趕不上¹⁸ 你的。
 ○打¹⁹ 他、不如拿個理去和他講。○這²⁰ 個房子、比那
 個房子好多了。○可以²¹ 多做一點飯、騰下²² 強、其²³ 不
 要²⁴ 叫這個人回頭、比登天還難。○他²⁵ 的病、其²⁶ 不

- 1 He understands, but you understand better.
- 2 I can not compare with him in ability.
- 3 For your father or mother to own a thing is not so good as for you to own it yourself. [fur coat.
- 4 A wadded coat is not so warm as a
- 5 This dollar is better than that one.
- 6 Which do you think is the better? Ans. I think this one is the better.
- 7 Man is more exalted than all things else.
- 8 A short poker is better than to stir the fire with one's hand.
- 9 It is not as economical to burn candles as it is to burn a lamp.
- 10 Still more should not one who is a leader violate the rules.
- 11 To return a favor with money is not so genteel as to send a present.
- 12 The air in the city is not nearly so good as it is outside. [up to yours.
- 13 I do not think his scholarship comes
- 14 To beat him is not so good as to try the effect of reason. [one.
- 15 This house is much better than that
- 16 You may cook a little more rice. It is better to have some left, than not to have enough.

LESSON LVIII.

THE COMPARATIVE DEGREE.

Formal comparison is made with 比, of the use of which there have been frequent instances in previous lessons. There are, however, a variety of other words and ways, by which comparison is effected.

更 To change,—as a comparative, is equal to *more*, or to the termination *er*. It precedes the adjective which it qualifies. It is often used in connection with 比. (1) (19)

强 Violent,—as a comparative, *better, superior*. (5). It follows the noun it qualifies, and is generally used in connection with 比 (5), or joined with 如 or 似 or 其, as below.

更强 Still better, much better; better. (19)

似 Like,—is often used to form a direct comparison. It follows the adjective with which it is joined. (24)

其 That,—is used colloquially in the same way as 似, but is not *t'ung hsing*. (24)

如 As,—may also be used alone in the same way, but usually takes 强 before it, or is joined with a negative, as below.

强其 (16) } Better than, superior to. The first form is local, the other two are general.

强似 (8) (35) }
强如 (28) }
不及 ^{chi} Not as good as, inferior to,—a much used form.

不如 Not equal to, not up to. (4) (9)

多 or **得多** following an adjective is equal to *much*,—much better, much higher, etc. (15) (29)

赶不上 }
跟不上 } Not equal to, not up to. (13), (21)

Comparison may also be effected without any special word. (20)

告 烏 還 上 分 禽 水 看 個 看
 訴 在 更 面 這 獸 筆 這 不 着
 他 樹 要 往 四 了 好 個 比 一
 強 不 緊 下 層 意 使 沒 那 天
 如 如 嗎 一 個 思 像 有 個 更 比
 在 一 俗 不 一 我 這 那 好 一
 衆 鳥 語 如 層 些 樣 個 強 天
 人 在 說 一 深 弟 沒 好 嗎 天
 跟 手 個 一 似 兄 有 好 好 比
 前 見 十 其 們 良 我 歹 一
 說 人 賒 一 一 連 心 使 是 天
 出 有 不 個 層 外 的 這 在 好
 來 錯 如 個 一 人 早 乾 各 歹
 前 在 一 的 好 的 早 筆 人 是
 院 背 現 事 的 好 的 筆 看 在
 天 地 又 比 的 的 跟 上 各 那
 子 井 說 我 的 不 不 上 人 個
 那 裏 十 事 如 如 那 我 這

17 To lead this man to reform is harder than to ascend to heaven.
 18 His disease is evidently improving every day.
 19 Why do you specially select that one? Is not this one better than that one?
 20 Whether good or bad depends on how each individual looks at it. As I see it, this is not as good as that.
 21 For my use this dry pen is not equal to that wet one.
 22 In very deed, a man so devoid of conscience as this, is not as good as a beast.
 23 Those brothers of mine are not even equal to strangers. [form a climax.
 24 These four divisions which he makes
 25 The good ones are all put on top; as you descend they get poorer and poorer. [mine?
 26 Is your business more important than
 27 There is a proverb which says, Ten credits are not so good as one cash [sale]; and another which says, Ten birds in the tree are not so good as one in the hand.
 28 When you see a fault in a man, it is better to tell him in private, than to speak of it in public.

VOCABULARY.

更 *Kéng⁴*. More, still; again:—see Sub. See
 (³) *kéng¹*, also *ching¹* 更
 及 *Chi²*. To reach to; to connect:—see Sub.; effec-
 tive, practicable, availing:—Les. 92.
 and, with, also; about, concerning; at, to.
 似 *Si⁴*. Like, similar to, resembling:—see Sub.;
 as, as if:—Les. 99.
 其 *Ch'i²*. A *wán-li* pronoun having many uses:—
 he, she, it; that, the one; whoever;
 there; if, then, etc.; used in Mandarin in many
 phrases taken from books:—Les. 146.
 綿 襖 *Mien² ao²*..... A wadded coat.
 洋 錢 *Yang² ch'ien²*..... Silver coin; a dollar.
 萬 物 *Wan⁴ wu⁴*..... All things.
 撥 *Poá¹, Pa¹, Pu¹*. To spread; to separate; to
 disperse; to transfer, to turn over.
 擷 *La¹*..... To turn over; to pull about.
 撥 擷 To turn over, to stir about, to scatter.
 蠟 *La⁴*..... Wax; waxy, glazed; a candle.
 燭 *Chu²*..... A candle, a torch, a light.
 蠟 燭 A candle.

上 算 *Shang⁴ swan⁴*..... Profitable, paying.
 首 領 *shou³ ling³*..... A leader, a chief.
 感 *Kan³*. To move the feelings; to affect, to act
 on physically or mentally; to be
 grateful; to return a favor.
 風 氣 *Féng¹ ch'i⁴*..... The air; custom, fashion.
 贖 *Shéng⁴*..... Overplus, remainder; leavings.
 登 *Téng¹*..... To ascend, to begin; to record.
 禽 獸 *Ch'in² shou⁴*..... Birds, flying and feathered creatures.
 禽 獸 *Ch'in² shou⁴*. Birds and beasts, a com-
 prehensive term for the
 whole animal creation.
 層 *Ts'éng²*. A layer, a story; a step; a degree;
 a division. A classifier:—Les. 100.
 俗 語 *Su² yü³*..... Common, vulgar; lay; the world.
 鳥 背 *Niao³*..... A bird, the feathered tribe.
 地 前 *Pei⁴ ti⁴*..... In private; secretly.
 跟 前 *Kén¹ ch'ien²*, At the feet; in the presence
 of, before.

靜、時、你、你、失、器、婿、兒³¹、件、有
 又、勢、身、的、時、做、孝、子、事、後
 少、莫、莫、上、心、的、的、○、孝、很、院、天
 得、强、妙、一、血、鳳、滑、光、用³²、不、如、手、大、前
 罪、似、於、塊、更、鳳、錫、滑、手、如、媳、不、及、院、天
 多、凡、事、肉、重、不、○、得³³、的、傢、伙、女、兒、孝、不、如、看、○
 少、事、不、疼、去、你、雞、○、的、的、總、不、及、用、如、看、○
 人、管、○、我³⁵、個、你³⁴、看、財、帛、似、虎、機、女、○、這³⁰
 呢、自、己、多、麼、清、的、割、比、

- 29 The front court as large as the back court! The front court is much smaller.
 30 This business is very much involved. It would be better for you to go in person and see about it.
 31 A dutiful daughter-in-law is better than a dutiful son. A dutiful son-in-law is better than a dutiful daughter.
 32 After all, tools made by hand are not so nicely finished as those made by machinery.
 33 A brindled cat in high spirits disports itself like a tiger: a phoenix in unpropitious circumstances is not equal to a chicken.
 34 You regard money as of more value than your heart's blood. To take away a cash hurts you more than to cut out a piece of your flesh.
 35 It seems to me that in the present state of affairs, the best way is to decline all responsibilities. What an amount of trouble it saves, and how many people it saves offending.

天井 *T'ien¹ ching³*. A court between two houses, a court-yard.

纏手 *Ch'an² shou³*. Intricate, involved, embarrassing.

機 *Chi¹*. Change; origin; moving power; natural cause; contrivance; a machine; a loom; a stratagem.

器 *Ch'i¹*. A vessel; a tool, an implement.

機器. A machine, an instrument, a tool.

錫 *T'ang⁴*. To smooth, to polish.

滑錫 *Hua² t'ang⁴*. Smooth; slippery; polished; finished.

得意 *Té² i⁴*. In good spirits; satisfied.

鰲 *Li²*. A blackish yellow color, dun.

失時 *Shi¹ shi²*. Out of luck or favor; in unfavorable circumstances.

鳳凰 *Fèng⁴ hwang³*. A fabulous bird of felicitous omen, the phoenix.

帛 *Po⁴,³*. White silk; wealth.

財帛 *Ts'ai³ po⁴*. Money, wealth.

血 *Hsüe⁴, Hsie³*. Blood; related by blood.

時勢 *Shi² shi⁴*. The times; state of affairs.

莫 *Mo⁴*. Do not, no need of:—Les. 82; perhaps; not so; nothing; nothing like.

妙 *Miao⁴*. Excellent, wonderful, admirable; subtle, mysterious; supernatural.

NOTES.

1 The "but" in the translation is implied by the connection. The sentence might also be taken hypothetically, and be rendered, *If he understands, you still more.*

9 蠟燭, *wax candles*, is the most general and most perspicuous term for candles. Chinese candles are usually made of a mixture of tallow and lard, by dipping, and are finally dipped once or twice in wax, thus giving them a thin skin of wax, which protects the soft inside and forms a cup to retain the molten grease. In some places, as in Peking, candles are called simply 蠟, *wax*; in other places they are called 蠟燈, *wax lamps*.

11 感情 sometimes forms a phrase, meaning to stir up or influence others, but here 感 is the verb and 情 its object. 情 properly means affection, but is here put for the favor, or present, which expresses affection.

14 個 is used to specialize the particular reason, or principle, involved in the case.

17 登天 *ascend to heaven*.—an expression to denote something that is impossible. 登 is only used in Mandarin in set phrases.

18 一天比一天好了, *one day compared with one day good*; i.e., *improving day by day*. Note that the Chinese says the disease is improving.

課 九 十 五 第

LESSON LIX.

誰 願 意 爲 他 白 効 勞 呢。 ○ 若 不 爲 喫 穿 二 字，
誰 還 肯 幹 營 活 呢。 ○ 你 是 願 受 打， 是 願 受 罰，
答 小 的 情 願 受 罰。 ○ 罰 你 請 一 桌 客， 你 情 甘 心
不 甘 心 呢。 ○ 進 教 是 在 自 己 誠 心 願 意， 沒 有
不 情 願 呢。 ○ 進 教 是 在 自 己 誠 心 願 意， 沒 有
強 逼 人 進 教 的。 ○ 可 以 用 幾 個 小 紙 撚 兒 訂
起 來， 我 不 愛 要 那 些 大 紙 撚 兒。 ○ 說 和 事 的，
給 他 斷 了 三 百 吊 錢， 他 又 情 願 讓 他 二 十 吊。
○ 一 年 二 百 兩 銀 子 的 束 脩， 你 還 不 肯 住 就
你 想 要 掙 多 少 呢。 ○ 不 用 理 他， 他 愛 願 意 也 是
這 麼 樣， 不 愛 願 意 也 是 這 麼 樣。 ○ 我 不 管 他 心

- 1 Who is willing to drudge for nothing?
- 2 If it were not for the sake of food and clothing who would be willing to work?
- 3 Would you prefer to be beaten, or to be fined? Ans. I would prefer to be fined.
- 4 If fined to the extent of feasting one table, would you be willing or not?
- 5 Joining the church must be of your own free will. No one joins the church by compulsion.
- 6 Use some small paper cords and bind it [the book] up. I do not like these coarse paper cords.
- 7 The arbitrators awarded him three hundred tiao, of which he, of his own accord, abated twenty tiao.
- 8 Getting a salary of two hundred taels a year, and yet you will not remain! How much do you expect to earn?
- 9 Pay no attention to him: so it must be, whether he likes it or not.
- 10 I do not care whether he is worried or not. I can not suffer him to treat me so rudely as this.

21 The 旱筆, or 乾筆, is a pen of which only a very small portion is wet with the ink, and it is allowed to dry when not in use. In the case of the 水筆, the whole head of the pen is wet, and is kept from drying when not in use by being covered with the brass tube or "cap" provided for the purpose. The "dry pen" is used chiefly in the South.
24 The translation gives the sense. A more literal translation would be,—each division is more profound than the preceding one.

29 天井 means properly a narrow court between two houses, in allusion probably to the patch of sky seen from the bottom of a well. It has, however, come to be used in many places instead of 院子, yard. In other parts of the country it is scarcely used at all.
33 Paraphrase thus:—"When in the mood, a brindled cat will put on the air and mien of a tiger; while the féng hwang, though naturally a magnificent bird, is, when in unfavorable circumstances, no better than a chicken. The meaning is, that everything depends on circumstances."

LESSON LIX.
ASSENT AND DISSENT.

願 and 愛, and their combinations, are chiefly used to express willingness or assent; but various other words are used with a negative to express unwillingness or dissent.
願意 Willing, to acquiesce, to agree. (1) (5)
情願 Of one's own free will, voluntarily. (7)
愛意 Willing; inclined, disposed. (9)
甘願 Freely, of one's own accord. (15)
甘心 Satisfied, willing, assisting. (4)

甘心 樂意 Freely, cordially. (13)
不肯 Unwilling, dissatisfied. (8) (11)
不服 To dissent, to demur, to protest. (12)
不讓 To disallow, to restrain, to resent. (14)
不依 To disallow, to withstand; to demand satisfaction. (18)
不答應 To refuse, to resent, to demur. (18)
不受 or 不受頭 To refuse to submit. (10)

去了。那¹⁵着撞甘心
 了。裏是我的名子去撞騙人，不用掛我的招幌子，若是再指
 ○我¹⁶我也甘願送給他，是他硬強拿
 ○我¹⁶我也不愛踢躐兒，也不愛打
 ○你¹²但我逞他的威風，滅我的志氣，我
 ○心裏就是不服。○人¹³孝順父母，應當
 ○甘心樂意，不可出於勉強。○你¹⁴出去
 ○是打他的孩子，他再不肯干休。
 ○受頭。○這就是他打了我的孩子，若
 ○焦不心焦，他這樣衝撞我，我就不能

- 11 In this case, it is he that struck my child. If I had struck his child, he would never have been willing to drop it.
- 12 You are all the time boasting of his power, in order to weaken my resolution, but I am determined not to yield.
- 13 A man should honor his parents of his own free will, and not as the result of constraint.
- 14 When you set out to swindle people, I don't want you to hang out my sign. If you ever again attempt to swindle people in my name, I will certainly make it hot for you.
- 15 I give it to him of my own accord! He took it away by main force.
- 16 I do not like to play shuttlecock, nor to play ball; the thing I like is to play chess.

VOCABULARY..

甘 Kan¹. Sweet; pleasant, agreeable; luscious; delightsome; willing, voluntary.
 効 Hsiao⁴. To toil, to labor earnestly, to exert one's self; exertions.
 効勞 Hsiao⁴ lao²..... To toil, to drudge.
 逼 Pi¹. To press upon; to urge or force arbitrarily; to ill use.
 強逼 Ch'iang³ pi¹..... To compel, to force.
 進教 Chin⁴ chiao⁴. To join the church, to become a Christian.
 撚 Nien³. To fumble over; to toy with; to roll and twist with the fingers.
 紙撚 Chi³ nien³. A twisted paper string or cord; a lamp-lighter.
 束 Shu⁴, Su⁴..... To bind, to restrain, to coerce.
 脩 Hsiu¹..... Dried meat; to prepare.
 束脩. A teacher's wages.
 焦 Chiao¹..... Scorched; anxious, worried.
 心焦 Hsin¹ chiao¹..... Worried, vexed.
 衝 Ch'ung¹. To rush against; to excite; to collide with.
 衝撞 Ch'ung¹ chwang⁴. To butt against; to interfere with; to offend; to treat rudely.
 突 Tu⁴. Abruptly; to rush; insolent, audacious:— Les. 115.
 唐突 T'ang² tu⁴..... To treat rudely.

答應 Ta¹ ying⁴. To reply; to respond; to assent, to agree to.
 受頭 Shou⁴ t'ou²..... To submit to. (L)
 休 Hsiu¹. To rest; to cease; to desist; to divorce; prosperous; stop, do not:—Les. 82.
 干休 Kan¹ hsiu¹..... To quit, to drop.
 逞 Ch'eny³. To presume on, to rely on; to boast; presumptuous, reckless.
 威 Wei¹..... Majesty; grave, imposing, lordly.
 威風 Wei¹ feng¹..... Majesty; prowess.
 志 Chi⁴. The will; inclination; purpose, determination; statistical works; annals.
 志氣 Chi⁴ ch'i⁴. Determination, resolution; will; courage.
 樂意 Lo⁴ i⁴..... Heartily; willing, cordial.
 出於 Ch'u¹ yü²..... To proceed from.
 勉 Mien³. To force one's self, to constrain; to urge; to animate.
 勉強 Mien³ ch'iang³. To constrain; to compel; to insist on.
 撞騙 Chwang⁴ p'ien⁴. To cheat, to humbug, to swindle.
 幌 Hwang³. A curtain, a sign, an advertisement.
 招 Chao¹. To beckon; to invite; to excite; to confess, to admit; a sign board.

我三百吊，我也是不答應的。
 了，若是這件事擲在我身上，就是給
 趙四只拿出三十吊錢，李有年就肯
 盡鵝飛，這纔甘心，以後經人調說
 李有年來不依他，把趙四盤折了，水
 了，他的街坊鄰居，通通不服，都願意
 日叫他婆婆惡暴打了一頓，氣的吊死
 年的女兒，是這東莊趙四的媳婦，前
 快來抱他去，我好弄飯。○北莊李有
 毬，就是愛下棋。○保子爹，孩子不肯鬧

17 Pao-tsi's papa, the baby is very cross: come and carry him out while I get the dinner.
 18 The daughter of Li Yu Nien, of the village to the north, is daughter-in-law to Chao the Fourth, of the village to the east. Day before yesterday her mother-in-law gave her a violent beating, and she got so angry that she hanged herself. The neighbors were all up in arms, and were anxious that Li Yu Nien should take the matter up, and not be satisfied till he had squeezed out of Chao the Fourth every cash he had. Afterwards, through the intervention of middle-men, Li Yu Nien agreed to let off Chao the Fourth on payment of only thirty thousand cash. If it had been my affair, I would not have assented if he had paid me three hundred thousand cash.

招牌 *Chao¹ p'ai²*..... A signboard, a sign.
 一定 *I¹ ting⁴*. Certainly, positively, inevitably: —Les. 116.
 硬強 *Ying⁴ ch'iang³*. By force, compulsory, peremptory.
 毬 *Ch'iu²*..... A shuttlecock.
 踢毬 *Ti¹ ch'ien⁴*. To play shuttlecock,—using the foot as a battledoor.
 毬打 *Ta³ ch'iu²*..... To play ball.
 棋 *Ch'i²*..... Chess; checkers, fox and geese, etc.
 下棋 *Hsia⁴ ch'i²*..... To play chess, etc.
 暴 *Pao⁴*. A scorching heat: stormy; cruel, violent, oppressive.
 暴打 *Pao⁴ ta³*..... To beat violently.

惡打 *Ou⁴ ta³*..... To beat cruelly.
 頓 *Tun⁴*. To bow the head, to salute; a resting place; to rest; a meal; a turn, a time; a stop;—Les. 64.
 鄰居 *Lin² chü¹*..... A neighbor.
 折蹬 *Ché² têng⁴*. To harass; to persecute; to use up.
 盤弄 *P'an² nung⁴*..... The same.
 飛 *Fei¹*..... To fly; to go swiftly; sudden.
 處 *Ch'u³*. To dwell; to occupy the place of; to attend to; to do what is proper. See *ch'u⁴*.
 調處 *T'iao³ ch'u³*. To rearrange; to adjust or compromise a quarrel.
 調說 *T'iao³ shwo⁴*. To arrange terms of compromise.

NOTES.

3 罰 usually means simply punishment, but here, being contrasted with 打, it is used to signify a fine. It is not an uncommon thing for officials to give light offenders the choice of a beating or a fine.
 4 This is the language of one who is acting as mediator. It is a common thing for the offender to make amends by giving a feast to the parties interested.
 6 紙捻 here refers to the little paper strings which all Chinese teachers know how to make, and which they use to bind small books for temporary use.
 8 束脩 is only applied to the salary of a teacher. It is derived from the ancient custom of making presents of meat, etc., instead of paying a salary in money.
 10 心焦不焦 is the Central and Southern form. In this

case 心焦 does not form a phrase, as it does in the other form.
 14 不讓 here means, as it often does, to resent forcibly, to call to account and demand satisfaction.
 15 The force of 那裡 is very hard to transfer to writing in English. It can only be expressed by the tone of surprise and indignation given to the English words.
 16 Chinese boys play ball very little. Their chief game with a ball consists simply in striking the ball with the hand time after time, so as to keep it rebounding from the ground.
 17 Chinese women generally speak of, or to, their husbands through the names of their children. 不肯 is a forcible way of expressing that the child is unmanageable.
 18 水盡鵝飛, water exhausted and goose flown,—a figure to express the utter exhaustion of resources; bankrupt.

課十六第

LESSON LX.

○ 你 隨¹³有 今 罷。 罷。 做、 答 靜 悄¹
 打¹⁶快 你 點 說 ○ 我 請。 靜 悄
 死 走 罷、 症 也 你⁹ 有⁷ 不 能 讓 你、 兒 的 罷。
 他 罷。 你 候 罷。 益。 心 罷、 快 快 的 說 罷。 ○ 他⁸ 實 在 不 借、 就
 不 過 償 他 的 命 罷 了。 ○ 壺 裏 的 水 穀 不 穀。 答 閒 着 再
 着 好 就 好。 ○ 這 裏 是 住 家 的、
 陰¹² 你¹¹ 這 樣 黃 黑 乾 枯 瘦 瘦 的、 必 是
 涼 兒 裏 坐 着 涼 涼 的、 事 到 如
 涼 兒 裏 坐 着 涼 涼 的、 事 到 如

- 1 Keep quiet.
- 2 Do you mind your own business.
- 3 Well, good day. Ans. Good day.
- 4 I think some one must have offended him.
- 5 If you act in this way I will have to demur. Ans. Demur as much as you like.
- 6 We will see each other again.
- 7 If you have anything to say, say it quickly.
- 8 If he positively will not lend, so be it.
- 9 Do not be alarmed, I shall not deceive you.
- 10 Let it go. After the matter has come to this pass, it would be useless to speak of it.
- 11 You have such a sallow and shrivelled look. It must be that you have some ailment.
- 12 Sit down in the shade and cool off.
- 13 As you like: if you are content, it is all right.
- 14 This is a private house. Please go out at once.

LESSON LX.

THE FINAL PARTICLE 罷.

罷 is a final particle of great expressiveness, and with a wide variety of uses. It does not always stand at the close of a sentence, but it generally, if not always, marks the end of an idea. The following is an approximate classification of its uses:—

- 1 It emphasizes an injunction (9), or an invitation (12), or a command (14) (1).
- 2 It softens a command. (34) (38)
- 3 It asks a question which is coupled with a doubt. (20) (38)
- 4 It modifies an assertion by suggesting a doubt, (15) (38), or a query (28) (4).

- 5 It marks a conclusion more or less definite. (13) (19)
- 6 When specially emphasized it marks a peremptory decision (8), or expresses defiance (15).
- 7 Followed by 了, it emphasizes a decision. (10) (16)
- 8 When repeated (sometimes trebled), it becomes an exclamation expressing impatience (32), or a concession (36).
- 9 Repeated with 了, it expresses impatience (26), or surprise (40).
- 10 When followed by 呀, it becomes a term of importunate, or peremptory, entreaty. (29)

VOCABULARY.

罷 *Pa⁴*. To cease, to stop; to discontinue; to finish. A particle used to emphasize a command, etc.:—see Sub.
 改日 *Kai⁸ jī⁴*. Another day, again.
 枯 *K'u¹*. Decayed, rotten; withered, dried up.
 枯瘦 *K'u¹ shou⁴*. Lean, shrivelled, thin.

刮 *Kwa¹*. To pare, to scrape; to rub; to even off; to scrape by or against.
 黑乾枯瘦 *Hē¹ kan¹ k'u¹ shou⁴*. Sallow and shrivelled.
 黃皮刮瘦 *Hwang² p'i² kwa¹ shou⁴*. Yellow and thin.

事還有甚麼上便期眼算宜嗎。○該給31你多少錢，纔算公道。
限我十天的。○好，就是罷。○快拉倒罷。管閒
的喉子，必是那討厭的，又來了罷。○誰說29話這麼大
○不用着急，再少等一會兒罷。○誰說28話這麼大
的便飯，將就喫點兒罷。○罷了罷了，你真算好的。
是不行再說。○過24的得去就罷了，不可逞強。○現成
病好了沒有，答現在算好了罷。○先試25試看罷，若
罷。○你實在不肯，有甚麼法子你使去罷。○你的
意，就是這麼着罷。○不用送，都請回罷。○若是你們都願
來說話罷。○不用送，都請回罷。○若是你們都願

- 15 Is the water in the kettle sufficient?
Ans. I think so.
16 If I kill him, I have only to give my
life for his. [chat a while.
17 When you have time come again and
18 You need not escort me. Please return.
19 If you are all willing, so let it be.
20 Can I stay here over night?
21 If you are still dissatisfied; then go
and do your uttermost.
22 Are you quite recovered from your
illness? Ans. Yes, practically.
23 First try it, and if it will not work
we'll consider further.
24 If you can at all put up with it, it will
be better to drop the matter and not
push it to extremes.
25 Common fare, ready to hand. Waive
a point and eat a little.
26 Well done! Good for you!
27 Do not get impatient; wait just a
little longer.
28 Who is it that is speaking with such
a stentorian voice? It must be that
that hateful fellow has come again.
29 Come now, Your Excellency, allow
me ten days time. Ans. All right.
So be it.
30 Drop it at once. Is there anything

症 *Ch'ing*⁴..... A chronic disease, a malady.
症候 *Ch'eng*⁴ *hou*⁴. Disease, ailment; complaint;
..... malady.
陰涼 *Yin*¹ *liang*²..... Shade, shady.
涼快 *Liang*³ *k'wai*⁴. To cool off; cool; refresh-
..... ing; chilly.
償 *Ch'ang*². To pay back, to indemnify; to atone;
..... to replace.
請回 *Ch'ing*³ *hui*². Please return; good day.
..... good-bye.
逞強 *Ch'eng*³ *ch'iang*². To rely on one's strength
..... or prowess; to push
to extremes; to stake on one supreme effort.
便飯 *Pien*⁴ *fan*⁴..... Ordinary food.
噪 *Sang*³..... The throat; larynx; the windpipe.
呀 *Ya*¹..... A final emphatic particle:—Les. 61.
期 *Ch'i*¹..... A set or fixed time; time, period,
..... season; to expect; to hope for.
拉倒 *La*¹ *tao*³. To desist, to give up, to drop; to
..... cease, to be all over with;
stop it, enough! begone!

颺 *Yang*². Driven by the wind; whirled; to win-
..... now; to publish; to waft.
場 *Ch'ang*². A threshing floor; a time:—Les. 64.
..... A classifier:—Les. 109. See *ch'ang*².
颺場. To winnow the grain on the threshing
floor by tossing it up in the face of the wind,
which thus blows the chaff away from the grain,
簸 *Pou*³..... To clean grain with a 簸箕.
簸 *Pod*⁴..... A winnowing fan; a dust pan.
箕 *Ch'i*¹..... A wicker scoop, a dust pan.
箕 *Ch'i*¹..... A wicker scoop for cleaning grain; a
dust pan.
罷休 *Pa*⁴ *hsiu*¹. To cease, to give up; to drop,
..... to pay no attention to.
饒 *Jao*². Abundant; indulgent; to favor, to ex-
..... cuse, to overlook; to pardon.
瑟 *S*⁴..... A lute.
約瑟 *Yoa*¹ *Se*⁴..... Joseph.
趁 *Ch'en*⁴. To avail of, to embrace, to improve
..... an opportunity.
一面 *I*¹ *mien*⁴. One face, one side; once.

我兒子約瑟還在，趁着我還沒死，要去見他一面。
 斤罷，³答好，若是真便宜，買個十來斤罷。⁴罷了罷了，
 開了就拿來罷。⁵聽說街上的魚很便宜，我去買幾
 你去叫他來家罷。⁶燒的水開了沒有，⁷答開了罷，
 醉了，看他父親的面上，饒了他罷。⁸孩子在外頭哭，
 作甚麼呢。⁹他罵你，你就罷休了嗎，¹⁰答罷罷，他是喝
 罷。¹¹知道就說知道，不知道就說不知道罷了，¹²撒謊
 ○沒有風怎麼颺場呢，¹³答實在沒有風，就用簸箕簸
 ○我³³不要緊，先生看着罷。³²罷罷罷，就在這裏住下罷。
 ○待不等他罷，又怕他來，³⁴待等他罷，又怕他不來。

to be gained by meddling in other people's business?
 31 How much do you consider that I ought in justice to give you? Ans. It is not important: whatever you please.
 32 So be it then. Let us stop here.
 33 If I do not wait for him, I fear he may come. On the other hand, I fear if I wait for him, he may not come after all.
 34 How can one winnow without wind? Ans. If there really is no wind, then use a winnowing fan to clean it.
 35 If you know, then say so; and if you do not know, say so. Why do you lie about it?
 36 When he reviles you, do you pay no attention? Ans. Oh, he's drunk. For his father's sake I will overlook it.
 37 The child is out of doors crying. Do you go and call him into the house.
 38 Is the water you are heating boiling? Ans. I think so. If it is, then bring it in.
 39 I hear that in the market, fish are very cheap. Shall I go and buy a few catties? Ans. All right; if they are really cheap, you may buy ten or more catties.
 40 Well, well; my son Joseph is still alive. I will go and see his face before I die.

NOTES.

- 3 This is a polite form of leave taking, but is not much used in common life. The meaning is, let each follow his own convenience.
- 4 Or, *It must be that some one has offended him.*
- 6 Another form of leave taking, more or less indicative of friendship. The first two characters are often omitted, and 再見罷 used alone. The Chinese affords no words answering to our admirable words, "good-bye," and "farewell."
- 11 症候 is used in some places in the sense of a *plague or contagious disease*, but its general use is as given above.
- 12 This is the greeting of one sitting in the shade, to a passer by.
- 14 住家 *live home*; i.e., a *private residence*.
- 16 Such foolish and reckless language as this is not unfrequently heard from the Chinese.
- 17 The common language of a woman to a caller who is about to leave.
- 18 This is the language of a guest, politely declining the honor of being escorted to the gate (or further) by the host. The 都 is not distinctly given in the translation. Its use implies that several persons were addressed.

- 21 使去. In this case 去 is not an auxiliary verb, but both 使 and 去 are principal verbs, so that 使去 and 去使 are quite equivalent. In Shantung 使 would generally be used alone, without 去.
- 23 In conversation the 若是 would often be omitted.
- 24 得 is the more common and more correct form.
- 25 This is the language of a housewife, or a host, to a casual guest happening in at meal time.
- 26 This style of speech might also be used ironically, in which case it should be translated, *Yes, yes, no doubt you're a prodigy.*
- 29 We have illustrated in this sentence how 就是 is used in a reply. See Les. 44, Sub.
- 33 罷 here expresses most forcibly the indecision and hesitation of the speaker.
- 36 The double 罷 in the reply has a peculiar force, which no one English word will express. It marks the apologetic purpose of the speaker to let the matter pass.
- 38 燒的水 is put for 你所燒的水, *the water which you are heating.*
- 40 罷了罷了 renders Jacob's expression of mingled satisfaction and surprise with admirable force.

課 一 十 六 第

LESSON LXI.

我 經 ○ 快 仗 天⁸ 家 ○ 就 是 我¹
 叫 給 日¹² 開 着 不 裏 快⁵ 是 那 要 得¹
 看 你 頭 開 着 早 都 念 是 麼 走 喇。
 街 這 偏 响 會 喇 好 罷。 的 着 ○ 你²
 的 麼 西 午 ○ 說 你 啊。 先 的 罷。 ○ 管 你²
 的 些 錯 我¹¹ 罷 喇。 得 得 快 的 罷。 ○ 我⁴
 攪 中 了 幾 句 誰¹⁰ 的 走 喇 喇 喇。 在 天 上 的 就
 你 得 喇 可 以 起 身 走 喇。 ○ 若¹⁴ 再 來 已¹³ 咯。
 你 聽 明 白 喇。 ○ 家¹⁵ 裏 來 已¹³ 咯。
 ○ 家¹⁵ 裏 來 已¹³ 咯。

- 1 I must go (or, I am going).
- 2 It will be enough for you to attend to your own business.
- 3 All right. So let it be.
- 4 Our Father which art in heaven.
- 5 Get your lesson quickly. The teacher is just now going to hear it.
- 6 Have you just now returned? Are they all well at home?
- 7 Stop talking and go at once.
- 8 It is getting late; you should be off immediately. [speech.]
- 9 He simply depends on his fluency of
- 10 Who is knocking? Ans. I am. Make haste and open the door.
- 11 With a few words I silenced him.
- 12 It is past noon. We had better be going.
- 13 Having given you this much, you ought to be satisfied. Be off with you.
- 14 If you come again, I'll have the policeman drive you off. Do you understand?

LESSON LXI.

EUPHONIC ENDINGS.

Mandarin abounds in final particles, used to round off the close of the sentence, or to emphasize certain ideas and emotions. It is very difficult to define or distinguish these particles accurately in English. Their proper use can only be acquired by imitation, and by close attention to the manner in which the Chinese use them. The usage also varies not a little in different places. Few, if any, foreign speakers use them as much as the Chinese do.

喇 A final particle indicating completion. It is not essentially different from 了, when 了 is used as a simple final at the end of a clause or sentence and pronounced (as it always is in practice) *la*. There is in fact no certain principle to guide as to which character should be used in any given case, and the usage of different places and teachers differs widely.

咯 A final particle indicating certainty, but in practice not distinguishable from 喇, Teachers vary much in the use of this character.

啊 A final sound having a variety of uses:—
 1 It concludes a formal address or an invocation. (4) (29)

- 2 It concludes an inquiry. (6) (17)
- 3 It emphasizes an injunction or a declaration. (8) (30)

哪 A final particle very nearly if not quite equivalent in meaning and use to 啊. Careful observation of the use of this particle points to the conclusion that it is simply a variation in sound from 啊, occasioned by the preceding word ending in the letter n. Notice how in (29) and (30) the two words change places, for no apparent reason save the ending of the preceding word.

咧 A euphonic ending which in the North is only used after 罷 (9) (19). In the South it is sometimes used instead of 喇. (5)

哩 A final particle found occasionally in books, but not used colloquially in the North. It is sometimes heard in the South instead of 喇. (16) (26)

呀 A final particle giving a strong emphasis, either to an inquiry (21), or to an assertion (25).

哇 A final particle sometimes used instead of 啊, to emphasize an assertion or an injunction.

我們姓張的臉，都叫你自己丟了啊。
 屈枉好人，是有罪的呀。○張³⁰三哪張三哪，
 李四²⁹啊，爲人都有個天理良心哪，你這樣
 穩重，你若把女兒給他，真是好姻緣喇。○
 不舊的。○那²⁸撒母耳，少年老成，也聰明，也
 個手爐，是新的啊，是舊的呢，答是個半新
 的，穿要穿好的。○聽²⁷說你四百錢買了一
 集去喇。○那²⁶個人講究的很哩，喫要喫好
 答 沒在家呀，問 沒在家上那裏去喇，答 起
 十七喇，這還算小嗎。○王大²⁵哥在家裏嗎，

- 25 Is brother Wang at home? Ans. No, he is not at home. Ques. If he is not at home where has he gone? Ans. He has gone to market.
- 26 That man is very stylish; he insists on having high living and fine clothes.
- 27 I hear you have bought a hand stove for four hundred cash. Is it a new one or an old one? Ans. It is second hand, but as good as new.
- 28 That young man Samuel is discreet, clever and steady; if you give him your daughter it will certainly be an excellent match.
- 29 Li Si! all men have a heaven implanted conscience for the guidance of life. In thus wronging a good man you are committing a sin.
- 30 Chang San! Chang San! Alas, you have brought disgrace on our whole Chang family.

NOTES.

2 & 13 The use of 得, as in these sentences, is decidedly Pekingese, though understood elsewhere, and occasionally used. 中 is used in many places in the same way, but is not t'ung-hsing.

5 背書 usually means to recite, but here it is used causatively, meaning to cause to recite; i.e., to hear the recitation.

9 In speaking the words 說罷喇, the two latter must be joined closely on to the first and to each other, like a word of three syllables accented on the first.

11 頂回去. It is implied that the other party came with a plausible story, when a few words served to "shut him up."

14 轟你. Shoot you out; i.e., drive you out or off. A Northern word.

20 伸得大拇指頭. To put up an erect thumb.

The Chinese hold up the thumb as a sign of resolution or of defiance; hence the meaning of this phrase.

21 In many places two 呢 would take the place of the final particles here used.

23 沒家 is a corrupt form of 沒有 used as a reply, the 家 being in most places pronounced ka or kē. It is much used in Central Mandarin. 沒呢 is used in many places in the North, but is not t'ung-hsing. See Les. 89.

24 成丁 To become a man. A youth is supposed to attain to manhood at sixteen,—to be capable of taking a wife, bearing arms, etc.

26 講究 is here used, as in the South, in the sense of 體面.

27 A 手爐 is a small brazier with a perforated cover for holding live coals. It is used for warming the hands in cold weather.

LESSON LXII.

相 THE AUXILIARY OF RECIPROCITY.

相 To inspect,—is placed before the verb to which it is auxiliary. It may be joined with any transitive verb, and in most cases gives the idea of mutual or reciprocal. In some cases it is reflexive,

and in others it simply strengthens the idea of the verb and makes up the euphony of the sentence. The idea of reciprocity is often strengthened by the addition of 互. As an auxiliary 相 is used both colloquially and in books.

第二十六課

LESSON LXII.

我¹來有一點事相求。○他²們倆人互相安慰。○這³兩個人的面貌相似。○大家⁴坐着談談，很相得。○該⁵定規在那個地方相會。○我⁶的秉性和你的正相反。○不⁷許他們相罵相打。○請⁸老爺過去，有事相商。○一⁹身的血脈，都是相通的。○那¹⁰兩個地方相隔不遠。○這¹¹兩個人的話，一點也不相合。○我¹²做好人，你就怒目相看嗎。○在¹³半路上相遇，不能說許多話。○夫¹⁴妻二人，應該互相幫助。○你¹⁵不願意就罷，我也不能相強。○他¹⁶姊妹兩個的高矮，相差不過一寸。○老¹⁷兄所說的，和我的意見相同。○

- 1 I have come to make a request of you.
- 2 They two mutually comfort each other.
- 3 These two persons' faces resemble each other.
- 4 They all sat down and talked together very agreeably.
- 5 We should decide where we will meet.
- 6 My natural disposition is exactly the opposite of yours.
- 7 Do not allow them to rail at and fight with each other.
- 8 Will your honor please go over? There is something to be consulted about.
- 9 The circulation of the blood is connected throughout the whole body.
- 10 Those two places are not far apart.
- 11 The language of those two men does not at all agree.
- 12 Do you look upon me angrily because I am good.
- 13 Meeting on the road as we did, we could not speak at length.
- 14 Husband and wife should mutually help each other.
- 15 If you are not willing, that is the end of it: I will not force you.
- 16 The two sisters do not differ in height by more than an inch.
- 17 What you say agrees with my opinion.

VOCABULARY.

相 *Hsiang*¹. To inspect; mutually, reciprocally; by turns:—see Sub.
 互 *Hu*⁴. Reciprocal, mutual; responsive; with.
 慰 *Wei*⁴. To soothe, to comfort, to tranquilize.
 安慰 *An*¹ *wei*⁴. To appease, to comfort.
 面貌 *Mien*⁴ *mao*⁴. The face, countenance, physiognomy, looks.
 相似 *Hsiang*¹ *si*⁴. Similar, to resemble.
 相得 *Hsiang*¹ *tē*³. Pleased; agreeable; suited, gratified.
 秉 *Ping*³. To grasp, to maintain; imparted by Heaven; natural.
 秉性 *Ping*³ *hsing*⁴. Nature; natural disposition, temperament.
 脈 *Mod*⁴. The pulse; streaks or veins; descent.
 血脈 *Hsüē*⁴ *mod*⁴. The blood, the circulation of the blood; race.

怒 *Nu*⁴. Anger, passion, rage; incensed.
 怒目相看 *Nu*⁴ *mu*⁴ *hsiang*¹ *k'an*⁴. To look at angrily. (w)
 意見 *I*⁴ *chien*⁴. Opinion, idea, notion.
 妻 *Ch'i*¹. A wife, a consort. Also *ch'i*⁴.
 返 *Fan*³. To return; to revert to; but, on the contrary.
 返悔 *Fan*³ *hui*³. To break a contract or promise; to repudiate.
 天然 *T'ien*¹ *jan*². Natural, instinctive.
 性情 *Hsing*⁴ *ch'ing*³. Disposition, temper; nature; properties.
 相好 *Hsiang*¹ *hao*³. Friendly, on good terms, intimate.
 端 *Twan*¹. The origin, elementary principles; correct, upright; grave, modest; A classifier:—Les. 140.

七十五里，問過了五天，二人相隔若干里。
 時起身，走一條路，張姓一天走八十里，王姓一天走
 信的朋友，來往都是相迎相送。○今有張王二人，同
 達後語，就是說，前後的話不相符合。○凡是相敬相
 相爭。○你的忠言和他的私慾，兩不相投。○前言不
 品行就端方了。○弟兄們有了東西，應該相讓，不該
 不是，如今照常相好。○你和有益的朋友相交，將來
 和兒女相親，這是天然的性情。○我已經給他賠過
 還能返悔嗎。○他們大家都是相親相愛的。○父母
 常在一塊兒辦事，不可相欺。○那是兩相情願的事。

18 Constantly doing business together, we should not deceive one another.
 19 That is something we mutually agreed to, and can it be repudiated?
 20 They all love one another.
 21 That parents and children should be attached to each other is an instinct of nature.
 22 I have already made an apology, and now we are as friendly as ever.
 23 If you associate with helpful friends your deportment will become correct.
 24 When brothers get anything [in common] they should mutually prefer one another and not quarrel.
 25 Your faithful words and his selfish desires do not harmonize.
 26 Former words inconsistent with subsequent language; that is to say, the first and last assertions do not agree.
 27 All honored and faithful friends when visiting always meet each other on arrival and escort each other on departure.
 28 Two men, Chang and Wang, started together to travel the same road. Chang traveled eighty li per day, and Wang seventy-five li per day; after five days how many li were they apart?

端方 *Tuan¹ fang¹*..... Correct, upright, proper.
 忠 *Chung¹*. Loyal, faithful; sincere; unselfish; honest, upright.
 慾 *Yü⁴*..... Inordinate desire; lust; covetous.
 私慾 *Si¹ yü⁴*..... Lust, desire; selfishness.
 投 *T'ou²*. To throw down or into; to deliver to; to cast off; to have recourse to; to intrust; to harmonize with; to bid for.

達 *Ta²*. To permeate; to see through; to correspond; to inform; to transfer to; to advance; all, everywhere.
 符 *Fu⁵*. A check, a voucher; to correspond with, to agree; to verify. Also *fu²*.
 符合 *Fu⁵ hod²*..... To correspond, to agree.
 迎 *Ying²*. To meet and receive as a guest; to meet, to occur; a meeting.

NOTES.

1 The use of 相 here implies that the request is one that concerns both the speaker and the person spoken to.
 6 秉性 is slightly *wén*.
 12 怒目相看 is an expression in the book form, not used in colloquial.
 15 能 here indicates moral ability, hence it is rendered *will*.
 19 兩相情願 The introduction of 兩 intimates that there were two parties, both of whom were willing. The euphony of the sentence joins 相 with 兩 rather than with 情願, with which it is logically connected.
 20 The compound verb 親愛 is here separated, and 相

used with each part. This is a common and very forcible idiom.
 23 The sentiment of this sentence is based on a saying of Confucius in the Analects, 益者三友，友直，友諒，友多聞, "There are three friendships which are advantageous;—friendship with the upright; friendship with the sincere; and friendship with the man of much observation."
 26 前言不達後語 is *wén* in style. Note how 言 and 語 are correlated.
 27 If you know that a guest is coming, it is polite to go out and meet him, and when he leaves, politeness requires you to accompany him to the door, or to the gate, or, in special cases, a short distance on his way.

第十六課

LESSON LXIII.

不是的事，也要彼此包容忍耐。○常在一個兒，彼
 訴他。○他們兩個，心裏彼此懷恨。○夫妻中有
 誰也不肯上坐。○我先把你話，如此彼此推讓。
 喇。○衆人彼此對看，沒有話說。○他彼此已經和好
 幫相助。○沙景潤和黃桂香，彼此相賴。○大家彼此相
 ○聽他們的口供，正是彼此相
 ○兩莊的人彼此照應。○我們倆，彼此合對脾氣兒。
 我兩家彼此沒有拉穿換。○當把善事彼此談論。
 應當彼此相愛。○你們彼此都要將就一點兒。○朋友
 我和他，不分彼此。○這麼一辦，彼此都好。○朋友

- 1 There is no distinction of *meum* and *tuum* between us (i.e., all mine is his and his is mine).
- 2 By this arrangement both are satisfied.
- 3 Friends ought mutually to love each other. [other.
- 4 You must forbear a little with each other.
- 5 Our two firms have no dealings with each other.
- 6 We should converse together on some profitable theme.
- 7 The people of the two villages assist each other. [disposition.
- 8 We two are very well mated in judgment.
- 9 Judging from their testimony, they are just recklessly accusing each other.
- 10 They mutually help one another.
- 11 Sha Ching Yün and Hwang Kwei Hsiang mutually made apologies and were reconciled.
- 12 They all looked at each other, but had nothing to say.
- 13 Each one declined in favor of the other, no one being willing to take the upper seat.
- 14 I first gave him a detailed account of what you said. [other.
- 15 In their hearts they two hate each other.
- 16 When differences occur between

LESSON LXIII.

彼此, THE PRONOMINAL OF RECIPROACITY.

When the words 彼此 are used separately they mean, *that* and *this*, *there* and *here*, *then* and *now*, etc.; but joined together, as in this lesson, they mean *mutually*, *reciprocally*. They are much used in connection with 相, of the last lesson, one

form strengthening the other. When followed by 都, they may be rendered *both*. There is no accounting for the order of these words. The natural order would certainly seem to have been 彼此. When they are separated, as in (14), the natural order asserts itself.

VOCABULARY.

彼 *Pei*³. That, those; there; the other.
 穿換 *Ch'wan*¹*hwan*⁴. Dealings, intercourse, communication.
 拉扯 *La*¹*ch'e*³. The same.
 談論 *Tan*³*lun*⁴. To converse, to discuss, to argue, to debate.
 勁 *Chin*⁴. Muscular, strong, robust; stiff; disposition, character. Also *ching*⁴.

對勁 *Tui*⁴*chin*⁴. To suit, to be fitting; agreeable, appropriate.
 供 *Kung*¹. To confess; to testify; to declare.
 口供 *K'ou*³*kung*¹. Testimony, witness.
 刁 *Tiao*¹. Perverse, seditious; unscrupulous, reckless; wicked, artful.
 刁賴 *Tiao*¹*lai*⁴. To accuse recklessly, to recriminate, to implicate others.

我後來那個呈子，到底不准。
 官說必是我先得罪了他，兩家彼此有仇，他纔打
 明明他是無故的欺負我，到我去遞呈子時候，
 是太有理，人就不相信喇，你看我和李九那件事，
 小，上是上，下是下，彼此相安。○無論甚麼事情，若
 彼此互相陷害，互相怨恨。○——²²家子，大是大，小是
 遠的意思。○那時候，必有許多人厭棄我的道理，
 麼樣，彼此都有話說。○海角天涯，是彼此相隔很
 來歷我都曉得。○¹⁹這個說是這麼樣，那個說是那
 此那能一點過錯過沒有呢。○他們彼此的事，根本

husband and wife they should mutually bear and forbear.
 17 Being constantly together, how can they avoid giving some little offense to each other.
 18 I know perfectly the origin and history of their mutual affairs.
 19 One says it was this way, and the other says it was that way; each has his own story.
 20 "The corner of the ocean and the limit of heaven," expresses the idea that things are very widely separated.
 21 At that time many shall reject my doctrine, and shall betray one another and hate one another.
 22 When in a family, great and small, superiors and inferiors, keep their places, there is mutual harmony.
 23 No matter what it is, if it be too plausible, men will not believe it. Look at that affair between me and Li the Ninth. Manifestly he abused me without cause; yet when I went to enter suit against him, the magistrate said I must have sinned against him so that there was enmity between us, on account of which he beat me; and so finally he refused to entertain the suit.

沙 *Sha*¹.....Sand, gravel; reefs; gritty; friable.
 潤 *Jun*⁴. To moisten, to bedew; to instill into; to enrich, to benefit; increase, profits.
 桂 *Kwei*⁴.....Cinnamon; cassia.
 香 *Hsiang*¹. Fragrant; reputable; perfume; incense. Much used in names.
 陪禮 *P'ei*³ *li*³.....To make amends, to apologize.
 推讓 *T'ui*¹ *jang*⁴. To yield the precedence, to give way to, to decline.
 懷恨 *Hwai*² *hên*⁴. To hate, to cherish enmity, to hold spite.
 包容 *Pao*¹ *jung*². To be generous, to make allowance for, to forbear.
 過錯 *Kuo*⁴ *ts'oa*⁴. A fault, a transgression, an offence.
 錯過 *Ts'oa*⁴ *kuo*⁴..... The same.
 根 *Kên*¹. Root; origin, source; cause; the base; fundamental.

根本 *Kên*¹ *pên*³. Origin, source; foundation; proof, evidence.
 歷 *Li*⁴. To pass over or through or away; to experience; arranged in order; successive.
 來歷 *Lai*² *li*⁴.....Antecedents; history; annals.
 涯 *Ai*², *Yai*².....Bank, shore, water line; limit.
 棄 *Ch'i*⁴. To throw away, to reject; to discard; to abandon.
 厭棄 *Yen*¹ *ch'i*⁴. To reject with disdain, to cast off, to throw away.
 陷害 *Hsien*⁴ *hai*⁴. To victimize; to implicate; to betray.
 怨恨 *Yüan*⁴ *hên*⁴..... To hate, to detest.
 遞 *Ti*⁴..... To transmit; to hand in; to change.
 呈 *Ch'êng*². To state to a superior, to present; a plea, a suit, an accusation.
 准 *Chun*³. To permit, to allow; to approve, to grant,—as a petition; to adjust.

課四十六第

LESSON LXIV.

我¹已經商議他兩回。○淨²白
跑了一邊。○他³欺負我不只
一次喇。○這⁴一下子砸了鍋
喇。○他⁵被我羞辱了一頓。○
這⁶一遭我叫他氣的眼珠子
都藍了。○我⁷勸過他一回。他
不肯聽。○頭⁸一次講書還算
可以。○一⁹番一來的太煩
了。○前¹⁰五年我來一發回。○兩¹¹
點鐘怎麼只響了一下呢。○

1 I have already consulted with him twice.
2 I had all my trip for nothing.
3 He has imposed upon me not only this once.
4 I have lost my living this time.
5 I gave him a *meal* of disgrace.
6 He made me so angry this time that my eyeballs turned blue.
7 I exhorted him once, but he would not listen.
8 As a first effort at preaching it is very fair.
9 Time after time, it is too troublesome.
10 I came once five years ago.
11 It is two o'clock, how is it that it only struck one?

NOTES.

1 To hold all you have at the service of your friend is the ideal friendship.

2 The 一 may be omitted, but the sentence is much more forcible with it.

5 家 is here used as "house" is used in English, to designate a business firm. 穿換 is used of the intercourse of business firms. Social intercourse is expressed by 來往. In some places 來往 is used in both senses.

8 The two forms here given are not precisely synonymous. 對勁兒 includes suitability in other respects besides disposition, to which 脾氣 is limited.

13 上坐, to take the higher or more honorable seat.

14 如此如彼, as this as that; i.e., one by one in order.

16 The use of 也 implies that the sentence is in addition to something which preceded it. It is from the Sacred Edict.

20 海角天涯 is a book phrase, occasionally heard in colloquial.

22 子 is not unfrequently added to 家. 大是大小是小, 上是上下是下 great is great and small is small, upper is upper and lower is lower; i.e., each knows and keeps his proper place. This peculiar form of repetition represents a common idiom.

LESSON LXIV.

ADVERBIAL NUMERALS.

一回 One return,—one time, once.
一次 One order,—one time, once.
一遭 One meet,—once. Much used in Northern and Central Mandarin, but rarely heard in the South.
一番 One repeat,—one turn or time, once.
一邊 One course,—one time, once. Often written 一輪. Authorities differ as to which is the proper character.
一下 One down,—a time, a stroke; at once.
一頓 One meal,—a spell, a time, once.
一合 One union,—a round, an onset, a tilt. Used chiefly in books, and applied to horsemen.
一發 One send off,—a time, once.

一程子 One road,—a spell, a while, a stage; the distance from one stopping place to another.
一陣 One burst,—a spell, a time.
一遍 One whole,—a round, a time, once.
一向 One direction,—a while, for some time; formerly.
一氣 One breath,—a spell, a heat, once.
一磨 One rub,—a time, once.
一場 One arena,—a time, a bout, a round.

These several terms are to some extent interchangeable, yet each has its own shade of meaning, and its appropriate place can only be learned by experience.

Other numerals than *one* may be joined with any of these words.

心口還疼嗎，答
 一年這麼一遭，能
 不早晨疼了一陣，
 現在又好了。
 一遭生。

○生出一回天喜。○張大哥，這一向不知流落那裏去了。
 子買賣，把本錢都賠淨了。○我種了一回書。○他做了一回氣
 人能點個翰林，也算不枉念了一回老。能得幾時為弟兄。
 合，沒分勝敗。○一回相見一回老。能得幾時為弟兄。
 住下呀，還是再走一程呢。○二位將軍大戰了三十二
 學。○長毛賊第二番來，比頭一番還利害。○是在這裏
 我從小只看見過一回海市。○這一遭我算認得你喇。

12 From my youth I have only once seen the mirage.
 13 I rather think I know you this time.
 14 That mess of meat dumplings has overloaded my stomach.
 15 I looked over it once, it is not very hard to learn.
 16 The second time the long haired robbers came they were worse than the first time.
 17 Shall we stop here, or shall we go on another stage?
 18 The two generals fought two tremendous tilts, and the victory was still undecided.
 19 Each time we meet we are older; how little time there is for the enjoyment of fraternal affection!
 20 If a man can attain the degree of Han-lin, he may consider that his life of study has not been in vain.
 21 He went into business for a time, and lost all his capital.
 22 I was vaccinated, and afterwards had the small-pox the natural way.
 23 I wonder where brother Chang has drifted to by this time.
 24 Should we not once in a year knock heads to your honor.
 25 Does your stomach still pain you?
 Ans. It pained me a spell this morning, but is now well again.

VOCABULARY.

邊 *T'ang*⁴. To pass by; to fall; the track in which horses run; a time, a heat, a course, a row.
 番 *Fan*¹. To repeat; to change; a time, a turn; rude, uncivilized; foreign.
 羞辱 *Hsiu*¹ *ju*⁴. To put to shame, to insult, to disgrace; to outrage.
 藍 *Lan*². Blue; indigo.
 講書 *Chiang*⁸ *shu*¹. To expound the classics; to preach.
 數 *Soa*². Worried, flurried, distracted:—see *shu*⁴, and *shu*⁸.
 煩數 *Fan*² *soa*². Involved; troublesome.
 響 *Hsiang*³. To resound; to ring; noise, clamor, echo.
 海市 *Hai*³ *shì*⁴. The mirage.

扁食 *Pien*⁸ *shì*². Meat dumplings.
 餃 *Chiao*³. Meat dumplings.
 饞 *Ch'eng*¹. To gormandize; the sense of oppression caused by eating too much, to overload the stomach.
 將軍 *Chiang*¹ *chün*¹. A commandant, a general, a chieftain.
 戰 *Chan*⁴. To fight, to join battle; war.
 勝 *Sheng*⁴. To get the victory; to excel; to rise superior to, to sustain; adequate.
 翰林 *Han*⁴ *lin*². A graduate of the third degree, a Han-lin.
 本錢 *Pên*³ *ch'ien*². First cost; capital.
 痘 *Tou*⁴. The small-pox.
 牛痘 *Niu*² *tou*⁴. The cow-pox; vaccine.

兩遭熟三遭就是老主顧。○這一程走的太快把我弄累了。○你這一程子往那裏去的，怎麼沒有見你呢。○我看他這一次來，比前一次還胖一點。○這樣做一會歇一會，不如一氣做完了。○姓張的那個老婆子一磨一磨的常來騷擾我。○我只打了他一下，他就儘量罵了我一頓，我也沒法兒還口。○你不用掛心，我先和他開一場再說。○那一場麥子，已經打了兩遍，還沒打淨。○彗星出現，有幾年一次的，有幾十年一次的，有幾百年一次的。○這孩子真沒有記性，昨兒個他媽爲他撒賴，打了他一大頓，今兒個他又忘記了。

- 26 The first time a stranger, the second time acquainted, and the third time an old customer.
- 27 I (or, we) have gone this stage too fast, I find myself quite wearied.
- 28 Where have you been for some time? How is it that I have not seen you?
- 29 In my opinion he is somewhat fatter than he was the first time.
- 30 This way of working a while and resting a while is not as good as to finish at one heat.
- 31 That old woman Chang comes constantly, time after time, and worries me.
- 32 I only struck him one blow, whereupon he exhausted his whole vocabulary of abuse upon me, and I was unable to get the better of him.
- 33 You need not be concerned; after I have had a bout with him we'll talk about it.
- 34 I have threshed that wheat on the floor twice, and it is not yet clean.
- 35 Comets appear, some once in several years, some once in several tens of years, and some once in several hundreds of years.
- 36 Truly this child has no memory. Yesterday his mother gave him a sound beating for his contrariness, and to-day he has forgotten it.

天花 *T'ien¹ hwa¹*..... The small-pox.
 天喜 *T'ien¹ hsi²*..... The small-pox.
 流 *Liu²*. To flow; to circulate, to diffuse; to wander, to become reckless; vagrant, shifting; a class, a set. Also *liu⁴*.
 流落 *Liu² lo⁴*. To wander, to rove, to roam, to drift; a prodigal.
 心口 *Hsin¹ k'ou³*..... The pit of the stomach.
 主顧 *Chu³ ku⁴*..... A customer; a patron.
 倦 *Chüan⁴*..... Tired, fatigued, wearied.
 騷 *Sao¹*. To disquiet; to fidget; perturbed, grieved; the male of animals.
 擾 *Jao³*. To incommode, to embarrass; to confuse, to disturb.
 騷擾. To harass, to annoy; to embarrass.
 儘量 *Chin³ liang⁴*. To carry to the uttermost, to exhaust; to do one's best.

腔 *Oh'iang¹*. A tune; the brogue or dialect of a place; empty, conceited, vain.
 反腔 *Fan³ ch'iang¹*. To turn the tune, to get the better of.
 還口 *Hwan² k'ou³*. To answer back, to retort, to rejoin.
 回嘴 *Hui² tsui³*..... The same.
 掛心 *Kwa⁴ hsin¹*. To be anxious, to be concerned about.
 彗 *Hui⁴*..... A besom; a comet.
 彗星 *Hui⁴ hsing¹*. A comet; a star of ill omen.
 出現 *Ch'u¹ hsien⁴*. To appear; to come forth, to manifest.
 記性 *Chi⁴ hsing⁴*..... Memory.
 撒賴 *Sa¹ lai⁴*. To pretend to be injured; to impose upon, to levy blackmail; to importune; to act contrarily.

課 五 十 六 第

LESSON LXV.

強剛真子強剛青見說氣好。我¹
 纒纒不喇。會州一曹嗎。○出¹
 走喇。○李⁶說上起個操、這你²門¹
 ○他⁷等奇文如今我⁵說兒操年纒知¹
 他這麼大的年紀。你一點多鐘。答漢他從聽纒剛⁸脾¹安安置排

- 1 I was away and have just returned, and have not yet put the house in order.
- 2 Have you just now found out that he is stubborn? He is much improved these last few years.
- 3 As soon as you speak of Ts'ao Ts'ao, he is at hand.
- 4 I have just now heard a report that the examiner will leave Ch'ing chou (for this place) on the third.
- 5 When I first came he was just able to talk; now he has come to be a full grown man.
- 6 Is Mr. Li Ch'i Wên here? Ans. How very unlucky! He waited for you over an hour, and has just now gone.

NOTES.

- 2 淨 is here translated all.
- 4 Lit. I have smashed the kettle this time. In China everything is cooked in a kettle, and to smash this kettle means nothing to eat. Used when one loses a position or opportunity on which his living depends.
- 6 The Chinese assert that when a man is filled with suppressed anger his eyes turn blue.
- 12 海市, a sea market; i.e., streets and people pictured in the clouds over the sea.
- 13 Said to one by whom you have been cheated, and meaning that you will be on your guard against him in the future.
- 14 For meat dumplings, 扁食 is the more proper and widely used term. 水 is added to 餃 because the dumplings are boiled in water. They are also called 煮餃子, and in Shantung ku¹ ts'i². 肚子 usually means the bowels rather than the stomach, but is here used indefinitely for both. It requires both overloaded and disordered to convey the meaning expressed by 餓壞了.

- 19 A saying which originated in the words of a celebrated official, reproving two brothers for going to law about the division of their father's estate.
- 20 The prime idea of seeking an education in China is to get a degree, and by this means become an official, and so get rich.
- 22 In many places the more familiar term for vaccination is 種花.
- 24 大爺 here means, not an uncle (as it usually does), but simply a man of wealth or high standing who has servants and other employes. In speaking, the accent is thrown on 爺. In the South 大爺爺 is used in the same way. "Your Honor," is only an approximate rendering. The occasion of the k'ou t'ou is probably the new year, and is insisted on in expectation of a present.
- 26 The language of a shop keeper to a new customer.
- 34 一場 does not here illustrate the lesson, being used in its primary and literal sense.
- 35 Comets are colloquially called 掃帚星, broom stars.

LESSON LXV.

THE IMMEDIATE PAST LIMITED BY THE PRESENT.

纒 Just now, immediately preceding. In previous lessons 纒 has already been used in the sense of before; in order that.

剛 Just this moment. Not often used alone.

剛纒 or 剛纒 Just, just now, just this moment. The two forms are interchangeable. The former, perhaps, indicates the more immediate present. The former is preferred in the South, the latter in the North.

方 A little ago, just now; recently. 方 is not

quite as colloquial as 纒. It is also used like 纒 to mean before; in order that.

方纒 Just now, just a moment ago.

剛剛 Just this very moment. For still further emphasis the 剛剛 is sometimes preceded by 纒, and sometimes followed by it. 方 and 纒 are not doubled as 剛 is.

彊 is used in the South in the same way and with the same sense as 剛 in the North. In Central Mandarin both forms are used, 剛 predominating.

他女人怎麼纔二十多歲呢，答這纔是後續婚。○我
 昨天真是好時運，一天也沒給雨雨淋着，纔剛到
 家，就下大了。○纔出鍋的饅頭，喫兩個再走罷。
 ○借光老先生，有一個背包袱的，從這裏過去
 了沒有，答剛纔過去喇。○從多少日子，你就
 嚷着說媳婦，現在說中妥了沒有，答那裏說
 吵呢，剛纔有點邊兒，又叫仇人打了破頭楔喇。○
 就這麼樣，他是不肯給出力的，必得在他手裏
 行點賄賂纔行。○你就是不怕拉空方纔還
 的不大離喇，你又拉了這麼些。○若有知己的

- 7 When he is so old as this, how is it that his wife is just in her twenties? Ans. This is a second marriage.
- 8 I was very fortunate indeed yesterday. It did not rain on me the whole day; but I had barely gotten home when it began to rain heavily.
- 9 Rolls just from the kettle;—eat a couple before you go.
- 10 May I trouble you, old gentleman. Did a man carrying a bundle on his back pass by here? Ans. He has just this moment passed by.
- 11 You have been stirring round this long time to get a wife. Have you now got it satisfactorily settled? Ans. It is far from settled. Just when it was in a fair way to be arranged, it was broken up by an enemy.
- 12 Simply leaving matters thus, he will not make any exertion. It will first be necessary to put a bribe in his hand.
- 13 You are not the least afraid to run into debt. Having just now fairly paid up, you go again and contract all this debt.

VOCABULARY.

置 *Chi*⁴. To dismiss, to put aside; to establish; to place, to arrange; to buy, to lay in.
 安置 *An¹ chi*⁴. To arrange, to put in order.
 偏 *Chüe*^{2,4}. Obstinate, perverse, opinionated.
 彊 *Chiang*⁴. Stubborn, impracticable, obstinate. Usually regarded as a different writing of 強. Also *chiang*¹.
 偏彊 *Stubborn, impracticable, mulish, headstrong.*
 彊 or 強 *Chiang*¹. Barely; nearly, almost; scarcely just, just now. See *chiang*⁴.
 Peking teachers often write 將 for the meanings here given to 強 (or in the South 彊); but 將, being essentially soft, is not allowable where hard sounds are used.
 曹 *Ts'ao*². Judge of appeals; a company; sign of the plural in wên-li.
 曹操 *Ts'ao² ts'ao*¹. The famous brigand and general, *Ts'ao-ts'ao*.
 學院 *Hsüe² yüan*⁴. A literary chancellor.
 學臺 *Hsüe² t'ai*². The same.
 青州 *Ch'ing¹ chou*¹. A departmental city in central Shantung.

婚 *Hun*¹. A husband; to marry, marriage.
 後婚 *Hou⁴ hun*¹. A second marriage.
 續 *Hsü*⁴. To second; to join on; to keep up; tied together, continuous.
 弦 *Hsien*². A lute or fiddle string.
 續弦. To marry a second wife.
 運 *Yün*⁴. To revolve; to move in a circuit; to transport; a turn, a chance; luck, lot.
 時運 *Shi² yün*⁴. Fortune, luck.
 淋 *Lin*². To drop; to wet,—as by rain; to sprinkle. Also *lin*⁴.
 洒 *Tot*⁴. To drop, to drip; to wet, to rain on.
 楔 *Hsie*¹. A wedge.
 破頭楔 *P'ot⁴ t'ou² hsie*¹. A wedge driven into a crack or split.
 搗 *Tao*³. To beat with a mallet, to pound in a mortar; to reel, to wind.
 搗翻 *Tao³ fan*¹. To tangle, to jumble, to thwart, to knock to pieces.
 賄賂 *Hui*⁴. Riches; a bribe, hush money.
 賂 *Lu*⁴. To bribe, to corrupt.

人，方可託他帶去，苦沒有就罷。○我病了剛纔起來，身上一點力氣沒有，好歹扎掙着纔走了去了。○我們今天走的早一點，起身的時候，日頭纔剛出來。○聽說那塊壞骨頭，跌斷了腿，把我歡喜的沒法，這纔真是現報喇。○纔來的那位馬老爺，是個甚麼前程呢，答是，是個世襲的守備。○人當血氣方剛的時候，應當自戒，不可和人爭鬥。○他纔要伸手拿，我就喝了一聲，一下把他嚇呆了，嘴裏亂哦，也說不出句話來。

- 14 If you have a confidential friend, you may entrust it to him to bring; if not, no matter.
- 15 I have been ill and have just gotten up. I have no strength at all. It was only by special exertion that I was able to come.
- 16 We started a little earlier to-day. When we left the sun had but just appeared.
- 17 I am delighted beyond measure to hear that that worthless villain has fallen and broken his leg. Without doubt this is a manifest retribution.
- 18 What rank has that Mr. Li who has just now come? Ans. He is a hereditary major.
- 19 When a man first attains the strength of his manhood, he ought to restrain himself, and not fight with people.
- 20 When he was on the point of putting forth his hand to take it, I gave one shout, which frightened him out of his wits. He muttered something with his lips, but was unable to say anything.

賄賂 *A bribe, a present intended as a bribe.*
 拉空 *La¹ k'ung⁴. To run in debt.*
 拉饑荒 *La¹ chi³ huang¹. To contract debts with no means of paying.*
 扎 *Cha¹. To thrust; to tie up, to fasten, to bind. Also cha³.*
 扎掙 *Cha¹ chêng⁴. To brace one's self for a vigorous effort, to put forth all one's strength; to try one's best.*
 現報 *Hsien⁴ pao⁴. Immediate and manifest retribution.*
 前程 *Ch'ien³ ch'êng². Honorary degree, rank, previous standing.*

襲 *Hsi¹. To invade, hereditary, to respect.*
 世襲 *Shi⁴ hsi³. Hereditary rank.*
 守備 *Shou³ pei⁴. A military title, a major.*
 血氣 *Hsüe⁶ ch'ü⁴. Physical vigor, constitution; the animal feelings, the flesh.*
 自戒 *Tsi⁴ chie⁴. To restrain one's self; temperance; watchfulness.*
 鬥 or 鬪 *Tou⁴. To wrangle, to fight; to cause to fight, to play at.*
 爭鬥 *Chêng¹ tou⁴. To fight, to brawl.*
 哦 *Wo¹. To chant, to hum; to mutter.*

NOTES.

3 曹操 was a noted usurper of the Han dynasty. For military strategy and unprincipled artifice and usurpation, he is the most noted character in Chinese history. The sentence is a saying analogous to, "Speak of the devil and he will appear."

4 起馬 or 上馬. *To start;—a term only applied to officials, and no doubt fixed in the language when it was the custom of mandarins to travel on horseback. They now ride in chairs with four or eight bearers. Although not so said, it is fairly implied, that the examiner was starting towards the place of the speaker.*

9 屜 is here used of the platter on which the rolls are laid in the kettle while steaming. The sentence is the call of a huckster by the wayside.

10 A question of inquiry preceded by some polite expression, such as is here used, will nearly always elicit a respectful reply. An abrupt question often fails to do so.

11 從多少日子, *from many days; i.e., for a long time.* 打破頭楔 *to make a crack or split by driving in a wedge,—used metaphorically of one who interferes and breaks up or defeats any business or scheme. A Peking expression.*

第六十六課

LESSON LXII.

候呼喚。○師¹²傅領進門修行在
 沒有來喇。○他¹¹每日在廳前伺
 京必來看。○現在已五六年
 各人的本分。○從前他每逢進
 我⁸們是各管各事。○各⁹人當盡
 都有。○你⁷每月能掙多少錢。○
 每逢三八放告。○各⁶式各樣的
 敲門。○每⁴樣要一點兒。○衙⁵門
 的孩子各人親。○你³逢來就該
 中國每五年閏兩個月。○各²人

- 1 In every five years China intercalates two months.
- 2 Every man loves his own child.
- 3 Every time you come you should knock at the door.
- 4 I will take a little of each kind.
- 5 In the Yamên there is opportunity every third and eighth day to enter suit. [hand?]
- 6 Every kind and style are kept on [affairs.]
- 7 How much money can you earn each month.
- 8 Each one of us attends to his own
- 9 Every man ought to do his own duty.
- 10 Formerly whenever he came to the capital he always came to see us; but five or six years have now passed that he has not come.
- 11 He was every day at the door of

13 你就是不怕拉鐵荒 The force of 就 is hard to express in English. Paraphrase thus: -The thing you are not afraid to do is to run in debt.

16 走的早一點 might also mean, We started a little too early.

17 那塊壞骨頭 that piece of rotten bone, -a coarse phrase used to signify that a person is thoroughly worthless

and detestable. 歡喜的沒法, to be delighted beyond all power of expressing or containing the emotion. Men are not wanting in China who feel no shame in proclaiming their spite as is here done.

19 剛 does not here form a phrase with 方, but is used independently as a verb, meaning to become strong or mature.

20 一下 here means all at once, suddenly. 亂 is frequently prefixed to verbs to express wild or irregular action.

LESSON LXVI.

DISTRIBUTIVE PRONOUNS.

各 Each, every. } 各 is each inclusive of all,
 每 Each, every. } while 每 is each severally.
 When 各 is repeated, the second 各 is rendered own. (8) (9)

各自 Each his own, each for himself. (16)
 自各 I myself, you yourself, he himself. (17)
 In colloquial 自各 is often expanded into 自己各兒.

逢 To meet,—though not properly a distributive, becomes one when applied to time, or to the repetition of an act, and means, every time, as often as.

每逢 Every time, as often as.

In Central and Southern Mandarin 逢 is freely used alone, but in Peking it is rarely used save in combination with 每.

VOCABULARY.

每 Mei³. Each, every; each one; constantly; always.

逢 Fêng². To meet unexpectedly; to occur; every time, as often as, whenever.

閏 Yun⁴. To intercalate; intercalary.

衙門 Ye³ mên². A yamên, a government office, a public court, an official establishment.

放告 Fang³ kao⁴. To receive indictments.

喚 Hwan⁴. To call out, to hail, to bid; to order; to designate.

呼喚 Hu¹ hwan⁴. To call,—as a servant.

修行 Hsiu¹ hsing⁴. To reform, to practice virtue.

恤 Hsü¹. To feel for, to commiserate; pity, sympathy.

憐恤 Lien² hsi⁴. To pity, to compassionate.

縲 Liu³. A skein of silk.

六、人 答 我²¹ 相 逢 這¹⁷ 就 把¹⁴ 各
 我 從 我 們 同。三 個 咳 這 人。
 要 那 那 這 ○ 六 事 嗽。幾 ○
 算 兒 那 敝 裏 我²⁰ 九 情、○ 王¹³
 賬。分 莊 是 要 操 得 將¹⁶ 線、老
 ○ 手、兒 逢 賞 演。○ 軍 爺
 坡²⁴ 各 上、四 你 ○ 自 不 歸 各 很
 上 走 是 九 們 中¹⁹ 己 各 下 憐
 有 各 逢 趕 每 外 自 兒 馬、色。人、
 王 路。五 集、你 ○ 國、○ 每¹⁶ 有 逢
 家 的 每²³ 十。們 塊 人 情 營¹⁸ 中、冬 天、
 花 園、禮 兩²² 莊 錢。自 然 每 ○ 我 ○
 內 拜 個 呢、○

the audience room waiting on (his master's) call.
 12 The teacher explains first principles ; to practice them rests with the person himself.
 13 Mr. Wang is very compassionate ; he responds to every plea.
 14 Take these few skeins of thread, and assort them according to their colors.
 15 I have a cough every winter.
 16 The generals did not dismount, but each pursued his own road.
 17 This business requires that you should go yourself.
 18 In the encampment they drill every third, sixth and ninth day.
 19 In all countries, Chinese and foreign, human nature is necessarily the same. [of a dollar.
 20 I wish to make you each a present
 21 We, here, hold markets on every 4th and 9th. How is it in your honorable village? Ans. In my unworthy village the markets are set for every 5th and 10th.
 22 From that time the two separated, and each one went his own road.

歸 *Kwei*¹. To return ; to revert ; to restore ; to betake oneself to ; to belong to ; to go home ; to divide by one figure.
 冬 *Tung*¹. Winter ; the end ; to store up.
 咳 *K'oa*². To cough, to hack. Also *hai*².
 嗽 *Sou*⁴. To cough ; to expectorate.
 咳嗽 *To cough, to hack and cough.*
 奔 *Pen*¹⁴. To run, to go ; to hasten ; to follow ; to be busy with ; to fly ; to hurry.
 軍營 *Chün*¹ *ying*². An encampment.
 演 *Yen*⁵. To practice, to exercise ; to perform ; long, ample, extended.
 操演 *Ts'ao*¹ *yen*². To drill, to parade.
 自然 *Tsi*⁴ *jan*². That which exists or acts of itself ; natural, necessary, spontaneous ; certainly, of course.
 敝 *Pi*⁴. Bad ; unworthy ; a demeaning term for my, mine ; to stop, to close :—Les. 172.
 分手 *Fen*¹ *shou*². To go apart, to separate ; to take leave of.
 異 *I*⁴. Different, diverse ; unusual, rare ; heterodox ; to regard as strange, to marvel at.
 酒病 *Chiu*³ *ping*⁴. Given to wine, intemperate.

喝醉 *Hoa*¹ *tsui*⁴. To get drunk, to become intoxicated.
 佛 *Fo*², *Fu*². Buddha.
 忌 *Chi*⁴. To shun, to avoid, to keep aloof from ; to dread ; to dislike, to be jealous.
 忌口 *Chi*⁴ *k'ou*⁵. To refrain from eating meats, to fast.
 戒口 *Chie*⁴ *k'ou*⁵. The same.
 揭短 *Chie*¹ *twan*⁵. To find fault with ; to reproach for a fault ; to publish the short comings of others ; to slander.
 防備 *Fang*² *pei*⁴. To prepare for ; to be on guard against ; to be beforehand with.
 巡 *Hsün*². To go round and inspect ; to patrol ; to cruise.
 撫 *Fu*⁵. To keep down, to quiet ; to soothe ; to cherish, to provide for ; to manage.
 巡撫. The governor of a province.
 閱 *Yue*⁴. To examine, to inspect ; look over ; to read over carefully.
 閱邊 *Yue*⁴ *pien*¹. To make a tour of inspection. Note (30.)
 公館 *Kung*¹ *kwan*⁵. An official stopping place, a reception room ; a pub-

京的平常話，人人都這樣講。○神的十條誡，條條我都犯了，我的罪愆高過我的頭頂。○凡在回教的人，個個都齊鬍子。○劉景清很會畫畫，他所畫的像，就和照的像差不多。○若天下個個都是好兒子，好兄弟，天下自然常常太平。○地圖是將地的形勢，一一畫清。○我本處人，都傳說他的事，家家戶戶沒有不知道的。○典極必衰，衰極必興，天下萬國，處處都是一理。○俗語說，樣樣通，樣樣鬆，就是說人要精於那一樣，必得專於那一樣。○書中的大旨，我還記得，要章都背出來，節節都講。

- 10 *T'si ti* is a common phrase with us in Nanking. Every one uses it.
- 11 I have broken all the ten commandments of God. My sins have gone over the top of my head. [square.
- 12 Every Mohammedan cuts his beard
- 13 Liu Ching Ch'ing is very good at painting pictures. The portraits he paints are almost equal to photographs.
- 14 If all in the world were good sons and good brothers, the world would, of course, be always peaceful.
- 15 A map is a distinct drawing of the several features of the earth.
- 16 His affairs are reported among all our people. There is not a family or household that does not know them.
- 17 When anything has flourished to the utmost, it must decline; and when it has declined to the utmost, it must begin to flourish. Throughout the world, the same principle everywhere prevails.
- 18 The saying runs, "He that is jack of all trades is master of none": that is to say, he who would excel in anything must give his whole attention to it.
- 19 The general scope of the book I still

漏子 *Lou⁴ tsi³*..... A mistake, a blunder. (s.)
 丟醜 *Tiu¹ ch'ou³*. To expose oneself to contempt, to disgrace oneself.
 平常 *P'ing² ch'ang²*. Ordinary, common, usual, customary.
 凡常 *Fan² ch'ang²*..... The same (s.)
 回教 *Hui² chiao⁴*. The Mohammedan religion:— Note (11.)
 誡 *Chie⁴*..... A command, a precept; a warning.
 愆 *Ch'ien¹*..... A fault, an error; a failure.
 罪愆 *Tsui⁴ ch'ien¹*. A transgression, a sin, a short-coming.
 頭頂 *T'ou² ting³*..... The top of the head.
 太平 *T'ai⁴ p'ing²*..... Peaceful, quiet.
 形勢 *Hsing² shi⁴*. Aspect; outline, contour; shape, configuration.
 傳說 *Ch'wan² shwo⁴*. To report, to pass from mouth to mouth, a rumor; a tradition.

興 *Hsing¹*. To rise, to flourish, to prosper; prevailing, fashionable. Also *hsing⁴*.
 極 *Chi²*. The utmost point, the extremity; extremely; to reach the end, to exhaust.
 旨 *Chi³*. Intention, purpose; scope, sense; imperial will, a decree, an order.
 筆直 *Pi² chi²*. Straight, straight as a line, direct.
 一直 *I¹ chi²*. Straight, direct; forthwith, immediately.
 疇 *T'wan³*. A village, a hamlet. Used only in Central and Western Mandarin.
 岔 *Ch'a⁴*. A fork in the road; a branch, a divergence; to mistake, to go wrong.
 批 *P'i¹*. To criticize, to revise; to give judgment on a communication from an inferior.
 號 *Hao⁴*. A mark, a sign; a style or appellation; a signal, a call, a summons; to mark; to label. A classifier:—Les. 147. Also *hao²*.
 記號 *Chi⁴ hao⁴*. A mark, a sign; a token, a motto.

點 的 那 圈 國 直 直 北 呢 這 出
 點 就 是 的 書 的 走 答 裏 來
 圈 批 是 上 就 一 出 上 我
 圈 書 什 有 去 點 了 辛 實
 次 的 麼 點 喇 岔 村 嚙 店 在
 一 記 意 點 ○ 道 步 打 不
 等 號 思 的 我²¹ 沒 步 那 能
 的 最 呢 有 見 有 往 裏 ○
 就 好 答 圈 中 一 筆 西 走 從²⁰

remember, but to repeat every chapter and expound every verse, is really more than I can do.

20 Which way do you go from this to Shin Tien? Ans. When you get out of the town, go on directly northwest; there is no fork in the road, just go on straight as a line (pen).

21 I notice dots and circles on Chinese books; what is the meaning of them? Ans. They are the marks of the critic. Where the style or sentiment is very good he makes circles, and where it is not quite so good he makes dots.

NOTES.

3 都 here refers to the number of times, and, hence, means *always*.

4 種 is dropped out in the translation. If you should translate, as would seem natural, *this kind of jūan lien paper, etc.*, you would miss the meaning, which is not that this particular kind of jūan lien paper is faulty, but that jūan lien paper in general, is faulty.

9 他 here refers to some one who had been mentioned before. 強 is commonly used for "better" in Central and Northern Mandarin, but is not often so used in the South.

10 此地 is generally used by the non-mandarin dialects south of the Yang-tse for 這裡. It is sometimes used in the North, but its constant use marks any dialect as, by so much, an impure Mandarin. The use of 講 for 說 is also characteristically Southern.

11 The classifier is repeated instead of the noun. Almost any classifier may be thus repeated instead of the noun, though, in many cases, the general classifier, 個, is substituted for the specific classifier. Mohammedans are commonly designated as 回回教, but they, generally, speak

of themselves as 在教, which accounts for the phraseology here used. They are, also, called 回子, but this term is not considered respectful.

13 畫畫 is a repeated word, but does not illustrate the lesson. It is introduced here to put the learner on his guard. The first 畫 is a verb, and the second, a noun. The Chinese language, especially the Wén-li, is very partial to this form of expression. See also (21).

15 一一, one by one, that is, each one in order,—the common form of expressing this idea.

17 This sentence sets forth a stock idea of Chinese philosophy.

18 This proverb is the exact equivalent of our "Jack of all trades and master of none," and is more briefly and elegantly expressed.

20 打那裡 by which way? As here used, 打 is quite t'ung hsing, but a number of other forms are in use in various places. I have heard 把 and 跟 and 起, also ma and man and ka. 從 also, is properly used in this sense, though not often so used colloquially.

LESSON LXVIII.

CLASSIFIERS.

棵 Classifier of trees.

科 A class or order,—classifier of herbs, grains and shrubs. There is much confusion in the use of these two classifiers. I have given the distinction which seems most natural, and which is commonly observed.

乘 A span or team,—classifier of sedan chairs and vehicles other than those on wheels.

雙 Double,—classifier of things in pairs.

口 Mouth,—classifier of members of a family, kettles, hogs, etc.

副 An assistant,—classifier of buttons and of things in sets, also of doses of medicine. In writing, 付 is not unfrequently used instead of 副.

劑 A dose,—classifier of doses of medicine (S).

間 A partition,—classifier of rooms or compartments. Note (28.)

根 Root,—classifier of strings, sticks, and, generally, of things long and narrow.

堆 A pile,—classifier of things in heaps.

疋 Classifier of pieces of cloth.

輛 A chariot,—classifier of wheeled vehicles.

第六十八課

LESSON LXVIII.

日子。○再過三天，我要回家，可以給我僱一
 衣裳。○他¹⁶再過三天，我要回家，可以給我僱一
 錢。買了一¹⁵副釘鈕子。○今天我要用這口鍋煮
 堆。○一¹²根草有一根草的露水養。○八¹³個大
 根頭髮¹¹揀揀下來。○石頭是二千八百斤爲一
 金銀花實⁹在香。○他兩口子要分家。○把那
 後園裏有十二棵蘋果樹，八棵梨樹。○這科
 我⁵典了三間房子。○可以抽一根綫給我。○
 ○還³少兩雙筷子。○
 ○我有十雙絨襪子。○
 ○李²潤發的家有八口人。

- 1 I have ten pairs of woollen stockings.
- 2 Li Jun Fa has a family of eight.
- 3 We are still short two pairs of chopsticks.
- 4 I will guarantee that one dose of medicine will cure him.
- 5 I leased a house of three rooms.
- 6 Draw out a thread and give me.
- 7 There are twelve apple trees and eight pear trees in the back yard.
- 8 This honeysuckle is exceedingly fragrant.
- 9 The two heads of the family are going to separate.
- 10 Pluck out that hair.
- 11 Two thousand eight hundred catties of stone make one cord.
- 12 Every blade of grass has its own dew to nourish it.
- 13 I bought a set of buttons for eight cash.
- 14 I intend to use this kettle to-day to boil the clothes.
- 15 He hasn't a stalk of grain, but depends entirely on his trade for a living.

VOCABULARY.

雙 *Shwang¹*. A pair, a couple; a mate; both; double:—see Sub. Also *shwang⁴*.
 副 *Fu⁴*. An assistant, a deputy, a vice, an alternate:—see Sub.
 棵 *K'ou¹*..... Only used as a classifier:—see Sub.
 堆 *Tui¹*. A pile, a heap, a mound; to heap up, to store:—see Sub.
 乘 *Ch'eng⁴*. A span, a team:—see Sub. Also *Ch'eng²*.
 疋 *P'i³*..... Only used as a classifier:—see Sub.
 輛 *Liang⁴*..... A chariot:—see Sub.
 絨 *Jung²*. Floss; velvet; woollen cloth; *worsted*; *puuk*.
 筴 *K'wai⁴*..... Chopsticks.
 劑 *Chi⁴*. To trim, to cut even; to portion out; a dose, a prescription:—see Sub.
 保管 *Pao³ kwan³*..... Same as 管保.
 綫 *Hsien⁴*..... The same as 線.
 蘋 *P'in², P'ing²*..... A water plant.
 菓 *K'ou³*..... Fruit, berries, nuts, etc.
 蘋果. A species of apple—quite large, but spongy and insipid.

梨 *Li²*. Pears—of which there are many kinds in China.
 揀 *Nie¹*. To take with the fingers, to pluck; to knead; to fabricate, to trump up.
 揀 *Nie¹, Nien³*. To pinch, to nip; to hold with tongs or nippers; to twist.
 金銀花 *Chin¹ yin² hwa¹*..... The honeysuckle.
 分家 *Fen¹ chia¹*. To divide the inheritance; to live separately.
 兩口子 *Liang³ k'ou³ tsi³*. Husband and wife.
 露 *Lu⁴*..... Dew, mist; to bless:—see *lou³*.¹⁴
 露水 *Lu⁴ shui³*..... Dew.
 苫 *Shan², Chan¹*. To thatch; a coarse grass used for thatch; a mat.
 苫子. A rude mule litter covered with matting.
 駝轎 *T'ou² chiao⁴*..... A mule litter.
 紗 *Sha¹*..... Silk gauze; crape.
 顏 *Yen²*..... Countenance, visage; color, hue.
 顏色 *Fen² se⁴*..... Color, hue.
 光潤 *Kwang¹ jun⁴*. Smooth, polished; shining, brilliant.

芽菜 只這月季 正灰的。門。在²⁰十鮮光乘
 用錢六 一口兩科 色你²²○山²¹裏科。明潤苦駝
 六十文 弄做 色你²²○山²¹裏科。明潤苦駝
 八根科 弄做 色你²²○山²¹裏科。明潤苦駝
 葱 用錢 弄做 色你²²○山²¹裏科。明潤苦駝
 十二文 弄做 色你²²○山²¹裏科。明潤苦駝
 ○科 弄做 色你²²○山²¹裏科。明潤苦駝
 王²⁶黃白 弄做 色你²²○山²¹裏科。明潤苦駝

- 16 In three days I am going home. You may hire a mule litter for me.
- 17 Look at that piece of red silk gauze; is not the color brilliant?
- 18 Twenty or thirty stalks of my millet on the south hill were eaten up by your cow.
- 19 I saw that he kept two big, fat hogs in the sty.
- 20 Wear this pair of old shoes at home, and keep that pair of new ones to go out with.
- 21 At weddings in Shantung, some use two sedan chairs and some, four.
- 22 When you go out to-day, you may buy for me three pieces of white cotton cloth, and one piece of ash colored silk.
- 23 There are five flowering bushes in the front yard,—two monthly roses, two red roses and one shrub peony.
- 24 With upwards of ten persons to eat and only this one kettle to cook in, the cooking is very inconvenient.
- 25 I bought two heads of cabbage for sixty cash and eight onions for twelve cash.

鮮 *Hsien*¹. Fresh, new; bright, clean. Also
 *hsien*³.
 鮮明 *Hsien*¹ *ming*². New, bright, brilliant, re-
 splendent.
 穀 *Ku*³. Grain; millet.
 豬 or 猪 *Chu*¹. A hog, a pig.
 山東 *Shan*¹ *tung*¹. Shantung.
 娶親 *Ch'u*³ *ch'in*¹. To take a wife.
 紬 *Ch'ou*². Coarse silk, pongee; a clue, a thread;
 to search.
 季 *Chi*⁴. A season of the year, a period; a
 younger brother.
 月季 *Yüe*⁴ *chi*⁴. The monthly rose.
 月月紅 *Yüe*⁴ *yüe*⁴ *hung*². Same. (s.)
 玫 *Mei*². A bright red pearl, a garnet.
 瑰 *Kwei*⁴. A red pearl; rare, admirable.
 玫瑰花. The red rose.
 牡 *Mu*³. The male of quadrupeds and of some
 plants.
 丹 *Tan*¹. Carnation color; a medicinal concoction,
 a pill; sincere, loyal.
 牡丹花. The shrub peony. *dahlia*.
 葱 *Ts'ung*¹. Onions.

大車 *Ta*⁴ *ch'é*¹. A freight cart.
 轎車 *Chiao*⁴ *ch'é*¹. A passenger cart.
 小車 *Hsiao*³ *ch'é*¹. A wheelbarrow.
 黃泥 *Hwang*² *ni*². Clay, earth.
 聘 *P'in*⁴. To ask; to betroth; to espouse.
 聘禮 *P'in*⁴ *li*³. Betrothal presents.
 定禮 *Ting*⁴ *li*³. Betrothal presents.
 戒指 *Chie*⁴ *chi*³. A finger ring.
 墜 *Chui*⁴. To sink, to descend; to fall, to crumble;
 a pendant, an ear-ring.
 鉗 *Ch'ien*². Pincers, nippers, tongs; a clasp:—
 see Note (29).
 耳挖 *Er*³ *wa*¹. An ear-pick or scoop.
 簪 *Tsan*¹. A pin or skewer to fasten the hair,
 a hair pin.
 陪 *P'ei*². To assist; to accompany; to match;
 to act as second or mate.
 被攔 *Pei*⁴ *koa*¹. A low cabinet on which the bed-
 ding is laid during the day.
 It stands across the head of the *k'ang* or bed.
 燈臺 *Téng*¹ *t'ai*². A lamp stand; a lamp post;
 a light-house.
 鋪蓋 *P'u*¹ *ka*¹. Bedding.

是銅盆、燈臺、鋪蓋、枕頭、樣樣都有。
 個皮箱、兩把椅子、一個被攔子、一個大鏡子、再
 那頭陪送的甚麼呢、答 一口大櫃、一口小櫃、兩
 兩副戒指、兩副鑿子、一根耳挖子、三根簪子、
 四副有兩疋藍粗洋布、一疋紅洋機布、一副鑄頭子、
 答 聽說要蓋兩間廂房。○他都送的什麼聘定禮呢、
 在他大門外、有九堆石頭、一堆黃泥、一堆細沙、
 晚上、來了八輛大車、五輛轎車、十三輛小車。○日兒
 的、小學生每人一根紅的。○西邊車店裏、今日黑
 太太拿着一些頭繩子、給大學生每人一根黑

- 26 Mrs. Wang took some hairstrings and gave the large pupils each a black one and the small pupils each a red one.
- 27 There arrived this evening at the cart inn to the west, eight freight carts, five passenger carts and thirteen wheelbarrows.
- 28 Outside his front gate are nine piles of stone, a heap of clay and one of fine sand. I hear he is going to build two side rooms.
- 29 What all did they bring for betrothal presents? Ans. Two pieces of strong blue foreign cloth, one piece of fine red foreign cloth, one pair of bracelets, two pairs of finger rings, two pairs of ear-rings, one ear-pick and three hair-pins.
- 30 What outfit was given with the bride? Ans. One large clothes press, one sideboard, two leather trunks, two chairs, one cabinet and one large mirror, besides wash basin, lamp stand, bedding and pillows, all complete.

NOTES.

1. Woollen stockings are of foreign manufacture. The Chinese do not knit their stockings, but make them of cotton cloth.

5 "Lease" is not quite an accurate translation of 典, which is an indefinite lease in consideration of a round sum paid down at the first, but the property is subject to redemption by the owner at any time, or after the lapse of some specified time, usually three years. If not redeemed within forty years, it is not redeemable except in the case of land with graves on it. 典 is not properly (as sometimes translated) to mortgage, which is expressed by 押, although in drawing a mortgage the term 典 is used, for the reason that 押 is illegal. There is in this case, however, no possession given as in the case of a real 典. Thus a mortgage in China is a lease given, but held in abeyance by the lessee, with power to take possession in case of failure to pay as promised.

9 口 may here be regarded either as a classifier of 家 understood, or as a noun standing for member of a family. 分家 properly means to divide the inheritance between brothers, but is sometimes used, as here, of the separation of husband and wife.

12 The idea is that in the economy of nature, man included, the wants of everything are provided for.

14 Or, I want to use this kettle, etc. Which meaning was intended would be indicated in speaking by the stress put on 用. Boiling clothes, in washing them, is a foreign custom.

16 The 苦子 is used only in North China, and there only in hilly country where carts cannot be used.

21 In the case of two chairs, one is for the bride, the other for the groom. In the case of four, the two extra chairs are, one for the 將迎客, the other for the 送迎客. The former, who rides in the front chair, is an elderly woman of the groom's friends, the latter, who rides in the rear chair, is an elderly woman of the bride's family. For 頂 as a classifier see Les. 125. It was not intended to introduce it here, but the Pekingese called for it.

26 The Chinese say head strings for hair strings.

27 Wheelbarrows are extensively used in North and West China for the transportation of goods.

28 A pile, or cord, of building stone is in some places understood to mean a definite quantity of from 2,400 to 2,800 cattles, in other places it is like a pile of earth or sand, quite indefinite. 兩間廂房, a side building of two rooms. 間 does not necessarily nor properly mean a room, but, rather, the space enclosed between two girders in the roof which are supported by posts in the wall, and with which the partitions are usually coincide. The size of houses is indicated by the number of these chien.

29 洋機布 is, in some places a particular quality of foreign cotton cloth, fine and strong, in other places it simply means foreign cotton cloth of any quality. Ear-rings are called 鉗子 in Peking, because they clasp into the ear.

第九十課

LESSON LXIX.

過教就學人兒。的。四事。前¹
 來先生敢學人兒。的。四事。前¹
 給先生敢學人兒。的。四事。前¹
 先生好做喇。我看你是個好體面女兒。就是脚大一
 一頓好打。前天上的書念會一號沒有背
 好打。上的書念會一號沒有背
 ○這幾個錢他還捨

- 1 I was soundly berated by Chiang Ping Wên a few days ago.
- 2 Why did you not suit your actions to the circumstances? You have not the least discernment.
- 3 He has in his drawing-room two square tables, four arm chairs and one long sideboard, all very neatly arranged.
- 4 This climbing rosebush has on it a great many roses. I am sorry they are about to drop of.
- 5 P'ang Loä Ch'ün has a very fine looking daughter, except that her feet are a little large.
- 6 Wang San Yie speaks in a very pompous style.
- 7 You say you are a good man. As I see it, you are a good rascal.
- 8 Be off; it is time to go to school.
- 9 That Li P'êng Chiu is mighty bold that he should venture to control my affairs.
- 10 In three days he has not learned one lesson, and to-day the teacher gave him a good flogging.

LESSON LXIX.

MISCELLANEOUS USES OF 好.

In addition to its ordinary normal use, 好 has a great variety of peculiar uses most of which are brought together in this lesson. They cannot be

analysed or classified. 好 is a little like the English word *well*, "only more so."

VOCABULARY.

蔣 *Chiang*³..... An aquatic plant; a surname
 炳 *Ping*³.....Bright, luminous.
 眼目 *Yen*³ *mu*⁴. The eyes; the expression of the eyes.
 眼神 *Yen*³ *shên*². The expression of the eyes as indicative of the thoughts or the feelings.
 眼色 *Yen*³ *sé*⁴. Discrimination, discernment, judgment, sense; a wink, a hint.
 客廳 *K'ôä*⁴ *t'ing*¹. Reception hall, parlor, drawing-room.
 客屋 *K'ôä*⁴ *wu*¹..... Parlor, drawing-room.
 仙 *Hsien*¹. A human soul with divine powers, a genius, a fairy.

八仙桌 *Pa*¹ *hsien*¹ *chô*¹. A square dining table seating eight persons:—Note (3.)
 泰 *T'ai*⁴.....Exalted; honorable; liberal.
 泰山 *T'ai*⁴ *shan*¹. The most noted sacred mountain in China, situated sixty miles south of Chinanfu.
 泰山椅 *T'ai*⁴ *shan*¹ *i*³. A high backed arm chair:—Note (3.)
 几 *Chi*¹.....A bench; a low table; a side table.
 條几 *T'iao*³ *chi*¹. A long narrow table, a sideboard.
 設 *Shé*⁴. To institute; to arrange, to set out in order; to suppose; if:—Les. 132.

先²⁰都¹⁷就¹⁷你¹⁷容¹⁷時¹⁷趣¹⁷去¹⁷是¹⁷不¹⁷
 和²⁰好¹⁷說¹⁷說¹⁷去¹⁷易¹⁷候¹⁷人¹⁷罷¹⁷早¹⁷得¹⁷
 他²⁰說¹⁷就¹⁷你¹⁷借¹⁷交¹⁷飯¹⁷家¹⁷上¹⁷花¹⁷
 好²⁰說¹⁷是¹⁷你¹⁷條¹⁷一¹⁷就¹⁷都¹⁷好¹⁷疼¹⁷真¹⁷
 說¹⁷這¹⁷些¹⁷孩¹⁷子¹⁷沒¹⁷有¹⁷地¹⁷方¹⁷交¹⁷託¹⁷代¹⁷別¹⁷的¹⁷
 他²⁰若¹⁷實¹⁷在¹⁷不¹⁷肯¹⁷再¹⁷應¹⁷許¹⁷賠¹⁷他¹⁷ ○ 的¹⁷這¹⁷不¹⁷
 容¹⁷易¹⁷交¹⁷一¹⁷個¹⁷朋¹⁷友¹⁷你¹⁷好¹⁷就¹⁷輕¹⁷易¹⁷得¹⁷罪¹⁷他¹⁷嗎¹⁷ ○ 好¹⁷不¹⁷
 時¹⁷候¹⁷飯¹⁷就¹⁷好¹⁷喇¹⁷等¹⁷吃¹⁷一¹⁷點¹⁷再¹⁷走¹⁷罷¹⁷ ○ 好¹⁷不¹⁷
 趣¹⁷人¹⁷家¹⁷都¹⁷哭¹⁷你¹⁷怎¹⁷麼¹⁷在¹⁷那¹⁷裏¹⁷笑¹⁷呢¹⁷ ○ 我¹⁷看¹⁷你¹⁷好¹⁷不¹⁷
 去¹⁷罷¹⁷ 答上¹⁷起¹⁷好¹⁷說¹⁷不¹⁷敢¹⁷勞¹⁷駕¹⁷ ○ 我¹⁷給¹⁷你¹⁷拍¹⁷着¹⁷送¹⁷
 是¹⁷早¹⁷上¹⁷疼¹⁷了¹⁷一¹⁷陣¹⁷好¹⁷的¹⁷ ○ 我¹⁷給¹⁷你¹⁷拍¹⁷着¹⁷送¹⁷
 不¹⁷得¹⁷花¹⁷真¹⁷好¹⁷小¹⁷氣¹⁷器¹⁷ ○ 現¹⁷在¹⁷疼¹⁷的¹⁷輕¹⁷一¹⁷點¹⁷就¹⁷

- 11 He even grudges to spend these few cash. Really, he is niggardly.
- 12 The pain is a little lighter now, but this morning it was awfully severe for a while.
- 13 Let me take it for you. Ans. Thank you, I could not think of troubling you.
- 14 It seems to me you are wholly wanting in a sense of the fitness of things. Why do you stand there and laugh when others are weeping?
- 15 Dinner will be ready before long. Wait and eat a little before you go.
- 16 Is it so easy to make a friend that you should lightly offend him?
- 17 You go and borrow a bag, so that I can attend market to-morrow.
- 18 I beg pardon for pushing you. Ans. Not at all. I am sorry to have inconvenienced you.
- 19 The other matters can be readily arranged, but there is no one to whom I can entrust these children.
- 20 First try to persuade him, and if he

擺設 *Pai³ shé⁴*. To spread out in order, to arrange, to display.

齊整 *Ch²i² chéng³*. Uniform, even, neat, orderly.

薔薇 *Ch²iang²*. A red rose.

薔薇 *Wei²*. A kind of fern, greens.

薔薇 *Wei²*. A climbing rose, the cinnamon rose.

蓬羣 *P²ang²*. A surname. See *féng²*.

羣 *Ch²ün²*. A flock, a herd; a company, a multitude; the whole.

混 *Hun⁴*. Mixed, disorderly; to do or act in a heedless or reckless manner, to shift, to eke out, to slur over. See *hun²*.

混帳 *Hun⁴ cháng⁴*. Unreasonable; vicious, recalcitrant; worthless.

膽 or 膽 *Tán³*. The gall; courage, boldness.

鷓鴣 *P²óng²*. A fabulous bird.

小器 *Hsiao³ ch²i²*. Mean spirited, narrow minded, stingy, niggardly.

小氣 *Hsiao³ ch²i²*. Same.

早起 *Tsao³ ch²i²*. The morning.

駕 *Chia⁴*. A chariot; to drive or sit in a chariot; to mount, to ascend; to avail of.

勞駕 *Lao² chia⁴*. To trouble one,—a polite phrase.

輕易 *Ch²ing¹ i⁴*. For small cause, lightly; rarely, seldom.

口袋 *K²ou³ tai⁴*. A bag, a wallet.

催促 *Ts²ui¹ ts²u⁴*. To drive, to urge; to dun, to push.

交代 *Chiao¹ tai⁴*. To deliver to, to hand over; to entrust to.

交託 *Chiao¹ t²oá¹*. To put in the hands of, to entrust to; to consign to.

漓 *Li²*. Water dropping, the pattering of rain.

漓溜羅唆 *Li² liu¹ loá² soá¹*. Prolonged and confused, complicated.

羅裏羅唆 *Loá² li² loá² soá¹*. Same.

蔡 *Ts²ai⁴*. Weeds, herbs; a surname.

惠 *Hui⁴*. Kindness, grace, liberality; charity, favor; to be kind to, to bestow.

卿 *Ch²ing¹*. A noble, a lord.

淵 *Yuan¹*. A whirlpool; an abyss; east.

博 *Poi²*. Ample, spacious; intelligent, learned; to barter; to gamble.

淵博. Profound in learning.

提挾 *T²i² pa²*. To raise up, to assist, to help.

情趣 *Ch²ing² ch²ü⁴*. Taste, savor, relish, satisfaction.

一 許 不 蔡²⁵幾 封 候。 說 話、 也
 課 多 錯。 惠 吊 起 ○ 話、 敢 還
 很 的 ○ 卿 錢、 來。 把²³說 保 不
 不 不 我²⁶先 答 ○ 信 起 不 遲。
 好 是、 花 生、 好 這²⁴寫 來、 能 ○
 做、 一 尋、 錢 好 錢 場 好 囉 瀉 不 請²¹
 也 想 思 費 淵 體 哪、 官 了、 裏 溜 答 放
 不 起 事 的 博 面 花 了 司、 可 囉 囉 應。
 知 來、 的 的 了 他 以 唆 唆、 ○ 罷、
 好 好 提 學 四 也 念 沒 那²² 那
 學 沒 拔 問、 寫 十 不 給 有 個 個
 不 情 滋 他、 寫 多 過 我 說 人 人
 好 趣 味。 還 的 吊 花 聽 聽 的 是 好
 學。 ○ 落 字 咧。 了 十 再 時 好 說
 這²⁷了 也 ○ 十

positively refuses, it will be time enough to agree to pay damages.
 21 Please do not worry. That man is very reasonable. I guarantee you he will be willing.
 22 That man is an inveterate talker; when he once begins, he strings it out without end.
 23 When you have finished writing the letter, read it to me before you seal it up.
 24 He did not spend more than ten or fifteen thousand cash in this lawsuit. Ans. He didn't, eh? He spent over forty thousand.
 25 Mr. Ts'ai Hui Ch'ing is a man of very fine scholarship, his hand writing, also, is quite good.
 26 I spent money and effort to help him along and yet a great deal of fault is found with me. I feel vexed whenever I think of it.
 27 This lesson was very hard to make. I don't know whether it will be easy to learn, or not.

NOTES:

2 Although no interrogative form is expressed, the interrogation is implied in the first clause. In Chinese, reproof is generally in the interrogative form. The sentence might of course be taken in the direct indicative form, but, in that case, would hardly justify the emphatic expression that follows.

3 八仙桌, light fairy table, a high sounding name for a square table that will seat eight persons. 泰山椅子 Tai Shan chairs, high backed chairs with arms at the sides. Tai Shan is used as a fancy name in allusion to the high back of the chair.

7 There is here a play on the word 好, —a good rascal; i.e., one that is fully up the standard of ordinary rascality, a grand rascal.

9 The name is made emphatic by being put in this peculiar way.

10 一號 one mark; i.e., one lesson. Chinese teachers usually mark lessons by pasting a small strip of red paper at the point to which the lesson extends. This paper is called a 號, and is put for the lesson which is marked by it. A different phraseology prevails in the South where 上 is used for setting a lesson, but there is no way of expressing the noun "lesson." Hence the southern teacher insisted on recasting the whole sentence as given, —avoiding, as will be noticed, the use of the noun "lesson." 好一頓打 and 一頓好打 express the same idea. Teachers differ in their choice of the two forms.

13 The term 抬, here used, implies that there was a third party who carried the other end of the pole. 好說

is the common response to a compliment, or to expressions of thanks or of self-deprecation. 不敢勞駕 not venture to trouble your carriage,—the word carriage being put by metonymy for the person. People worthy of honor are supposed to ride in carriages.

16 The meaning, strange to say, is substantially the same whether the negative be used or not.

17 The word 一 is elided colloquially before 條.

18 不說催促你喇. This is the language of one who, having vigorously urged payment, now receives the money. The force of 不說 is,—I will omit the usual apologetic forms for having inconvenienced you by my urgency. The sentence may also be used of a borrowed article.

22 好說話. Notice the different meaning of this phrase in this, and in the preceding sentence; also the different tone of 好.

23 可以 is omitted in the translation. It is often used in Chinese when its equivalent is not needed in English. It serves to soften what might otherwise seem too much like a command.

24 好錢哪. A very idiomatic expression not readily analysed. It is, perhaps, put for 好多錢. The translation gives the exact force.

25 The Southern teachers reject 體面 and substitute 淵博, which, in the North, is decidedly *wén*. If it be used, the translation should be *profound* instead of *respectable*.

課十七第

LESSON LXX.

他行中 答天 是 可以 請 叫 好 請
 來的不 不好 把 是 太 問 烟 啊 先 生
 的 行中 現 你的 太陽 ○ 太 太 焮 熏 ○ 給 我
 時 行中 成。 的 靴 嗎 古 太 喇 喇 把 這 個
 候 行中 ○ 請 子 子 答 人 太 願 意 出 去 瞧 瞧 熱 鬧 嗎 答
 你 這 個 樣 子 就 不 錯。 ○ 等 7
 可 以 把 我 的 話 告 訴

- 1 Would you be so kind, sir, as to address an envelope for me? Ans. Certainly.
- 2 Put this hat carefully away, and do not allow it to become tainted with smoke. Ans. All right.
- 3 The Chang family have their funeral to-day. We would enquire if you, madam, wish to go and see the display. Ans. I believe I will.
- 4 The ancients all said that the sun revolved [round the earth]. After all, does the sun not revolve? Ans. No.
- 5 Would you be willing to lend me your boots to wear on my wedding day? Ans. Certainly. They are at your service.
- 6 Will the gentleman please examine whether this manner [of doing it] will answer? Ans. Yes, it will answer very well.

LESSON LXX.

YES AND NO.

是 Yes. The Chinese use the substantive 是 as their most common affirmative. It corresponds more nearly than any other word in the language to our word *yes*, though in many places it will not replace *yes*.

是的 Yes. This form is generally used in the South, and sometimes, in the North.

是是 Yes, yes. An emphatic assent. It is generally used by inferiors assenting to the commands of superiors—Aye, aye, sir. It is also used to indicate impatience—yes, I know.

就是 So be it, all right. See Les. 44.

喳 or **喳喳** Yes, sir, or madam,—a Manchu word. It is rarely heard away from Peking, save in *yaméns*, where everybody apes it.

好 or **好啊** A cordial assent,—very well, all right.

行 or **行啊** It will do, it will work. Often marks a concession more or less reluctant.

中 or **中啊** It will do, so be it; that will do, that's enough. 啊 is generally added to 好, 行 and 中, and sometimes to 是, but is spoken lightly.

可以 A qualified assent, that is, *consent*, you may, all right. This term has given rise to the pidgin English phrase, "can do."

對 That's so, you're right. An emphatic assent.

是喇. The 喇 is added sometimes for euphony, and sometimes for emphasis. It is added in like manner to 好, 行, 中, and especially to 對.

不 No. It applies to the present and the future. When past time is referred to, 沒 or 沒有 is used instead. A light 啊 is often added to 不.

不是 No. Generally less emphatic than 不 without 是.

不行 Won't work, cannot allow it, "no go."

不中 Won't do, cannot allow it. Used in Shantung but is not *t'ung hsing*.

不錯 No mistake, that's so, of course.

一點不錯 Not the least mistake, precisely, to be sure.

那是 不錯 That's certain, that's so, of course.

也 好 啊 } The use of 也 marks some change of thought or idea, in consequence of which the assent is given.

Affirmation and negation are often expressed by simply repeating the principal verb of the interrogative sentence, with or without 不, as the case may be, as in 你懂得官話嗎 答 懂得, *Do you understand Mandarin, Ans. I do.* This principle is in fact illustrated in (1), (5), (6).

的三週年，今天必得家去。○他¹⁵不給錢，我們不好上他
 毛病。○在這裏玩幾天再走罷。○他¹⁵不給錢，我們不好上他
 下合同，以後他必反復。○對喇，我早聽說他有那樣的
 能叫媳婦倒管着嗎？○那是不錯的。○你¹³若不和他立
 覺吃驚呢？○若¹¹事中沒有他的瓜葛連，怎麼每逢提起來，他就
 就是。○若¹¹事中沒有他的瓜葛連，怎麼每逢提起來，他就
 他看看，若是如意，他就留下，不如意，還是我的東西。○
 還是二分利嗎？我聽說是分半利。○你¹⁰只管拿給
 不曉得你是什麼心思，你想他敢告訴你嗎？○
 他，答是的是的。○你⁸要慢慢的套他，若是逼問的急了，他還

- 7 When he comes, you may tell him what I said. Ans. Yes, I will.
- 8 You will have to pump him gradually. If you interrogate him too eagerly, he will not know what your purpose is, and do you think he will tell you? Ans. Of course not.
- 9 Is the interest two per cent [per month]? I heard it was one and a half per cent. Ans. No.
- 10 Don't hesitate to bring it for him to see. If it pleases him, let him keep it; and if it does not please him, he need not take it. Ans. All right.
- 11 If he were not concerned in the affair, why should he be alarmed every time it is mentioned? Ans. That's so.
- 12 It is sufficient if the mother-in-law does not abuse her daughter-in-law; can she be expected to let her daughter-in-law rule over her? Ans. Of course not.
- 13 If you do not have a written agreement with him, he will certainly go back on you. Ans. That's so. I have heard that he has that weakness.
- 14 Stay here and recreate a few days before you go. Ans. No, I must go home to-day. To-morrow is the third anniversary of my cousin's death.

VOCABULARY.

信皮 *Hsin⁴ p'ei²*. The outside of a letter; the paper in which a note is enfolded and which serves as an envelope.
 熏 *Hsin¹*. Vapor, fumes; to fumigate, to smoke; to perfume; to suffocate.
 焮 *Ch'iao³*. To smoke, to soil.
 請問 *Ch'ing³ wen⁴*. To enquire; a polite form of question,—please tell me.
 瞧 *Ch'iao³*. To look at, to glance at, to take a peep at.
 轉 *Chwan⁴*. A revolution; to turn round, to revolve, to circulate; to go round a corner. See *chwan³*.
 靴 *Hsue¹*. A boot.
 逼問 *Pi¹ wen⁴*. To interrogate, to cross question; to demand an answer.
 只管 *Chi³ kwan³*. Only, simply; without hesitation, freely, just:—Les. 83.

牽 *Ch'ien¹*. To drag along; to pull,—as a boat, to lead, to induce; to involve.
 牽連 *Ch'ien¹ lien²*. To be concerned or involved in, connected with.
 瓜葛 *Kwa¹ ko²*. Concerned, entangled in, involved.
 驚 *Ching¹*. Frightened, terrified, alarmed, apprehensive.
 吃驚 *Ch'i¹ ching¹*. Startled, alarmed.
 覺驚 *Chio² ching¹*. To feel alarmed; to manifest alarm.—Note (11.)
 合同 *Hoa² t'ung²*. Agreement, contract, indenture, covenant.
 堂兄 *T'ang² hsiung¹*. A first cousin of the same family name.
 週年 *Chou¹ nien²*. A full year, the whole year, anniversary.

館子去請客，和他抵頂賬嗎？
 ○我再限你們三天的限期，若再拿不了人來，我要重重的責治你們。
 去喇，先生看看這個大老爺的恩典。
 的，就罷了，還能賠着賣給他嗎？
 要借兩吊錢的盤費，託我來商議先生，願意借給他，不願意。
 至多用六百錢，不行，這正是個忙時候，六百錢沒有去。
 的。○聽說他的功課很忙，從早到晚，一點閒空沒有，是嗎？
 是對的喇，他沒有閒空是不錯的。○你拿不了，就把這個蒲

- 15 If he will not pay, suppose we get up a company and go to his restaurant and have a feast on account. Ans. To be sure: that is a good idea.
- 16 I will give you three days more. If you then fail to produce the man, I'll punish you severely. Ans. Aye, aye, your honor is very gracious.
- 17 The best room is already occupied. Please, sir, look at this room and see if it will answer. Ans. It is all right.
- 18 It is enough if we do not make anything off him; we can not sell to him at a loss. Ans. Of course we can't.
- 19 Li Wên Yün wants to borrow two thousand cash for travelling expenses, and asks me to speak with you and ask whether, or not, you are willing to lend it to him. Ans. Well, yes. Go and call him in.
- 20 It seems to me that six hundred cash, at the most, should hire two animals for sixty li. Ans. It can't be done. This is a very busy time. No one is willing to go for six hundred cash.
- 21 I hear that his studies keep him very busy, so that he has no leisure from morning till night. Am I correct? Ans. You are indeed. That he has no leisure is emphatically true.

館 *Kwan*³..... Same as 館.
 請客 *Ch'ing*³ *k'oa*⁴. To invite company, to make a party, to have a feast.
 抵 *Ti*³. To oppose, to ward off; to sustain, to bear; to substitute for, to atone.
 頂賬 *Ting*³ *chang*⁴. Against a debt, in lieu of the money, in settlement.
 抵賬 *Ti*³ *chang*⁴. In settlement of an account, to compound a debt by property given instead of money.
 責 *Tse*². To reprove, to reprimand; to punish, to fine; a charge, duty, responsibility.
 責治 *Tse*² *chi*⁴..... To punish, to chastise.
 嗒 *Cha*¹..... Yes, sir, or madam. See Sub.
 恩 *En*¹..... Favor, grace, mercy; kindness.
 恩典 *En*¹ *tien*³. Favor, bounty, grace, mercy.

上房 *Shang*⁴ *fang*². The rooms which in an inn face the entrance.
 佔 *Chan*⁴. To usurp, to trespass upon, to arrogate; to take possession of, to occupy.
 盤費 *P'an*² *fei*⁴..... Travelling expenses.
 功課 *Kung*¹ *k'oa*⁴..... Studies, lesson, task.
 閒空 *Hsien*² *k'ung*⁴..... Spare time, leisure.
 蒲團 *P'u*²..... The cat-tail rush, calamus.
 團 *T'wan*². A lump, a mass; round, globular; to collect, to group; to surround; united, agreeing together.
 蒲團. A rush mat, a [round] mat of any kind; specially the mat on which priests sit when they recite prayers.
 蒲墊 *P'u*² *tien*⁴. A rush mat, a mat of any kind.
 智 *Chi*⁴. Wisdom, knowledge, prudence, discretion.

一得人了來到十答答團墊
 智、自騙貨、說、八吊不也子
 那、己騙得去、秤、月錢、行中、好、可、留
 能、墊、不、幹、不、再、這、那、啊、以、下、
 再、上、多、別、離、還、個、些、○、以、後、
 有、答、若、的、事、客、不、好、還、吊、我、給、你、
 第、是、是、再、嗎、這、離、答、你、了、百、錢、帶、
 二、是、不、有、這、一、貨、也、六、○、錢、帶、
 回、不、經、第、一、回、你、行、好、吊、我、²⁴、你、去、
 呢。一、失、事、回、幸、虧、好、以、○、四、欠、賣、不、好、
 長、必、叫、離、從、²⁵、吊、的、賣、嗎、

- 22 If you can not take all, had you not better leave this mat and I will send (take) it to you by and by? Ans. Well, all right.
- 23 Will you take fifteen hundred cash? No, that money will not buy it.
- 24 Of the ten thousand cash I owe you, I will pay six thousand this month, and then, may I wait till the eighth month to pay the other four thousand? Ans. Yes, that will do.
- 25 It has always been said, "The steel-yards can not be separated from the weight, nor the merchant from his goods." Is it proper for you to leave the goods, to look after other things? This time, fortunately, not much was taken, but if you do so a second time; you will have to make it good yourself. Ans. All right. "Without experience (mistakes) no wisdom is gained." I will not do so a second time.

NOTES.

11 覺驚 This phrase is widely used, but it is hard to see how it can apply to external appearance, as it does here. Some would write 脚驚 and others (where soft sounds prevail) 着驚.

14 On the first three anniversaries of any one's death paper money is burnt at the grave and also at home in front of the tablet. The first and third anniversaries are regarded as the most important.

16 This is the language of an officer to his underlings urging them to catch some transgressor.

17 The 上房 is the most desirable room in an inn. The term must be carefully distinguished from 廂房.

22 As used in the North 帶 would here necessarily mean that the party was going himself and would take the mat along, whereas 捎 means to send by another.

25 客, here, the merchant or agent who has goods in charge and who travels with them. In Peking 事 and 失 are read nearly or quite alike, and which should here be used is more or less doubtful, as either will give a good sense. In eastern Shantung 事 is Shi and 失 is Shi, and the latter is unequivocally the correct word.

LESSON LXXI.

THE CAUSATIVES 教, 使, 令 AND 給.

教 or 叫 in addition to its primary meaning, and its use to form the passive (Les. 53), is also much used as a causative. This causative sense is often modified so as to include the idea of instruction or direction to do or act. In the North the idea of causing often passes over to that of permitting or allowing as (2), (3).

使, in addition to its use as an instrumental verb (Les. 54), is often used causatively. Its

causative force is a little stronger than that of 教 and it is a little more bookish.

令 To command, is used in certain connections only, for 教. It is always followed by 人, or by a pronoun, and is only used in connection with the expression of some emotion.

給 (read kê) is largely used in Southern Mandarin in a causative sense, taking the place to some extent of both 教 and 使. It is never so used in Central or Northern Mandarin.

第十七課

LESSON LXXI.

誰¹教²你³這⁴麼⁵做⁶。○先⁷生⁸不⁹許¹⁰叫¹¹上¹²街¹³。○我¹⁴不¹⁵能¹⁶教¹⁷你¹⁸吃¹⁹虧²⁰。○不²¹要²²叫²³父²⁴母²⁵擔²⁶憂²⁷。○叫²⁸他²⁹明³⁰天³¹一³²早³³上³⁴工³⁵。○你³⁶實³⁷在³⁸教³⁹我⁴⁰丟⁴¹臉⁴²。○叫⁴³他⁴⁴廚⁴⁵房⁴⁶早⁴⁷些⁴⁸把⁴⁹飯⁵⁰預⁵¹備⁵²下⁵³。○翠⁵⁴瑛⁵⁵說⁵⁶話⁵⁷，叫⁵⁸人⁵⁹聽⁶⁰不⁶¹出⁶²來⁶³。○教⁶⁴我⁶⁵看⁶⁶，不⁶⁷如⁶⁸由⁶⁹他⁷⁰罷⁷¹。○他⁷²叫⁷³弄⁷⁴人⁷⁵，不⁷⁶能⁷⁷辦⁷⁸呢⁷⁹。○你⁸⁰不⁸¹管⁸²他⁸³，這⁸⁴就⁸⁵是⁸⁶教⁸⁷他⁸⁸學⁸⁹壞⁹⁰了⁹¹。○纔⁹²說⁹³的⁹⁴事⁹⁵，你⁹⁶不⁹⁷可⁹⁸叫⁹⁹人¹⁰⁰曉¹⁰¹得¹⁰²。○王¹⁰³世¹⁰⁴官¹⁰⁵來¹⁰⁶了¹⁰⁷。○他¹⁰⁸叫¹⁰⁹你¹¹⁰怎¹¹¹麼¹¹²樣¹¹³，你¹¹⁴就¹¹⁵怎¹¹⁶麼¹¹⁷樣¹¹⁸安¹¹⁹排¹²⁰。○我¹²¹沒¹²²法¹²³子¹²⁴安¹²⁵排¹²⁶。○王¹²⁷世¹²⁸官¹²⁹來¹³⁰了¹³¹。○他¹³²叫¹³³你¹³⁴怎¹³⁵麼¹³⁶樣¹³⁷，你¹³⁸就¹³⁹怎¹⁴⁰麼¹⁴¹樣¹⁴²安¹⁴³排¹⁴⁴。○我¹⁴⁵沒¹⁴⁶法¹⁴⁷子¹⁴⁸安¹⁴⁹排¹⁵⁰。○王¹⁵¹世¹⁵²官¹⁵³來¹⁵⁴了¹⁵⁵。○他¹⁵⁶叫¹⁵⁷你¹⁵⁸怎¹⁵⁹麼¹⁶⁰樣¹⁶¹，你¹⁶²就¹⁶³怎¹⁶⁴麼¹⁶⁵樣¹⁶⁶安¹⁶⁷排¹⁶⁸。○我¹⁶⁹沒¹⁷⁰法¹⁷¹子¹⁷²安¹⁷³排¹⁷⁴。○王¹⁷⁵世¹⁷⁶官¹⁷⁷來¹⁷⁸了¹⁷⁹。○他¹⁸⁰叫¹⁸¹你¹⁸²怎¹⁸³麼¹⁸⁴樣¹⁸⁵，你¹⁸⁶就¹⁸⁷怎¹⁸⁸麼¹⁸⁹樣¹⁹⁰安¹⁹¹排¹⁹²。○我¹⁹³沒¹⁹⁴法¹⁹⁵子¹⁹⁶安¹⁹⁷排¹⁹⁸。○王¹⁹⁹世²⁰⁰官²⁰¹來²⁰²了²⁰³。○他²⁰⁴叫²⁰⁵你²⁰⁶怎²⁰⁷麼²⁰⁸樣²⁰⁹，你²¹⁰就²¹¹怎²¹²麼²¹³樣²¹⁴安²¹⁵排²¹⁶。○我²¹⁷沒²¹⁸法²¹⁹子²²⁰安²²¹排²²²。○王²²³世²²⁴官²²⁵來²²⁶了²²⁷。○他²²⁸叫²²⁹你²³⁰怎²³¹麼²³²樣²³³，你²³⁴就²³⁵怎²³⁶麼²³⁷樣²³⁸安²³⁹排²⁴⁰。○我²⁴¹沒²⁴²法²⁴³子²⁴⁴安²⁴⁵排²⁴⁶。○王²⁴⁷世²⁴⁸官²⁴⁹來²⁵⁰了²⁵¹。○他²⁵²叫²⁵³你²⁵⁴怎²⁵⁵麼²⁵⁶樣²⁵⁷，你²⁵⁸就²⁵⁹怎²⁶⁰麼²⁶¹樣²⁶²安²⁶³排²⁶⁴。○我²⁶⁵沒²⁶⁶法²⁶⁷子²⁶⁸安²⁶⁹排²⁷⁰。○王²⁷¹世²⁷²官²⁷³來²⁷⁴了²⁷⁵。○他²⁷⁶叫²⁷⁷你²⁷⁸怎²⁷⁹麼²⁸⁰樣²⁸¹，你²⁸²就²⁸³怎²⁸⁴麼²⁸⁵樣²⁸⁶安²⁸⁷排²⁸⁸。○我²⁸⁹沒²⁹⁰法²⁹¹子²⁹²安²⁹³排²⁹⁴。○王²⁹⁵世²⁹⁶官²⁹⁷來²⁹⁸了²⁹⁹。○他³⁰⁰叫³⁰¹你³⁰²怎³⁰³麼³⁰⁴樣³⁰⁵，你³⁰⁶就³⁰⁷怎³⁰⁸麼³⁰⁹樣³¹⁰安³¹¹排³¹²。○我³¹³沒³¹⁴法³¹⁵子³¹⁶安³¹⁷排³¹⁸。○王³¹⁹世³²⁰官³²¹來³²²了³²³。○他³²⁴叫³²⁵你³²⁶怎³²⁷麼³²⁸樣³²⁹，你³³⁰就³³¹怎³³²麼³³³樣³³⁴安³³⁵排³³⁶。○我³³⁷沒³³⁸法³³⁹子³⁴⁰安³⁴¹排³⁴²。○王³⁴³世³⁴⁴官³⁴⁵來³⁴⁶了³⁴⁷。○他³⁴⁸叫³⁴⁹你³⁵⁰怎³⁵¹麼³⁵²樣³⁵³，你³⁵⁴就³⁵⁵怎³⁵⁶麼³⁵⁷樣³⁵⁸安³⁵⁹排³⁶⁰。○我³⁶¹沒³⁶²法³⁶³子³⁶⁴安³⁶⁵排³⁶⁶。○王³⁶⁷世³⁶⁸官³⁶⁹來³⁷⁰了³⁷¹。○他³⁷²叫³⁷³你³⁷⁴怎³⁷⁵麼³⁷⁶樣³⁷⁷，你³⁷⁸就³⁷⁹怎³⁸⁰麼³⁸¹樣³⁸²安³⁸³排³⁸⁴。○我³⁸⁵沒³⁸⁶法³⁸⁷子³⁸⁸安³⁸⁹排³⁹⁰。○王³⁹¹世³⁹²官³⁹³來³⁹⁴了³⁹⁵。○他³⁹⁶叫³⁹⁷你³⁹⁸怎³⁹⁹麼⁴⁰⁰樣⁴⁰¹，你⁴⁰²就⁴⁰³怎⁴⁰⁴麼⁴⁰⁵樣⁴⁰⁶安⁴⁰⁷排⁴⁰⁸。○我⁴⁰⁹沒⁴¹⁰法⁴¹¹子⁴¹²安⁴¹³排⁴¹⁴。○王⁴¹⁵世⁴¹⁶官⁴¹⁷來⁴¹⁸了⁴¹⁹。○他⁴²⁰叫⁴²¹你⁴²²怎⁴²³麼⁴²⁴樣⁴²⁵，你⁴²⁶就⁴²⁷怎⁴²⁸麼⁴²⁹樣⁴³⁰安⁴³¹排⁴³²。○我⁴³³沒⁴³⁴法⁴³⁵子⁴³⁶安⁴³⁷排⁴³⁸。○王⁴³⁹世⁴⁴⁰官⁴⁴¹來⁴⁴²了⁴⁴³。○他⁴⁴⁴叫⁴⁴⁵你⁴⁴⁶怎⁴⁴⁷麼⁴⁴⁸樣⁴⁴⁹，你⁴⁵⁰就⁴⁵¹怎⁴⁵²麼⁴⁵³樣⁴⁵⁴安⁴⁵⁵排⁴⁵⁶。○我⁴⁵⁷沒⁴⁵⁸法⁴⁵⁹子⁴⁶⁰安⁴⁶¹排⁴⁶²。○王⁴⁶³世⁴⁶⁴官⁴⁶⁵來⁴⁶⁶了⁴⁶⁷。○他⁴⁶⁸叫⁴⁶⁹你⁴⁷⁰怎⁴⁷¹麼⁴⁷²樣⁴⁷³，你⁴⁷⁴就⁴⁷⁵怎⁴⁷⁶麼⁴⁷⁷樣⁴⁷⁸安⁴⁷⁹排⁴⁸⁰。○我⁴⁸¹沒⁴⁸²法⁴⁸³子⁴⁸⁴安⁴⁸⁵排⁴⁸⁶。○王⁴⁸⁷世⁴⁸⁸官⁴⁸⁹來⁴⁹⁰了⁴⁹¹。○他⁴⁹²叫⁴⁹³你⁴⁹⁴怎⁴⁹⁵麼⁴⁹⁶樣⁴⁹⁷，你⁴⁹⁸就⁴⁹⁹怎⁵⁰⁰麼⁵⁰¹樣⁵⁰²安⁵⁰³排⁵⁰⁴。○我⁵⁰⁵沒⁵⁰⁶法⁵⁰⁷子⁵⁰⁸安⁵⁰⁹排⁵¹⁰。○王⁵¹¹世⁵¹²官⁵¹³來⁵¹⁴了⁵¹⁵。○他⁵¹⁶叫⁵¹⁷你⁵¹⁸怎⁵¹⁹麼⁵²⁰樣⁵²¹，你⁵²²就⁵²³怎⁵²⁴麼⁵²⁵樣⁵²⁶安⁵²⁷排⁵²⁸。○我⁵²⁹沒⁵³⁰法⁵³¹子⁵³²安⁵³³排⁵³⁴。○王⁵³⁵世⁵³⁶官⁵³⁷來⁵³⁸了⁵³⁹。○他⁵⁴⁰叫⁵⁴¹你⁵⁴²怎⁵⁴³麼⁵⁴⁴樣⁵⁴⁵，你⁵⁴⁶就⁵⁴⁷怎⁵⁴⁸麼⁵⁴⁹樣⁵⁵⁰安⁵⁵¹排⁵⁵²。○我⁵⁵³沒⁵⁵⁴法⁵⁵⁵子⁵⁵⁶安⁵⁵⁷排⁵⁵⁸。○王⁵⁵⁹世⁵⁶⁰官⁵⁶¹來⁵⁶²了⁵⁶³。○他⁵⁶⁴叫⁵⁶⁵你⁵⁶⁶怎⁵⁶⁷麼⁵⁶⁸樣⁵⁶⁹，你⁵⁷⁰就⁵⁷¹怎⁵⁷²麼⁵⁷³樣⁵⁷⁴安⁵⁷⁵排⁵⁷⁶。○我⁵⁷⁷沒⁵⁷⁸法⁵⁷⁹子⁵⁸⁰安⁵⁸¹排⁵⁸²。○王⁵⁸³世⁵⁸⁴官⁵⁸⁵來⁵⁸⁶了⁵⁸⁷。○他⁵⁸⁸叫⁵⁸⁹你⁵⁹⁰怎⁵⁹¹麼⁵⁹²樣⁵⁹³，你⁵⁹⁴就⁵⁹⁵怎⁵⁹⁶麼⁵⁹⁷樣⁵⁹⁸安⁵⁹⁹排⁶⁰⁰。○我⁶⁰¹沒⁶⁰²法⁶⁰³子⁶⁰⁴安⁶⁰⁵排⁶⁰⁶。○王⁶⁰⁷世⁶⁰⁸官⁶⁰⁹來⁶¹⁰了⁶¹¹。○他⁶¹²叫⁶¹³你⁶¹⁴怎⁶¹⁵麼⁶¹⁶樣⁶¹⁷，你⁶¹⁸就⁶¹⁹怎⁶²⁰麼⁶²¹樣⁶²²安⁶²³排⁶²⁴。○我⁶²⁵沒⁶²⁶法⁶²⁷子⁶²⁸安⁶²⁹排⁶³⁰。○王⁶³¹世⁶³²官⁶³³來⁶³⁴了⁶³⁵。○他⁶³⁶叫⁶³⁷你⁶³⁸怎⁶³⁹麼⁶⁴⁰樣⁶⁴¹，你⁶⁴²就⁶⁴³怎⁶⁴⁴麼⁶⁴⁵樣⁶⁴⁶安⁶⁴⁷排⁶⁴⁸。○我⁶⁴⁹沒⁶⁵⁰法⁶⁵¹子⁶⁵²安⁶⁵³排⁶⁵⁴。○王⁶⁵⁵世⁶⁵⁶官⁶⁵⁷來⁶⁵⁸了⁶⁵⁹。○他⁶⁶⁰叫⁶⁶¹你⁶⁶²怎⁶⁶³麼⁶⁶⁴樣⁶⁶⁵，你⁶⁶⁶就⁶⁶⁷怎⁶⁶⁸麼⁶⁶⁹樣⁶⁷⁰安⁶⁷¹排⁶⁷²。○我⁶⁷³沒⁶⁷⁴法⁶⁷⁵子⁶⁷⁶安⁶⁷⁷排⁶⁷⁸。○王⁶⁷⁹世⁶⁸⁰官⁶⁸¹來⁶⁸²了⁶⁸³。○他⁶⁸⁴叫⁶⁸⁵你⁶⁸⁶怎⁶⁸⁷麼⁶⁸⁸樣⁶⁸⁹，你⁶⁹⁰就⁶⁹¹怎⁶⁹²麼⁶⁹³樣⁶⁹⁴安⁶⁹⁵排⁶⁹⁶。○我⁶⁹⁷沒⁶⁹⁸法⁶⁹⁹子⁷⁰⁰安⁷⁰¹排⁷⁰²。○王⁷⁰³世⁷⁰⁴官⁷⁰⁵來⁷⁰⁶了⁷⁰⁷。○他⁷⁰⁸叫⁷⁰⁹你⁷¹⁰怎⁷¹¹麼⁷¹²樣⁷¹³，你⁷¹⁴就⁷¹⁵怎⁷¹⁶麼⁷¹⁷樣⁷¹⁸安⁷¹⁹排⁷²⁰。○我⁷²¹沒⁷²²法⁷²³子⁷²⁴安⁷²⁵排⁷²⁶。○王⁷²⁷世⁷²⁸官⁷²⁹來⁷³⁰了⁷³¹。○他⁷³²叫⁷³³你⁷³⁴怎⁷³⁵麼⁷³⁶樣⁷³⁷，你⁷³⁸就⁷³⁹怎⁷⁴⁰麼⁷⁴¹樣⁷⁴²安⁷⁴³排⁷⁴⁴。○我⁷⁴⁵沒⁷⁴⁶法⁷⁴⁷子⁷⁴⁸安⁷⁴⁹排⁷⁵⁰。○王⁷⁵¹世⁷⁵²官⁷⁵³來⁷⁵⁴了⁷⁵⁵。○他⁷⁵⁶叫⁷⁵⁷你⁷⁵⁸怎⁷⁵⁹麼⁷⁶⁰樣⁷⁶¹，你⁷⁶²就⁷⁶³怎⁷⁶⁴麼⁷⁶⁵樣⁷⁶⁶安⁷⁶⁷排⁷⁶⁸。○我⁷⁶⁹沒⁷⁷⁰法⁷⁷¹子⁷⁷²安⁷⁷³排⁷⁷⁴。○王⁷⁷⁵世⁷⁷⁶官⁷⁷⁷來⁷⁷⁸了⁷⁷⁹。○他⁷⁸⁰叫⁷⁸¹你⁷⁸²怎⁷⁸³麼⁷⁸⁴樣⁷⁸⁵，你⁷⁸⁶就⁷⁸⁷怎⁷⁸⁸麼⁷⁸⁹樣⁷⁹⁰安⁷⁹¹排⁷⁹²。○我⁷⁹³沒⁷⁹⁴法⁷⁹⁵子⁷⁹⁶安⁷⁹⁷排⁷⁹⁸。○王⁷⁹⁹世⁸⁰⁰官⁸⁰¹來⁸⁰²了⁸⁰³。○他⁸⁰⁴叫⁸⁰⁵你⁸⁰⁶怎⁸⁰⁷麼⁸⁰⁸樣⁸⁰⁹，你⁸¹⁰就⁸¹¹怎⁸¹²麼⁸¹³樣⁸¹⁴安⁸¹⁵排⁸¹⁶。○我⁸¹⁷沒⁸¹⁸法⁸¹⁹子⁸²⁰安⁸²¹排⁸²²。○王⁸²³世⁸²⁴官⁸²⁵來⁸²⁶了⁸²⁷。○他⁸²⁸叫⁸²⁹你⁸³⁰怎⁸³¹麼⁸³²樣⁸³³，你⁸³⁴就⁸³⁵怎⁸³⁶麼⁸³⁷樣⁸³⁸安⁸³⁹排⁸⁴⁰。○我⁸⁴¹沒⁸⁴²法⁸⁴³子⁸⁴⁴安⁸⁴⁵排⁸⁴⁶。○王⁸⁴⁷世⁸⁴⁸官⁸⁴⁹來⁸⁵⁰了⁸⁵¹。○他⁸⁵²叫⁸⁵³你⁸⁵⁴怎⁸⁵⁵麼⁸⁵⁶樣⁸⁵⁷，你⁸⁵⁸就⁸⁵⁹怎⁸⁶⁰麼⁸⁶¹樣⁸⁶²安⁸⁶³排⁸⁶⁴。○我⁸⁶⁵沒⁸⁶⁶法⁸⁶⁷子⁸⁶⁸安⁸⁶⁹排⁸⁷⁰。○王⁸⁷¹世⁸⁷²官⁸⁷³來⁸⁷⁴了⁸⁷⁵。○他⁸⁷⁶叫⁸⁷⁷你⁸⁷⁸怎⁸⁷⁹麼⁸⁸⁰樣⁸⁸¹，你⁸⁸²就⁸⁸³怎⁸⁸⁴麼⁸⁸⁵樣⁸⁸⁶安⁸⁸⁷排⁸⁸⁸。○我⁸⁸⁹沒⁸⁹⁰法⁸⁹¹子⁸⁹²安⁸⁹³排⁸⁹⁴。○王⁸⁹⁵世⁸⁹⁶官⁸⁹⁷來⁸⁹⁸了⁸⁹⁹。○他⁹⁰⁰叫⁹⁰¹你⁹⁰²怎⁹⁰³麼⁹⁰⁴樣⁹⁰⁵，你⁹⁰⁶就⁹⁰⁷怎⁹⁰⁸麼⁹⁰⁹樣⁹¹⁰安⁹¹¹排⁹¹²。○我⁹¹³沒⁹¹⁴法⁹¹⁵子⁹¹⁶安⁹¹⁷排⁹¹⁸。○王⁹¹⁹世⁹²⁰官⁹²¹來⁹²²了⁹²³。○他⁹²⁴叫⁹²⁵你⁹²⁶怎⁹²⁷麼⁹²⁸樣⁹²⁹，你⁹³⁰就⁹³¹怎⁹³²麼⁹³³樣⁹³⁴安⁹³⁵排⁹³⁶。○我⁹³⁷沒⁹³⁸法⁹³⁹子⁹⁴⁰安⁹⁴¹排⁹⁴²。○王⁹⁴³世⁹⁴⁴官⁹⁴⁵來⁹⁴⁶了⁹⁴⁷。○他⁹⁴⁸叫⁹⁴⁹你⁹⁵⁰怎⁹⁵¹麼⁹⁵²樣⁹⁵³，你⁹⁵⁴就⁹⁵⁵怎⁹⁵⁶麼⁹⁵⁷樣⁹⁵⁸安⁹⁵⁹排⁹⁶⁰。○我⁹⁶¹沒⁹⁶²法⁹⁶³子⁹⁶⁴安⁹⁶⁵排⁹⁶⁶。○王⁹⁶⁷世⁹⁶⁸官⁹⁶⁹來⁹⁷⁰了⁹⁷¹。○他⁹⁷²叫⁹⁷³你⁹⁷⁴怎⁹⁷⁵麼⁹⁷⁶樣⁹⁷⁷，你⁹⁷⁸就⁹⁷⁹怎⁹⁸⁰麼⁹⁸¹樣⁹⁸²安⁹⁸³排⁹⁸⁴。○我⁹⁸⁵沒⁹⁸⁶法⁹⁸⁷子⁹⁸⁸安⁹⁸⁹排⁹⁹⁰。○王⁹⁹¹世⁹⁹²官⁹⁹³來⁹⁹⁴了⁹⁹⁵。○他⁹⁹⁶叫⁹⁹⁷你⁹⁹⁸怎⁹⁹⁹麼¹⁰⁰⁰樣¹⁰⁰¹，你¹⁰⁰²就¹⁰⁰³怎¹⁰⁰⁴麼¹⁰⁰⁵樣¹⁰⁰⁶安¹⁰⁰⁷排¹⁰⁰⁸。○我¹⁰⁰⁹沒¹⁰¹⁰法¹⁰¹¹子¹⁰¹²安¹⁰¹³排¹⁰¹⁴。○王¹⁰¹⁵世¹⁰¹⁶官¹⁰¹⁷來¹⁰¹⁸了¹⁰¹⁹。○他¹⁰²⁰叫¹⁰²¹你¹⁰²²怎¹⁰²³麼¹⁰²⁴樣¹⁰²⁵，你¹⁰²⁶就¹⁰²⁷怎¹⁰²⁸麼¹⁰²⁹樣¹⁰³⁰安¹⁰³¹排¹⁰³²。○我¹⁰³³沒¹⁰³⁴法¹⁰³⁵子¹⁰³⁶安¹⁰³⁷排¹⁰³⁸。○王¹⁰³⁹世¹⁰⁴⁰官¹⁰⁴¹來¹⁰⁴²了¹⁰⁴³。○他¹⁰⁴⁴叫¹⁰⁴⁵你¹⁰⁴⁶怎¹⁰⁴⁷麼¹⁰⁴⁸樣¹⁰⁴⁹，你¹⁰⁵⁰就¹⁰⁵¹怎¹⁰⁵²麼¹⁰⁵³樣¹⁰⁵⁴安¹⁰⁵⁵排¹⁰⁵⁶。○我¹⁰⁵⁷沒¹⁰⁵⁸法¹⁰⁵⁹子¹⁰⁶⁰安¹⁰⁶¹排¹⁰⁶²。○王¹⁰⁶³世¹⁰⁶⁴官¹⁰⁶⁵來¹⁰⁶⁶了¹⁰⁶⁷。○他¹⁰⁶⁸叫¹⁰⁶⁹你¹⁰⁷⁰怎¹⁰⁷¹麼¹⁰⁷²樣¹⁰⁷³，你¹⁰⁷⁴就¹⁰⁷⁵怎¹⁰⁷⁶麼¹⁰⁷⁷樣¹⁰⁷⁸安¹⁰⁷⁹排¹⁰⁸⁰。○我¹⁰⁸¹沒¹⁰⁸²法¹⁰⁸³子¹⁰⁸⁴安¹⁰⁸⁵排¹⁰⁸⁶。○王¹⁰⁸⁷世¹⁰⁸⁸官¹⁰⁸⁹來¹⁰⁹⁰了¹⁰⁹¹。○他¹⁰⁹²叫¹⁰⁹³你¹⁰⁹⁴怎¹⁰⁹⁵麼¹⁰⁹⁶樣¹⁰⁹⁷，你¹⁰⁹⁸就¹⁰⁹⁹怎¹¹⁰⁰麼¹¹⁰¹樣¹¹⁰²安¹¹⁰³排¹¹⁰⁴。○我¹¹⁰⁵沒¹¹⁰⁶法¹¹⁰⁷子¹¹⁰⁸安¹¹⁰⁹排¹¹¹⁰。○王¹¹¹¹世¹¹¹²官¹¹¹³來¹¹¹⁴了¹¹¹⁵。○他¹¹¹⁶叫¹¹¹⁷你¹¹¹⁸怎¹¹¹⁹麼¹¹²⁰樣¹¹²¹，你¹¹²²就¹¹²³怎¹¹²⁴麼¹¹²⁵樣¹¹²⁶安¹¹²⁷排¹¹²⁸。○我¹¹²⁹沒¹¹³⁰法¹¹³¹子¹¹³²安¹¹³³排¹¹³⁴。○王¹¹³⁵世¹¹³⁶官¹¹³⁷來¹¹³⁸了¹¹³⁹。○他¹¹⁴⁰叫¹¹⁴¹你¹¹⁴²怎¹¹⁴³麼¹¹⁴⁴樣¹¹⁴⁵，你¹¹⁴⁶就¹¹⁴⁷怎¹¹⁴⁸麼¹¹⁴⁹樣¹¹⁵⁰安¹¹⁵¹排¹¹⁵²。○我¹¹⁵³沒¹¹⁵⁴法¹¹⁵⁵子¹¹⁵⁶安¹¹⁵⁷排¹¹⁵⁸。○王¹¹⁵⁹世¹¹⁶⁰官¹¹⁶¹來¹¹⁶²了¹¹⁶³。○他¹¹⁶⁴叫¹¹⁶⁵你¹¹⁶⁶怎¹¹⁶⁷麼¹¹⁶⁸樣¹¹⁶⁹，你¹¹⁷⁰就¹¹⁷¹怎¹¹⁷²麼¹¹⁷³樣¹¹⁷⁴安¹¹⁷⁵

這他。到²³他²²他²¹一教受舒要一點
 樣○如²⁴今臉²²上我教一點莫非鴉被受舒仔
 聰○是²⁴沒見有殺氣威,我也給使實兒子的本分。○¹⁸叫¹⁸恨。
 明。○上²⁵天觸動你的靈機,教²⁰他¹⁹們
 ○我的父²⁵母也,叫請師師母娘你
 ○我的父²⁵母也,叫請師師母娘你
 ○我的父²⁵母也,叫請師師母娘你
 ○我的父²⁵母也,叫請師師母娘你

- 15 So many have come that I have no way of providing for them.
- 16 Wang Shi Kwan has no legitimate business at all. He is truly a detestable fellow.
- 17 You must tell her carefully so as to relieve her mind.
- 18 Only by making your father and mother comfortable for a season will you be discharging your duties as a son.
- 19 I certainly cannot allow myself to be wronged by you in this fashion.
- 20 Give him a little morphia to make him sleep, and he will be all right.
- 21 He made me feel badly, and I'll take care that he doesn't get much comfort.
- 22 He had a severe (murderous) expression on his face so that whoever looked at him felt afraid.
- 23 Up to this time I have had no answer [to my letter] so that I cannot help feeling anxious about him.

靈 *Ling*². The spiritual part, spirit; ethereal, intelligent; efficacious; powerful.
 靈機 *Ling*² *chi*¹. The "intelligent machine," the mind, the springs of thought; the faculties.
 惦 *Tien*⁴. To think of, to remember.
 惦記 *Tien*⁴ *chi*⁴. To think of, to call to mind, to bear in remembrance.
 扛 *K'ang*². To carry on the shoulder; to withstand, to sustain, to bear.
 杠 *Kang*⁴. A pole, a cross bar, a lever.
 詳 *Hsiang*². To examine; to discourse upon; minutely, in detail.
 詳細 *Hsiang*² *hsi*⁴. Carefully, minutely, in detail; trusty, reliable.
 臊 *Sao*⁴. Bashful, ashamed. Also *sao*¹.
 害臊 *Hai*⁴ *sao*⁴. Ashamed, mortified.
 害羞 *Hai*⁴ *hsiu*¹. Put to the blush, ashamed, mortified.
 蘭 *Lan*². Orchideous plants; joyous, delightful; adopted.
 褥 *Ju*⁴. A mattress, a cushion, a rug.
 安歇 *An*¹ *hsie*¹. To rest, to go to rest, to sleep.
 均 *Chün*¹. In equal parts, just, even; all, altogether; to adjust.
 勻 *Yün*². Equal, even; a little; to divide equally.
 均勻. Alike, equal, uniform, even; seasonable.

拈 *Nien*². To take in the fingers, to pick up, to draw,—as a lot.
 闖 *Chiu*¹. A lot, a cut, a ticket.
 拈闖. To cast lots, to draw cuts.
 碰命兒 *P'eng*⁴ *ming*⁴ *ér*². To run the risk, to take one's chance.
 命兒攤 *Ming*⁴ *ér*² *t'an*¹. Same.
 運氣 *Yün*⁴ *ch'i*⁴. Chance, luck, fortune, lot, fate.
 遺 *I*². To will, to bequeath; to leave behind, to forget, to neglect; surplus.
 遺命 *I*² *ming*⁴. Dying commands, a will, a testament.
 長孫 *Chang*⁸ *sun*¹. The eldest son or grandson.
 效 *Hsiao*⁴. To imitate, to copy; to verify; effect, efficacy; result.
 功效 *Kung*¹ *hsiao*⁴. Efficacy, effect, result; merit.
 變化 *Pien*⁴ *hwa*⁴. To change, to transform.
 吉 *Chi*². Fortunate, auspicious; prosperous.
 吉利 *Chi*² *li*¹. Auspicious, lucky, propitious, hopeful.
 喪 *Sang*⁴. To lose; to be bereft of; forgotten, lost; to die; to rain; unlucky, baneful. Also *sang*¹.
 喪門 *Sang*¹ *mên*². Unlucky, ill-omened:—Note (35.)

2-03

他一句不說，淨說一些喪門話，叫人不自願聽。

功效就是能變化人心，使得人改惡為善。○吉利話，

留的遺命，叫除出三畝地，給長孫。○耶穌的大

均勻，可以拈圖，憑他十畝地，給長孫。○耶穌的大

了話，戶蘭給他鋪上褥子，叫他安歇。○我若實在分不

○這³⁰件事實在難，叫我一點主意沒有。○二³¹人說完

叫³⁰你害羞。○背²⁹着人拿東西，不給人知道，這就是偷。

他慢慢聽，就明白了。○我打你，不是要叫疼，是要

怎麼扛了一根杠子來呢。○請²⁷先生詳細一點講，

安好。答謝，叫他們惦記着。○我²⁶叫你去找一根扁擔，

24 It is Heaven which has quickened your faculties so that you have this wisdom.

25 My father and mother, also, send their kind regards. Ans. Thank you. They are very thoughtful.

26 I sent you to get a pien-tan, how is it that you come carrying a kang-tsi?

27 Please explain it in detail, and let him hear it step by step, and he will understand.

28 I whip you, not to make you suffer pain, but that you may be ashamed.

29 Stealing is the taking of people's things behind their backs and without their knowledge.

30 This is a very embarrassing affair. I haven't the least idea what to do.

31 When the two were done talking, Hu Lan spread mattresses for them, and bade them [lie down to] rest.

32 If you positively cannot divide it evenly, you may draw cuts and let each one take his chance.

33 Just before his death, my father made a will directing that thirty mow of land be set apart for his eldest grandson.

34 The chief effect of Christianity is that it is able to change the heart, causing men to turn from evil and become virtuous.

35 He did not speak one auspicious word, but just a lot of ill omened talk which we were loth to hear.

NOTES.

2 The southern form 許, is entirely t'ung hsing and in very common use. It is a little stronger than the other form, differing from it much as permit does from allow. See Les. 130.

3 This sentence might also mean, I will not cause you to suffer loss. The meaning intended will depend on the connection.

5 一早, one early, is emphatic. It means very early, or as early as the circumstances will permit.

7 Kitchen is put by metonymy for cook. This is a common idiom; thus heaven (天) for God, audience hall (朝廷) for Emperor, learning court (學院) for examiner, etc.

13 受用 may also be used in the North.

19 Lit. Your causing me to suffer wrong in this way, will certainly not go down.

22 殺威 is more or less local. 殺氣 is more general, and its meaning is much stronger.

26 A 扁擔 is a pole for one person to carry over the shoulder with burdens suspended from the ends; the 杠子 is a pole for two persons to carry a burden suspended between them.

32 拈圖 is the book form, while in the North 抓圖 is the form commonly used. They differ in meaning, much as "cast lots" differs from "draw cuts." The latter part of the sentence expresses a very common idea, yet I found it impossible to get two teachers from different places to agree as to how to say it. 碰命兒 is the Peking form, 命兒攤 is the Shantung form, while the Nanking teacher rejected both and recast the whole clause.

33 遺命 is a book expression. There is no legal provision in China for either making or executing a will. The case referred to here was probably nothing more than verbal directions.

35 According to the meaning here used 喪 should be read Sang⁴, it is, however, generally read Sang¹.

課 二 十 七 第

LESSON LXXII.

我¹² ○ ○ 短 婆 母 殷 走⁴ 兒 你¹
 常 說¹¹ ○ 這¹⁰ 喇。 家 是 勤 的 時 節 看 你。 整 成
 想 了 個 人。 他⁹ ○ 沒 有。 是 個 財 事 奉 兩 個 老 人 家。 ○ 他³ 天 家 作 甚 麼。
 着 半 天 叫 大 家 夥 兒 時 家 的 錢 舌 頭 就 有 姨 姨 要 ○
 做 買 賣 就 是 個 內 行 家 嗎。 ○
 就 是 個 內 行 家 嗎。 ○

- 1 What are you all the time doing?
- 2 Everybody looks coldly upon you.
- 3 They two are sworn relatives.
- 4 When you go, do not forget to lock the door.
- 5 You ought to minister diligently to the old folks.
- 6 Her second maternal aunt is wealthy.
- 7 Is your oldest daughter betrothed?
- 8 When you owe a man, your tongue is short.
- 9 They two were school mates when they were young.
- 10 None [of us] can put up with this fellow.
- 11 After all this talk you turn out to be an expert, eh!
- 12 I have been waiting this long time to go into business, but cannot find a monied partner.

LESSON LXXII.

THE ENCLITIC 家.

The character 家 is added to certain words for the purpose of merging the individual in the family or class, thus generalizing them. It is added to man, woman, and to all terms denoting family

relationships, to various offices, to time, etc. It may be compared to "kind" used as a suffix in such words as mankind, womankind, etc.; but is by no means equivalent to it.

VOCABULARY.

成 天 家 *Ch'êng² t'ien¹ chia¹*. Continually, all the time:—Les. 120.
 整 天 家 *Chêng³ t'ien¹ chia¹*. Same:—Note. (1).
 親 *Ch'ing⁴*. A relative by marriage:—Note. (3). See *ch'in¹*.
 親 家 *Ch'ing⁴ chia¹*. A relative by marriage.
 乾 親 家 *Kan¹ ch'ing⁴ chia¹*. A relative by adoption:—Note. (3).
 人 家 *Jên² chia¹*. Others in contrast with oneself, other people; everybody; the person referred to.
 冷 眼 *Lêng³ yen³*. To look on with displeasure, to look coldly at, askance.
 時 節 *Shi² chie²*. A time, the time at which, a period of time.
 時 家 *Shi² chia¹*. Same:—Note. (4.)
 殷 *Yin¹*. Abundant, full; particular; diligent.
 殷 勤 *Yin¹ ch'in²*. Diligent, attentive.

奉 *Fêng⁴*. To receive respectfully; to deliver to; to reverence; to serve; obediently.
 事 奉 *Shi⁴ fêng⁴*. To wait upon, to serve, to minister to.
 姨 *I²*. A mother's sister, a maternal aunt.
 姨 母 *I² mu³*. Same.
 婆 家 *P'oa² chia¹*. Mother-in-law, mother-in-law's family.
 大 家 夥 *Ta⁴ chia¹ huoa²*. The whole company, all concerned. (L.)
 行 家 *Hang² chia¹*. One skilled in any art, an expert.
 內 行 *Nei³ hang²*. Versed in the secrets of a business or art, expert.
 搶 嘴 *Ch'iang³ tsui³*. Forward to talk, impertinent, unmannerly.
 搶 頭 *Ch'iang³ t'ou²*. Same.
 搶 先 *Ch'iang³ hsien¹*. Same. (s.)

正 嫌 素 說 穿 話 不 搶 私 東
 月 人 來 話 也 來 覺 先 的 家
 初 人 不 話 得 實 頭 的 家
 三 家 該 都 也 實 先 的 家
 日 好 不 話 得 實 頭 的 家
 都 歹 該 都 也 實 頭 的 家
 上 佔 人 家 的 不 可 胡 說 亂 道 的 替 人 家
 丈 人 家 的 不 可 胡 說 亂 道 的 替 人 家
 人 家 便 宜 的 不 可 胡 說 亂 道 的 替 人 家
 去 拜 年 女 姑 爺 不 可 胡 說 亂 道 的 替 人 家
 拜 年 女 姑 爺 不 可 胡 說 亂 道 的 替 人 家
 人 到 可 我 家

- 13 At the present time official business has also come to be half legitimate and half illicit.
- 14 How is it that a mere child puts in his talk in such an unmannerly way?
- 15 Everybody detests him, but he does not, in the least, realize it.
- 16 I tell you it tries one's patience, when a full grown man can't get a sentence out in a whole half day.
- 17 It will not do for women to think only of food and dress, they should also help their husbands to get along in life.
- 18 When you speak for others, you should speak the truth, and not talk recklessly.
- 19 It is not my custom to be in debt, nor to be in arrears to any man.
- 20 You should not find fault with people, nor sponge off them.
- 21 On the third of the first month every new son-in-law goes to visit his wife's relatives to pay his respects.

男子漢 *Nan³ tsi³ han⁴*. A man as distinguished from a woman, a man with decided masculine qualities.

婦道家 *Fu⁴ tao⁴ chia¹*. . . . Women, females.

承 *Ch'eng²*. To receive; to undertake; to assist; to contest, to compete; to support, to uphold; to open up; to succeed, second to.

胡說巴道 *Hu² shwo¹ pa⁴ tao⁴*. To talk wildly or recklessly.

胡說亂道 *Hu² shwo¹ lan⁴ tao⁴*. . . . Same.

素來 *Su⁴ lai²*. Heretofore; commonly, customarily.

新女婿 *Hsin¹ nü³ hsu⁴*. . . . A bridegroom.

新姑爺 *Hsin¹ ku¹ yie²*. . . . A bridegroom.

丈人 *Ohang⁴ jên²*. . . . Father-in-law.

拜年 *Pai⁴ nien²*. To pay one's respects at the New Year.

子弟 *Tsi³ ti⁴*. Sons and younger brothers; young people of the family:—Note. (22.)

讎 *Ch'ou²*. . . . Same as 仇.

冤 *Yuan¹*. To oppress, to wrong; injustice, wrong.

冤家 *Yuan¹ chia¹*. One from whom wrong has been received, an enemy.

搬家 *Pan¹ chia¹*. A household-moving, to flit, to migrate.

檢 *Chien³*. To sort, to collate; to examine; to compose; to pick up.

管家 *Kwan³ chia¹*. . . . A head-man, a steward.

檢點 *Chien³ tien³*. To look over carefully, to count over; to oversee.

綠 *Lü⁴, lu⁴*. . . . Green, the color of leaves.

說白道綠 *Shwo¹ pai² tao⁴ lü⁴*. To discuss people's characters, to gossip, to defame.

說白道黑 *Shwo¹ pai² tao⁴ hei¹*. Same:—Note (25.)

結親 *Chie² ch'in¹*. To make a marriage alliance.

娘家 *Niang² chia¹*. A married woman's mother's family.

乳 *Ju³*. . . . Milk; the breasts; to suck; to suckle.

乳名 *Ju³ ming²*. . . . A pet name:—Note. (27.)

叫作 *Chiao⁴ tso⁴*. . . . Named, called.

蓮勾 *Lien²*. . . . The lotus,—consecrated to Buddha.

勾 *Kou¹*. To mark off and reject; to entice, to inveigle; to hook on, to connect by a hook; the short side of a right-angled triangle.

一筆勾消 *I¹ pi³ kou¹ hsiao¹*. To erase by a stroke of the pen, to strike out; to ignore.

薙 *Ti⁴*. . . . To shave the head.

尙 *Shang⁴*. To esteem, to honor; to control; still, furthermore, yet.

和尚 *Ho² shang⁴*. A Buddhist priest. Read *ho² ch'ang⁴* in some places.

一蓮。娘兒的。那派張○家
 筆○家配許○那裏幾張○他²³家
 勾從²⁸姓給○我²⁶張個老子上。他²³們
 消前李、他和他兒、子、管○是子
 如今待我的子、結、李、家、大²⁴冤
 和我他小乳、很親、家、檢、點、大
 成了他的名、對、作、親、說、○人
 冤他好、叫、心、家、白、他²⁵家
 家算李翠我²⁷女黑綠在必一弟。

- 22 The prosperity of a family depends on the rising generation, and, also, the decadence of a family proceeds from them.
- 23 They two are enemies, and must not be invited to sit at the same table.
- 24 When wealthy families move, they always appoint several old stewards to oversee.
- 25 He is over there criticising this one and that one, defaming people's characters.
- 26 For me to contract a marriage alliance with him, giving my daughter to his son, suits my wishes exactly.
- 27 My mother's name was Li, and my little name was Li Ts'ui Lien.
- 28 He wholly ignores all my former kindness, and has now become my enemy.

出家 *Ch'u¹ chia¹*. To take a vow of celibacy, to enter the priesthood.
 僧 *Séng¹*..... A Buddhist priest; a lama.
 僧家 *Séng¹ chia¹*. Priests, the Buddhist priest- hood.
 俗家 *Su² chia¹*..... The laity, the world.
 誼 *I²*. That which is right, proper or fit, friend- ship, acquaintance.
 情誼 *Ch'ing² i²*..... Favor, kindness.

獎賞 *Chiang³ shang³*. Reward, prize, emolument.
 國家 *Kwoi² chia¹*..... State, country.
 政 *Chéng⁴*..... To rule, government, laws.
 儒家 *Ju²*..... Scholars, literati, the learned.
 儒家 *Ju² chia¹*. The learned class, Confucianists, the literati.
 欲 *Yü⁴*. To wish for, to long for; aspiration, hopes; lust, appetite, passion.

NOTES.

1 成天家, or 整天家. Both forms of this much used phrase are regarded as correct. In some places the aspirated form is chiefly used, and in some places the un-aspirated. In some places, both North and South, 成天 is frequently used without the 家, and, in the North especially, the is often substituted for 家. See Les. 108. Sub.

3 親 is read Ch'ing⁴ only when followed by 家. 乾親家 *Dry relatives*; i.e., relatives not really such, but made such by adoption. The Chinese practice a species of adoption in the case of brothers and sisters, also parents and children. It is simply a mutual choice, accompanied by the giving of presents, and implying a promise or vow of mutual faithfulness. The vow is sometimes formally expressed, and ratified by a feast. When a member of one family enters into such a relationship with a member of another family, the two families become 乾親家.

4 時家 though not often used in the South, is readily understood. In the North it is more used in some places than in others. It may be applied to any verb or noun indicating time. Where not used, 時節 takes its place, but requires a 的 before it, which the 時家 does not. The construction of 了 is, Do not forget to have locked the door.

5 老人家 is a respectful way of referring to any one's parents. It is also used as a term of respect when addressing any elderly person (30).

6 This sentence might with equal propriety, and without perceptible change of meaning, be given 他二姨家是財主.

7 Lit. Has your eldest daughter a mother-in-law.

10 這個人 is used emphatically, and expresses a shade of contempt. 大家夥兒, all the persons concerned, is much used in some places, but is not t'ung hsing.

11 行家 One thoroughly versed in any business, art, or profession, an expert. The conversation had disclosed what the speaker had not previously suspected, viz., that the party addressed was an expert.

17 承吃承穿 Receive food and receive dress, that is receiving all and doing nothing, only thinking of food and dress.

22 子弟 Sons and younger brothers, including also their sons—a general term including all of the family younger than oneself, but primarily supposed to be used by the eldest brother, who is regarded as the head of the family.

23 讓 means properly to yield or give place to, hence as used by the host with reference to guests, it means to seat or place at table.

24 大戶人家 A family with a large doorway, that is a large and wealthy family.

25 張家長李家短, etc., 說, must be supplied. 張 and 李 being very common names are used at large for

都是功的 是獎³¹情 叫爲 出 了。
 是夫功 皇賞 誼 你俗 家。 自
 清是夫 上的 是 叫老 家。 稱²⁹
 心煉是 的國 我人 〇 稱頭
 寡氣養 恩家 怎家 爲³⁰ 爲當
 欲養氣 典的 麼家 受爲 僧和
 的氣道 〇善 報驚 的我的 家向
 意煉家 儒³²政 呢。 這事 稱就
 思氣的家 也 〇 個情 人 叫

- 29 To shave the head and become a Buddhist priest is called, "leaving the family." They call themselves the priesthood, and call others the world.
- 30 That you, good sir, should be worried on account of my affairs, is a favor I am wholly unable to requite.
- 31 Honors and emoluments promote the good government of the country, and are, at the same time, an expression of imperial favor.
- 32 The effort of Confucianism is to nourish the vital principle; the effort of Taoism is to refine the vital principle; both aim at purifying the heart and diminishing the appetites.

any one, as we say Jones and Brown. It is not easy to see why 黑 should not always be used, yet 緣 is used in many places. 道 is used in the sense of 說.

27 小名 is the colloquial, 乳名 is the book form. 29 Buddhist priests shave the entire head, and in this respect differ from Taoist priests, some of whom (those who marry) wear the hair as other Chinese do, others (those who do not marry) allow all the hair to grow, and wear it in a kuot on the top of the head. Buddhist priests are not allowed to marry, hence the phrase 出家.

32 氣 refers here to the divine essence which is held to constitute the soul, and of which the physical breath is the emblem and vehicle. This divine essence, or vital principle, the Confucianist regards as good, and seeks to *nourish* and preserve it as the path to virtue and longevity. The Taoist regards it as evil, especially as being corrupted by association with the body, and seeks to *purify* and refine it, as the passport to immortality. 清心寡欲 is a ready-made book phrase. 清 and 寡 are to be taken as verbs.

LESSON LXXIII.

發 EXPRESSING DEVELOPMENT.

發 To send forth,—is joined with many words to express the idea of becoming, developing, etc. It is especially joined to such words as express qualities perceived by the senses. It may often be rendered by *become*, or *grow*, or *get*. In many cases English affords no exact equivalent.

- 發黃 To be or become yellow.
- 發家 To enrich one's family:—Note (2).
- 發財 To make money, to get or grow rich.
- 發亮 To appear lustrous, to shine.
- 發紅 To be or become red, to grow red.
- 發壞 To become addicted to vicious practices, to develop a vicious character; to spoil, to ferment.
- 發亂 To become confused, to be in a state of confusion.
- 發狂 To become or grow reckless, or violent.
- 發瘋 To suffer an attack of convulsions, to be subject to fits.
- 發怯 To be or become timorous, to give way to fear.

發怒 To become or grow angry, to get in a passion.

發軟弱 To become or grow weak, to betray weakness.

發誓 To take an oath, to swear.

發笨 To become stiff, to grow clumsy.

發花 To become or grow dim or indistinct (of the eyes).

發慌 To become excited or confused, to grow nervous.

發悶 To feel gloomy; to have a sense of distress or uneasiness.

發利害 To grow severe; to become unruly; to storm, to make an ado.

發威 To become violent, to rage; to assume an air of authority and anger.

發硬 To become hard; to grow stiff.

發僵 To be or become obstinate; to grow stiff, to be clumsy.

課 三 十 七 第

LESSON LXXIII.

要 瘋 外 人、事 壞 說⁵ 財。發 家 你¹
 害發 死 財 最 多、的 起 ○ 家。的
 怕怯。了。不 容 心 地 來、好⁴ ○ 舌
 ○ ○ 發。易 裏 方、他 墨 ○ 這³
 有¹²該¹¹ ○ 發 發 沒 臉 寫 樣 發
 人 大 我¹⁰ 狂。亂。有 上 的 買 黃。
 發 起 的 ○ ○ 我。發 字 賣、○
 怒、膽 外 人⁹ 年⁸ ○ 紅。發 不 外²
 就 來、甥、不 輕 他⁷ ○ 亮。能 財
 和 不 發 抽 得 的 的 發⁶ ○ 發 不

- 1 Your tongue is yellow.
- 2 Illegitimate gains do not advance a man's estate.
- 3 It is impossible to get rich at this kind of business.
- 4 Writing done with good ink, shows a lustre. [red.]
- 5 When you speak of it, his face grows
- 6 I am free from vicious practices.
- 7 His mind is confused with the multitude of his affairs.
- 8 It is very easy for the young to become reckless.
- 9 Without illegitimate gain, no one gets rich.
- 10 My nephew died of epilepsy.
- 11 You should brace up your courage, and not yield to fear.

發 虛 To feel languid or exhausted.
 發 現 To become manifest; to be aroused or awakened (of conscience).
 發 飽 To have a feeling of distention or fullness, flatulence.
 作 飽 The same:—Note (24).
 發 酸 或 作 酸 To be or become sour; to have a sour taste.
 發 涼 To become cold, to feel cold.
 發 心 口 疼 To have or suffer an attack of dyspepsia or indigestion.
 發 冷 To seem or feel cold:—Note (26).
 發 暈 或 作 暈 To be or become or feel dizzy.
 發 乾 或 作 乾 To be or become or feel dry.

發 慈 悲 To be compassionate, to show pity, to be moved with a feeling of compassion.
 發 驕 傲 To be or become or grow proud.
 發 瘧 子 或 發 瘧 疾 To have or suffer from the ague.
 發 熱 To be or feel hot or feverish.
 發 麻 To become or feel numb.
 發 糊 塗 To become foolish or silly; to be stupefied; to become bewildered.
 發 齶 To wheeze, to be asthmatic.
 發 脹 To be distended, to feel a sense of fullness.
 發 板 To be or feel stiff; to be or grow intractable.
 For further list of words joined with 發, see supplement.

VOCABULARY.

外 財 *Wai⁴ ts'ai³*. Illegitimate gain; money acquired by a stroke of good fortune.
 甥 *Shêng¹*. Relatives of a different surname.
 外 甥 *Wai⁴ shêng¹*. The children of one's own sisters and wife's sisters.
 抽 瘋 *Ch'ou¹ fêng¹*. To fall in an epileptic fit, attacked by convulsions.
 酵 *Chiao⁴*. Yeast, leaven.
 發 酵 *Fa¹ chiao⁴*. To raise, to ferment; baking powder, bicarbonate of soda.

蘇 打 *Su¹ ta³*. Bicarbonate of soda.
 誓 *Shi⁴*. To take an oath; a vow, an oath.
 慌 *Hwang¹*. Hurried, nervous, frightened; to move unsteadily, to wobble.
 消 停 *Hsiao¹ t'ing²*. To do leisurely, to do at one's ease or convenience.
 發 作 *Fa¹ tsou⁴*. To get in a passion, to storm; to inflame and swell, to become acute:—Note (20).
 冬 天 *Tung¹ t'ien¹*. Winter, the winter season.
 難 以 *Nan³ i³*. Hard, difficult.

新 作 發 現、 這 他 停 發 ○ 上 猛
 娘 媳 飽。 覺 樣 是 着 笨、 先¹⁶ 一 獸
 子 婦 ○ 得 發 是 不 做 眼 生 點 一
 發 害 嘴²⁵ 罪 虛、 能 罷。 睛 不 發 蘇 樣。
 心 裏 重。 該 怕 的。 ○ 也 要 酵 打。 ○
 口 作 發 ○ 吃 的。 我¹⁹ 發 信 ○ 這¹³
 疼、 酸 酸 你²⁴ 一 ○ 我 這 花。 他、 你¹⁵ 一
 手 不 酸 酸 肚 一 點 冬²¹ 兩 ○ 他 若 回
 脚 作 不 子 補 天 天、 到¹⁸ 發 不 的
 都 酸、 作 發 藥 天 人 心 了 發 誓 不 發 的 饅 頭、
 發 答 飽 纔 手 裏 發 發 場 裏、 沒 發 好。
 了 嘴 不 飽 好。 ○ 僵 硬、 悶。 不 要 發 好。
 冷 涼、 裏 作 不 ○ 難 ○ 不 發 慌、 人¹⁷ 有 ○
 ○ 常 飽、 我²³ 以 不 發 作 起 來、
 睡 躺²⁷ 作 發 答 那 以 不 發 作 起 來、
 了 酸。 天 時 寫 字。 ○ 威 害
 這 ○ 天 良 心 ○ 你²²
 些 昨²⁶ 夜 心 ○ 你²²
 日 天 裏 發 你²²

- 12 Some men when they get angry, are like wild beasts.
- 13 The bread, this time, did not rise well.
- 14 You may add a little more soda.
- 15 If you had betrayed no weakness, there would have been none of these things.
- 16 Do not believe him, sir, the oath he takes is false.
- 17 When a man is old, his hands and feet become stiff, and his eyes, dim.
- 18 When you reach the examination hall, do not get nervous, but write [your essay] at your ease.
- 19 I am feeling gloomy these few days.
- 20 If you do not storm, he will not be afraid.
- 21 In the winter one's hands grow stiff, so that writing becomes difficult.
- 22 In this exhausted condition, it would be well for you to take a little tonic.
- 23 At that time my conscience was aroused, and I felt the weight of my sins.
- 24 Does your belly feel distended? Ans. It feels so every night.
- 25 Do you have a sour taste in your mouth. Ans. I constantly have a sour taste in my mouth.
- 26 Yesterday the bride had a pain in her stomach, so that both her hands and feet became cold.

酸 *Swan*¹. Sour, acid; irritating, grieved; aching
 from over exertion.
 暈 *Yün*⁴. A halo; foggy; obscure; dizzy.
 慈 *Ts'i*². Maternal affection; kindness, tender-
 ness, mercy.
 慈悲 *Ts'i*² *pei*¹. Compassion, forbearance, mercy.
 救主 *Chiu*⁴ *chu*³. The Saviour, a saviour (a
 Christian term).
 前進 *Ch'ien*² *chin*⁴. To advance; advancement,
 promotion.
 瘧 *Yao*⁴, *yao*⁴, *yue*⁴, *nue*⁴. Intermittent fever, ague.
 疾 *Chi*². Sickness, disorder, ailment.
 瘧疾. Intermittent or remittent fever, ague.
 汗 *Han*⁴. Sweat, perspiration.

出汗 *Ch'u*¹ *han*⁴. To perspire, to sweat.
 賭氣 *Tu*³ *ch'i*⁴. To resolve or vow in anger to do
 a thing, to do in spite of all
 hindrances, to do with the might.
 永 *Yung*³. Perpetual, everlasting; final.
 永遠 *Yung*³ *yüan*³. Endless, everlasting, eternal.
 齁 *Hou*¹. To breathe hard, asthma; a special in-
 tensive:—Les. 148.
 齁病 *Hou*¹ *ping*⁴. Asthma:—Note (35).
 傷風 *Shang*¹ *feng*¹. To take cold.
 脹 *Chang*⁴. To swell up, to enlarge; dropsical;
 tenseness, fullness.
 罐 *Kwan*⁴. A jar, a crock, a mug, a cruse.
 火罐 *Hoa*³ *kwan*⁴. A small cup used for cupping,
 also to hold medicines.

在 是 ○ 開 快 這³⁶ 心 子 那 聯
 大 是 富³⁸ 的 閃 麼 裏 裏 部 你
 街 梗 貴 時 閃 大 直 頭 書、放打
 上 米 人 候、 些 條 去 擱 擱 開
 遇 白 家、 我 罷。 路、 和 不 在 看
 見、 麩、 穿、 要 ○ 你 他 開。 書 看
 自 那 的 進 將³⁷ 怎 講 ○ 架 好
 然 些 是 京 來 麼 明 有³⁵ 子 不
 躲 穿 綾 一 我 單 說 話 高 上 好
 開。 布 羅 邊、 有 揀 開 爲 頭 呢。
 舊 衣 的 吃 世 以 走 了。 放 書 麼
 人、 的 面。 走 呢。 ○ 在 架 把

- 32 I see you are very fond of wine. You cannot do without it at all.
- 33 I got a man to write a pair of scrolls for me. Open and look at them: what do you think of them?
- 34 Why did you put that book on top of the bookcase? Ans. It will not go into the bookcase.
- 35 If you have anything to say, why do you keep it to yourself? Better go directly to him, and tell him plainly.
- 36 Why is it that with such a wide road as this, you yet insist on going here? Give place at once.
- 37 When I have time, and can get away, I am going to make a visit to the capital and see the sights.
- 38 The rich dress in silk and satin, and feast on white rice and wheat flour. When those who wear coarse and dingy clothes meet one of them in the street, they naturally give way to him.

NOTES.

2 車 is the real subject of the verb, yet it comes after it. The sentence shows how completely Chinese sometimes inverts the English order.

6 老 as here used, is peculiar to Pekingese.

7 開開. The first 開 is the principal verb, the second, an auxiliary, or the two may be taken as a duplicated verb.—Les. 33.

10 Most Chinese teachers will insist that to iron ought to be 熨 yū, and not 熅. The fact is, however, that the word is not spoken yū but yün, and on this account, no doubt, 熅 has superseded 熨, and rightly so.

11 滾 as here used is highly contemptuous. Why it should be so is not readily explained. The translation is not

a whit more forcible, nor more wanting in dignity, than the Chinese.

26 神仙. According to Taoist mythology there are five classes of 仙, viz., 鬼仙, 人仙, 地仙, 神仙 and 天仙.

27 Nanking says 音 for "tone," but the more general term is 聲.

28 板凳 is properly pan³ t'êng⁴, but in Peking is frequently spoken pan³ t'êng⁴ and in other places pan³ ts'êng⁴.

31 等 often means, as here, to need, to want immediately.

35 講明說開 is a rhetorical reduplication. Chinese abounds in such forms.

LESSON LXXV.

THE AUXILIARY 住.

住 To live, to endure,—is added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of

enduring, or sustaining continuously. For list of words taking this auxiliary, see Supplement.

VOCABULARY.

揪 Chiu¹. To seize, to grasp, to hold; to pinch and pull.

擋 Tang³. To impede, to obstruct, to stop; to withstand, to screen.

捶 Ch'ui². To beat, to pound, to cudgel.

糲 Chiang⁴. Starch, paste. See *chiang*¹.

糲糊 Chiang⁴ hu². Same.

力量 Li⁴ liang². Strength, vigor, ability.

持 Ch'i¹. To seize hold of, to grasp; to hold on, to maintain.

支持 Ch'i¹ ch'i². To withstand, to bear up against.

課六十七第

LESSON LXXVI.

去了。○不是說你病了嗎，怎麼跑到這裏來呢。那個壞蛋，交往上了，不知不覺的，就走到下流地方，那些賊沒搜到。○鄆道一，自從和王元興地方去住。○老兄甚麼時候來的，答剛纔來到。○你說到這個，我不能幫助你們。○藏珍寶的這個時候，我纔想起來了。○叫他們搬到別的地方去。○灰塵四起，直撲到臉上來。○揆到通州去。○三分學不到。○可以僱脚子把貨發到老，還有三分學不到。○天怕他趕不到。○做到老，還有一天忙到黑晚。○苦終自有甜來到。○沒料到今天下雨。○一天怕他趕不到。○做到老，學

- 1 We were busy from morning till night.
- 2 After the bitter naturally comes the sweet.
- 3 It did not occur to us that it might rain to-day.
- 4 I fear he cannot push through in a day.
- 5 One learns as long as he lives, and still leaves much unlearned.
- 6 You may hire conveyances and forward the goods to Tungchow.
- 7 The dust rose on all sides and puffed in their faces.
- 8 After all this time, I have only now thought of it.
- 9 Let them move to some other place to live.
- 10 When did you come? Ans. I have but just arrived.
- 11 In the matter you refer to, I cannot help you.
- 12 The robbers did not ransack the place where his jewels were.
- 13 From the time that Yün-Tao I began to associate with that worthless fellow, Wang Yüan Hsing, he has insensibly fallen into vicious habits.

7 糗 takes 子 after it in some places, and in some it does not. The Southern term is 糗糊.

12 扛 is the more colloquial form, and very widely used.

14 A literal translation would require "him" at the end instead of "his." The sentence, in order to give a logical structure, ought to end with a 的. The Chinese are not sensible of such incongruities.

18 止痛藥 Stop pain medicine,—the name given to Perry Davis' Pain Killer, which has been extensively sold in China.

20 險要. In this phrase the two words are different in meaning and both significant, hence a full translation requires two words.

24 Or, more literally, I should think you would have no face at all to see me.

27 守得住, as here used, means to preserve intact the inheritance received from one's fathers. The form in the

Sacred Edict is 守的住, which is a form rarely, if ever, heard amongst the people; 成家立業. The composition of this phrase shows how closely family and fortune are united in the Chinese mind.

29 兇手 Murderous hand—a murderer. 手 is often joined with verbs or adjectives to characterize an individual by his conduct, or by his trade, thus 吹手 a musician, 鎗手 a spearman, 起手 a pickpocket, etc.

30 自 is used for 自己. The 己 is excluded by the close union formed with 相, although 相 is logically connected with the following 分擘.

32 天裡 is in some places always said 白天裡.

34 得 is more widely used than 受, despite the fact that 受 is evidently more appropriate.

LESSON LXXVI.

THE AUXILIARY 到.

到 To arrive at, is added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of continuance, or of extension to some point of time

or place. For list of words taking this auxiliary see supplement.

鴿 戲 大 一 算 再 就 給 沒 ○
 鴿 法 街 毒 怎 脫 是 他 提 他
 的 的 下 子 樣 腳 是 眼 什 沒
 的 的 毒 子 辦 鞋 是 眼 麼 提
 甚 我 直 理 意 到 麼 昨 ○
 麼 們 疼 辦 思 到 麼 天 對
 玩 來 到 理 思 到 麼 天 對
 意 城 到 理 思 到 麼 天 對
 兒 隍 今 理 思 到 麼 天 對
 都 廟 天 理 思 到 麼 天 對
 有 那 早 理 思 到 麼 天 對
 小 裏 上 理 思 到 麼 天 對
 曲 的 纔 理 思 到 麼 天 對
 的 賣 好 理 思 到 麼 天 對
 賣 畫 了 理 思 到 麼 天 對
 眉 的 了 理 思 到 麼 天 對
 的 開 了 理 思 到 麼 天 對

continuously from spring to autumn.
 25 Did he speak to you of my affairs?
 Ans. He did not mention them.
 26 Yesterday a beggar came to the door
 wanting something to eat, and
 when nothing was given him, he
 began to revile.
 27 There are three requisites to study—
 the eyes, the mind and the tongue.
 28 The saying runs, When you have
 reached the river it is time enough
 to take off your shoes, which means,
 wait till the thing is actually at
 hand before you plan what you
 will do.
 29 Yesterday evening a scorpion stung
 me, and it pained me continuously
 until this morning before it ceased.
 30 Crossing the great street we came to
 the Ch'êng Hwang temple, where
 were story telling, sleight of hand
 performing, monkey shows, song
 singing, thrush venders, quail fight-
 ing and every kind of amusement.

螫 *Ché¹*. To sting; a sting; poisonous.
 鉤 *Kou¹*. A hook; a claw, a barb, a clasp; to
 hook; to detain; to tempt, to en-
 tice; to sew in a lining.
 隍 *Hwang²*. The moat or ditch around a city
 wall.
 城隍 *Ch'êng² hwang²*. The tutelary god of a
 city:—Note (30).
 說書 *Shuo¹ shu¹*. To recite stories—usually
 the imaginary exploits of
 noted characters, heroes, robbers, rebels, etc.

戲法 *Hsi⁴ fa³*. Sleight of hand, tricks, leger-
 demain, jugglery.
 猴 *Hou²*. A monkey; tricky.
 曲 *Ch'ü³*. Songs, ditties, ballads. Also *ch'ü¹*. 216.
 書眉 *Hua⁴ mei²*. The grey thrush.
 鴿 *An¹*. The quail.
 鴿 *Ch'un²*. The quail.
 鴿 *Ch'un²*. The quail.
 玩 *Wan² i⁴*. Toys, play things; amusements;
 in fun, in play.

NOTES:

1 晚 is more widely used in this connection than 黑.
 2 A proverb, expressing the idea that when misery has
 reached its limit, happiness follows in natural order. 自
 is a contraction for 自然. As usual with proverbs, the
 style is terse and bookish.
 4 趕不到. Said of one accomplishing a journey.
 5 Lit. Work till old age—learn till old age, and yet
 there will be three parts [in ten] unlearned.
 6 脚 includes both packmules and carts, but usually
 refers to the former. 脚子, in the South, [means coolies
 who carry burdens. In some places 脚子 also means a
 small boat—a ship's boat.
 7 Bunyan's original is, "The dust began so abundantly
 to fly about that they had almost been choked."
 11 This sentence might also mean: Having spoken in this
 way, I will not help you. All would depend on the circum-
 stances and on the emphasis given by the speaker.

13 壞蛋 A spoiled egg,—a figure for a worthless
 renegade, more expressive than elegant, and much stronger
 than the corresponding expression in English.
 15 Not used in direct address to the other party, but
 only put so for the purpose of illustration or exhortation.
 16 Said out of politeness by a guest to the person escort-
 ing him.
 18 齊 even, uniform; i.e., all present.
 21 遊手好閒. Swinging the hands and delighting
 in idleness,—an expressive book phrase in common use.
 27 有三到 Three things 'at it,—that is the eye, the
 mind and the mouth, must all be brought into service and
 kept to it. The sentence does not properly illustrate the
 principle of the lesson.
 28 The idea is, don't anticipate trouble before it comes.
 "Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof."

不要、你天天東跑西透、爲的是什麼呢。○爲什麼
 這一年的憂愁、全忘了。○他給你的錢、你爲甚麼
 爲他的年紀長、名分大。○我因今日的快樂、將
 之洗衣裳、纔認得他。○兄弟應當恭敬哥哥、因
 怎麼認得張二爺呢。○我在烟臺開漿洗舖、因
 爲是你們的叔叔、吵不得不再再四叮囑你們。○你
 必因着孩子家、吵爭不得、兩家就失了和氣。○我
 爲我沒招讓、他喫飯、他就說我眼中無人。○不
 他做買賣不發財、就是因爲用度太大了。○
 住地方、不可因爲一時不順心、就說拉倒。○

- 17 When you are working for another, you should not be ready to throw up your place because, on a single occasion, things do not go right.
- 18 He does not get rich at his business simply because his expenses are too great.
- 19 Because I did not invite him to eat, he says I am too proud to notice [common] people.
- 20 It is not necessary to destroy the harmony of the two families because the children have had a quarrel.
- 21 Because I am your uncle I cannot help charging you again and again.
- 22 How do you come to be acquainted with Chang Er Yie? Ans. I kept a washing shop at Chefoo and, by washing for him, came to know him.
- 23 The younger brother should show respect to the elder, because he is older in years and superior in rank.
- 24 Because of this day's joy, I have forgotten all the sorrows of the whole year.
- 25 Why did you not take the money when he offered it to you? For what are you striving every day?

VOCABULARY.

因 Yin¹. To proceed, to rely on; a cause, a reason; because of, for, on account of; by means of, in consequence of; then, so.
 租 Tsu¹. Rent, rental; to rent, to lease.
 租錢 Tsu¹ ch'ien². Rent.
 蒼着 Ts'ang¹. The green of plants, azure of the sky; hoary, old.
 蠅 Ying². A fly, the house fly.
 蒼蠅. The house fly; flies in general.
 術 Shu⁴. An art, a craft, a trick, a device, a mystery.
 心術 Hsin¹ shu⁴. Device, design; disposition, character.
 上門 Shang⁴ mén². To visit [socially], to call on.
 憑空 P'ing² k'ung¹. Without cause or evidence, for nothing.
 賭錢 Tu³ ch'ien². To gamble, to play for money, to bet.
 投機 T'ou² chi¹. To understand, to get the clue, to see the point.

疹 Chên³. Pustules or pimples, rash; measles, scarlet fever, etc.
 撩 Liao². To take hold of; to manage; to play with; to incite, to seduce, to inflame; to felt a seam, to overseam Also liao⁴.
 謀 Mou². A stratagem, an artifice; to deliberate, to contrive, to plan, to plot.
 衣食 I¹ shi². Food and clothes, a livelihood.
 順心 Shun⁴ hsin¹. To one's mind, agreeable, acquiescent.
 度 Tu⁴. A measure; a degree, a limit, a rule; capacity; to arrange; to spend or pass time; to ford. Also to⁴.
 用度 Yung⁴ tu⁴. Expenses, living.
 招呼 Chao¹ hu¹. To call, to invite, to beckon.
 爭吵 Chêng¹ ch'ao³. To quarrel, to wrangle, to bicker.
 吵嘴 Ch'ao³ tsui³. To quarrel, to scold, to wrangle.
 再四 Tsai⁴ si⁴. Again and again. (s.)
 叮 Ting¹. To enjoin; to bite, to sting.

的風俗來。在江中，這纔興起端午節，喫糰子。後來託夢給人，叫包一些糰子，丟了。人讒謗自己，跳在汨羅江淹死。節喫糰米糰子，是因爲屈原被小節爲光陰不能爲你留得住。○端午他不便告假。○應當愛惜光陰，因假怎麼走了呢？因爲老爺欠安，要緊的事情，等不得了。○他沒麼不託人帶來呢？因爲信中有

- 26 Why did you not send it by some one? Ans. Because there are important matters in the letter which could not wait.
- 27 How came he to go without asking leave of absence? Ans. Because you were not feeling well, he thought it would be inconvenient to ask you.
- 28 You ought to improve the time, because time will not wait for you.
- 29 The reason why balls of glutinous rice are eaten on the dragon-boat festival, is because Ch'ü Yüan, when falsely accused by bad men, threw himself into the Mi Loä river and was drowned: afterwards he directed some one, in a dream, to make some rice balls and throw them into the river: and from this arose the custom of eating rice balls on the dragon-boat festival.

嚀 *Ning*³..... To direct.
 叮嚀 To charge, to enjoin. (w.)
 名分 *Ming*³ *fên*⁴. Rank, station, office; the duties pertaining to any station.
 遶 *Pên*⁴..... To run, to hasten, to rush.
 欠安 *Ch'ien*⁴ *an*¹..... Indisposed, unwell.
 假 *Chia*⁴. Leave of absence, furlough. See *chia*⁸.
 告假 *Kao*⁴ *chia*⁴..... To ask leave of absence.
 端午 *Twan*¹ *wu*³. The dragon-boat festival on the fifth day of the fifth month.

糯 *Noä*⁴..... Glutinous rice.
 糯米 *Noä*⁴ *mi*³..... Same.
 糰 *Tsung*⁴. Glutinous rice dumplings with fruit or meat inside, and wrapped in leaves for cooking.
 讒 *Ts'an*²..... To traduce, to slander.
 謗 *Pang*⁴..... To vilify, to slander.
 讒謗 To accuse falsely, to slander, to traduce.
 汨羅 *Mi*⁴..... Name of a river. Also *ku*³.
 風俗 *Fêng*¹ *su*²..... Custom, vogue, tradition.

NOTES.

4 一半句話 *half of a sentence*, that is, a few words or sentences. 犯 is here used in the sense of *worth while*. This use is general, but somewhat anomalous. Some teachers would write with 煩, as being more suitable to the meaning, though not the right tone.

5 Note how different is the meaning of 口氣, from the phrase 口氣 in Les. 55. The two characters here stand separately, each with its own meaning.

8 食 here refers to the bait set to catch the bird.

9 A widely known proverb, meaning to incur serious loss for a small cause.

12 咬 to bite, is used figuratively of the accusation of a prisoner against an accomplice. Such accusations are often procured by torture, and are not unfrequently false. 所因 that which because; i.e., some cause or occasion.

15 話不投機 Lit., words failed to transmit the rationale or idea. 頭破血出, head broken and blood flowing, a ready made phrase.

16 疹子 is used generically for any rash attended by fever, and includes scarlet fever, measles and chicken-pox.

17 謀衣食 is the less used, and more pedantic expression. 說拉倒—"To throw up a situation," "to give warning." In this connection 拉倒 is quite t'ung hsing.

19 沒讓他吃飯 does not mean, did not allow him to eat; but, began to eat before him without offering a share to him by way of apology. When you begin to eat in another's presence, or when any one approaches where you are eating, politeness requires that you invite him to share with you. This invitation is a mere civility, it being understood that it will be declined. 眼中無人 is a book phrase, equal in style and sentiment to, "Common men are too insignificant to make any impression on his optics."

21 再四 is not commonly used, but is the form in the Fortunat Union, from which the sentence is taken. 叮嚀 also is not often used colloquially, the common expression being 囑咐.

課 八 十 七 第

LESSON LXXVIII.

如¹⁰ ○ 証。我⁷ 唆。數打 爲 了 從 前¹
 今⁹ 我⁹ ○ 們 ○ 眈眈。睡 了 我 從 南 幾
 的 覺 以⁸ 知 上⁶ ○ 的 好 路 天 放
 人 得 後 道 半⁶ ○ 這⁵ 太 幾 來 了
 多 有 因 天 事 遲 晚 回 的 兵
 是 你 爲 是 我 事 所 以 今 天 沒 遇 餉
 嘴 在 推 是 誤 殺 故 此 敢 來 給 他 作 見
 甜 那 脫 不 開 所 以 我 纔 應 承 了
 心 裏 不 開 所 以 我 就 沒 管
 苦 所 以 我 就 沒 管
 所 以 我 就 沒 管
 不 可 輕 易
 輕 易 ○ 了。見 ○ 挑 之 着 因 哄 是

- 1 A few days ago the soldiers received their pay, and hence silver is cheap.
- 2 I came by the south road, and therefore did not meet him.
- 3 You have already deceived me several times; therefore I shall not listen to you again.
- 4 I retired very late last night; hence I have no animation to-day, but am all the time nodding.
- 5 The reason this affair is hard to consummate, is because there is some one meddling with it.
- 6 In the forenoon my head ached, and therefore I could not recite.
- 7 We know that he killed him accidentally; therefore we are bold to testify for him.
- 8 Afterwards, because he could find no excuse, he gave the promise.
- 9 I knew that you were there, and therefore I paid no attention.
- 10 At the present time, the majority of men are deceitful, therefore it is not well to be too credulous.

25 東跑西逃 *run east and rush west, to hasten hither and thither with work or business, a common and expressive phrase.*

29 This is the story commonly told to account for the use of 糗子 on this special day. 屈原, a statesman of

the kingdom of Ts'u, B. C. 314. He was falsely accused by a jealous rival and disgraced, and in his grief committed suicide by jumping into the 汨羅 *Mi Lo* river. As the name of a river the proper reading of 汨 is *mi*, but the other reading *ku* is often confused with it.

LESSON LXXVIII.

ILLATIVE PARTICLES.

所以 The reason or cause; therefore, hence.
 因此 } For this cause, on this account,
 爲此 } therefore.
 故此 On this account, consequently, there-
 fore.

因這個緣故 或 爲這個緣故
 For this reason.
 因而 And so, and hence, and on this
 account. A book term, the use of which in
 conversation is somewhat pedantic.

VOCABULARY.

而 *Er*². And, and yet, also; still, moreover; as if,
 contrariwise. Much used in *wen-li* but
 rarely in Mandarin, save in certain combinations.
 餉 *Hsiang*². Rations, pay of soldiers; taxes,
 duties.
 兵餉 *Ping*¹ *hsiang*². Soldiers' pay or wages;
 money for this purpose.

精神 *Ching*¹ *shên*². That (supposed) divine es-
 sence which gives life and
 vigor to the soul, life, *animation*, spirits, vivacity.
 眈 *Tun*². Dull, heavy, sleepy; a nod.
 打眈 *Ta*² *tun*². To nod, to doze; to be sleepy,
 to be drowsy.
 數 *Ch'ung*⁴. To come abruptly; to nod. (s.)

過這事，故此會破這謎兒。○因為皇上年輕，不能
 你有苦難，人都不願幫助。○迦猶道，我因為閱歷
 據沒有，所以必是誣告。○你平常不交往人，所以
 因此瞎了雙眼。○他告李先生這些事情，一點憑
 所以道喜的人很多。○我時常思想你，眼淚流乾，
 為此兩家纔弄鬧扭了。○趙硯田因為五十歲得子，
 就和一個人一樣，以後買賣倒了，賬目有些不清，
 一點要緊的用項，所以必得支錢。○從前他們倆
 事。○他喫那些不當喫的東西，故此生病。○我有
 相信。○我因為他不知好歹，所以再不管他的閒

- 11 Since he does not know when he is well treated, I shall therefore have nothing more to do with his affairs.
- 12 He eats improper food, therefore he is ill.
- 13 I have a little pressing need, and therefore am compelled to draw my money.
- 14 Formerly they two were of one mind in everything; afterwards their business failed and their accounts became involved, and, on this account, the two families got into a quarrel.
- 15 Because Chao Yen T'ien has had a son born to him at fifty, therefore a great many are presenting congratulations.
- 16 I have wept my eyes dry thinking constantly of you: on this account both eyes have become blind.
- 17 There is not the least proof of the things he charges against Mr. Li; he is undoubtedly accusing him falsely.
- 18 Ordinarily you are not neighbourly, therefore, when you are in trouble, people are not inclined to help you.
- 19 Chia Yiu replied, "Because I have passed through this experience, therefore I can solve this riddle."

數 眈 *Ch'ung⁴ tun³*..... To nod. (s).
 上 半 天 *Shang⁴ pan⁴ t'ien¹*..... The forenoon.
 誤 殺 *Wu⁴ sha¹*..... To kill by accident.
 應 承 *Ying¹ ch'eng²* To agree, to assent, to promise.
 用 項 *Yung⁴ hsiang⁴* Use, utility, function; need, requirement.
 田 *T'ien²*..... A field; fields, lands.
 道 喜 *Tao⁴ hsi³*..... To congratulate.
 時 常 *Shi³ ch'ang²* Constantly, continually, customarily.
 思 想 *Si¹ hsiang³* To think of, to reflect, to consider.
 淌 *T'ang⁴* To run as water, to flow, to course, to drip.
 據 *Ch'ü⁴* To occupy, to lean on; testimony, evidence; according to, from.
 憑 據 *P'ing² chü⁴*..... Proof, evidence.
 誣 告 *Wu¹*..... To accuse falsely, to calumniate.
 誣 告 *Wu¹ kao⁴* To accuse falsely, to trump up charges.

迦 *Chia¹*..... Used only in names.
 猶 *Yu²* Resembling, like; as if, same as; still, even; thus, so.
 閱 歷 *Yüe⁴ li⁴* To pass through, to experience; to look over, to examine.
 猜 *Ts'ai¹* To suspect; to guess, to conjecture, to solve.
 謎 *Mi²*..... A riddle, an enigma, a puzzle.
 破 謎 *P'oa⁴ mi²* To propose a riddle, to solve a riddle:—Note (19).
 后 *Hou⁴* A ruler; the sovereign; empress or queen, a feudal prince.
 太 后 *Tai⁴ hou⁴*..... The Emperor's mother.
 垂 *Ch'ui²* To hang down, to suspend; to let fall; to reach to; to condescend.
 評 *P'ing²* To discuss; to criticize, to review; to judge of.
 評 論 *P'ing² lun⁴* To discuss, to give an opinion, to criticize.
 禿 *T'u¹*..... Bald, bare; blunt; unscrupulous.
 暴 病 *Pao⁴ ping⁴*..... A violent disease.

現在已經不上門兒咯。而兩家漸漸疎淡。家來甲裏甲的更遲晚。因報喪報的太遲晚。那號叫劉老婆。○這話爲此人就給他一個綽號。女人一塊兒說呢。他的聲音很尖。又常和個劉老婆呢。他的聲音很尖。又常和個緣故。他又回去了。○他²³是個男人。怎麼趕着來送信說。他²²母親得了個病。這不毒不毒不禿。○我們正走到半路。有人說。這和尚真是利害。因此蘇東坡道人評論治國。所以太后纔垂簾聽政。○古人

- 20 On account of his youth the Emperor cannot assume the reins of government, therefore the Empress-mother hears causes from behind the curtain.
- 21 The opinion of the ancients is that these Buddhist priests are very outrageous; therefore Su Tung P'oa says, "He who is not bare-pated is not venomous; he who is not venomous is not bare-pated."
- 22 When we were just half way a man overtook us with a message, saying his mother had taken a violent disease, so on this account he returned again.
- 23 Why is he called Old Woman Liu when he is a man? Ans. His voice is very sharp and he is constantly with the women talking to them, on which account people have nicknamed him Old Woman Liu.
- 24 This family gave notice of the funeral too late, and that family were still later in offering their condolences, and on this account the two families became gradually estranged, so that they have now ceased to enter each other's doors.

促病 *Ts'u⁴ ping⁴*. A sudden and violent disease.

 急病 *Chi² ping⁴*..... Same.
 聲音 *Sheng¹ yin¹*..... Sound, voice, cry.
 外號 *Wai⁴ hao⁴*..... A nickname.
 綽號 *Ch'ao¹ hao⁴*.... A nickname, a fancy name.
 喪 *Sang¹*. To mourn for parents; a funeral;
 time of mourning. See *sang⁴*.

報喪 *Pao⁴ sang¹*. To report a death and give notice of burial:—Note (24).
 弔喪 *Tiao⁴ sang¹*. To present condolences at or before a funeral.
 疎 *Su¹*. Open, coarse; distant, sundered, estranged; careless, remiss.
 淡 *Tan⁴*. Insipid, flat; weak, watery; distant—as an offended friend; light—as a color.
 疎淡. *Estranged, cool, separated.*

NOTES.

1 Chinese soldiers are usually paid at considerable intervals, and when they are paid each one wants to sell his silver for copper cash, to be used in paying debts. This sudden demand for cash, especially in small places, makes silver cheap.
 4 Notice that 睡得太晚 does not mean *slept too late in the morning*, but, *went to bed too late in the evening*. Sleeping late in the morning is expressed by saying 起來的晚。
 6 I have translated as if this were the language of a pupil. It would however be equally appropriate in the mouth of a teacher. 考書 means properly to *examine a class*, but is also used to mean *being examined or reciting*. In like manner 背書 means properly to *back the book*; i.e., *repeat a*

lesson, but it is also, and often, used to mean *hearing a lesson*, that is, *causing the pupil to recite it*.
 8 The force of 纒, as here used, is difficult to bring into an English translation. See also (14).
 9 In many places the 有 would be omitted.
 10 嘴甜心苦 *the mouth sweet and the heart bitter*; i.e., *using fair words to conceal an evil purpose, deceit, guile, imposture*.
 14 他們倆就和一個人一樣. Lit. *They two were all the same as if one person*; i.e., *they agreed in everything*.
 15 It is implied that the man had no son previously.
 19 破謎 is occasionally used (as here) to mean, *to guess a riddle*; but generally it means, *to propound or make a riddle*. See Les. 200.

第七十九課

LESSON LXXIX.

想家。○俗語說，周瑜打黃蓋，一
 離鄉的，人，到患病的時候，就更
 出⁷○你⁶的弄出，漏子兒來，我喫不住。
 心的孩子，大人少喫多少累呢。
 乖一點也不淘氣，養着這等省
 忘恩負義了。○這⁵個孩子實在
 的遭殃。○若⁴是蒙恩不報，就叫
 的嗎。○先³下手的爲強，後下手
 ○人²都是願享福，還有願受罪
 他¹因爲偷嘴，不知挨了多少罵。

- 1 There is no telling how much scolding she has had to bear for eating things on the sly.
- 2 All men wish to enjoy happiness. Are there any who wish to suffer?
- 3 He who strikes the first blow gets the advantage; he who strikes second gets the worst of it.
- 4 When a man receives a favor and does not return it, he is said to be ungrateful.
- 5 This child is peculiarly good; it is not the least troublesome. When such a good baby as this falls to one's lot, how much toil it saves.
- 6 If you stir up a difficulty, I shall not be able to endure it.
- 7 When one away from home gets ill,

20 垂簾聽政 *Suspend a curtain and hear government affairs.* The empress is not supposed in etiquette to meet her ministers face to face, but to hear their reports and give her orders, sitting behind a curtain. The expression is decidedly *wen* in style.

31 蘇東坡 A celebrated statesman and literary genius of the Sung dynasty. This saying of his is an alliterative play on the words 禿 and 毒, and refers to the custom of Buddhist priests of shaving their heads. The sarcasm of the saying is that no treachery or dishonesty is worthy of the name as compared with that of a priest, and

that no man who is not treacherous and dishonest will be a priest.

24 Upon the death of any one, a messenger is sent to inform the relatives and kindred of the fact, and to announce the date of the funeral. This is called 報喪. In the case of rich or official families a written or printed paper is sent. Upon the day of the funeral, kindred and friends, present their condolences, worship before the coffin, make a small contribution of cash and partake of the feast provided. This is called 弔喪.

LESSON LXXIX.

RECEPTIVE VERBS.

- 受 To receive, to bear,—very widely used and limited by no special circumstances.
- 挨 To bear,—pain, evil or abuse, generally inflicted by another.
- 遭 To meet with,—misfortune, pain or loss.
- 吃 To eat; i.e., suffer,—loss or trouble.

- 害 To be injured by,—disease, pain or shame.
- 患 To be afflicted with,—disease.
- 蒙 To receive,—favor, grace or kindness.
- 享 To receive; i.e., enjoy,—happiness, peace or prosperity.
- 領 To receive from,—a benefactor or superior.

VOCABULARY.

- 享 *Hsiang*³. To accept as the gods do sacrifices; to enjoy; to receive gratefully.
- 福 *Fu*³. Blessings conferred by the gods, happiness, prosperity.
- 蒙 *Meng*². Dull, ignorant; to cover over, to conceal; to receive thankfully, to be obliged:—see Sub. Also *meng*³.
- 患 *Hwan*⁴. Evil, misfortune, calamity, affliction; to be afflicted:—see Sub.

- 受罪 *Shou⁴ tsui⁴*. To bear suffering, to suffer:—Note (2).
- 下手 *Hsia shou*⁶. To make a beginning; to take hold; to set to, to take the initiative; a second place, a sub-foreman.
- 殃 *Yang*¹. . . . Misfortune, judgment, retribution.
- 忘恩 *Wang⁴ en¹*. To forget a favor, to be ungrateful.

時少是回丁時養養不因為個
 候喫受領賑都候媳不必計為願
 受遭虧傷錢頭去領有。太較他們一
 罪、○ ○ 一領賞○受誰吃要願
 誰好¹⁵用¹⁴回是去喇。天大天
 可憐時候、他洗飯、第○這¹³人
 他呢。○遙自人在省的衣裝也
 ○這¹⁶樣破費你、我、很
 這樣破費你、我、很

he is all the more homesick.
 8 The saying is, "When Chia Yü beats Hwang Kai, there is one willing to lay on and one willing to stand it."
 9 Blessed are the merciful; for they shall surely receive mercy.
 10 He does not stand in the same relation to me as others. It is not necessary to discuss who loses or who gains.
 11 That t'ung-yang daughter-in-law of the Chang family is too much abused. She is beaten and scolded every day and has no comfort of her life.
 12 The general was pleased with the parade yesterday, and to-day the soldiers have all gone to receive rewards.
 13 Within these ten years I have received famine relief three times. The first time I received cooked rice; the second time, grain; and the third time, money.
 14 By using soap to wash clothes, the washer saves labor, and the clothes receive less injury.
 15 When he was well-to-do, he took his ease and indulged his indolence; now that he has come to grief, who will pity him?
 16 I am greatly indebted to you for

義 *I⁴*. Equity, righteousness, uprightness; free, charitable, superior, excellent; adopted.
 負義 *Fu⁴ i⁴*. To abuse kindness; to render evil for good.
 乖 *Kwai¹*. Perverse, contrary, bad-tempered, sulky; crafty, tricky; odd, peculiar.
 省心 *Shêng² hsin¹*. Trouble-saving, good, obedient.
 出外 *Ch'u¹ wai⁴*. To leave home; to go abroad, to travel.
 離鄉 *Li³ hsiang¹*. Away from home, in a strange place; a stranger.
 害病 *Hai⁴ ping⁴*. Sick, ill; taken sick.
 患病 *Hwan⁴ ping⁴*. Same.
 周 *Chou¹*. To make a circuit; to extend everywhere; plenty; secret; honest; entirely; close, fine; a surname.
 瑜 *Yu²*. Lustrous; excellent.
 較 *Chiao³*. To compare, to try by comparing; rather; in general.

計較 *Chi⁴ chiao⁴*. To compare notes, to discuss, to argue.
 童 *T'ung²*. A boy, a lad; a young student; a virgin; undefiled; youthful.
 童養 *T'ung² yang³*. To support a betrothed girl before her marriage.
 探養 *T'an⁴ yang³*. Same:—Note (11).
 受氣 *Shou⁴ ch'i⁴*. Ill-treated, abused.
 看操 *K'an⁴ ts'ao¹*. To review troops, to superintend the drilling of soldiers, to witness a parade.
 兵丁 *Ping¹ ting¹*. Soldiers.
 賑 *Chên⁴*. To relieve those in want; charity, bounty, relief.
 逍遙 *Hsiao¹*. To ramble, to saunter at ease.
 逍遙 *Yao²*. Distant, remote.
 逍遙 *Tsi⁴ tsai⁴*. To saunter carelessly, at one's ease.
 自在 *Tsi⁴ tsai⁴*. Natural, easy; self-possessed, composed; comfortable.

來家促。錢幾從李¹⁸不了一領
 遭誰○也。吊小榮打。一情
 了不官²⁰窮錢。遭春我樣。就
 一說司不了富許一個能○古¹⁷不
 場是胎不是你不了磨顛人。挨說不
 官司裏好。不。了。他。折險。就。打。了。不
 弄帶紅打的。暫且受點幾。你。好。嗎。罰。了。喝
 的來的日子。看這。說。得。好。嗎。罰。了。喝
 的家產當子。金點幾。你。好。嗎。罰。了。喝
 盡當子。金點幾。你。好。嗎。罰。了。喝
 絕。後狗急急吊。這報。○了

having taken so much trouble on my account. Though I do not eat or drink, it is the same as if I did.

17 There is an old saying, "When a man is beaten he is not fined; when fined he is not beaten." Must I take a beating and be fined besides?

18 Li Jung Ch'un is a good man, but his virtue has not had a due reward. From his youth he has met with a great many misfortunes.

19 These few thousand cash out of which he has defrauded you, will not make him rich, nor will your paying them make you poor; it will simply put you to some temporary embarrassment.

20 Lawsuits are not profitable. Look at Chin Kou: who would not say that he had by birth a rich inheritance? Presently he got involved in a lawsuit and used up his patrimony completely.

好懶 *Hao⁴ lan³*. To delight in idleness, to indulge indolent habits.

耍懶 *Shwa³ lan³*. To spend time in idleness, to dilly-dally, to loiter.

破費 *P'oi⁴ fei⁴*. To waste, to spend lavishly; to put to expense; to thank.

領情 *Ling³ ch'ing²*. To receive a favor, to be obliged, under obligation to.

顛 *Tien¹*. To upset, to overturn, to ruin.

顛險 *Tien¹ hsien³*. Calamities, misfortunes, difficulties.

磨折 *Mo² ché²*. Trial, trouble, difficulty, misfortune:—Note (18).

胎 *T'ai¹*. The pregnant womb, congenital; a receptacle.

胎裡紅 *T'ai¹ li³ hung²*. Born in affluence, a splendid inheritance.

產 *Ch'an³*. To produce, to bear; birth, parturition; productions; estate; occupation.

家產 *Chia¹ ch'an³*. Family inheritance, estate, property, patrimony.

盡絕 *Chin⁴ chüé²*. Ended, used up; entirely, completely.

占 *Chan¹*. To divine or foretell by a lot, divination. Read *chan⁴* when used for 估.

卦 *Kwa⁴*. A divining mark or diagram, a sign.

占卦. To cast lots, to divine, to foretell.

破財 *P'oi⁴ ts'ai²*. To lose money or property, to meet with financial disaster.

口舌 *K'ou³ shé²*. Evil reports, scandal, detraction, calumny.

平等 *P'ing² têng³*. Equal in rank.

喊叫 *Han³ chiao⁴*. To cry aloud, to shout, to call out.

救火 *Chiu⁴ hwo³*. Fire! fire! to put out a fire.

閂 *Shwan¹*. The bolt or bar across a door; to bolt a door.

NOTES.

1 偷嘴 is applied to children or young daughters-in-law who take things to eat on the sly, also to dogs or cats which steal food.

2 愛 is much used in the North in the sense of wishing or being willing, but is not so used in the South, where 願 takes its place. 願 is also used in the North, but in such connections generally takes 意 after it. 受罪, to receive

sin; i.e., to receive the consequences of sin, viz., suffering. 罪 is much used in this sense, showing how strongly the connection between sin and suffering is impressed on the human mind.

3 遭殃 to meet with retribution, that is, in this case, to get the worst of it. The term is somewhat belittled by its use in this connection. It is chosen for the rhyme, and also to

連門門也摸不着了。
 頭喊叫救火，吃了一驚，慌的
 情。○王五正在夢中，聽見外
 平人的好處，就該說是蒙
 的好處，就該說是蒙恩，得了
 要緊的分別，若是得了在上
 舌是非。○蒙恩和蒙情，有個
 運不好，不是破財，就是遭口
 批了一個八字，說我這步時
 ○我²¹叫那算占卦的先生，給我

- 21 I got that fortune-teller to tell my fortune by the eight characters. He said my fortune was not propitious, that I would either lose my money or suffer from evil reports.
- 22 There is an important difference between receiving grace and receiving a favor. If you get good from a superior, it should be spoken of as receiving grace; if you get good from an equal, it should be spoken of as receiving a favor.
- 23 Wang Wu Chêng, when in the midst of a dream, heard some one outside calling out, "fire! fire!" and was so frightened that in his alarm he could not even find the bolt of the door.

intimate that he who is behindhand gets the legitimate desert of his failure to be first.

8 大人 is here used for parents. A 肖心的孩子 is one who does not cry nor fret nor get into mischief; for which we have no special word in English, other than to say that he is a "good" child.

7 患 is the more elegant book form, 害 the more colloquial.

8 周瑜, a noted general in the time of the three kingdoms, an adherent of the house of Wu. The story is that 周瑜, in order to deceive 曹操, with whom he was at war, beat 黃蓋, one of his own generals, unmercifully, he consenting to be so beaten. 黃蓋 then went over to 曹操, and pretended that he had deserted 周瑜 on account of this shameful and unmerited beating, and wanted an opportunity to get revenge. 曹操 was deceived by him, and in consequence of his treachery suffered defeat. The proverb is used of those who resort to similar tricks, or who willingly endure pain for some coveted end.

10 The three forms have substantially the same meaning, save that 外人 suggests the idea of a relative, which the others do not necessarily do.

11 Parents who are poor, or who are tired keeping their betrothed daughters, sometimes send them to the home of

their future mother-in-law months, or even years, before they are to be married; albeit such a course is considered very ungentle. Betrothals are also sometimes made, having this arrangement definitely in view, especially in the case of the death of the girl's mother. The lot of such girls is proverbially hard. The most general term for such a girl is, 童養媳婦, a daughter-in-law supported as a child or virgin. The term used in Shantung is 探養媳婦, a daughter-in-law supported beforehand. The term in Nanking is simply 養媳婦, a supported daughter-in-law.

17 It is not regarded as legitimate for a Chinese official both to fine a man and to beat him.

18 李榮春, and 一個好人, are in grammatical apposition. 顛險 is a book term not often heard in colloquial. 磨折 is colloquial, but as used in the North is always reversed, viz., 折磨.

21 The eight characters referred to are those which mark the year, month, day and hour of birth—two for each, according to the Chinese cyclical method of indicating dates. See Les. 117, Note (31). Prognostications are made on the basis of these characters. 步 is here the classifier of 時運. 口舌 and 是非 are rhetorically correlated, and mutually limit each other.

LESSON LXXX.

THUS.

這麼的 } Thus, then, in *this* case. The final
 這麼着 } 的 is the ancient and original form,
 still much used in Central and Southern Mandarin.
 In Eastern Shantung it is used exclusively, the
 form with 着 not being heard at all. 着 is the more
 modern form, used in Pekinese and the North,
 and also introduced to a considerable extent in the
 South. The same is true of 的 and 着 following
 那麼 and 怎麼

那麼的 or 那麼着 Thus, then, in *that* case.

這麼 Is not unfrequently used as a contraction for 這麼的 or 這麼着.

恁麼的 A colloquial form of 那麼的. This form is not often found in books, but is widely used in colloquial.

這樣 or 這麼樣 Thus, in *this* case.

恁樣 or 怎麼樣 Thus, in *that* case.

這麼一來 In these circumstances, therefore.

也是四四五。○諸葛亮在葫蘆峪埋下地雷火礮。預
 我就和他絕了交。那樣的，朋友，有也是五八八，沒有
 夫衛護他，如今我家有事，他連面也不照。這麼一來，
 這麼樣，你把我放在那裏呢。○他¹⁴有急難，我出上工
 們好快走啊。○待姊妹們，你願打就打，願罵就罵嗎，
 好，是不去好。○¹³這麼着，你再去問問他，他若不去，我
 都是如此。○¹²昨天晚上，他還猶疑不定的，不知是去
 不盡，於是拿出五萬銀子，放飯施捨。○他們¹¹個個人
 會的嗎。○現在黃大人，陞了兩廣總督，老太爺感恩
 就兩遍，兩遍學不會，就三遍，這麼樣，還有到底學不

- 9 If you cannot learn it by one repetition, then repeat it twice; and if you cannot learn it by repeating twice, then repeat it three times. Is there anything you cannot in this way finally learn?
- 10 His Excellency, Mr. Hwang, has been advanced to the Governor-Generalship of the two Kwangs, and his father, as an expression of his gratification, has set apart fifty thousand [taels of] silver to distribute food and charity among the poor.
- 11 They are every one so.
- 12 Yesterday evening he was still hesitating, not knowing whether it was better to go or not. Ans. In this case, do you go again and ask him, so that if he is not going, we may go at once.
- 13 In your intercourse with your sisters, can you beat and revile them as you please? Have you no regard for my feelings.
- 14 When he was in straits, I spent time in defending him; now, when my family are in difficulty, he does not so much as show his face. I will therefore cut his acquaintance. That style of friend, to have him is five times eight, and not to have him is four times ten.

陞 *Shéng*¹..... To ascend; to rise in office.
 督 *Tu*¹..... To govern; to oversee; to admonish.
 總督 *Tsung*³ *tu*¹..... A governor-general.
 老太爺 *Lao*³ *t'ai*⁴ *yie*². The father of an officer
 or of one who has a
 high literary degree.
 感恩 *Kan*³ *én*¹..... To be thankful, grateful.
 放飯 *Fang*⁴ *fan*⁴. To distribute food to the
 poor.
 施 *Shi*¹. To develop; to distribute, to diffuse;
 to give, to relieve.
 施捨 *Shi*¹ *shé*²..... To bestow charity.
 猶疑 *Yu*² *i*²..... To be in doubt, to hesitate.
 急難 *Chi*² *nan*⁴. A strait, an emergency, a press-
 ing difficulty.
 衛顧 *Wei*⁴ *ku*⁴..... To protect, to defend.
 衛護 *Wei*⁴ *hu*⁴..... Same.
 絕交 *Chüé*² *chiao*¹. To have no more to do with,
 to cut the acquaintance of.

諸 *Chu*¹. All, every; in *wen-li* a pronoun, a final
 particle.
 峪 *Yü*⁴..... A ravine, a gully.
 埋 *Mai*². To bury, to cover over; to conceal; to
 hoard. See *man*².
 雷 *Lei*²..... Thunder; to beat a drum.
 地雷 *Ti*⁴ *lei*²..... A mine, a blast.
 礮 or 砲 *P'ao*⁴..... A great gun, a cannon.
 懿 *I*⁴..... Virtuous, accomplished. (w.)
 將 *Chiang*⁴. A leader, a general; the king in
 chess. See *chiang*¹.
 恰巧 *Ch'ia*⁴ *ch'iao*³. Opportune, timely, in the
 nick of time, lucky.
 淹沒 *Yen*¹ *mo*⁴. To drown out, to wet; to over-
 flow, to overwhelm.
 騰挪 *T'eng*² *no*⁴. To transfer; to arrange for,
 to find time; to postpone.
 河道 *Hó*² *tao*⁴. The banks or bed of a
 river.

天大慢的着還在天葛裏備
 存水水很快罷能天亮恰轟
 已一水中必罷騰○我嘆巧死
 經來泥必沖好挪我了一司
 下創混必從泥起就一點看了一馬
 了底到從泥起就一點看了一馬
 架頭兒河心漸漸沉下河心就
 子鋪兒河心漸漸沉下河心就
 喇高的地方漫出堤來○如
 今天的地地方漫出堤來○如
 我在街漫出堤來○如
 上見他脚上鄭¹⁸此必流看恩

- 15 Chū Kwoǎ Liang, in the valley of gourds, concealed subterraneous mines and fire guns intending to blow up Si Ma I with his soldiers and generals; but subsequently, when Si Ma I came to the place, just in the nick of time it rained a great rain and overflowed his mines and guns; upon which Chū Kwoǎ Liang said with a sigh, "Well, well; after all it is true that man proposes but Heaven disposes."
- 16 It would be better, I think, to have Pao Ên go rather than T'ien Fu because Pao Ên can find the time; he also knows the road. Ans. Well, just as you like; do whatever seems best.
- 17 Where the bed of the river is narrow and the water runs very swiftly, it will necessarily take up much mud. Where the bed of the river is wide, the water will, of course, run slowly and the mud will gradually fall down, thus slowly filling up the channel of the river. Hence, when a flood comes, at the places where the bed of the river is thus filled up, the water will overflow the banks.
- 18 Chêng T'ien Ts'un has come to the end of his string. I saw him to-day on the street shivering with the

河心 *Hoa² hsin¹*. The bottom or channel of a river.
 沉 *Ch'ên²*. To sink, to fall to the bottom; to be lost, to perish; heavy, weighty.
 漫 *Man⁴*. To overflow, to well up; wide spreading, diffused, vague.
 堤 *Ti¹*. A dyke, a bund, a levee, a bank.
 創 *Ch'wang⁴*. To create, to transform; to found; to essay, to follow a business.
 底鋪 *Ti³ p'u¹*. Resources all exhausted, down to first principles.
 攞 *La⁴*. To hold; to lump; to tug at.
 踢 *Ti⁴ la⁴*. To shuffle with the feet.
 跋 *Sa¹*. To tread shoes down at the heel; to wear them so.
 披 *P'ei¹*. To throw over the shoulders, to put on; disheveled. Also *p'i¹*.
 袖 *Hsiu⁴*. The sleeve; to put into the sleeve.

恹 *Hsi¹*. To shudder with cold:—Note(18).
 央 *Yang¹*. To beg earnestly, to entreat.
 央及 *Yang¹ chi²*. To beg hard, to importune, to crave, to entreat:—Note(18).
 大烟 *Ta⁴ yen¹*. Opium (as smoked).
 膏 *Kao¹*. Grease; ointment, paste; plasters; rich food.
 廣膏 *Kwang³ kao¹*. Foreign opium:—Note(18).
 臘 *La⁴*. A sacrifice three days after the winter solstice; the 12th month.
 祭 *Chi⁴*. To sacrifice to the gods; an offering.
 辭 *Ts'i²*. Words, evidence; to refuse, to decline; to depart, to take leave of.
 小婆子 *Hsiao³ p'oa² tsi³*. A secondary or inferior wife, a concubine.
 小奶奶 *Hsiao³ nai³ nai³*. Same. (s.)

在受罪，還算多了嗎。
 雞、他小奶婆奶子還嫌不好吃，這樣他現
 月二十三日辭筵，買三隻鴨子、四隻
 是綾羅綢緞，吃大烟必得吃廣膏臘
 買賣的時候，吃的是粳米白麩，穿的
 答有錢怎麼單給他呢，你忘了他做
 帶的五六十個錢，叫我都給了他喇。
 凍的恹恹恹恹的，直央及我，我腰裏
 身上披的一件沒有袖子的小褂兒，
 踢攬着破鞋頭，腿上穿的燈籠褲子，

cold, shuffling his feet along in a pair of worn-out shoes, having on his legs a pair of tattered pants, and on his shoulders a shortcoat without sleeves. He entreated me without ceasing, and I gave him all I had in my pocket—some fifty or sixty cash. Ans. If you have money to give, why give it to him? Have you forgotten when he was in business, how he ate the best rice and finest flour and wore silk and satin and would smoke only foreign opium? Also, how on the twenty-third of the twelfth month, in sacrificing to the kitchen god, he bought three ducks and four chickens, and yet his concubine found fault with them as unfit to eat? In view of all these things, are his present sufferings any more than he deserves?

NOTES.

1 麻刀 is old ropes chopped into bits, rubbed up so as to disentangle the fibre, and used in mortar as we use hair. In some places, especially in the South, old paper is soaked into pulp and used for the same purpose.

4 Peking teachers would change to 他父親若是, etc., but teachers in Central and Southern Mandarin regard the form in the text as equally good, if not better.

5 登門認錯 is a ready made book phrase, often used by educated people.

6 In difficult cases, Chinese magistrates not unfrequently disguise themselves and go out at night, or for several days together, to see what they can find out.

7 丁憂 To sustain grief; i.e., to mourn for the death of a parent. Three years is the allotted time for mourning for a parent, during which time officers are excused from duty, and candidates do not attend the examinations.

8 The final 的 might with perhaps equal propriety be referred to the person, and the clause be rendered: *Is there any one who cannot in this way finally learn it?*

10 兩廣. That is, 廣東 Kwangtung, and 廣西 Kwangsi. In the phrase 感恩不盡 the object of the verb is so closely united to it, that it refuses to be displaced by the auxiliary. In 五萬銀子, the 兩 is omitted, as in such cases it often is.

12 The language of a man or of his mother to his wife, remonstrating against her treatment of her sisters-in-law.

14 The last clause of this sentence is the Chinese version of "Six of one and half a dozen of the other." The Northern form goes by multiplication, the Southern by addition. Other numbers are sometimes used in the same way.

15 諸葛亮, otherwise called 孔明, one of the greatest generals known in Chinese history. He was the faithful

adherent of 劉備 Liu Pei, and finally secured him in possession of the throne, A.D. 220. 劉備, said of him, 孔明真神人也, *K'ung Ming is truly a divine man!* It is not certainly known what was the character of the explosives he used, certainly not such as are used in modern warfare. 司馬懿 Commander of the armies of the kingdom of Wei. The historian of the three kingdoms says of him, that he 用兵如神, *handled an army like a god.*

16 怎麼好就怎麼着 *As is best so be it.* A common phrase for "Do as you think best." 那 is often substituted for 怎, the sense being practically the same.

18 混到頭兒 *Run through to the end*—"come to the end of his tether"; 創底鋪喇, *come to the bottom spread*—"down to the bed rock"; 下了架子, *the scaffolding fallen down*—"played out". The three phrases, Northern, Central and Southern, mean substantially the same thing. 混 *confused*, here a verb, to act in a senseless and heedless manner. 鞋頭, shoes with the heels turned down and worn as heelless slippers. 燈籠褲子, trousers that are so thin, and have so many holes in them, that the light and air go through them as they do through a paper lantern. 恹恹恹恹的 The word is repeated to imitate the shuddering sound expressive of cold. The phrase is to be spoken in two couplets. 廣膏, *Canton paste or cake*, so called because foreign opium was first introduced at Canton, and because it comes in the form of a thick paste or cake. 辭筵, *to take leave of the kitchen god*. This is done in every family on the twenty-third of the twelfth month, by presenting to him offerings and prayers. 祭竈 is the form used in some places.

第十八課

LESSON LXXXI.

誰。可教去可樣肯却那今
 ○不友攪沒的報不在個人天
 我¹⁴能很好擾。明說的好官。○車車³有風
 到¹⁴還你。唱。○他¹⁰出來。世上。○遇⁶子。可是風
 你¹³家裏。○你¹³唱。○自⁹己。却。不。利。却
 裏去。○你¹³唱。○自⁹己。却。不。利。却
 去吃飯。○你¹³唱。○自⁹己。却。不。利。却
 你。○你¹³唱。○自⁹己。却。不。利。却
 可。○你¹³唱。○自⁹己。却。不。利。却
 不要。○你¹³唱。○自⁹己。却。不。利。却
 過厚。○你¹³唱。○自⁹己。却。不。利。却
 費。○你¹³唱。○自⁹己。却。不。利。却
 繡¹⁵。○你¹³唱。○自⁹己。却。不。利。却

- 1 There is a breeze to-day, but it is not cool.
- 2 You do not know, but I know.
- 3 That man is severe, it is true; but very amenable to reason.
- 4 The cart is his, but he is not in it.
- 5 They, knowing clearly that Chia Yu Lien is a thief, are yet unwilling to inform the magistrate.
- 6 If you meet with a year of famine, then how will you live?
- 7 There are, however, not many as good men as this in the world.
- 8 Judging from the expression of his face he is very willing, but he has not yet plainly said so.
- 9 Delighting in quiet himself, he is yet constantly (capable of) going to other peoples' houses to raise a disturbance.
- 10 He is not young, it is only that he is small of stature.
- 11 Our fellow christian Chung loves very much to sing, but he sings poorly.
- 12 I owe you, but I cannot pay you at present.
- 13 If he did not embezzle this money, who do you suppose did?
- 14 I will accept your hospitality, but do

LESSON LXXXI.

THE EXCEPTIVE CONJUNCTION.

卻 or 却 To reject,—properly a verb, but chiefly used as a conjunction to introduce an exceptive or adversative clause; but, but then, however, yet, and yet.

可 Can,—is used in the same way and with substantially the same meaning as 卻. Thus used it changes its tone to k'è², and appears to be simply

a colloquial substitute for 卻. Southern Mandarin generally adheres to 卻. Both words, especially the latter, are often used when they amount to little more than a mere expletive or catchword.

却有一件 or 一樣. But there is one thing.

却有一宗 or 一樁. The same.

VOCABULARY.

卻 or 却 Ch'ue⁴, Ch'io⁴. To decline, to reject; but then, however. The original form was 卻, but 却 is now extensively used.
 可 K'è², K'ò². But, then, however:—see Sub. See k'è².
 賈 Chia². A surname. Also ku².
 荒年 Hwang¹ nien². A year of famine.
 攪 Chiao². To stir up; to disorder; to annoy; to excite.

攪擾 Chiao² jao². To embroil, to raise a disturbance, to make a rumpus.
 歲數 Sui⁴ shu⁴. Age (of a person.)
 鍾 Chung¹. A small cup; a surname.
 唱詩 Ch'ang⁴ shi¹. To sing, to sing hymns.
 吞 T'un¹. To swallow whole, to gulp; to seize, to appropriate, to embezzle.
 厚費 Hou⁴ fei². To be bountiful, to spend lavishly, to go to extra expense.

位有的士証不心你聽行球
 的情事，怎麼見，很大裏有說花
 面。○還，可不，想，着奶家東好
 却，○能，能，生，着奶口下鄉看
 有，位，能，的，的，沒，也，○
 一，到，復，的，的，沒，下，了，
 件，我，活，的，的，有，了，雨，
 他，家，呢，○，○，人，却，卻，
 若，裏，○，這，魁，却，生，生，
 再，是，可，壯，弄，混，事，事，
 來，是，奇，○，混，了，定，及，
 尋，是，怪，明，不，了，這，邊，
 事，奇，刺，明，住，親，却，這，
 我，這，人，明，○，却，邊，兒，
 却，却，已，是，他，○，還，沒，
 是，是，經，他，的，沒，娶，○，
 不，將，臭，殺，的，漢，丈，○，
 准，來，爛，的，沒，丈，也，○，
 衆，必，歸，有，也，他，○，○

do not go to any extra expense.
 15 The hydrangea is a beautiful flower, but not very fragrant.
 16 I have a plan, but I do not know whether it will succeed or not.
 17 Without capacity, you yet have a capacity for getting into difficulties; and when you have gotten into a difficulty, you are without any capacity to get out.
 18 I hear that it also rained east of the city, but not so much as it did here.
 19 Have you a wife? Ans. I am engaged, but not yet married.
 20 He is planning to hoodwink [us], but he will not succeed.
 21 His stature is not great, it is true, but he is very stalwart.
 22 It is clear that he killed him, yet without testimony he cannot be convicted.
 23 But this is strange! After a man has decayed and returned to dust, how can he live again? Ans. Strange it certainly is, but it is something that will surely come to pass.
 24 Since you gentlemen have come to my house, I cannot but accede to

過費 Kwot⁴ fei⁴.....Same. (s.)
 繡 Hsiu⁴.....To embroider; variegated, figured.
 球 Ch'iu³.....A sphere, a ball, a globe.
 繡球. The hydrangea.
 生事 Sheng¹ shi⁴. To make trouble, to get into difficulty.
 家下 Chia¹ hsia⁴.....A wife.
 朦 Meng².....To cajole, to humbug.
 混 Meng³ hun⁴. To mislead, to hoodwink, to humbug.
 弄 Meng² lung⁴.....To cajole, to hoodwink.
 漢丈 Han⁴ chang⁴.....Stature, size.
 魁 K'wei².....Chief, highest; best of its class.
 偉 Wei³.....Fine looking; strong, powerful.
 魁偉. Robust, stalwart, athletic.
 崑 K'un¹.....A peak. Extraordinary, elegant (s.)
 崑壯 K'un¹ chwang⁴. Robust, stalwart, athletic (s.)
 証見 Cheng⁴ chien⁴.....Evidence, testimony.
 問罪 Wen⁴ tsui⁴. To convict, to condemn, to regard as guilty.
 臭爛 Ch'ou⁴ lan⁴.....Rotten, decayed.

復活 Fu⁴ hwoi². To come to life again, to rise from the dead.
 情面 Ch'ing² mien⁴. Face, feelings; influence:— Note (24).
 尋事 Hsin² Shi⁴. To raise a disturbance, to make trouble, to annoy.
 宗 Tsung¹. Ancestors; to honor; a clan, a kind or sort; a matter.
 椿 Chwang¹. A post, a stake, a pile; classifier of affairs.—Les. 125.
 摔 Shwai³. To throw, to swing about, to fling, to toss, to jerk. Also shwai². 354
 聒 Kwot¹.....To see dimly, to give attention.
 睬 Ts'ai³.....To pay attention, to notice.
 聒睬. To notice, to heed, to pay attention.
 在意 Tsai⁴ i⁴. To notice, to pay attention, to regard, to heed.
 貌相 Mao⁴ hsiang⁴. Features, physiognomy, visage, looks.
 德 Te². Virtue, goodness; energy, virtue; power, quality; to flourish.
 德行 Te² hsing⁴. Virtue, morals, well doing, worth.

你 們 也 不 是 到 了 那 裏 有 一 宗 去。
 我 也 不 是 到 了 那 裏 有 一 宗 去。
 若 是 到 了 那 裏 有 一 宗 去。
 不 要 理 怨 我。○ 剛 纔 是
 誰 有 兩 個 孩 子 往 東 去 答
 纔 有 兩 個 孩 子 往 東 去 答
 了 我 却 沒 在 聽 他 們 的 貌
 石 頭 却 不 得 意 却 是 人
 相 不 如 人 的 德 行 却 是 人
 所 不 及 的。

your wishes; but one thing you must remember, if he comes again to make trouble, I will hold you responsible.

25 If you really want to go, I will not hinder you; but there is one thing, if after you get there you are homesick, you must not reflect on me.

26 Who was it that just now threw in a stone? Ans. Two boys just now ran towards the east, but I did not notice that they threw any stones.

27 Do not be deceived by the inferiority of his looks; in sterling worth he has few equals.

NOTES.

- 3 可 here makes a concession to something previously said by another. We might translate, *Yes, he is severe, it is true, etc.*
- 4 Putting 他 before the 却 gives it emphasis.
- 9 會, as here used, is very expressive, and is very widely used. The Peking teacher objects to it and substitutes 常, which, however, does not give the force of 會.
- 12 Notice how 現在 precedes the conjunction, although it belongs to the conjunctive clause.
- 17 This sentence is a play on the word 事, and is a smart or pithy saying.
- 19 A wife is known by a variety of epithets. The proper term, which distinguishes her as *wife*, is 妻 or 妻子, but it is not used to any extent in colloquial. When the idea of sex is prominent she is called simply 女人. When spoken of in a careless or depreciating way she is called 老婆. When classed with, or in relation to a husband, she is called 婦 or 婦人. When the family idea is prominent she is called 家裡, or 家下, or 家眷, or 內人, or 賤內. When dignified by the rank of her husband, she

- is called 師娘, or 太太, or 夫人. The term 奶奶, which refers to motherhood, is used for *wife* only in the South.
- 20 人 is here used as an enclitic, but this does not at all interfere with its application to the person speaking. The structure of the sentence does not make it certain whether the reference was to the speaker or to some one else.
- 21 也 is here rendered, *it is true*. Its exact force could only be known from the preceding sentence, or from the idea which gave rise to it.
- 22 問罪 is put for 定罪—the process for the result. This use probably grows out of the custom of charging the crime on the supposed criminal, demanding of him a confession, and enforcing it by torture.
- 23 怪是怪 *Strange it is, or, true it's strange*, a common idiomatic form.
- 24 衆位 *All you gentlemen*. The classifier is put for its noun. 情面, *the face of the feelings*, that is, the face as the exponent or representative of the feelings or sentiments of the mind.
- 28 Mandarin has no *t'ung-hsing* word meaning, *to throw*. The three terms given in the text are all more or less local.

LESSON LXXXII.

FORBIDDING.

別. Don't, you must not,—much used colloquially in Central and Northern Mandarin, and also not infrequently in books. It is used in some places in the South, but not in others; thus it is used in Nanking, but not in Kiukiang. In Eastern Shantung it is read *pai*⁴. It is in reality a contraction of 不要.

休 To reject; do not by any means,—a book term only used colloquially in certain phrases and connections. In some places however it is much used colloquially; thus in Northern Shantung it quite takes the place of 別, being spoken *ho*.

莫 Do not, you should not, there is no need that,—mostly confined to certain phrases and connections. In some parts of the South, however,

as in Kiukiang, it is in constant use and quite takes the place of 別.

不要 Do not want, do not,—much used everywhere, especially in the South, where it takes the place of 別 in the North.

不用 Need not, do not. A milder form than any of the preceding.

不可 Must not, should not, ought not.

不許 Must not, thou shalt not,—gives an authoritative prohibition.

不準 Do not allow; to forbid.

不消 Need not, not worth while.

漫 To overflow,—do not, you need not—always joined with a word meaning *to say*.

課 二 十 八 第

LESSON LXXXII.

門前雪。休管別人瓦上霜。○再不要叫他來喇。我看
 麼講的。你就當怎麼回。不許隨口糊謔。○只管自己
 議。不可強派。○要15小心提防。別洗16出來。○我怎
 錢。○你13們都出去玩兒罷。別在這裏嚷嚷。○只可商
 聞11名。休見面。見面大有限。○依12我說。你不消花那項
 道。○這10本電氣鍍金。別住手兒。三天就抄起來了。○
 是好人。○不要8這樣客氣。○莫9說別人。就是我也知
 ○醜6婦是我妻。休想美貌的。○你7莫別笑話。基督徒。他
 論人。○求4你好歹。莫別露出來。○快喫飯罷。莫別生氣喇。
 你1莫別揪着我。○會2首們不准開賭。○背3地裏不要議

- 1 Don't you take hold of me.
- 2 The headmen do not allow any gambling. [backs.]
- 3 Do not disparage men behind their
- 4 I beg of you, in any case, do not let it leak out.
- 5 Be quick and eat, and don't fret.
- 6 If one has a homely wife, he should not keep thinking of pretty women.
- 7 Do not laugh at Christian; he is a good man.
- 8 Don't be so formal.
- 9 Not to speak of others, even I know it.
- 10 Do not stop, and in three days this book on electroplating will be copied.
- 11 It is better not to meet the man of whose reputation you have heard, for if you meet him face to face, you will find him decidedly commonplace.
- 12 As I see it, you had better not spend that money.
- 13 Out with you all to your play, and don't stay here making a noise.
- 14 You can only consult together, you cannot peremptorily appoint.
- 15 Carry it carefully and don't splash it out.
- 16 You ought to give it just as I explained it. I cannot allow any random guess that comes uppermost.

VOCABULARY.

別 *Pie⁴*. Do not, you must not:—see Sub. See *pie²*.
 會首 *Hui⁴ shou³*. The chairman of a committee or society; headmen, leaders.
 開賭 *K'ai¹ tu³*. To gamble, to open a gambling room.
 議論 *I⁴ lun⁴*. To discuss, to canvass; to criticize, to disparage.
 美 *Mei³*. Delicious; beautiful; excellent.
 美貌 *Mei³ mao⁴*. Beautiful, pretty, handsome.
 笑話 *Hsiao⁴ hwa⁴*. To laugh at, to ridicule, to make fun of.
 基 *Chi¹*. Foundation, possessions, patrimony.
 基督徒 *Chi¹ tu¹ t'u²*. The name given to Bunyan's Christian.

客氣 *K'oa⁴ Ch'i⁴*. Formal, conventional, distant; modest, simpering, bashful.
 電氣 *Tien⁴ ch'i⁴*. Electricity.
 鍍金 *Tu⁴ chin¹*. To gild; to electroplate.
 住手 *Chu⁴ shou³*. To stop, to cease, to desist.
 聞名 *Wen² ming²*. To hear of by reputation.
 見面 *Chien⁴ mien⁴*. To see face to face, to have an interview with.
 洗蕩 *Kwang¹*. To oscillate, to wobble; unsteady.
 蕩 *Tang⁴*. Vast; vagrant, dissipated; to squander; to shake, to agitate.
 洗蕩. To wobble; to slop over, to splash out.
 隨口 *Sui² k'ou³*. Talking at random.
 謔 *Tsou¹*. Jest, raillery; to exaggerate, to lie.

他有甚麼本事。○這不識抬舉的東西，你不用理他，看看吃飽啊。○這不識抬舉的東西，你不用理他，看看去，不准弄在地板上。○來來來，別住筷子，好歹總得這不是凍着喇。○要擤鼻子，或是吐痰，可以到外邊理無錢休進來。○我囑咐你不要脫衣裳，你却不要聽麼吃，可以在外邊要，你莫進來。○衙門，八朝字，開有地下。○別看他常常有病，一點也不少做活。○撒拉在○各照本位，不許亂坐。○再往火爐裏添煤，別忘記了。○你的錢。○我託你抄找幾個玻璃瓶子，你別忘了。○漫說二百八，就是三百也是

- 17 Simply sweep the snow from before your own door; don't meddle with the frost on your neighbor's roof.
- 18 Don't let that man come again. I think he is not to be trusted.
- 19 You need not mention two hundred and eighty. If you said three hundred, you still might keep your money.
- 20 Do not forget those few glass bottles I asked you to get for me.
- 21 Let each one take his own seat; to sit at random is not allowed.
- 22 When you put coal in the stove again, do not spill it on the floor.
- 23 Don't let the fact that she is constantly ailing influence you. She does not [on this account] do any the less work.
- 24 If you want something to eat, ask for it outside, but don't come in.
- 25 The door of the yamên faces the south [opens like the character eight]: having right but not money, do not enter.
- 26 I charged you not to strip off your clothes but you did not mind, and now you have caught cold.
- 27 If you want to blow your nose or to spit, you should go out and not soil the floor.
- 28 Come on, come on, don't lay down

糊謔 *Hu³ tsou¹*. To talk at random; to tell barefaced lies.
 霜 *Shwang¹*. Frost, efflorescence.
 準 *Chun²*. To adjust; to measure; a rule, a gauge; accurate; certain, sure.
 準成 *Chun³ ch'êng²*. Accurate; certain, sure; reliable, trusty.
 抄持 *Ch'ao¹ ch'í²*. To get up, to make a raise of, to rake up. (L.)
 落 *La⁴*. To forget, to leave behind, to drop; to be late. See *la²* and *lo⁴*.
 拉落 *La¹ la⁴*. To scatter, to spill, to draggle.
 擤 *Hsing²*. To blow or wipe the nose with the hand.
 鼻 *Pí²*. The nose.
 涕 *T'í¹*. Tears; to weep; mucus from the nose.
 鼻涕. Mucus from the nose, snivel.
 地板 *T'í⁴ pan⁵*. A board floor, the floor.
 痰 *T'an²*. Phlegm, mucus from the lungs.

抬舉 *T'ai² chü³*. To exalt, to honor; to compliment; to treat well.
 隨機應變 *Sui² ch'í¹ ying⁴ pien⁴*. To adapt oneself to circumstances.—Note (31).
 倒針 *Tao⁴ chên¹*. To backstitch.
 跑針 *P'ao⁵ chên¹*. To run (a seam).
 縣太爺 *Hsien⁴ t'ai⁴ yie²*. His honor the magistrate.—Note (32).
 光棍 *Kwang¹ kun⁴*. "A bare pole," a bachelor; a rowdy, a rough; a daredevil, a sharper; exemplary, unassailable; spruce, comely.
 倣 *Ch'iao⁴*. Silly, half witted.
 冒犯 *Mao⁴ fan⁴*. To offend, to anger, to affront, to provoke.
 奸 *Chien¹*. Crafty, traitorous, corrupt.
 奸邪 *Chien¹ hsie²*. Corrupt, wicked.
 兇惡 *Hsiung¹ ô⁴*. Vicious, villainous; evil, sinful.
 着忙 *Chox² mang²*. Hastily, in a hurry; flurried.

第三十八課

LESSON LXXXIII.

聽。○ 憑 怎 少 裏 有 子 只 他¹
 ○ 無⁹ 怎麼 回 也 作 都 管 任
 不¹⁰ 論 麼 樣 總 說 得 好 甚
 拘 是 樣 你 不 得 聲 聲 麼
 大 誰 我 可 許 過 這 我⁴ 都
 事 勸 他 得 他 去 個 我⁴ 不
 小 他 比 給 進 話 不 憑 你
 事 他 你 我 來 管 他 辦 去
 都 就 長 錢 來 他 說 他 辦
 要 是 幾 錢 別⁷ 他 說 他 辦
 謙 不 歲 任⁸ 管 多 那 沒 法
 去

- 1 He pays no attention to anything at all.
- 2 If you want to go, just go.
- 3 Go and arrange it as you like. Both plans are good.
- 4 I let him talk and said nothing.
- 5 This statement will pass anywhere.
- 6 No matter how often he comes, by no means let him come in.
- 7 No difference what you say, you must give me the money.
- 8 No matter how you put it, I am still several years older than you.
- 9 No matter who exhorts him, he will not listen.
- 10 In everything, whether great or small, be conciliatory and not self opinionated.

a correct translation. Such forms are much more frequently used in Chinese than in English.

27 弄 here expresses the idea in a form which no English translation will reproduce.

28 Said by a host to his guests at the beginning of a fresh course. The 來來來 is a cordial invitation to each one to take up his chopsticks and begin to eat. 好歹 is used apologetically.

29 不識抬舉. Not to appreciate an honor or compliment, but, on the contrary, to take it as a want of courage or spirit, and so presume upon it.

31 隨機應變. Follow the turn of affairs and respond to the change [by a corresponding change of plan]; that is, to adapt oneself to circumstances, to be equal to the occasion. 板上釘釘, To drive a nail in a board, that is, a nail driven in a board is fixed once for all, and is unchangeable. There is perhaps also a pun or play on the

word 板, which often means, *stiff, obstinate*. The phrase is just the opposite of 隨機應變.

32 縣太爺 A respectful designation of the Hsien magistrate. Formerly magistrates were addressed as 太爺, but this title is now generally superseded by that of 大老爺.

35 養了 etc. Lit. Has raised this present-life-recompense-half-witted son. Buddhism has disseminated everywhere in China the Brahmanical notion that butchering cattle for beef is a great sin. The recompense in this case was a half-witted son.

37 別家 is the Peking form. In some places 別的 is said as if written 別得, which was probably the original form. Nanking rejects both forms and uses a triple 別, which is also widely used, but not to the exclusion of the other forms.

LESSON LXXXIII.

CONCESSIVES.

任 To allow, to permit; any,—as 任什麼 anything, 任誰 anyone, etc.

憑 According to; as [you] like; it rests with.

任憑 To allow; to suffer; to let; no matter.

任管 Same as 任憑,—but local.

管 or 不管 No matter; be as it will; as [you] please; any. The addition of 不, strange to say, makes very little difference in the meaning.

無管 Same as 不管.

只管 Just, simply, freely, without hesitation.

任管 No matter; as [you] please.

論 As to, with reference to.

不論 or 無論 No matter; irrespective of; whether.

不拘 No difference; no matter; irrespective of; in any case.

無拘 Same, but local.

別管 It matters not; no difference; by no means.

隨 As [you] like, as [you] please. When thus used it is, in Central Mandarin, frequently read *ts'ui*.

隨便 As [you] like, at [your] convenience. Much used in the South.

由 To allow, to let, to give way to.

己的心以後聽天由命也就是了。○若見他罵人，
 馬心裏只依着兄弟的言語。○我管盡到了自
 要留幾個錢今日用。○武大郎忍氣吞聲，由他咒
 長的周正。○我早知道今日受苦不拘怎麼樣也
 也不上火。○論標綬也不很標綬就是頭那裏下
 臉色和平。○李大爺實在柔順，別管怎麼催他，他
 管他怎麼說罷。○不論大小生意，要價還價，都要
 麼事，只要熟練就容易了。○他沒說到我們跟前，
 不動。○我還要拜望他去，見不見憑他。○不無拘甚
 讓，不可自是。○任憑你怎樣求他，他的心連動也

- 11 Entreat him as you will, his sympathies are not even touched.
- 12 I still am going to call on him, he may see me or not as he likes.
- 13 No matter what it is, only get accustomed to it and it becomes easy.
- 14 Since he has not said it in our presence, let him talk as he pleases.
- 15 In business, whether great or small, both in asking and in offering a price, a pleasant expression of countenance should always be preserved.
- 16 Uncle Li is emphatically apathetic (easy going). No matter how you hurry him he never gets excited.
- 17 As to looks, she is not very pretty, but she is well-proportioned in every respect.
- 18 I knew before that we should be in want at this time, hence I was determined, in any case, to keep a few cash for the present emergency.
- 19 Wu the Elder restrained his anger and kept silent and let her abuse him, keeping in mind his brother's words.
- 20 I simply act according to the best of my ability, and leave the rest to Heaven and fate.
- 21 If you see him reviling any one or

VOCABULARY.

謙 *Ch'ien*¹. Respectful, unassuming, modest; yielding; humble.
 謙讓 *Ch'ien*¹ *jang*⁴. Yielding, complaisant obliging, conciliatory
 悉熟 *Hsi*²¹. Fully, minutely, thoroughly.
 熟練 *Shu*² *lien*⁴. Experienced, practiced, conversant, accustomed to.
 熟悉 *Shu*² *hsi*². Practiced, accustomed to, familiar with, pat.
 要價 *Yao*⁴ *chia*⁴. To ask a price, the price asked.
 還價 *Huan*² *chia*⁴. To make an offer (in response to a price asked.)
 臉色 *Lien*³ *sé*⁴. Expression, color.
 顏龐 *Man*¹. A large full face.
 預頹 *Han*¹. A large face.
 預頹. Sluggish, dilatory; apathetic, phlegmatic.
 柔綿 *Jou*² *mien*². Compliant, easy going, submissive, passive.
 上火 *Shang*⁴ *hwoa*³. To get excited; to become angry.

周正 *Chou*¹ *chêng*⁴. Complete, symmetrical, well proportioned, shapely.
 忍氣 *Jên*³ *ch'i*⁴. To restrain anger, to control one's temper.
 吞聲 *T'un*¹ *shêng*¹. To hold the tongue, to keep quiet, to be silent.
 咒 *Chou*⁴. To curse, to imprecate, to swear; a charm, a litany.
 咒罵 *Chou*⁴ *ma*⁴. To curse, to revile, to ex-crate, to abuse.
 漆 *Ch'i*¹. Varnish, lacquer; to varnish; black.
 烏 *Wu*¹. The crow; black, dark, dull.
 膽量 *Tan*³ *liang*⁴. Courage, bravery.
 天生 *T'ien*¹ *shêng*¹. Inborn, natural, instinctive.
 賦 *Fu*⁴. To levy a tax, to spread out; a kind of verse; a ballad, an idyl.
 典故 *Tien*³ *ku*⁴. A precedent, an authority, a quotation, an allusion.
 俗氣 *Su*² *ch'i*⁴. Commonplace, hackneyed.

和孩子打架，無論他是，就先打他。○這個
 漆實在不好，不論漆幾遍，總是發烏，一點也不
 亮。○人的瞻量大小，是天生的，一點也不由人。
 ○我們念書的人，無論是作文章，是作詩賦，必
 得有典故，纔不俗氣。○媽啊，我的褂子，買上個
 綠花洋布，護托領，好不好？
 麼，外行總是不行。○人若有驕傲，吝嗇，這兩樣
 毛病，再別管有多少好處，也白費了。○楊崑
 山真是寬宏大量，無論人怎樣毀謗，他都能安
 然受着，總不見他發作。○不用等，我們各人隨

- fighting with other children, no matter whether he is in the right or in the wrong, first whip him.
- 22 This varnish is exceedingly poor; no matter how many coats you put on, it is still dull and without the least luster.
- 23 The amount of a man's courage is the bestowment of nature; it is not in the least under his own control.
- 24 We scholars, whether writing an essay or composing poetry, must make quotations in order not to be commonplace.
- 25 Mother, may I buy a green print collar for my gown? Ans. Just as you like.
- 26 No matter in what line it is, an inexperienced hand will not succeed.
- 27 Let a man have these two faults; pride and stinginess, and no matter how many excellences he has, they go for nothing (are all vitiated).
- 28 Yang K'un Shan is truly a generous and magnanimous man. No matter how people vilify him, he is able to bear it all with equanimity, never showing any vexation.

外行 *Wai⁴ hang²*. One outside of a profession, untrained, inexperienced.

吝嗇 *Li⁴*. Stingy, sordid, parsimonious.

吝嗇 *Se⁴*. Harvest; avaricious, stingy; frugal.

吝嗇 *Chui⁴*. Stingy, mean, niggardly.

贅累 *Chui⁴ lei⁴*. To hamper, to encumber, to throw in; obstruct; to clog, to vitiate.

白贅 *Pai² chui⁴*. Thrown in, superfluous, useless, for nothing. (c.)

帶掉 *Tai⁴ tiao⁴*. To neutralize, to render null; to spoil, to vitiate. (s.)

宏寬 *Hung²*. Vast, ample, wide.

宏寬 *Kwan¹ hung²*. Liberal-minded, generous, large-hearted.

大量 *Ta⁴ liang⁴*. Magnanimous, open-handed, of large capacity, gifted.

毀 *Hui³*. To break down, to destroy, to abolish, to ruin; to slander, to vilify.

毀謗 *Hui³ pang⁴*. To defame, to calumniate, to slander, to vilify.

安然 *An¹ jan²*. Peacefully, tranquilly, with equanimity.

涵養 *Han³ yang³*. Self-control, magnanimity, patience, long suffering.

矜 *Ching¹*. To pity; to regret; boastful, vaunting; passionate, impatient.

闊 *Kw'oi⁴*. Broad, ample; liberal, lavish.

開通 *K'ai¹ tung¹*. Clear-headed, clever, judicious.

開脫 *K'ai¹ t'oi¹*. The same. (s.)

開闊 *K'ai¹ k'woi⁴*. The same. (s.)

無怪 *Wu² kwai⁴*. No wonder.

盡力 *Chin⁴ li⁴*. With the might, to the utmost, one's best.

歇手 *Hsie¹ shou³*. To stop, to desist, to quit.

河路 *Ho² lu⁴*. River travel.

平安 *P'ing² an¹*. Peaceful, safe, secure.

壯班 *Chwang⁴ pan¹*. Official guard:—Note (35).

擺治 *Pai³ chi⁴*. To operate on, to put through, to ply; to maltreat, to torture.

佈 *Pu⁴*. To spread out, to extend; to arrange; to publish.

擺佈 *Pai³ pu⁴*. To spread out, to arrange; to maltreat, to torture.

佈治他，他就是不出油兒。
 班問孫通子要班規錢，隨隨便便管怎麼樣難爲他，擺
 走妥當，答隨他們罷，怎麼妥當就怎麼走。○壯³⁵
 ○船主說，現在河路很不平安，不如按着站數³⁴
 是點了頭，必要替你盡力的辦，不成不肯歇手。
 他。○不拘誰託他一件事，他³³不應該就罷了，他若
 不說話辦事，真是開³¹關脫通，無怪他父親常誇獎³²
 麼事，也不能改他那不矜不躁的樣子。○王六³²
 罷了。○人若用到了涵養的工夫，不拘碰着甚³¹
 便罷。○請你要緊的想着，³⁰別管怎麼樣，不要忘

29 You need not wait; we will each go at his own convenience.
 30 Please bear it carefully in mind, and do not by any means forget it.
 31 When a man is thoroughly schooled in self-control, no matter what happens, it cannot disturb his dispassionate manner.
 32 Without question, Wang the sixth is judicious both in speaking and acting. No wonder his father is constantly boasting of him.
 33 No difference who applies to him for assistance, if he does not promise, that is the end of it; but if he assents, he will do his best and will not cease till he has accomplished it.
 34 The captain says that just now river travel is very unsafe; to go by the regular stages will be the more satisfactory. Ans. Just as they like: proceed in whatever way is thought best.
 35 The chwang pan demanded the usual fees of Sun T'ung-tsi, but in spite of all their maltreatment, and of torture, he refused to disgorge.

NOTES.

1 不管 as here used is not intended to illustrate the subject of the lesson, this is done by 任.
 5 This sentence might perhaps be taken as referring to language simply, and be translated, *This language or phraseology will pass current anywhere.* In this case, however, 這個話 should rather be 這句話, and 說得過去 should be simply 說得, or 說得去.
 12 As here used, 拜望他去, is not quite equivalent to 去拜望他. The order is changed in order to throw stress on the 去.
 18 今日 *To-day*,—put indefinitely for the present, which, however, is not a colloquial but a book usage.
 19 大郎 properly, *eldest son*, but here used simply as a name. This 武大郎 lived in the Sung Dynasty, and was noted for his imbecility and deformity of person. He had no given name—was not considered worth one, being simply called the *elder Wu*. He had a virago of a wife, who, with the aid of one of her paramours, finally murdered him. He had, however, a brother of distinguished ability called 武松 who afterwards avenged his death. He is one of the characters in the "History of Robbers," from which this sentence is taken. He is frequently introduced in theatrical plays, hence his name is familiar to the people. The person here spoken of as reviling him was his wife.
 20 聽天由命 *Yield to heaven and submit to fate*—a book phrase which combines the ideas of providence and fate.
 21 無論他是不是 is an abbreviation for 無論是他的是, 是他的不是, *No matter whether it is his*

right or his wrong. This is an approved maxim of Chinese parental policy.
 24 Elegance of style in Chinese depends largely on the constant use of classical figures, allusions, and quotations.
 25 綠花洋布. Note the three qualifying adjectives in succession.
 27 帶掉 is the Nanking form. 掉 is an auxiliary verb much used in the South:—Les. 92.
 29 The use of 等 in the first clause, shows that the convenience referred to was that of going or starting away, hence *go* is supplied in the translation.
 31 涵養的工夫 Time and effort spent in schooling the temper and acquiring the art of self-control. 到了, that is, to the point of a thorough acquirement. 不矜不躁, *Not passionate, not fretful*,—a book phrase.
 32 誇獎他 does not here mean to praise him, as it might seem to do, but to boast of him to others.
 35 壯班, a class or section of the 衙役 in a magistrate's office, who are his special guard, and are entrusted with the business of arresting and confining prisoners in civil cases. When a man is arrested, he is required by custom to pay a fine to the 班, or class, arresting him, which is more or less, according to the ability of the prisoner. If he refuses to pay, or to pay as much as is required, all sorts of cruel devices are resorted to in order to extract it from him. He is at the mercy of these rapacious underlings. 不出油, *Will not give out the oil*,—a significant figure taken from the extracting of oil from beans by pressure.

第四十八課

LESSON LXXXIV.

隔¹喇²欺³名⁴我⁵咱⁶○使⁷了⁸是⁹我¹⁰咱¹¹
 忒¹²咱¹³負¹⁴的¹⁵們¹⁶他¹⁷嗎¹⁸嗎¹⁹我²⁰俺²¹們²²歇²³
 遠²⁴們²⁵咱²⁶們²⁷秀²⁸那²⁹他³⁰納³¹○您³²大³³歇³⁴
 不³⁵們³⁶們³⁷才³⁸兒³⁹這⁴⁰你⁴¹納⁴²的⁴³歇⁴⁴
 能⁴⁵一⁴⁶咱⁴⁷○咱⁴⁸不⁴⁹年⁵⁰這⁵¹的⁵²○眾⁵³
 常⁵⁴會⁵⁵們⁵⁶也⁵⁷兒⁵⁸如⁵⁹病⁶⁰誰⁶¹照⁶²應⁶³家⁶⁴裏⁶⁵呢⁶⁶○
 在⁶⁷一⁶⁸們⁶⁹所⁷⁰見⁷¹的⁷²全⁷³不⁷⁴錯⁷⁵○酒⁷⁶多⁷⁷人⁷⁸出⁷⁹
 塊⁸⁰兒⁸¹○咱⁸²們⁸³家⁸⁴裏⁸⁵相⁸⁶多⁸⁷人⁸⁸出⁸⁹
 兒⁹⁰○咱⁹¹們⁹²家⁹³裏⁹⁴相⁹⁵多⁹⁶人⁹⁷出⁹⁸
 兒⁹⁹○咱¹⁰⁰們¹⁰¹家¹⁰²裏¹⁰³相¹⁰⁴多¹⁰⁵人¹⁰⁶出¹⁰⁷
 兒¹⁰⁸○咱¹⁰⁹們¹¹⁰家¹¹¹裏¹¹²相¹¹³多¹¹⁴人¹¹⁵出¹¹⁶
 兒¹¹⁷○咱¹¹⁸們¹¹⁹家¹²⁰裏¹²¹相¹²²多¹²³人¹²⁴出¹²⁵
 兒¹²⁶○咱¹²⁷們¹²⁸家¹²⁹裏¹³⁰相¹³¹多¹³²人¹³³出¹³⁴
 兒¹³⁵○咱¹³⁶們¹³⁷家¹³⁸裏¹³⁹相¹⁴⁰多¹⁴¹人¹⁴²出¹⁴³
 兒¹⁴⁴○咱¹⁴⁵們¹⁴⁶家¹⁴⁷裏¹⁴⁸相¹⁴⁹多¹⁵⁰人¹⁵¹出¹⁵²
 兒¹⁵³○咱¹⁵⁴們¹⁵⁵家¹⁵⁶裏¹⁵⁷相¹⁵⁸多¹⁵⁹人¹⁶⁰出¹⁶¹
 兒¹⁶²○咱¹⁶³們¹⁶⁴家¹⁶⁵裏¹⁶⁶相¹⁶⁷多¹⁶⁸人¹⁶⁹出¹⁷⁰
 兒¹⁷¹○咱¹⁷²們¹⁷³家¹⁷⁴裏¹⁷⁵相¹⁷⁶多¹⁷⁷人¹⁷⁸出¹⁷⁹
 兒¹⁸⁰○咱¹⁸¹們¹⁸²家¹⁸³裏¹⁸⁴相¹⁸⁵多¹⁸⁶人¹⁸⁷出¹⁸⁸
 兒¹⁸⁹○咱¹⁹⁰們¹⁹¹家¹⁹²裏¹⁹³相¹⁹⁴多¹⁹⁵人¹⁹⁶出¹⁹⁷
 兒¹⁹⁸○咱¹⁹⁹們²⁰⁰家²⁰¹裏²⁰²相²⁰³多²⁰⁴人²⁰⁵出²⁰⁶
 兒²⁰⁷○咱²⁰⁸們²⁰⁹家²¹⁰裏²¹¹相²¹²多²¹³人²¹⁴出²¹⁵
 兒²¹⁶○咱²¹⁷們²¹⁸家²¹⁹裏²²⁰相²²¹多²²²人²²³出²²⁴
 兒²²⁵○咱²²⁶們²²⁷家²²⁸裏²²⁹相²³⁰多²³¹人²³²出²³³
 兒²³⁴○咱²³⁵們²³⁶家²³⁷裏²³⁸相²³⁹多²⁴⁰人²⁴¹出²⁴²
 兒²⁴³○咱²⁴⁴們²⁴⁵家²⁴⁶裏²⁴⁷相²⁴⁸多²⁴⁹人²⁵⁰出²⁵¹
 兒²⁵²○咱²⁵³們²⁵⁴家²⁵⁵裏²⁵⁶相²⁵⁷多²⁵⁸人²⁵⁹出²⁶⁰
 兒²⁶¹○咱²⁶²們²⁶³家²⁶⁴裏²⁶⁵相²⁶⁶多²⁶⁷人²⁶⁸出²⁶⁹
 兒²⁷⁰○咱²⁷¹們²⁷²家²⁷³裏²⁷⁴相²⁷⁵多²⁷⁶人²⁷⁷出²⁷⁸
 兒²⁷⁹○咱²⁸⁰們²⁸¹家²⁸²裏²⁸³相²⁸⁴多²⁸⁵人²⁸⁶出²⁸⁷
 兒²⁸⁸○咱²⁸⁹們²⁹⁰家²⁹¹裏²⁹²相²⁹³多²⁹⁴人²⁹⁵出²⁹⁶
 兒²⁹⁷○咱²⁹⁸們²⁹⁹家³⁰⁰裏³⁰¹相³⁰²多³⁰³人³⁰⁴出³⁰⁵
 兒³⁰⁶○咱³⁰⁷們³⁰⁸家³⁰⁹裏³¹⁰相³¹¹多³¹²人³¹³出³¹⁴
 兒³¹⁵○咱³¹⁶們³¹⁷家³¹⁸裏³¹⁹相³²⁰多³²¹人³²²出³²³
 兒³²⁴○咱³²⁵們³²⁶家³²⁷裏³²⁸相³²⁹多³³⁰人³³¹出³³²
 兒³³³○咱³³⁴們³³⁵家³³⁶裏³³⁷相³³⁸多³³⁹人³⁴⁰出³⁴¹
 兒³⁴²○咱³⁴³們³⁴⁴家³⁴⁵裏³⁴⁶相³⁴⁷多³⁴⁸人³⁴⁹出³⁵⁰
 兒³⁵¹○咱³⁵²們³⁵³家³⁵⁴裏³⁵⁵相³⁵⁶多³⁵⁷人³⁵⁸出³⁵⁹
 兒³⁶⁰○咱³⁶¹們³⁶²家³⁶³裏³⁶⁴相³⁶⁵多³⁶⁶人³⁶⁷出³⁶⁸
 兒³⁶⁹○咱³⁷⁰們³⁷¹家³⁷²裏³⁷³相³⁷⁴多³⁷⁵人³⁷⁶出³⁷⁷
 兒³⁷⁸○咱³⁷⁹們³⁸⁰家³⁸¹裏³⁸²相³⁸³多³⁸⁴人³⁸⁵出³⁸⁶
 兒³⁸⁷○咱³⁸⁸們³⁸⁹家³⁹⁰裏³⁹¹相³⁹²多³⁹³人³⁹⁴出³⁹⁵
 兒³⁹⁶○咱³⁹⁷們³⁹⁸家³⁹⁹裏⁴⁰⁰相⁴⁰¹多⁴⁰²人⁴⁰³出⁴⁰⁴
 兒⁴⁰⁵○咱⁴⁰⁶們⁴⁰⁷家⁴⁰⁸裏⁴⁰⁹相⁴¹⁰多⁴¹¹人⁴¹²出⁴¹³
 兒⁴¹⁴○咱⁴¹⁵們⁴¹⁶家⁴¹⁷裏⁴¹⁸相⁴¹⁹多⁴²⁰人⁴²¹出⁴²²
 兒⁴²³○咱⁴²⁴們⁴²⁵家⁴²⁶裏⁴²⁷相⁴²⁸多⁴²⁹人⁴³⁰出⁴³¹
 兒⁴³²○咱⁴³³們⁴³⁴家⁴³⁵裏⁴³⁶相⁴³⁷多⁴³⁸人⁴³⁹出⁴⁴⁰
 兒⁴⁴¹○咱⁴⁴²們⁴⁴³家⁴⁴⁴裏⁴⁴⁵相⁴⁴⁶多⁴⁴⁷人⁴⁴⁸出⁴⁴⁹
 兒⁴⁵⁰○咱⁴⁵¹們⁴⁵²家⁴⁵³裏⁴⁵⁴相⁴⁵⁵多⁴⁵⁶人⁴⁵⁷出⁴⁵⁸
 兒⁴⁵⁹○咱⁴⁶⁰們⁴⁶¹家⁴⁶²裏⁴⁶³相⁴⁶⁴多⁴⁶⁵人⁴⁶⁶出⁴⁶⁷
 兒⁴⁶⁸○咱⁴⁶⁹們⁴⁷⁰家⁴⁷¹裏⁴⁷²相⁴⁷³多⁴⁷⁴人⁴⁷⁵出⁴⁷⁶
 兒⁴⁷⁷○咱⁴⁷⁸們⁴⁷⁹家⁴⁸⁰裏⁴⁸¹相⁴⁸²多⁴⁸³人⁴⁸⁴出⁴⁸⁵
 兒⁴⁸⁶○咱⁴⁸⁷們⁴⁸⁸家⁴⁸⁹裏⁴⁹⁰相⁴⁹¹多⁴⁹²人⁴⁹³出⁴⁹⁴
 兒⁴⁹⁵○咱⁴⁹⁶們⁴⁹⁷家⁴⁹⁸裏⁴⁹⁹相⁵⁰⁰多⁵⁰¹人⁵⁰²出⁵⁰³
 兒⁵⁰⁴○咱⁵⁰⁵們⁵⁰⁶家⁵⁰⁷裏⁵⁰⁸相⁵⁰⁹多⁵¹⁰人⁵¹¹出⁵¹²
 兒⁵¹³○咱⁵¹⁴們⁵¹⁵家⁵¹⁶裏⁵¹⁷相⁵¹⁸多⁵¹⁹人⁵²⁰出⁵²¹
 兒⁵²²○咱⁵²³們⁵²⁴家⁵²⁵裏⁵²⁶相⁵²⁷多⁵²⁸人⁵²⁹出⁵³⁰
 兒⁵³¹○咱⁵³²們⁵³³家⁵³⁴裏⁵³⁵相⁵³⁶多⁵³⁷人⁵³⁸出⁵³⁹
 兒⁵⁴⁰○咱⁵⁴¹們⁵⁴²家⁵⁴³裏⁵⁴⁴相⁵⁴⁵多⁵⁴⁶人⁵⁴⁷出⁵⁴⁸
 兒⁵⁴⁹○咱⁵⁵⁰們⁵⁵¹家⁵⁵²裏⁵⁵³相⁵⁵⁴多⁵⁵⁵人⁵⁵⁶出⁵⁵⁷
 兒⁵⁵⁸○咱⁵⁵⁹們⁵⁶⁰家⁵⁶¹裏⁵⁶²相⁵⁶³多⁵⁶⁴人⁵⁶⁵出⁵⁶⁶
 兒⁵⁶⁷○咱⁵⁶⁸們⁵⁶⁹家⁵⁷⁰裏⁵⁷¹相⁵⁷²多⁵⁷³人⁵⁷⁴出⁵⁷⁵
 兒⁵⁷⁶○咱⁵⁷⁷們⁵⁷⁸家⁵⁷⁹裏⁵⁸⁰相⁵⁸¹多⁵⁸²人⁵⁸³出⁵⁸⁴
 兒⁵⁸⁵○咱⁵⁸⁶們⁵⁸⁷家⁵⁸⁸裏⁵⁸⁹相⁵⁹⁰多⁵⁹¹人⁵⁹²出⁵⁹³
 兒⁵⁹⁴○咱⁵⁹⁵們⁵⁹⁶家⁵⁹⁷裏⁵⁹⁸相⁵⁹⁹多⁶⁰⁰人⁶⁰¹出⁶⁰²
 兒⁶⁰³○咱⁶⁰⁴們⁶⁰⁵家⁶⁰⁶裏⁶⁰⁷相⁶⁰⁸多⁶⁰⁹人⁶¹⁰出⁶¹¹
 兒⁶¹²○咱⁶¹³們⁶¹⁴家⁶¹⁵裏⁶¹⁶相⁶¹⁷多⁶¹⁸人⁶¹⁹出⁶²⁰
 兒⁶²¹○咱⁶²²們⁶²³家⁶²⁴裏⁶²⁵相⁶²⁶多⁶²⁷人⁶²⁸出⁶²⁹
 兒⁶³⁰○咱⁶³¹們⁶³²家⁶³³裏⁶³⁴相⁶³⁵多⁶³⁶人⁶³⁷出⁶³⁸
 兒⁶³⁹○咱⁶⁴⁰們⁶⁴¹家⁶⁴²裏⁶⁴³相⁶⁴⁴多⁶⁴⁵人⁶⁴⁶出⁶⁴⁷
 兒⁶⁴⁸○咱⁶⁴⁹們⁶⁵⁰家⁶⁵¹裏⁶⁵²相⁶⁵³多⁶⁵⁴人⁶⁵⁵出⁶⁵⁶
 兒⁶⁵⁷○咱⁶⁵⁸們⁶⁵⁹家⁶⁶⁰裏⁶⁶¹相⁶⁶²多⁶⁶³人⁶⁶⁴出⁶⁶⁵
 兒⁶⁶⁶○咱⁶⁶⁷們⁶⁶⁸家⁶⁶⁹裏⁶⁷⁰相⁶⁷¹多⁶⁷²人⁶⁷³出⁶⁷⁴
 兒⁶⁷⁵○咱⁶⁷⁶們⁶⁷⁷家⁶⁷⁸裏⁶⁷⁹相⁶⁸⁰多⁶⁸¹人⁶⁸²出⁶⁸³
 兒⁶⁸⁴○咱⁶⁸⁵們⁶⁸⁶家⁶⁸⁷裏⁶⁸⁸相⁶⁸⁹多⁶⁹⁰人⁶⁹¹出⁶⁹²
 兒⁶⁹³○咱⁶⁹⁴們⁶⁹⁵家⁶⁹⁶裏⁶⁹⁷相⁶⁹⁸多⁶⁹⁹人⁷⁰⁰出⁷⁰¹
 兒⁷⁰²○咱⁷⁰³們⁷⁰⁴家⁷⁰⁵裏⁷⁰⁶相⁷⁰⁷多⁷⁰⁸人⁷⁰⁹出⁷¹⁰
 兒⁷¹¹○咱⁷¹²們⁷¹³家⁷¹⁴裏⁷¹⁵相⁷¹⁶多⁷¹⁷人⁷¹⁸出⁷¹⁹
 兒⁷²⁰○咱⁷²¹們⁷²²家⁷²³裏⁷²⁴相⁷²⁵多⁷²⁶人⁷²⁷出⁷²⁸
 兒⁷²⁹○咱⁷³⁰們⁷³¹家⁷³²裏⁷³³相⁷³⁴多⁷³⁵人⁷³⁶出⁷³⁷
 兒⁷³⁸○咱⁷³⁹們⁷⁴⁰家⁷⁴¹裏⁷⁴²相⁷⁴³多⁷⁴⁴人⁷⁴⁵出⁷⁴⁶
 兒⁷⁴⁷○咱⁷⁴⁸們⁷⁴⁹家⁷⁵⁰裏⁷⁵¹相⁷⁵²多⁷⁵³人⁷⁵⁴出⁷⁵⁵
 兒⁷⁵⁶○咱⁷⁵⁷們⁷⁵⁸家⁷⁵⁹裏⁷⁶⁰相⁷⁶¹多⁷⁶²人⁷⁶³出⁷⁶⁴
 兒⁷⁶⁵○咱⁷⁶⁶們⁷⁶⁷家⁷⁶⁸裏⁷⁶⁹相⁷⁷⁰多⁷⁷¹人⁷⁷²出⁷⁷³
 兒⁷⁷⁴○咱⁷⁷⁵們⁷⁷⁶家⁷⁷⁷裏⁷⁷⁸相⁷⁷⁹多⁷⁸⁰人⁷⁸¹出⁷⁸²
 兒⁷⁸³○咱⁷⁸⁴們⁷⁸⁵家⁷⁸⁶裏⁷⁸⁷相⁷⁸⁸多⁷⁸⁹人⁷⁹⁰出⁷⁹¹
 兒⁷⁹²○咱⁷⁹³們⁷⁹⁴家⁷⁹⁵裏⁷⁹⁶相⁷⁹⁷多⁷⁹⁸人⁷⁹⁹出⁸⁰⁰
 兒⁸⁰¹○咱⁸⁰²們⁸⁰³家⁸⁰⁴裏⁸⁰⁵相⁸⁰⁶多⁸⁰⁷人⁸⁰⁸出⁸⁰⁹
 兒⁸¹⁰○咱⁸¹¹們⁸¹²家⁸¹³裏⁸¹⁴相⁸¹⁵多⁸¹⁶人⁸¹⁷出⁸¹⁸
 兒⁸¹⁹○咱⁸²⁰們⁸²¹家⁸²²裏⁸²³相⁸²⁴多⁸²⁵人⁸²⁶出⁸²⁷
 兒⁸²⁸○咱⁸²⁹們⁸³⁰家⁸³¹裏⁸³²相⁸³³多⁸³⁴人⁸³⁵出⁸³⁶
 兒⁸³⁷○咱⁸³⁸們⁸³⁹家⁸⁴⁰裏⁸⁴¹相⁸⁴²多⁸⁴³人⁸⁴⁴出⁸⁴⁵
 兒⁸⁴⁶○咱⁸⁴⁷們⁸⁴⁸家⁸⁴⁹裏⁸⁵⁰相⁸⁵¹多⁸⁵²人⁸⁵³出⁸⁵⁴
 兒⁸⁵⁵○咱⁸⁵⁶們⁸⁵⁷家⁸⁵⁸裏⁸⁵⁹相⁸⁶⁰多⁸⁶¹人⁸⁶²出⁸⁶³
 兒⁸⁶⁴○咱⁸⁶⁵們⁸⁶⁶家⁸⁶⁷裏⁸⁶⁸相⁸⁶⁹多⁸⁷⁰人⁸⁷¹出⁸⁷²
 兒⁸⁷³○咱⁸⁷⁴們⁸⁷⁵家⁸⁷⁶裏⁸⁷⁷相⁸⁷⁸多⁸⁷⁹人⁸⁸⁰出⁸⁸¹
 兒⁸⁸²○咱⁸⁸³們⁸⁸⁴家⁸⁸⁵裏⁸⁸⁶相⁸⁸⁷多⁸⁸⁸人⁸⁸⁹出⁸⁹⁰
 兒⁸⁹¹○咱⁸⁹²們⁸⁹³家⁸⁹⁴裏⁸⁹⁵相⁸⁹⁶多⁸⁹⁷人⁸⁹⁸出⁸⁹⁹
 兒⁹⁰⁰○咱⁹⁰¹們⁹⁰²家⁹⁰³裏⁹⁰⁴相⁹⁰⁵多⁹⁰⁶人⁹⁰⁷出⁹⁰⁸
 兒⁹⁰⁹○咱⁹¹⁰們⁹¹¹家⁹¹²裏⁹¹³相⁹¹⁴多⁹¹⁵人⁹¹⁶出⁹¹⁷
 兒⁹¹⁸○咱⁹¹⁹們⁹²⁰家⁹²¹裏⁹²²相⁹²³多⁹²⁴人⁹²⁵出⁹²⁶
 兒⁹²⁷○咱⁹²⁸們⁹²⁹家⁹³⁰裏⁹³¹相⁹³²多⁹³³人⁹³⁴出⁹³⁵
 兒⁹³⁶○咱⁹³⁷們⁹³⁸家⁹³⁹裏⁹⁴⁰相⁹⁴¹多⁹⁴²人⁹⁴³出⁹⁴⁴
 兒⁹⁴⁵○咱⁹⁴⁶們⁹⁴⁷家⁹⁴⁸裏⁹⁴⁹相⁹⁵⁰多⁹⁵¹人⁹⁵²出⁹⁵³
 兒⁹⁵⁴○咱⁹⁵⁵們⁹⁵⁶家⁹⁵⁷裏⁹⁵⁸相⁹⁵⁹多⁹⁶⁰人⁹⁶¹出⁹⁶²
 兒⁹⁶³○咱⁹⁶⁴們⁹⁶⁵家⁹⁶⁶裏⁹⁶⁷相⁹⁶⁸多⁹⁶⁹人⁹⁷⁰出⁹⁷¹
 兒⁹⁷²○咱⁹⁷³們⁹⁷⁴家⁹⁷⁵裏⁹⁷⁶相⁹⁷⁷多⁹⁷⁸人⁹⁷⁹出⁹⁸⁰
 兒⁹⁸¹○咱⁹⁸²們⁹⁸³家⁹⁸⁴裏⁹⁸⁵相⁹⁸⁶多⁹⁸⁷人⁹⁸⁸出⁹⁸⁹
 兒⁹⁹⁰○咱⁹⁹¹們⁹⁹²家⁹⁹³裏⁹⁹⁴相⁹⁹⁵多⁹⁹⁶人⁹⁹⁷出⁹⁹⁸
 兒⁹⁹⁹○咱¹⁰⁰⁰們¹⁰⁰¹家¹⁰⁰²裏¹⁰⁰³相¹⁰⁰⁴多¹⁰⁰⁵人¹⁰⁰⁶出¹⁰⁰⁷
 兒¹⁰⁰⁸○咱¹⁰⁰⁹們¹⁰¹⁰家¹⁰¹¹裏¹⁰¹²相¹⁰¹³多¹⁰¹⁴人¹⁰¹⁵出¹⁰¹⁶
 兒¹⁰¹⁷○咱¹⁰¹⁸們¹⁰¹⁹家¹⁰²⁰裏¹⁰²¹相¹⁰²²多¹⁰²³人¹⁰²⁴出¹⁰²⁵
 兒¹⁰²⁶○咱¹⁰²⁷們¹⁰²⁸家¹⁰²⁹裏¹⁰³⁰相¹⁰³¹多¹⁰³²人¹⁰³³出¹⁰³⁴
 兒¹⁰³⁵○咱¹⁰³⁶們¹⁰³⁷家¹⁰³⁸裏¹⁰³⁹相¹⁰⁴⁰多¹⁰⁴¹人¹⁰⁴²出¹⁰⁴³
 兒¹⁰⁴⁴○咱¹⁰⁴⁵們¹⁰⁴⁶家¹⁰⁴⁷裏¹⁰⁴⁸相¹⁰⁴⁹多¹⁰⁵⁰人¹⁰⁵¹出¹⁰⁵²
 兒¹⁰⁵³○咱¹⁰⁵⁴們¹⁰⁵⁵家¹⁰⁵⁶裏¹⁰⁵⁷相¹⁰⁵⁸多¹⁰⁵⁹人¹⁰⁶⁰出¹⁰⁶¹
 兒¹⁰⁶²○咱¹⁰⁶³們¹⁰⁶⁴家¹⁰⁶⁵裏¹⁰⁶⁶相¹⁰⁶⁷多¹⁰⁶⁸人¹⁰⁶⁹出¹⁰⁷⁰
 兒¹⁰⁷¹○咱¹⁰⁷²們¹⁰⁷³家¹⁰⁷⁴裏¹⁰⁷⁵相¹⁰⁷⁶多¹⁰⁷⁷人¹⁰⁷⁸出¹⁰⁷⁹
 兒¹⁰⁸⁰○咱¹⁰⁸¹們¹⁰⁸²家¹⁰⁸³裏¹⁰⁸⁴相¹⁰⁸⁵多¹⁰⁸⁶人¹⁰⁸⁷出¹⁰⁸⁸
 兒¹⁰⁸⁹○咱¹⁰⁹⁰們¹⁰⁹¹家¹⁰⁹²裏¹⁰⁹³相¹⁰⁹⁴多¹⁰⁹⁵人¹⁰⁹⁶出¹⁰⁹⁷
 兒¹⁰⁹⁸○咱¹⁰⁹⁹們¹¹⁰⁰家¹¹⁰¹裏¹¹⁰²相¹¹⁰³多¹¹⁰⁴人¹¹⁰⁵出¹¹⁰⁶
 兒¹¹⁰⁷○咱¹¹⁰⁸們¹¹⁰⁹家¹¹¹⁰裏¹¹¹¹相¹¹¹²多¹¹¹³人¹¹¹⁴出¹¹¹⁵
 兒¹¹¹⁶○咱¹¹¹⁷們¹¹¹⁸家¹¹¹⁹裏¹¹²⁰相¹¹²¹多¹¹²²人¹¹²³出¹¹²⁴
 兒¹¹²⁵○咱¹¹²⁶們¹¹²⁷家¹¹²⁸裏¹¹²⁹相¹¹³⁰多¹¹³¹人¹¹³²出¹¹³³
 兒¹¹³⁴○咱¹¹³⁵們¹¹³⁶家¹¹³⁷裏¹¹³⁸相¹¹³⁹多¹¹⁴⁰

袖口、釘鈕子、的釘鈕子、不到半天、就做起來了。
 邊子、這個襖、那領條兒、綠袖口的綠
 花就鋪上了、翻過來、這個大襟、那個打
 綿襖、我在正間裏、刷了兩個鍋的工夫、他們把綿
 線、可就有的、是人喇、前日他姑嫂、五個、給我做大
 沒有一個、曉事的好漢、抬舉咱家。○俺家裏做針
 不論、在誰眼前、都好、自稱、偌老子嗎。○揭陽鎮上、
 器。○就是、你的口頭語、也不、可、這樣、大放、無拘、你
 ○我估量、是這兒的人、喜歡、咱們來、故此、奏、這樂
 天氣、不穩妥、要、颳、大風、趁、着、還沒、颳、咱們、快快、走罷。

26 The weather is unsettled: we are going to have a high wind: let us go quickly before it begins to blow.
 27 I presume it is that the people here are pleased with our coming, and therefore make this music.
 28 Even if it is a favorite expression of yours, it will not do for you to use it recklessly. Is it proper for you, no matter in whose presence, to be always styling yourself your old father?
 29 There is not in Chie Yang Chên a single efficient man to uphold us.
 30 There is no lack of folks to sew in our family. Day before yesterday they five sisters-in-law made me a wadded gown. While I was in the kitchen washing out the two kettles they put in the wadding; and as soon as it was turned, this one stitched up the overlap, that one laid the chalk lines, another closed the seams under the arms, and another put on the collar-binding; one bound the cuffs and another sewed on the button-loops, and in less than half a day it was finished.

商量 *Shang¹ liang²*. To consult, to compare
 notes, to deliberate.
 奶媽 *Nai³ ma¹*..... A wet nurse.
 奏 *Tsou⁴*. To memorialize the throne, to bring
 forward; to play or make music.
 樂 *Yoa⁴, Yüe⁴*..... Music, musical. See *loa⁴*.
 樂器 *Yoa⁴ ch'i⁴*..... Musical instruments.
 口頭語 *K'ou³ t'ou² yü³*. A pet phrase, a peculiarity of speech.
 曉事 *Hsiao³ shi⁴*. Able, clear-headed, efficient. (w.)
 正間 *Chêng⁴ chien¹*. The middle room facing
 the front:—Note (30).
 大襟 *Ta⁴ chin¹*..... The lapel of a garment.

煞 *Sha⁴*. Baleful, malign, to death, very; to close
 up, to shut up; to end.
 肘 *Chi⁴*. The upper arm. Only used in the
 phrase 肘腋窩.
 窩 *Woa¹*. A nest, a lair; a den; a hole, a depression,
 a nook; a shrine.
 肘腋窩 *Koa¹ chi⁴ woa¹*..... The armpit.
 領條 *Ling³ t'iao²*. The binding around the
 collar.
 搵 *Koa⁴*. To sew or stitch together the parts of
 a garment, to close up; to twist
 together the strands of a thread or rope.
 襖 *K'én⁴*..... The gusset under the arm.
 袖口 *Hsiu⁴ kou³*..... The wristband; a cuff.
 釘 *Ting¹*. To sew on as a button or loop; to
 patch.

NOTES.

1 Or, Shall we take a rest. All would depend on the manner of speaking.
 2 This sentence might also be spoken so as to mean, Gentlemen, let us go.
 6 Addressed by a host to his guests who had already taken, or were about to take the lowest seats.
 12 The Chinese seems to say that the wine is abundant, but the sense is that much wine has been drunk.

13 The use of 倆 implies intimacy. It would not be used by the speaker in the sixteenth sentence.
 14 都 quite also be rendered quite, or, altogether,—Have you quite forgotten, etc. Southern teachers object to 舊, and say 老. The two words are here approximate equivalents. 舊 is what has been practiced before and so is not new; 老

課五十八第

LESSON LXXXV.

要路。多 有 二 有 那 多 麼 走 這¹
 多少。○ 麼 有 千 多 個 遠、幾 多 走 這¹
 呢。給⁹ 遠 高 金、深 孩 答 多 麼 柚 子、
 ○ 你 呢。答 ○ 在 答 多 十 里 ○ 幾 多
 他¹⁰ 些、一 火⁸ 六 麼 聽 路 地 府³ 多 麼
 只 你 天 能 走 二 千 里
 會 還 能 走 二 千 里
 闖 嫌 走 二 千 里
 一 少、你 能 走 二 千 里
 點 你 想 走 二 千 里

- 1 How heavy is this basket of pumeloes?
- 2 How much more convenient it was to have come this way!
- 3 How far is it from your residence to this place? Ans. Thirty li.
- 4 See how obedient that child of his is.
- 5 How deep is this well? Ans. It is over sixty feet deep.
- 6 How old is your second daughter?
- 7 How high is the altar of heaven?
- 8 How far can a railway train travel in a day? Ans. It can travel two thousand li.
- 9 Even when I give you all these, you yet find fault with them for being too few! How many do you propose to ask for?
- 10 He is always getting into trouble.

is what has been practiced for a long time and so is not recent.

17 哥兒倆. The 兒 stands for the correlative word, that is, 弟. So also in the similar phrases 爺兒倆, Father and son, or daughter, and 娘兒倆, Mother and son, or daughter. 哥兒倆 is the address of one of the same age or station; 弟兄兩個 is the language of an elder or a superior.

18 浮橋 is properly a floating bridge of boats, but is often applied to any temporary or moveable bridge. Such bridges are often made of rough planks laid endwise on wooden benches, and are taken away during the prevalence of high water.

19 盤 is the classifier of business. Its use probably comes from the use of the 算盤, or abacus. Peking teachers reject both the Central and Southern forms. They also disallow the use of 上來 with 對付, which, however, would be quite appropriate in other localities.

22 A Chinaman's untrustworthiness is nowhere more conspicuous than in the liberty he takes with other people's money entrusted to him to keep, or to carry.

26 快些 properly, a little quicker, but used here simply as an intensive implying no comparison. 些 is often so used in the South, rarely in the North.

28 借老子 is a Peking expression and somewhat slangy. "Your daddy" would perhaps give about the flavor of it.

29 揭陽鎮. A large market village in Honan, mentioned in the History of Robbers, from which the sentence is taken.

30 有的是 plenty of, "lots of," a very idiomatic form of expressing this idea. 姑嫂. The daughter-in-law calls her husband's sisters 大姑子 and 小姑子, and they call their elder sisters-in-law, 嫂子. The terms by which each designates the other are joined together as the common designation of all. 正間 is the middle room, which in the homes of the common people, has a cooking range on either side, and is in fact the kitchen. 翻過來, etc. The seams are first sewed up, and the cotton wadding spread, on, and the garment is then turned inside out. 打邊子 is to measure and strike the chalk lines by which the quilting is to be done.

LESSON LXXXV.
 多 AS AN INTERROGATIVE.

多 is applied interrogatively to many adjectives, as how is in English, as 多大 how great, 多長 how long, etc. 麼 is often inserted after the 多, and joined with it. This was

probably the original form, the use of 多 alone being a contraction.
 As in English so in Chinese, this interrogation often passes into an exclamation.

VOCABULARY.

籃 Lou³. A basket, hamper, a market basket.
 柚 Yu⁴. The pumelo or shaddock.
 順便 Shun⁴pien⁴. Convenient, direct; smooth, compliant.

千金 Ch'ien¹ chin¹. A thousand taels of gold, priceless, inestimable; a complimentary term for another man's daughter.
 壇 T'an². An altar; an arena.

人家韓青山的夫老內人婆人，多麼會說，真是女中的魁首。○
 正是得時的時候，吃的有多麼好，穿的有多麼好。○
 他光告訴做一張床，沒告訴多長多寬。○你如今
 ○你的眼睛不好使嗎，你看這頭多粗，那頭多細。○
 ○麼重呢。○他頭一個女人，多麼排場，這個差的多了。
 沂州府，有多遠呢。○好乾淨這一點東西，能有多
 量這棵梧桐樹，有多高，能割幾節呢。○從曲阜到
 早知道劉芳齡要去，託他帶着，多麼省事呢。○你估
 快。○他已經多遠來了，還可以叫他空手回去嗎。○
 不知道天多高，地多厚。○看人家這匹馬，跑的多麼

He hasn't the least common sense.
 11 See how fast this horse of his can run.
 12 Having come a long distance it will not do to send him home empty-handed.
 13 If we had known that Liu Fang Ling was going, how much it would have saved to get him to take it!
 14 How high do you estimate this wu t'ung tree to be? and how many lengths will it make (saw)?
 15 How far is it from K'ü Fu Hsien to Ichoufu?
 16 A trifling little bit of a thing like this, what weight can it have?
 17 How lady-like his first wife was. This one is vastly inferior.
 18 Is your eyesight not good? See how large this end is and how small that one is.
 19 He simply told me to make a bed, but did not say how long or how wide.
 20 You are just now enjoying the smiles of fortune. How excellent is your food and your clothing.
 21 That wife of Han Ch'ing Shan's, how she can talk! Verily she takes the palm among women.
 22 Are you not afraid you will be drowned, going into the water in this way when you do not know how

天壇 *T'ien¹ t'an²*. The altar of heaven at Peking:—Note (7).
 闖 *Ch'wang⁸*. To rush out, or in, or against; to dash forward; suddenly.
 闖禍 *Ch'wang³ h'wo⁴*. To bring on calamity, to get into trouble.
 空手 *K'ung¹ shou³*. Empty-handed, destitute of, unsupplied.
 芳 *Fang¹*.Fragrant, excellent. (w.)
 齡 *Ling³*.A person's age, years. (w.)
 省事 *Shing³ shi⁴*. To economize labor, to save trouble.
 梧 *Wu²*.The 梧桐 tree.
 桐 *Tung²*.The *Elaeocoea Sinensis*.
 梧桐. The national tree of China; it has large leaves and a graceful top. The wood is valued for coffins because it resists decay, and for musical instruments because it is dense and resonant.
 曲 *Ch'ü⁴*. Crooked, bent; tortuous, false; to wrong, to oppress. See *ch'ü³*.

阜 *Fou⁴*.A mound of earth, abundant. (w.)
 曲阜. A city in southern Shantung, noted as the site of Confucius' grave.
 沂 *I²*.A river in south-eastern Shantung.
 沂州 *I² chou¹*. A prefectural city on the 沂 river.
 排場 *P'ai² ch'ang³*. Neat, orderly; well behaved, lady-like.
 床 *Ch'wang²*.The same as 牀.
 韓 *Han²*.An ancient state; a surname.
 內人 *Nei⁴ jen²*.Wife:—Note (21).
 夫人 *Fu¹ jen²*.Wife, lady:—Note (21).
 魁首 *K'wei² shou⁸*. A leader, a first-class man, an honor man, facile princeps.
 浮 *Fu²*.To swim. See *fou²*.
 浮水 *Fu² shui³*.To swim.
 莊稼漢 *Chwang¹ chia⁴ han⁴*. A farmer, a rustic.

sm⁴

知要長多麼大，寔在殼我受的。
 的疙瘡醫治不好，還是天天長不
 答應，那個威武多大。○我這腿上
 幾萬兵一齊跪接，傳下令來，一齊
 元帥得勝回營的時候，一到營門，
 稼漢多麼自在呢。○你看領兵的
 着太陽頭也曬不着，比我們這些莊
 念書的人，風也吹不着，雨也淋不
 淹死嗎，答不怕，我會浮水。○你
 不知水有多麼深，你就下去，不

deep it is? Ans. Never fear. I know how to swim.
 23 You literary men, the wind cannot blow on you, nor the rain wet you, nor the sun scorch you. How much more comfortable you are than we farmers.
 24 See the general in command when he returns to his encampment after a victory. When he reaches the gate, the whole army kneel together to receive him, and when the command is given, all respond together. How imposing is the spectacle!
 25 This boil on my leg is not improving under treatment. It continues to enlarge every day. It is hard to say how large it is going to be. It is as much as I can stand.

帥 *Shwai*⁴. A leader, a commander-in-chief; the king in chess.
 元帥 *Yüan² shwai⁴*..... A general.
 得勝 *Té² shing⁴*. To get the victory, to conquer. to triumph.
 一齊 *I¹ ch'i²*..... All together:—Les. 105.
 跪 *Kwei⁴*..... To kneel, to bow down to.

跪接 *Kwei⁴ chie¹*..... To receive on the knees.
 威武 *Wei¹ wu³*..... Imposing, stately, majestic.
 疙 *Koi¹*..... A pimple, a boil.
 瘡 *Ta¹*..... A sore, a boil.
 疙瘡. A raised sore or boil; a lump or swelling; a wheal; a knot on a string.
 醫治 *I¹ chi⁴*..... To heal, to cure, to treat.

NOTES.

1 幾多, *How, how many*,—is used in the region of Hankow, and perhaps westward, for 多麼. No such combination is known in Central or Northern Mandarin.
 2 Or, *How much more convenient it is to go this way*.
 3 路 is joined to 里 as an expletive. In the North 地 is often used in the same way. The usage is similar to the phrase "a distance of thirty li."
 4 人家 is here used pronominally for the person or persons referred to.
 7 天壇 is a large square stone altar, which stands in the grounds of the temple of heaven at Peking. It is directly south and in front of the round temple commonly called the "temple of heaven." It is about thirty feet high, level and paved on the top, and has cut stone steps on all the four sides.
 10 不知天多高地多厚 *does not know how high is the heaven nor how deep is the earth*, that is, he is utterly lacking in judgment, has no sense of the fitness of things.
 12 The interrogative is used for emphasis, and is best rendered into English in the indicative.
 13 The structure of this sentence is such as to imply an *if*.

14 A 節 is understood to be the length for a coffin, that being the purpose for which logs are supposed to be primarily intended.
 16 乾淨 is here used as opposed to *bulky or cumbersome*. It is so used in Central and Southern Mandarin but not in the North. The sentence is the language of one who is skeptical about the great weight of a small box or parcel.
 21 人家 is prefixed to this sentence for the purpose of suggesting a contrast with the speaker's own wife or family—a shade of thought which no English translation will convey. 內人 is preferred in this connection by Peking teachers. They aver that it expresses nothing either of respect or of disrespect, but its common use by the husband when speaking of his wife, shows that it is depreciatory. It is not used in Shantung, though known as a book term. 老婆 is quite *t'ung hsing*, but more freely used in some places than in others. Its use evinces want of respect, rather than expresses any special disrespect. 夫人 is properly applied only to the wife of a person of rank, but has come into use, in some places, of any genteel woman. It is rarely used in Shantung.
 23 In Nanking 日頭 is hardly ever used, 太陽 being almost always used instead.

第八十六課

LESSON LXXXVI.

怎麼弄的滿屋裏這麼些煙。○洗²澡是渾身都洗。
 他³是個飄流人，滿處打⁴野食吃。○耶⁴穌是普天
 下的救主。○你⁵想他賣了家廟的樹，合族的人，還
 能讓他嗎。○天⁶已經陰滿了，是要下⁸大普雨的樣子。
 ○有⁷理走遍天下，無理寸步難行。○今⁸天不知受
 了一點甚麼風氣，滿身起了些疙瘩。○這⁹個孩子，
 一點不討人喜歡，哭起來滿地直滾。○你¹⁰看你弄
 的滿臉是灰，就和一個小鬼兒一樣。○只¹¹要碰着
 個好父母官，這就是闔縣的造化。○王¹²家莊，爲這
 個人命案，合村¹³都嚇跑了。○誰把蒲墊團子藏在

- 1 How have you come to fill the whole room with all this smoke?
- 2 To bathe is to wash the whole body.
- 3 He is a tramp wandering from place to place picking up a living?
- 4 Jesus is the Saviour of the whole world.
- 5 Seeing he has sold the trees in the family temple, do you suppose the clan will allow it to pass?
- 6 The sky is already clouded all over, it looks as if we were about to have a general rain.
- 7 With right on your side, you can go anywhere; without right, it is hard to move an inch.
- 8 I wonder what malarial affection I have caught to-day; my whole body is covered with wheals.
- 9 This boy is not at all prepossessing; when he takes a fit of crying he just lies down and rolls on the ground.
- 10 Just look! You have gotten your whole face covered with dirt. You look just like a little imp.
- 11 Only let a good parental magistrate fall to your lot, and it is a boon to the whole district.
- 12 On account of this murder case, the whole village of Wang Chia Chwang has been frightened into flight.

LESSON LXXXVI.

TOTALITY.

This lesson is distinguished from Les. 35, as the word *whole* is distinguished from the word *all*.

滿 The whole, complete, entire; when used of place,—everywhere.

合 The whole, all of a number of persons.

闔 All, the whole. The same practically as

合. In some connections one character is preferred, and in some the other.

渾 The entire body or family,—rarely, if ever, used with any other words than **身** and **家**.

普 Everywhere, universal, all.

遍 The whole, entire; everywhere.

VOCABULARY.

滿 *Man*³. Full; stuffed; entire, complete:—see Sub.

渾 *Hun*². Turbid, polluted, dirty; the whole, the mass:—see Sub. Also *hun*⁴.

普 *P'u*³. Great; all, everywhere, universal.

闔 *Hoi*². A two-leaved door, a family; all, the whole:—see Sub.

澡 *Tsao*³. To bathe or wash the body.

洗澡 *Hsi*³ *tsao*³. To bathe the whole body.

飄 *P'iao*¹. Swayed or rocked by the wind; graceful, airy.

飄流 *P'iao*¹ *liu*². To wander, to roam.

野食 *Yie*³ *shi*². Prey, pickings:—Note (3).

家廟 *Chia*¹ *miao*⁴. Family or ancestral temple:—Note (5).

族 *Tsu*². A clan; a family; kindred; class.

寸步 *Ts'un*⁴ *pu*⁴. A step an inch long,—the least distance, an inch.

圖

路、文、身、得、老、糶、彈、暴、浮、地、不、這
 遍、武、發、你、實、糧、灰、土、土、的、得、裏、
 身、都、抖。們、滿、滿、心、給、○、時、兒、叫、我
 生、得、○、渾、合、心、肚、裏、伊、這¹⁶、候、娶、滿
 瘡、到、每、家、家、裏、子、更、人。遍、該、媳、婦、那、處
 被、齊。逢、子、是、是、鬼、猴、猴。○、李¹⁷、都、先、灑、給、他、去
 人、○、三、不、依、○、李¹⁷、都、凶、荒、一、點、水、錢、○、爲¹⁴
 放、有²¹、六、九、嗎。爲¹⁸、老、八、荒、約、瑟、就、滿、行。○、嫁、
 在、一、個、上、○、這、一、看、不、得、他、外、面、倉、⁴⁷、起、掃¹⁵、比
 財、花、乞、朝、基¹⁹、一、點、小、事、還、值
 主、子、巧、的、日、子、見、了、渾、值
 門、名、叫、子、拉、滿、朝、渾、值
 前、○、叫、子、拉、滿、朝、渾、值
 昨²²、天、撒、朝、渾、值

- 13 Who hid the straw mat here? I have been hunting it everywhere.
- 14 A present made on the marriage of a daughter is very different from one made on the marriage of a son. If you give four hundred cash, it will be quite sufficient.
- 15 When sweeping the floor, you should first sprinkle some water on it, and thus avoid filling the room with dust.
- 16 At this time there was famine in the whole land, and Joseph opened the store houses and sold grain to the people of Egypt.
- 17 It will not do to be misled by Wang the eighth's guileless exterior; his heart is brimfull of duplicity.
- 18 Is it worth while for the whole of you to take offence on account of this little affair?
- 19 When Christian saw them, he trembled all over.
- 20 At every audience on the third, sixth and ninth, the whole court, civil and military, are required to present themselves.
- 21 There was a beggar named Lazarus, whose whole body was full of sores

造化 *Tsao⁴ hwa⁴*. To create, to make; a benefit, a boon, a blessing.
 人命 *Jen² ming⁴*. A human life, a case of life and death.
 彈 *T'an²*. To fillip, to thrum; to snap, to throw, to shoot. Also *tan⁴*.
 彈灰 *T'an² hui¹*. Dust.
 浮土 *Fou² t'u³*. Dust.
 暴土 *Pao⁴ t'u³*. Dust. Read *pu⁴ t'u³* in many places.
 凶 *Hsiung¹*. Unfortunate, unlucky; adverse; calamitous, malignant.
 凶荒 *Hsiung¹ hwang¹*. Famine, want.
 伊 *I¹*. A *wen-li* third personal pronoun, but used in the southern coast dialects.
 伊及 *I¹ chi²*. Egypt.
 抖 *Tou³*. To shake; to shiver; to tremble; to arouse, to excite.
 上朝 *Shang⁴ ch'ao²*. To have an audience, to go to meet the Emperor.
 乞 *Ch'ih²*. To beg, to ask alms.
 丐 *Kai⁴*. To ask alms; a mendicant.

乞丐. A beggar:—Note (21).
 煽 *Chao², ché²*. To take fire; to burn.
 驚動 *Ching¹ tung⁴*. To wake up, to stir up; to alarm, to arouse.
 族長 *Tsu² chang²*. The eldest man of a family or clan, an elder.
 地畝 *Ti⁴ mu³*. Land, area of land.
 絲 *Si¹*. Raw silk; floss; a cord, a line; wire.
 躑 *Lung⁴*. To walk unsteadily.
 踵 *Chung³*. The heel, to follow at the heels.
 踵踵. Heels over head.
 踉 *Leng²*. A slip, a pitch of the body.
 蹌 *Tséng⁴*. To miss one's footing, to stagger, to tumble.
 踉蹌. A headlong fall, a somersault.
 栽 *Tsai¹*. To set out, to plant.
 馱子 *Tai¹ tsi³*. A simpleton, a silly fool.
 爬 *P'a²*. To crawl, to creep, to climb, to scale; an iron rake.

第八十七課

LESSON LXXXVII.

他要罷、又怕薄傷了、仁和義、若不問他要罷、他管
 記不清是幾多會、只知是在六月間。○若問
 我好給你錢行。○這多會子兒的事呢、答我
 圓呢。○你要進京嗎、多會子兒走、你告訴我
 不和我說話。○離家這麼遠、到幾時能得團
 能做起來呢。○劉仁欣已經賭過咒、管幾多
 會、請你勸勸他。○這樣耽擱工夫、到多
 會、請你勸勸他。○這樣耽擱工夫、到多
 ○你淨賴人、我多啗應過你。○幾時得了機
 房子、幾時動工呢。答擇的三月初五的日子。
 你多會子兒叫我、我就能多會子兒來。○親家蓋

- 1 I can come whenever you send for me.
- 2 When do you, kinsman, begin work on your house? Ans. The fifth day of the third month has been selected.
- 3 You are making an entirely false demand. When did I promise you?
- 4 Whenever you get an opportunity, please exhort him.
- 5 Wasting time in this way, when will you be able to finish?
- 6 Liu Jên Hsin has already taken an oath that he will never speak to me.
- 7 Separated from home so far as this, when shall I enjoy the family circle?
- 8 You are going to the capital are you? When you go, let me know that I may give you a send off.
- 9 When did this happen? Ans. I do not remember distinctly when: I only know it was in the sixth month.
- 10 If I ask him for it, I fear I may offend him; if I do not ask him for it, he will never try to pay me.

LESSON LXXXVII.

WHEN.

幾時 How much time; i.e., when, whenever.
幾兒 Same. Northern, and strongly colloquial.
多啗 When,—a widely used term, but not entirely *t'ung hsing*. It is never heard in eastern Shantung. Along the Yangtze it takes a 子 after it.
幾啗 A Southern form of 多啗, which in some places quite supersedes it.
麼啗 Another Southern form of 多啗.

多會 When, whenever. In the North it nearly always takes after it an enclitic 兒, which in the South is replaced by 子. It is quite *t'ung hsing*, but more used in some places than in others.
多早晚兒, How much sooner or later; i.e., when,—a Peking expression.
多早 A contracted form of 多早晚兒, used in the South.
幾早 Same as 多早.

VOCABULARY.

啗 *Tsan*¹. A time, a period of time.
動工 *Tung*⁴ *kung*¹. To begin work, to break ground.
擇 *Chai*². *tse*. To select, to choose; to prefer.
機會 *Chi*¹ *hui*⁴. Opportunity, occasion, opening; nick of time.
耽擱 *Tan*¹ *koa*¹. To loiter, to waste time.

欣 *Hsin*¹. Delight; merry, elated.
賭咒 *Tu*³ *chou*⁴. To bet or promise with an oath, to take an oath.
團圓 *T'wan*² *yüan*². A complete circle; harmoniously united; the whole family, altogether.
餞 *Chien*⁴. To give a farewell feast, a present of food on parting.

的、的、了、望、結、嗜、中、了、房、則、生
 實、爆、到、趕、點、了、學、念、三、這
 在、燗、多、翰、舉、書、個、一
 殼、要、嗜、林、就、好、的、月、次
 受、放、不、就、好、了、時、少、出
 的、到、曉、了、了、候、則、門、
 幾、幾、得、學、好、以、心、兩、幾
 時、呢、能、差、就、後、裏、個、時
 呢、你、足、就、了、中、了、常、半、回
 你、這、意、好、了、學、常、月、來、
 幾、天、不、了、了、又、盼、盼、○
 天、把、能、就、了、又、盼、盼、○
 把、我、○、是、翰、盼、盼、○
 我、震、甲、以、林、望、結、到、趕、
 震、你、後、還、到、趕、多、嗜、進、

present tour? Ans. It is uncertain when: at the most, in three months; at the least, in two months and a half.

18 I recollect that when I was in school studying, I was always thinking that when I should get my first degree, I should be satisfied: afterward when I obtained it, I thought when I should reach the degree of chū jên I should be satisfied; but afterwards when I became a chū jên, I then thought that when I should be elected a hanlin I should be satisfied; and now that I am elected a hanlin, I still want to be appointed literary chancellor. In case I should hereafter be appointed literary chancellor, I do not know whether I should be satisfied.

19 Chia Hsü, when will your fire-crackers be all fired off? You have been stunning my ears these few days beyond endurance.

中舉 *Chung⁴ chü³*. To attain the degree of chū-jên.
 學差 *Hsü² ch'ai¹*. The office of Literary Chancellor:—Note (18).
 足意 *Tsu² i⁴*. Satisfied, content.
 戌 *Hsü¹*. The eleventh hour, 7 to 9 P.M.

爆 *Pao⁴*. To snap, to pop, to burst; to crackle, to sputter.
 燗 *Chang¹*. An explosion of flame, a flash.
 爆燗. A fire-cracker. Also read *p'ao⁴ chang¹*.
 震 *Chên⁴*. To shake, to quiver, to tremble; to shock, to stun, to startle; to threaten.

NOTES.

2 擇日子, is the technical term for selecting a lucky day. Such a selection is made for almost every important undertaking, such as commencing work on a new building, opening a new business, getting married, etc. The selection is made by a professional prognosticator.

3 你淨賴人. Peking teachers would write 竟 instead of 淨. The idea, however, of purely, simply, entirely, which is the idea intended, is more naturally derived from the primary meaning of 淨, than from that of 竟; moreover it should be noted that the word is *t'ung hsing*, and the sound of 淨 is everywhere correct, while the sound of 竟 is only correct where soft sounds prevail. Where hard sounds prevail, 竟 is not recognized as having the meaning in question, and if so used will be misunderstood; thus 你竟賴人, would be taken to mean, You are after all making a false demand.

6 管 joined with any of the time particles in the lesson, and followed by a negative, means, no matter when; i.e., never.

10 傷了和氣 wound the peace, 薄了仁義 make thin the goodwill or friendship, that is, to give offence. 了 is used as an auxiliary; see next lesson.

11 個 serves to combine the three or five days into one space or period. The two 的 in this sentence, and the four in the next, have practically the force of so many 了.

13 Officials out of office, and literary graduates who are approved as suitable for appointment, are called 候補, vacancy waiters. They all reside in the provincial capital, each striving by the use of money and wire-pulling to advance his own interests. Without the liberal use of money no appointment can be secured. Money spent in bribing is facetiously said to be "contributed," (捐), the theory being that it is contributed to the necessities of the government.

14 得罪仇人 Lit., to offend an enemy; i.e., to offend anyone so as to make an enemy of him. 寒心 cold hearted, but means much more than to feel cool towards the person offending. It expresses that peculiar feeling of pain or depression experienced when a friend proves false or faithless.

15 Elder and younger here refer not to actual age, but to the wives of older and younger sons.

16 到了任 reached his duty, that is, the post of duty to which he was appointed.

17 多則 少則 At most at least, a book form often used colloquially. See Les. 170.

18 The sole ambition before a student in China is to get a degree, and then get an office, and so get money and power. Every school boy has this set before him as the pinnacle of his ambition. The proper term for literary chancellor is 學台. The term 學差 refers to the office rather than to the person. It is the most lucrative office in a province.

計老爺回家來了，這可了不得了。○壞了醋了，了不得了。
 案來的，永遠也了不得。○壞了醋了，了不得了。
 真是假，那能了不得呢。若找不出個頂
 聽說夏文德的官司，已經了了，不知是
 是草草了事，沒有遞白頭卷子就是了。○
 罷。○我看他的文章，不進得了學，也不過
 經壞了，答如今天氣還不大熱，壞不得
 推辭也推辭不了。○敢保那些騰飯已
 給人家辦了。○你直絕不用推辭，就是
 看見人家有辦不了的事，他就包攬着

30 When he sees any one in a difficulty, he takes the responsibility of managing the business for him.
 31 Do not try to evade it at all, for you cannot evade it if you would.
 32 I'll warrant that rice that was left over is spoiled. Ans. The weather is not yet very warm, it can hardly be spoiled.
 33 I don't believe his essay will get him a degree; it was nothing more than a makeshift gotten up to avoid handing in a blank.
 34 I hear that Hsia Wên Tê's lawsuit is concluded. I wonder if it is true. Ans. How could it be concluded? Unless some one is found on whom to fix the charge, it can never be concluded.
 35 The vinegar is spoiled, my good fellow: his worship has come home. We are in for it, sure enough.

NOTES.

- 4 了 is here both principal verb and auxiliary.
- 8 A common saying, the meaning of which is, that for the settlement of a difficulty there is nothing like meeting face to face. The 了 at the end is not an auxiliary but a principal verb.
- 9 The use of 也 requires the first clause to be taken subjunctively. If 也 were changed to 却 the sentence would mean, he wants to retract but cannot.
- 14 使喚 is much used in Shantung. It is also used in Peking, but less frequently, and in a somewhat more restricted sense.
- 21 In Southern Mandarin 掉 sometimes takes the place of 了. See Les. 92.
- 22 The 去 after 聽了 seems like an encumbrance. It is used to suggest the idea of the secret getting "out."
- 24 可惜了兒的 is a common colloquial phrase, in which the addition of 了兒的 adds greatly to the expressiveness of 可惜. It serves as a sort of superlative.
- 26 汗巾 a sweat napkin, not however practically used for this purpose, but carried by women purely as an ornament. It is long like a sash, made of silk, and often elegantly embroidered. It is either carried in the hand, or across the arm.
- 27 For 了亮 some would write 燎亮 or 瞭亮
- 29 噉啣咬呀 is an approximate writing of the responsive heigh ho made by the Chinese when rowing or carrying. 欸啣乃呀 is a book form for the same thing.

- The dictionary gives ai¹ as the correct reading of 欸, but says that in this particular phrase it is to be read ao². In common use it is constantly confounded with 欸 or, as more correctly written, 款. The Nanking teacher would write 咬啣噉喝, as best representing the sounds in the South.
- 30 辦不了 unable to do, not, unable to finish, as the phrase might mean in a different connection.
- 33 草草了事 Coarsely finish the thing,—to dash off in a careless or indifferent manner. A book expression in common use. The 草草 is used perhaps with a reference to the hasty writing of the 草字 or grass character. 遞白頭卷子 to hand in a blank paper, instead of an essay. This is sometimes done by careless and indifferent scholars, when they can get no clue at all to the treatment of the theme. 頭 is omitted in the South.
- 34 When any one is charged with a crime and the proof of his guilt is insufficient, he is very likely to lie in prison until some one else is found, upon whom the crime can be fixed.
- 35 壞了醋了 spoiled the vinegar. A phrase borrowed from the process of making vinegar, in which care is required that the process of fermentation does not go too far, and so destroy the vinegar. 了也了不得了 is a highly idiomatic form. The first 了 is reduplicated in order to strengthen the force of the expression 了不得, thus making the expression equivalent to 了不得, 了不得.

課九十八第

LESSON LXXXIX.

太太¹叫你快些過去呢。
 ○你們的賬都收齊喇。³
 騾子呢，還用打算開濟他嗎。⁴
 我⁷那個兄弟和寶叔同年。
 呢。○知道有這個字，可老想不起來呢。⁸
 留他留不住呢。○如今聽起大奶奶這個病來，定不住還¹⁰
 是喜呢，嫂子且別叫人混治，若治錯了，可了不得。¹¹
 有個好歹，你再要娶這一個媳婦兒，這麼個模樣兒，這麼¹²
 個性情兒，只怕打着燈籠，也沒處去找呢。○有喜事呢，大

- 1 The lady sends for you to go over quickly.
- 2 It must be nearly twelve o'clock? Ans. Not by a long while.
- 3 All your outstanding accounts are collected, I suppose? Ans. Not by a great deal.
- 4 Hem! They keep a mule. Why think of giving alms to them?
- 5 Where has the child gone? Why, it's on the bed asleep!
- 6 I would like very much to visit the West and see the sights, but I just cannot go.
- 7 That brother of mine is the same age as Uncle Pao, but if they should stand together, I suspect that he is somewhat taller.
- 8 I know there is such a character, but somehow I cannot recall it.
- 9 What's the reason I did not invite him? He would not stay when I did invite him.
- 10 Judging from what I hear of the lady's sickness, it is not unlikely that it is an occasion of congratulation. You must not allow it to be treated at random. If it should be wrongly treated, it would be a sad affair.
- 11 If anything should happen to her, and you should want to marry another such wife, of such a form and such a disposition, I suspect you could not find her even with a lantern in your hand.

LESSON LXXXIX.

MISCELLANEOUS USES OF 呢.

呢 has already been defined in Les. 17 as the sign of an indirect question, which is its primary and most important use. It has, however, a variety of other uses which are difficult to classify, and which differ somewhat in different places.

1 It concludes expressions of surprise, indignation, or reproof, (1 to 5).

2 It concludes expressions of uncertainty, or perplexity, (6 to 12).

3 It concludes expressions marking a suddenly occurring thought, with an implied query as to why the thought did not occur sooner, (13 to 17).

4 It gives preponderance to one side of a statement involving an alternative, or a comparison, (18 to 21).

5 It concludes an emphatic reply, which contains a query expressed or implied, (22 to 25).

6 Standing alone with a noun, it propounds a question, taking the place of the full interrogative form, (26, 27).

In all these cases a careful scrutiny will probably show some sort of a query expressed or implied. 呢 is much more used in some places than in others. Where its use is most prevalent, it is often heard when it seems to serve no other purpose than simply to round out the sentence.

你這二年在那裏念書，家裏也省好大的嚼
 忙亂痛哭呢，這女孩兒不是死，是睡覺呢。
 山買東西，很不便當，可不是呢。○爲什麼
 山上歇伏，比在城裏涼快多喇，就是天天下
 便宜些，^答正是呢，你去比誰都妥當。○在這
 孩子們都好嗎。○我送了外甥女過去，到底
 就忘記了。○可是呢，我還忘了問，大嫂子和
 餛餞，還沒給錢呢。^答可是呢，你不提起來，我
 呢，餛餞，還沒給錢呢。^答可是呢，你不提起來，我
 嗎，到底是我看錯了。○前日先生吃了兩個
 家都慶賀，有喪事呢，大家都幫助。○可不是

- 12 If there is a wedding, all should offer congratulations. If there is a funeral, all should come to help.
- 13 Sure enough! After all I was mistaken.
- 14 You have not yet paid for the two rolls you ate yesterday. Ans. That's so. If you had not mentioned it, I should have quite forgotten it.
- 15 Sure enough! I quite forgot to ask. Are your wife and children all well?
- 16 After all it will be more convenient if I go and take my niece. Ans. That's so. It will be better for you to go than for any one else.
- 17 During the dog-days it will be much cooler to rest here on the hill than in the city, but it will be very inconvenient going down every day to buy supplies. Ans. That's a fact.
- 18 Why make ye this ado and weep? The damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.
- 19 You having been there these two years at school, your family must have saved considerable expenditure.

VOCABULARY.

西國 *Hsi¹ kwō²*. Western nations, a general term for foreign countries.
 開眼 *K'ai¹ yen³*. To see the world, to see the sights; to learn by experience.
 只怕 *Ch'i³ p'a⁴*. It's to be feared, I suspect; but, peradventure:—Les. 131.
 模樣 *Mu² yang⁴*. Form, fashion, appearance, style, pattern.
 喜事 *Hsi³ shi⁴*. An occasion of rejoicing, a wedding.
 慶 *Ch'ing⁴*. To wish joy, to congratulate, to bless; happy, lucky.
 賀 *He⁴*. To congratulate with a present.
 慶賀 *To offer congratulations, to felicitate.*
 喪事 *Sang¹ shi⁴*. A funeral, a burial.
 餛餞 *Pou¹*. A steamed cake or roll; a baked sweet cake.—Note (14).
 可是 *K'oa³ shi⁴*. Sure enough, really, to be sure.
 可不是 *K'oa³ pu⁴ shi⁴*. That's so, sure enough, you're right.
 看錯 *K'an⁴ ts'oa⁴*. To mistake, to be mistaken, to be deceived.

大嫂 *Ta⁴ sao³*. The eldest brother's wife, largely used as a term of respect by friends and acquaintances, Mrs.
 外甥女 *Wai¹ sheng¹ nü³*. A niece of a different surname.
 歇伏 *Hsie¹ fu²*. To take a summer vacation.
 便當 *Pien⁴ tang⁴*. Convenient, opportune.
 忙亂 *Mang³ wan⁴*. Hurry, confusion, bustle, ado.
 痛哭 *T'ung⁴ k'u¹*. To wail, to weep.
 嚼 *Chue², chiao²*. To chew, to bite; to eat; to ruminate; food; bit of a bridle.
 嚼用 *Chiao² yung⁴*. Living; expenditure.
 駱駝 *Lo⁴*. A camel.
 駱駝 *Lo⁴ t'oa²*. A camel, a dromedary.
 壁隔 *Pi⁴*. A partition wall; a screen; a division.
 隔壁 *Koa³ pi⁴*. Next door neighbor; adjoining; in the next room.
 酒館 *Chiu³ kwan³*. A wine shop, a saloon.
 癩瘡 *Chie¹*. A pimple, a boil.
 香几 *Hsiang¹ chi¹*. An incense stand or table, a long narrow table.

香 一 完 不 式 裏 方 鬧 比 用
 几 個 飯 來 呢。 隔 我 出 財 呢。
 子 癩 呢。 呢。 ○ 你²³ 就 訴 了 主 ○
 上。 子。 ○ ○ 你²³ 就 訴 了 這 進 我²⁰
 ○ 坐 怎²⁵ 叫²⁴ 沒 是 一 個 神 的 又
 他²⁷ 不 麼 他 去 一 說 罷。 房。 國。 告
 大 下 不 們 請 個 酒 館。 登²³ 再 容 易
 鼻 呢。 ○ 下 上 來 喝 那 的 找 呢。 駱
 已 洋 取²⁶ 呢。 這 裏 酒 那 纔 還 這 樣 ○
 經 火 燈 答 裏 酒 那 纔 還 這 樣 ○
 應 火 燈 答 裏 酒 那 纔 還 這 樣 ○
 許 呢。 大 來。 嗎。 纔 還 這 樣 ○
 替 答 腿 答 答 正 難 這 樣 ○
 他 洋 取 上 還 請 合 呢。 一 如 針
 衣 火 燈 長 沒 他 的 ○ 個 今 的
 裳。 在 了 吃 他 的 那²² 地 要 眼。

- 20 Again I say unto you. It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.
- 21 You are on the point of losing your place in the school by your misconduct. But I tell you if you try to find another place like this, it will be harder than ascending to heaven.
- 22 There is a wine-shop adjoining. Ans. That suits me exactly [do you know].
- 23 Did you not ask him to come and take some wine? Ans. I invited him, but he would not come.
- 24 Tell them all to come here. Ans. But they have not yet finished eating.
- 25 Why do you not sit down? Ans. How can I when I have a boil on my thigh?
- 26 The matches? Ans. The matches are on the incense stand.
- 27 His maternal uncle has already promised to find his clothes, his pens, ink, paper and books, and his two younger paternal uncles have prom-

大 舅 *Ta⁴ chiu⁴*.....The eldest maternal uncle.
 資 *Tai¹*. Property, goods; necessities, a fee; a quota; to avail of.
 學 資 *Hsue³ tsai¹*.....Teachers' fees, tuition.
 官 鹽 *Kwan¹ yen²*. Government salt:—Note (28).
 去 年 *Ch'ü⁴ nien²*.....Last year.
 鹽 店 *Yen² tien⁴*.....A salt depôt.

巡 役 *Hsün² i⁴*. Constables, police, *revenue officers*.
 贓 *Tsang¹*.....Stolen or illicit goods, plunder.
 坑 害 *K'eng¹ hai⁴*. To entrap, to ill-use, to harass, to wrong.
 作 *Tsoa⁴*. To bring to pass, to incur, to be liable to. See *tsoa⁴*.
 作 死 *Tsoa⁴ si³*. To destroy oneself, to bring on death.

NOTES.

- 1 The underlying query is, why have you not *already* gone over.
- 2 還早呢 implies that the party addressed is badly mistaken.
- 3 A query is suggested in the first clause, by the inflection given in speaking. In the reply 着 would in many places be omitted.
- 4 The two 還 seem repetitions as written, but would be no objection to the sentence as spoken.
- 5 The question is understood to be put in a tone of doubtful anxiety. 那去 is a contraction for 那裡去. The use of 呢 at the close gives to the reply the force of a surprised query, as to why the question should have been asked.
- 7 同年 is not used in the North of persons' ages, but 同歲. It there means *the same year*, but not *the same age*.

10 大奶奶 is the title by which the lady in question was known in the family, not that she bore this relationship to the speaker. 喜 is put for 喜病, the 病 having been introduced above. 喜病 is the common term for the sickness of pregnancy. 且 as here used is an affectation of book style.

11 好歹 is not unfrequently used to express the disastrous termination of an uncertain event. In case of sickness, as here, it is a euphemism for death. 這一個媳婦兒 is put for 這麼一個媳婦兒, or 這麼一個媳婦兒, which latter form is that in which it would almost certainly be spoken, save that in some places 兒 would be omitted, or replaced with 子. 媳婦兒 is in some places applied specifically to women of ill fame.

和筆墨書紙，他兩個叔叔，應許管先生飯，快叫孩子去念兩天罷。問學資呢，答學資都算我的。○說起吃官鹽來，我要問你一件事，聽說你們貴處，去年把鹽店燒了，還殺了二十多個巡役，是真的嗎？答可不是呢嗎？你想他們爲不點兒事情，就給人家栽鹽賊，坑害人家，若光栽男人的賊，也還罷了，最可恨的，是常栽女人的賊，這不是他們自己作死嗎。

ised to board the teacher: now just decide to send him to school awhile. Ques. But how about tuition? Ans. I will be responsible for that.

28 Speaking of using government salt, I want to ask you a certain thing. I hear that last year at your place you burned the salt depôt and killed over twenty revenue officers. Is this true? Ans. Of course it is. Just consider that for the least thing they would fabricate a false charge of smuggling, and harass people. If they only made such false charges against men, it might be borne; but the outrageous part of it is that they were continually making such false charges against women. They brought about their own destruction.

13 Whether 嗎 or 呢 be used the meaning is not perceptibly different, and both forms are practically *t'ung hsing*. Peking teachers prefer 嗎, but do not exclude 呢; in Shantung and the South the reverse is generally true. There is very little difference of meaning between 可是 and 可不是; the former is the direct affirmative, the latter the interrogative affirmative.

14 餽 is always doubled in use, and has different meanings in different localities. The query suggested by 呢 serves to soften the abruptness of the affirmation.

16 Properly, 外甥 applies only to males, but in practice is often made to include females as well. In other cases 女 or 女兒 or 閨女 is added by way of distinction.

21 說罷 is thrown in for emphasis. In 登天的 的 is superfluous and would better be omitted.

26 取燈呢 is equivalent to 取燈在那裡呢.

27 Teachers in country villages usually "board round." 兩天 is often used for a short but indefinite time.

28 貴處 is a polite form of referring to any one's native place:—Les. 171. 不點兒 is a contraction for 不大一點兒, which full form is also often used. 栽鹽賊 *plant salt plunder*, to hide or scatter salt on the premises of another person, and then accuse him of surreptitiously dealing in salt. Salt is a government monopoly in China and the occasion of enormous oppression and abuse. 自己作死, to bring about one's own death by conduct which can have no other result.

LESSON XC.

VARIOUS USES OF 當.

當 has two tones. In the 1st tone it means *ought*, in the 4th tone it means *to pawn*. In addition to these senses, which we have had in previous lessons, it has a variety of uses not readily apprehended and classified by the learner, to whom it seems to change its face nearly every time it turns up.

In the 1st tone it means, to serve in any capacity, (1), (5), (25), (33); in the presence of, at, (6), (7), (9), (10), (20), (27); at the time of,

or at that time, (11), (13), (14), (15), (19), (23), (28); to bear, (12), (16), (17), (18), (21).

In the 4th tone it means, to suppose or consider, (2); to regard as, (3), (30), (31), (32); the same, native, (4), (22), (24), (26), (29); to hinder, (8), (34).

This distribution of meanings between the two tones is only approximate, as the usage differs somewhat in different places.

第十課

LESSON XC.

有這些羅唆呢。○當家不得不儉待客不得不
 雪直下到一更天。○若當時不圖省事現在那
 吃飯的時候不好上人家裏去。○當那日
 喇。○勞動先生們來看我實在不敢當。○正當
 安息日做活呢。○那個當兒我身上就有了病
 嬉戲。○當場不讓父舉手不留情。○你怎麼當
 們有話應該說在當面。○年輕的人總免當不了
 皇上是光緒。○他的女人叫他當官賣了。○咱
 我們當客待嗎。○當天去不能回來。○當今的
 一人不能充當二役。○他認是你不去呢。○你拿

- 1 One person cannot serve in two capacities.
- 2 He supposed you were not going.
- 3 Are you going to treat us as guests?
- 4 We cannot go and return the same day.
- 5 The present emperor is Kwang Hsü.
- 6 He sold his wife by permission of the magistrate.
- 7 If we have anything to say, we should say it face to face.
- 8 Young people will have their fun.
- 9 In open competition a man does not give place even to his father. When a man raises his hand to strike, he discards sentiment.
- 10 How is it that you are working on the Sabbath day? [illness.]
- 11 Even at that time I was suffering from
- 12 I am not worthy that you gentlemen should have taken the trouble to come to see me.
- 13 It is not a proper thing to go into any one's house just at meal time.
- 14 On that day the snow fell continuously until the first watch.
- 15 If at the time we had not been so anxious to save labor, we should not have had all this inconvenience.

VOCABULARY.

充 *Ch'ung*¹. To fill full, to satiate; to act in the capacity of; extreme.
 當天 *Tang*⁴ *t'ien*¹. The same day [of which something else is predicated].
 當今 *Tang*¹ *chin*¹. The reigning [emperor]; the present, existing.
 緒 *Hsi*⁴. A thread, a clue, a beginning; a rule, a guide; to succeed to.
 光緒 *Kwang*¹ *Hsü*⁴. The reigning Emperor Kwang Hsü.
 當官 *Tang*¹ *kuan*¹. In the presence of the magistrate, by official authorization or permission.
 當面 *Tang*¹ *mien*⁴. Before the face, face to face, in the presence of.
 嬉 *Hsi*¹. To ramble; to play, to laugh.
 嬉戲 *Hsi*¹ *hsi*⁴. To laugh, to giggle; to have fun, to play.
 當兒 *Tang*¹ *ér*². A space or point of time; an opening, a gap.

當口 *Tang*¹ *k'ou*³. The same.
 勞動 *Lao*² *tung*⁴. To put to trouble, to inconvenience, to disturb.
 敢當 *Kan*³ *tang*¹. To dare, to assume.
 不敢當 *Pu*⁴ *kan*³ *tang*¹. Unwilling to bear [responsibility]; unworthy of [a compliment]:—Note (12).
 當日 *Tang*¹ *jī*⁴. On that day, the said day or time; once upon a time.
 當日 *Tang*⁴ *jī*⁴. The same day.
 更 *Ching*¹. A watch of the night. See *kéng*^{1/2/3} and *kéng*^{4/1/2/3}.
 當時 *Tang*¹ *shi*². At that time, the said time.
 當時 *Tang*⁴ *shi*². At the time, at the same time, immediately.
 豐 *Féng*⁴. Abundant; copious; fertile; prolific; bountiful.
 罪名 *Tsui*⁴ *ming*². Reputed guilt, misdeeds, misbehavior.

那怎麼好呢。對不要緊，我當不了上當舖去贖當。
 進城去當當，就是沒有工夫，問我替你帶着去當罷。
 打更，一個當火夫，在廚房裏拉二脚子。○我明天也該
 和他妹夫，都在衙門裏當差，一個當更夫，在監牢獄裏
 見，不可生他的氣。○這回可上了你的當咯。○他姐夫，
 是很急躁的，所以他說甚麼不中聽的話，你權當沒聽
 勸戒他，他只當作耳邊風。○人在病重的時候，心裏都
 喇。○我看王連科那個人，永遠也不能回頭，無論怎樣
 惹仇人，我們就不怕惹仇人嗎，他當是我們都是
 子膊⁵¹了，當時也沒覺得很疼，以後却受了好罪。○他怕

- 28 Jesus was born in Judea, in the first year of Yüan Shī, of Han P'ing Ti.
- 29 Two years ago I fell off a donkey and sprained my arm. At the time I did not feel much pain, but afterwards I suffered a great deal.
- 30 If he is afraid of making enemies, are not we also afraid of making enemies? He thinks we are a set of simpletons.
- 31 I don't believe that man Wang Lien K'ou will ever reform. No matter how you exhort him, he pays no attention at all.
- 32 When anyone is very sick his mind is always irritable. If, therefore, he says anything unbecoming, you must not get angry at him, but pass it by as if you had not heard.
- 33 I have certainly been deceived by you this time.
- 34 His two brothers-in-law both have positions in the yamên; one is watchman in the jail, the other is second fireman in the kitchen.
- 35 I ought to go to the city to-morrow to pawn a pawn, but I have no time. Ans. Let me take it along and pawn it for you. Ques. How could I trouble you? Ans. Never mind. I must go to the pawnshop any way to redeem a pawn.

勸戒 *Ch'üan⁴ chie⁴*. To exhort, to caution, to admonish.
 耳旁風 *Er³ p'ang² fêng¹*. Hearsay, rumor, idle tales.
 耳邊風 *Er³ pien¹ fêng¹*. The same.
 中聽 *Chung⁴ t'ing¹*. Becoming, seemly, pleasant.
 權 *Ch'üan²*. Weight; authority, influence; exigency; to balance, to weigh.
 權當 *Ch'üan² tang⁴*. To consider as if, to make believe, to feign.
 姐夫 *Chie³ fu¹*. Elder sister's husband.

當差 *Tang¹ ch'ai¹*. To fill an inferior office; to act under the authority of another; to fill the position of a servitor.
 更夫 *Ching¹ (or kêng¹) fu¹*. A watchman.
 監 *Chien¹*. To oversee, to superintend; a prison. Also *chien⁴*.
 監牢獄 *Chien¹ lao² yü⁴*. A prison.
 打更 *Ta³ ching¹*. To act as watchman.
 火夫 *Hwoä³ fu¹*. A fireman; an under-cook.
 當舖 *Tang⁴ p'u⁴*. A pawnbroker's shop.
 贖當 *Shu² tang⁴*. To redeem a pawn.

NOTES.

2 當 is the more general form.
 6 Men frequently sell their wives in China, though it is not regarded as a proper or lawful thing to do. Sometimes when a wife has been guilty of some grave misconduct, she is sold to another man with the approval of the magistrate. In this sentence 太太, or 師娘, or 夫人, could not be substituted for 女人, though 老婆 might.

9 A proverbial saying in book style. 當場 refers probably to the examination hall, the meaning being that when competing for a degree each man does his best, regardless of who may be worsted,—even a father not being exempt.
 14 In the South 當日 is used only in the sense of once upon a time, but in the North, it takes the additional meaning of, that day, the said day or time.

第十九課

LESSON XCI.

也 麼 摔 斤 下 一 是 擁 錐 擡 扎 我¹
 鋸 重 不 還 去 個 是 不 不 之 想
 不 的 倒 駝 走 個 自 動 動 着 快
 動 的 我 不 幾 人 然 不 不 之 些
 ○ 子 嗎。 動 上 步。 推 的 理、 牲⁴ 口 用 走、
 你¹² 嗎。 你¹⁰ 嗎。 ○ 這 麼 大 的 一 匹 騾 子、 二 百
 看 東 西 不 多、 一 個 人 却 拿
 ○ 好 鈍 鋸 子、 連 一 塊 木 板
 ○ 這 個 小 人 兒、 還 能 挑 動 這
 ○ 我 讓 他 抱 着 後 腰、 他 也
 ○ 這 麼 大 的 一 匹 騾 子、 二 百
 ○ 你 們 抬 不 犯 動、 那⁶ 副 盤 小 磨、 這⁵ 遛 措
 ○ 誰 能 弄 走 鑽 鑽 子
 ○ 駁 倒 了 呢。 也 趕 不 動。
 ○ 那 個 人 胖 的
 ○ 趕 也 趕 不 動。
 ○ 若² 是 錐 子

- 1 I am anxious to go fast, but the fact is I am not able.
- 2 If an awl will not penetrate it, you may use an augur and bore it.
- 3 That man is so fat that he cannot waddle along.
- 4 The animal is tired out. Urging does not move him.
- 5 This is a necessary truth: who can overthrow it?
- 6 That small mill one man is able to turn.
- 7 If you are not able to carry me, I will get down and walk a few steps.
- 8 Such a large mule as this, and yet cannot carry two hundred catties?
- 9 I will give him a back hold, and yet he cannot throw me down.
- 10 Is such a little man as you able to carry such a heavy load as this?
- 11 What a dull saw! it will not even cut a piece of board.
- 12 You think there are not many things, and yet one man cannot carry them all.

22 The principal wedding feast is sometimes held on the day of the wedding, sometimes on the day following, and sometimes the feast continues two days. 二日 may mean a feast on the second day or a feast on both days, but 連朝 can only mean a feast for two successive days. If both days be included, the translation should be,—Do you propose to have a one day's feast or a two days' feast?

23 手不老實 hand not trusty, or 手不穩 hand not steady, that is, "light-fingered."

25 那個不識數的貨 that commodity that cannot count ten. The application of 貨 to a person is of course depreciatory in the highest degree. 巧指使 to use ingeniously, to make a cat's paw of; 拿着當鎗放了 to shoot one off as a gun, to make a tool of. The Southern form sounds flat, though vouched for by two Nanking teachers.

26 Custom does not allow a creditor to use forcible measures in collecting a debt until in the last month. There is practically no legal method of collecting a debt in China.

It has to be done by the sheer force of irrepressible dunning, reaching in extreme cases to the use of violence.

28 平帝 was the emperor's title, 元始 the name or designation of his reign, which in former times was changed from time to time according to the emperor's fancy, so that one reign was by this means divided into several parts or terms. In modern times this custom has fortunately fallen into disuse.

29 觸 seems to be the proper character for sprain, though it does not give quite the proper sound in all places. The use of 跌 seems to give a somewhat different sense, meaning rather to bruise than to sprain.

34 打更 To strike the watch, which is done by Chinese watchmen by beating on a kind of wooden drum. 拉二脚子 takes the second foot. 二 indicates the second place, and 脚 is used with reference to his being required to run to do this or that at the bidding of his superiors.

35 當當 to pawn a pawn. The first 當 is a verb, the second a noun.

LESSON XCI.

THE AUXILIARY VERBS 動, 倒 AND 犯.

動 To move.—is added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of motion.

倒 To invert,—is added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of inversion.

犯 To oppose, to endure,—is added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of endurance. The use of 犯 is local in Eastern Shantung, but it gives a phase of meaning which no other word will express.

見你把他推倒了，你怎麼說，是他自己跌倒了。那些跑不動的人，有許多被他們殺了。○我²²看子，我要買個搬不倒兒給你。○反²¹賊來的時候，子，我自己磨不動。○若²⁰是這個禮拜，你作好孩子，下把我絆倒了。○請¹⁹你幫助我，磨挪這個書架動他。○不¹⁸知誰¹⁸丟¹⁸一塊石頭，在¹⁸大路口上，一就是失脚，也跌不倒。○他¹⁷不肯來，我拉也拉不主意的人，別人引誘不動。○人¹⁶在年輕的時候，想¹⁴要求他做點甚麼，沒有求動的時候。○真¹⁵有¹⁵不¹⁴犯了。○我的牙不好¹³濟，硬東西一點也咬不動。○

- 31 My teeth are poor, I cannot masticate anything hard.
- 14 If you wish to ask him to do anything for you, you will never prevail.
- 15 A man who really has a mind of his own cannot be enticed by others.
- 16 When a man is young, even though he makes a misstep, he will not fail.
- 17 He is not willing to come, and I am not able to drag him.
- 18 I wonder who threw a stone in the middle of the road. It tripped me and threw me down.
- 19 Please help me to move this book-case. I am not able to move it myself.
- 20 If you are a good child this week, I will buy you a doll.
- 21 When the rebels came, a great many who were not able to run were killed by them.
- 22 I saw you push him down. Why do you say that he stumbled and fell down of himself?

VOCABULARY.

擡 *Nang³*. To push from, to stab, to pierce, to penetrate.
 鑽 *Tswan⁴*. A skewer, an awl, a drill, a gimlet, an augur.
 鑽 *Tsuan¹*. To pierce, to drill, to bore.
 攪 *Ku⁴*. To mix, to stir, to twist. Read *hu¹* in Chinese dictionary.
 擁 *Yung^{3,1}*. To hug; to crowd, to throng; to push or press forward.
 搨 *Ying²*. To squirm, to wriggle; to waddle; to evade.
 溜 *Liu^{1,2}*. To linger; to lead about; to walk leisurely; to glide, to shuffle.
 駁 *Poa²*. To dispute, to controvert; to repel, to send back; to transfer.
 鈍 *Tun⁴*. Blunt, dull; stupid, obtuse.
 誘 *Yu⁴*. To encourage; to draw on, to entice, to allure, to tempt.
 引誘 *Yin³ yu⁴*. To lead on to evil, to entice, to tempt, to allure.
 失脚 *Shi¹ chiao³*. To make a misstep, to slip, to stumble.

大路口 *Ta⁴ lu⁴ k'ou³*. The middle of the road.
 絆 *Pan^{4,1}*. To trip up, to throw down; to stumble; to hinder, to hamper.
 書架 *Shu¹ chia⁴*. Book shelf or case.
 搬不倒 *Pan¹ pu⁴ tao³*. A self-righting doll or puppet:—Note (20).
 反賊 *Fan³ tsei³*. Rebels, robbers.
 塋 *Ying²*. A tomb, a cemetery.
 墳 *Fèn²*. A grave, a tomb.
 塋地 *Ying² ti⁴*. A burial ground, a cemetery.
 墳地 *Fèn² ti⁴*. Same.
 打坑 *Ta³ k'èng¹*. To dig a hole in the ground, to dig a grave.
 壙 *K'wang⁴*. A vault, a grave; a desert, a solitude.
 開壙 *K'ai¹ k'wang⁴*. To dig a grave.
 刨 *P'ao³*. To grub, to dig.
 盧 *Lu²*. A pan, a vessel; a surname.
 生鐵 *Shèng¹ t'ie³*. Cast iron.

好說不拾撩鑽鑄子吃逢呢。
 心好曉掇治不的差大開打○
 天老心得○動器差不多烟墻坑咱²³
 天老心感買那²⁶若是器具發風吃的入都嫌那塊
 爺爺動得把茶新硬鏃鏃也鏃不鏃○
 不能天和買壺給鐵鑄的却動舊²⁵骨○盧²⁴
 不保地你倒來他三○百錢從²⁷來還
 佑有倒來他三○百錢從²⁷來還
 你這有倒來他三○百錢從²⁷來還
 樣的來還

23 That burying ground of ours is nothing but stones. Every time a grave is to be dug, they take exception to it as being impossible to dig.
 24 Lu Er Yie has smoked opium till there is nothing left of him but a skeleton. The wind would almost blow him over.
 25 Articles cast of old iron are hard; they can neither be turned nor drilled; but if cast of new iron, they are very easy to work.
 26 I do not know whether three hundred cash will be sufficient to purchase that tea-pot or not.
 27 It has ever been said that "a benevolent heart moves heaven and earth." Seeing you have acted with such a benevolent purpose as this, God will certainly protect you.

鑄 *Chu⁴*. To cast.
 具 *Chu⁴*. Prepared, arranged; all; to present to; an implement, a utensil.
 器具 *Ch⁴ chu⁴*. Implements, tools, articles, vessels.
 撩治 *Liao² chi⁴*. To operate on, to put through; to manage; to put in order.
 掇 *Toa⁴*. To arrange, to gather up. Also *ts'oa³*.

拾掇 *Shi² toa⁴*. To gather up, to put in order, to repair, to dress up.
 感動 *Kan³ tung⁴*. To excite, to move, to quicken, to inspire.
 老天爺 *Lao³ T'ien¹ Yie²*. God:—Note (27).
 天老爺 *T'ien¹ Lao³ Yie²*. Same.
 佑 *Yu⁴*. To aid, to help; to protect.
 保佑 *Pao⁰ yu⁴*. To protect, to defend.

NOTES.

- 1 快些 is here taken simply as an intensive in accordance with its use in Southern Mandarin. See Note (26) Les. 84.
- 2 None of the terms here used for piercing with an awl is correct in Eastern Shantung, where the term is *nan* (no settled character).
- 3 掙攏 means properly to wriggle, and 溜 to glide, but neither is *t'ung hsing* in this connection. *Kiukang* would say *hwei³* (no character) and *Hankow* 歪 *wai¹* to sidle.
- 6 副 is Southern but not exclusively so. It is used in the North when the millstones are regarded as a pair. 盤 refers rather to the mill as a whole.
- 8 Two hundred catties is considered a moderate load for a pack-mule. 馱不上 is rejected in many places, yet it expresses a shade of meaning not given by 馱不動. The latter means properly, unable to move with the burden, while the former means unable to bear the fatigue of continuously carrying the burden.
- 9 抱着後腰 to clasp around the waist.
- 11 鋸 is the most general term for to saw, but in Western Shantung it is never used, 割 being used instead. A board is supposed to be easy to saw, hence the force of 連好鈍 Good dull; i.e., very dull, "good and dull."
- 12 犯 refers to the person, meaning that he is not able to carry so many; 了 refers to the things, meaning that they are too many for one person to carry, and that some will have to be left.

- 18 Neither of the forms given are usual in Shantung where 正道眼兒 would be used. 一下 here means all at once, both time and manner being included.
- 20 搬不倒 a doll or puppet without feet, but having a round base and loaded in such a way that when pushed over it will right itself.
- 23 墳地和 塋地 differ much as our graveyard and cemetery; the former is the place of graves, the latter is the burying place. 打坑 is the more widely used term, though it applies to other things than digging a grave, whereas 開墻 is specific for digging a grave.
- 25 Almost all castings made by the Chinese are made of old iron, and are consequently very hard.
- 27 天和地 are here used in a semi-personal sense. 老天爺 the old Heavenly Grandfather or 天老爺 the Heavenly old (or great) Grandfather. The former prevails in the North, the latter in the Centre and South. In many cases 爺 becomes 爺爺. The 老 is sometimes omitted and 天爺 used. This term in its various forms probably expresses the nearest approximation the Chinese people have to the idea of the true God. Whenever a man is driven by stress of circumstances to call to Heaven for help he calls upon 老天爺. Nevertheless it is undoubtedly true that particular gods are sometimes called 老天爺, especially is this true of 玉皇上帝. This use of "grandfather" accords with the ground idea of Chinese theogony, that all gods were once men.

些錢，就是應了，也湊不及。○三天²³以內，我不敢應你這麼
 毛病，他已經習慣成自然，要叫他一下子都除掉了，
 上走，因為火輪車來的太快，要躲也躲不及。○這些
 死了，請^{郎醫大夫}醫生，怎能請得及呢。○人²¹不該從火輪車路
 再說罷，現在^{辦不}辦不的辦。○你²⁰想他病了半點鐘，就
 是他，就是神仙，也忙不及。○這¹⁹件事，可以等我回來
 及。○衣裳¹⁷還沒有穿^及送當，就被¹⁸捕役拿住了。○別說
 裏找，也沒找着。○那¹⁶盒子帶不了來，是一時收拾不
 我辦不及了。○剛纔¹⁵一甩手，把我的頂¹⁵針¹⁵甩掉了，滿家

- go and manage it: I know that I cannot manage it.
- 15 Just now in giving my hand a fling I flung away my thimble. I have searched the whole room for it and have not found it.
 - 16 The reason he could not bring the box was because it could not be gotten ready at once.
 - 17 Before he could get on his clothes, he was arrested by the constables.
 - 18 Say nothing of him; even the genii could not have gotten through with it.
 - 19 Let this business lie over till I come back; I have not time to attend to it now.
 - 20 Just think of it. He died after an illness of only half an hour. How could we call a physician in time?
 - 21 One should not walk on the railroad track, for the cars come so rapidly that one cannot get out of the way in time.
 - 22 These vices have been practiced until they have become a second nature. To require him to give them all up at once, will be forcing him to do what he is not able to do.
 - 23 I cannot venture to promise you that much money within three days, and

孽 *Nie⁴*. The consequence of sin, retribution; sorrow.
 罪孽 *Tsui⁴ nie⁴*. Sin, the evil of sin.
 田地 *T'ien² ti⁴*. Land, ground; state, condition; place, point, pass.
 甩 *Shwai³*. To throw away; to fling, to throw.
 頂針 *Ting³ chn¹*. A thimble.
 頂¹⁵針 *Chi³*. To embroider.
 頂¹⁵針 *Ting³ chi³*. A thimble. (s).
 捕役 *Pu³*. To capture, to seize, to arrest.
 捕役 *Pu³ i⁴*. A constable, a policeman.
 醫生 *I¹ sheng¹*. A physician, a doctor.
 大夫 *Tai⁴*. Great:—Note (20). See *ta*.
 大夫 *Tai⁴ fu¹*. An honorary official title conferred on various ranks of high officers; a physician:—Note (20).
 郎中 *Lang² chung¹*. The senior secretary of any one of the six Boards:—a physician:—Note (20).

習慣 *Hsi² kwan⁴*. To acquire a habit, to habituate:—Note (22).
 以內 *I³ nei⁴*. Inside of, within.
 危險 *Wei² i⁴*. Dangerous, hazardous, perilous.
 危險 *Wei² hsien³*. Dangerous, perilous.
 橫豎 *Heng² shu⁴*. In every direction, on all sides, in every way; probably, most likely:—Les. 130.
 招架 *Chao¹ chia⁴*. To fence, to guard, to ward off.
 廢 *Fei⁴*. To set aside, to annul; to destroy; useless, void; corrupt, degenerate.
 律 *Lü⁴*. A law, a statute.
 律法 *Lü⁴ fa³*. A law, a statute.
 先知 *Hsien¹ chi¹*. A prophet.
 成全 *Ch'eng² ch'uan²*. To complete, to fulfill, to consummate.

全。是 先 來 架 李 打 我²⁵ 上 躲
 要 知 是 不 的 一 看 就 避
 廢 的 要 及 送 橫 個 見 就 避
 掉 道 廢 送 住 豎 姓 有 到 了
 正 理 掉 不²⁶ 招 李 的 十 那 個
 是 我 律 要 架 的 來 個 分
 要 來 法 想 也 那 姓 人 兒
 成 不 和 我 招 姓 人 兒

even if I should promise, I could not raise it.
 24 Before you reach the point of danger, it is possible to escape. When the danger is at hand, there is no time for escape.
 25 I saw upwards of ten men attacking a man named Li. The man Li guarded himself on all sides, but was unable to ward them off.
 26 Think not that I am come to destroy the law and the prophets. I am not come to destroy but to fulfil.

NOTES.

1 Or, I fear I cannot finish it in time for to-morrow.
 5 不及料 is equivalent to 料不及. A plainer and less bookish expression would be 料不到. The sentence is taken from a Chinese novel.
 8 The Chinese celebrate the one hundredth day of a child's age. Why it is called 百歲 is not certain. Some teachers would prefer to write it 百晷. The most likely explanation is, that the term expresses a wish that each day may represent a year, and that thus the child may live to be a hundred years old. It is customary on this occasion for the maternal grandmother to present the child with a fancy hat and shoes, sometimes with a whole suit. The hat is often ornamented with silver jewelry and little bells.
 9 看 here means to regard. It is thus used where we would say "for the sake of." 教掉 is perfectly proper and fitting in this connection but not as common as 教免 or 饒教.
 12 Or, You ought to have begun early; beginning now will it be possible to complete it?
 16 The literal would be,—The not being able to bring that box was in that it could not be gotten ready in time. 因為 might be inserted after 是 without detriment to the sentence.

18 忙不迭. Unable to do it even by hurrying.
 20 大 is only read tai, in the phrases 大夫, 大王, 大黃 and sometimes 大學. This was probably the original pronunciation in all cases. It is the only pronunciation given by K'anghi. 大夫 is used in the North for physician, but not in the South. It is heard in Western, but not in Eastern Shantung. How it came to supplant the more regular and proper term 醫生, is not certainly known. It was probably at first applied to the court physicians, who had official rank, and thence passed into general use. 郎中 is the common term in the South, and is also found in books. It probably came into use in the same way as 大夫.
 22 習慣成自然, a habit acquired becomes natural. 習慣 is rarely used save in connection with the whole expression.
 24 那分上, that point; i. e., the point of danger.
 25 住 is no doubt t'ung hsing in this connection, but 送 is also quite proper and widely used, and expresses a somewhat different idea. If 住 be used the translation should be, was unable to withstand them.

LESSON XCIII.

INITIAL INTERJECTIONS.

Chinese colloquial abounds in exclamatory words expressive of various emotions, many of which it is difficult to render into English. The proper characters to use are in a number of cases more or less uncertain, and the meanings attached to them vary much in different localities. The tones of these characters are especially variable and uncertain.

阿 Oh! Ah! Whew!—expresses a suddenly occurring thought, coupled sometimes with pleasure, sometimes with displeasure.

哦 The same,—Southern teachers prefer this character.

哎呀 Heigh ho! Hurrah!—expresses either astonishment or exultation.

哎哟 Oh! Alas! Ah me!—expresses consternation, or sorrow, or suffering.

嗒 Pshaw! Fudge! Humph!—expresses impatience, or disgust, or indignation.

喂 Bosh! Plague on it! Confound it!—expresses strong disgust and indignation.

嗒 Bosh! Bah!—expresses disgust, or indignation, or contempt. It is used chiefly in the South.

呸 or 呸 Tush! Humph!—expresses the strongest kind of impatience and contempt. Its use is an insult. No word in English is adequate to translate it.

呀呀呸 An emphatic form of 呸. It is explained as a sort of catching of the breath in

老婆孩子，不是都喫你，穿你嗎，你若死了，他們都倚靠誰
 瞧門路兒，預備來偷你的呀。○我勸你別尋死啊，你看你的
 不着喇。○噯，你那裏知道，他不是真來要甚麼吃啊，是來
 字部裏，對哦阿，我當是在寸字部，或是土字部裏，怪不得察
 一日的工夫。○健壯的壯字，該在甚麼部裏呢，該在土
 那兩隻小脚，怎能在繩子上，走來走去呢，噫，這也不是
 叫那個忘八蛋把我的辮子，剪了半截子去。○噫，你看他
 大驢子，就成了財主喇。○今天出去看燈，真喪氣，不知
 西的嗎。○這個大驢子，是您的嗎，俺我若有這麼個
 是跟你要，呀呀，你爲甚麼跟我要呢，我是給你看東

- demand it of me? Is it my business to watch your things?
- 24 Is this big mule yours? Ans. No, I am sorry to say it's not. If I had a big mule like that, I'd be a rich man.
- 25 Plague on it! I was unlucky, sure enough! In going out to see the illuminations to-night some vile rascal cut off the half of my queue.
- 26 Well, really! Just look at those two little feet! How in the world can they walk back and forth on that rope? Ans. That's so! You may be sure that was not learned in one day.
- 27 Under what radical should *chwang* of *chien chwang* be? Ans. It should be under the radical *shi*. Well! I thought it was under *ch'iang* or under *t'u*. No wonder I could not find it.
- 28 Tush! Don't you know that his coming in to beg is simply in order to spy out a way by which he can steal from you?
- 29 I beg of you don't think of suicide. Look at your wife and children! Are they not dependent on you for food and clothing? If you die, whom will they have to depend upon?

癡 *Ch'i*¹..... Stupid, silly; crazy, idiotic.
 癡心 *Ch'i*¹ *hsin*¹. *Infatuated*, beside oneself, foolish.
 妄 *Wang*⁴. Disorderly, unmannerly; reckless, absurd.
 妄想 *Wang*⁴ *hsiang*². To long for what is unattainable, *vain hopes*.
 糖 *T'ang*²..... Sugar, candy.
 借光 *Chie*⁴ *kwang*¹. *May I trouble you*, please sir.
 借問 *Chie*⁴ *wèn*⁴. Please tell me, *may I inquire*.
 賭錢場 *Tu*³ *ch'ien*² *ch'ang*³. A gambling house, a betting ring.
 打攪 *Ta*³ *chiao*³. To discompose, to interrupt, to bother, to pester.
 喪氣 *Sang*⁴ *ch'i*⁴..... *Unlucky*, ill-starred.

晦 *Hui*⁴..... *Obscure*; *unlucky*, *unpropitious*.
 晦氣 *Hui*⁴ *ch'i*⁴..... *Ill-luck*, *misfortune*.
 忘八蛋 *Wang*² *pa*¹ *tan*⁴. A rascal, a reckless villain:—Note (25).
 半截 *Pan*⁴ *chie*²..... A large piece, the half.
 健 *Chien*⁴. To establish; to erect; to constitute; to confirm.
 健壯 *Chien*⁴ *ch'iang*⁴. Robust, strong, able-bodied.
 士 *Shi*⁴..... A scholar, a gentleman; an officer.
 寸 *Ch'iang*²..... A couch; the 90th radical.
 門路 *Mèn*² *lu*⁴. Opening, *way of access*; a method, a means.
 尋死 *Hsin*² *Si*³. To commit suicide, to make *Hsun*..... away with oneself.
 保舉 *Pao*³ *chü*³. To recommend, to give a good report of.

多日子就來接搬你，好慎生想着，別忘記喇。俺。

你姐姐說，我媽說，你不用想家再等不

姐房裏去啊。俺，別先到他婆婆房裏去。俺和

要和人打架。俺，到你姐姐家，就一直上你姐

是苦命喇。○你³²要麻俐的走啊。俺，在街上不

他弄做，今天我去看他，他對我直哭。那纔

喝，都沒有個人管。老頭子病到那個樣兒，要點水

誰知道呢。○現在怎麼還疑惑你，謗他呢。答

了他，他現在不顧不了那些喇。○你³⁰從前保舉

呢，答。噱，現在不顧不了那些喇。○你³⁰從前保舉

on. Ans. Hem! What do I care for that now?

30 You heretofore recommended him; how does it come that he now suspects you of speaking evil of him? Ans. Humph! Who knows?

31 The old man so sick as that! and yet when he wants a drink, there is no one to get it for him; when he wants something to eat, there is no one to cook it for him. When I went to see him to-day he cried and cried. Ans. Ah me! His is indeed a bitter lot.

32 Now you go briskly, eh? don't fight with anybody on the street, eh? and when you get to your sister's, go straight into her room, eh? don't go first into her mother-in-law's room, eh? say to your sister that mamma says she must not get homesick, that after a few days we will go for her. Be sure and remember and don't forget, eh?

NOTES.

2 In Northern and Central Mandarin snakes are commonly called 長虫. 蛇 is a book term and generally means a venomous snake or serpent. It is used colloquially in the South and also in many parts of the North.

3 俺不 "I won't" is a very pat phrase, especially with children.

4 It is contrary to custom for persons of the same name to marry, although it is sometimes done.

5 The use of the "little name" implies familiar acquaintance, and, generally, superior age or station.

6 When a Chinaman gets into great straits he invariably calls his mother. The three forms of calling mother represent in the general, Northern, Central, and Southern custom, although there are many local variations.

9 啊 is here 1st tone and denotes surprise joined with a little anxiety. The translation given is only an approximation to the meaning.

10 問他好啊. Here 啊 is merely a euphonic ending. The 啊 below is a responsive recognition that the speaker is heard, after which the reply follows.

11 跟 as here used is local in Peking and the North.

15 The three terms here used are not quite synonymous. 邋遢 means properly, dirty, slovenly, but is used in Pekingese in the sense of, inferior, good-for-nothing; 邋態 is used in Shantung, but not in the North. It is also heard in the region of Hankow. Though local, it is a very expressive term; 憋包 is a Southern term and in this connection is the strongest of the three.

16 快 as here used has very little force. I have rendered it now.

17 周村 is a large unwall'd town in Central Shantung, having an extensive trade and much wealth. The first is

should be emphasized, indicating that the speaker presumed that the road referred to was the road to Chou Ts'un.

18 四條腿 is added for emphasis, and to make more striking the contrast between the man and the beast.

19 人家 here means other people, including the speaker, being used from the standpoint of the party addressed. 學書 is descriptive of "getting a lesson" in the Western sense. The term is not used in native schools.

22 活 is used to convey the idea that the slander is wholly without foundation. It is "made out of whole cloth."

24 No single word will express the sigh of regret here expressed by 嘆.

25 瞎, as here used, is given with a short, strong emphasis, very different from that of (11). 看燈 refers to going out to see the lanterns on the eve of the 15th of the first month. The Chinese says to-day, but it has to be rendered to-night. 忘八蛋, One who has forgotten, or is destitute of, the eight virtues, and thus properly beyond the pale of humanity. 蛋 is used as a term of reviling in allusion to its being the undeveloped and unrecognizable possibility of a being. Though decidedly inelegant this term is refined in comparison with the language often heard. There are few Chinese who, in the circumstances here referred to, would not use a stronger term than this one, which is in fact a mild substitute for the stronger one used by the writer of the sentence. A gentleman should never use even this term.

26 This sentence refers to the female acrobats sometimes seen in China.

29 It would seem more natural to say 吃你的, 穿你的, but the idea is much more vivid without the 的.

32 This is a fair specimen of a Chinese woman charging a son or a nephew. It is not in the least overdone.

課四十九第

LESSON XCIV.

的皇帝，雖是旗人，漢人作官的却不少。○
 喇。○吃⁹他的房子，雖然窄小，家裏擺設的，却像個富家。
 丁¹¹老三乾空是個財主，待人却很刻薄。○
 保再就出。○他⁷是個伶俐人，却辦些糊塗事。
 還可以管家裏的事。○孩子⁶雖然種過牛痘兒，也難
 四、脾氣雖不好，心田却不錯。○他⁵雖然不能出門，
 做呢。○他³雖然有不是，我也有點兒過錯。○王老
 他¹雖年輕，却是秀才。○你²雖然這麼說，那能這麼

- 1 Although he is young, he is nevertheless a graduate.
- 2 Although you speak thus, yet of course you will not do so.
- 3 Although he is in the fault, I also am somewhat to blame.
- 4 Although Wang the fourth's temper is bad, his heart is all right.
- 5 Although he cannot go abroad, he can manage things at home.
- 6 Although the child has been vaccinated, yet you cannot be sure that he will not take [the disease] again.
- 7 Although he is a clever man, he has done some silly things.
- 8 Although his house is contracted, yet inside, the rooms are furnished like those of a wealthy family.
- 9 The opium smoker must satisfy his craving even when his father and mother are on their death beds.
- 10 Although the day is long and there is plenty of time, yet it will be better to do it early.
- 11 It is all to no purpose that Ting the third is a rich man, he still treats people very meanly.
- 12 Although the emperor of China is a Manchu, yet not a few of the officials are Chinese.

LESSON XCIV.

CORRESPONDING CONJUNCTIONS.

雖 or 雖然 Although. The use of 然 does not change the meaning, being added merely for euphony. 雖 requires an answering clause, which is generally introduced by one of the three words 却, or 也, or 還. Thus:—
 雖... 却. Although... yet, nevertheless.
 雖... 也. Although... yet also, yet even.
 雖... 還. Although... yet still.
 Sometimes the answering word is omitted and

the relation implied in the structure of the sentence (18). In *sen-li* 然 is not joined with 雖, but is used to introduce the answering clause. This usage is occasionally introduced in book Mandarin (25).

乾 Exhausted, is sometimes used instead of 雖, but with a somewhat different meaning, viz., to no purpose, in spite of, even if. In the South 乾 is not thus used, but 空, empty, is used in the same way, and with the same meaning.

VOCABULARY.

雖 *Sui*¹. Although, if, even of, supposing:—see Sub.
 心田 *Hsin*¹ *t'ien*². The heart viewed as the source of the affections and purposes, natural bent.
 窄小 *Chai*³ *hsiao*³. Narrow, contracted.

停牀 *T'ing*² *ch'wang*². A death bed:—Note (9).
 癢 *Yin*⁵. A blister; the craving of an appetite,—especially that for opium or drink.
 過癢 *Kwod*⁴ *yin*⁵. To pass over or stop the craving by satisfying it.

雖然²⁰你欺親你¹⁷只掛夫○聰
 交的飯負的們一念却他¹⁴明
 朋友量那些教各人他我賒賠的
 有也不老實他¹⁸有動起不能我¹⁵雖
 善大誰我心沒的幾掛老賒賠
 規怎麼裏有道理人他○雖
 的乾實欺負我還要聽過不
 道理吃氣不我上看聽過不
 也長上肉臃忿。○見你他過
 富肉臃忿。○見你他過
 看他○看¹⁹他母○雖

- 13 Although you are superior to others in intelligence, yet you must have a virtuous mind in order to command the respect of others.
- 14 Although their business was a losing one, it was only time that was lost, they did not lose money.
- 15 Although my old father writes for me not to be anxious about him, yet I cannot but be anxious.
- 16 Although this T'ie Chung Yü is only one man, yet if he once sets to, thirty or forty men cannot master him.
- 17 Although all of you know some things, yet you should still heed your mother's instruction.
- 18 Although he has not imposed upon me, yet when I see him imposing on well-meaning people, I really cannot restrain my anger.
- 19 Your appetite seems to be very fair. How is it that in spite of your eating you do not get fat?
- 20 Although exhortation and reproof belong to the duties of friendship, yet it is necessary to consider the character of the individual in question.
- 21 Although the mother scolds her little son with her mouth, yet she em-

皇帝 *Huang² ti⁴*..... An emperor.
 旗 *Ch'í²*..... A flag, a banner, a standard.
 旗人 *Ch'í² jèn²*. Bannermen, Tartars:—Note (12).
 漢人 *Han⁴ jèn²*. Chinese,—especially as distinguished from the Tartars.
 心地 *Hsin³ tí⁴*..... Same as 心田 above.
 敬服 *Ching⁴ fu²*. To respect, to honor, to esteem.
 忿 *Fèn⁴*..... Anger; resentment; indignation.
 氣不忿 *Ch'í⁴ pu⁴ fèn⁴*. Indignant, unable to restrain one's anger:—Note (18).
 飯量 *Fan⁴ liang²*. Capacity for eating, *ap-petite*.
 臃 *Piao¹*..... Fat, obesity, corpulence.
 勸善 *Ch'üan⁴ shan⁴*. To exhort one to do right, to preach morality.
 規過 *Kwei¹ kwo⁴*. To reprove, to admonish for a fault. (w.)

憎 *Tseng¹⁴*..... To dislike, to hate, to detest.
 憎嫌 *Tseng⁴ hsien²*. To dislike, to find fault with, to scold.
 摟 *Lou³*. To embrace; to carry off, to elope with. Also *lou¹*.
 摟抱 *Lou³ pou⁴*. To embrace, to fold in the arms, to hug.
 親熱 *Ch'in¹ jè⁴*. To caress, to kiss; dear, loving, affectionate.
 出相 *Ch'u¹ hsiang¹*. Worthy of note or imitation, remarkable, special.
 妖 *Yao¹*. Strange, ominous, monstrous; heretical, unusual; a phantom, a ghost, a fiend.
 妖巧 *Yao¹ ch'iao³*..... Odd, witty, singular.
 千古 *Ch'ien¹ ku³*. Antiquity, of old, from ancient times.
 雄 *Hsiung²*. The male of birds and insects; brave, martial, heroic.
 英雄 *Ying¹ hsiung²*. A hero, a knight; of noble and courageous mind.

雖然如此，總擋不住他們搶奪。預備護送客旅，凡是城池鎮店，也都有官兵彈壓。出賊最多，所以在道路上，不多遠就有一個卡防。說，然冤家可解不可結。○曹州府，那是久反之地。明天要辦的事，不由得心裏發跳。○我兒雖如此，候，亞伯身體雖然倦乏了，還不能睡着，因為他想到是一個小女子，却有千古大英雄的度量。○這時最能說個妖巧話，說着這個，譏諷着那個。○他雖樓抱，用嘴親熱他。○張二那個人，模樣雖不出相的爲人。○母親和小兒，口裏雖然憎嫌，還是用手

braces him with her arms and kisses him with her lips.
 22 Although there is nothing remarkable in the personal appearance of that man, Chang the second, yet he has a great faculty for saying witty things, speaking of one while he ridicules another.
 23 Although she is a little girl, she has the ability of the great heroes of antiquity.
 24 Although at this time Abel was very weary in body, he still could not sleep, for he was thinking of what was to be done on the morrow, and in spite of himself his heart kept palpitating.
 25 Although what you say, my son, is so, still it is better to remove enmity than to incur it.
 26 That Ts'ao-chou-fu has long been a rebellious place which produces many robbers, therefore there are guards stationed on the road at short distances for the purpose of escorting travellers, and every city and market-town also has a guard of soldiers to protect it; and yet, notwithstanding all this, they cannot be restrained from robbing.

度量 *Tu⁴ liang²*. Capacity, ability; calibre; penetration, judgment.
 亞 *Ya³*. Deformed, inferior,—much used in names as a phonetic.
 伯 *Po²*. The third rank of nobility, an earl; a title of respect. Also *pai³*.
 久 *Chiu³*. Enduring, a long time, of old.
 道路 *Tao⁴ lu⁴*. A road, a way; a method, a resort.
 卡 *Ch'ia³*. A guard house, a small police or customs station. Also *ch'ia²*.

卡防 *Ch'ia³ fang²*. A guard house, a watch station.
 護送 *Hu⁴ sung⁴*. To escort, to accompany with a guard, to give safe conduct.
 客旅 *K'o⁴ lu³*. A traveller, a stranger.
 城池 *Ch'eng² ch'i³*. A walled city.
 鎮店 *Chên⁴ tien⁴*. A market-town.
 彈壓 *T'an³ ya⁴*. To keep in order, to restrain; to protect, to guard.
 搶奪 *Ch'iang³ to²*. To rob, to plunder, to carry off violently.

NOTES.

6 To vaccinate is variously designated. Besides the two terms used in the text, both 種痘子 and 種洋痘 are used. The 再 might be omitted with advantage; as used it regards the effect of vaccination as if it were a species of small-pox.

9 停牀 is a special bed prepared for one who is dying. The Chinese have a strong prejudice against allowing any one to die on a *k'ang* or on a bed; they say that the soul will have to carry the *k'ang* or bed on its back and cannot get out of the house until a necromancer is employed to assist it. He takes a rooster and by means of sundry incantations conducts the soul out of the house. Hence as soon as it appears that anyone is about to die, they move him off the bed or *k'ang* to some temporary bed on the ground or on benches in the

middle of the room. The most common way is to take a door off its hinges (a thing very easily done with Chinese doors) and lay it across a couple of benches and stretch the dying person on it. 過癮 means practically to take a smoke, by which means the uneasy craving is relieved, and so "passes by."

12 旗人. The Manchus are divided by the reigning dynasty into eight banners or clans, under which they are officered and marshalled. As commonly used by the Chinese the term includes all the Tartars.

15 有信 here means *has sent a letter, or a letter has arrived from*. In other connections it generally means *to receive a letter*.

LESSON XCV.

第九課
 是也得人去修理。○凡說話行事，雖要認真，只是
 然而心裏愁苦得很。○莊稼雖仗着雨水均勻，但
 起的事，但是他却不出頭。○我哥哥是笑在臉上，
 我固然錯了，但你責備的話太利害。○明明是
 起的事，但是他却不出頭。○我哥哥是笑在臉上，
 我固然錯了，但你責備的話太利害。○明明是
 起的事，但是他却不出頭。○我哥哥是笑在臉上，
 我固然錯了，但你責備的話太利害。○明明是

- 1 I was wrong, it is true; but your reproof is too severe.
- 2 Clearly it was he who originated the affair, yet nevertheless he refuses to bear the responsibility.
- 3 My elder brother has a smile on his face, nevertheless, in his heart he is very much distressed.
- 4 Although the crops depend on seasonable rains, yet they require men to cultivate them.
- 5 Although we should always be sincere in word and deed, yet it is not well to be too simple-minded.
- 6 I am very loath to lend money, yet he has begged me again and again until I have no alternative.
- 7 But the article is already ruined, so that even though you do begrudge it, what can you do?
- 8 In ordinary circumstances, who does not know that it is best to be pacific; but when you are offended by some one, you lose your self-control.
- 9 If you regard only that man's exterior, he is certainly trusty; nevertheless, in his heart he is exceedingly treacherous.
- 10 Children should of course obey their

16 幾十人 *several tens of men*. 打他不過 an obsolete form of 打不過他. It is still heard in some places along the Yang-tse.

18 那些 does not mean any particular individuals, but well-meaning people in general. 氣不忿 is to be understood as if written 氣的不得不忿, for which it seems to be a contraction. 19 乾就是.

20 勸善規過 is a ready-made book expression. 他 stands for 朋友, and the use of 的 makes 為人 a noun

meaning character. A more colloquial form of speech would be 當看他為人怎麼樣.

21 用嘴親熱他 does not refer to kissing in the proper sense, of which the Chinese are generally ignorant, but to rubbing the face with the nose and lips, which Chinese mothers are in the habit of doing.

23 This is said of 冰心小姐, *Miss Icy-heart*, the heroine of the "Fortunate Union."

25 In speaking, an 啊 should be inserted after 兒. This sentence is also from the "Fortunate Union."

LESSON XCV.

DISJUNCTIVES.

但 or 但是 But, but yet, still. The 是 is added or not as the rhythm of the sentence requires.

只是 But, but then, but only.

但是一件 }
 但是有一件 } But there is one thing, but
 但有一件 } it must be borne in mind.
 只是有一件 }

却但是一件 But then it must be remembered, but the fact is, nevertheless.

然 But, yet. Not often used alone in Mandarin save as the correlative of 雖 as noted in the preceding lesson.

然而 But, yet, nevertheless, yet on the other hand. Essentially *wên-li*, but frequently used in Mandarin books—very rarely in colloquial.

心、人、用²¹月、年、因、錢、是、是、出
 所、却、西、起、起、此、一、不、是、無
 以、但、國、只、每、有、百、怎、最、數
 皇、是、人、放、七、人、四、麼、高、的
 上、一、在、一、天、說、領、受、貴、大
 情、件、海、次、一、洋、領、喫、的、海、道
 願、西、關、就、領、賑、的、味、理、來、
 多、國、收、完、不、如、義、○、領²⁰、但、
 出、人、稅、了、放、到、賑、的、每、洋、是、
 俸、比、俸、較、麥、秋、後、爲、止、義、
 祿、更、多、好、像、不、如、用、本、事、也、
 也、要、用、西、國、人、更、有、本、事、也、
 更、忠、國、○、三、頭、百、領、也

much plausible talk, giving me no chance to open my mouth.
 19 Birds' nests and fish fins, although they are the rare delicacies of the sea, yet if not mixed with chicken broth and meat, they are not specially palatable.
 20 Those who receive foreign relief, receive one hundred and forty cash for each person, whether child or adult. Those who receive the imperial bounty, receive for each adult six hundred cash, and for each child three hundred, hence some say the foreign relief is inferior to the imperial bounty. But it must be remembered that the foreign relief began before the new year, one distribution in seven days, and continued without interruption until after the wheat harvest. The imperial bounty began in the third month and stopped after only one distribution, so that, comparing the two, the foreign relief was after all the better.
 21 To use foreigners at the ports to collect duties, requires higher salaries, and it seems as if it would be better to use natives, but the fact is that foreigners have more ability and are more honest, hence it is that the Emperor prefers to give higher salaries and use foreigners.

君 *Chun*¹. A prince, a sovereign; *honorable*,
 *superior*; a term of respect.
 君子 *Chün*¹ *tsi*². The ideal or superior man:—
 Note (17).
 燕 *Yen*⁴. A swallow, a martin.
 燕窩 *Yen*⁴ *wo*¹. A swallow's nest, *edible bird's*
 *nest*.
 翅 *Ch'i*⁴. A wing, a *fin*.
 魚翅 *Yü*² *ch'i*⁴. Sharks' fins.
 海味 *Hai*³ *wei*⁴. A delicacy of the sea.
 調和 *T'iao*³ *ho*². To mix, to blend; to medi-
 ate, to make peace.

受吃 *Shou*⁴ *ch'i*¹. Good to eat, *palatable*.
 頭年 *T'ou*² *nien*². Before the new year.
 麥秋 *Mai*⁴ *ch'iu*¹. Wheat harvest.
 比較 *Pi*³ *chiao*³. To compare.
 海關 *Hai*³ *kwan*¹. A custom house.
 稅 *Shui*⁴. Taxes in kind, *duties on goods*, tariff.
 俸祿 *Feng*⁴. *Salary*, emoluments; wages.
 祿 *Lu*⁴. Official salary, emoluments, pay; pros-
 perity.
 俸祿 *Feng*⁴ *Lu*⁴. The emoluments of office, *salary*.
 忠心 *Chung*¹ *hsin*¹. Faithful, devoted; *honest*,
 reliable.

NOTES.

2 却 is in fact superfluous, yet the colloquial very often adds it in this way after 但是, as nevertheless is added in the translation. 出頭 to come to the front; i.e., to bear the responsibility.

3 The use of 臉 prevails in the South, that of 面 in the North.
 4 雨水 means properly rain water, and is generally so used, but in the present case it means simply rain. 均勻

被 昨²⁰ 幾 有 鈴 半 大 呵 詔 不 ○
 我 夜 天 一 鐘 都 概 奉 媚 厚 沉 大¹²
 趕 約 也 分 的 是 不 的 又 約
 跑 在 不 權 因 中 能 大 起 年
 了。 四 說 柄 爲 等 久 約 了 老
 ○ 更 也 就 怕 的 住。 沒 風 的
 王²¹ 天 不 加 招 ○ ○ 有 想 諛 人、
 二 的 笑 上 蠅 瞎 牲¹⁷ 世¹⁶ 正 必 來 血
 上 時 想 三 子 眼 口 上 經 沒 氣
 關 候 必 分 驕 ○ 夏 好 ○ 大 自 然
 東 有 一 有 傲。 如¹⁸ 天 姿 聶¹⁵ 雨。 衰 弱。
 六 個 甚 麼 李¹⁹ 的 概 的 人 凡¹⁴ ○
 年 賊 來 心 老 人 沒 總 上 往 說 天¹³
 沒 有 來 信 擬 撥 事。 師、 大 半
 諛 門。 ○ 這 半 帶 大 海、 帶 的

such as have power to fascinate.
 12 In general, when men grow old, their vigor naturally declines.
 13 The clouds are not heavy (thick), a wind has also sprung up, there will probably not be much rain.
 14 Generally when any man's talk savors of flattery, he is not a reputable person.
 15 When General Nie goes to Shanghai, he will not probably remain long.
 16 Of mankind, the talented are few; the great majority are mediocre.
 17 In the summer, animals do not commonly wear bells, lest they draw the flies.
 18 It is mostly the case, at the present time, that when a man's authority increases, his pride increases in a three-fold ratio.
 19 Prof. Li neither speaks nor smiles these few days. I fancy there is something weighing on his mind.
 20 Last night, about the time of the fourth watch, a thief came and tried the door, but I drove him away.
 21 Wang the second went to Manchuria, and for six years there has been no word of him. Probably he is dead.

大諛 Great supposition,—Most likely, belike, probably. (N.)

諛來 Probably, most likely. Quite *t'ung-hsing*, but more used in Central than in Northern or Southern Mandarin.

諛想 Probably, I presume, I suppose. (s.)

諛必 Most likely, I presume, I expect.

想必 I suppose, I presume, I fancy. *T'ung-hsing*, but more used in the South than in the North.

This lesson is closely allied to lesson 130.

VOCABULARY.

諛 *Liang*⁴. To believe; to suppose, to guess; probably, likely :—see Sub.

概 *Kai*⁴. To even, to adjust; a summing up; all, the whole.

流水賬 *Liu*² *shui*³ *chang*⁴. A day book, a blotter :—Note (8).

放債 *Fang*⁴ *chai*⁴. To lend money.

衰弱 *Shuai*¹ *joa*⁴. Weak, feeble, debilitated, decrepit.

詔 *Ch'an*³. To flatter, to fawn upon; adulation, sycophancy.

媚 *Mei*⁴. Smirking, smiling; to flatter, to pet.

媚詔 To flatter, to cajole, to act the sycophant.

呵 *Ho*⁴, *Ha*¹. To expel the breath; to pant, to yawn; to flatter; a final particle.

呵奉 *Ho*⁴ *feng*⁴. To flatter, to act the sycophant, to curry favor with. (s.)

聶 *Nie*⁴. To whisper; a surname.

聶姿質 *Tsi*¹. Fascinating; talents, endowments.

質 *Chi*^{4,3,2}. Substance, matter, to establish by evidence, to confront; honest, sincere, plain; a disposition.

生火。想來是已經死了。○
 是前五年的事，雖然不能說得一點不差，大畧對，答是如此。○我在這裏存着五吊八百錢，對不
 每逢支錢，必上摺子，摺子上沒有，想必是沒支。
 ○外頭來了一個人，身量不高，大約四十多歲，要見先生，答阿，想必是李先生，可以請他進來。
 ○這塊蔓菁，大約再等七八天，就好拔了。○天²⁹生的賊骨頭，若不動大刑，大料他是肯招的。

- 22 There seems to be no smoke issuing from the chimney. I presume the fire is not yet kindled.
- 23 Most likely some things have occurred which we did not anticipate.
- 24 This affair happened five years ago, and although I cannot say exactly, yet it was about this way.
- 25 I have here deposited to my credit five thousand eight hundred cash. Is that correct? Ans. Yes, it is probably about that amount. By looking at your account I will know.
- 26 Every time he gets money it is put on his pass book. If it is not on the pass book, I presume he has not received it.
- 27 A man has arrived without who wishes to see you. He is not very tall and is about forty years old. Ans. Oh, I presume it is Mr. Li. You may invite him in.
- 28 After about seven or eight days more, this patch of turnips will be ready for gathering.
- 29 Thieving is bred in that fellow's bones, and it is not likely that he will be willing to confess without the application of the severest torture.

質 Endowments, parts, talents, cleverness.
 中等 Chung¹ têng³.....Mediocre, average.
 夏天 Hsia⁴ t'ien¹..... Summer.
 蠅 Mêng²..... A horse-fly; a gad-fly.
 瞎眼 蠅 Hsia¹ yen³ mêng². A horse-fly:—
 Note (17).
 柄 Ping³..... A handle, a crank; authority.
 權柄 Ch'uan² ping³. Authority, power, control,
 prerogative.
 老師 Lao³ shī¹. An instructor, a professor;
 superintendent of education:—Note (19).
 心事 Hsin¹ shī⁴. Something weighing on the
 mind, trouble, embarrassment.
 撬 Ch'iao⁴..... To raise with a lever, to pry.
 筒 T'ung³..... A tube, a pipe open at both ends.

烟筒 Yen¹ t'ung². A smoke pipe, a stove pipe,
 a flue:—Note (22).
 釜 Fu³..... A caldron, a boiler, a kettle.
 釜臺 Fu³ t'ai². A chimney, a flue:—Note
 (22).
 烟衝 Yen¹ ch'ung¹. An outlet for the smoke, a
 flue:—Note (22).
 過節 Kwod⁴ chie². To keep a feast day; to
 exceed the bounds of propriety; an occurrence, a complication, a hitch.
 猜算 Ts'ai¹ swan⁴. To conjecture, to guess; to
 anticipate, to look for.
 數目 Shu⁴ mu⁴..... Number.
 蔓 Man²..... A turnip. Also wan⁴.
 菁 Ching¹..... Luxuriant; a turnip.
 菁菁 A turnip, a beet.

NOTES.

4 Note that the first 不來 is past, and the second one future.
 5 It is uncertain whether this sentence was intended to enunciate a principle, or to apply to a particular individual. In the latter case it should be rendered, If everybody says that Mr. So and So is a good man, he most likely is a good man.

8 流水賬. A running account written in the order in which the business is done. A cash book is a 銀錢流水賬.
 9 It is a sort of a necessity in China that he who would leud money should have some 勢力, otherwise he would

第九十七課

LESSON XCVII.

他¹ 寬裕¹ 他¹ 雖¹ 不¹ 來¹ 你¹ 仍¹ 然¹ 該¹ 去¹。○ 實² 指² 望² 到² 今² 年² 就² 是² 長² 到² 一³ 百³ 歲³ 在³ 你³ 手³ 裏³ 仍³ 舊³ 是³ 個³ 孩³ 子³。○ 他³ 就³ 是³ 長³ 到³ 你⁴ 該⁴ 去⁴ 因⁴ 爲⁴ 別⁴ 人⁴ 不⁴ 認⁴ 得⁴ 門⁴ 兒⁴。○ 世⁵ 俗⁵ 說⁵ 人⁵ 死⁵ 了⁵ 爲⁵ 鬼⁵ 不⁵ 知⁵ 人⁵ 死⁵ 了⁵ 仍⁵ 舊⁵ 是⁵ 人⁵。○ 我⁶ 給⁶ 他⁶ 改⁶ 正⁶ 了⁶ 一⁶ 回⁶ 仍⁶ 舊⁶ 還⁶ 是⁶ 不⁶ 好⁶。○ 有⁷ 道⁷ 的⁷ 人⁷ 雖⁷ 然⁷ 受⁷ 苦⁷ 難⁷ 堪⁷ 然⁷ 而⁷ 仍⁷ 有⁷ 他⁷ 的⁷ 快⁷ 樂⁷。○ 這⁸ 些⁸ 椅⁸ 子⁸ 你⁸ 們⁸ 從⁸ 那⁸ 裏⁸ 搬⁸ 來⁸ 的⁸ 還⁸ 要⁸ 照⁸ 舊⁸ 送⁸ 回⁸ 去⁸。○ 我⁹ 們⁹ 得⁹ 救⁹ 雖⁹ 不⁹ 倚⁹ 靠⁹ 律⁹ 法⁹ 却⁹ 仍⁹ 舊⁹ 要⁹ 得⁹ 按⁹ 律⁹ 法⁹ 行⁹ 事⁹。○ 說¹⁰ 來¹⁰ 說¹⁰ 去¹⁰ 該¹⁰ 怎¹⁰ 麼¹⁰ 辦¹⁰ 的¹⁰ 仍¹⁰ 舊¹⁰ 還¹⁰ 是¹⁰ 要¹⁰

- 1 Although he does not come, you should still go.
- 2 I had certainly hoped to have plenty this year, and behold I am still suffering from poverty.
- 3 Even if he grows to be a hundred years old, in his relation to you he will still be a child.
- 4 After all you will have to go, for no one else knows the door.
- 5 The world says that when a man dies, he becomes a demon; but the fact is when a man dies, he is still a man.
- 6 I corrected it for him once, and still it is not right.
- 7 A man who has received the truth, although he may suffer grievous trials, yet nevertheless has his joys.
- 8 Take these chairs back to the place from whence you brought them.
- 9 Although we are not saved by trusting in the law, yet it is still necessary to live according to the law.
- 10 After all your talk, you will still have to do it as it ought to be done.

presently find himself without any money to lend. 勢力 here means power to coerce payment, to have such influence with those in authority as will enable one to use a certain degree of violence with impunity.

15 In some places 上 is used for going to a place, without regard to up or down. In other places 往 is used.

17 瞎眼 蟲 A species of horse-fly, popularly regarded as blind, because of the peculiar appearance of its eyes. It is supposed to be guided by the sound of the bells in finding the animals.

19 老師, also called 教官, theoretically an official teacher appointed in each Hsien city to teach the graduates of his district. The office is a sinecure so far as teaching is concerned. He simply exercises the functions of a superintendent, and is entitled to certain fees. He has charge of the Confucian temple and offers sacrifices at the required seasons. The 老師 in a Fu city is the general superin-

tendent of those in the Hsien cities. There are also military 老師.

22 There is no tung-hsing term for "chimney," for the reason probably that in a large part of China there are no chimneys. In Eastern Shantung chimneys are general, and the distinctive name is 釜臺. A 烟筒 is a stove pipe, though it may perhaps in some places be applied to a chimney. 烟衝, as used in the South, is simply a horizontal hole in the wall for the exit of the smoke. Stove pipe is so called by foreigners.

26 Pass books are extensively used by Chinese shopkeepers and bankers.

28 這塊 蔓菁, this piece of turnips, that is, this piece of land which is sown in turnips.

29 Probably spoken by an underling, and intimating that the party spoken of was an old thief accustomed to being flogged and fortified against it.

LESSON XCVII.

STILL.

還 As before, still, yet. This word belongs properly in this lesson, but from necessity it has already been so frequently used that it is useless to illustrate it further.

仍 As before, still, nevertheless.

仍舊 As of old, as before, all the same, still.

仍然 As ever, still. Practically the same as 仍舊, but a little more elegant.

照舊 As before, as heretofore, still.

依舊 As before, as heretofore. A little bookish.

仍舊還是 After all, still. A much used, but somewhat redundant expression.

請一¹⁶子、候、了、來、瞎、再、○、怎
 一、他、以、賬、照、眼、不、我、麼
 位、他、後、要、舊、窟、不、我、見
 先、雖、以、緊、還、窿、賭、了、有
 生、然、後、要、緊、還、就、了、有
 的、暫、以、緊、還、就、了、有
 見、暫、以、緊、還、就、了、有
 識、時、後、要、緊、還、就、了、有
 總、冷、後、要、緊、還、就、了、有
 有、淡、以、緊、還、就、了、有
 看、不、後、要、緊、還、就、了、有
 不、多、以、緊、還、就、了、有
 怕、時、後、要、緊、還、就、了、有
 不、候、以、緊、還、就、了、有
 熨、的、後、要、緊、還、就、了、有
 貼、地、以、緊、還、就、了、有
 當、方、後、要、緊、還、就、了、有
 ○、所、以、緊、還、就、了、有
 驛、以、緊、還、就、了、有
 子、所、以、緊、還、就、了、有
 能、只、以、緊、還、就、了、有

- 11 He continued to ride on the whole night, his horse's feet not stopping till the dawn.
- 12 I have known a great many gamblers vowing, with an oath, never to gamble again, and yet they afterwards went back to their gambling as before.
- 13 The moment I get my bleared eyes open, it is—sweep up—wipe off the table—wash the kettle and get breakfast, and to-morrow when I get up, it will be the same round over again.
- 14 After this settlement with Wang Shui T'ing, be sure and have him write you a receipt in full. If you do not, it will afterwards turn out that you still have no settlement.
- 15 When you punish your own child, although he may be estranged for the time being, he will presently be as affectionate as ever.
- 16 One man's judgment is, in any case, imperfect, therefore to ask only one teacher's criticism is, after all, unsatisfactory.

VOCABULARY.

仍 *Jèng²*..... As, as before, still, again.
 裕 *Yü⁴*. Plentiful, superabundant; liberal; overmuch.
 寬裕 *K'wan¹ yü⁴*. Abundant, in easy circumstances, plenty; generous, liberal:—Note (2).
 改正 *Kai³ chéng⁴*. To correct, to adjust, to alter.
 堪 *K'an¹*. To sustain; able, adequate; worthy of, fit.
 蹄 *T'i²*..... A hoof, a foot; a horse-shoe.
 起誓 *Ch'i³ shi⁴*..... To swear, to take an oath.
 願 *Yüan⁴*.... Sincere, faithful; a promise, a vow.
 發願 *Fa¹ yüan⁴*..... To make a vow, to vow.
 眵 *Ch'i¹*. Blurred (eyes), purulent eyelids, bleared.
 瑞 *Shui⁴*. A signet; a keep-sake; felicitous, auspicious.
 亭 *T'ing²*..... A pavilion, an arbor; straight, even.
 字據 *Tsi⁴ chü⁴*. A paper given in proof, a certificate, a receipt.
 清白 *Ch'ing¹ po²*. Plain, clear; intelligible; in full, quit claim, final.

暫時 *Chan⁴ shi²*. Temporarily, for the time being, for the present.
 冷淡 *Lèng³ tan⁴*. Cool, estranged, alienated; indifferent.
 熨 *Yü⁴*. To smooth out, to adjust, to settle. Also *yün⁴*.
 熨貼 *Yü⁴ tie⁴*. All right, satisfactory, in order, O. K. *not Seking*
 折算 *Ché² Swan⁴*. To average; to sum up, to aggregate.
 大烟鬼 *Ta⁴ yen¹ kwei³*..... An opium sot.
 酷 *K'u¹*. Hard-hearted, cruel; extreme, radical; bitter, relentless.
 挖酷 *Wa¹ k'u¹*. To berate, to taunt, to reprove, to reproach, to upbraid.
 保標 *Pao³ piao¹*. To convoy, to guarantee safe delivery, to insure.
 況 *K'wang⁴*. Moreover, furthermore, still more; a time, an event.
 景況 *Ching³ k'wang⁴*. Condition of things, state of affairs, circumstances.
 祖母 *Tsu³ mu³*..... Paternal grandmother.

有二十年的好時候，所以折算起來，仍舊
 年的好時候，所以折算起來，仍舊
 還是養驢子。○我家裏那個
 大烟鬼，不知叫我挖了多
 馬了多頓，仍舊擋不住他
 你說愁人不愁人呢。○我
 保標，若是命裏該有事，就
 標的，也仍舊免不了。○去
 家看看，家裏的景況，還都
 改，就是我的祖母不在了。

- 17 A mule may have twenty years of effective service, but a donkey has only ten or more years, so that in the aggregate, it is after all more profitable to keep mules.
- 18 That opium sot of ours—I don't know how often I have reproved him, or how many times I have berated him, and yet it does not prevent his smoking all the same as before. Isn't it vexatious?
- 19 I don't want anybody as escort. If I am fated to have trouble, even if I have an escort, it cannot after all be prevented.
- 20 Last year I went home for a visit; the condition of everything at home was just the same as before, save that my grandmother had died.

NOTES.

3 The Chinese hold that parental authority and filial obedience continue without change through life. The same also is true of the authority of elder brothers and uncles.

4 門 at the end of a clause nearly always takes 兒 after it. Though not always written, it is, at least in the North, nearly always spoken.

5 The souls of dead men are commonly spoken of as 鬼, albeit a man never speaks of the souls of his dead parents or ancestors as 鬼 but as 神, they being regarded as deified. Christianity, however, cannot afford to allow that a dead man is a 鬼, much less that he is or may become a 神.

9 The Southern teachers here as often insist on 要 for 得. The meaning, however, is somewhat different. 要 states a charge or requirement of the speaker; 得 expresses the requirement or necessity of the case.

10 說來說去 here means, to talk in a roundabout way for the purpose of making a point. It sometimes means simply to keep up a conversation.

11 馬不停蹄 horse's feet not stopping—an expression found in novels.

12 The 的 after 誓 might be omitted without changing the sense, though the construction would be somewhat modified.

13 膠 sticky, bleared,—is here used of the unpleasant, sticky sensation in the eyes often experienced when getting up early, or before one is satisfied with sleep. It gets especial force from the fact that in China poor eyes are the rule rather than the exception. The Peking equivalent is more expressive than elegant. The Nanking teacher rejects both forms, and says 把眼睛一揉, giving my eyes a rub, which sounds very tame. Tidy housekeepers in China no doubt wash the kettle after cooking a meal, but the general use of the phrase 刷鍋做飯 shows that the reverse order is the common practice.

14 若不然的時候. Lit. If not so's time; i.e. in case you do not.

15 大烟鬼 great smoke devil; i.e., besotted opium smoker. 鬼 is used as a term of reproach and contempt. The underlying idea is that the man has lost the proper characteristics of manhood, and become a demon in depravity. There are other terms of the same class, as 看錢鬼, a miser, 賭錢鬼, a gambler.

16 保標. To convoy or escort money, treasure, or other valuables. It is done either by soldiers, constables, or professional fighting men.

20 依舊未改, a ready-made expression, somewhat bookish.

LESSON XCVIII.

THE AUXILIARY 處.

處 is added to many adjectives and participles for the purpose of turning them into abstract nouns of quality or condition, thus 難處, the state or quality of being difficult, 好處, the state or condition or quality of being good, etc. This use

of 處 is somewhat similar to that of the English termination *ness* in such words as goodness, usefulness, bitterness, etc. The words with which 處 is most commonly joined are those given in the lesson; if, however, occasion requires, it may be joined to almost any adjective or participle.

第九十八課

LESSON XCVIII.

了極處。○先生若得工夫，請到我們寓下處去坐坐罷。
 處大家享，有苦處大家受。○我們的心，真是污穢到
 處呢。○人說我的短處，心裏就不自在。○你們有好
 的風俗，過於浮華。○你們這樣癡說，癡笑，有什麼樂
 到處和店家磨牙。○出處不如聚處多。○那地地方，
 到書。○沒有用處，就是便宜我也不要。○鄭天保出門，
 找我的錯，有甚麼益處。○孫先生的長處，是善於講
 一輩子忘不了。○人往高處走，水往低處流。○你又
 裏是什麼去處。○大處不算，小處算。○你的好處，我
 各人有各人的難處。○他經過好些險處。○你看那

1 Every man has his own difficulties.
 2 He has passed through many perils.
 3 Go and see what kind of place that is.
 4 He is particular about the small [expenses], not the great [ones].
 5 I will not forget your kindness as long as I live.
 6 Men seek high places [as] water seeks [the] low. [issue, with me].
 7 What profit is there in again taking
 8 Mr Sun's strong point is in his excellent expositions.
 9 It is of no use, so that, even if it is cheap, I do not want it.
 10 When Chêng T'ien Pao travels, he quarrels with the inn-keepers wherever he goes.
 11 There are more in the market than there are in the factory. [ly gay].
 12 The fashions of the place are excessive.
 13 What is there so funny that you are talking and laughing in such a silly fashion?
 14 When anyone speaks of our shortcomings, we feel uncomfortable.
 15 When you have blessings share them in common, and when you have adversities bear them in common.
 16 Truly our hearts are utterly unclean.
 17 If you get time, please come to our lodgings and visit us.

難處 Difficulty, strait, troublesomeness.
 險處 Danger, peril, risk, precariousness.
 去處 A place to go to; a place; an occasion.
 大處 That which is great or important; greatness, magnitude.
 小處 That which is small or unimportant; smallness, littleness, inferiority.
 好處 Benefit, advantage; kindness; blessing; virtue, merit.
 高處 That which is high; pre-eminence; highness, altitude.
 低處 That which is low; inferiority; lowness.
 益處 Benefit, profit, profitableness.
 長處 Superiority, pre-eminence; forte.
 用處 Use, usefulness.
 到處 Every place, everywhere. A contraction of 所到之處, and not quite in line with the lesson.

出處 The place in which a thing is produced and from which it proceeds; origin, factory.
 聚處 The place where things are collected; a market, a rendezvous, a focus.
 地處 A place, a situation. (L.)
 樂處 An occasion of rejoicing; gladness, enjoyment.
 短處 Short-coming, deficiency, fault; shortness.
 苦處 Suffering, adversity; bitterness.
 極處 The extreme, the uttermost.
 寓處 Dwelling-place, residence, lodgings.
 下處 The same.
 明處 That which is public, in public.
 暗處 That which is private, in private, in secret; darkness.
 損處 Injury, harm, detriment, injuriousness.

話應該說在當面，光背地裏唧唧咕咕，有甚麼益處。○小

雖然沒有甚麼大好處，可也沒有甚麼大壞處。○那個人，

天在這裏，明天在那裏，沒有一定的住處。○那個人，

他。○我有甚麼奇處兒，比我好的多着的呢。○他

不便宜處。○他若不在衙門裏，可以上他寓處去找

○凡廟會的日子，男女混雜，也沒有人整理，有許多

處方。○你在這裏十來多年，沒有甚麼得罪人的處去

有不遮掩的。○老兄進京的時候，要緊給我找個地

太平藥，吃了一點，害處也沒有。○人有短處，大概沒

○他在明處是一樣，在暗處又是一樣。○這是一種

- 18 He is one thing in public, and quite another in private.
- 19 This is a mild medicine; taking it will not do the least harm.
- 20 There is hardly a man having a fault who does not try to conceal it.
- 21 When you go to the capital, be sure and find a situation for me.
- 22 You have been here upwards of ten years without giving occasion of offense to any one.
- 23 On the occasion of fairs at the temples, men and women are mixed together without any one to control them, which gives rise to a great deal of inconvenience.
- 24 If he is not in the yamén, you can go to his lodgings and look for him.
- 25 What is there remarkable in me? There are plenty of better men than I am.
- 26 He is here to-day and there to-morrow. He has no certain abiding-place.
- 27 Although that man has no great virtues, neither has he any great vices.
- 28 If you have anything to say, you should say it to his face. What use is there in always grumbling behind his back?

害處 Injury, harm.
 奇處 That which is remarkable or wonderful, strangeness.
 住處 Place of abode, residence.
 壞處 Bad habits, vices, viciousness.
 趣處 Enjoyment, satisfaction, happiness.

乖處 Perverseness; craftiness; shrewdness; peculiarity.
 巧處 Ingenuity, skilfulness, cleverness.
 便宜處 Convenience, fitness, opportuneness.
 可惡處 That which is hateful; detestableness, hatefulness.

VOCABULARY.

磨牙 *Mod² ya²*. To dispute, to jangle, to wrangle, to quarrel.
 聚 *Chü⁴*. To assemble, to gather together, to collect, to converge.
 浮華 *Fou² hwa²*. Luxurious, dissolute, gay.
 傻說 *Sha³ shwo⁴¹*. To talk foolishly, nonsense, silly talk.
 癡說 *Ch'í¹ shwo⁴¹*. The same.
 傻笑 *Sha³ hsiao⁴*. To laugh as a simpleton, to giggle.
 癡笑 *Ch'í¹ hsiao⁴*. The same.

污穢 *Wu¹*. Filthy, unclean; polluted, vile.
 污穢 *Hui⁴*. Filthy, dirty; obscene, vile; to defile.
 污穢 *Unclean*, defiled, polluted.
 寓 *Yü⁴*. To dwell, to lodge, a residence; a lodging place.
 遮掩 *Ché¹ yen⁸*. To hide, to conceal, to cover up, to screen.
 處所 *Ch'ü⁴ so⁴³*. A place, occasion. (s).
 混雜 *Hun⁴ tsa²*. Mixed up, confused.
 整理 *Chéng³ lí³*. To put in order, to set right; to control, to straighten up.

家却必上他的當，這是他的巧處。
 的當，這是他的乖處，他想出個法子來，人家
 巧呢，任憑人家用使甚麼法子，他不上人家
 他至契的朋友。○像張天德，那纔是真乖
 是常有的事，他那個可惡處，就是單哄騙
 的事情，還有甚麼難處呢。○哄騙人，這也
 得還有苦處在後頭哩。○這³¹是趣樂處，却不曉
 賭的人，當時雖然覺得有些³⁰那些喫喝嫖
 他有好處，你不能說嗎。○不要你偏說短處，
 的不肯說人的短處，^答不要你偏說短處。

- 29 I would rather not tell tales on other people. Ans. I don't want you specially to tell tales on him; if he has any virtues, can you not speak of them?
- 30 Although men who are given to profligacy think they have some enjoyment at the time, yet they do not consider that the bitterness will come by and by.
- 31 This is a matter that rests with yourself? What difficulty is there?
- 32 Deception is a matter of constant occurrence, but the hateful thing about him is that he makes a point of deceiving his especial friends.
- 33 Give me a man like Chang T'ien Tê for real shrewdness and skill. No matter what artifice you try, he is not to be caught—this is his shrewdness: but when he sets a trap for you, you are certain to be caught—this is his skilfulness.

嘟 *Tu*¹..... To mutter, to grumble.
 囁 *Nang*²..... To speak indistinctly.
 嘟囔 To grumble and mutter in an undertone.
 唧 *Chi*³..... To hum as an insect, to babble, to mutter.
 咕 *Ku*⁴..... To mumble, to stammer.
 唧咕 To grumble and mutter, to murmur.
 哄騙 *Hung*⁵ *p'ien*⁴. To deceive, to cheat, to impose upon, to hoax, to cozen.

可惡 *K'od*³ *wu*⁴. *Hateful, detestable; odious, abominable.*
 契 *Ch'i*⁴. A covenant, a bond; devoted to, sacred to. Also *hsie*⁴.
 至契 *Chi*⁴ *ch'i*⁴. Very intimate, devotedly attached, bosom friends.
 乖巧 *Kwai*¹ *ch'iao*³. *Shrewdness, address, cunning, subtlety.*

NOTES.

- 3 去處 is fairly *t'ung-hsing*, but its use is much more prevalent in some places than in others.
- 4 This common saying is very nearly equivalent to our "Penny wise and pound foolish."
- 7 Bunyan's original is, "You lie at the catch again; this is not for edification."
- 8 善於 *good at*, is a *wên-li* form, extensively used in colloquial.
- 11 The meaning is that the place to see large quantities of any article, and to buy it cheaply, is in the market, where it is collected for sale, not in the place from which it comes, or the factory in which it is made.

- 12 地處 is, for the most part, local in the region of Chinanfu.
- 14 我 is here used generally, which is expressed in English by using the plural.
- 22 十來多. In the South 多 is not added to 十來, as it frequently is in the North. The common Southern form is 十多.
- 23 Chinese women are very much secluded, save at religious fairs and at theatricals, where custom gives them great liberties.
- 29 For the use of 偏, see Les. 112.

這就爲比喻。○樹²⁰有葉子，就譬如人有肺，都是爲喘
 法如爐。○能¹⁹用相似的理，將所要說的理顯明出來，
 火似的，自己¹⁹黑暗，也不能照人光明。○人¹⁸心似鐵，官
 行不行。○我¹⁷想人沒受聖靈的感化，好像蠟燭沒點
 方我不用人帶領，你細細的告訴我，都是打那裏走，
 對面說話一樣。○今¹⁶天的冷熱，和昨天的彷彿。○比¹⁶
 鐐一般。○世¹³事路難行。○錢錢爲馬。○用¹⁴德利風達信，正如
 個根上生出來的。○懶¹²惰人走路，如同脚上帶着脚
 般的。○這¹¹宗族，譬如一棵樹，長起來千枝萬葉，都是一
 樣辦。○人¹⁰的性情，喜好爲惡，如同吸鐵石吸鐵一似

- yours, it is likely that you would manage it in the very same way.
- 10 Man's nature delights in doing evil, just as a loadstone attracts iron.
 - 11 One's ancestry may be compared to a tree which, when grown, has a multitude of branches and leaves all of which spring from the one root.
 - 12 A lazy man walks as if he had hobbles on his feet.
 - 13 Life is a hard road to travel (like a road), and money is the horse.
 - 14 Sending a message by telephone is just like speaking face to face.
 - 15 The temperature to-day is similar to that of yesterday.
 - 16 Suppose I should not employ any one to guide me, would it answer for you to tell me carefully all about how to go?
 - 17 In my opinion, a man who has not received the influence of the Holy Spirit is like a candle which is not lighted. It is dark itself, and cannot give light to others.
 - 18 The heart of man is like iron, the law is like the furnace.
 - 19 A comparison consists in the use of a similar idea to set forth the idea which you wish to explain.
 - 20 The leaves of trees may be compared

喜 好 *Hsi³ hao⁴*. To delight in, to be enamored of, to love.

吸 *Hsi²*. To draw in the breath, to inspire; to suck; to attract, to draw.

吸 鐵 石 *Hsi² t'ie³ shi²*. A loadstone.

宗 族 *Tsung¹ tsu²*. Ancestors, ancestry, ancestral clan:—Note (11).

枝 *Chi¹*. A branch, a twig:—Les. 100.

葉 *Yie⁴*. A leaf, a blade; a thin plate of metal.

鐐 *Liao⁴*. A fetter, a shackle.

脚 鐐 *Chiao³ liao⁴*. Fetters, shackles, gyves.

對 面 *Tui⁴ mien⁴*. Face to face.

聖 靈 *Sheng⁴ Ling²*. The Holy Spirit.

感 化 *Kan³ hwa⁴*. To influence, to inspire; to transform; to convert.

黑 暗 *Hei² An⁴*. Darkness.

光 明 *Kwang¹ ming²*. Light; bright, shining.

顯 明 *Hsien³ ming²*. To manifest, to set forth, to make clear.

比 喻 *Pi³ yü⁴*. An illustration, a comparison, a parable.

肺 *Fei⁴*. The lungs.

螺 *Loa²*. Spiral univalves; spiral, screw-like.

蝸 螺 *Si¹*. A gasteropodous mollusk.

螺 螄 *Loa² Si¹*. A whelk, a periwinkle.

龜 *Kwei¹*. A tortoise, a terrapin.

烏 龜 *Wu¹ kwei¹*. A black tortoise; a whoremonger, a satyr.

比 作 *Pi³ tsoa⁴*. To compare to or with.

銀 錢 *Yin² ch'ien²*. Money, specie, wealth.

糞 土 *Fen⁴ t'u³*. Dung, filth.

臉 面 *Lien³ mien⁴*. Reputation, honor, self-respect, face, influence.

義 氣 *I⁴ ch'i¹*. Uprightness, integrity, honor.

起 初 *Ch'i³ ch'u¹*. At first, in the beginning, primarily:—Les. 126.

說 相 聲 *Shwoa³ hsiang⁴ sheng¹*. To mimic sounds and voices:—Note (24).

工人，這就叫打抱不平。²⁶看劉安的相貌如同猥狀
 一個以色列人，他心裏就懷不平之氣，下手打那督
 甚麼意思呢。^答比如摩西，看見伊及的督工人，暴打
 學孩子說話，聽着恰像孩子的聲音。²⁵打抱不平，是
 的，說得真好，他學女人說話，聽着恰像女人的聲音，
 幾天似乎懂點門路喇。²⁴我今天看見一個說相聲
 啞吧孩子，跟李先生學着說話，起初是一個姓張的
 龜駝嗎。²²銀錢如糞土，義氣值千金。²³有一個姓張的
 說，螺羊裏跳出烏駝來喇，這不是把我比作一個烏駝
 氣用的。²¹我不叫這些小人兒，在這裏吵鬧，他們就

to the lungs of men ; both are used for breathing.
 21 I would not let these youngsters make a noise here, whereupon they said, "A camel has jumped out of the flock of sheep" ("A black turtle found among periwinkles"). Is not this comparing me to a camel (turtle) ?
 22 Money is as dung ; reputation (honor) is worth thousands of gold.
 23 A dumb boy named Chang was Mr. Li's pupil in learning to articulate. His mind was utterly blank at first, but these few days he seems to be getting a little idea of learning.
 24 I saw a polyphonist to-day who performed first rate. When he imitated a woman speaking, it sounded exactly like a woman's voice ; when he imitated a child talking, it sounded exactly like a child's voice.
 25 What is the meaning of [the phrase] vindicating the oppressed? Ans. For example ; when Moses saw the Egyptian task-master cruelly beating an Israelite, his mind was affected with a sense of the injustice, and he at once interfered and beat the task-master. This is what is called vindicating the oppressed.

相貌 *Hsiang⁴ Mao⁴*. Countenance, physiognomy, face.
 列 *Lie⁴*. To arrange in order, to marshal ; a rank, a series ; regularly ; severally.
 徠 *Lai²*.....To induce, to encourage. (w.)
 猥狀臭 *Lai² tai¹ ch'ou⁴*. A clown, a booby ; a dirty beast, a dowdy.
 能耐 *Neng² nai⁴*. Ability, potency, efficiency, capacity.

能為 *Neng² wei²*.....Ability, capacity, force.
 才幹 *Ts'ai² kan⁴*.....Ability, talent, capacity.
 名號 *Ming² hao⁴*. A name, a title, an appellation.
 開頭 *K'ai¹ t'ou²*. To begin, to lead off, to date from:—Les. 126.
 萬世 *Wan⁴ shi⁴*. Ten thousand generations, the ages, forever.
 失落 *Shi¹ lo⁴*.....To lose, to let slip.

NOTES.

5 The second 的 in this sentence would be left out by many speakers without at all feeling the incongruity of the construction.
 9 在你身上 *On your body ; i. e., concerned you.*
 11 The initial 這 simply marks the subject of discourse. When a Chinese teacher is asked to define 宗族 he always does so by explaining the two words separately, which makes the term as a whole not a little confusing. It means ancestors or ancestry or ancestral clan, according to circumstances. It is a book, rather than a colloquial, term. 千枝萬葉 is an expression in the studied form of books.

13 世路 does not here form a phrase, as elsewhere, but means simply, the course or way of life. This is the Peking form of the saying and does not illustrate the lesson. Compare, "Money makes the mare go."
 18 The structure of this sentence is wên: it becomes Mandarin only by being quoted and used as a common saying. 官法 does not mean simply the law, but all the means and methods by which officers control the people.
 21 小人兒. The use of 兒 gives a diminutive touch similar to our word "youngster." Neither of the comparisons here used seem specially apt.

二世的就被滅了。
 的很遠，却失落的很快，剛到
 下直傳到萬世，那知道打算
 號，就是打算從自己開頭，往
 不錯，都像秦始皇，他取那
 算來半點不由人，這話一點
 氣的人。○萬事只有天才主，
 曉得他真是個有才幹，有志
 樣子，但是和他細談起來，就
 臭一般，一點不像有能耐的

26 Lin An has the face of a booby; he does not look as if he had the least capacity, but if you get into conversation with him, you will find that he is a man of ability and decision.
 27 The saying is quite true, that "all events are controlled by the will of heaven; the plans of men are entirely futile." For example, Ch'in Si Hwang took this title with the idea that from him, as the first, the succession would continue throughout the ages; but although his plans were very far reaching they were very soon overturned; for in the second generation the dynasty was broken up.

23 一竅不通 *not a single orifice open, that is, utterly stupid or blank.*
 24 說相聲的, a small showman who stands behind a curtain and exhibits his powers of mimicry for the entertainment of the listeners.
 25 打抱不平 To interfere for the righting or revenging of the wrongs of others.
 26 傑獸臭 is a widely used phrase, but has different meanings in different places.

27 秦始皇 Lit. Ch'in the First Emperor. He destroyed the feudatory system of ancient times and consolidated all the petty states into one empire. He declared himself Emperor, taking the term "First Emperor" as his title. He was a man of ability, but made himself infamous by his celebrated edict ordering all books to be burned, and the chief scholars of the land to be buried alive (焚書坑儒). His son was a man of inferior ability and lost the empire bequeathed to him.

LESSON C.
CLASSIFIERS.

陣 A rank,—classifier of things that come with a sudden start, as wind, rain, smoke.
 座 A seat,—classifier of hills, walled towns, temples, pagodas, etc.
 場 An arena,—classifier of rain, wind, and of affairs which involve contention or emulation, as lawsuits, quarrels, examinations, etc.
 枝 A twig,—classifier of slender things, as pens, pencils, arrows, etc.
 鋪 To spread out,—classifier of things spread out as beds, matting, etc.
 桿 A staff,—classifier of guns, spears, steel-yards, etc.
 盞 A shallow cup,—classifier of lamps and wine cups.

顆 A kernel,—classifier of small round things, as beads, pearls, etc.
 穗 An ear of grain,—classifier of heads or ears of grain.
 粒 A grain,—classifier of things in grains, as sand, grain, etc.
 牀 A bed,—classifier of bedclothes.
 層 A layer,—classifier of stories, strata, tiers, specifications, etc.
 掛 To hang up,—classifier of things hung up, as watches, saddles, necklaces, etc., also, in the South, of bunches of grapes.
 嘟嚕 A bunch,—classifier of fruit in bunches, as grapes, bananas, etc.

第 一 百 課

LESSON C.

杆。場風廳去了一半。○我家裏有兩鋪炕，兩鋪張牀，冬天睡炕，夏天睡牀。
 門裏有一座十三層的高塔。○今年十分年成，叫這
 迦南地的葡萄一掛。○我纔買了一根枝。○這
 時候。○我纔買了一根枝。○這
 盞燈不穀，可以再點兩枝蠟燭。○這場雨下的正是
 說和了。○那是一桿行秤，每斤足十六兩。○光點一
 兒。○這鋪張牀太短，伸不開腿。○他們那場官司，經人
 ○幾乎惹出一場大事來。○恩姐戴着三枝石榴花
 這陣風颳的實在涼。○前面那座山，生長的實在古怪。

- 1 This wind blows decidedly cool.
- 2 That mountain in front of us has a very strange conformation.
- 3 I came near stirring up a serious affair.
- 4 Sister Grace is wearing three sprigs of pomegranate flowers.
- 5 This bed is too short; one cannot stretch out his legs.
- 6 By the interposition of a third party that lawsuit of theirs has been compromised.
- 7 That is a standard steelyard; every catty is full sixteen ounces.
- 8 To light one lamp only is not sufficient, you may light two candles in addition.
- 9 This rain came just at the right time.
- 10 I have just bought a pipe. How much do you think it is worth?
- 11 In ancient times one bunch of the grapes of Canaan was enough for two men to carry.
- 12 Inside the west gate of the city of Kingchou, there is a high pagoda of thirteen stories.
- 13 This year gave promise of full crops, but the half was destroyed by this storm of wind.
- 14 A black stone bridge with a vermilion red balustrade on either side.
- 15 We have in our house two k'angs and

VOCABULARY.

- 7 桿 *Kan²*. A staff, a handle, a lever, a club, a pole:—see Sub.
- 8 盞 *Chan³*. A shallow cup for oil or wine:—see Sub.
- 顆 *K'oa¹*. A kernel, a crystal:—see Sub.
- 粒 *Li⁴*. A grain, a particle:—see Sub.
- 穗 *Sui⁴*. An ear, a head, a spikelet:—see Sub.
- 11 嚙 *Lu³*. Protuberant; a bunch.
- 嚙 *Tu¹ lu³*. To hang down, to pout, to be down in the mouth; a bunch, a cluster:—see Sub.
- 前面 *Ch'ien² mien⁴*. In front of, in the foreground, before.
- 古怪 *Ku³ kwai⁴*. Antique; strange, odd, singular, exceptional, grotesque.
- 榴 *Liu²*. The pomegranate.

- 石榴 *Shi² liu²*. The pomegranate.
- 上古 *Shang⁴ ku³*. Ancient times, anciently.
- 塔 *Ta³*. A pagoda, a tower, a pillar.
- 十分 *Shi² fen¹*. Complete, full, perfect; the whole, entire:—Les. 137.
- 朱紅 *Chu¹ hung²*. Vermilion red, bright red.
- 欄 *Lan²*. A railing, a balustrade; a pen, a cage, a paled enclosure.
- 杆 *Kan¹*. A club, a staff, a pole, a post.
- 欄杆. A balustrade, a railing, a paling.
- 淒 *Ch'⁴*. Bleak; shiyering; sad, mournful.
- 淒涼 *Ch'⁴ liang²*. Sad, melancholy, lonely.
- 菊 *Chu²*. The aster, the marigold, the daisy, the chrysanthemum.
- 長壽菊 *Ch'ang¹ shou⁴ chu²*. The marigold.

床被單子三牀被
 上有一牀毯子一牀氈子
 約有一百顆粒一穗稻子大約有八十顆粒西屋那鋪張牀
 大約有三千顆粒一穗高粱大約有一千顆粒一穗麥子穀子
 作翠雲樓樓上樓下大小有百十個閣子一穗穀子
 親在蘇州買的二百銀子一顆北京城內有座樓叫
 百多桿洋鎗現在被官捉住了。○這五顆珠子是我父
 萬壽菊開了七枝花兒實在好看。○有些散勇偷了三
 陣風一陣雨的那個聲兒真是淒涼。○南園裏有一科
 ○凡是一座城裏邊就有一座城隍廟。○昨兒晚上

two beds. In the winter we sleep on the k'angs, and in the summer, on the beds. [to Ch'êng Hwang.
 16 Every walled city has in it a temple
 17 Yesterday evening the sound of the successive gusts of wind and rain was decidedly melancholy.
 18 In the south garden is a marigold on which seven flowers have opened. It is very beautiful.
 19 There were some discharged soldiers who stole over three hundred foreign guns. They have just been arrested by the officers.
 20 These five pearls were bought by my father in Soochow for two hundred taels each.
 21 In the city of Peking there is a tower called the Emerald Cloud Tower, in which there are, above and below, great and small, upwards of a hundred balconies.
 22 A head of millet has, on an average, about three thousand grains; a head of sorghum has about one thousand grains; a head of wheat has about one hundred grains, and a head of rice about eighty grains.
 23 On the bed in the west room there is a carpet rug, a felt rug, a fur rug, two cotton mattresses, two sheets and three quilts.

萬壽菊 Wan⁴ shou⁴ chü²..... The same.
 勇 Yung³. Brave, courageous, valorous; fierce; a soldier, a brave.
 梁 Liang²..... Millet.
 高粱 Kao¹ liang²..... Barbadeos millet.
 秫 Shu⁴..... The same. Generally doubled.
 稻 Tao⁴..... Growing rice, paddy; rice.
 毯 T'an³..... A rug, carpet, drugget.
 氈 Chan¹..... Felt of all kinds.
 被單 Pei⁴ tan¹..... A bed sheet.
 客店 K'oa⁴ tien⁴. An inn, a hotel, a lodging-house.

臉盆 Lien³ p'ên²..... A wash-basin.
 齊全 Ch'i² ch'üan². Complete, perfect, finished; in full, all.
 痢 Li⁴..... Dysentery, flux.
 痢疾 Li⁴ chi²..... Dysentery.
 傷寒 Shang¹ han²..... Typhus or typhoid fever.
 餓 Ê³, Ngê³..... Hungry, starving.
 餓死 Ê³ si³..... To starve to death.
 道光 Tao⁴ Kwang¹. The sixth Emperor of the present dynasty, who reigned from 1821 to 1851.
 凍死 Tung⁴ si³..... To freeze to death.

NOTES.

2 The Chinese speak of hills as if they had grown, sometimes using 生, and sometimes 長, a result, no doubt, of their evolution ideas.
 7 A 行秤 is a steelyard representing the standard weight current among the business men of a given place, and professing to give full sixteen ounces to the catty. In point

of fact, however, the majority of such steelyards weigh light, when tested by the legal standard.
 9 正是時候 Most learners will be inclined to say 在 for 是, and in fact 在 might be used without impropriety, but 是 is the more common and truly idiomatic form.

大 樓 每 人 一 間 房 裏 頭 預 備 的 手
 巾 臉 盆 鏡 子 鋪 蓋 樣 樣 齊 全 所 以
 住 店 就 和 在 家 一 樣 ○ 餓 不 死 的
 病 疾 餓 不 死 的 傷 寒 我 姐 姐 那 一
 年 得 傷 寒 病 一 連 八 天 一 顆 粒 米 也
 沒 下 去 到 底 還 沒 餓 死 呢 ○ 道 光
 十 五 年 正 月 二 十 六 日 下 了 一 場
 大 雪 有 五 尺 多 深 因 爲 那 一 天 是
 個 好 日 子 所 以 娶 親 的 有 許 多 凍
 死 的 也 有 娶 錯 了 的

24 In western countries the inns are mostly four or five stories high; each guest has a room which is furnished with towel, wash-basin, mirror and bedding, all complete, hence staying in an inn is the same as if at home.

25 There is no danger of eating too much in dysentery, nor too little in typhoid fever. The year my sister had the fever, she did not eat a grain of rice for eight days, and yet she did not starve.

26 In the fifteenth year of Tao Kwang, on the twenty-sixth of the first month, there was a great fall of snow of over five feet deep. Because that day happened to be a lucky day, many who were getting married were frozen to death, and some even brought home the wrong wife.

10 菸袋, not tobacco bag or pouch, as would seem most natural, but tobacco pipe. The 袋 refers to the bowl of the pipe.

11 In some places 穗 is used as the classifier of grapes.

12 景州 A city in Chili, about seven hundred li south of Peking. If 十三層的高塔 were transposed to 十三層高的塔, it would mean, a pagoda thirteen stories high.

13 The "gave promise" is not formally expressed, but is implied in the structure of the sentence.

16-19 17 Note here the peculiar force of 的, marking, as it does, the alternate succession of wind and rain. The phrase 那個聲兒 may be connected, either with the clause above or with the clause following, making a slight difference in meaning, which is difficult to present in an English translation.

19 散勇 Scattered soldiers. Soldiers are often discharged far from home, and with little or no money. They then become vagrants, ready for every species of crime.

20 二百銀子. The 兩 is left out for brevity—a common practice in colloquial.

22 高粱 is t'ung-hsing, but refers rather to the grain as growing or on the threshing floor. After it is garnered or ground into flour, it is, in most places, called 秫 or rather 秫秫. This distinction, though common, is not universal.

25 餓不死, etc., A dysentery cannot be stuffed to death nor a typhoid fever starved to death; that is, dysentery is a disease in which the patient need not fear eating too much, and fever is one in which he need not fear eating too little. The construction is peculiar and not easy for a beginner to analyse.

26 The fact that the day was a lucky one carries with it the necessary implication that there were many weddings on that day, which accounts for the seeming absurdity of saying that because it was a lucky day many who were getting married were frozen to death. In the excitement and dangers incident to rescuing various parties from the snow and resuscitating those who were half frozen, some of the brides were carried to the wrong place.

LESSON CI. wan

THE AUXILIARY VERBS 盡, 定, 完 AND 成. ch'eng

10 盡 To exhaust,—added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of exhaustion or completion.

11 定 To fix,—added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of certainty or stability.

12 完 To finish,—added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of finishing or completing.

13 成 To effect, to complete,—added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of completion or maturity.

第一百一課

LESSON CL.

這¹是會上議定的章程不能更改。○學臺到泰安現在
 考完了沒有。○凡事當留餘步說盡了却不可做盡了。
 ○已經講定了價不好再少給錢。○世間的大事必得
 趁着個好機會纔能辦成。○等他說完了你再說不要
 這樣插嘴。○隔人的話。○我纔從王天保那裏來他一定
 是不肯所以你想法子開消。○這麼一點事情三天
 還做不完真礙人。○怪不得我們老了你看這些
 後生幾年都長成大漢子了。○若沒有甚麼要緊的事
 情可以等他背完了書我再請他出來。○依我看你不
 表明更好一表明是假也弄成真了。○若叫甯老爺知

- 1 This is the settled policy of the society and cannot be changed.
- 2 Has the chancellor completed the examinations since his arrival at T'ai An?
- 3 Some allowance must be made in everything. One may speak radically, but must not act radically.
- 4 Having settled the price it will not do afterwards to pay less.
- 5 In matters of importance in this world, one must seize the favorable opportunity if he would succeed.
- 6 Wait till he has finished speaking before you begin. You must not interpose your talk and interrupt people in this way.
- 7 I have just come from Wang T'ien Pao's. He absolutely refuses, therefore you will have to find some method of liquidation.
- 8 Such a little matter as this not finished in three days! Really you are too provoking.
- 9 No wonder we are growing old. Look at these young folks how, in a few years, they have come to be full grown men.
- 10 If you have no important business, suppose you wait till he has finished hearing his recitations and I will then ask him to come out.
- 11 As I see it, it would be better for you not to examine into it. As soon as you make an ado about it, what

VOCABULARY.

泰安 T'ai an¹. A Fu city situated at the foot of the sacred mountain, 泰山.
 餘步 Yü pu⁴. Something held in reserve, an allowance, a loophole.
 插 Ch'a¹. To insert, to thrust into; to interfere or meddle; to interrupt.
 插嘴 Ch'a¹ tsui³. To interrupt in speaking.
 言定 Yen² ting⁴. Positively, unequivocally, absolutely.
 開消 K'ai¹ hsiao¹. To pay off, to settle up, to discharge, to liquidate.
 甯 Ning⁴. A surname.
 後生 Hou⁴ shêng¹. Children; young folks.
 往常 Wang⁸ Ch'ang². Hitherto; usual, ordinary.

詩經 Shi¹ ching¹. The book of poetry,—originally collated by Confucius.
 二五眼 Er⁴ wu² yen³. Mean, scrubby, shabby, beggarly.
 二五不當 Er⁴ wu² pu⁴ tang⁴. Same.
 兆 Chao⁴. An omen, a sign; a trillion.
 菓木 Kwoa³ mu⁴. Fruits which grow on trees.
 踴 Ts'êng⁴. To postpone, to pretend to do.
 踴工 Ts'êng⁴ kung¹. To kill time, to dawdle, to dilly-dally, to idle time.
 上緊 Shang⁴ chin³. Diligent, pushing.
 下緊 Hsia⁴ chin³. The same.
 決 Chüe². To decide, to settle; positively.

插

要²¹也誰摘。這得不離親再道
 戒¹²能保園活成肯事念他
 忌¹³完定裏的○說和他給詩們
 大¹⁴了自裏的○說和他給詩們
 烟¹⁵從來說客去主人安我
 必¹⁶得拿定了主意至死一口不喫但是姚謹德
 辦¹⁸事總得決斷不可猶豫不定○黃¹⁹泉路上無老少
 敢²⁰保自己必要活到明天呢○現在酒也喝完了飯
 這園裏的菓木趕明天怕摘不完你還直¹⁹工下上緊的
 得活○離¹⁶說人的良心已經喪盡却仍有發現的時候○不活
 不成○離¹⁶說人的良心已經喪盡却仍有發現的時候○不活
 離¹⁶說人的良心已經喪盡却仍有發現的時候○不活
 親事你給他辦成了沒有○王¹⁵兆舉那個病死也不活
 再念詩經如今也有先念詩經後念四書的○劉¹⁴玉子的
 道他們却不得了成○學¹³堂房往常的規矩都是念完了四書

is false will be regarded as true.
 12 If Ning Lao Yie finds it out, they will be in a strait.
 13 Hitherto the general custom in schools has been to finish committing the four books before taking up the odes; but there are some nowadays who first commit the odes and afterwards the four books.
 14 Did you get that marriage engagement of Liu Yü-tsi's settled? Aus. Humph! who would be willing to make a marriage alliance with such a scarecrow as he is?
 15 That disease of Wang Chao Chü's is such as to keep him lingering along more dead than alive.
 16 Although we may say a man has lost all conscience, yet the time will come when his conscience will revive.
 17 I fear you will not get the fruit in this orchard all gathered by to-morrow, and yet you are persistently idling away time and not pushing the work.
 18 In business you should decide promptly, and not hesitate in uncertainty.
 19 The grave makes no distinction of old or young. Who can guarantee that he himself will certainly live until to-morrow?
 20 We have now finished drinking the wine and eating the food. It is an old saying, "When the guests are gone the host is at rest." We would

決斷 *Chüe² twan⁴. To decide; positive, decided, determined, certain.*
 猶豫 *Yu² yü⁴. Undecided, wavering, hesitating, uncertain.*
 泉 *Ch'üan². A spring, a fountain.*
 黃泉路 *Hwang² ch'üan² lu⁴. The grave; Hades:—Note (19).*
 告辭 *Kao⁴ ts'ü². To take leave, to ask to be excused.*
 姚 *Yao². Handsome, a surname.*
 皮肉 *P'ü² jou⁴. The body, the physical man.*
 家財 *Chia¹ ts'ai¹. Property, patrimony.*
 順從 *Shun⁴ ts'ung². To obey, to follow the wishes of another, to gratify.*
 子孫 *Tsi³ sun¹. Descendants, posterity.*
 豪 *Hao². Eminent, superior; martial, brave; a leader, a champion.*

傑 *Chie². One eminent for virtue and prowess.*
 豪傑 *A hero, a knight, a champion.*
 機謀 *Chi¹ mou². Strategy; manoeuvre; trick, wile, device.*
 礮 *K'an³. A ledge, a dike, a sill.*
 象牙 *Hsiang⁴ ya². An elephant's tusk, ivory.*
 扇 *Shan⁴. A fan; leaf of a door, window, etc.*
 股 *Ku³. The thigh, the rump; a share in business; a chapter, a head; a strand, a rib, a proportion, a quota.*
 鑿 *Ch'a¹. To break off, to snap in two. Not aspirated in Shantung. Also ch'a².*
 齊各鑿 *Ch'ü² ko⁴ ch'a¹. Snapped off, square off, square in two.*
 腕 *Wan⁴. A flexible or universal joint.*
 脚腕 *Chiao³ wan⁴. The ankle-joint.*
 踉 *Wod¹. To double up; to wrench, to sprain.*

成兩截兒，把脚腕子踉得也腫了。
 絆了一跌，把我的象牙扇股子，齊各罐的跌
 不知一十的。○得了他，但我從家裏往外一走，叫門
 謀誰也制不的了。○他，但他養的兒孫，多有二五
 人，所以從古有許多英雄豪傑，用盡他的機
 分給子孫，十分精明使盡了，養的兒孫不如
 生氣呢。○俗語說，十分精明使九分，留着一
 在堂，叫父母喫點子，穿點子，順從他，不惹他
 了。○爲一個愛惜皮肉的人，所以我看定他，戒忌不

better tender our acknowledgments and take our departure.

- 21 In order to break off opium, one must resolve not to touch it if he dies [for want of it]. But Yao Chin Tê is a very self-indulgent man. I am confident he cannot break it off.
- 22 To spend all your patrimony on your father's and mother's funerals is by no means as good as to give them something to eat and something to wear while they are still alive, and to follow their wishes and not provoke them to anger.
- 23 The saying is, "Use only nine parts of your shrewdness, reserve one part for the benefit of your children." If you use your shrewdness to the utmost, your children will be inferior. Hence it is that from ancient times there have been many champions and heroes whom, if they put forth all their strategy, no one could match, who yet have brought up children most of whom did not know that twice five make ten.
- 24 As I was going out at the door I stumbled and fell over the door sill, breaking the ivory frame of my fan square in two, and wrenching my ankle so that it is quite swollen.

NOTES.

1 Note the difference between 議定 and 一定. The first means settled, decided upon, the second fixed, certain. They are only distinguished by a tone, and are easily confused in speaking.

3 留餘步. To make some abatement from the strict rule of equity or prerogative as a measure of conciliation or of precaution.

7 開消 is sometimes used of satisfying an obligation or demand other than monetary. The proper translation in this place depends on what it was that Wang T'ien Pao absolutely demurred to.

11 表明 to make manifest, here means to take up some charge or slander, deny it and demand investigation for the purpose of clearing oneself.

15 In its literal construction the Chinese says that the disease is "more dead than alive." The meaning, however, is that the person is in this condition on account of the disease. Such a grammatical incongruity is not appreciated by the average Chinese speaker or writer.

16 Or, there are still times when it revives.

18 猶豫不定 A state of uncertainty,—a book phrase, but in common use.

19 黃泉路 The yellow spring road, a practical description of the grave.

20 Social enjoyment has but little to do with a Chinese feast. It is simply a feast of eating and drinking. When this is over the sooner the guests go the better.

21 愛惜皮肉. To be tender of oneself, to be afraid of any hardship or physical pain, self-indulgent. 惜皮愛肉 is a rhetorical transposition of the same phrase.

22 那 is interrogative and contracted for 那裡. 在堂 in the hall, that is, alive.

23 精明 here means shrewdness, especially such as involves craft in overreaching others. It is often replaced in this connection by 精細. The proverb expresses a superstition that a man of great shrewdness, who uses his abilities to the utmost to overreach others, and to protect himself from suffering the least wrong, will have stupid children.

24 絆了一跌. In Peking 跌 is read tsai³ in this connection.

課 二 百 一 第

LESSON CII.

這一部書我從來沒看見。○若遇見人家說體己話，就該閃開。○王天雲的腿，給狗咬破了。○有兩布蓋着，大約不能濕透了。○我在天津的時候，瞧見李中堂，上道臺衙門去赴席。○這幾天實在冷，我們的水水，在家裏都凍破了。○從多日找他，也找不着，今天恰巧給我碰見了。○神作事，誰能參透了呢。○張大文的文章，原作就好，叫先生這一改，倒壞了。○我聞見這屋裏有點惡氣味，你們不聞見嗎。○先使兩家把話說透了，還有不能了的事嗎。○這不是爲打架鬥毆，你就是停幾天，也停不壞。○雨衣還沒有穿，及

- 1 I have never seen this book before.
- 2 If you happen upon persons speaking together privately, you should keep away from them.
- 3 Wang T'ien Yün's leg was torn by a dog.
- 4 Being covered with a waterproof cloth, it will not likely be wet through.
- 5 When I was in Tientsin, I got a sight of Li Chung T'ang as he was going to the Taotai's office to a feast.
- 6 It has been very cold these few days ; our water jar was burst even in the house.
- 7 After having searched for him for a long time without success, I luckily met him to-day.
- 8 Who can comprehend the ways of God?
- 9 Chang Ta Wên's essay was originally very good, but it has been ruined by the teacher's corrections.
- 10 I smell a little bad odor in this room ; do you not smell it ?
- 11 Let the two families first fully understand each other, and there is nothing that can not be settled.
- 12 This is not a case of assault and battery, there will be no harm done if you do wait a few days.
- 13 Before I could get on my rain coat I was wet through all over.

LESSON CII.

THE AUXILIARY VERBS 見, 透 AND 破.

見 To perceive,—added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of perception.

透 To pass through,—added as an auxiliary

to such words as will take the qualifying idea of penetrating.

破 To split, to detect,—added as an auxiliary to such words as will take the qualifying idea of splitting, or of detecting.

VOCABULARY.

- 貼己 *T'ie chi*³. Partial to self ; personal, private, intimate.
- 中堂 *Chung t'ang*³. A minister of state :— Note (5).
- 道臺 *Tao t'ai*². The intendent of circuit, commonly called taotai, an officer next in rank above a chifu, and having functions partly civil and partly military.

- 甕 *Weng*⁴. A water pot or amphora.
- 參 *Ts'an*¹. To examine, to compare ; to mix, to mingle ; to prepare ; to visit a superior ; to impeach. Also *ts'ên*¹ and *shên*¹.
- 原作 *Yuan tso*⁴. The original copy or model, the original.
- 邪味 *Hsie wei*⁴. A mouldy mephitic smell, a bad odor, a stench.

話²¹不說不知木不鑽不透把話說開了就和木頭鑽透
 經²¹狼狽了多年這邊我去看見又修的煥然一港新的
 兒這雙太瘦還沒等着穿破就先撐破了○那座廟已
 忘了男不和女鬥的話嗎○再給我做襪子要肥一點
 理的你是一個男子漢怎麼和人家的女人打罵呢你
 些字怎麼能講得透呢○從來沒遇見像你這樣不懂
 ○我¹⁷請他就是要我講醫書給我聽他若是識不透那
 金堂那個人成事不足敗事有餘好事他也能辦壞了
 破了○還有七八里路一上這個山嶺就望見喇○王¹⁶撕
 渾身都濕透了○我¹⁴沒防備叫他把我的衣裳

- 14 I was not on my guard when, with one clutch, he tore my clothes.
- 15 We have still seven or eight li; when we have ascended this hill, we can see it.
- 16 That man Wang Chin T'ang has more capacity for failing than he has for succeeding; he can make a mess of the most feasible business.
- 17 The very purpose for which I engaged him was to explain [certain] medical books to me. If he does not know all the characters, how can he explain the books?
- 18 I have never met such a senseless fellow as you. How is it that you, a man, fight and wrangle with another man's wife? Have you forgotten the saying, "A man must not fight with a woman?"
- 19 When you make me another pair of stockings, I want them a little wider; these are too tight; they burst before they were worn out.
- 20 That temple had been in ruins many years, but when I visited it this time, it was repaired and glittering in a brand new dress.
- 21 "Words unspoken remain unknown; wood not bored is still unpenetrated." Speaking things out plainly is like boring through the wood.
- 22 When one has seen through the ways

- 惡氣 *Oa⁴ ch⁴i⁴*. An offensive smell; a poisonous gas.
- 毆 *Ou¹*. To fisticuff, to maul; to wrangle.
- 鬥毆 *Tou⁴ ou¹*. To fight, to brawl; assault and battery.
- 嶺 *Ling⁸*. A ridge, a mountain range.
- 山嶺 *Shan¹ ling⁸*. A range of hills or mountains; the crest of a hill.
- 破爛 *P⁴ lan⁴*. Torn, tattered; dilapidated, in ruins.
- 狼 *Lang²*. A wolf; cruel, fierce.
- 狼狽 *Pei⁴*. An animal similar to a wolf, a jerboa.
- 狼狽. Destroyed, broken down, used up, in ruins:—Note (20).
- 煥 *Hwan⁴*. Brilliant, resplendent. (w.)
- 港 *Chan⁴*. Deep; to steep, to imbibe; very, exceeding:—Les. 142.

- 煥然港新 *Hwan⁴ jan² chan⁴ hsin¹*. Resplendently new, shining in a new dress:—Note (20).
- 煥然一新 *Hwan⁴ jan² i¹ hsin¹*. The same.
- 點火 *Tien⁸ hwo⁸*. To strike a match, to strike a fire with flint and steel.
- 皮箱 *P⁴i² hsiang¹*. A leather trunk, a valise.
- 斜 *Hsie², Hsia²*. Oblique, inclined, awry; diagonal; distorted.
- 夢見 *Meng⁴ chien⁴*. To see in a dream, to dream of.
- 失火 *Shi¹ hwo⁸*. To take fire, to have a conflagration:—Note (25).
- 謀合 *Mou² ho²*. To scheme, to plan, to plot together.
- 局 *Chü²*. Contracted, confined; an affair, an enterprise; a company, a club; a manufactory; a depôt; head-quarters.

出了一樣。○看破世事懶睜眼。○趕脚的去點火吃了。
 菸的工夫，牲口就在前頭驚了，馱子也翻了，把我
 的兩個皮箱都跌壞咯。○這孩子的眼，從小帶點
 斜，以後好了，今年上學念書的時候，叫先生一巴
 掌又打壞了。○我昨天黑夜，做了一個夢，夢見又
 失火，又吃包子，必主今天要生氣，說破大吉，說
 破了就好喇。○昨天大家商量的事情，已經有七
 八成，誰料想有個局外人，一句話弄壞了。○管倉
 的監督和看倉的差役，通通作弊，將倉裏的米，偷
 出了許多，現在叫大人查破了。

of the world, he is loath to open his eyes.
 23 While the muleteer went to light his pipe, the mule going on took fright, and, overturning his load, broke both of my leather trunks.
 24 From childhood this boy's eyes had a slight squint, but by and by they became right. While he was going to school this year, the teacher gave him a box on the ear which made them as bad as ever.
 25 I had a dream last night in which I dreamed that the house caught fire, and that I was eating dumplings, which certainly means that I will get in a passion to-day. Aus. "Whatever is solved becomes good fortune;" having solved it, it will be all right.
 26 The business we were all planning yesterday was in a fair way to succeed, when an outsider unexpectedly came along and by a single word spoiled it all.
 27 The overseer of the storehouses and the subordinates in charge all conspired together and stole a large quantity of the rice in the storehouse. The superior officer has just now found it out.

局外 Chū² wai⁴. An outsider, a looker-on.
 監 Chien⁴. To examine, to inspect; to revise. Also chien¹.
 監督 Chien⁴ tu¹. An overseer, a superintendent, an inspector; a bishop.
 花戶 Hwa¹ hu⁴. The people; tax-payers. Subor- dinate keepers of the imperial store-houses. (N.)

差役 Ch'ai¹ i⁴. Attendants, retainers, subor- dinates.
 通通 T'ung¹ t'ung². All, the whole:—same as 通通.
 弊 Pi⁴. Corrupt, vicious; deteriorated.
 作弊 Tsoā⁴ pi⁴. To cheat, to embezzle, to swindle, to steal public funds.
 查 Ch'a². To examine, to inquire into.

NOTES.

- 2 The reason why 見 is added to words meaning to meet, is that meeting brings the object to the perception of the senses.
- 3 咬破 is to bite so as to produce a bleeding wound.
- 4 The Chinese use oiled cotton cloth to protect them from the rain. 淋 limits the meaning to rain, while 漏 leaves it indefinite as to how the water comes, whether by raining, splashing or soaking. 淋, however, is not used in the South.
- 5 李中堂, usually called by his proper name, 李鴻章. The term 中堂 is an official title, corresponding approximately to minister or cabinet officer, usually translated Grand Secretary. There are four—two principal (正) and two vice (副), two being Chinese and two Manchus.
- 7 從多日, from many a day; i. e., for a long time.

- 8 A heathen reading this sentence would doubtless take 神 in the plural. As Chinese has no plural form, the distinction of singular and plural has to be gathered from the context, or from general usage. Ambiguities of this kind are frequent in Chinese.
- 16 成事不足敗事有餘, in capacity to accomplish he is deficient, of capacity to ruin he has an excess. 好事, a good thing; i. e., any business or affair, that is free from embarrassing circumstances.
- 20 In Peking 狼狽 is only applied to persons, but in general Mandarin it is also applied to houses, and generally to anything in a state of disorder or ruin. 煥然湛新 is somewhat bookish. 然 is used as a 虛字, or empty character, as characters used for the sake of euphony are called.

第一百三課

LESSON CIII.

他¹鋪²排³這⁴麼⁵些⁶活⁷，我⁸們⁹怎¹⁰麼¹¹個¹²做¹³法¹⁴呢¹⁵。
 ○各¹⁶人¹⁷有¹⁸各¹⁹人²⁰的²¹筆²²法²³。○現²⁴在²⁵天²⁶朝²⁷的²⁸海²⁹防³⁰，大³¹概³²都³³用³⁴德³⁵國³⁶兵³⁷法³⁸。○算³⁹法⁴⁰有⁴¹四⁴²個⁴³大⁴⁴法⁴⁵子⁴⁶為⁴⁷根⁴⁸本⁴⁹，就⁵⁰是⁵¹加⁵²法⁵³，減⁵⁴法⁵⁵，乘⁵⁶法⁵⁷，除⁵⁸法⁵⁹。○你⁶⁰又⁶¹受⁶²了⁶³他⁶⁴的⁶⁵糖⁶⁶拖⁶⁷，像⁶⁸你⁶⁹這⁷⁰樣⁷¹的⁷²要⁷³法⁷⁴，永⁷⁵遠⁷⁶也⁷⁷要⁷⁸不⁷⁹出⁸⁰錢⁸¹來⁸²。○玩⁸³耍⁸⁴變⁸⁵戲⁸⁶的⁸⁷法⁸⁸，都⁸⁹是⁹⁰用⁹¹的⁹²手⁹³法⁹⁴，不⁹⁵是⁹⁶用⁹⁷的⁹⁸什⁹⁹麼¹⁰⁰邪¹⁰¹法¹⁰²。○他¹⁰³講¹⁰⁴的¹⁰⁵一¹⁰⁶點¹⁰⁷次¹⁰⁸序¹⁰⁹也¹¹⁰沒¹¹¹有¹¹²叫¹¹³人¹¹⁴怎¹¹⁵麼¹¹⁶聽¹¹⁷法¹¹⁸，怎¹¹⁹麼¹²⁰個¹²¹記¹²²法¹²³呢¹²⁴。○先¹²⁵生¹²⁶打¹²⁷學¹²⁸生¹²⁹，雖¹³⁰說¹³¹應¹³²當¹³³，也¹³⁴但¹³⁵看¹³⁶是¹³⁷怎¹³⁸麼¹³⁹個¹⁴⁰打¹⁴¹法¹⁴²。○

- 1 How can we get through with so much work as all this which he has laid out for us?
- 2 Every man has his own handwriting.
- 3 At the present time the soldiers on the coast defence in the Celestial Empire, for the most part use the German drill.
- 4 Arithmetic has four chief rules which are fundamental, viz., addition, subtraction, multiplication and division.
- 5 You have been again imposed upon by him, have you? With this way of collecting, you will never get anything.
- 6 Jugglers always depend upon sleight of hand, not upon anything supernatural.
- 7 There is not the least order in his exposition, how can one either understand or remember it?
- 8 Although it is admitted that a teacher should whip his pupils, yet all depends on how he whips.

21 The idea of the sentence is that mutual misunderstandings disappear when the parties speak plainly face to face.
 22 A proverb, signifying that to know the world is to be disgusted with it.
 24 一巴掌, *One slap.* 打 is omitted in anticipation of its use just below.

25 失火, *to lose fire*, that is, to forget or neglect the fire, and so allow it to grow into a conflagration. 主 is used as a verb to express the idea of *meaning* or *signifying*. Its use corresponds to our phrase, "*which is a sign.*" The Chinese suppose that if a dream portending ill fortune is understood in advance of its accomplishment, it then becomes an omen of good fortune.

LESSON CIII.

THE MODAL AFFIX.

法 is much used as an affix to verbs, to denote the manner of the action. It is sometimes also joined to nouns, which it practically turns into verbs,—thus 兵法 means *drill*, but must be analysed, as *the method of drilling soldiers, or of soldiering*. In all cases 法 is without accent, and

in speaking tends to take an enclitic 子 or 兒. When it takes the accent it is not an affix. In all cases in which 法 makes any special modification of the meaning of the verb, a definition is given in the vocabulary. For list of words taking 法, see Supplement.

VOCABULARY.

- 做法 *Tsou⁴ fa³*. Method of doing or working, style.
 筆法 *Pi³ fa³*..... Style of writing, chirography.
 天朝 *T'ien¹ Ch'ao²*. The Celestial Empire, China:—Note (3).
 海防 *Hai³ fang²*..... Coast guard or defence.
 德國 *Te² Kwot²*..... The German Empire.
 兵法 *Ping¹ fa³*..... Method of drilling, drill.

- 算法 *Swan⁴ fa³*. Mathematics, *arithmetic*:—Note (4).
 加法 *Chia¹ fa³*. Method of adding, addition in mathematics.
 減 *Chien³*..... To diminish; *to subtract*.
 減法 *Chien³ fa³*..... Subtraction.
 乘 *Ch'eng²*. To ride, to mount; to take advantage of; *to multiply*. See *ch'eng⁴*.

○ 中國一個字，常見有五個念法，又有七八
 學法，所以古語說，師傅不明徒弟拙，真是
 都有骨力。○ 先生怎樣的教法，學生就怎
 的慣法嗎。○ 王顏歐柳的字，寫法雖不一
 打人罵人，你一點兒也不管，慣孩子還有這
 這樣礙口的話，叫我怎樣說法呢。○ 您的
 各人有各人的辦法，不能拘定一個死法子。
 有個篋子，叫我怎麼個拿法呢。○ 一
 不是個正經過法。○ 這麼一些零碎東西，又
 過日子要儉省是不錯的，但若是太儉省了，也

- 9 It is true that one should be economical in his way of living, but to be too saving is not a proper manner of living.
- 10 All these odds and ends of things and no basket! How am I to carry them?
- 11 Though the business be the same, each man has his own way of managing it. You cannot establish one invariable rule.
- 12 How can I use such unbecoming language as this?
- 13 Your children beat and insult others, and yet you pay no attention to them! What reason is there in indulging children to such an extent as this?
- 14 Although Wang, Yen, Ou and Liu's styles of writing are not the same, yet they are all vigorous.
- 15 As the master teaches so the pupil learns; hence the old saying, "An inferior master makes a stupid pupil," is quite correct.
- 16 In Chinese it constantly occurs that one character has five or six pronunciations and seven or eight meanings, so that the Chinese literary style is very difficult to learn.

乘法 *Ch'êng² fa³*..... Multiplication.
 除法 *Ch'u² fa³*..... Division.
 糖拖 *T'ang²*..... To extend; to ward off.
 拖 *T'oa¹*. To drag along; to hang down; to lead; to implicate; to protract.
 糖拖. To evade, to postpone, to impose upon by false promises.
 要法 *Yao⁴ fa³*. Manner of collecting money, manner of dunning.
 戲法 *Hsi⁴ fa³*..... Jugglery, legerdemain, trick.
 手法 *Shou³ fa³*..... Skill or sleight of hand.
 邪法 *Hsie² fa³*..... Sorcery, magic, witchcraft.
 儉省 *Chien³ shêng²*. To save, to be economical, to be frugal.
 過法 *Kwo² fa³*..... Style or mode of living.
 礙口 *Ai⁴ k'ou³*. Unbecoming (language), ashamed to say.
 歐柳 *Ou¹*..... A surname.
 柳 *Liu³*..... Willow; striped; arched; a surname.
 寫法 *Hsie³ fa³*. Style of writing, handwriting, penmanship.

骨力 *Ku⁸ li⁴*..... Strength, rigor, firmness.
 徒弟 *T'u² ti⁴*. A disciple, a pupil, an apprentice.
 念法 *Nien⁴ fa³*. Mode of reading, pronunciation.
 講法 *Chiang³ fa³*. Mode of explaining, or preaching; meaning, definition.
 文理 *Wên² li³*..... The literary or book style.
 家法 *Chia¹ fa³*. The rules of a family, family government.
 國法 *Kwo² fa³*. The laws of a country, statutes, government.
 民 *Min²*. The people—as distinguished from the officials.
 子民 *Tsi³ min²*. The people, the subjects of a government, citizens.
 徐 *Hsi²*..... Grave; slow; a surname.
 勒索 *Lé¹ so¹*. To constrain, to extort, to squeeze.
 尋常 *Hsin² ch'ang²*..... Ordinary, usual.
 委 *Wei²*. To sustain; to delegate, to deputize; a wrong, a grievance.

個講法，所以中國文理，是最難學的。○俗
 語說，家有家法，國有國法，又說，人隨王法
 草隨風，你既是大清國的子民，還能不守
 大清國的王法嗎。○徐安仁那個勒索法，
 真是非同尋常。○問官司，必得委曲婉轉
 的，問出底理原情來，方見官的斷才，若不
 論曲直，上堂就打，這樣的問法，誰還不會
 呢。○西²⁰國的樂法，是用兜類米乏⁸叟拉替
 七個音編成的，中國是用九工尺上一四
 合七個音編成的。

17 It is a common saying, "The family has its rules, and the country its laws"; also, "Men yield to the laws as the grass to the wind." Seeing you are a Chinese subject can you do otherwise than obey Chinese laws?
 18 Such extortion as that of Hsü An Jên's is certainly exceptional.
 19 In trying a case in court, if the officer would show his skill as a judge, he must ask questions in an indirect and specious way so as to bring out the bottom facts of the case. If, without regard to the merits of the case, he begins to beat as soon as the parties appear—who could not try a case in this way?
 20 The western system of musical notation involves the use of the seven syllables; do, re, mi, fa, sol, la, t'i. The Chinese system involves the use of the seven syllables, fan, kung, ch'i, shang, i, si, hoä.

- 委曲 Wei³ ch'ü¹. Wrong, a grievance; indirect, circuitous.
- 婉 Wan³. Yielding, obliging, winsome.
- 婉轉 Wan³ chwan³. Plausible, specious, round-about.
- 原情 Yüan² ch'ing². Original idea, original motive.
- 斷才 Twan⁴ ts'ai². Judicial faculty, capacity for judging and deciding.

- 問法 Wen⁴ fa³. Mode of asking; style of hearing a case at law.
- 樂法 Yue⁴ fa³. Musical notation, system of music.
- 兜 Tou¹. A bib, a pouch, a sling; to carry in a fold of the dress, or in an apron.
- 叟 Sou⁸. An old man, venerable sir. (w.)
- 編 Pien¹. To braid, to plait; to arrange; to compose (a book or tune).

NOTES.

1 The use of 個, as here, is a little peculiar. It gives an emphasis somewhat similar to the use of the word "sort" in English,—as if we should translate, *He has laid out all this work for us, in what sort of a way can we get it done?* It is so used several times in this lesson. When used in this way it is nearly always followed by 法, expressed or understood.
 3 天朝, Heavenly Dynasty. This is the high sounding title by which the Chinese delight to call their own country, and which has given rise to the term "Celestial Empire."
 4 算法 is often used vaguely for mathematics in general, but is here, as often, restricted to arithmetic. Strictly speaking, 乘 is to multiply by several digits, whilst 因 signifies to multiply by one digit. Also 除, properly means "long division," whilst 歸 signifies "short division." 乘 and 除 are constantly used, however, to signify the processes of multiplication and division at large.

5 Kiukiang rejects both 搪拖 and 拖 and says 搪抵.
 6 In 戲法 and 邪法, the 法 is emphasized, and does not properly fall within the lesson. 手法 illustrates the lesson.
 9 正經過法 regular or proper mode of living. When economy is pushed to such an extreme as to interfere with health and decency, it is not a 正經過法. The use of 也 implies a contrast with the opposite extreme of extravagance.
 11 死法, with the accent on 死, means manner of dying, or of suffering death, but with the accent on 法, it means, one invariable and unalterable rule.
 13 慣 means properly to acquire a habit, but here, to indulge in, or allow the acquisition of a bad habit.
 14 王顏歐柳, are the names of four renowned penmen, living in different ages. Fac-similes of their

課 四 百 一 第

LESSON CIV.

請¹他²明³天⁴務⁵必⁶早⁷來⁸。○這⁹件¹⁰事¹¹你¹²總¹³要¹⁴得¹⁵原¹⁶諒¹⁷我¹⁸。

○那¹把²芭³蕉⁴扇⁵子⁶，你⁷必⁸定⁹得¹⁰給¹¹我¹²找¹³出¹⁴來¹⁵。○說¹⁶話¹⁷。

○你¹總²得³把⁴錢⁵張⁶羅⁷下⁸。○學⁹生¹⁰必¹¹得¹²常¹³有¹⁴先¹⁵生¹⁶管¹⁷着¹⁸。○你¹⁹總²⁰得²¹把²²錢²³交²⁴友²⁵待²⁶客²⁷，總²⁸要²⁹恭³⁰敬³¹。○他³²待³³我³⁴這³⁵個³⁶，我³⁷必³⁸要³⁹報⁴⁰。○你⁴¹是⁴²我⁴³的⁴⁴學⁴⁵生⁴⁶，總⁴⁷要⁴⁸須⁴⁹得⁵⁰守⁵¹我⁵²的⁵³學⁵⁴規⁵⁵。○

○主¹意²，我³總⁴要⁵追⁶究⁷出⁸來⁹。○若¹⁰要¹¹拿¹²他¹³，須¹⁴要¹⁵看¹⁶看¹⁷。○動¹⁸靜¹⁹，若²⁰要²¹叫²²我²³消²⁴解²⁵恨²⁶，必²⁷得²⁸把²⁹他³⁰殺³¹了³²。○最³³好³⁴的³⁵法³⁶子³⁷，必³⁸須³⁹行⁴⁰得⁴¹實⁴²在⁴³方⁴⁴好⁴⁵。○瘟⁴⁶疹⁴⁷之⁴⁸後⁴⁹，必⁵⁰要⁵¹。

- 1 Ask him to be sure to come early tomorrow. [matter.]
- 2 You must certainly excuse me in this
- 3 You must not fail to find that palm-leaf fan for me.
- 4 You must talk reasonably.
- 5 It is necessary that scholars should constantly have a teacher to control them.
- 6 You must, by some means, collect the money. [your wives.]
- 7 You who are husbands should love
- 8 In intercourse with friends, and in receiving guests, one must not fail to be respectful.
- 9 I shall certainly repay this enmity with which he has treated me.
- 10 You are my pupils, and you must keep my rules.
- 11 In order to bring the affair to an end, you will have to go and see him yourself.
- 12 I am determined to find out who originated this idea.
- 13 If you want to arrest him, you must look well to the circumstances. [hatred.]
- 14 Nothing but his death will appease my
- 15 The best plan needs to be executed in earnest in order to make it a success.

penmanship are used in schools as copies. The Chinese lay great stress on good penmanship.

16 常見 might stand at the opening of the sentence, instead of in its present position. The statement is a little exaggerated. It applies to wén-li far more than to Mandarin.

17 法, in this sentence, means rule or law, and scarcely

comes under the lesson. 天清 is the dynastic title of the present Tartar dynasty.

18 非同尋常 not as usual; i. e., exceptional. A ready-made phrase in the literary style.

19 底理原情, primary reason and original motive.

LESSON CIV.

WORDS AND PHRASES DENOTING NECESSITY.

務必 } Should, must, certainly must, be sure
務要 } and, by all means. Often used to express a wish or a charge.

必得 } Must, positively must, without fail,
必要 } necessary. Southern Mandarin avoids 得 and prefers 要.

須 Ought, requisite, must. Rarely used alone in Mandarin, and then usually in proverbs, or in expressions taken from books.

必須 Must, have to, necessary.

須要 Should, ought, must. A bookish term.

總 In any case, no matter how,—a word of many uses. To denote necessity it is joined with 要, 得 and 須.

總要 } Must, must in any case, bound to.
總得 } Must, should, by all means, whether or not.

總須 Must, certainly must.

切 (with a negative) By no means, not for anything. ch'ieh' shi

萬 (with a negative) Must not, not for the world, be sure not.

千萬 Same as 萬, but stronger.

已有主意，不可光隨喜從人。○要²⁹爲人上人，須受苦中
 方去，務必上衙門請一張路票。○凡²⁸人作事，總要得自
 得哄^頌着他一點兒，不可常嚇唬他。○你²⁷要往那個地
 給我。○若²⁵要叫人尊重，總須得慢待人。○孩²⁶子們，必
 千萬不可以走。○東²⁴西你收了沒有，務必寫一回信
 塗。○雖²³然回家的心，都是急的，但你身上還沒復元
 要盡心竭力。○萬²²不可因爲自己聰明，笑話人家糊
 必^要得那結實了纔好駝。○孝²¹順父母的道理，人人須
 志^望兄長留心，切不可輕看仇敵。○這²⁰兩個箱子，立
 退脫皮。○所¹⁷有犯法的，總得究辦。○凡¹⁸讀書的，務要立

- 16 After epidemic scarlet fever, the patient's skin is sure to peel off.
- 17 It is important to bring all law-breakers to justice. [nation.]
- 18 Every student should fix his determination.
- 19 I trust you will be cautious; by no means allow yourself to despise your enemy.
- 20 These two boxes must be securely bound in order to satisfactory carriage.
- 21 In filial piety every one should exert himself to the utmost.
- 22 You must never, because you yourself are bright, ridicule others for being stupid.
- 23 Although the desire to return home is always strong, still you must not think of starting before you have regained your strength.
- 24 You must not fail to write and tell me whether you have received the things or not.
- 25 If you would gain the esteem of men, you must not treat them contemptuously.
- 26 It is necessary to coax children a little; you should not be always threatening them.
- 27 If you wish to go to that place, be sure you go to the yamên and procure a passport.

VOCABULARY.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <p>須 <i>Hsü</i>¹. Necessary, requisite; ought, should; partially, somewhat.</p> <p>原諒 <i>Yüan</i>² <i>liang</i>⁴. To excuse, to overlook, to make allowance for.</p> <p>芭 <i>Pa</i>¹. A fragrant plant.</p> <p>蕉 <i>Chiao</i>¹. The plantain or banana.</p> <p>芭蕉. The banana palm.</p> <p>張羅 <i>Chang</i>¹ <i>loi</i>². To publish, to noise abroad, to tell; to collect (money), to scrape together, "to raise the wind." To manage. (N.)</p> <p>疼愛 <i>T'êng</i>² <i>ai</i>⁴. To love ardently, a warm affection for.</p> <p>婦人 <i>Fu</i>⁴ <i>jên</i>². A wife, a woman.</p> <p>學規 <i>Hsüe</i>⁴ <i>kwêi</i>¹. The rules of a school, discipline; fees paid on taking the first degree.</p> <p>解恨 <i>Chie</i>³ <i>hên</i>⁴. To appease resentment or enmity; to be appeased.</p> | <p>消恨 <i>Hsiao</i>¹ <i>hên</i>⁴. The same.</p> <p>瘟 <i>Wên</i>¹. An epidemic, a pestilence.</p> <p>瘟疹 <i>Wên</i>¹ <i>chên</i>³. Epidemic scarlet fever or measles.</p> <p>究辦 <i>Chiu</i>¹ <i>pan</i>⁴. To prosecute, to bring to justice, to try and punish.</p> <p>兄長 <i>Hsiung</i>¹ <i>chang</i>³. Elder brother,—a polite term of address.</p> <p>綁 <i>Pang</i>³. To tie, to bind, to bandage.</p> <p>盡心 <i>Chin</i>⁴ <i>hsin</i>¹. Earnest, with the whole heart, to do one's best.</p> <p>竭 <i>Chie</i>². To exhaust, to exert to the utmost; used up, finished.</p> <p>竭力 <i>Chie</i>² <i>li</i>⁴. To exert the strength to the utmost, to do one's best.</p> <p>復元 <i>Fu</i>⁴ <i>yüan</i>². To return to the original state, to restore, to regain.</p> |
|--|---|

論是頭役是總頭役都不可靠萬別信他爲
 爲這都是騙人的法子你當牢記在心○無³⁵
 要去拾或見別人撿拾了也千萬不要眼熱因³⁵
 看見路上有小紙包彷彿銀子似的千萬不
 攢銀錢疼自己的老婆孩子不顧爹娘○若³⁴
 可去賭錢喫酒不可和人打架不可暗地積³⁴
 候憑你有天場的大事也不得回去○切不³³
 的道理呀○若人犯不齊十天半月必須伺³²
 樣兒的東西上必得愛惜儉省纔是過日子
 苦○喫了人的桑總得給人家做個繭○各³¹

28 In whatever he does, a man should make up his own mind and not always follow the lead of others.
 29 He who would rise superior to others must endure the severest toil.
 30 When you have eaten a man's mulberry leaves, you must not fail to make a cocoon for him.
 31 To be frugal and economical in all things—this is the secret of prosperity.
 32 If the accused are not all present, you will have to remain in waiting ten days or a fortnight. No matter how momentous your business you could not return.
 33 You must not gamble nor drink; you must not quarrel with people; you must not be too fond of your wife and children, laying by money for them to the neglect of your father and mother.
 34 If you see a small parcel on the road resembling a packet of silver, by no means pick it up; nor allow yourself to covet it if you see another person pick it up; for these are all tricks for cheating people. Be sure you bear this well in mind.

25 尊重 *Tsun¹ chung⁴*. To honor, to respect, to hold in esteem.
 慢待 *Man⁴ tai⁴*. To treat discourteously or with contempt, to dishonor.
 頌 *Sung⁴*. To praise, to eulogize, to extol.
 26 哄頌 *Hung³ sung⁴*. To coax, to divert, to conciliate. (L.)
 26 嚇唬 *Hè⁴ hu¹*. To threaten; to frighten:—Note (26).
 27 路票 *Lu⁴ p'iao⁴*. A pass, a passport.
 28 隨喜 *Sui² hsi³*. To follow, to assent to, to chime in with. (L.)

36 桑 *Sang¹*. . . . The mulberry tree, mulberry leaves.
 繭 *Chien⁸*. . . . The cocoon of the silkworm.
 37 人犯 *Jèn² fan⁴*. Accused persons, prisoners awaiting trial:—Note (32).
 37 場 *T'a¹*. . . . To give way and fall, to fall down.
 暗地 *An⁴ ti⁴*. . . . In secret, clandestine, covert.
 37 眼熱 *Yen⁸ jè⁴*. To covet, to desire, to crave, to lust after.
 35 頭役 *T'ou² i⁴*. The head men in each pan (班) of underlings.
 公門 *Kung¹ mèn²*. . . . A public office, a yamèn.
 37 駝 *T'iao⁸*. . . . A tall man, a giant, a giraffe.

NOTES.

9 交友待客 is a ready-made phrase. If it were made for the occasion its brevity would render it obscure.
 11 了 is not here a past particle, but is used in its proper sense as a principal verb.
 12 The natural order is inverted in order to emphasize the first member. Otherwise it would have been said 我總要追, etc.
 19 仇敵 is here not a private enemy, but an enemy in war.
 23 都 is here practically equal to always. It is really an indefinite pronoun standing for 回家的心.

28 The vicious practice of the Chinese of coaxing or quieting children by making false promises or threats, is plainly embodied in the word 哄. The term 哄頌 is local in Shantung. 嚇唬 is read both *hè⁴ hu¹* and *hsia⁴ hu¹*; with the former reading it means to threaten, with the latter, to startle, to frighten.
 27 The use of 請 implies that the passport is a favor granted in response to a polite request.
 29 Or, "There is no excellence without great labor",—a proverbial saying constructed, as are nearly all such sayings, on the *wén-li* model. A more colloquial form is 不受苦中苦難成人上人.

子、作、撇、人、這、喇、你、意、公、貼、
 叫、事、鬍、呢、劉、○、打、挖、幫、門、己、
 人、都、子、答、玉、常、門、助、中、的、
 挑、很、有、是、堂、聽、路、子、你、的、朋、友、
 出、光、四、是、堂、說、就、寫、人、能、替、
 不、棍、十、個、是、劉、離、呈、子、你、若、
 是、總、多、個、甚、劉、玉、喫、子、又、能、
 來、不、歲、高、麼、堂、的、不、能、拿、他、
 留、說、兒、樣、的、事、遠、給、主、爲、
 空、話、兩、的、事、遠、給、主、爲、

35 No matter whether it be a principal underling or the head of the underlings, none are trustworthy; be sure you do not trust them as confidential friends. If you think that because they are in the office they can advise you and help you to present your case, and can find a way to influence the officer in your favor, you are in a fair way to be fleeced.

36 I am continually hearing of Liu Yü T'ang's affairs; what kind of a man is this Liu Yü T'ang? Ans. He is a tall, slender man with a long mustache, and over forty years of age. He is very plausible in all that he says and does, giving no opportunity for any one to find any fault.

32 This language is addressed by an underling to one involved in a law suit, and who is compelled to wait in the yamén the officer's convenience. 人犯 is not applied to condemned criminals, who are called 犯人 or 囚犯. 天場的大事 an affair as important as the falling of the heavens,—a high sounding hyperbole.

33 Confucian ethics considers it a great fault to neglect parents in order to provide for wife and children. A man must love his parents more than he does his wife and children. The sentence is from the Sacred Edict.

34 A common trick of Chinese foot-pads is for one to go before the unwary traveller and drop a packet, which is always bogus money, while the other follows after and overtakes the traveller, and makes the picking up of the packet the occasion of getting into his confidence, or in some way robbing him.

35 挖門子. Either to take a bribe, promising to influence the officer on behalf of the party, or to act as go-between in negotiating a bribe with the magistrate or his advisers.

LESSON CV.

AGGREGATION BY THE USE OF 一.

— One,—is prefixed to a variety of words to express the general idea of aggregation, or of being together.

kung+ 一 共 One all,—all together, in all, the sum total, collectively.

kai+ 一 概 One summing up,—all, the whole, nothing but.

t'ung+ 一 同 One together,—with, together with, all together, in one lot or company.

kuai+ 一 塊 One piece,—together, together with, at one time, in one place. In speaking 一塊 nearly always takes 兒 after it.

tui+ 一 堆 One pile,—together, at the same time, at once. 一堆 is a widely used colloquial term, but not t'ung-hsing. Save when used in its primary sense it always takes after it an enditic 兒.

— 連 One connection,—together, including; in succession, continuously.

chi+ 一 齊 One even,—all, all together, all at once, en masse, in a body.

chi+ 一 處 One place,—together. A book term not often used in colloquial.

ping+ 一 併 One equality,—altogether, entirely, in toto, the whole lot.

sei+ 一 色 One color,—all, the whole. Used only in reference to colors.

kuai+ 一 乾 One heaven,—all, entirely, every one.(c.)

tsun+ 一 總 One sum,—all, in toto.

It should be noted that these various phrases nearly always come just before the principal verb.

LESSON CV.

第 一 了 我 請 我
 百 一 了 四 十 我 們 兩 個 是 一 堆 塊 兒 進 的 學 國 一 共 有 三 萬 萬 人 一 概 不
 切 的 話 旁 人 我 都 沒 告 訴 大 家 夥 兒 一 齊 動 手 不
 多 的 時 候 就 完 了 大 小 衙 門 官 刑 名 師 爺 的 一 概
 是 紹 興 人 他 是 一 塊 兒 來 的 你 怎 麼 把 他 挑 出 來
 呢 一 連 放 了 兩 個 火 砲 一 個 打 在 水 裏 一 個 直 打
 到 鴨 嘴 灘 大 老 爺 今 天 比 限 各 屬 的 鄉 鄉 地 保 約 方 一 齊 來
 了 我 看 見 跪 了 滿 滿 的 一 大 堂 世 上 一 切 所 有 的

- 1 How much do I owe you in all?
- 2 You must not believe anything that he said.
- 3 I invite you to stop with us.
- 4 China has in all three hundred millions of inhabitants.
- 5 We took our degree at the same time.
- 6 At the time of the flood it rained continuously for forty days.
- 7 If you make a simultaneous effort, you can raise it.
- 8 I have not reported any of this conversation to anyone else.
- 9 If we all together put our hands to the work, it will be finished very soon.
- 10 In both superior and inferior yaméns, the criminal lawyers are all natives of Shaohsing.
- 11 He came at the same time, how is it that you single him out?
- 12 They fired two shots in succession, one fell in the water and one sped on to Duckbill sandspit.
- 13 To-day his worship urges payment [of taxes], and the various collectors have all come. I saw a whole courtroom-full kneeling before him.
- 14 All the people in the world are the descendants of Adam and Eve.

VOCABULARY.

- 共 *Kung*¹. All, in all, altogether; to sum up; with, together; the same; to live with; to include.
- 併 *Ping*⁴. Even, equal; to equalize; together, unitedly. Not distinguished from 並.
- 憑 信 *P'ing*² *hsin*⁴. To believe implicitly, to confide in, to trust.
- 洪 *Hung*². An inundation, a flood; vast.
- 洪水 *Hung*² *shu*³. A deluge, the flood.
- 使 勁 *Shi*³ *chin*⁴. To exert strength, to try hard, to make vigorous effort.
- 用 勁 *Yung*⁴ *chin*⁴. The same.
- 掀 *Hsien*¹. To lift, to raise up, to set up.
- 旁 人 *P'ang*² *jèn*². Others, other people.
- 大 家 夥 *Ta*⁴ *chia*¹ *hwò*³. The whole company, the whole posse.
- 動手 *Tung*⁴ *shou*³. To take hold, to bear a hand; to begin.
- 刑 名 *Hsing*² *ming*². A legal adviser in the lower courts, a prosecuting attorney:—Note (10).
- 師 爺 *Shi*¹ *yii*². An officer's assistants, with whom he associates on terms of equality.
- 比 限 *Pi*³ *hsien*⁴. To urge payment of taxes:—Note (13).
- 紹 *Shao*⁴. To connect, to join. (w.)
- 紹 興 *Shao*⁴ *hsing*³. Shaohsing,—a Fu city in Chekiang.
- 灘 *T'an*¹. Rapids; a sandbank, the beach.
- 屬 *Shu*^{2,3}. Connected with, tributary to; pertaining to, depending on; kinship; sort, grade; actual, existing.

剩¹⁵了¹⁶一¹⁷個¹⁸半¹⁹死²⁰不²¹活²²的²³人²⁴。○這²⁵一²⁶切²⁷的²⁸事²⁹情³⁰都³¹是³²從³³他³⁴
 的³⁵一³⁶杠³⁷子³⁸砸³⁹倒⁴⁰了⁴¹，把⁴²他⁴³的⁴⁴衣⁴⁵裳⁴⁶鋪⁴⁷蓋⁴⁸一⁴⁹總⁵⁰扛⁵¹了⁵²去⁵³咯⁵⁴。
 一⁵⁵概⁵⁶都⁵⁷算⁵⁸在⁵⁹內⁶⁰，每⁶¹年⁶²總⁶³得⁶⁴二⁶⁵百⁶⁶吊⁶⁷錢⁶⁸。○王⁶⁹濟⁷⁰仁⁷¹叫⁷²
 天⁷³，從⁷⁴頭⁷⁵到⁷⁶脚⁷⁷，一⁷⁸色⁷⁹是⁸⁰紅⁸¹的⁸²。○若⁸³將⁸⁴吃⁸⁵飯⁸⁶穿⁸⁷衣⁸⁸人⁸⁹情⁹⁰零⁹¹用⁹²，
 我⁹³回⁹⁴來⁹⁵的⁹⁶時⁹⁷候⁹⁸，本⁹⁹利¹⁰⁰一¹⁰¹併¹⁰²奉¹⁰³還¹⁰⁴。○姑¹⁰⁵娘¹⁰⁶做¹⁰⁷新¹⁰⁸媳¹⁰⁹婦¹¹⁰，
 兒¹¹¹，我¹¹²一¹¹³切¹¹⁴所¹¹⁵有¹¹⁶的¹¹⁷，都¹¹⁸是¹¹⁹你¹²⁰的¹²¹。○請¹²²借¹²³兩¹²⁴個¹²⁵元¹²⁶寶¹²⁷給¹²⁸我¹²⁹，
 子¹³⁰，還¹³¹不¹³²知¹³³道¹³⁴他¹³⁵的¹³⁶脾¹³⁷氣¹³⁸嗎¹³⁹。○我¹⁴⁰的¹⁴¹兒¹⁴²，你¹⁴³常¹⁴⁴和¹⁴⁵我¹⁴⁶在¹⁴⁷一¹⁴⁸塊¹⁴⁹處¹⁵⁰，
 肚¹⁵¹中¹⁵²饑¹⁵³餓¹⁵⁴的¹⁵⁵了¹⁵⁶不¹⁵⁷得¹⁵⁸。○你¹⁵⁹和¹⁶⁰他¹⁶¹在¹⁶²一¹⁶³塊¹⁶⁴兒¹⁶⁵，住¹⁶⁶了¹⁶⁷許¹⁶⁸多¹⁶⁹日¹⁷⁰，
 我¹⁷¹，你¹⁷²只¹⁷³照¹⁷⁴應¹⁷⁵外¹⁷⁶邊¹⁷⁷就¹⁷⁸好¹⁷⁹得¹⁸⁰喇¹⁸¹。○他¹⁸²一¹⁸³連¹⁸⁴三¹⁸⁵天¹⁸⁶都¹⁸⁷沒¹⁸⁸有¹⁸⁹飯¹⁹⁰吃¹⁹¹，
 人¹⁹²，都¹⁹³是¹⁹⁴亞¹⁹⁵當¹⁹⁶夏¹⁹⁷娃¹⁹⁸的¹⁹⁹後²⁰⁰代²⁰¹。○家²⁰²裏²⁰³待²⁰⁴客²⁰⁵的²⁰⁶事²⁰⁷情²⁰⁸，一²⁰⁹概²¹⁰在²¹¹

- 15 In the house, the whole responsibility of attending to the guests rests with me. If you will simply look after the outside matters, it will be sufficient.
- 16 For three days together he had nothing whatever to eat, so that he felt excessively hungry.
- 17 You lived with him a long time, and don't you yet know his peculiarities?
- 18 My son, thou art always with me, and all that I have is thine.
- 19 Please lend me a hundred taels, and when I return, I will repay you in full both principal and interest.
- 20 On the day that a girl becomes a bride, she is dressed in red from head to foot.
- 21 If food and clothing, the claims of society and incidental expenses, are all included, it will require fully two hundred strings of cash a year.
- 22 A robber with one stroke of a club knocked Wang Chi Jên down, and carried off all his clothes and bedding, leaving him half dead.
- 23 This whole difficulty was stirred up by his wife.
- 24 After the resurrection the bodies and souls of the righteous together go to the enjoyment of eternal happiness.

- 13 鄉約 *Hsiang¹ yoa¹*. Police officer, justice of the peace; a tax collector, a publican:—Note (13).
- 13 地方 *Ti⁴ fang¹*..... The same.
- 13 鄉保 *Hsiang¹ pao³*..... The same.
- 14 後代 *Hou⁴ tai⁴*..... Posterity, descendants.
- 16 饑餓 *Chi¹ oa⁴*..... Hungry.
- 19 奉還 *Feng⁴ huan²*. To return with thanks, to repay, to pay in full.
- 20 新娘子 *Hsin¹ niang² tsi³*. A bride, a newly married woman. (s.)
- 22 路截 *Lu⁴ chie²*..... A highway robber.
- 22 斷道 *Twan⁴ tao⁴*..... To rob on the highway.
- 22 擋路 *Tang⁴ lu⁴*..... The same.
- 23 費 *Hsin⁴*. A flaw; an occasion of offence or quarrel; an omen.
- 24 魂 *Hun²*. The soul, the spiritual part, the manes; the mind, the wits.

- 靈魂 *Ling² hun²*. The soul, the spirit, the life:—Note (24).
- 抄家 *Ch'ao¹ chia¹*. To confiscate a man's property and estate.
- 滅門 *Mie⁴ men²*. To put a man together with all his family to death, to exterminate.
- 房產 *Fang² chan³*..... Property in houses.
- 入官 *Ju⁴ kwan¹*. To accrue to the government, to revert to the state.
- 販 *Fan⁴*..... To buy and sell, to deal in, to traffic.
- 斷宰 *Twan⁴ tsai³*. To forbid the slaughter of animals:—Note (26).
- 倒運 *Tao³ yun⁴*..... Unlucky, ill-starred.
- 水師 *Shui³ shi¹*. Marine, a title given to various officers connected with the navy or coast defence.

這幾天凡有投帖請見的，一概不許通報。
 考因爲考期臨近，要避徇情的嫌疑，所以傳出話來說，
 曬乾喇，你去把他收拾在一堆兒，預備往家裏扛。○主
 一齊起一齊落，彷彿一個人的腳聲兒。○場上的麥子
 一齊往前，說要退後，都一齊退後，就是他們的腳，也是
 邊一概是灰色小襖，看下邊一色是靴子，說要往前，都
 一齊販斷宰，真是倒運。○水師營的兵，實在整齊，看上
 地，一併入了官了。○姜太公販豬羊貴，販羊豬貴，豬羊
 永福。○王大老爺犯了抄家滅門的罪，所有的房產田
 女人起費。○復活以後，義人的身體和靈魂，一同去享

- 25 Wang Ta Lao Yie was guilty of crimes punishable by confiscation of his property and extermination of his family, hence all his houses and lands reverted in toto to the state.
- 26 When Chiang T'ai Kung dealt in hogs, sheep rose in price; when he dealt in sheep, hogs rose in price; when he bought both at once, butchering was forbidden. He was certainly unlucky.
- 27 The appearance of the soldiers in the marine encampment is exceedingly uniform. Above you see only their grey coats, and below, only their boots. At the order to advance they all move forward together, and at the order to retire, they all move backward together. Even their feet all rise together and all go down together as though it were the sound of but one man's foot.
- 28 The wheat on the threshing floor is quite dry. You go and gather it into a pile ready to be carried home.
- 29 Because the time for examinations is near at hand, the examiner, in order to avoid the suspicion of favoritism, has sent out word forbidding to report to him any who, during these few days, send in their cards or solicit an audience.

- 整齊 *Chéng³ ch'í²*. Regular, even, uniform; complete.
- 退後 *T'ui⁴ hou⁴*. To retire, to retreat, to fall back, to withdraw.
- 主考 *Chu³ k'ao³*. The literary examiner who confers the degree of *chü-jên*.
- 臨近 *Lin² chin⁴*. To draw near (in time), to approach.

- 徇情 *Hsün⁴*..... To follow, to comply with; quick.
- 徇情 *Hsün⁴ ch'ing²*. To comply with the wishes of another, to be partial to, to curry favor, to favor.
- 投帖 *T'ou² t'ie³*. To send up a card or scroll, to present compliments.
- 通報 *Tung¹ pao⁴*. To report, to announce; general information.

NOTES.

2 一概 here comes to mean "anything." If the order were changed to 他所說的不可一概憑信, it would mean, You must not believe all he said.

4 In mathematical language a 萬萬 is an 億, but in the language of common life 萬 is the highest numeral used, being duplicated one or more times to express higher denominations. 三萬萬, three times ten thousand times ten thousand; i. e., three hundred millions.

6 下了四十天雨, there came down a forty days' rain.

10 刑名 is an assistant whose business it is to examine all criminal prosecutions and prepare the 批 or official reply, also to prepare drafts of all dispatches and reports.

They are employed in all Hsien and Fu yaméns. In higher yaméns the office is called by a different name. It is a remarkable fact that the scholars of Shaoching have a monopoly of this office in the whole empire. The reply to the 呈子, or accusation, is, in civil suits, prepared by a different assistant, called 錢穀.

12 火炮, fire cannon. 炮 is more frequently used alone. The Chinese speak of firing so many cannon, we of firing so many shots.

13 比限, to compare the term or limit. Taxes in China are collected by constables or collectors called in different places 鄉約, 鄉保 and 地方. The collection covers

第一百六十六課

LESSON CVI.

種雀子兒我從來沒見過。○有¹¹一
 天⁹主⁸是¹⁰三位一體的神。○這¹⁰數¹⁰
 羊⁸盡⁸淨⁸是⁸山⁸羊⁸一⁸隻⁸綿⁸羊⁸也⁸沒⁸有⁸。
 現⁸在⁸都⁸結⁸成⁸一⁸黨⁸了⁸。○這⁷一⁷羣⁷
 那⁸裏⁸能⁸一⁸心⁸呢⁸。○我⁶知⁶道⁶你⁶們⁶
 一⁸流⁸的⁸人⁸。○家⁵裏⁵的⁵人⁵口⁵多⁵了⁵。
 太⁸的⁸歲⁸數⁸一⁸般⁸大⁸。○他⁴們⁴都⁴是⁴
 各⁸人⁸的⁸手⁸段⁸。○丁³先³生³和³丁³太³
 我¹和¹他¹是¹一¹輩¹。○一²樣²的²米²麩²。

- 1 I am of the same generation with him.
- 2 Though the rice and flour are alike, yet much depends on the skill [of the cook].
- 3 Mr. and Mrs. Ting are of the same age.
- 4 They all belong to the same set.
- 5 When there are many in the family, how can they all have one mind?
- 6 I know that you have now all formed yourselves into one clique.
- 7 This whole flock of sheep consists entirely of goats, there is not a single sheep in it.
- 8 Dates and walnuts must not be counted in the same way.
- 9 The Lord of heaven is three persons in one Godhead. [of bird.]
- 10 I have never before seen this species

three months in the spring and three in the fall. Payments are usually made by the collectors every ten days, at which time all are assembled and their accounts examined. Those who have made prompt payment are complimented and sometimes rewarded, while delinquents are berated and not unfrequently beaten.

16 都 here gives the force of *at all* in English.

18 一塊 is more colloquial and more expressive than 一處, and equally *t'ung hsing*.

21 衣裳 or 衣服, being made sufficiently definite by the preceding 穿. 人情 here means the presents which Chinese etiquette requires on occasion of weddings, births, funerals, feasts, etc.

22 There seems to be no *t'ung hsing* term for a highway robber. In Kiukiang all the terms in the text are rejected for 斷路.

24 The use of the term 靈魂 is largely Christian. The

Chinese (heathen) usually use 魂 alone, or occasionally 魂靈, especially when speaking of the soul as disembodied. There is practically no distinction of meaning between 靈魂 and 魂靈.

26 姜太公, otherwise called 姜子牙, a legendary character of the twelfth century B. C. He is the most important personage in Chinese mythology. He was appointed by 元始天尊, the most Ancient and Honorable One, to assign to the gods their several ranks and duties. He is regarded as a sort of provost-marshal over the gods. This story of his bad luck in business is told of him when at home before he entered official life. 斷宰 is an official proclamation forbidding all slaughter of animals for food for a certain time. It is usually done in time of drought in order to propitiate the gods.

27 說, as here used, constitutes a very common idiom for expressing the idea that the thing spoken of is carried into immediate execution.

LESSON CVI.

ONE, EXPRESSING SAMENESS.

— is joined with a variety of words for the purpose of classification or generalization, and is translated either *one*, or *the same*. The same forms are also used specifically, and when so used, — is rendered *the*, or *a*, or *whole*.

一輩 One generation,—the same generation.

一樣 One kind,—the same, alike.

一模 One pattern,—only used with 一樣.

一模 一樣 Precisely alike, just the same.

一般 One manner,—the same, like, equal.

一流 One current,—the same class or kind.

一心 One heart,—of the same mind, harmonious; the whole heart.

一意 One meaning,—of the same mind, harmonious, congenial.

一黨 One party,—the same party, the same clique or cabal.

一羣 One flock,—the same flock; the whole flock.

一例 One rule,—the same custom or way.

一體 One body,—the same body or substance; the whole body.

頭髮長的和囚犯一樣，快去薙薙罷。○若是買
 生各一路脾氣，沒有他如意的人。○你看你的
 城出一種肥桃，是山東最有名的。○李威文天
 一類的，誰告訴你們躲避將來的刑罰呢。○肥
 上有一等人，自己不能扛擔事，却好生事。○毒蛇
 一羣。○在這裏沒有你一家一黨的人嗎。○世
 多匹個。○無論驢馬牛羊，好些個在一塊兒，謂之
 叔叔。○牲口市上來了一羣驢子，大約有二百
 是一路的貨。○這一位是誰，這是我一家的
 夥學生，天天從我門前過去。○你不用揀，這都

- 11 A company of school boys goes by my door every day.
- 12 There is no need of selecting, these goods are all of one quality.
- 13 Who is this gentleman? Ans. This is a distant relative of my father's.
- 14 A drove of some two hundred or more mules has arrived at the horse market.
- 15 A number of either mules, horses, cows or sheep is called a herd.
- 16 Is there no one of your relatives or friends here?
- 17 There is a class of men in the world who, though unable to bear up under difficulties, are yet given to getting into difficulties.
- 18 Ye tribe of vipers, who hath told you to flee from the wrath to come.
- 19 Fei Ch'êng produces a kind of peach called the Fei peach, which is very widely known in Shantung.
- 20 Li Ch'êng Wên's natural disposition is *sui generis*, he is dissatisfied with everybody.
- 21 Look at your hair; it has grown as long as a prisoner's. Go and get it shaved at once.

一種 *chung*¹⁰⁸ One seed,—the same kind or stock or sort or variety. [set.]
 夥 *huo*⁵² One company,—the same company or
 路 *lu* One road,—the same kind or quality.
 家 *chia* One family,—the same family or clan; the whole family.
 等 *tung* One order,—the same class, first class.

宗 *tung*²¹³ One clan,—the same clan or tribe; a class, a kind; a lot, a deal.
 族 *tu* One tribe,—the same ancestry, kindred.
 起 *chi* One rise,—the same company or set.
 類 *lei*⁴⁷⁷ One species,—the same class or category or character.

VOCABULARY.

- ✓ 段 *Twan*⁴. To push with the hand, a fragment, a piece, a section.
 黨 *Tang*⁸. A gang, a band; a political party, a faction, a clique; a class, a sort.
 例 *Li*⁴. A rule, a bye-law; custom, usage.
 手段 *Shou*³ *twan*⁴. Skill, ability, might.
 6 人口 *Jên*² *k'ou*⁸. Persons in a family, household:—Note (5).
 7 山羊 *Shan*¹ *yang*². A goat.
 綿羊 *Mien*² *yang*². A sheep.
 8 核 *Hoa*², *Hu*². Kernel, seed; to scrutinize.
 核桃 *Hoa*² *t'ao*². The walnut.
 雀 *Ch'iao*⁸, *Ch'ioa*⁴. A bird, a small bird.
 5 謂 *Wei*⁴. To say, to speak of; to designate, to denominate, to call.
 各一路 *Koa*⁴ *i*¹ *lu*⁴. Different from others, peculiar, singular.
 如意 *Ju*² *i*⁴. Pleasing, agreeable, gratifying to one's taste; satisfied with.
 囚 *Ch'iu*². To imprison, to incarcerate.
 囚犯 *Ch'iu*² *fan*⁴. A prisoner, a convict.
 風匣 *Feng*¹ *hsia*². A bellows, a blower.

往他家裡去。我看見一夥子穿衣戴帽的人。事呢，問你怎麼看他有事呢，答是呢。○今天你三叔家有甚麼呢。○你們一夥的，你怎麼硬說不呢。○你們一夥的，你怎麼硬說不見。天來了一起逃荒的，明明眼見。或是百姓總是一樣看待。○前。一家萬民都是一體，或是旗下。彷彿報信的一般。○天下如同時候，以撒還沒到家，狗先跑來。

- 31 In the evening when Isaac returned home, before he had reached the house, the dog ran out to meet him as if to give the news.
- 32 The whole empire is like one family, and all the people belong to one body. Whether bannermen or common people, all are to be treated alike.
- 33 Day before yesterday a band of refugees came, and it is very evident that you belong to the same company. Why do you persist in saying that you do not?
- 34 What is going on at your third uncle's to-day? Ques. What makes you think there is anything going on? Ans. I saw a lot of people in full dress going into his house.

13 一家的叔叔, a family uncle. The term *uncle* is here used vaguely for any relative of the same generation, and of the same family name, with the father.

14 牲口市 is a market for the sale of beasts used in farming, including horses, mules, donkeys and cattle. No word in the English language will exactly translate 牲口.

19 肥城 is a Hsien city south-west of Chinanfu. The district produces a peach of great size and delicious flavor.

20 各一路, A way of his own, that is, a way that is different from others, and hence singular.

21 Prisoners in China are not allowed to shave their heads.

23 手 primarily refers to skill of hand, but is often applied to skill of any kind.

25 The use of 再 as in this sentence is anomalous. It means *positively, certainly, in any case*. This usage is *t'ung hsing*.

26 雙抱 is so written, but is universally spoken *shwang¹ pang⁴*.

30 法碼 are used in weighing with scales, (天平), and are here referred to as the standard used in gauging the steelyards. Weights and measures are very uncertain in China. It might almost be said that every man has his own. The variations are well nigh endless.

31 的 in the last clause is euphonic and redundant; with 的, the construction is, *like a news bringer*, without 的 it is, *as though bringing news*, but this difference of "construction" is something the average Chinese writer or speaker does not appreciate.

LESSON CVII.

EMPHATIC REDUPLICATION.

Compound adjectives and participial nouns are repeated for the purpose of strengthening the idea, the two words being repeated separately. This is the most common method of emphasizing.

Almost any compound adjective may be thus reduplicated. The more common ones are illustrated in the lesson.

For additional list see Supplement.

VOCABULARY.

- ✓ 安生 *An¹ shêng¹*.....Quiet, orderly. (s.)
- 睦 *Mu⁴*.....Harmony, concord.
- ✓ 和睦 *Hod³ mu⁴*. Peaceable, harmonious; to cultivate harmony.
- ✓ 順當 *Shun⁴ tang⁴*. Easy, smooth, facile, unembarrassed.
- ✓ 從容 *Ts'ung² yung²*. At ease, at leisure; in easy circumstances.
- ✓ 叨 *Tao¹*. To talk rapidly and incoherently, to gabble. Also *t'ao¹*.

- ✓ 降 *Lao²*!!.....To talk without meaning, to prate.
- ✓ 降叨!! To clamor, to talk incessantly and to no point; to murmur at.
- ✓ 絮叨 *Hsu⁴ tao¹*. To talk disconnectedly, to repeat again and again.
- ✓ 誠實 *Ch'êng² shi²*. Sincere, honest, upright, ingenuous, straightforward.
- ✓ 虛套 *Hsu¹ t'ao⁴*. Empty compliments, the language and forms of etiquette.
- ✓ 安穩 *An¹ wên³*. Quiet, peaceful, tranquil; steady, stable.

課七零百一第

LESSON CVII.

穩的睡罷。○王老爺已經看得的確的確的，你還強
 誠實實的，不必動虛套子。○別驚動他，叫他安安穩
 到了。○你這麼絮絮叨叨的，真耐人厭。○借們要誠
 了。○不用着急，從從容容的走罷，今天不論怎麼就
 乾淨淨的。○若事情順順當當的，不過十天就回來
 的，你還不明白嗎。○他的衣裳雖然不算好，却是乾
 的，白白期我吃二百錢的虧。○這書上講的詳細細
 明那等不樂。○水運歡歡喜喜走到自家屋裏去。○明
 那等在賬目上，總要清清楚楚的。○快安老實實的念書罷。○
 這是在實實在在的事情。○安老實實的念書罷。○

- 1 This is a positive fact.
- 2 Settle down quickly to your books.
- 3 In accounts clearness is all important.
- 4 When brothers are harmonious, everything runs smoothly.
- 5 Shui Yün went to her own room delighted.
- 6 It is as clear as noonday that I lose two hundred cash.
- 7 It is minutely explained in the book, and yet you do not understand it?
- 8 Although his clothing would not be considered good, still it is perfectly clean.
- 9 If my business goes off smoothly, I will be back within ten days.
- 10 There is no need of hurrying; go at an easy pace; we will get there to-day in any case.
- 11 This repetitious way you have of talking is most disagreeable.
- 12 Let us be straightforward and put aside empty compliments.
- 13 Do not disturb him, let him sleep quietly.
- 14 Wang Lao Yie already knows it perfectly well, what room is there for further disputing?

- 14 的 *Ti⁴*..... Real, certain; a target. See *ti¹*.
- 14 的確 *Ch'io⁴*..... Firm, stable; really, *certainly*.
- 14 的確 *Certain, true, unmistakeable; in fact.*
- 17 安頓 *An³ tun⁴*. Quiet, at rest; comfortable; *gentle, staid.*
- 15 鄙 *Pi³*..... Low, mean; rustic.
- 15 鄙俗 *Pi³ su²*. Common, mean, vulgar; shame-faced, *bashful.*
- 15 縮 *Soo³*..... To draw back; to *shrink*, to contract; to condense.
- 15 寒縮 *Han² soo⁴*..... Retiring, *bashful.*
- 15 官樣 *Kwan¹ yang⁴*. Genteel, *well-bred*, gentlemanly; *pompous.*
- 15 大方 *Ta⁴ fang¹*. Genteel, *well-bred*; liberal-minded, *generous.*
- 14 痊愈 *Ch'üan³*..... Recovered from sickness, *well.*
- 14 愈 *Yü²*..... Cured; to surpass, the more.

- 痊愈 *Recovered, cured, healed.*
- 盅 *Chung¹*..... A small cup for tea or wine.
- 看守 *K'an¹ shou³*. To watch over, to guard, *to keep safely.*
- 墓 *Mu⁴*..... A grave, a tomb, a sepulcher.
- 墳墓 *Fên² mu⁴*..... A grave, a sepulcher.
- 懼 *Chü⁴*..... To fear, to be apprehensive.
- 懼怕 *Chü⁴ p'a⁴*. To fear, to be *affrighted*, to dread, to stand in awe.
- 兢 *Ching¹*..... Fearful, *solicitous.*
- 戰兢 *Chan⁴ ching¹*. To be alarmed, to *tremble*, to quake.
- 舍 *Han²*. To hold in the mouth; to contain; to cherish; to *restrain.*
- 含糊 *Han² hu²*. Indistinct, *vague*; uncertain; indefinite; *reserved.*
- 庸 *lung¹ 86 (prompt)*

可歪歪扭扭的，一點兒不穩重。
 齷齪的。○人坐着應當端正的，不要誠實，不要說心要正直，不要彎曲的。
 心經都是說心要正直，不要彎曲的。
 都還完完全全的，實在感恩不盡。○這個
 外頭十二年的工夫，現在回家，看見老少
 一個吉日，吹吹打打送到水家來。○我在
 公子齊齊整整的備了千金聘禮，又擇了
 平的，騎着驢後面跟隨一個驢駒子。○過
 咐他纔行。○你的王到你那裏去，和平

- 27 Thy King cometh unto thee peacefully, riding upon an ass with its foal following.
- 28 Kwoǎ Kung-tsi prepared a full set of very costly betrothal presents, and, selecting a lucky day, sent them accompanied by a band of music to the Shui family.
- 29 I have been absent twelve years, and I cannot be sufficiently thankful that now on my return home, I find the family circle still unbroken.
- 30 This *Classic of the Heart* everywhere requires that the heart be upright and not tortuous, truthful and not deceitful, cheerful and not fretful.
- 31 When one is sitting, he should sit upright and not lounge in an undignified manner.

NOTES.

- 10 After 怎麼 either 着 or 的 or 樣 is understood.
- 13 The last clause might also with equal propriety be rendered, *Let him go quietly to sleep.*
- 17 家 is added to 女兒 to generalize it.
- 19 As the sentence stands in the New Testament, 經 is omitted. Its use adds both to the euphony and perspicuity of the sentence. In Mandarin the 經 is rarely omitted, save in certain fixed expressions. It is never omitted when followed by a double word as here.

- 23 In Pekingese 老 as here used denotes time. It is not so used in Central or Southern Mandarin: Les. 127. Sub.
- 28 吉日 is somewhat bookish. In common conversation 好日子 is nearly always used. For colloquial the 備 of the previous clause should also be expanded to 豫備.
- 30 心經 is the title of a book exhorting men to the cultivation of propriety and virtue.

LESSON CVIII.

REPEATED ACTION.

- 屢次 Frequently, constantly, continually, repeatedly. Often reduplicated for emphasis.
- 時刻 Every moment, constantly, incessantly. Often reduplicated for emphasis.
- 時時 Every time, always, constantly.
- 時常 Constantly, always, habitually.
- 常常 Continually, constantly, habitually.
- 往往 Frequently, every little while.
- 不閒着 or 不閒之 Without ceasing, continuously, incessantly, always.
- 不歇氣 The same. (s.)
- 不住的 Incessantly, continuously, all the time. A limiting word generally follows 住 (6) (10).
- 不斷 Continuously, without interruption.

- 動不動 Again and again, frequently, on every occasion, all the time.
- 值不值 The same. Widely used but not *t'ung hsing*.
- 得不得 Again and again, all the time, always, time after time. (N.)
- 常不常 The same. (s.)
- 好不好 Over and over, again and again, frequently. (c. & s.)
- 弄不弄 Time after time, time and again, all the time. Used in Shantung and read *no pu no*.
- 成天家 } Constantly, always, all the time,
 整天的 } perpetually:—Les. 72. Note (1).
- 數次 A number of times, several times.

課八 百 一 第

LESSON CVIII.

好鬧熱。熱鬧。就是得很。常弄值時不不不常弄值時刻。喝醉了酒。光愛罵人。○怎麼小小的年紀。動

喇。○我雖然多年沒見。却不斷的有信。○這裏緊靠大街。

叫喚。你常得值不不不常得值。的張着個火瓢。早晚把我哭死就好。

訴他數次。他總不理會。○孫師傅心口疼。在家裏不住聲的

往外流膿。○你這樣的說。了半天話。○我脊背上那個癩子。時刻

○他們不住口的說。了三天。還看不得。○我整天的就是好替古人擔憂。

只看見他們不開。吃着烟。○我整天的就是好替古人擔憂。

着死嚇人。○五個人做了三天。還看不得。○我整天的就是好替古人擔憂。

你要時刻留神。○我們兩個是常常的見面。○他好動不好動。拿

- 1 You should give unremitting attention. [other.]
- 2 We two are constantly meeting each other.
- 3 In order to frighten people, she frequently threatens to kill herself.
- 4 These five men have been working three days, but it does not appear what they have done. It seems as if they were all the time smoking.
- 5 I am much given to sympathizing with the ancients. [a day.]
- 6 They talked without ceasing for half a day.
- 7 That boil on my back is constantly discharging pus.
- 8 Are you not afraid you will injure yourself by working so constantly?
- 9 I have told him a number of times, but he pays no attention.
- 10 Mr. Sun is at home crying out incessantly with a pain in his stomach.
- 11 You are always bawling with your mouth open as big as a dipper (fire-pan); sooner or later your crying will be the death of me, and then you'll be satisfied, will you?
- 12 Although we have not seen each other for many years, yet we have corresponded without interruption.
- 13 This place adjoins the great street and is very much crowded; there is always something on hand—never a moment's quiet.
- 14 Wang Ch'êng Shan is a good enough man, the trouble is that he frequently gets drunk, and then he is given to abusing people.

VOCABULARY.

屢 Lü³. Often, frequent; successively; constantly, repeatedly.

留神 Liu² shên². To give attention, to be on the alert, to be watchful.

生活 Shêng¹ hwa². Work, employment, business. (c. & s.)

住口 Chu⁴ k'ou³. To stop speaking.

脊 Chi³. The spine, the backbone; the ridge or comb of a roof.

梁 Liang². A bridge; ridge-pole; a beam, a sleeper; a seam.

脊梁. The back, the spinal column.

膿 Nung², Nêng². Pus, purulent matter.

歇氣 Hsie¹ ch'í⁴. To stop, to rest. (s.)

理會 Li³ hui⁴. To regard, to pay attention to, to notice.

叫喚 Chiao⁴ huan⁴. To cry out, to yell; to cry or call as animals:—Note (10).

瓢 P'iao². A calabash, a gourd; a gourd dipper, a wooden dipper.

哭死 K'u¹ si³. To cry oneself or another to death:—Les. 183.

安靜 An¹ Ching⁴. Quiet, calm, peaceful.

說家賊難防，他這樣摸摸，
 你動不動想着打他，那²⁶一²⁷打²⁸出來，你就後悔不及喇。
 不可弄得不得惹他生氣。
 天家不住嘴的喫。○無論他們怎樣不好，那總是你的公公婆婆，
 晚不住手的做活。○香齡子好大飯量，若是由着他的性兒，能成
 沒有，答我已經去過數次。○我們大嫂子，真是個殷勤人，從早到
 念。○他²⁰屢屢次次的欺負我，實在叫我過不去。○先生到過南京
 瘋病，¹⁷人家¹⁸闖門子，都有時有刻，你是時時刻刻的闖串。○他¹⁹抽羊角
 不動就腰疼腿疼呢。○他¹⁶一秋不斷的吃藥，也沒見出怎麼樣來。

- 15 How is it that one so young is every little while having pains in his back and legs?
- 16 He has been taking medicine all the autumn without any apparent effect.
- 17 Other people have certain times for visiting, but you are continually at it.
- 18 He is afflicted with epilepsy, and frequently falls into the fire, and frequently into the water.
- 19 Ever since we parted I have been constantly thinking of you.
- 20 He is constantly insulting me. I really cannot put up with it.
- 21 Have you ever been at Nanking, sir? Ans. I have been there several times.
- 22 Our oldest brother's wife is a very industrious body, she works incessantly from morning till night.
- 23 Hsiang Ling-tsi has an enormous appetite, if you should let him have his will, his mouth would never be empty.
- 24 No matter how bad they are, still they are your father and mother-in-law. You ought not to be all the time vexing them.
- 25 In making experiments in natural science, it frequently happens that instruments are broken.
- 26 You are all the time full of the idea of fighting. One of these times you'll get yourself into trouble, and then it will be too late to repent.
- 27 It has always been said that thieves in the household are hard to guard against. Who can be always on his guard against such a light-fingered fellow as this?

串 Ch'wan⁴. To string on a string; to go or pass through; to connect; a string of anything.—Les. 125.
 串門子 Ch'wan⁴ mên² tsi³. To call, to visit, to gad about.
 闖門子 Ch'wang³ mên² tsi³. Same.
 癲 Tien¹. Crazy, insane; convulsions, fits.
 癲病 Hsien². Convulsions, epileptic fits.
 癲病 Epileptic fits; convulsions.
 羊角瘋 Yang² chiao³ fêng¹. Epileptic fits.
 離別 Li² pie². To part, to take leave.
 想念 Hsiang³ nien⁴. To think about, to keep in mind, to long for.

南京 Nan² ching¹. Nanking, the name was given in the Ming dynasty when the capital was moved to Peking.
 住嘴 Chu⁴ tsui³. To stop eating.
 公公 Kung¹ kung¹. A woman's father-in-law.
 婆婆 P'oa² p'oa². A woman's mother-in-law.
 驗 Yen⁴. To examine officially, to inspect, to verify; to hold an inquest.
 試驗 Shi⁴ yen⁴. To try, to test, to experiment.
 家賊 Chia¹ tsei². A thief in one's own family.
 撿 Sod⁴. To feel after; to select, to take.
 緝 Chi¹. To pursue; to search for. (w.)

第一零九課

LESSON CIX.

304 1920

這¹⁵個¹⁶題¹⁷目¹⁸講¹⁹了²⁰半²¹天²²到²³底²⁴沒²⁵說²⁶清²⁷楚²⁸。○²⁹于³⁰先³¹生³²講³³也³⁴。這³⁵話³⁶說³⁷了³⁸半³⁹天⁴⁰到⁴¹底⁴²沒⁴³說⁴⁴清⁴⁵楚⁴⁶。○⁴⁷于⁴⁸先⁴⁹生⁵⁰講⁵¹也⁵²。點⁵³也⁵⁴看⁵⁵不⁵⁶親⁵⁷真⁵⁸確⁵⁹切⁶⁰。○⁶¹李⁶²姑⁶³娘⁶⁴過⁶⁵於⁶⁶惱⁶⁷悞⁶⁸。一⁶⁹句⁷⁰碰⁷¹釘⁷²子⁷³。○⁷⁴我⁷⁵若⁷⁶是⁷⁷不⁷⁸帶⁷⁹眼⁸⁰鏡⁸¹。這⁸²樣⁸³的⁸⁴字⁸⁵。一⁸⁶罷⁸⁷。○⁸⁸我⁸⁹當⁹⁰是⁹¹你⁹²和⁹³他⁹⁴說⁹⁵妥⁹⁶當⁹⁷了⁹⁸。再⁹⁹去¹⁰⁰聽¹⁰¹戲¹⁰²。楚¹⁰³了¹⁰⁴呢¹⁰⁵。○¹⁰⁶先¹⁰⁷把¹⁰⁸事¹⁰⁹情¹¹⁰辦¹¹¹停¹¹²當¹¹³了¹¹⁴。再¹¹⁵去¹¹⁶聽¹¹⁷戲¹¹⁸。楚¹¹⁹。○¹²⁰你¹²¹看¹²²你¹²³寫¹²⁴的¹²⁵黑¹²⁶墨¹²⁷糊¹²⁸烏¹²⁹眼¹³⁰嘴¹³¹的¹³²。誰¹³³能¹³⁴看¹³⁵清¹³⁶。這¹³⁷是¹³⁸一¹³⁹點¹⁴⁰不¹⁴¹含¹⁴²糊¹⁴³的¹⁴⁴事¹⁴⁵情¹⁴⁶。我¹⁴⁷記¹⁴⁸得¹⁴⁹十¹⁵⁰分¹⁵¹清¹⁵²。○¹⁵³這¹⁵⁴塊¹⁵⁵手¹⁵⁶巾¹⁵⁷。不¹⁵⁸論¹⁵⁹怎¹⁶⁰麼¹⁶¹洗¹⁶²也¹⁶³洗¹⁶⁴不¹⁶⁵乾¹⁶⁶淨¹⁶⁷。○¹⁶⁸若¹⁶⁹要¹⁷⁰叫¹⁷¹人¹⁷²看¹⁷³明¹⁷⁴白¹⁷⁵。必¹⁷⁶得¹⁷⁷加¹⁷⁸上¹⁷⁹一¹⁸⁰個¹⁸¹小¹⁸²註¹⁸³兒¹⁸⁴。

- 1 If you want people to understand it, it will be necessary to add an explanatory note.
- 2 No matter how you wash this handkerchief you cannot make it clean.
- 3 There is not the least doubt about it. I remember it with perfect distinctness.
- 4 Just look at your writing how it is blurred and blotted; who will be able to make anything out of it?
- 5 First dispose of your business properly, then go to the theatre.
- 6 I thought you had arranged it with him satisfactorily. You put me in a very embarrassing position.
- 7 Unless I wear spectacles, I cannot see this kind of print with the least distinctness.
- 8 Miss Li is entirely too diffident. She has been trying for half a day to get out one sentence, and after all did not speak it clearly.
- 9 Mr. Yü has been discoursing on this text for ever so long, and after all has not made it clear.

14 喝醉酒 to drink drunk with wine. 酒 is added for emphasis. 光 gives the idea of given to, but is rejected by the Peking teacher.

19 The style is that of a letter.

24 那 here fills the place of a personal pronoun and is so translated.

26 打出禍來 may mean, to inflict a serious wound and so become liable to prosecution, or the payment of damages; or it may mean, as we say, "to hit the wrong man."

Note that 那一遭 does not here mean that time, but whichever time, or one of these times.

27 摸摸搽搽的, laying hands on whatever is within reach, pilfering, light-fingered. Only used in this sense when reduplicated. In the South 摸摸緝緝的 is used in the same way.

31 不成脾氣 not constituting a disposition; i. e., wanting in the essentials of a right disposition. There are other phrases on the same model, thus we have 不成材料, unsuitable for the purpose, worthless, 不成敬意 not sufficient to express respect. 摔 here means to set or throw down with a bang, and hence, to smash.

33 Snakes that leave the water and come on land during a flood, are regarded as sacred and divine, being possessed by the god who controls the flood. They are often fed up and worshipped with expensive ceremonies by both officers and people. 黃水 is a contracted term for the flood water from the Yellow River. 大王 is a term found in novels and applied to noted robbers and freebooters. It was first conferred as a title on supposed supernatural snakes by Kaughi, the second Emperor of the present dynasty.

LESSON CIX.

DOUBLE AUXILIARIES. wan chüan

In addition to the several single auxiliaries already illustrated, there are a number of double words added to verbs to qualify their meaning. Those most frequently used are the following:—

明白 Clear,—added to verbs to express the clearness of the action, or its satisfactory completion.

清楚 Well defined,—added to verbs to express the perfect clearness and distinctness of the action.

完全 Finished,—added to verbs to express the entire completion of the action.

妥當 Satisfactory,—adds its force to the verb it follows. 妥 is also used alone.

停當 is the same as 妥當, but a little more colloquial.

乾淨 Clean,—adds its force to the verb it follows.

他賴了去了。○學問一道，是大海無邊，怎能
 我和他立下合同，上面寫的清清楚楚，不然又叫
 和寶興的賬，上月就算清楚喇。○多虧當時
 行李預備妥當，轎子一來，我們就起身。○我
 到那些細微處，誰也記不完全。○先把被套
 無論學綱鑑，學史記，不過記得大關節目，說
 有個參差不齊，那能樣樣都辦得妥當呢。○必
 着是個滋味。○就是常辦公事的人，也必
 白。○你看他走將起來，搖搖擺擺的，自己覺
 不知是我沒說明白，可也不知是他沒聽明

- 10 I do not know whether it was that I did not say it plainly, or that he did not hear it correctly.
- 11 See the air with which he struts along. He imagines that he is perfectly stunning.
- 12 Even one who is constantly transacting business will sometimes fall short. How is it possible to always give entire satisfaction?
- 13 In learning either annals or history one can remember only the general outline; as to the particulars, no one can remember them all.
- 14 Get the bedding and luggage ready beforehand, and as soon as the litter comes we will start.
- 15 My account with Pao Hsing was settled in full last month.
- 16 It is very fortunate that at the time I had an agreement drawn up with him in which everything was distinctly written out; otherwise he would have imposed on me again.
- 17 Learning is a great and shoreless sea.

真切 *ch'uei ch'ie⁴* Vivid,—adds its force to the verb it follows. *ch'ueh⁴ 2-16*
 親確 *ch'ien⁴ ch'ueh⁴* Distinct,—adds its force to the verb it follows.
 透澈 *t'ou⁴ ch'ie⁴* Perspicuous,—adds its force to the verb it follows.
 齊全 Complete,—adds its force to the verb it follows.

將起來 An auxiliary form found in Chinese novels. It is used with verbs of motion and expresses an inceptive, or a progressive idea. With this lesson we take leave of the subject of verbal auxiliaries, not that there are not more, both single and double, but because in most cases they are each limited to one or two special applications, each of which is best learned as an independent phrase.

VOCABULARY.

- 註 *Chu⁴*. To define, to explain; a note, an explanation, an emendation.
- 小註 *Hsiao³ chu⁴*. A note, an explanation, a comment:—Note (1).
- 黑墨糊眼 *Hei¹ mei⁴ hu² yen³*. Blotted, blurred, red, defaced.
- 黑墨烏嘴 *Hei¹ mei⁴ wu¹ tsui³*... The same.
- 停當 *T'ing² tang¹*. In proper order, satisfactory, all right:—see Sub.
- 親確 *Ch'in¹ ch'ioa⁴*. Clear, distinct, well defined, sharp:—see Sub.
- 慚 *Mien³*... To reflect; modest, ashamed.
- 慚 *T'ien³*... Ashamed, bashful; to blush.
- 慚 *Modest, bashful, shamefaced.*
- 于 *Yu²*. To proceed; a surname: also used as synonymous with 於.
- 徹 *Ch'eh⁴*... To penetrate; clear, perspicuous.
- 透徹 *T'ou⁴ ch'eh⁴*. To comprehend; clear, perspicuous; thorough:—see Sub.
- 參 *Ts'en¹*. Uneven, not uniform. See *ts'an¹*, 12 also *shên¹*.
- 差 *Ts'i¹*. Having uneven points, rugged. See 12 *ch'a¹* and *ch'ai¹*.
- 參差不齊 *Ts'en¹ ts'i¹ pu⁴ ch'i²*. Uneven, irregular.
- 綱 *Kang¹*... A bond of union, a principle, a rule.
- 鑑 *Chien⁴*. A mirror; an example; a precedent; a precept.
- 景 *ching³*... curiously

仍舊沒講明白。○他²³追²⁴賊²⁵追²⁶出一大²⁷半²⁸子²⁹。這就
明遺留後患。○分家總要分得清楚。免得分家不
拾妥當。○分家總要分得清楚。免得分家不
間房子還沒收拾嗎。○收拾了一氣還沒收
去上工罷。我和掌尺櫃的已經說明白了。○那²¹
得站起來。活動活動。○你²⁰明天可以跟着
機盤腿坐着。光壓麻了脚。所以坐一會子必
位大老爺能給他們斷清楚了不能。○我¹⁹這
因為這條河壩又打起官司來喇。也不知道這
把所有的書籍都學完了呢。○現在兩鄉社

- How can one ever learn all the books there are ?
- 18 At present the two townships have gone to law again about this river embankment. It remains to be seen whether this magistrate will be able to settle the matter satisfactorily.
 - 19 This sitting cross-legged always makes my feet numb, so that after sitting awhile I have to get up and move around a little.
 - 20 You may go to work to-morrow with the others. I have arranged it with the manager (foreman).
 - 21 Have you not yet put that room in order? Ans. I worked at it a little while but it is not yet finished.
 - 22 In dividing the family inheritance, it is important to secure a clear understanding so as to avoid subsequent difficulties growing out of an unfair division.
 - 23 His exposition simply runs in the old rut, after all he has not made it clear.
 - 24 If one recovers the greater part of any stolen property, that is con-

- 13 綱鑑 Historical annals, an outline history.
- 13 史 Shi³..... A historian; a history, records.
- 13 史記 Shi³ chi⁴. A history, a chronological record.
- 13 節目 Chie² mu⁴. Divisions, heads, classification, outline.
- 13 大關節目 Ta⁴ kwan¹ chie² mu⁴. The general outline, the principal heads or divisions.
- 13 微 Wei¹. Minute, insignificant; subtle, hidden; slightly; rather:—Les. 177.
- 13 細微 Hsi⁴ wei¹..... Minute, fine, very small.
- 14 被套 Pei¹ t'ao⁴. A large bag or wallet for holding bedding and clothing.
- 14 行李 Hsing² li³..... Luggage, baggage.
- 14 籍 Chi⁴..... A book, a record. Also chi².
- 14 書籍 Shu¹ chi⁴..... Books, records.
- 16 社 She⁴. The tutelary god of a particular place; a village; a township.
- 18 壩 Pa⁴..... An embankment, a dike.
- 19 盤腿 P'an²..... To sit with the legs crossed under one.
- 19 盤腿 P'an² t'ui³..... To sit tailor fashion as Chinese women constantly do.

- 19 活動 Hwo³ tung⁴. Loose, moveable; variable, to move, to exercise.
- 20 掌櫃 Chang³ kwei⁴. The responsible head of a business, a manager, a boss.
- 20 掌尺 Chang³ ch'í³. A foreman, a head workman, a boss.
- 20 掌作 Chang³ tso⁴..... The same.
- 20 遺留 I² liu². To bequeath, to leave behind, to transmit.
- 20 附 Fu⁴. To lean upon, to follow, to attach oneself to; a supplement.
- 20 附會 Fu⁴ hui⁴. To echo the words of another; to gloss over; to speak at random.
- 20 成就 Ch'êng² chiu⁴. To complete, to finish, to fulfil.
- 20 遵 Tsun¹. To obey, to conform to, to act as required, to follow out.
- 20 遵守 Tsun¹ shou³..... To observe a law.
- 20 遵行 Tsun¹ hsing². To perform what is commanded, to obey.
- 20 得救 Te² chiu⁴. To be saved, to obtain salvation.

就然行當他都的救等○算
 必有完遵他都的義主車貨好
 得罪全行的替凡律已來都還
 救。若了、的、我、律、成、就、預、能
 肯³⁶悔³⁵改³⁴信³³主、雖、們、我、們、全、了、的、法、
 我、們、全、了、的、法、我、們、的、只、嗎。

sidered very good indeed. Did you suppose it was possible to get it all back?
 25 The goods are all in readiness, and as soon as the carts come, we will commence loading.
 26 Our Saviour has already fulfilled the righteousness of the law. Everything the law requires us to observe, He has completely observed for us; what it requires us to perform, He has completely performed for us; so that although we are sinners, yet if we will repent and believe in the Saviour, we shall certainly be saved.

1 小註 A small comment, is so called because usually inserted in small type and in double columns.

9 碰釘子 to run against a nail, which produces a sudden and painful revulsion of feeling, hence, to be embarrassed, to be nonplussed.

10 可 as here used, is little more than a mere expletive.

11 搖搖擺擺 to swing and sway, to swagger, to strut. The single form of this reduplication is rarely used.

覺着很有滋味, delighted with his own self-satisfaction; 覺着是個景兒, thinks he is somebody worth looking at.

14 轎子 might also refer to a sedan chair, but the mention of luggage implies that a mule litter was intended.

17 學問一道, this business of learning. 一道 is added for the purpose of specializing and emphasizing.

18 The use of 這 seems to imply that the officer in question was a new one, different from the former one.

20 There seems to be a great variety of terms for head workman. 掌櫃的, which is used in this sense in Peking, generally means the responsible man in a business firm, rather than a foreman or head workman.

22 遺留後患, to leave behind an after trouble, a phrase borrowed from books.

23 Chinese teachers are much given to repeating over and over again the original word or words with slight variations, and calling that an explanation. In expounding the classics (which is here referred to), they for the most part simply rehearse with slight variations and verbal expansions the words of the standard commentator.

26 凡律法當遵守的, whatever [in] the law [we] ought to observe.

LESSON CX.

CONNECTIVES.

The more commonly used words of this class were given in Les. 12. This lesson adds others less frequently used, but equally important.

it is generally followed, after the subject, by either 都 or 也.

與 To give,—with, to, when joined with 同 it means, as, (2).

同 To unite,—together with, in common, and, the same.

連 To connect,—also, even, and. The normal place for 連 is at the beginning of a clause, and

帶 A girdle,—together with, and, including.
 連 帶 Both and, between and.

並 Two joined together,—together with, and, and also, moreover.

以及 Together with, in addition to, and also.

VOCABULARY.

並 Ping⁴. Two joined together, unitedly; together with:—see Sub.; enforces a negative:—Les. 121.

玩笑 Wan² hsiao⁴. To jest, to joke, to talk in fun.

惱 Nao³. To get angry, to feel irritated, to be indignant.

夫婦 Fu¹ fu⁴. Husband and wife. 10

舛 Ch'wan³. Opposed to, perverse. 13

舛錯 Ch'wan³ ts'oa⁴. An error, a mistake.

第一百一十課

LESSON CX.

誰¹好意思與你爲仇呢。○我²與你父親同年歲。○連³他帶⁵我，都受了傷。○我⁴不過是與你玩笑，你就惱了嗎。○他⁵們議論他，連^{5c}我們也帶上了。○我⁶明天必過去同他商量。○再⁷去見他，應該同着別人。○我⁸與他素不相識。○不⁹許他與匪類相交。○夫¹⁰婦是有福同享，有罪同受。○與¹¹人方便，自己^{1c}方便。○謝¹²兆年，手¹³上生長瘡，連¹⁴路膊都腫起來了。○若¹³不同他講明白了，以後怕有差錯。○與¹⁴我咱們無干的事，我們就不必管。○兒¹⁵子與爹娘，論不得是。○我¹⁶合家的人，以及羊羣，都平安無事。○姜¹⁷大興，如今賭起錢來，把房子連地都輸淨了。○看不得他是

- 1 Who would have the face to act as your enemy?
- 2 I am of the same age as your father.
- 3 He and I were both wounded.
- 4 You ought not to get angry when I was merely joking with you. [us.]
- 5 In criticizing him they also implicated
- 6 I shall certainly go over to-morrow and consult with him.
- 7 When you go again to see him, you should take some one else with you.
- 8 I have not been acquainted with him previously. [the profligate.]
- 9 Do not allow him to associate with
- 10 Husband and wife enjoy their blessings and bear their sorrows in common.
- 11 To accommodate others is to accommodate oneself.
- 12 Shie Chao Nien has a boil on his hand which has caused the swelling of his whole lower arm.
- 13 If you do not have a distinct understanding with him, I fear there will afterwards be some mistake.
- 14 It is better not to meddle with that which does not concern us.
- 15 A son should not contest a question of right and wrong with his parents.
- 16 My whole family, together with my flocks, are all getting along very well.
- 17 Chiang Ta Hsing has taken to gambling, and has lost both his house and his land.

- 13 差錯 Ch'a¹. ts'oa⁴. An error, a mistake, a misunderstanding, a blunder.
- 19 丈母 Chang⁴ mu³. . . . A man's mother-in-law.
- 21 虛度 Hsu¹ tu⁴. To live in vain, to waste or squander (time).
- 21 日月 Ji⁴ yüe⁴. . . . Time.
- 22 傢具 Chia¹ chü⁴. . . . Fixtures, furniture, effects.
- 22 罄 Ch'ing⁴. Exhausted, emptied; entirely, wholly:—Les. 149.
- 22 罄淨 Ch'ing⁴ ching⁴. Entirely finished, quite used up, all gone:—Les. 149, Sub.
- 23 白丁 Pai² ting¹. A man without a degree, a common man.
- 23 福安 Fu² an¹. . . . Peace and happiness. (w.)
- 23 清吉 Ch'ing¹ chi². Perfect felicity, entire good fortune. (w.)

- 21 性命 Hsing⁴ ming⁴. Life, the vital principle, existence.
- 25 伯 Pai³. . . . A father's elder brother. See pod².
- 25 大伯子 Ta⁴ pai³ tsi³. A husband's elder brother:—Note (28).
- 28 小叔子 Hsiao³ shu² tsi³. A husband's younger brother.
- 28 擄 Lu³. . . . To take prisoner, to carry captive.
- 29 使費 Shi³ fei⁴. . . . Outlay, expenses.
- 29 費用 Fei⁴ yung⁴. . . . The same.
- 29 酬 Ch'ou². To pledge a guest, to recompense, to requite.
- 29 應酬 Ying⁴ ch'ou². To reciprocate friendship or kindness; intercourse, reciprocity; to give a fee to a superior officer.
- 29 簿 Pu⁴. A register; an account book; a blank book, a memorandum.

犯¹⁶在 ○ 是 福 糧 連 生 小 個
 了 水 有 天 財 食 我 同 的 秀
 案 裏 個 母 請 衣 也 死 連 才
 連 ○ 騎 就 了 裳 白 却 丈 秀
 身 敬²⁶牲 是 三 並 費 投 母 才
 家 請 口 地 桌 大 了 那 都 却
 性 李 的 那 客 小 工 裏 要
 命 先 女 有 連 傢 夫 去 笑 與
 都 生 人 爲 一 具 夫 咯 ○ 不²¹ ○ 不
 保 大 人 過 人 個 都 燒 李²² 但 今²⁰ 同
 住 ○ 並 人 河 敢 白 丁 得 馨 元 是 你 不 你¹⁹
 ○ 我 家 帶 地 也 沒 淨 ○ 今²³ 了 度 日 去 沒
 俺 們 清 福 牲 口 爭 有 ○ 今²³ 了 度 日 去 沒
 孩 子 當 吉 安 ○ 都 非 父²⁴ 天 火 把 月 同
 家 的 一²⁷ 跌 呢 就 黃 把 月 同

- 18 Do not depend upon his being a graduate; there are graduates and graduates.
- 19 You presumptuous fellow; cracking coarse jokes even with your mother-in-law!
- 20 If I do not go with you now for life or for death, where shall I go?
- 21 Not only have you squandered your time, but I also have spent mine in vain.
- 22 A fire broke out in Li Shan Yüan's home, and his grain and clothes, together with all his effects, were entirely burned up.
- 23 Hwang Fu Ts'ai invited three tables of guests to-day, and there was not a single one without a degree.
- 24 The father is Heaven and the mother is Earth; where is the man who would dare to contest a point of right and wrong with Heaven and Earth.
- 25 A woman was fording the river on an animal, when the animal stumbled, and both woman and beast fell into the water.
- 26 My best wishes to his honor, Mr. Li, and his family.
- 27 If once you commit a crime, your own life and the lives of your family are all endangered.

- ²⁹ 緣簿 *Yüan² pu⁴*. A subscription book for religious or charitable purposes.
- ³⁰ 賭博 *Tu⁵ pod²*. To gamble.
- ³¹ 娼妓 *Ch'ang¹*. A singing woman, a courtesan.
- ³² 妓女 *Chi⁴*. A courtesan, a prostitute.
- ³³ 娼妓 *Ch'ang¹*. A prostitute, a strumpet.
- ³⁴ 賊盜 *Tsei² tao⁴*. A robber, a thief, a highway-man.
- ³⁵ 盜賊 *Tao⁴ tsei²*. The same.
- ³⁶ 急忙 *Chi² mang³*. Quickly, hurriedly; promptly, suddenly, for the time being.
- ³⁷ 樹林 *Shu⁴ lin²*. A wood, a grove; a forest.
- ³⁸ 躡 *Ts'wan⁴*. To leap, to jump; to prance; to spurt out.
- ³⁹ 廊 *Lang²*. A verandah, a porch, a gallery.
- ⁴⁰ 厦 *Sha⁴*. A projecting roof, a shed.
- ⁴¹ 簷 *Yen²*. The eaves of a house.
- ⁴² 厦簷 *Yen²*. Projecting eaves; a projecting roof supported on pillars.

- 花消 *Hwa¹ hsiao¹*. Expense, outlay. ³³
- 酬謝 *Ch'ou² hsie⁴*. To reciprocate in kind, to re-³³
turn a favor by a present.
- 賀喜 *He⁴ hsi³*. To offer congratulations. ³³
- 酒飯 *Chiu⁵ fan⁴*. Food worthy to be eaten with ³³
wine, a feast.
- 厮 *Si¹*. A servant, a menial attendant. ³⁵
- 小厮 *Hsiao³ si¹*. A serving boy, a waiter; a ³⁵
little boy, a son.
- 髻 *Hwan²*. The hair dressed in a knot on the top
of the head, a tuft.
- 丫鬟 *Ya¹ hwan²*. A slave girl, a waiting maid. ³⁵
Note (35).
- 僕婦 *P'u² fu⁴*. A slave woman, a nurse. (w.)
- 花名册 *Hwa¹ ming² ts'ê⁴*. A general roll or
register, a list of adherents.
- 卯 *Mao³*. The fourth of the twelve branches; 5
to 7 o'clock A.M., morning.
- 卯簿 *Mao³ pu⁴*. A muster roll,—so named
because called in the morning.

○ 及裏了驢盜吊人 了 叫
 我的³³ 所有的 頭的不³² 出沒³⁰ 錢。○ 情 去 賊
 的 孫子 的 個 樹 出 沒 的 ○ 應 喇 殺
 孫子 今年 零 不堪³¹ 林 的 酬 連 我 了
 進學 進 碎 堪 撲 在 所 連 經 家 大
 學 學 東 今 在 身 賭 戲 中 伯
 花 都 西 天 他 博 緣 的 同
 消 搬 子 我 上 場 簿 費 小
 太 到 連 小 我 身 並 每 用 叔
 多 廈 廊 帶 拾 上 獅 娼 年 費 子
 喇 簷 子 書 掇 帶 獅 妓 總 太 也
 底 下 架 堂 客 帶 子 見 他 得 重 都
 下 去 子 架 堂 客 帶 子 見 他 得 重 都
 學 去 子 架 堂 客 帶 子 見 他 得 重 都

28 My husband was killed by the robbers, and his elder and younger brothers all carried away captives by them.

29 The expenses of my family are quite too heavy. What with rice and fuel, friendly contributions and social reciprocities, together with assessments for prayers and theatricals, I require over five hundred strings of cash each year.

30 These gambling dens and brothels are the rendezvous of robbers and thieves.

31 The lion seeing he was about to run, leaped suddenly out of the wood and pounced upon him, and what with tearing and biting, wounded him dreadfully.

32 I want to clean up the parlor to-day; you may carry out to the verandah the chairs, tables and sofas, also the bookcase, together with all the smaller articles.

33 My grandson got his degree this year,

NOTES.

3 連他帶我。The double conjunction emphasizes the fact that both were wounded, as if one ought to have escaped.

8 素不相識 Previously not acquainted, a ready made phrase.

11 A common saying answering to, "A kind act is never thrown away."

18 秀才與秀才不同。Lit. graduates are not the same as graduates, or, as we say in English, "there are graduates and graduates."

19 沒大沒小, a very expressive phrase, meaning that the person disregards, or is insensible, to his relation to those above and below him.

24 父就是天母就是地, presents a stock sentiment of Chinese philosophy. The understanding of the common people takes the impersonal pantheistic terms of the learned, in what is practically a personal sense. To the common Chinese mind 天地 means God.

25 Note how 跌 is predicated of both the woman and the animal.

26 This is the stereotyped polite phraseology with which a letter opens.

27 犯了案, to sin a suit; i.e., to transgress the law so as to incur a prosecution. 身家性命. In letters, legal documents and books, 身 is used pronominally for the person speaking and sometimes, as here, for the person spoken to or about; chia is not an enclitic but is used in its primary sense. The combination is decidedly wên.

28 孩子爹 Women address their husbands, and also speak of them to others, as the children's father or as so and so's father, using the name of the eldest son, or if there be no son, of the eldest daughter. Other persons also often take up and use the term used by the wife. Men also speak of their wives as the children's mother, etc. 當家的 "the man of the house," is more frequently used in the North than in the South. It is a curious fact that while 伯伯 or 伯伯 or 伯伯 means a father's elder brother, a paternal uncle, 伯伯子 or 大伯子 means a husband's elder brother, a brother-in-law; and that while 叔叔 or 叔叔 or 叔叔 means a father's younger brother, a paternal uncle, 叔叔子 or 小叔叔子 means a husband's younger brother, a brother-in-law. 姑 and 舅, and in some localities 姨, follow the same rule; thus 姑姑 or 姑姑 or 姑母 means a father's sister, a paternal aunt, while 姑子 (大姑子 and 小姑子) means a husband's sister, a sister-in-law.

29 經戲緣簿, a subscription book for raising money to pay for reciting prayers and holding theatricals. These subscriptions are practically assessments by the priests.

30 出沒的所在, place of appearing and disappearing; i.e., hiding place,—a book expression.

33 送學 Shortly after the examinations are over and the degrees awarded, the magistrate of each district issues a notice, calling the new graduates to meet him on a certain day and be presented to the 老師. They go dressed up in conventional uniform to the magistrate's office, where he

規帶酬謝先生以及送學時所用
 的藍衫靴帽吹手並賀喜的客吃
 的酒飯等項一共花了三百多吊。
 我借給王雲山那三十吊錢。這
 三年一個利錢也沒得如今他這
 一死把我的錢連本帶利全丟了。
 及家³⁵中上下所有的管家小廝以
 及丫鬟僕婦的名字一總記在花
 名冊子上。營中兵丁的名字一總
 記在卯簿上。

graduation fees and present to the teacher, together with the blue coat, boots, hat, musicians, and the feast for those who came to offer congratulations, etc., which were required on the occasion of his matriculation, involved, in all, an expense of over three hundred thousand cash.

34 During these three years I have not received a single cash of interest on that thirty thousand cash that I lent Wang Yün Shan, and now that he has died, my money, both principal and interest, is all lost.

35 The whole family, including stewards and servant boys, together with slave girls and serving women, are all to be entered on the general register; and the names of all the soldiers in the barracks are to be recorded on the muster roll.

treats them to wine, and then goes with them to the 老師, whose official residence is either in, or attached to, the temple of Confucius. They first go into the temple and worship the Sage, and are then formally presented to the 老師 as his pupils (in theory). When dismissed, each one mounts his horse, and, accompanied by musicians and banners, goes round the city or country to call on his friends; after which he is expected to entertain his friends at a feast. These formalities

are not, however, compulsory, and those who are too poor to bear the expense, do not go at the invitation of the magistrate, and of course lose the glorification they might otherwise have had.

24 丫鬟 is probably derived from a special manner of wearing the hair indicative of servitude. Both 丫鬟 and 僕婦 are book terms. The colloquial terms are 丫頭 and 老媽.

LESSON CXI.

SIGN OF THE PERFECT PARTICIPLE.

Op. 12. 192.

既 is the sign of the perfect participle. It precedes the verb and is usually rendered *having* or *seeing*, sometimes *since* or *inasmuch as*. It is closely allied in meaning to 已經, but differs in that it is only used in a subordinate or participial clause, and implies a principal verb to follow.

既然 } The same meaning as 既 alone. 然 and
 既是 } 是 are added for the sake of rhythm,
 serving also to strengthen slightly the force of 既.
 既自 Substantially the same as 既 alone,
 but more colloquial, and also local. The 自 seems
 to give something of the sense of *already*, thus
 approximating the meaning of 已經.

VOCABULARY.

1 既 Chi⁴..... To finish; since, seeing:—see Sub.
 2 不算 Pu⁴ swan⁴. To count oneself out, to refuse,
 to disclaim.
 9 岳 Yoa⁴, Yue⁴, Yao⁴. A wife's parents. A con-
 traction of 嶽.

岳父 Yue⁴ fu⁴..... A wife's father. 7
 養傷 Yang³ shang¹. To nurse a wound; to }
 defray the expense of }
 recovery from a wound.
 管理 Kwan³ li³. To rule over, to govern, to }
 control, to manage. //

LESSON CXI.

第 一 百 十 一 課
 我 呢。○ 他 自 己 既 然 沒 提。誰 好 意 思 的 問 他 呢。○ 事 情 既 然
 壞 到 這 個 樣 子 兒。大 約 難 以 再 好。○ 你 既 不 嫁。就 不 該 寫 庚 帖
 與 我。○ 既 然 不 能 替 人 家 做。就 當 趕 快 去 辭。○ 你 既 然 是 新
 女 婿。怎 麼 不 給 你 丈 岳 人 父 去 拜 年 呢。○ 我 既 主 意 定 了。你 們 都
 不 得 多 言 多 語。○ 你 在 小 事 上 既 有 忠 心。我 要 交 給 你 大 事
 管 理。○ 既 然 知 道 爹 娘 的 恩 了。爲 甚 麼 不 孝 順 呢。○ 哥 哥 既
 是 不 肯 饒 我。把 刀 來 割 我 這 個 頭 去 也 就 是 了。○ 他 既 是 你
 的 親 戚。問 他 借 幾 百 錢。那 不 是 現 成 嗎。○ 你 既 自 是 結 巴。還 這

- 1 Since he has gone, let him do as he likes.
- 2 Having committed myself, I cannot but stand by it.
- 3 As you have beaten him, can you avoid bearing the expense of his recovery?
- 4 Seeing you knew it some time ago, why did you not come sooner and tell me?
- 5 As he did not mention it himself, who would have the face to ask him?
- 6 Seeing the business is damaged to this extent, it will probably be hard to right it again.
- 7 Seeing you did not intend to marry, you should not have given me a betrothal card.
- 8 Seeing you cannot do it for him, you should go at once and excuse yourself.
- 9 Being a new son-in-law, why do you not go and pay your father-in-law a new year's call.
- 10 As I have already made my decision, none of you need say anything more about it.
- 11 Inasmuch as thou hast been faithful in small things, I will make thee ruler over great things.
- 12 Since you know the kindness of your father and mother, why do you not honor them?
- 13 Well, brother, since you are not willing to forgive me, you might as well just take a knife and cut off my head.
- 14 As he is a relative, what difficulty is there in asking him for the loan of a few hundred cash?

- | | |
|--|---|
| 19 多事 <i>Toā¹ shi⁴</i> . To meddle, to interfere, to be impertinent. | 俯就 <i>Fu³ chiu⁴</i> . To accommodate oneself to, to curry favor with. |
| 20 慮 <i>Lü⁴</i> . To think anxiously about, to cogitate, to care for, to plan. | 材 <i>Ts'ai²</i> . Materials; qualities, abilities. |
| 21 大丈夫 <i>Ta⁴ chang⁴ fu¹</i> . A spirited magnanimous man. | 材料 <i>Ts'ai² liao⁴</i> . Materials; ingredients; substance. |
| 22 梭 <i>Soā¹</i> . A shuttle. | 辦置 <i>Pan⁴ chi⁴</i> . To get ready; to provide; to procure. |
| 23 箭 <i>Chien⁴</i> . An arrow; an archer; a bowshot; swift as an arrow. | 爽神 <i>Shwang³ shên²</i> . Quick, prompt, expeditious. |
| 忽 <i>Hu¹</i> . To neglect, to slight; careless; suddenly, unexpectedly.—Les. 115. | 欠帖 <i>Ch'ien⁴ t'ie²</i> . A promissory note, a bond, an I. O. U. |
| 24 疎忽 <i>Su¹ hu¹</i> . Careless, negligent, lax. | 警 <i>Ching³</i> . To warn, to caution; to urge one to reform. |
| 25 趕攏 <i>Kan³ lung³</i> . To curry favor, to pay court to, to coax. | |

○他²⁶日²⁶然²³○麼²³有²¹正¹⁸個¹⁷這¹⁶麼¹⁵
 他²⁶既²⁶是²⁶欺⁵⁴軟⁵⁴怕⁵²硬¹⁴的¹⁴東¹⁴西¹⁴，就¹⁴不¹⁴用¹⁴理¹⁴他¹⁴，你¹⁴若¹⁴去¹⁴俯¹⁴趕¹⁴就¹⁴攏¹⁴他¹⁴，他¹⁴就¹⁴
 日²⁶如²⁶梭²⁶，光²⁶陰²⁶似¹⁴⁵箭¹⁴⁵，光¹⁴⁵陰¹⁴⁵既¹⁴⁵過¹⁴⁵去¹⁴⁵的¹⁴⁵這¹⁴⁵麼¹⁴⁵快¹⁴⁵，還¹⁴⁵可¹⁴⁵一¹⁴⁵刻¹⁴⁵疎²⁵忽²⁵嗎²⁵。
 然²³是²³個²³男²³子²³漢²³，大²³丈²³夫²³，辦²³事²³說²³話²³，不²³好²³，婆²³老²³婆²³媽²³婆²³娘²³媽²³婆²³娘²³的²³，○俗²⁵語²⁵說²⁵，
 ○他²³既²³自²³是²³心²³裏²³難²³受²³，你²³又²³去²³找²³他²³，他²³還²³擺²³上²³了²³酒²³，還²³能²³不²³預²³備²³飯²³嗎²³。
 麼²³不²³去²³考²³呢²³。○若²¹是²¹沒²¹有²¹學²¹問²¹，也²¹還²¹可²¹說²¹，既²¹然²¹有²¹這²¹樣²¹的²¹學²¹問²¹，爲²¹甚²¹
 有²¹近²¹憂²¹。○若²¹是²¹沒²¹有²¹學²¹問²¹，也²¹還²¹可²¹說²¹，既²¹然²¹有²¹這²¹樣²¹的²¹學²¹問²¹，爲²¹甚²¹
 正¹⁸是¹⁸多¹⁸事¹⁸，人¹⁸家¹⁸本¹⁸主¹⁸既¹⁸然¹⁸願¹⁸意¹⁸，他¹⁸還¹⁸用¹⁸不¹⁸肯¹⁸嗎¹⁸。○既²⁰無²⁰遠²⁰慮²⁰，必²⁰
 個¹⁷錢¹⁷了¹⁷。○你¹⁸既¹⁸沒¹⁸親¹⁸眼¹⁸看¹⁸見¹⁸，怎¹⁸麼¹⁸知¹⁸道¹⁸的¹⁸這¹⁸麼¹⁸詳¹⁸細¹⁸呢¹⁸。○他¹⁹這¹⁹
 這¹⁷一¹⁷次¹⁷罷¹⁷。○那¹⁷一¹⁷日¹⁷沒¹⁷有¹⁷費¹⁷用¹⁷，既¹⁷有¹⁷費¹⁷用¹⁷，就¹⁷一¹⁷日¹⁷也¹⁷少¹⁷不¹⁷得¹⁷這¹⁷
 麼¹⁵多¹⁵說¹⁵話¹⁵做¹⁵什¹⁵麼¹⁵。○既¹⁶然¹⁶是¹⁶我¹⁶在¹⁶這¹⁶裏¹⁶兒¹⁶，看¹⁶着¹⁶我¹⁶的¹⁶面¹⁶上¹⁶，饒¹⁴⁶過¹⁴⁶他¹⁴⁶

- 15 Seeing you stammer, why do you talk so much ?
- 16 Seeing I am here present, forgive him this once for my sake.
- 17 What day is there when you have no outlay? This being the case, you cannot do even a single day without money.
- 18 Not having been an eye-witness, how do you come to know it all so minutely ?
- 19 This is a pure impertinence of his. Seeing the original party is willing, what business has he to dissent ?
- 20 Since you have no care for the future, trouble will be sure to overtake you soon.
- 21 If he had no literary attainments, there would be some excuse; but seeing he has the scholarship, why not go and compete ?
- 22 Don't let us go; having set out the wine can he fail to have food ready ?
- 23 Is it likely you will get a favorable response, seeing you are applying to him when he is already worried ?
- 24 As you boast of being a man, you should not speak and act in an effeminate way.
- 25 The saying is, "Days and months fly like a shuttle; time speeds by like an arrow." Since time passes so quickly, we should not waste a single moment.
- 26 Since he is a fellow who insults the weak and cringes to the strong, it

警戒 Ching³ chie⁴. To warn, to caution; to threaten; to exhort.
 省 Hsing⁸. To examine, to inquire into; to awaken. See Sheng⁸.
 悟 Wu⁴. To arouse, to awake; to perceive, to understand, to reflect.

省悟. To awake to a sense of, to become aware of, to become sensible of.
 頑 Wan². Stupid, heedless, immovable.
 愚頑 Yu² wan². Thick-headed, obtuse, stupid; heedless; mulish.

NOTES.

3 When one man wounds another in a fight, it is customary to require him to defray the expense of medical treatment, and in some cases pay for loss of time also, while the wound is healing.
 7 與 is used for 給, see Les. 25.
 9 Custom requires a son-in-law to pay his respects and carry a present to his father-in-law at the new year for three successive years, after which it is optional.
 10 主意 may here be regarded as a compound verb and 定 as its auxiliary; or if taken as a noun, it is to be

regarded as transposed for rhetorical effect from its usual position. The common order would be 我主意既定了。
 13 The phrase 把刀來 is probably elliptical for 把刀拿來, for 把 does not ordinarily take 來 alone as an auxiliary. 也 serves to connect the refusal to forgive and the beheading,—since you will not forgive me, you might as well also cut my head off.
 17 這個 here refers back to the subject of discourse.

更長了價錢兒喇。○材料既然都辦
 置就了，做起來也爽神。○他這箇
 欠帖，到底是箇假的，從前要錢的
 時候，叫他躡躡的家裏老少不安，
 如今咱既然知道是假的，咱能叫
 他安穩嗎？總得照實告他，狀，叫
 他受點刑罰，纔能出我這口氣喇。
 ○王蘭堂真是糊塗人，我警戒過
 他好幾次，他總不省悟，他既然這
 麼愚頑，吃虧是免不了的。

is best to pay no attention to him. Once begin to coax him, and he will presume all the more.
 27 Having the materials all ready, it can be made very quickly.
 28 This note of his after all is forged. When he was pressing for payment, he worried us so that neither old nor young got any rest. Now that we know it is false, shall we allow him to take his ease? Only by entering suit according to the facts, and giving him a taste of punishment, can I satisfy my resentment.
 29 Wang Lan T'ang is a very foolish man. I have warned him several times, but he cannot be aroused [to a sense of his danger]. Seeing he is so obtuse, he will just have to suffer the consequences.

- 19 人家 and 本主 are in apposition, referring to the same person.
- 20 This sentiment is from the Confucian Analects, inculcating the wisdom of planning well for the future.
- 21 A full translation of 也還可說 would require, there would then still be some excuse.
- 22 In the entertainment of guests, wine is first set forth by itself and subsequently the food is brought on.
- 24 男子漢 expresses physical qualities, and 大丈夫

mental qualities. The two phrases together express very strongly the qualities of a vigorous manliness. 婆婆娘娘 is the reduplication of a noun after the manner of the adjectives in Les. 107, making a very expressive descriptive adjective.
 25 欺軟怕硬的 is used as a compound adjective descriptive of the "fellow" here referred to. 長了價 raise his price,—a figure taken from buying and selling.

LESSON CXII.
 ANTITHETICAL PARTICLES.

A number of different words are used to connect clauses used in apposition or antithesis, of which the principal are the following:—

- 倒 To invert,—on the contrary, yet. 倒 is often used when it cannot be translated. It serves to intimate that the thing asserted is contrary to expectation; thus in the seventh sentence its use intimates or at least suggests, that a common-place style was to have been expected.
- 反 To return,—on the other hand, on the contrary, contrariwise, and yet.
- 倒反 or 反倒, On the contrary, etc. Joined together, the two words serve to strengthen

each other. In some places the one order is most used, and in other places the other order.
 偏 Inclined,—bent on, determined—generally indicates a trace of perversity or contrariness. The English language affords no real equivalent for this word.
 轉 To turn,—on the other hand, it came to pass, it turned out.
 乃 An antithetical book particle, often used in Mandarin. It expresses a mild opposition to something preceding either expressed or implied. It may sometimes be rendered, but, yet, moreover, etc., but more frequently goes untranslated, having no proper equivalent in English.

VOCABULARY.

- 乃 Nai³. But; doubtless; moreover, in fact; to wit, then:—see Sub.
- 長子 Chang³ tsī³.....The eldest son.
- 志向 Chi⁴ hsiang⁴. Will, purpose, determination; inclination.
- 雅 Ya³.....Elegant, genteel; refined, polished.

課二十百一第

LESSON CXII.

己¹藝²是說不不我少○你¹
 不○我³的怎和偏子。明³打¹
 正這¹³倒他麼你⁵要來。明³明³算¹
 經就¹³忘¹³不樣^{ch}計⁵○你⁵是⁵你⁵人⁵倒¹
 倒¹³是¹³了¹³說¹³就^{ch}較^{2.05}○人⁵你⁵你⁵害¹
 說¹³於¹³這¹³反¹³是¹³你⁵聽⁷他⁵反¹害¹
 人¹³人¹³一¹³說¹³他⁵倒¹反¹說¹了¹
 家¹³有¹³着¹³○許¹³多¹³血¹³和¹³的¹³話¹³
 不¹³益¹³的¹³你¹²多¹²心¹²我¹²計¹²很¹²
 乾¹²淨¹²反¹²轉¹²於¹²這¹²廢¹²是¹²較¹²雅¹²
 哩¹²○人¹²把¹²話¹²○人¹²所¹²○倒¹²
 都¹⁵有¹⁵損¹⁵子¹⁵○二¹¹不¹¹他⁹不⁶愛¹
 無¹⁵了¹⁵倒¹⁵有¹⁵子¹⁵的¹⁵才¹⁵氣¹⁵○我⁸
 子¹⁵○有¹⁵些¹⁵說¹⁵○學¹⁵○我⁸
 女¹⁵你¹⁴些¹⁴說¹⁴○學¹⁴○我⁸
 也¹⁵自¹⁵手¹⁵得¹⁵嘗¹⁰倒¹⁰我⁸來⁸愛¹

- 1 You thought to injure another, but on the contrary you have injured yourself.
- 2 I obtained what I had not anticipated.
- 3 Clearly it was you, and yet you put it off on others.
- 4 He did not love the eldest, on the contrary he loved the youngest.
- 5 Although you are small of stature, your will is not small.
- 6 I am determined to come in spite of your prohibition.
- 7 His conversation appears to be quite elegant, and not at all commonplace.
- 8 When I do not dispute with you, you turn about and dispute with me, eh?
- 9 There is nothing special in his talents and learning, but his warm-heartedness is unequalled.
- 10 He did not say what he should have said, but on the contrary said a great many irrelevant things.
- 11 What you say is so, sister-in-law. I had quite forgotten this move.
- 12 You have shown considerable skill in making these pincers.
- 13 This is a case in which what was to have been beneficial, has turned out to be injurious.
- 14 You yourself are not free from reproach, yet you turn about and accuse others of dishonor.
- 15 Everybody says if you have no sons, daughters are as good; but it is not

- 1 致 Chī⁴. To induce; to regulate; a wên-li causative; in order to; extreme, in the highest degree; to the extent of:—Les. 192.
- 7 雅致 Genteel, stylish, refined, elegant.
- 9 才學 Ts'ai² hsue². Talent and learning; learning, acquirements.
- 9 血心 Hsie³ hsin¹. Heart, affection; warm-heartedness, sympathy.
- 16 廢話 Fei⁴ hwa⁴. Empty words, useless verbiage, irrelevant talk.
- 16 矯 Chiao³. To falsify; to usurp; martial; obstinate, deceitful.
- 16 矯強 Chiao³ ch'iang². To make false pretences; unreasonable.
- 16 咬扯 Yao³ chē³. To evade, to trump up a case; to criminate others.

- 正派 Chêng⁴ p'ai⁴. Respectable, exemplary, well-behaved.
- 半吊子 Pan⁴ tiao⁴ tsi³. A half-witted fellow, a simpleton, a greenhorn, a numskull.
- 撒村 Sa¹ ts'un¹. To blackguard, to vilify, to retail scandal.
- 按 An⁴. To press with the hand, to hold down; to repress, to grasp; to examine:—see an¹.
- 揉 Jou³. To bend, to twist; to supple up, to bring into subjection.
- 揉搓 Jou³ ts'od¹. To knead, to twist and gouge; to crumple in the hand.
- 宦 Hwan⁴. One who serves, a courtier; a dignitary.
- 官宦 Kwan¹ hwan⁴. Officials, gentry, noblemen.

洋線織的，所以一疋我也沒要。○若照你的話去做，不但不能就救

○起先我看那布很好，打算兩疋都要他的，後來細看看，乃是

我墜下水裏去了。○他是官宦人家，你要用錢謝他，倒不

叫他按在地下，好一頓揉搓。○八戒道，若是背着師傅浮水，轉連

你年紀雖輕，聽你的話，倒很有大人的見識。○打倒沒打喇，就是

愛說閒話，管閒事。○我所願的我偏不做，我所恨的我倒去做。○

以說他怎麼來怎麼去的，我就是不大敢信。○怕讀書做文章，倒

他薄。○王慎終乃是正派人家，不是那等半吊子，好撒村的人，所

你明明沒有理，偏要混咬矯扯強。○咱們明明待他是厚，他反說是待

好，那知道養了兩個女兒，乃是一對冤家，叫人難受不難受呢。○

so, for I brought up two daughters and they have turned out to be my enemies. What a grief of heart it is!

16 You are plainly without a case, yet you persist in trumping up false issues.

17 Clearly we treated him generously, yet he says we treated him meanly.

18 Wang Shên Chung is an exemplary man, and not one of those half-witted fellows who are given to retailing scandal; therefore when all sorts of stories are told of him I am not inclined to believe them.

19 Disliking to study and write essays, he on the contrary relishes idle talk and meddling in affairs that do not concern him.

20 What I would, that I do not; what I would not, that I do.

21 Although you are young in years, your conversation indicates that you have quite a mature judgment.

22 He did not strike me, it is true; but he held me down and gave me a good shaking.

23 Pa Chiaï replied, "If I try to swim with you on my back, master, the result will be that we shall both sink to the bottom."

24 He belongs to an official family, so it will not be in good taste for you to return the favor in money.

25 At first I took that cloth to be very good and proposed to buy both pieces of him, but afterwards upon closer examination, I found that it was woven of foreign thread, hence I did not take even one piece.

26 If we do as you say, not only will we

- 大氣 *Ta⁴ ch'í²*..... Genteel, aristocratic. (s.)
- 織 *Chí¹*..... To weave.
- 救急 *Chiu⁴ chí²*. To save from the emergency, to remove embarrassment, to tide over the difficulty.
- 就急 *Chiu⁴ chí²*. To suit the emergency, to meet the case.
- 脫空 *T'oa¹ k'ung⁴*. To have time or opportunity; to lose time; to lose a chance or opportunity.
- 半憨子 *Pan⁴ han¹ tsi³*. A simpleton, a half-witted chap.
- 豐收 *Fêng¹ shou¹*..... A bountiful harvest.
- 蝗 *Hwang²*..... The locust.
- 蝗蟲 *Hwang² ch'ung²*..... The locust.
- 攔 *Lan²*. To hinder, to stop; to obstruct; to screen off.
- 阻攔 *Tsu³*..... To hinder, to impede, to oppose.
- 阻攔 *Tsu³*. To hinder, to interfere with, to oppose.
- 貧 *P'in²*..... Poor, destitute.
- 貧寒 *P'in² han³*..... Poor, destitute.
- 折乾 *Ché³ kan¹*. To substitute, to commute, to exchange for.
- 折乾 *Kan¹ ché²*..... The same.
- 薄 *Tan⁴ po⁴*. Weak,—as a solution or an emotion.

親熱，但是用着朋友的時候，古人乃是一片真心，今人乃是一片假意。
 四咯，還沒有來，光景是有甚麼講究啊。○古人交友很淡薄，今人交友很
 就是撈不着去。○王先生上回來的信，說在這個月初三要，今天倒十
 學生都聽戲去了，你爲什麼不去呢？答：先生派我看房子，我倒想着去呢。
 東西，周老大如今貧寒的很，我看倒不如乾折乾謝他幾兩銀子好。○別的
 着他們的口氣說，這是甚麼意思呢。○王老四欠周老大的情，要謝他些
 豐收，誰知後來有了蝗蟲，倒把莊稼都吃盡了。○你不攔阻他們，反倒順
 小我看他很聰明，後來念書念的，倒成了半愁子喇。○都指望今年必要
 那個不識人的老剝皮，用了許多心機，反害了自己。○張家那個孩子，從
 急，倒反加憂愁了。○我不脫空的兒，整月家替他當差，反倒有了不是嗎。○

fail to remove the embarrassment, but on the contrary will rather make the matter worse.
 27 I never lost any time, but served him month in and month out, and am I still to be found fault with?
 28 That old skinflint tried a great many tricks, yet injured himself after all.
 29 From a child I regarded that boy of the Chang family as very bright, but afterwards he became imbecile from overwork at his books.
 30 All hoped this would certainly be a bountiful year, when, all unexpectedly, the locusts came and ate up all the crops.
 31 You do not oppose, on the contrary you chime in with them; what is the meaning of this?
 32 Wáng the fourth is under obligations to the elder Chou and is proposing to express his thanks by some presents; but as Chou the elder is very poor at present, I think it would be better to substitute a few taels of silver instead.
 33 All the other scholars have gone to hear the play, why do you not go?
 Ans. The teacher has appointed me to watch the room. I would like to go, but have no opportunity.
 34 In his last letter Mr. Wang said that he would be here by the third of this month. This is the fourteenth and he has not yet come. The probability is that something has occurred [to prevent].
 35 In ancient times friendships were quite cool, in these days they are very warm; but in the time of need the ancient friend was true, while the friend of these days is false.

NOTES.

4 少子 is not a common combination. It is used here as the correlate of 長子 alone. A more colloquial form of the whole sentence would be, 他不愛大兒子倒愛小兒子。
 8 In order to bring out the proper force of the sentence, the first 你 and the last 我 should be emphasized.
 11 這一着, this move or trick,—a figure taken from chess playing. Read Chao¹ in Peking, but tao³ in Shantung.
 14 乾淨 is here used figuratively of character or conduct.

18 半吊子, a half string [of cash] that is, a half-wit.— chiefly used as a term of reproach. 說他怎麼來怎麼去的, saying this and that about him, telling stories about him.
 20 偏 is here very forcible, but no English word will translate it. 倒 might be rendered on the contrary, but its force is more elegantly left to be implied in the relation of the clauses.
 22 打倒沒打, as for beating, he did not indeed beat me,—a common idiom for expressing this special form of idea.

課三十百一第

LESSON CXIII.

麼說在上海拍賣的呢。○我是向他求幫誰說
 兄送我的。答却又來。既是孫兄送你的，你昨天怎
 嗎。○我這箇時辰表原沒別的說，實係是孫友梅
 罷。○這不過是他約摸的話，還親眼看見來着
 裏反了。○這樣的，你往那裏去，快進來
 ○還打算和人家怎麼樣嗎？先來不來，自己窩
 他預備了沒有。○你若是不服，先來不來，就來
 ○只是我圖甚麼來着。○婆媳去拜年嗎？去來
 ○初三那天，你沒給呢着。○南北京我都到過
 先生和你怎麼說來着。

- 1 What did the teacher say to you?
- 2 I have been at both the northern and southern capitals.
- 3 Did you not go on the third to pay your respects to your maternal grandmother? Ans. Yes, I went.
- 4 But what did I covet?
- 5 He was not told beforehand, and I do not know whether he is prepared or not.
- 6 If you are not satisfied, just come ahead [if you dare].
- 7 Why lay plans for dealing with others, when here already there is a rebellion in our own house.
- 8 Where have you been in this great rain? Come in quickly.
- 9 This is nothing more than a supposition of his: he did not see it himself.
- 10 There is no other explanation concerning this watch of mine; it was really given to me by brother Sun Yu Hai. Ans. But see here: if it was given to you by Brother Sun, then why did you say yesterday that you bought it in Shanghai at auction?
- 11 I was applying to him for help: who

The use of 倒 implies a previous impression that he had been beaten. "Shaking up" scarcely translates 揉搓, as here used, nor does any other term in the English fighting vocabulary.

28 八戒, the servant and disciple of 唐僧, Les. 86 Note (25).

29 不顧人, does not regard persons; that is, has no regard for friendship, age or rank, unprincipled, recreant,

heartless. 老剝皮, an old extortioner who, not satisfied with taking goods and clothes, is ready to tear off men's skins to satisfy his demands, an old skinflint. 老 is usually a term of honor, but here it is an intensive of reproach.

29 念書念的 studying he [finally] studied himself [into a simpleton], an idiomatic form which English will not literally express.

LESSON CXIII.
 PECULIAR USES OF 來.

In addition to its regular and constant use as an auxiliary, 來 is also frequently used at the end of a clause or sentence in the place of 了. In Pekingese it is generally followed by 着, but not in Central or Southern Mandarin.

來 is also used out of its ordinary sense in the following special phrases.

來來 or 來來來, expresses a challenge,—come ahead, come on if you dare, we'll try it on.

來不來 expresses an absurd state of things, an unprecedented or unexpected turn of affairs,—here behold, here already, well! well!

先不先 is used in Southern Mandarin in the same way, and with substantially the same meaning as 來不來 in the North.

却又來 An exclamation arresting the speaker and preparatory to charging home on him an inconsistency,—there now, but then, well then, but see here.

他該我的呢。○你怎麼這麼外道。我們從幾時分過彼此。○別
 兩銀子呢。○你怎麼這麼外道。我們從幾時分過彼此。○別
 人都沒有動靜兒。你來不來的先這麼怕，這樣兒那樣兒防備着。
 還是個漢子。味兒嗎。○他能多做就多做，不能多做就少做。從來
 誰和他計較過來呢。○這些米沒用篩子篩一篩嗎。篩了來着，沒篩
 還能這麼乾淨嗎。○李老二，趕自是李文山的兄弟，却又來，你
 那天爲甚麼說，他們是父子兩個呢。○在關東山的時候，那些響
 應野鹿、狼蟲虎豹，我都見過。○聽說人長癩瘡，若把頭摸上一些
 些黏粥，叫狗舔一舔就好了。○我用過這個法子，叫狗舔過，略舔
 了也是不好。○我早說他沒有那股子常勁兒，你却不信，你看他

said he owed me anything? Ans. Well then, if indeed he does not owe you, how is it that you say he must give you thirty taels?
 12 What makes you so offish? Since when have we had separate interests?
 13 Nobody else is making any move, and here you are already in a fright, taking this and that precaution: is this the mettle of a man?
 14 If he can do more, let him do more; if he cannot, let him do less. Who ever found fault with him about it?
 15 Have you not sifted this rice? Ans. Certainly I have. Would it be as clean as this if I had not sifted it?
 16 Of course Li the second is Li Wên Shan's brother. Ans. There now! why then did you say the other day that they were father and son?
 17 When I was in the mountains in Manchuria I saw the musk ox, the spotted deer, the wild deer, the wolf, serpent, tiger and leopard.
 18 I have heard it said that if one who has scald head will rub his head with rice gruel and have a dog lick it, it will get well. Ans. I once tried this plan of having a dog lick my head, but it did no good.
 19 I said from the first that he did not have that amount of perseverance, but you would not believe it: and

VOCABULARY.

- 媯 *Lao³*. Maternal grandmother. Always doubled in use. (N.)
- 老娘 *Lao³ niang²*. Maternal grandmother.
- 預先 *Yü⁴ hsien¹*. Beforehand, previously.
- 係 *Hsi¹*. Belonging to; concerning; the substantive verb in *wên-li*.
- 實係 *Shi² hsi⁴*. Indeed, really, in fact.
- 拍 *P'oi⁴, P'ai¹*. To strike with the open hand; to pat, to caress; to slap.
- 拍賣 *P'ai¹ mai⁴*. To sell at auction.
- 外道 *Wai⁴ tao⁴*. Unfriendly, offish, cool, unsocial.
- 外氣 *Wai⁴ ch'i⁴*. The same. (s.)

- 篩 *Shai¹*. A sieve; to sift. 15
- 趕自 *Kan³ tsi⁴*. Of course, to be sure, assuredly, by all means. 16
- 響 *Chang¹*. The musk deer. 17
- 麂 *P'ao³*. A small spotted deer found in North China. 17
- 豹 *Pao⁴*. The leopard, the panther. 17
- 癩 *La⁴*. Severe, grievous; bald. 18
- 痢 *Li⁴*. Dysentery, a flux. 18
- 癩痢. Scald head; smooth headed. 18
- 癩瘡 *T'u¹*. The scald head. 18
- 癩瘡 *T'u¹ ch'wang¹*. The scald head, sores on the head. 18

先不來的就想改行喇，現在你信不信呢。○張²⁰價人和他女人打架，把鍋也砸了，屋裏的東西也摔了，還要點火燒房子，大家夥兒勸他，他一賭氣就走喇，如今還不知往那裏去喇。○²¹你年前借我的錢，本利一個沒打，今年又推脫不還，我就不能答應你。你不答應，要怎麼樣呢，來來來，你做甚麼，我就和你做甚麼。○這爭過繼的，有弟兄幾個呢，²²只弟兄兩個，他父親弟兄幾個呢，²³都有兒子嗎，²⁴大分兒和二分兒，都是兩個，²⁵却又有來呀，他們弟兄兩個，已經頂着三分子家業，那還有他們爭的分兒呢。

sure enough, here he is already wanting to try something else. Do you believe it now?

- 20 Chang Chiai Jên had a fight with his wife; he broke the kettle to pieces and smashed the furniture, and was about to set fire to the house; and when all present joined to exhort him, he went off in a fit of passion and no one knows where he has gone. Ans. Humph! Isn't that a silly piece of acting?
- 21 You borrowed some money of me last year and did not pay a cash either of principal or of interest, and this year you still make excuses and won't pay up. I am not going to submit to it. Ans. Submit or not, what are you going to do about it? Just come on and we'll have it out on any line you choose.
- 22 How many are there of these brothers who are contending about the privilege of being adopted? Ans. There are only two of them. Ques. How many brothers were there in their father's family. Ans. Three. Ques. Had they all sons? Ans. No, the two elder are both without sons. Ques. Well, well! when they two are heirs to the three portions what is there left to contend about?

- 18 黏 *Nien²*..... Glutinous, viscid; rice.
- 18 黏粥 *Nien³ chou¹*. Rice gruel, millet gruel, congee.
- 18 舔 *Tien²*..... To lick; to taste.
- 9 恒勁 *Hêng² chin⁴*. Persistence, perseverance, the gift of continuance.
- 18 常勁 *Ch'ang² chin⁴*..... The same. (s.)
- 18 改行 *Kai³ hang²*. To change one's trade or occupation.
- 20 價 *Chie⁴*..... A waiter; good. (w.)

- 糊來 *Hu² lai²*. To act the fool, to make much ado about nothing.
- 年前 *Nien² ch'ien²*... Before the last new year.
- 過繼 *Kwo⁴ chi⁴*. To adopt as heir the son of a brother or cousin.
- 絕戶 *Chie² hu⁴*. A man or woman who has no children neither hope of any.
- 孤 *Ku¹*... An orphan; fatherless; alone, solitary.
- 孤寡 *Ku¹ kwa³*. Widowed and childless. Alone, solitary, childless. (s.)

NOTES.

3 Custom fixes the day on which a man and his children should make a new year's call on his wife's parents, but the day differs in different localities. In some places it is the second, in some the third, and in some the fourth day of the new year. The 去 before 拜 might with equal propriety be placed immediately after 沒. In Nanking 婆婆 is used both for mother-in-law and for maternal grandmother; which is intended can only be known from the connection.

7 窩 here refers to a company or set engaged in a common business or enterprise.

10 實係 is stronger than 實在, and is chiefly used in asseverating. 兄 is often used by friends in a complimentary way when addressing or referring to each other. The idea of selling at auction has been introduced into China by foreigners.

竿子，拖掣拖掣的，必是魚上了鉤喇。○
 就是來拜望拜望，請你們老爺的安。○
 得叫人家笑話。○先生來有甚麼事呢？
 就好喇。○這兩天要來客，你可以把院子收拾收拾，省
 識認識。○叫他回娘家去，把肚子裏的悶氣發洩發洩
 你頭一次去，該在那裏多住幾天，好和教友們彼此認
 犒勞犒勞。○我忘了，囑咐囑咐他，別叫他走漏消息。○
 當。○今天過十月，應酬酬幾斤肉，打幾壺酒，大夥兒
 大小上司，都要孝敬那裏，應酬不到，那裏就不順
 喇。○鋪子裏的事情，都弄壞了，非整理整理不行喇。○

- 13 Affairs in the shop have all been thrown into disorder, a straightening up is indispensable.
- 14 Superiors of all grades must be feed; wherever you fail to give a fee, there will be trouble.
- 15 To-day is the first of the tenth month; you may get a few pounds of meat and a few pots of wine and give all hands a feast.
- 16 I forgot to charge him that he must not let the secret leak out.
- 17 The first time you go, you should prolong your visit a little so as to get acquainted with the brethren.
- 18 Let her go and visit her mother and work off her low spirits, and she will be all right.
- 19 Some guests are coming in a few days; you must clean up the yard, lest they laugh at it.
- 20 What business have you come on, sir? Ans. I have no particular business; I merely came to call on your master and pay my respects.
- 21 See that fishing-rod how it bobs up and down, it must be that a fish has taken the hook.
- 22 "With a friend in the kitchen, you can get something to eat; with a

VOCABULARY.

- 風涼 Fêng¹ liang²..... Cool, airy, refreshing.
- 搭 Ta¹. To place on; to hang on; to put up as a shed; to add up; to engage a passage.
- 就搭 Chiu⁴ ta¹. To make a thing answer, to adapt to circumstances.
- 噓 Hsu¹..... To breathe; to speak well of.
- 吹噓 Ch'ui¹ hsu¹. To say a good word for, to recommend.
- 尋思 Hsun² si¹..... To consider, to reflect.
- 甬 Yung³, Ying³. A raised path or walk in front of a house.
- 甬路 Yung³ lu⁴. A raised or paved walk in front of a house.
- 甬道 Yung³ tao⁴..... The same.
- 打掃 Ta³ sao³..... To sweep, to brush up.
- 溜打 Liu¹ ta³..... To walk for recreation.

- 拍打 P'ai¹ ta³..... To pat, to tap, to knock.
- 上司 Shang⁴ si¹..... A superior officer.
- 孝敬 Hsiao⁴ ching⁴. To honor and respect (as parents); to give a present or fee to a superior officer:—Note (14).
- 犒 K'ao⁴..... To reward workmen with a feast.
- 犒勞 K'ao⁴ lao³. A feast given to soldiers or workmen:—Note (15).
- 走漏 Tsou³ lou⁴..... To let out a secret, to tell.
- 消息 Hsiao¹ hsi³..... News, word; a secret.
- 悶氣 Mên⁴ ch'i⁴. Low spirits, dejection, dumps, blues, melancholy.
- 洩 Hsie⁴. To leak, to ooze out, to drip; to divulge, to tell a secret.
- 發洩 Fa¹ hsie⁴. To let out, to give vent to, to work off.

飯朝裏有人好作官，大人現在這樣重用你，你還不能
 提拔提拔我們嗎。○小兒鹵莽無知，若他遇見什麼爲
 難的事，望乞先生指點指點教。○逢年過節的，你怎麼不
 上墳去祭奠祭奠，買幾張紙錢燒化燒化呢。上墳添
 土，除去墳墓上的荆棘，這個無有不可。若是燒香燒紙，
 的祭祀，那都是無知妄作。○現成的館子，咱們進去喫喝
 杯茶，坐坐歇歇，我的東就是了。那裏的話呢，今
 天該是我的東喇。○老兄長了一個好鼻子，嘴巴子也
 很方正，又滿臉放光，這是主着要發大財。答：托福托福。
 若兄弟當真發了大財，却是借你老人家的錦言略。

friend at court, you can obtain an office." Seeing His Excellency now depends so much on you, can't you give us a lift?
 23 My son is heedless and ignorant; if he gets into any difficulty, I hope you will help him with your advice.
 24 When the annual festivals come, why do you not go to the graves to offer sacrifices, and also buy a few sheets of paper money to burn? Ans. Going to the graves to add some earth or to clear away the brambles is all right; but as to burning incense and paper money as a sacrifice, that is all useless nonsense.
 25 Here is a tea-house just at hand, let us go in and drink a cup of tea and sit and rest awhile. You are my guest. Ans. What are you talking about? It is my treat to-day.
 26 You have a good nose and your lower jaws are square and your whole face is bright, all of which indicates that you are to become rich. Ans. I am certainly much obliged. If I do indeed succeed in making a fortune, it will be owing to your complimentary words.

- 21 釣 *Tiao*⁴..... To fish, to fish for, to catch.
- 竿 *Kan*¹..... A rod, a pole, a staff.
- 21 抽 *Tun*⁴..... To shake, to move.
- 21 掣 *Ch'e*⁴. To obstruct; to draw (as lots); to pull; to grasp.
- 抽掣. To shake, to bob up and down, to dance.
- 2 重用 *Chung*⁴ *yung*⁴. To depend upon, to have confidence in.
- 鹵 *Lu*⁹..... Rock salt, alkali; rude; insolent.
- 莽 *Mang*³..... Thick grass; confused; heedless.
- 鹵莽 *Lu*⁹ *Mang*³. Rustic, rude; heedless, abrupt.
- 23 望乞 *Wang*⁴ *ch'i*⁸..... I beg, I hope. (w.)
- 指教 *Chi*³ *chiao*⁴. To direct, to advise, to counsel.
- 23 指點 *Chi*³ *tien*³. To point out, to direct, to guide; to advise.

- 奠 *Tien*⁴..... To enshrine; to offer a libation.²⁴
- 祭奠 *Chi*⁴ *tien*⁴..... To sacrifice to. ²⁴
- 紙錢 *Chi*³ *ch'ien*². Paper money, tinsel paper: — ²⁴ Note (24).
- 燒化 *Shao*¹ *hwa*⁴..... To burn, to consume. ²⁴
- 祀 *Si*⁴..... To sacrifice to, to worship.
- 荆 *Ching*¹..... A bramble; thorny, prickly.²⁴
- 棘 *Chi*⁴..... A thorn, a bramble; troublesome.²⁴
- 荆棘. Thorns, brambles. ²⁴
- 方正 *Fang*¹ *cheng*⁴..... Full, plump, broad.²⁶
- 托福 *T'ou*¹ *fu*². I'm much obliged, you're very kind.
- 錦 *Chin*³. Embroidered; elegant, flowery, complimentary.
- 錦言 *Chin*³ *yen*². Flowery language; complimentary words. ²⁶

第一百五十五課

LESSON CXV.

你¹怎麼忽然改了主意呢？
防的把²我嚇了一跳。他³忽然變⁴了脾氣，好起賭博來喇。我⁴已經⁵走了二里路，忽拉⁶巴⁷想⁸起把傘⁹忘記了。他⁵岳父⁶的名⁷字，我⁸還⁹然¹⁰間想不起來。○新⁶衣⁷裳是偶⁸然⁹看見¹⁰他一點也不認得。○勸⁸戒⁹人¹⁰的話，不可陡然就說。○請⁹問¹⁰老¹¹兄¹²，今日爲甚麼突然要起行。○咱¹⁰們¹¹偶¹²然¹³要起行。

- 1 How is it that you have suddenly changed your mind?
- 2 Unexpectedly he gave me a fright.
- 3 He suddenly changed his bent and developed a passion for gambling.
- 4 I had already gone two or three li when it suddenly occurred to me that I had forgotten my umbrella.
- 5 His father-in-law's name I cannot recall on the spur of the moment.
- 6 New clothes are only to be worn on special occasions.
- 7 Seeing him unexpectedly, I did not recognize him at all.
- 8 In exhorting any one, it is not best to begin too abruptly.
- 9 Please tell me, my good brother, why you suddenly want to start to-day.
- 10 Should we suddenly meet with some

NOTES.

- 1 Said to a passer by, by one who is resting in the shade at the roadside.
- 5 吹噓吹噓, *blow a little for me*; i.e., *recommend me*.
- 8 掬路 properly *yung³ lu⁴*, but in actual use frequently spoken *ying³ lu⁴*. It is also written 角 by some, and by others 映.
- 11 我家老爺, *the honored head of our family*,—addressed by the gentleman's servant to the servant of the man upon whom his master has come to call.
- 14 All inferior officers are expected to send in a retaining fee to their superiors at the new year, as well as on certain other special occasions. If the fee is not sent in, the inferior will presently find his affairs embarrassed with difficulties. The giving of this fee is facetiously called 孝敬, *showing respect*, or 應酬, *making a return*.
- 15 The first day of the tenth month is a feast-day in honor of 城隍, the god of the city moat. On this and similar feast-days, custom requires that employers should give their workmen a half-holiday and a feast. This is technically called 犒勞, *feasting the weary*.

- 17 多住幾天, *remain a few days longer*; i. e., *prolong your visit a little*, for the purpose referred to.
- 18 The "belly" is commonly regarded by the Chinese as the seat both of the intellect and the affections.
- 23 The language and style of a letter.
- 24 逢年過節的 requires 時候 understood to complete the construction. Paper money is burnt for the use of the dead. In the case of ancestors it is supposed to express affectionate remembrance, as well as to conciliate them and secure their good offices on behalf of their descendants; in the case of other gods it is a bribe to appease their anger and secure their protection. It consists of tinsel paper, that is, paper having pasted on it a very thin leaf of tin to represent silver, or of brass to represent gold. It is folded and pasted in the shape of ingots of silver and gold. The poor also use yellow paper with holes punched in it to represent copper cash. 無知妄作 is book style.
- 25 我的東, *I am host, it's my treat*. 東 is put for 東家. A more colloquial form, at least in the North, is 我的請兒.

LESSON CXV.

PHRASES INDICATING SUDDENNESS.

The superabundance of words for expressing this idea shows that the Chinese language is in some respects richer than the English. A number of the following phrases are more or less local, and sundry of them are practically synonymous, differing only in the connexion in which they are used.

忽然 Suddenly, unexpectedly, all at once. This is the most common and universally used word for expressing the idea of suddenness.

- 猛然 or 猛然間 Suddenly, unexpectedly, all at once; abruptly. The 間 is added or not as the rhythm suggests. It may also be added to any of the following terms which end in 然.
- 遽然 Suddenly, abruptly, on the spur of the moment.
- 陡然 Suddenly, abruptly, all at once.
- 突然 Suddenly, unexpectedly, abruptly.

1 May 1920
lu jan

把 人 實 見 一 心 實 問 丁 怕 然 爾
 我 的 在 在 人 篇 驚 在 的 他 有 了
 嚇 正 快 家 一 不 急 的 猝 了 不
 了 當 一 賺 馬 肯 在 的 然 然 測
 一 熱 轉 錢 馬 告 急 死 來 來 的
 跳 鬧 眼 享 纜 訴 一 了 到 到 事
 ○ 把 中 的 福 待 要 免 得 就 預
 心 間 工 一 要 跑 韓 地 常 常 備
 已 在 夫 時 叫 先 是 常 不 及
 經 我 就 間 我 生 水 想 得 了
 放 身 過 間 抽 先 是 想 得 了
 肆 旁 去 就 就 倫 先 是 想 得 了
 慣 打 冷 冷 的 子 章 真 是 突 然
 了 冷 打 孤 的 一 把 好 手 突 然
 遽 驚 驚 丁 我 火 輪 車 跑 的 看
 然 放 了 三 聲 大 砲 大 的 看
 要 收 回 來 的 看 是 必 的 必

- misfortune, he will be able to help us.
- 11 We ought to prepare in good season lest he should come suddenly and we not be able to get ready in time.
 - 12 When a very near relative suddenly dies, one cannot help constantly thinking of him and feeling sad.
 - 13 That was a heavy rain yesterday; in a twinkling the earth was everywhere covered with water.
 - 14 If we ask him abruptly, his suspicions will certainly be excited and he will tell us nothing.
 - 15 Mr. Han is certainly skilled in writing essays, he does one up in no time.
 - 16 The horse was just about to run, when I suddenly seized him and held him fast.
 - 17 When he saw men making money and enjoying it, his cupidity was at once excited.
 - 18 The cars run at a tremendous speed; they pass by in the twinkling of an eye.
 - 19 I went to-day to see the reception of His Excellency, and just in the midst of the excitement I was suddenly startled by the firing off of three great guns at my side.
 - 20 Having habitually allowed the mind to wander unrestrained, it is a very difficult thing to bring it suddenly under discipline.

tshut 猝然 Suddenly, abruptly, quickly.
shun'ng' 86 爽然 Promptly, in a trice, in no time. (c.)
tso'ou' 驟然 Suddenly, in a flash, with a start.
shu' 倏然 Instantly, instantaneously, all at once.
ou' 偶然 Suddenly, accidentally, without notice.
ou' 3' en' 偶爾 The same as 偶然, but more bookish, at least in most places.
lang' k'ing' 冷孤丁 All at once, suddenly, unexpectedly, accidentally.
 冷打驚 The same. (c.)
 打冷驚 The same. (c. & s.) *ta lang' ching'*
 冷不防 Unexpectedly, unawares.
 冷地裡 The same. (s.)
 冒然通 The same. *mao' 4' 4'*
 冷然間 Suddenly, all at once.
 抽冷子 Suddenly, unexpectedly, unawares.
 A Peking term. *ch'ou' lang' tzu'*
 偷冷的 The same. A Southern term.
t'ou' lang' t'

la' 忽拉巴 All of a sudden, without warning.
 A Shantung term. *ta pu ch'iao'*
 打不瞧 Before one is aware, unawares.
 A Shantung term.
 一時間 In a moment, at once, at present.
 一展眼 In the opening of an eye, } in the *i' chan' yan'*
 一轉眼 In the turn of an eye, } twinkling of *chuan'*
 一眨眼 In the wink of an eye, } an eye. *cha'*
 猛過地裡 Unexpectedly, unawares, suddenly. A Southern term. *men'g'*
 一霎時 In a twinkling, in a moment. *i' sha' shik'*
 霎時間 The same.
 登時 or 登時間 In a moment, in a twinkling, in no time.
 一旦 Some morning; suddenly, in a moment, as soon as. A book term. *tan'*
 頃刻 or 頃刻間 In a moment, in a twinkling. A book term.
ching' (324)

彷彿一條箭射到天上去了。
 齊跳在海裏，那氣球就驟然騰空。
 將氣球落下，既落到海面，二人一
 海中有一隻輪船，他們就趕緊的
 蕩，不覺飄到大海之上，可巧看見
 國有兩個人，坐輕氣球在天空飄
 然一點動靜也沒有。
 就像喜鵲窩裏戳了一棍似的，一
 興鬧，叫先生冷冷地進去，喝了一
 呀。○他們正在學房山裏怪叫的

30 They were in the schoolroom just in the full tide of their hilarity, whooping and yelling like demons, when the teacher, coming in unexpectedly, gave one shout: it was like striking a nest of young magpies with a stick; instantly there was not a sound to be heard.

31 Once in France two men ascended in a balloon, and while sailing in the air, were insensibly carried out to sea. Fortunately they caught sight of a steamship and, with all haste, caused the balloon to descend. When they touched the surface of the water, the two men jumped simultaneously into the sea, whereupon the balloon suddenly darted up, like an arrow shot skyward.

- 15 The peculiar force of 就是 cannot be matched in English.
- 17 眼熱起來, to look with longing eyes, to wish for.
- 19 Strictly speaking 的, as here used, should limit the seeing to the persons who went out to meet his excellency. This, however, is not the real meaning. A word like 光景 must be supplied after 的 in order to complete the construction. The proper sense is given without 的.
- 21 鐵公子. The hero of the Fortunate Union.
- 22 This sentence might also be rendered, *While her husband was alive, he was strongly attached to her, etc.* The sentence was probably made by a foreigner. If a Chinese had made it he would have said, either 二人 or 兩口, instead of 和他.
- 24 仰臥, to fall or lie on the back, and 蹬, to spread or sprawl the feet. The Peking phrase 仰搬脚 is not so readily analysed. Nanking rejects both phrases, and says 仰巴四叉.

- 27 打羣架, to fight in a flock; that is, to engage in a free fight or general row. 出了人命, a man's life comes out; i.e., some one is killed and his life is to be accounted for to the law.
- 28 一撇 is used in the North and means to twist the lips to one side, 一瘡 is used in the South and means to draw up or pucker the lips, both being expressive of contempt.
- 29 The preparation, to be made, is to lift the dying man off the kang and dress him in his burial clothes. The 理 at the end drops out of the translation.
- 30 山嚷怪叫, hills resounding and hobgoblins howling used as a figure to describe the uproarious hilarity of school boys. 興 changes its usual tone, and also requires emphasis to bring out its force.
- 31 輕氣球, a hydrogen globe, that is, a balloon. 可巧, fitting the emergency. To the meanings of 可 (Lea. 3) should have been added, to fit, to suit. In Peking 法 in 法國 is read fa⁴.

LESSON CXVI.
 PHRASES INDICATING CERTAINTY.

7 May 20
 定 Certainly, positively. 定 forms a number of combinations, as below, and is the most important word used for the expression of certainty.
 一定 Certainly, inevitably; determined, invariable, for certain.
 定然 Certainly, positively, surely.
 必定 Necessarily, certainly.
 必定 Certainly, positively, inevitably; very certain; it must be.
 必然 The same.

准 Certainly, surely.
 一準 Certainly, positively, unquestionably.
 定準 Positively, inevitably, assuredly.
 着準 Assuredly, unquestionably, unmis- takeably. (c.)
 準成 Certainly, surely, inevitably. (c. & n.)
 準行 The same. (s.)
 定準不移 Undoubtedly, unquestionably, absolutely certain. y

LESSON CXVI.

是王錦芳弄使的手手眼。○看你這個樣兒，必然是
 候，定然要去買個時辰表。○別人不能，這一準
 課的轉制人，人家着準不能受。○等我有錢的時
 六不讓你。○我看準了，必定是他偷的。○像這樣
 十是定而不可移的。○你不賠我一個新的，我定
 百肯去。○他一定要走，我留不住他。○行好得好，不
 一住下。○若是我知道是為這件事情請我，我斷不
 第定不是好人。○留他自己在那裏，必然要住不
 害。○你若急賣，準要賠本。○凡哄騙人的，必
 先生明天一定走嗎。○天下事，有大利必有

- 1 Will you certainly go to-morrow, sir?
- 2 In everything, that which affords large profits necessarily involves [the risk of] great loss. [lose money.]
- 3 If you urge a sale, you will certainly
- 4 Whoever deceives another is certainly not a good man.
- 5 If you leave him there by himself, he will certainly not stay.
- 6 If I had known that it was on account of this business that he invited me, I should assuredly not have gone.
- 7 He is determined to go, I cannot detain him.
- 8 That he who does right fares well, is an invariable law.
- 9 I will positively not let you off unless you get me a new one.
- 10 I am quite satisfied that he must have stolen it. [sort of coercion.]
- 11 He will assuredly not submit to this
- 12 When I get the money, I will certainly go and buy me a watch.
- 13 This is unquestionably a piece of Wang Chin Fang's wirepulling; no one else could do it.
- 14 Judging from your condition, it must be you have caught cold.

定而不可移 Fixed and unalterable, morally certain, invariable.

一定不移 The same.

堅定不移 Positively, incontestibly, assuredly, unmistakeably.

堅定着一 The same. (c.) *chien'* 123

斷斷 Assuredly, positively. *tsuan'* 77

斷斷 The same. Repeated for emphasis.

斷斷乎 Certainly, positively, undoubtedly, assuredly, absolutely.

斷然 The same.

確乎 Assuredly, undoubtedly.

ch'ueh' 296

ch'ueh' 296

確乎不移 Indisputably, assuredly, without the least doubt.

鑿鑿可據 Demonstrably, undoubtedly, indisputably. Bookish.

着準可據 The same. Colloquial. (c.)

絕 Absolutely, utterly. *chia'*

絕然 The same.

決 Positively, unequivocally. *chia'* 276

決然 The same.

萬 or 萬萬 Utterly, absolutely, positively, — always used with a negative.

VOCABULARY.

移 *I*². To transplant; to move, to shift, to migrate; to graft.

鑿 *Tsoa'*². A chisel; to chisel out, to dig; to brand; to verify; secure, reliable.

賒本 *Shé'*² *pén'*³. To lose on an investment. (c.)

3

轉 *Hsia'*². To govern, to rule; to regulate. 11

轉制 *Hsia'*² *chí'*⁴. To rule over, to coerce, to constrain, to keep under.

手眼 *Shou'*³ *yen'*³. Device, manoeuvre, trick, bribe, corruption; wire pulling. 13

凍着了。○論到他的口才，確乎不在衆人以下。○雖有千萬好話，他絕不聽。○我若不看他老了，斷乎不能白饒了他。○若是中國肯修鐵路，定然一年富似一年。○這是的確的事情，斷然沒有差錯。○但凡是個男子漢，都當有一定的志向。○事情這麼一來，定準難以了結。○現在我左右兩難，沒有一準的主意。○他若一點私弊沒有，斷不肯私自逃走。○這是定不移的章程，斷乎不能更改。○人死了以後，堅定不移，沒有輪迴生。○他們兩個私通，這是確乎不移的事情。○然若不亂說，那林內是個清雅的去處，決然沒有妖精。○我已仔細訪問了，一定不可移。

- 15 As to fluency, he is certainly not inferior to others.
- 16 Although all the arts of persuasion [have been exhausted], he utterly refuses to listen.
- 17 If I had not regarded his age, I should certainly not have let him off scot-free.
- 18 If China were willing to build railroads, it is very certain that she would grow richer year by year.
- 19 This is an undoubted fact; there is absolutely no mistake about it.
- 20 Every true man ought to have some decision of character.
- 21 Under these circumstances, the business will unquestionably be difficult to settle.
- 22 Just now I am in a great dilemma and cannot come to any settled conclusion.
- 23 If he had been guilty of no corruption at all, you may be sure he would not have secretly fled.
- 24 This is the invariable rule which absolutely cannot be changed.
- 25 There is positively no transmigration after death.
- 26 That they two have had some secret intercourse is an indisputable fact.
- 27 Do not talk at random. That grove is a quiet place where there are positively no ghosts.
- 28 I have already made careful inquiry;

- 18 鐵路 *T'ie³ lu⁴*..... A railroad.
- 20 但凡 *Tan⁴ fan²*. Whoever, whatever; whenever; if at all, if in any case, if indeed:—Les. 157.
- 21 私弊 *Si¹ pi⁴*. Bribery, corruption; fraud, embezzlement.
- 23 私自 *Si¹ tsī⁴*. Privately, secretly, clandestinely, surreptitiously.
- 25 逃走 *T'ao² tsou²*. To flee, to run away, to abscond.
- 26 脫生 *T'oa¹ sheng¹*. To transmigrate; to be born into the world.
- 27 迴 *Hui²*. To come round to the starting point, to revolve.
- 28 輪迴 *Lun² hui²*. Transmigration, the doctrine of metempsychosis.

- 私通 *Si¹ tung¹*. Clandestine communication, secret or illicit intercourse.
- 清雅 *Ch'ing¹ ya²*. Quiet, tranquil, still, retired.
- 妖精 *Yao¹ ching¹*. A spectre, a goblin, an elf, a satyr.
- 訪問 *Fang³ wen⁴*..... To inquire, to look for.
- 罪惡 *Tsui⁴ oa⁴*..... Wickedness, sin, evil deeds.
- 橫 *Heng⁴*. Perverse, mulish; unreasonable, out- rageous; contrary, similar. See *heng⁴*.
- 流淚 *Liu² lei⁴*..... To shed tears, to weep.
- 失和 *Shī¹ hē²*. To disagree, to fall out; to declare war.
- 漱 *Shu⁴*..... To rinse, to wash.
- 粗蠢 *Ts'u¹ ch'un²*..... Rustic, boorish; stupid.
- 粗笨 *Ts'u¹ pen⁴*..... The same.

我³³個人。若是當堂說這樣的話，準行成是要挨嘴巴子。○楊本義那
 我與你說明了罷。寺內決不進去了，茶是決不吃了，知縣
 若是我當堂說這樣的話，準行成是要挨嘴巴子。○楊本義那
 父親每頓飯後，必要漱漱口，刷刷牙，這是一定之規。○我的
 國打仗，是確乎不移的事，但不知是為甚麼失和。○現在這兩
 那樣流淚，和他所賭的咒，鑿鑿可據是屈他。○現在這兩
 給他頓飯吃，倒可以，叫我保他做什麼，萬也不能。○看他的
 人，若說人能成神，斷斷沒有這個理。○等他要飯的時候，
 不了。○我看他一臉橫肉，定然不是好人。○神是神，人是
 他，是個有德行的人。○這罪惡的報應，一定要受，斷乎免

he is unquestionably a good man.
 29 This retribution for sin is something that will inevitably come, and there is positively no escape.
 30 I noticed that his face had a sinister expression; he is certainly not a good man.
 31 Gods are gods and men are men. To say that a man may become a god is assuredly contrary to reason.
 32 When he comes to want I will give him a meal, but recommend him for a place, I positively will not.
 33 Judging from his weeping and his protestations, he is undoubtedly wronged.
 34 That these two kingdoms are now at war is an indisputable fact, but how the peace was broken I do not know.
 35 It is my father's invariable custom to rinse his mouth and brush his teeth after each meal.
 36 If you use such language as this in the presence of the magistrate, you will certainly get a beating on the face.
 37 That man Yang Pên I is by nature excessively boorish; it is vain to expect to give him any polish.
 38 I now tell you plainly, the temple I positively will not enter, the tea I positively will not drink, the magistrate I positively will not see.

- 36 文雅 Wên² ya². Cultivated, polished, refined, literary.
- 38 雅道 Ya³ tao⁴. Gentlemanly, polished, refined. (c.)
- 38 儒雅 Ju² ya³. Literary, refined, polished, cultured.
- 38 寺 Si⁴. A council chamber; a Buddhist temple or monastery; a mosque.
- 39 知縣 Chi¹ hsien⁴. A hsien magistrate.

- 37 件 Wu². An opponent; to inspect.
- 37 件作 Wu³ tso⁴. A surgical expert, a coroner:— Note (39).
- 天靈蓋 T'ien¹ ling² kai⁴. The forehead. 37
- 肘 Chou³. The elbow, the elbow-joint. 37
- 拐肘 Kwai³ chou². The elbow. 37
- 踝 Hwai³. The ankle bone or joint. 37
- 雨星 Yu³ hsing¹. A rain drop. 40

NOTES.

2 害 does not here mean certain evil or loss, but rather the risk of it. Compare the common saying, "Nothing ventured, nothing won."

7 This sentence might also mean, *If he is determined to go, I cannot detain him.*

11 The 人家 is not adequately translated by *he*. It designates the person referred to in a way that English will not express.

20 Lit., *Whoever is a male Chinaman ought to have a fixed purpose.* A woman is not supposed to have a mind of her own.

22 左右兩難, *Left and right both (two) difficult, that is, a difficulty on either hand, in a strait betwixt two, in a dilemma.*

30 一臉橫肉 *seems to use 橫 in its ordinary literal sense, after the style of our term "cross grained;" but on the*

是決不見了。○³⁹ 天靈蓋上，有鐵傷一處，右
 拐肘⁴⁰ 上有木傷一處，左踝
 子骨⁴⁰ 上有木傷兩處，他怎
 麼知道一定是木傷是鐵
 傷呢。○⁴⁰ 六月二十四是關
 老爺磨⁴⁰ 刀的日子，多少必
 下點雨。答：那却不準成啊。
 前年天旱，一個六月沒下
 一個雨星兒，你忘記了嗎。

39 The coroner reports that there is a wound on the forehead made by an iron instrument, on the right elbow a wound made by a wooden instrument, and two wounds on the left ankle made by a wooden instrument. How does he know for certain that a wound has been made by an iron or by a wooden instrument.

40 The twenty-fourth of the sixth month is the day the God of War whets his sword; it is certain to rain at least a little. Ans. That is not certain. Year before last during the drought, it did not rain a single drop during the whole sixth month. Don't you remember?

contrary it changes its tone and takes its derived sense.
 31 This is a Christian sentiment. All Chinese gods are supposed to be deified men.
 32 頓飯吃. An 一 is elided before 頓.
 35 一定之規, a fixed or invariable rule,—a book phrase in common use.
 36 當堂, In the presence of the court, that is, of the magistrate.

39 件作 is an attaché of the yamèn, though not counted a 衙役. His special business is to go with the magistrate when investigating a case of murder or assault, and act as an expert in determining the character and extent of the wounds.
 40 雨星, a rain star, that is, a rain drop, so called from the sparkling of drops of rain.

LESSON CXVII.
 SPECIFIC TIME.

The more common terms for the designation of time have already been given in Lesson 16. In this and the three following lessons, the various terms for expressing time are more fully set forth. The Chinese affords a large variety of such terms.

昨兒個 Yesterday,
 今兒個 To-day,
 明兒個 To-morrow,
 後兒個 Day after to-morrow,

These terms are local, being largely confined to the city of Peking.

夜來 Yesterday. Local in Shantung. In some places in the South, 夜來 means, last night.

大前日 or 大前天 The day preceding day before yesterday.

老前日 or 老前天 The same. Used in some parts of the South.

大後日 or 大後天 The day following day after to-morrow.

老後日 or 老後天 The same. (s.)

本月 This month, the present month.

本年 This year, the present year, that same year.

本 is rarely, if ever, applied to 日 or 天.

上月 Last month.
 下月 Next month.
 上年 Last year.
 下年 Next year.
 上禮拜 Last week.
 下禮拜 Next week.
 上 and 下 are not applied to 日 or 天, though we have 上半天 and 下半天.
 大上禮拜 Week before last.
 上上禮拜 The same.
 大下禮拜 Week after next.
 下下禮拜 The same.
 今朝 This morning; to-day. *chao*
 今早 This morning—Other terms for morning, as well as for noon, evening, and night, have already occurred in previous lessons.
 今年 This year. 今 is not applied to 月, nor to 禮拜; instead of it, 這個 is used.

13 May 14 2.30

第一百七十七課

LESSON CXVII.

請先生把我上月的工錢給我。○大後天是安息日，你別忘記喇。○他不是前日來的嗎？○不是，是老大前日來的。○你今年僱了幾個夥計，答僱了四個。○上禮拜四，是上月二十八。○下禮拜三，我二哥哥娶成家。○你去年進京，在那裏住着，答在客店裏。○我明天兒個走，到下月二十六就回來了。○他昨天兒個還好好兒的，今天兒個就病了嗎？○我哥哥僱給人家拉絙去喇，總得到下禮拜纔能回來。○上年所念的書，今年忘記了一多半。○我後天先來拜壽，老大後天再來討饒。○你若常常勤作活，到下半年我要加你的工錢。○今年下雨太多，將來莊稼必然不收成。○後天兒個他們老翁下葬，我得幫幫。

- 1 Will you please, sir, give me my last month's wages?
- 2 Two days after to-morrow is the Sabbath. Do not forget.
- 3 Did he not come day before yesterday? Ans. No. He came the day before that.
- 4 How many hands did you hire this year? Ans. I hired four.
- 5 Thursday of last week was the twenty-eighth of last month.
- 6 Wednesday of next week, my second brother is to be married.
- 7 When you went to the capital last year, where did you lodge? Ans. At an inn.
- 8 I am going to-morrow, and will return by the twenty-fifth or twenty-sixth of next month.
- 9 Is he sick to-day? Why, yesterday he was quite well.
- 10 My elder brother has gone to track for a man who hired him, and cannot return before next week.
- 11 I have this year forgotten the greater part of the books I studied last year.
- 12 Day after to-morrow I am coming to make a birthday call, and the next day I am coming to the feast.
- 13 If you continue diligent in your work, next year I will increase your wages.
- 14 There has been too much rain this year, the crops will certainly be poor.
- 15 Day after to-morrow the patriarch of the family is to be buried. I must go and help them.

去年 or 舊年 Last year.
 前年 Year before last.
 明年 Next year. 明 is never applied to 月.
 過明年 Next year, after the new year.
 來年 Next year, the coming year.
 轉年 Next year, the following year.

後年 Year after next.
 大前年 The year preceding year before last.
 現前年 The same. (s.)
 大後年 The year following year after next.
 老後年 The same. (s.)

VOCABULARY.

工錢 Kung¹ ch'ien²..... Wages.
 絙 Ch'ien⁴..... A tow-rope, a tracking line.
 拉絙 La¹ ch'ien⁴. To track; to lobby for; to act the drummer.

拜壽 Pai⁴ shou⁴. To make a birthday call:—
 Note (12).
 討饒 T'ao³ jiao²..... To partake of a feast.
 翁 Weng¹..... Venerable; an old man.

年再這個樣兒，我定然要不依他。○知府已經卸事，新官還
 食是必貴的。○他去年佔我的地，今年又佔我的地，若是過
 會股子。○登州是仗着吃關東糧，關東既然歉收，明年的糧
 本。○登州是仗着吃關東糧，關東既然歉收，明年的糧
 共是十一天。○下月初五，又到了會期喇，又得拿四吊錢的
 二十四日起身。○他是上上禮拜六來的，到這個禮拜二，一
 再上一年學，到後年下來做買賣。○我們已經定規，於本月
 錢贖到轉年來春分的時候再贖罷。○依我的意思，叫他明年
 月。○你昨夜不是這麼說的嗎？答是這麼說的。○現在沒有
 趕考，我們兩個走了一路。○舊年是閏七月，大前年是閏三
 他們去。○今朝有酒今朝醉，明日愁來明日當。○前年上省

- 16 While we have wine, let us drink our fill; the troubles of to-morrow let to-morrow bear.
- 17 Year before last when we went to the provincial capital to the examinations, we traveled in company.
- 18 Last year there was an intercalary seventh month, and three years ago, an intercalary third month.
- 19 Is not this what you said yesterday? Ans. It is.
- 20 I have no money to redeem it at present. I will redeem it in the spring of next year.
- 21 According to my idea, let him still go to school next year, and the year after leave school and go into business.
- 22 We have already decided to start on the twenty-fourth of this month.
- 23 He came week before last on Saturday. By Tuesday of this week it will be eleven days in all.
- 24 The fifth of next month the meeting of the company comes round again, and I must make another payment of four thousand cash.
- 25 Tungchow depends on Kwantung for grain. Since the crops in Kwantung are short, grain will certainly be dear next year.
- 26 Last year he encroached on my land, and again this year he encroached on it. If he does the same thing next year, I am determined to resist him.
- 27 The prefect has vacated his office, but the new incumbent has not yet arrived.

- 10 老翁 *Lao⁸ wêng¹*. An old gentleman, a patriarch, a graybeard.
- 10 葬 *Tsang⁴*. To inter, to bury.
- 10 下葬 *Hsia⁴ tsang⁴*. To inter, to consign to the grave.
- 25 春分 *Ch'un¹ fên¹*. The vernal equinox.
- 25 登州 *Têng¹ chou¹*. A Fu city in Shantung fifty-five miles west of Chefoo.
- 25 歉 *Ch'ien⁴, chien⁴*. Scanty, deficient, scarce:—Note (25).
- 25 歉收 *Ch'ien⁴ shou¹*. A scant harvest, short crops, scarcity.
- 27 卸事 *Hsie⁴ shi⁴*. To vacate an office, to relinquish a trust.
- 27 文書 *Wên² shu¹*. A dispatch; an official document; a deed.

- 2 二府 *Er⁴ fu²*. A sub-prefect.
- 2 朦朦亮 *Mêng² mêng² liang⁴*. Break of day, morning twilight.
- 30 走水 *Tsou³ shui³*. To take fire, to have a conflagration:—Note (29).
- 30 宴 *Yen⁴*. A banquet; rest, repose.
- 30 點心 *Tien⁸ hsin¹*. Cakes, candies and nuts, delicacies, dessert.
- 31 丙 *Ping³*. The third of the ten stems or 天干字, bright.
- 寅 *Yin²*. The third of the twelve branches or 地支字, 3 to 5 A.M.
- 乙 *I⁴*. The second of the ten stems; curved; a pedantic form of 一.
- 丑 *Ch'ou⁸*. The second of the twelve branches; 1 to 3 A.M.

沒有來到，昨兒個來了文書，叫二府代任。○幸虧
 去年冬裏，昨兒個下了三四場大雪，所以麥子雖然都種
 晚了，今年還能收成。○聽說上禮拜二，朦朦亮的
 時候，費縣當舖走了水，把房子一總都燒了。○王
 宴平現在熬到分兒喇，今早上我上他家裏去，正
 碰見他的兩個孫子，一個端着茶，一個端着點心，
 送給他吃。○我今年二十九歲，是甲子年丙寅月
 乙丑日己卯時生的。○老大前日到老大後日，是七天
 的工夫，現大前年到老大後年，是七年的工夫，但是
 上禮拜到，下下禮拜，却只有五個禮拜的工夫。

Yesterday a dispatch came authorizing the sub-prefect to act as his substitute.
 28 Fortunately last winter there fell three or four heavy snows, so that, although the wheat was all sown late, there may still be a full crop this year.
 29 I hear it said that on Tuesday of last week, just at the break of day, the Fei Hsien pawn-shop took fire and the whole establishment was burned up.
 30 Wang Yen P'ing has reached the goal of life. When I went to his house this morning, I met his two grandsons, one carrying a cup of tea, and the other some delicacies for him.
 31 This year I am twenty-nine years old, having been born in the year chia tsi, in the month ping yin, on the day i ch'ou and the hour chi mao.
 32 From the day previous to day before yesterday, to the day subsequent to day after to-morrow, includes a space of seven days; from the year previous to year before last, until the year subsequent to year after next, is a space of seven years; but from week before last until week after next is only five weeks.

NOTES.

10 僱給人家, *hired himself to some one.*
 12 拜壽, *worship age*,—to pay respects on the occasion of a birthday. It is only practiced in the case of persons of some age and distinction. Sometimes it is carried to the length of a prostration, but more generally it is simply a bow.
 16 Notice how 朝 is used instead of 日 to avoid repetition, and then how 朝 and 日 are both repeated to add force and beauty to the saying.
 24 會期, *the appointed time for the meeting of the company.* The Chinese are much given to forming small joint stock companies of a peculiar kind. Some man who wants to raise a sum of money, secures the consent of a number of friends to enter the company, and fixes the amount of the shares. He then makes a feast for the shareholders and each man pays over to him one share, which is always such an aliquot part of the whole stock as there are members in the company. At the end of a month or of two months, as the case may be, another meeting is held (but no feast given) and again each member pays in a share to the man who offers to accept the largest discount in order to get the money. The party who gets the money is said to 把 the 會. The same thing is done at each subsequent meeting until the number of meetings equals the number of members, when the company expires. The discounts apply only to those who have not yet used the money, those who have already done so always paying a full share.
 25 歡 has the same meaning whether aspirated or not, but the two are used in different connections,—thus 歡收 is aspirated, but 歡年 is unaspirated.

26 There being no hedges or fences in China it is no uncommon thing for one man in ploughing to encroach on the land of another, and such encroachments often give rise to quarrels and lawsuits.
 29 走了水, *the water left*; i.e., a fire broke out. This phrase sounds like slang, but is not so regarded by the Chinese. It is explained by saying that the reason the fire exceeded its bounds was because water was absent.
 30 熬到分兒, *to endure to the full*, that is, to bear the toils and responsibilities of life until the coveted end of life is attained, which, in the average Chinaman's eye, consists in having an easy competence with children and grandchildren to wait on him. The Southern form 苦出來 has practically the same meaning. 苦 is used as a verb.
 31 The Chinese reckon years in cycles of sixty, the years of the cycle being indicated by the combination of the ten stems, or 天干字, viz., 甲乙丙丁戊己庚辛壬癸, with the twelve branches, or 地支字, viz., 子, 丑, 寅, 卯, 辰, 巳, 午, 未, 申, 酉, 戌, 亥. The branches are applied to the stems six times in order, (not twelve times as would have seemed natural). See Williams' Dictionary, page 355. Months, days and hours are designated by the same sixty combinations taken in the same order.
 The months begin with 丙寅 for the first month of the first year (甲子) of each cycle, and count in order to the end of five years, which exhausts the sixty combinations. The next five years begins with 己巳 for the first month, and repeats the cycle in the same order, and so on. Thus in

第一八十八課

LESSON CXVIII.

子這糧天這是多聽來抱人你
 一食實會是多說說說說說說
 陣的在子年年初初初初初初
 疼的行短有事年的事情萬萬萬
 的市一轉沒事情現現現現現現
 的已轉有沒事情現現現現現現
 利經眼沒事情現現現現現現
 害落了工夫不不必題題題題
 ○了。○了。○了。○了。○了。
 目¹²○¹¹我的¹⁰目⁹下⁸
 說我的目下⁷時候我⁶那⁵
 話肚下⁴○³起²時¹

- 1 How is it that you have not come until this time?
- 2 At the present day, the generous impulses of humanity are greatly degenerated.
- 3 That old hen is just now sitting.
- 4 There is something else which I cannot at this moment recall.
- 5 This style is not in fashion at present.
- 6 I hear that Ch'u Ch'eng Wan has now become very wealthy.
- 7 That is a matter of many years ago; there is no occasion for mentioning it now.
- 8 I am engaged at present, and have no leisure.
- 9 The days are very short at present, it is dark in a twinkling.
- 10 Just now the price of grain has fallen.
- 11 My belly aches severely just now

the case of all years designated by 甲 or 巳, the first month is 丙寅, the second 丁卯, etc; in the case of all years designated 乙 or 庚, the first month is 戊寅, the second 己卯, etc. Intercalary months are not counted, but half of the month is attached to the previous and half to the succeeding month. The days are not derived from the months, but are taken from official lists in a printed almanac or book. They profess to have begun

with 甲子, when the cycle was introduced in the 61st year of Hwang Ti, and to have repeated the cycle regularly until the present time.

The hours are derived from the days in the same way as the months are derived from the years, beginning, however, with 甲子, for the midnight hour of the first day of the cycle, and repeating every five days. The person in question was born in 1864 on the twenty-third of the first month between 5 and 7 o'clock A.M.

LESSON CXVIII.

PRESENT TIME—GENERAL.

19 May 1920

- 今 Now, in present circumstances,—when used alone it is generally followed by 有 and serves to introduce a subject or sentence.
- 現今 Now, at present, at the present time, now-a-days,—not appreciably different from 現在.
- 現時 At present, at the present time, just now.
- 現下 The same. (Shantung.)
- 時下 At present, just now.
- 目下 At this moment, at present, just now, now, just at this present time.
- 刻下 At this moment, at the present time, just now.
- 當下 At this moment, just now, now.
- 脚下 At present, now; in the presence of.
- 眼時下 At present, just now, at this present time.
- 眼時間 The same.

- 此刻 At this moment, at present.
- 目今 At this present time, at present, just now. A book term.
- 眼前 At present, just now.
- 馬上 Just now, at this present moment. (Pekingese.) See Les. 162.
- 這借 At present, at this time, just now.
- 這借子 The same. (s.)
- 這借個 The same. (c.)
- 這這早晚 The same. (N.)
- 這這會兒 At present, at this time, now.
- 這這一陣 At this moment, just now. chen^u n
- 這這時候 At this time, at the present time, now.
- 這這當兒 At this time, at this juncture, now. (N. & C)
- 這這當口 The same. (s.)

chian's

他的四十口人。○這個當兒，他們已經睡喇。○現今的人認真辦事，少。○我打算去，馬上沒有工夫。○直收到這會兒，還沒收拾。○我眼時下，上天無路，入地無門。○此刻沒有別的病，就是胸膈中慙氣。○他前幾年不肯用工念書，現時知道錯了。○先生刻下在家裏作甚麼，在家裏閒着，沒有事情。○你的父母現在還康健哪？答：他們從前受過累，所以現在不什麼康健了。○太太爲自己不能生育，目下情願叫慕老爺買個小婆子。○他早走喇，這個時候大約能走二十里路。○你們姪兒若不丟，現今也有十幾歲了。○馬上我家裏的事太多，要一時之閒空也沒有。○刻下的醫生，好的雖有，但是一百裏也不過挑出一個來。○脚目下閃

- 12 At this present time he has a family of forty.
- 13 By this time they are already asleep.
- 14 There are few men now-a-days who are truly faithful.
- 15 I was planning to go, but have not time at present.
- 16 Have you been arranging things all this time and are they not yet in order?
- 17 I am just now in an inextricable dilemma.
- 18 I have no other ailment at present save a feeling of oppression in my breast.
- 19 During the previous years he was unwilling to study. He now sees his mistake.
- 20 What are you just now doing at home? Ans. I am at home idle; having no employment.
- 21 Are your parents still hale and hearty? Ans. In former years their strength was overtaxed, so that at present they are not very vigorous.
- 22 Mrs. Moo, because she herself has no hope of bearing children, is now quite willing that Mr. Moo should procure an inferior wife (a concubine).
- 23 They started some time ago; by this time they have probably gone twenty li.
- 24 If your daughter had not died, she would now be in her teens.
- 25 My home affairs at present are too numerous; I can't get a moment's leisure.
- 26 Although there are some good doctors at the present time, yet you could not

VOCABULARY.

- 3 抱窩 Pao⁴ wo¹. To incubate, to sit.
- 3 抱蛋 Pao⁴ tan⁴. The same.
- 5 時興 Shi² hsing¹. Fashionable, in vogue.
- 16 擱 Lod⁴. To pile up, to lay in a pile, to arrange in order; a pile, a parcel.
- 16 俐擱 Li⁴ lod⁴. In order, ship-shape, satisfactory; finished. (N)
- 16 俐束 Li⁴ shu⁴. The same. (C).
- 18 胸 Hsiung¹. The breast, the bosom; the feelings, the heart.
- 18 膈 Kod². The diaphragm; a thin membrane; the mind.
- 胸膈 The breast; the diaphragm; the feelings.
- 慙 Pie¹. Vicious; restrained, oppressed; sad, melancholy.
- 慙氣 Pie¹ ch'í⁴. Unable to breathe, oppressed, smothered.
- 康健 K'ang¹ chien⁴. Hearty, vigorous.
- 慕 Mu⁴. To love ardently, to be fond of, to long for; a surname.
- 育 Yü⁴. To bear, to nurture, to rear.
- 生育 Sheng¹ yü⁴. To bear children.
- 小婆子 Hsiao³ p'od² tsí³. An inferior wife:— Note (22).

得我前不歸村後不着店往那裏去投宿呢。○往大衙門投手本，必遞門包，這是現今通行的規矩。○你想他從正月就病，一直病到這早晚上，什麼人能架得住呢。○王老三的買賣已經歇關喇，目下這子晚，什麼人能架得住呢。○近來郭文彬的兒子，吃喝嫖賭無所不為，所以他的目今的愁腸，比那些年倒更多了。○現今的世代，若沒有點刁鑽古怪的本事，還想着站着立得住，那可不用打算。○已經十五六歲的姑娘，成天家淨玩兒，也不學點針線，你這個當兒不學，等到幾時纔學呢。○我見告白上說，今有東關孫榮泉，於初三日晚間，在關帝廟聽戲，因不小心，失去牛角圖書一包，大小五塊，若有送到者，必謝錢五百文，決不食言。

- pick out more than one in a hundred.
- 27 I am now left all alone, with no village in front and no inn behind; where shall I go to find lodgings?
- 28 In sending your card to any large yamèn, it is necessary to fee the gate-keeper; this is now the universal custom.
- 29 Just think of it; he took sick in the first month and has been sick ever since; who could stand it?
- 30 Wang the third has already closed up his business; at the present moment he is in great straits, not even having enough to eat.
- 31 Recently Kwoŭ Wên Pin's son has become dissolute and reckless, so that at present his troubles are still greater than in those former years.
- 32 If you think to hold your own in these days without some craft and exceptional skill, you will soon find out your mistake.
- 33 A girl fifteen or sixteen playing all the time and not even learning to sew! If you don't learn now, when will you learn?
- 34 I saw a placard which said, Sun Jung Ch'üan of the east suburb, while at the temple of Kwan 'I'i on the evening of the third listening to a play, lost, through carelessness, a parcel of horn seals, consisting of five in all. Any one returning them will receive a reward of five hundred cash. Positively no backing out.

- 27 妾 Ch'ie⁴..... A concubine, a secondary wife.
- 27 姪 Niu¹. A lass, a girl, a daughter. An unauthorized Pekingese character.
- 27 投宿 T'ou² su⁴. To find lodgings, to rest for the night.
- 28 手本 Shou³ pén³. A ceremonial card:—Note (28).
- 28 門包 Mén² pao¹. A doorkeeper's fees or perquisites.
- 31 近來 Chin⁴ lai²..... Recently, of late.
- 31 郭 Kwod¹..... An inner wall; a surname.
- 31 彬 Pin¹..... Chaste, elegant.

- 腸 Ch'ang². The intestines; the feelings, the affections.
- 愁腸 Ch'ou² ch'ang². Trouble, worry, anxiety, sorrow.
- 世代 Shi⁴ tai⁴..... The world, the times.
- 刁鑽 Tiao¹ tswan¹. To manoeuvre, to intrigue, to scheme; crafty, cunning.
- 告白 Kao⁴ pod². An unofficial notice, a placard, an advertisement.
- 圖書 T'u² shu¹. An unofficial seal, a stamp, a signet.
- 食言 Shi² yen². To eat one's words, to back out, to retract.

課九十百一第

LESSON CXIX.

們前、樣、有來先早備。財主。沒聽他
 先各、現、病、的、老已○主。聽早頭
 前人都、在、至、的、樣、料、他○見頭裏
 上都要、還、今、子、到、向、事、見、這、來、過、好、幾、邊、
 過這、是、沒、子、還、來、情、沒、話、○他³
 樣的、怎、好、都、有、不、沒、來、以、先、前、是、個
 的當、麼、樣、○頭⁹裏○他⁸他⁷○若⁶
 當受、洗、朝、早、是、他⁸他⁷○若⁶
 了臉、○飯、以、麼、已、向、以、是、預
 好我¹¹以、麼、已、向、以、是、預

- 1 He has come several times before.
- 2 I have never before heard this expression.
- 3 He was formerly a wealthy man.
- 4 You should have made preparations before the emergency arose.
- 5 He has never liked me.
- 6 If I had anticipated it beforehand, I could have provided for it.
- 7 He has changed all his former ways.
- 8 He was taken sick some time ago, and he has not yet recovered.
- 9 Let it be as it was before.
- 10 Before breakfast, every one is to comb his hair and wash his face.
- 11 We once before fell into this kind of a trap and endured a deal of suffering.

NOTES.

12 The force of 說話 does not appear in the translation. It is as if we should say, *At the present speaking he has a family of forty.*

14 認真辦事, to be faithful and earnest in regard to engagements or responsibilities relating to others.

17 上天無路入地無門, no road to ascend to heaven nor any door to enter the earth; i.e., no possible way of escape, utterly helpless.

22 The occasion of a man in common life taking a second or inferior wife, is generally the barrenness of the first wife. In these circumstances she oftentimes not only consents to it, but even urges it. This inferior wife or concubine is generally called 小婆子 in the North, though 妾 is the proper term, and is sometimes used. A man who takes an inferior wife always has to take her from a lower rank of society than his own, and also has to pay for her, more or less according to circumstances.

27 閃 does not here indicate whether the person has

been left alone by mistake or by some trick. The phrase, 前不歸村後不着店, is frequently used figuratively of any one in embarrassing circumstances.

28 手本 is a folded red paper (ten folds) with black back, containing merely the name and style of the individual. It is used as a card of ceremony, but is always returned to the bearer.

31 無所不爲, nothing that he will not do, given to every vice, reckless. The use of 那些 implies a knowledge on the part of the party addressed, of trials endured in previous years.

34 This is the usual form of notices put up offering a reward for lost articles. As usual in such cases, though professing to be colloquial, it still contains some wen-li words and idioms. 送到者 is book style for 送到的. The 牛角 referred to is the horn of the water buffalo, of which the best stamps are made.

LESSON CXIX.

PAST TIME—GENERAL.

May 22, 1920

早 Early,—some time ago, long ago; in season.
 早已 Formerly, some time ago, beforehand.
 早裡 Formerly, of old, old, heretofore. (C. & N.)
 早頭 The same. (S.)
 早前 Once, once upon a time, previously, some time ago.
 早先 The same.

早年 In former years, in ancient days, long ago.
 頭裡 Formerly, some time ago, heretofore, before; with a negative,—never. (C. & N.)
 頭前 or 前頭. The same as 頭裡.
 先前 Once, once upon a time, formerly, before, a while ago; with a negative,—never.
 先頭 or 先頭裡 The same.

樓茶館裏會過，你忘了嗎？○²²早先早先的人，比如到如今一個也沒還我。○²¹頭裏借我四吊錢去，是往年的家道了。○他²⁰往年的氣派，家道却不發作了。○氣派¹⁹還是他¹⁸早頭裏的老毛病，現在又在客堂裏。○這¹⁸是他¹⁷二姑娘在那裏，先頭我見他常常溫習。○¹⁷二姑娘在那裏，先頭我見他從來沒受過逼迫。○你¹⁶以前所念的書，還該在洪水以頭前的那些人，都活八九百歲。○他¹⁵些苦難。○¹²早先為這個雨字，我叫先生打了戒板。○¹³像如今的時候，頭前都沒經過。○¹⁴尺子。○¹⁵○

- 12 I once received a stroke of the ferule from my teacher on account of this character yü.
- 13 We have never before experienced an epidemic like the present one.
- 14 The antediluvians all lived to be eight or nine hundred years old.
- 15 He has never suffered persecution.
- 16 The books you have already studied you should frequently review.
- 17 Where is the younger miss? Ans. I saw her a little while ago in the parlor.
- 18 This is an old failing of his, which has now broken out anew.
- 19 The style is still that of former years, but the rate of expenditure is not what it once was.
- 20 He borrowed four thousand cash from me some time ago, and to this date has not repaid a single cash.
- 21 We met each other once in the Ti-i-lou Tea-house; have you forgotten?
- 22 The men of former times were all

先年 In previous years, former times.
 從來 Heretofore, formerly; with a negative, — never.
 從早 For a long time, for some time, for a great while.
 從先 Once, formerly, a while ago.
 以前 Before, heretofore, already, formerly.
 以頭 The same, but much less current.
 以先 Before, former, previous.
 向來 Same as 從來, but less current.
 一向 All this time, from some previous time to the present.
 古 Ancient times, generally joined with other words save where correlated with 今.

古時 Anciently, ancient times, in olden times.
 古年 The same.
 太古 Primeval times.
 上古 Primitive times, olden times.
 中古 Mediæval times.
 往日 In former days or times, in the past, heretofore.
 往年 In former years or times, in bygone years.
 老老年間 In old times, very ancient times, long long ago.
 老輩子年間 In the times of our forefathers, in olden times.

VOCABULARY.

- 12 時症 *Shi² chêng⁴*. A prevailing disease, an epidemic.
- 13 迫 *P'oa⁴*. To urge, to harass, to drive to extremity.
- 14 逼迫 *P'ia⁴ p'oa⁴*. To persecute, to harass.
- 15 氣派 *Ch'i⁴ p'ai⁴*. Style, air, pomp, pretension, show.
- 16 家道 *Chia¹ tao⁴*. Style of living, pecuniary circumstances, rate of expenditure.
- 17 茶館 *Ch'a² kwan⁸*. A tea shop, a temperance saloon.
- 18 憨厚 *Han¹ hou⁴*. Generous, liberal.
- 19 渾厚 *Hun² hou⁴*. The same.
- 20 罅 *Wên⁴*. A crack, a flaw.

管的、還、是、是、石、老、不、呢、早、今、
 的、問、是、一、是、兄、如、答、前、的、
 所、我、早、是、是、做、古、我、先、人、
 以、要、先、一、是、年、件、按、我、却、都、
 我、嗎、得、場、官、老、兒、西、以、一、更、
 摸、○、的、司、○、你、子、國、前、點、
 不、○、呢、○、你、子、說、作、沒、
 着、○、○、○、○、○、○、○、
 底、○、○、○、○、○、○、○、
 底、○、○、○、○、○、○、○、
 古、○、○、○、○、○、○、○、
 年、○、○、○、○、○、○、○、
 有、○、○、○、○、○、○、○、
 名、○、○、○、○、○、○、○、
 的、○、○、○、○、○、○、○、
 聖、○、○、○、○、○、○、○、

more generous than those of the present.
 23 Judging from its appearance it is an old crack, but I had not previously noticed it.
 24 How do you come to know this man? Ans. We once were neighbors.
 25 According to Chinese ideas, the present is inferior to ancient times; according to Western ideas, ancient times were inferior to the present.
 26 It has indeed been of great benefit to me that I have had you for my companion all this time.
 27 That boundary stone was put up long ago by our forefathers. Your having now removed it, simply means a lawsuit for us.
 28 Is this disease of yours a recent thing? or did you contract it some time ago?
 29 I paid up my house rent in full some time ago. Why are you dunning me again?
 30 These affairs were formerly all looked after by my father, hence I am unable to go into particulars.

留意 Liu² i⁴. To pay attention, to notice.
 界 Chie⁴. A boundary, a limit, a terminus; a sphere, a condition.
 27 界石 Chie⁴ shi². A boundary stone.
 30 根底 Kên¹ ti². Origin, ground, occasion; facts, particulars.
 31 聖人 Shêng⁴ jên². A man pre-eminent in wisdom and virtue, a sage.
 34 禹 Yu³. The founder of the Hia dynasty:—Note (31).
 2 鞅 Ch'iu¹, Yu¹. A breast strap, a crupper, a trace; a swing.
 3 鞅 Ch'ien¹. A swing; to swing to and fro.
 3 鞅 Yu¹ ch'ien¹. A whirlwheel, a swing.
 27 燈草 Têng¹ ts'ao². The wick of a lamp,—so called because it is the pith of a species of grass or reed
 2 溫和 Wên¹ ho². Genial, affable; peaceable, quiet.
 3 起先 Ch'ie³ hsien¹. At first, originally, at the outset:—Les. 126. Sub.
 3 機關 Chi¹ kwan¹. Trigger, handle; trick, artifice; turning point, clue.
 馬脚 Ma³ chiao². An underhand trick or scheme; "the cloven foot":—Note (34).

狐 Hu². A fox; suspicious. 3 2
 狸 Li². A fox; a raccoon; a wild-cat. 3 2
 狐狸 The fox. 3 2
 尾 Wei², I². The tail; the end, the last of; the hinder part, the stern of a ship.
 尾巴 I² pa¹. The tail, the hinder part, the stern of a ship:—Note (34).
 誌 Chi⁴. To remember; to record; a mark. 3 5
 誌石 Chi⁴ shi². A stone used as a test of strength:—Note (35).
 制石 Chi⁴ shi². The same. 3 5
 近日 Chin⁴ ji⁴. Recent times, now. (w.) 3 6
 盤古 P'an² Ku³. . . . The first man:—Note (38). 3 7
 闢 P'i⁴. To burst forth, to open up, to set in order.
 開天闢地 K'ai¹ t'ien¹ p'i⁴ ti⁴. Opening heaven and setting in order the earth,—a stereotype phrase for the creation or formation of the world.
 義 Hsi¹. Breath, vapor:—Note (38). 3 7
 農 Nung². To cultivate, to farm; agriculture:—Note (38). 3 7
 孟 Mêng⁴. Eminent, large; senior. 3 7
 孟子 Mêng⁴ ts'i². Mencius. 3 7

是了。關、實的、那人、燈草、喇。了。○人、
 我○拿³⁵他的、的、樣兒、和、你、沒、有、先、早、³²你、就、
 往、拿、的、利、害、就、後、來、你、說、話、起、頭、先、裏、有、溫、和、老、
 年、大、刀、害、就、後、來、你、說、話、起、頭、先、裏、有、溫、和、老、
 的、老、本、事、現、在、這、些、武、
 抱、制、誌、石、拉、狐、馬、脚、
 硬、弓、這、都、來、
 了、關、實、那、燈、喇、了、○人、
 拿、的、樣、和、你、沒、有、先、早、
 大、利、害、就、後、來、你、說、話、起、頭、先、裏、有、溫、和、老、
 刀、害、就、後、來、你、說、話、起、頭、先、裏、有、溫、和、老、
 老、本、事、現、在、這、些、武、
 抱、制、誌、石、拉、狐、馬、脚、
 硬、弓、這、都、來、

- 31 The noted sages of ancient times were Yao, Shun, Yü, T'ang, Wéu, Wu, Chou-kung, K'ung-tsi.
- 32 Your sister fell out of the swing and cut her head; is she well yet? Ans. She has been well for some time.
- 33 He has been calling out to me for some time to light the lamp. But how can I light it when there is not a particle of wick?
- 34 I noticed that in talking with you he had at first a very affable and inoffensive manner; but by and by when you exposed his tricks, his evil purpose disclosed itself.
- 35 To handle the great sword, lift the standard stone and draw the stiff bow; these were the feats of bygone years, but now I can not essay such exercises.

NOTES.

8 至今 is slightly bookish, though often used. 到如今 is the more common spoken form.

9 Or, it is just as it was before.

10 In the South 梳頭 is only used of women and children, not of men, who have queues.

12 The pupil probably mistook 雨 for 兩 or 丙, and got a stroke of the ruler to assist his memory. Striking on the hand with a ruler is almost the only mode of punishment used by Chinese teachers. 戒尺 is the more proper and general term for the ferule, though it is sometimes called 板子, especially in Peking. The bastinado used by magistrates is called 板子.

17 二姑娘, the younger of two sisters.

21 第一樓, The name of a two storied tea house in Shanghai. The 第一 means first in excellence, first-class.

29 The direct interrogative is here best rendered into English by an indirect interrogative.

31 We have here the stereotype enumeration of Chinese sages. They are arranged in the order of time.

堯 The first Emperor of credible Chinese history. He is the great model of wisdom and virtue in a sovereign. His reign began B. C. 2357.

舜 The second Emperor of credible history. He was chosen by 堯 and associated with him for thirty years in the government. He mourned for his predecessor three years and then formally assumed the government B. C. 2255.

禹 also called 大禹, The Great Yü, or 神禹, The Divine Yü. He is reputed to have been a descendant of Hwang Ti. He was chosen as his successor by 舜, and succeeded to the throne B. C. 2205, and became the founder of the Hsia dynasty. The great achievement which procured for him the throne, was the draining of the land from a great flood, at which he labored incessantly for nine years.

湯 a wise and virtuous prince, who overthrew the tyrant 桀, the last of the Hsia dynasty, and became the founder of the Shang dynasty.

文 The Duke of 周. His original name was 昌, and his title 西伯, Chief of the West. He lived from 1231 to 1185 B. C., and after his death was canonized as 文王. He was renowned for virtue and wisdom. He revised the Book of Changes and wrote comments on it.

武 The son of 文王, to whose dukedom he succeeded B. C. 1169. His real name was 發, and he was canonized as 武王. His great achievement was the overthrow of the tyrant 紂辛, the last of the Shang dynasty, whose throne he took and became founder of the (周) Chou dynasty.

周公 The fourth son of 文王, and brother of 武王. He materially assisted his brother in obtaining the throne, and throughout his reign was his most valued counsellor. He drew up a code of laws for the empire, and is reputed as the inventor of the mariners' compass.

孔子 The last and greatest of Chinese sages. His real name was 孔丘, and his title 仲尼. He lived from B. C. 557 to 479. He was neither emperor nor prince. His greatness was in his virtue, his wisdom and his learning. Mencius is not ranked as a sage (聖人) by the Chinese, but as a 大賢, a great worthy.

34 In this sentence, which is taken from the Pilgrims' Progress, 頭裡 is used in the sense of at first, which is not its proper meaning, though said to be sometimes so used in Peking. 起先 is the better word for the connection. 露出馬脚來, to reveal unawares some concealed character or design. The figure probably comes from the discovery of some ambush or stratagem in war by the footprints of the horses. 尾巴 is spoken both wei³ pa¹ and i³ pa¹, but the reading i³ does not generally extend to the derived sense of 尾.

35 拿大刀, to flourish aloft the heavy cutlass or halberd. 抱誌石 This 誌石 or 制石 is a heavy oblong stone with niches cut in it for handles. The feat consists in lifting it up by main force on the knee, and then taking it in the arms and standing erect with it. 拉硬弓, to draw a stiff bow

之爲古時。數百年的時候，都渾而言。228. huan
 時候爲上古，從堯到武王的
 候，爲上古，從堯到武王的
 太古伏羲神農黃帝時
 盤古開天闢地的時候，爲
 38 六十歲不死，就要活理。○
 說在老老輩子年間，人活到
 往日無冤，近日無仇。○我與你
 藝都試不得咯。○我與你

36 I never was, and am not now, at enmity with you.
 37 There is a tradition that in old times if a man did not die before he was sixty years old, they buried him alive.
 38 The time when P'an Ku opened the heavens and divided the earth was primeval time. The times of Fu Hi, Shiu Nung and Hwang Ti were primitive times; the times from Yao to Wu Wang were mediæval times, and the times preceding and following Confucius and Mencius are spoken of, in a general way, as ancient times.

to the point of the arrow. These are the three chief athletic exercises of the Chinese.

38 盤古 The Chinese first man. He is a mythical character alleged to have been the first development out of chaos, and to him is attributed the setting in order of heaven and earth. Various wonderful stories are told concerning him.

伏羲 Also called 庖羲氏 the first Emperor of Chinese legendary history. The period commonly assigned to the beginning of his reign is B. C. 2852. He instructed the people in the arts of hunting, fishing and pasturage. He invented the eight diagrams, established the laws of marriage, and constructed musical instruments.

神農 The Divine Husbandman. He was the second legendary emperor and successor of 伏羲. He is reputed to have reigned from B. C. 2737 to B. C. 2697. He made ploughs, and taught the people agriculture. He also taught the people the use of plants for medicine, and instituted the holding of markets. He is now worshipped as the God of Agriculture.
 黃帝 The Yellow Emperor. He was the third and last legendary emperor. He regulated the customs of the people and taught them how to make utensils of wood, pottery and metal, also how to build boats and construct wagons.

LESSON CXX.

FUTURE TIME—GENERAL.

後 Afterwards, subsequently; when directly following a noun,—after.

往後 Hereafter, henceforth, in future, since.

過後 Afterwards, subsequently, by and by.

以後 Afterwards, hereafter, after, in future, subsequently.

日後 In the future, at a future time, by and by, sometime. A book form, sometimes used in colloquial.

之後 A book form of 以後, but not unfrequently used in colloquial.

向後 In future, hereafter, henceforth. (L.)

然後 Afterwards, and then, then, subsequently.

隨後 At once, forthwith, thereupon, afterwards, following.

久後 Ultimately, eventually, by and by, ever.

末後 At last, finally, ultimately. moa^u 343

後來 Afterwards, hereafter, henceforth.

後頭 Afterwards, in future,—heard occasionally in this sense, but more commonly and properly used of *place* than of time.

後日 Properly *day after to-morrow*, but sometimes used indefinitely, especially in books,—in future, by and by, hereafter.

往前 or 這往前 Henceforth, from this time forth, after this. The Chinese seem quite at sea with reference to the use of 前 and 後 joined with 往.

往下 or 這往下 Henceforth, from this time forth.

往下去 The same. (N.)

改日 Some other day, again,—only used at parting where we would say good-bye.

底下 In the future, at some other time, by and by.

從今以後 or 從今後 or 從今之後 Henceforth, in future, from this time forth.

從此以後 The same.

LESSON CXX.

第⁵先⁵試⁵一⁵試⁵，不⁵行⁵然⁵後⁵再⁵說⁵。○我⁶要⁶走⁶喇⁶，咱⁶們⁶改⁶日⁶再⁶會⁶見⁶罷⁶。○
 一⁷萬⁷不⁷可⁷起⁷先⁷頭⁷殷⁷勤⁷，後⁷來⁷懶⁷惰⁷。○現⁸在⁸貧⁸賤⁸，要⁸求⁸後⁸日⁸的⁸富⁸貴⁸。
 百⁹○今⁹日⁹是⁹我⁹家⁹女⁹兒⁹，後⁹日⁹是⁹別⁹人⁹家⁹媳⁹婦⁹。○你¹⁰別¹⁰看¹⁰他¹⁰當¹⁰時¹⁰
 二¹¹生¹¹氣¹¹，過¹¹後¹¹還¹¹是¹¹一¹¹樣¹¹。○我¹¹先¹¹換¹¹上¹¹衣¹¹裳¹¹，隨¹¹後¹¹就¹¹去¹¹。○你¹²向¹²以¹²後¹²
 十¹³上¹³街¹³，要¹³先¹³告¹³訴¹³我¹³。○再¹³往¹³前¹³去¹³，天¹³暖¹³和¹³了¹³，爐¹³裏¹³不¹³用¹³生¹³火¹³。○
 課¹⁴那¹⁴些¹⁴不¹⁴要¹⁴緊¹⁴的¹⁴小¹⁴事¹⁴情¹⁴，過¹⁴後¹⁴誰¹⁴還¹⁴記¹⁴在¹⁴心¹⁴裏¹⁴。○午¹⁵飯¹⁵之¹⁵後¹⁵，二
 人¹⁶又¹⁶叙¹⁶談¹⁶了¹⁶半¹⁶天¹⁶。○我¹⁶雖¹⁶然¹⁶不¹⁶如¹⁶人¹⁶，還¹⁶指¹⁶望¹⁶孩¹⁶子¹⁶們¹⁶往¹⁶後¹⁶如
 人¹⁷。○從¹⁷今¹⁷以¹⁷後¹⁷，你¹⁷要¹⁷小¹⁷心¹⁷，不¹⁷可¹⁷任¹⁷信¹⁷口¹⁷胡¹⁷說¹⁷。○向¹⁸以¹⁸後¹⁸他¹⁸若¹⁸再¹⁸來¹⁸

- 1 To yield to others must not be considered foolish; the advantage of it will appear by-and-by. [know.]
- 2 How it will be hereafter we do not yet
- 3 From this time forth the days will gradually become longer.
- 4 Hereafter I will not trouble myself about your affairs.
- 5 Try it first, and if it will not do, we will then talk about it again.
- 6 I must be going. We'll meet again some other day.
- 7 It will never do to be diligent at first and afterwards grow lazy.
- 8 Those who are now in humble circumstances should aspire to be wealthy by and by.
- 9 To-day she is our daughter, to-morrow she will be somebody else's daughter-in-law.
- 10 Don't mind his getting angry at the time; he will be all the same afterwards. [then go at once.]
- 11 I will first change my clothes, and
- 12 Hereafter when you go on the street, I want you first to tell me.
- 13 From this time on the weather will be mild; you need not make a fire in the stove. [trivial matters?]
- 14 Who can afterwards remember those
- 15 After dinner they talked together again a long while.
- 16 Although I am not equal to others, I want my children hereafter to be equal to others.
- 17 From this time forward you must be

VOCABULARY.

- 6 貧賤 *P'in³ chien⁴*. In humble circumstances, poor, indigent.
- 15 叙 *Hsü⁴*. To talk, to converse, to discuss.
- 15 叙談 *Hsü⁴ t'an²*. To talk together, to converse, to chat.
- 17 任口胡說 *Jên⁴ kou⁸ hu² shwoa¹*. To speak recklessly or extravagantly, to talk at random.
- 17 信口胡言 *Hsin⁴ kou⁸ hu² yen²*. The same:— Note (17).
- 攪鬧 *Chiao³ nao⁴*. To act in a disorderly manner, to raise a row, to bluster.
- 糟鬧 *Tsao¹ nao⁴*. The same. (s.)

- 好吃 *Hao⁴ c'hi¹*. To love eating, to hanker after delicacies.
- 立業 *Li⁴ yie⁴*. To attain a competency, to make one's fortune.
- 過失 *Kwoa⁴ shi¹*. A mistake, an error; an offence.
- 鑑戒 *Chien⁴ chie⁴*. A warning, an admonition.
- 隨手 *Sui³ shou⁸*. At once, without delay, while the hand is in.
- 層次 *Ts'êng² ts'i⁴*. Order, arrangement, graduation.
- 措 *Ts'oa⁴*. To place, to arrange; to employ.
- 懊 *ao⁴*. Vexed; to regret.

有工夫等底下再同他商議罷。○你這個痞若不拿擠一拿擠久
 苗後長楷再後秀穗末後穗上纔結子粒。○張先生今天沒
 今可是貼心貼意的，但不知往下怎麼樣。○莊稼都是先發
 他。○聽說先生娶了一個好媳婦，真是先生的洪福。看如
 後你看見楊三來沒有。答從前年我見他一面，日後再沒見
 個藥是飯前吃呢，是飯後吃呢。答飯前飯後都可以。○這
 詞。○你實在願意和他結親，就結罷。過後你可別懊悔。○這
 恐怕過後忘了。○做論必得先鋪排出層次來，然後纔好措
 業呢。○今日的過失，就是後日的鑑戒。○花錢該隨手記賬，
 攪鬧，可以擲出他去。○你這樣好吃懶做，久後怎麼成家立

- careful not to talk so recklessly.
- 18 If in future he comes again to make a row, just put him out.
 - 19 If you are so gluttonous and lazy as this, how will you ever get on in the world? [for to-morrow.
 - 20 The mistakes of to-day are warnings
 - 21 When you spend money, you should at once make an entry of it, lest you subsequently forget.
 - 22 In writing an essay, it is necessary first to lay out the order of thought before proceeding to elaborate the language.
 - 23 If you are so anxious to form a marriage engagement with her, then do so; but be sure you do not afterwards repent of it.
 - 24 Is this medicine to be taken before or after meals? Ans. It may be taken either before or after.
 - 25 Did you afterwards see Yang San? I met him once, the year before last, but since that time I have not seen him.
 - 26 I have heard, sir, that you have gotten an excellent daughter-in-law, which is certainly a great blessing. Ans. At present she seems to be everything that could be desired, but I don't know how it may be by and by.
 - 27 Grain first puts forth sprouts, then it rises into stalks, afterwards it sends forth ears, and finally it yields the grains.
 - 28 Mr. Chang has no time to-day; wait till some other time to consult him.
 - 29 If you do not press the pus out of this

- 23 懊悔 *ao⁴ hui³*. To repent, to regret, to reproach oneself, to rue.
- 24 貼心 *t'ie¹ hsin¹*. Amiable, gracious; intimate, affectionate.
- 26 貼心貼意 *t'ie¹ hsin¹ t'ie¹ i⁴*. Amiable and obliging, everything that could be desired.
- 27 苗 *miao²*. The young and tender sprouts of grain; descendants.
- 27 楷 *chie¹*. Stalks of corn or grain.
- 27 末 *mo⁴*. The end, the last; final; remnants; powder, dust;—Les. 127.
- 27 子粒 *tsi³ li⁴*. A grain, a seed.
- 27 擠 *chi³*. To crowd, to push; to press, to squeeze; to milk.
- 疤 *pa¹*. A scar, a mark.
- 29 疤痕 *pa¹ la⁴*. A scar, a cicatrix.

- 花用 *hwa¹ yung⁴*. To spend money, to expend; expenditure.
- 上任 *shang⁴ jen⁴*. To enter upon the duties of an office.
- 貪 *t'an¹*. To covet, to desire inordinately.
- 貪贓 *t'an¹ tsang¹*. To covet or take bribes, venal, corrupt.
- 世界 *shi⁴ chie¹*. The world, the age.
- 練武 *lien⁴ wu³*. To practice with sword and spear, to fence.
- 打拳脚 *ta³ ch'uan² chiao³*. To practice boxing, to box;—Note (32).
- 灰心 *hui¹ hsin¹*. To be disheartened, to give up, to lose hope, to lose interest.
- 疫 *i⁴*. A prevalent disease, an epidemic.
- 瘟疫 *wen¹ i⁴*. An epidemic, pestilence.

58
 荒年，荒年之後，常有瘟疫。
 來說，福不雙降，禍不單來，所以大亂之後，常有
 從此以後，他也就灰了心，再也不學略。○從
 一交手，教人家拐出好遠的去，鬧了一個沒趣。
 見一個會拳腳的，就在眾人面前和他比試，剛
 來略。○從前馬道清很愛練武打拳腳，後來遇
 自從送他萬民衣萬民傘之後，反倒顯出貪賊
 鄭太爺纜上任的時候，還有個作清官的樣子。
 房子賣地的花用，他受罪的日子還在後頭。○
 後作個疤癩，纜難看喇。○別看他這個時候，典
 結個疤

boil of yours, it will ultimately leave a scar that will be very unsightly.
 30 Don't be misled by his present reckless extravagance; his time of suffering is yet to come.
 31 When His Worship Chêng first came into office, he seemed like an upright officer, but from the time he was presented with the complimentary cloak and umbrella, he began to show an inclination to take bribes.
 32 Formerly Ma Tao Ching was very fond of fencing and boxing, but before long he fell in with a skilled boxer and presently engaged with him in a public trial of skill. They had hardly closed before the other man sent him reeling back ever so far, thus turning the laugh upon him. From that time on he lost his interest in boxing, and ceased practicing.
 33 It has been said that "blessings do not come in pairs, nor do misfortunes come singly"; hence it is that after a rebellion there is generally a year of famine, and after famine, pestilence.

NOTES.

- 1 A proverbial saying.
- 7 後頭 in the second clause is used to match 先頭 in the first. The sentence is from The Sacred Edict.
- 9 今日 and 後日 are here used indefinitely, as are the corresponding terms in English. The same is true of (20).
- 17 信口胡言, 信 here means to accord with, to follow, which is a very unusual sense.
- 19 成家 as here used means something more than simply to get married; it also includes the idea of maintaining a family. 成家立業 is a ready made expression, as is also 好吃懶做.
- 24 都可以, all will do; i.e., either will do.

- 30 典房子賣地的 The addition of 的 turns the phrase into a participial adjective qualifying 花用.
- 31 萬民衣 is a rich silk robe or cloak presented to a magistrate by the people as a testimony of regard. The names of all the contributors are put on the cloak in gilt letters. 萬民傘 is a large silk umbrella or canopy presented for the same purpose. Sometimes both are presented, sometimes only the latter.
- 32 打拳脚. In boxing, the Chinese use the feet as well as the hands, learning to kick as well as to strike. 鬧個無趣 to provoke a ridiculous or shameful discomfiture, to be put to shame or confusion.

LESSON CXXI.

STRONG NEGATION.

29 May 1920
 無 Destitute of, without, none. When followed by an abstract noun it often answers to the termination less, as 無用, useless, 無能 powerless, etc.
 非 No, not,—a book negative often used in colloquial and stronger than 不.
 305 ping 4
 前 Altogether, at all,—always combines with a negative. 並 is also a copulative:—Les. 138.

無非 Simply, nothing more, for no other purpose. This double negative forms a strong affirmative, which appears in English in the form of the sentence, without any special word to represent it.
 無不 Without not,—that is, always, in everything.
 前非 Not, not at all, not in the least, by no means.

跟底下，並沒打掃乾淨，還出來說嘴喇。○他並不是
 並不會噪；他的貴重處，就在一個尾巴。○你自己
 您那不過是古人的遺傳，並沒有實在的憑據
 掙氣。○阿，他已經當了掌櫃的嗎，無怪說這話
 喜樂。○他們的喜樂，並非從心所發，不過是外面虛浮的
 ○嗎。○袁錫功那個人，凡託他的事情，無不盡心竭力。
 ○你的膽子可也不小，並沒同我商議，你就應許了
 一邊來，並非向你借錢，是要給你兒子說個丈婦人
 度，無非禁止百姓們為非，引導百姓們為善。○他這

14 The Emperor established these laws for the express purpose of prohibiting the people from doing wrong, and leading them to do right.
 15 He has come this time, not to borrow money of you, but to propose a father-in-law for your son.
 16 Well, you are a bold fellow to promise him without having consulted me.
 17 That man Yüan Hsi Kung does his very best in everything that is entrusted to him.
 18 Their rejoicing does not come from the heart; it is nothing more than a transient, external rejoicing.
 19 Oh! he has been made head-man, has he? That explains why he speaks so positively.
 20 That is nothing more than an ancient tradition, having no trustworthy evidence.
 21 There is nothing between you two sisters-in-law but a few words—nothing worth coming to blows about.
 22 The peacock cannot sing; his excellence is in his tail.
 23 You have not swept clean under your own feet, and yet you assume to disparage others.
 24 He is not a lin-shêng at all, yet you persist in saying he is.

- 13 帮腔 Pang¹ ch'iang¹. A chorus, an accompaniment; intrusive talk.
- 14 廷 T'ing^{1,2}. An audience-hall, a court-yard.
- 14 朝廷 Ch'ao² t'ing². The imperial audience-hall; the Emperor.
- 14 法度 Fu³ tu⁴. Laws, regulations, rules.
- 14 禁止 Chin⁴ chi³. To forbid, to prohibit.
- 14 為非 Wei² fei¹. To do wrong, to violate the law, to do evil.
- 14 導 Tao^{3,4}. To lead, to induce.
- 14 引導 Yin³ tao^{3,4}. To lead, to show the way, to induce.
- 14 為善 Wei² shan⁴. To do right, to act virtuously, to be free from faults.
- 17 袁 Yuan³. A robe; a surname.
- 18 虛浮 Hsü¹ fou². Superficial, unsubstantial; transient, fleeting.
- 19 硬氣 Ying⁴ ch'í⁴. Positive, peremptory, emphatic.
- 19 硬掙 Ying⁴ chêng⁴. Firm, inflexible; positive, peremptory, relentless.

- 錫 Hsi^{1,2}. Tin; pewter; to confer, to give.
- 20 遺傳 I² ch'wan². A tradition, a legend, a fable.
- 21 妯娌 Chou² lí³. Brothers' wives.
- 21 噪 Sao⁴. To chirp, to sing, to whistle.
- 21 腳跟 Chiao³ kên¹. . . . The heel; sole of the foot.
- 21 說嘴 Shwo¹ tsui³. To boast, to brag; to exalt oneself and disparage others, to run down.
- 21 廩 Lin³. A government granary, a stipend to an advanced 秀才.
- 21 廩生 Lin³ shêng¹. An advanced 秀才:— Note (24).
- 21 服事 Fu³ shí⁴. To serve, to minister to.
- 21 勾當 Kou¹ tang⁴. Business, job, affair.
- 21 素日 Su⁴ jī⁴. Commonly, ordinarily; formerly, in the past.
- 21 瞞哄 Man² hung³. To deceive, to impose upon, to hoodwink.
- 21 干罪 Kan¹ tsui⁴. To plead guilty, to own up; to take the consequences.

一點兒瞞哄小的情願干領罪。
 道並不敢瞞哄大人若查出有
 親兄一樣。○小的實係是
 冤仇。實在相親相愛如親弟
 們深知道他們二人素日並無
 準知道他們二人素日並無
 問還能有第二位上帝嗎。○我
 既然天無二日民無二王天地
 不是大丈夫男子漢的勾當。○
 哥哥在此無非是服事人這並
 個廩生你偏說他是個廩生。○

- 25 Here you are simply serving others, — which is not the kind of business for a man of any spirit.
- 26 Since heaven has no second sun, and the people have no second king, do you think that in the universe there can be a second God?
- 27 We know for certain that in the past these two men have not been enemies; they have, in fact, loved each other like own brothers.
- 28 Your unworthy servant really does not know. I should not dare to deceive your honor. If you discover that I have practiced the least deception, I will cheerfully bear the penalty.

NOTES.

3 無是無非, without right and without wrong; i. e., without any cause, or grievance.

4 你這個人. The use of 這個人 singles out the party addressed as worthy of contempt, as is sometimes done in English by saying the "you" with special emphasis and intonation, and then pausing and beginning the sentence anew.

5 叔叔, uncles and nephews; i. e., belonging to one family. A Southern term.

10 營務 does not necessarily mean that the party was a soldier, but that he had employment in connection with military affairs.

11 無過不及 is the standard definition of the "golden mean," which forms the Chinese rule of virtue. 無 applies to 不及 as well as to 過, as if written 無過無不及.

13 Lit., what accompaniment have you come to play, implying that what was said was an intrusion in the interest of another.

24 廩生 is the first intermediate grade above the first degree, or 秀才. It formerly entitled the possessor to an allowance of grain from the public granary, but now only gives the privilege of standing security for undergraduates, for which a small fee is received. It is of no special service in securing the second degree.

hsiu tsai 223

LESSON CXXII.

SPECIAL USES OF 見.

1. 見 is prefixed to many adjectives and nouns in the general sense of to manifest or show,—thus 見強 is to manifest improvement, to be better; 見效 to manifest efficacy, to be efficacious; 見怪 to manifest displeasure, to take offence or be offended. Thus used, 見 has no exact equivalent in English. "Seem" will not translate it, for seem implies doubt, which 見 does not. It is approximately equivalent to the substantive verb. It appears to be put for 現, as it often is in Wen-li, where, however, it also takes the sound of 現. This use of 見 is entirely t'ung-hsing.

2. 見 is prefixed to verbs in the sense of to bear or to stand,—見穿 to stand wearing, that is, to last; 見做 to stand doing, that is, to be tedious;

見燒 to stand burning, that is, to have the quality (in fuel) of lasting, etc. This use of 見 prevails in the greater part of Shantung, but is not t'ung-hsing. In Peking and the North 禁 chin¹ (not chin⁴) is used in the same way, and with the same meaning. The same usage also prevails in Nanking and the South, but there teachers incline to use 經. Inasmuch, however, as Southern Mandarin confuses the final n and ng, it is likely that there also the proper writing is 禁.

3. 見 is joined with 天 in the sense of every,—見天 day by day, every day. In Peking it is frequently expanded into 見天見.

For list of words following 見 and, 禁 see Supplement.

的官運就不見旺了，可見作大官的也要得上人見喜哪。

嗎。○_N 23 那年李大人上京引見，不能見景生情，教皇上見了怪，以後他

荒年頭的糧食，一斗只稱四十五斤，差着十五斤的分量，還能

壞糧食，怎麼歉了年，就不_經見_禁吃呢。○_答 好年頭的糧食，一斗能稱六十斤，

呢。○_N 21 工夫若不間斷，自然一個月比一個月的見強。○₂₂ 都是一樣的

家裏來，可別見笑啊。○_答 好說，我們居家過日子，那家不是這個樣兒

不見小人怪過。○₁₉ 你見天的淨下棋，也不嫌煩嗎。○_N 20 先生到我們

機器作活，多麼見功。○₁₇ 這些柴伙都_朽了，一點也不_經見_禁燒。○_N 18 大人

的日子，這幾年怎麼樣。○_答 不見好，還是很巴結。○₁₆ 你看用這些火輪

就貴。○₁₄ 我不說，你再三逼着我說，說出來你可別見怪啊。○₁₅ 荆四寶

14 When I declined to tell, you repeatedly urged me to do so; and now when I tell it out, you must not be offended.

15 How is Hsing Si Pao getting on these few years? Ans. About the same as ever. He is still very much embarrassed.

16 Look at these steam machines, how they turn out the work.

17 This firewood is half rotten. It burns up very rapidly.

18 A high-minded man does not take offence at men of lower station.

19 Do you not get tired of playing chess day in and day out?

20 You are welcome to our house, sir, but you must not laugh at us. Ans. There is no apology needed. What house where there is a family is not in the same condition?

21 If you work on without ceasing, each month will naturally show an improvement on the last.

22 The grain is all the same: how is it that in a scarce year it does not last? Ans. In a good year a bushel of grain will weigh sixty catties, but in a bad year it will only weigh forty-five catties: being less by fifteen catties in weight, how can it last?

23 The year that Li Ta Jen went to the capital to have an audience with the Emperor, he was unable to adapt himself to the circumstances, and the Emperor was not pleased. Since then his official fortune has not been prosperous; from which it is evident that even high officials must have the good-will of their superiors.

17 朽 Hsiu³..... Rotten, decayed; putrid; forgotten.

14 膩 Ni⁴..... Greasy, oily; smooth; congealed.

16 膩煩 Ni⁴ fan². Tired of, disgusted with, sick of. (N.)

19 絮煩 Hsu⁴ fan²..... The same. (c. & s.)

見笑 Chien⁴ hsiao⁴. To laugh at, to ridicule; laughable:—Note (20).

21 間 Chien⁴. To divide, to separate; to put a space between; to intermit; to alienate; vacant. See chien¹.

21 間斷 Chien⁴ twan⁴. To intermit, to interrupt; a break, an interval.

歉 Chien⁴.... See sch'ien⁴. Les. 117:—Note (25).

22 年頭 Nien² t'ou². The season, the year, the harvest.

22 分量 Fèn⁴ liang⁴..... Weight, heft.

22 引見 Yin³ chien⁴. To have an audience with the Emperor.

22 官運 Kwan¹ yün⁴. Official fortune, chances of preferment.

23 旺 Wang⁴. Increasing, prosperous, flourishing, booming; fervid, violent.

23 可見 Kod³ chien⁴. It appears, it is evident, it is seen:—Les. 180.

23 上人 Shang⁴ jèn². A superior (official or otherwise).

在結這一罪就麼發越不好
 標俊越些一點了該樣有人學
 46 段俏大, 篾風他, 越以在越
 46 叫情子, 索他, 發後眼人
 人誼碟兒, 性拿, 越長前, 叫
 越越子, 和出, 越長越前, 人
 看交³⁰就沒他真長越有發
 越越越有, 分心來。有出息。發
 愛深。發覺喝高。○²⁰○¹⁶
 看。○他²⁴得凉水越渴。○²²
 齊²⁵的肚子餓了。○²¹○¹⁴⁶
 云方從姊妹, ○²³○²¹
 小就生的仇實越見熱得
 不怎實越見熱得

- 13 The more you yield to him, the more presumptuous he becomes.
- 14 The more excited I grew, the worse I did. Dear me, but it was vexatious!
- 15 The more others learn, the wiser they become; but the more you learn, the more stupid you are. [careful.]
- 16 From that time I was still more
- 17 The more that spectators are present, the more strenuously he exerts himself.
- 18 There was nothing special about him when young, but afterwards the older he grew, the more promise he gave.
- 19 Since he trusts us, we ought all the more to deal sincerely with him.
- 20 "Either don't begin at all, or else don't quit till you finish." Having offended him, I might as well settle once for all which is the best man.
- 21 It is excessively hot to-day; there is not even a breath of air; and the more cold water one drinks, the thirstier he becomes.
- 22 When I saw these chop-sticks and plates, I felt all the more hungry.
- 23 The more enmity is cherished, the greater it becomes: the more friendship is cultivated, the stronger it becomes.
- 24 His cousin is a very handsome girl; the more one looks at her, the more he appreciates her beauty.
- 25 From his youth Ch'i Yun Fang was not very bright, and during these

VOCABULARY.

- 越 Yue⁴. To pass over, to exceed, to transgress; to pass by, to skip:—see Sub.
- 躉 Tun⁸. An overplus; a depôt, a storehouse; wholesale, by the lot:—see Sub.
- 索 So². To restrain, to curb,—only used in 索性:—see Sub. See so⁴. Also so¹.
- 放刁 Fang⁴ tiao¹. To grow perverse or refractory or obstreperous.
- 仇恨 Ch'ou² hèn⁴. Enmity, hatred; revenge.
- 忿怒 Fèn⁴ nu⁴. Anger, violent anger, indignation, resentment.
- 撈本 Lao¹ pèn³. To come out without loss, to get one's money back.
- 雄壯 Hsiung² chwang⁴. Brave and strong, sturdy, stalwart.

- 意外 I⁴ wai⁴. Unexpected, unthought of, surprising.
- 逞能 Ch'êng³ nêng². To try with all the might, to exert to the utmost. (s.)
- 風絲 Fêng¹ si¹. A breath of air, a very gentle breeze.
- 碟 Tie². A plate, a saucer.
- 云 Yun². To speak, to say. (w.) 2-5
- 靈俏 Ling² ch'iao⁴. Quick-witted, clever, smart, sharp, gifted.
- 背晦 Pei⁴ hui⁴. Childish, imbecile, doting.
- 羸 Lei². Lean, emaciated; feeble, infirm.

錢 ○ 語 悟 天 付 撓 越 罷 麼
 索 今³³ 說 罪 我 藥 ○ 饒 你 伶 靈
 性 年 差 的 要 大 越 明 越 越 俐 俏
 多 山 差 之 心 一 大 越 明 明 閒 發 這
 花 紬⁵ 蠶⁶ 壓⁵ 早 兒 發 是 越 表⁵ 二
 兩 很 釐 制 走 病 陽 懶 白 明 年
 吊 貴 謬⁶ 益 叫 得 症 ○ 人 大 越
 截¹⁹¹ 扯 截 扯 之 發 他 利 害 他 生²⁸ 家 躉 兒
 個 個 千 里 得 的 喇 作 長 越 老
 綿 袍¹⁹⁰ 料 就 是 重 壓 制 不 住 了
 綢 兒 總 越 差 越 遠 的
 的 多 麼 得 越 遠 的
 局 胃 估 摸 的 着 着
 面 胃 估 摸 的 着 着
 三 意 思
 吊 俗³² 省³¹ 明 那 吃 的

two years, he has all the more become an old dotard.
 26 Keep quiet. The more you explain, the more they suspect you.
 27 The more [dainties] you eat, the more you long to eat; the more you lounge, the lazier you become.
 28 When one has scabies or ringworm and it becomes itchy, the more one scratches, the worse it itches.
 29 It is clearly a yang disease, yet he treated it as a yin disease; hence from the time that he took that medicine, he has grown steadily worse.
 30 Go and tell the muleteer that I want to start early to-morrow morning, and that the earlier he comes the better.
 31 If you try to repress your convictions of sin, you will all the more realize the weight of your sins. These convictions cannot be repressed.
 32 The saying is, "A miss of a hair's breadth becomes a mistake of a thousand li;" which means that a mistake once made grows greater and greater.
 33 Pongee is very dear this year; enough for a gown will cost very nearly three thousand cash. How much better to spend another thousand or two for fine silk and have a genteel garment.

- 贏堆 *Lei² tui¹*. Wearisome, laborious, tedious. Infirm, feeble; doting. (s.)
- 啞密密的 *Ya³ mi⁴ mi⁴ ti¹*. Quietly, silently; on the sly:—Les. 154.
- 饒 *Ch'an²*. To love good eating, to hanker after dainties; greedy, gluttonous.
- 癬 *Hsien³*. Tetter; ringworm; scaldhead.
- 癢 *Yang³*. To itch.
- 撓 *Nao²*. To disturb, to worry, to vex; to scratch, to irritate.
- 擺 *K'wai³*. To smooth out; to scratch.
- 刺 *Ts'i⁴*. A prickle, a thorn; to prick; to stab; to pole a boat; to criticise, to lampoon.
- 刺撓 *Ts'i⁴ nao²*. To itch, to tingle.
- 壓制 *Ya⁴ chi⁴*. To repress, to keep in subjection. Read *ya¹ chi⁴* in Peking.
- 毫 *Hao²*. An atom, a mote, a particle; the ten thousandth part of an ounce.
- 釐 *Li²*. A grain, a small particle, the thousandth part of an ounce.
- 謬 *Niu⁴, Miu⁴*. A mistake, an error; false, fallacious.
- 山紬 *Shan¹ ch'ou²*. Undyed silk, pongee.
- 估 *Hu⁴*. To rely on, to lean on, to presume on.
- 模模着 *Mo⁴ mo⁴ cho²*. Very nearly, about, approximately.
- 估估着 *Hu⁴ hu⁴ cho²*. The same.
- 冒冒的 *Mao⁴ mao⁴ ti¹*. The same.
- 綿綢 *Mien² ch'ou²*. Fine silk, colored silk.
- 局面 *Chu² mien⁴*. Elegant, stylish, genteel, pre-sentable.

第一二四課

LESSON CXXIV.

○_N 走 王 摔 們 刁⁶ 來 的 點 今
 天¹⁰ 起 天 打 都 大 年 你⁵ 在 實 起 天
 東 來 喜 你 打 場 年 你⁵ 在 實 起 天
 南 來 你 打 打 去 好 去 俏 俊 來 來 在 那
 上 打 打 場 去 了 打 好 給 我 叫⁴ 這³ 裏
 打 閃 打 穿 打 給 誰 動⁸ 人 打 打 個 打
 有 的 兩 件 呢 不 與 高 點 的 媳 婦 快²
 八 揚 氣 好 你⁹ 你 就 他⁷ 水 打 火
 成 是 得 衣 裳 看 就 他⁷ 水 打 火
 要 很 裳 看 就 他⁷ 水 打 火

1 Where did you stop at noon to-day?
 2 Strike a fire [with flint and steel] at once and light the lamp.
 3 This bride is dressed very beautifully.
 4 Tell the water carrier to bring some water quickly.
 5 Go and make a little paste for me.
 6 Tiao Ta Nien delights in spoiling other people's fun.
 7 They are all out thrashing.
 8 You are all the time dashing things down [and breaking them]; for whose benefit are you doing it?
 9 Look at Wang T'ien Hsi. He has got on a suit of fine clothes to-day, and goes strutting along fairly bursting with conceit.

NOTES.

- 2 Or, *The oftener I read this book, etc.*
- 4 To see a demon is not a good omen, and hence is put for bad luck.
- 9 Or, *The more a man indulges in evil practices, the stronger his evil propensities will become.*
- 14 實在 is here very emphatic, and very difficult of translation.
- 20 一不做二不休, *do not act in the first place, or in the second place do not give over. It is better not to begin, than to begin and not finish.*

- 22 越發覺得肚子餓了, *I all the more felt my belly to be hungry.*
- 24 兩姨姊妹, *cousins by maternal aunts; i.e., the children of sisters, each of whom calls the other's mother 姨.*
- 27 The idea of dainties is implied in the word 饅.
- 29 陽 and 陰, having no equivalents in the English language or thought, cannot be translated. Chinese medical practice is largely founded on a division of diseases and medicines into two classes, distinguished as 陽 and 陰.

LESSON CXXIV.

VARIOUS USES OF 打.

The word 打 has a wide range of use. It resembles in this the words *turn* and *take* in English. It is joined with both nouns and verbs to express a great variety of actions. Several examples of its use have already occurred.

- h 打場 To thrash out and winnow grain. *chiang³ 140*
- z 打閃 To lighten, to flash as lightning. *shang² flash*
- j 打慄 To dread, to shrink from. (c.) *chiu⁴*
- k 打影子 The same. (s.) *ying³ 63*
- l 打鞦韆 To swing. *yu ch'ien³ 339*
- m 打喳喳 To whisper. *cha³ 354*
- n 打耳喳 The same. (s.)
- o 打草稿 To draw out a rough draft, to write the first copy. *ts'ao³ kao³ 355*
- p 打賭 To wager, to bet. *tu⁴ 68*
- q 打勝 or 打勝仗 To gain the victory. *sheng⁴ 159 chang⁴*
- r 打敗 or 打敗仗 To suffer defeat. *pai⁴ 44*

- a 打尖 To stop for refreshment when traveling, as opposed to stopping over night. *ch'ien¹ 12*
- z 打火 To strike a match, to strike a light.
- pan⁺ 打扮 To dress, to array; dress, costume, toilet.
- ~ 打水 To draw or bring or carry water.
- 打糲 or 打糲子 To cook or make starch or paste. *chiang⁴ 192*
- f 打高興 To take down, to spoil the fun, to take the wind out of one's sails. *ka⁴ hsing⁴*
- g 打興頭 The same. (s.)

我仗東賭。膽耳喳○的。學窮。下
 只不○清。喳喳您¹⁵○算○雨。
 會打勝¹⁸○呢說。二世¹⁴法。別¹²○
 個敗敗³¹³你¹⁷○位上○的噢¹¹
 小仗是若我¹⁶有有打¹³我不窮。
 九呢。兵不剛甚三更¹³都窮。
 九。○家信。纔麼宗有¹³不穿
 ○你¹⁹的我們打怕⁴⁹險。打打發不窮。
 打²⁰會常們打起人的坐⁵梆子⁵、打算
 人打算那兩個稿。話。騎的。就計算
 休盤能可來。這馬也。是不到
 打臉不單以還。樣打有打打¹³一纒
 罵會。打賭打沒打¹³打¹³影¹³世受
 人 答勝個個有着鞦韆。鑼子

- 10 It is lightening in the south-east ; most likely it will rain.
- 11 It is not food nor clothing that makes a man poor ; but failure in managing will do it (keep him poor all his life).
- 12 I do not dread anything else save mathematics.
- 13 Some watchmen strike a pang-tsi, and some, a gong.
- 14 There are three dangerous things in the world ; traveling by ship, riding on horseback and swinging.
- 15 What secrets have you two that you must speak in a whisper ?
- 16 I have just now finished writing the rough draft, and have not yet made a clean copy.
- 17 If you don't believe it, we will make a bet (bet a treat).
- 18 Victories and defeats are the common experience of soldiers. How can you expect to be always victorious and never suffer defeat ?
- 19 Can you reckon on the abacus ? Ans. I only know how to add.
- 20 When you strike a man, do not

- o 打算盤 To reckon on the abacus.
- v 打點 To arrange; to equip, to fit out; to provide for; to smooth the way with money, to bribe.
- c 不打緊 No matter, of no consequence.
- a 打緊 is not used without the negative.
- e 打把勢 To box, to fence. shwai
- f 打八式 The same. shi⁴ 10
- f 打拳 To box, to fence, to fisticuff. ch'uan⁴ 69
- h 打獵 To hunt game. lie¹
- i 打量 To suppose, to estimate, to consider. hang⁴ 126
- j 打盹 To nod; to doze, to be sleepy. sun² 201
- k 打哈欠 To yawn. ha¹ hsi¹
- l 打阿欠 The same. (s.) a' ch'ien

- pau¹ 打包 To bud, to pullulate. m
 - Kung¹ 打躬 To make a profound bow with the hands joined and subsequently raise them to the head.
 - shwai¹ 摔打 To throw down forcibly, to dash down.
 - shwai¹ 摔打 To fling the arms, to strut; to fling abroad, to scatter.
 - hui¹ 呼打 To flap back and forth, to flutter; to palpitate, to throb.
 - sang¹ 喪打 To frown at, to scowl at; to snub.
 - shwai¹ 撐打 The same. ch'eng¹ 71
 - shwai¹ 掄打 To fling, to swing, to flourish. lui¹ 353
- For list of examples of the use of 打 see Supplement.

VOCABULARY.

- 扮 Pan⁴.To dress up, to rig out; to beautify.
- 酷好 K'u⁴ hao⁴. To have a passion for, to desire ardently; addicted to.
- 高興 Kao¹ hsing⁴. Elated, exulting, jubilant, merry.
- 興頭 Hsing⁴ t'ou². Elation, exultation; merriment, fun.

- 摔 Shwai¹. To wrestle; to throw down forcibly, to dash or fling down. See shwai². 213
- 揚氣 Yang² ch'i⁴.Conceited, puffed up.
- 八成 Pa¹ ch'eng². Eight parts in ten, most likely:—Note (10).
- 怵 Ch'u⁴.Timorous, fearful, shrinking.

○ 子 打 人 咕 呼 ○ 罷。 們 就 是 休
 劈²⁸ 叫 走 人 啣 打 這²⁴ ○ 今 是 揭^{12,7}
 臉 誰 獸^s 都 的 幾 莫²³ 天 來 到 的 短。
 打 打 總 不 直 天 妙 來 到 的 若²¹
 了 喇 名 願 蹶^{ts} 不 於 打 的 是
 一 你 叫 意 光 大 大 白 天 攪^{chiu², 212}
 個 看 打 和 景 約 疼 天 喇 缺 也 不 用
 耳 水 獵。 他 是 是 喇 念 書 這 沒 有 幾
 巴 瓜 直 ○ 說 作 鼓 就 書 晚 不 有 百
 子 往 媽²⁷ 話。 膿^{huang¹} 是 晚 上 打 的 子
 回 下 啊 ○ 喇。 覺 上 打 緊 的 銀 子
 頭 滴 我 或²⁶ ○ 着 學 着 請 的 官 子
 就 打 們 打 他²⁵ 裏 着 請 再 作 打 點
 跑 滴 的 飛 光 頭 打 再 作 ○ 打
 ○ 打 水 禽^{kuo¹} 擗^{ts¹} 堵^{ts¹} 咕 呼^{ts¹} 八 把 坐 ○ 打
 我²⁹ 的 罐^{ku¹} 或 打 打 啣 打 式 勢 坐 我²² 點。

strike his face ; and when you berate a man, do not cast his short-comings in his teeth.
 21 Even though you do wait till your turn comes round, without spending a few hundred taels to pave the way there will be no office for you.
 22 Our coming to-day has incommoded you. Ans. That is no matter : please sit a little longer.
 23 The best way is to study in daytime, and practice boxing at night.
 24 It does not pain me much these few days, but I feel it throbbing constantly ; pus is probably forming.
 25 He is given to snubbing people; so that no one likes to talk with him.
 26 Whether hunting birds or beasts, the common name is hunting game.
 27 Mamma, somebody has broken our water-pot: see how the water keeps dropping down.
 28 Aiming at his face, he gave him a blow on the ear, and then turned and ran.
 29 I should not mind making you a present of three or five taels of silver,

- 12 發 怵 Fa¹ ch'u⁴. To dread, to shrink from, frightened.
- 12 慄 Ch'u⁴. Rough; timorous, shrinking.
- 13 梆 Pang¹. A hollow wooden block on which watchmen strike the hours.
- 14 坐 船 Tsoa⁴ ch'wan². To travel by boat or ship, to travel by water.
- 15 喳 Ch'a¹. To whisper, to chatter. See cha¹.
- 15 耳 啞 Er³ ch'a¹. A whisper in the ear.
- 16 稿 Kao³. Straw; a first draft, a rough copy, a sketch; a proof.
- 16 草稿 Ts'ao³ kao³. The first or rough draft of a paper, original copy.
- 16 騰 清 T'eng² ch'ing¹. To make a clean copy, to copy out.
- 23 把 勢 Pa³ shi⁴. The art of boxing, or fencing with sword or spear.
- 23 八 式 Pa¹ shi⁴. The same:—Note (23).
- 24 咕 啣 Ku³ tu¹. A bubbling, gurgling or murmuring sound; to rumble; to throb.
- 25 堵 喪 Tu³ sang⁴. To snub, to bluff off.
- 26 飛 禽 Fei¹ ch'in². Birds.

- 走 獸 Tsou³ shou⁴. Beasts, quadrupeds. 26
- 獵 獵 Lie⁴. To hunt wild animals, the chase. 26
- 劈 臉 Pi⁴ lien³. To stand square in front and strike. 28
- 耳 瓜 子 Er³ kwa¹ ts'i³. The cheek bones, the side face. 28
- 耳 巴 子 Er³ pa¹ ts'i³. The same. 28
- 掄 Lün¹. To whirl or swing around, to flourish. 30 Also lun².
- 舞 Wu³. To gesture, to fence, to pantomime; to flourish, to brandish. 30
- 舞 弄 Wu³ nung⁴. To cheat, to play tricks on; to flourish, to brandish. 30
- 哈 Ha¹. To open the mouth wide, to gape. See ha³, also k'a^{1,4}.
- 哈 息 Ha¹ hsi². A gape, a yawn. 32
- 呵 欠 A¹ ch'ien⁴. The same. (s.) 32
- 約 束 Yüe¹ shu⁴. To control, to restrain, to keep in order. 32
- 禮 貌 Li³ mao⁴. Politeness, etiquette, mannerliness. 32
- 躬 Kung¹. The body, the person. 32

第一百二十五課

LESSON CXXV.

看這朵雲彩，好像是有雨的樣子。○不受十分苦，難得一
 文錢。○這張畫是張敵畫的牡丹。他要十兩銀子。○你那天
 來了一封文書，說七月二十二，學臺從省裏起馬。○你那
 對頭，也有一段話說。○哥哥既然想鯉魚吃，你可以去買
 幾條來。○我今天見了一件奇事，看見五個人扛着一面
 大枷。○那一天我到他家裏去，見他炕上，連一條領席都沒
 有。○這是誰家的一所房子，好大氣派。○他早上吃了一
 片兒饅頭，喝了四兩牛奶。○王之東這步時運實在不濟，一
 半年死了三個孩子。○我給他們帶來一封信，還有一封銀子，
 這就有了勢力喇。

- 1 This cloud looks as if it had rain in it.
- 2 It is hard to get even a little money without great labor.
- 3 This picture is a shrub peony painted by Chang Yü. He wants ten taels for it.
- 4 Yesterday there came a dispatch saying that the Literary Chancellor would start from the provincial capital on the twenty-second of the seventh month.
- 5 Your opponent has also something to say.
- 6 Since our brother longs for some carp to eat, you may go and buy him a few.
- 7 I saw a remarkable sight to-day. I saw five men wearing one large cangue.
- 8 The other day when I went to see him, I noticed that he did not have even a sheet of matting on his k'ang.
- 9 Whose residence is this? It is a very pretentious building.
- 10 This morning he ate a slice of bread and drank four ounces of milk.
- 11 Wang Chi Tung has had a run of exceedingly bad luck; within a half year three children have died.
- 12 In these times it is only necessary to have a little hard cash and you will have influence.
- 13 I have brought for him a letter and a bundle of silver. Ask him to come in person and get them.

面 ^{Mian} The face,—classifier of drums, mirrors, gongs, saddles, etc.

領 ^{ling} A collar,—classifier of sheets of matting, window shades, and upper garments.

所 ^{so} A place,—classifier of dwellings, houses, etc.

片 ^{pie} A flake,—classifier of sheets or patches, also of short spaces of time.

頁 ^{ye} A leaf or sheet,—classifier of things in sheets as leaves of a book, boards, panes of glass, slices of bread, sheets of foil or tinsel paper.

串 ^{chuan} To string together,—classifier of cash, strings of beads or pearls, etc.

處 ^{chu} A place,—classifier of houses, places, etc.

步 ^{pu} A step,—classifier of circumstances.

貫 ^{Kuan} A string of one thousand cash,—classifier of sums of cash.

樁 ^{chuan} A stake,—classifier of affairs. (r.)

扇 ^{shan} A fan,—classifier of gates, doors, windows, shutters, etc.

架 ^{chia} A frame,—classifier of clocks, scales, philosophical instruments, etc.

丸 ^{wan} A pellet,—classifier of medicines in pills.

味 ^{wai} A taste,—classifier of medicines.

頂 ^{ting} The apex,—classifier of hats, sedan chairs, state umbrellas, etc.

幅 ^{fu} A roll,—classifier of maps, pictures, scrolls, legging, etc.

籃 ^{lan} A basket,—classifier of things in baskets or crates; as tea, oranges, etc.

可以請他親自來取。別說他還有地，就是這三處房
 子的房租，五口人也吃不了。到兩軍對敵的時候，並
 看不見別的，就是看見一片烟。雖有萬貫的家財，死
 後連一文也帶不了去。我看這樁事情，心裏就是
 平，那有欺負人，欺負到這地步田地的呢。男人能掙還
 得女人能過，若是外頭掙一頁塊板，家裏丟一扇門，雖然
 能掙，也是白費上了。郭子彬的鐘表店舖，昨天晚上，叫
 賊偷了一架鐘兩個掛表去。可以一把這五味藥，研為細
 末，做成三十顆九藥，每天晚上吞吃一顆。這幾天街上，
 可以找着買一面鑼，預備吃飯的時候好打。就是蓋

- 14 Not to speak of the land he has, the rent of these three houses alone is more than sufficient for the support of a family of five.
- 15 When the two armies joined battle, nothing could be seen but a cloud of smoke.
- 16 Although you have a fortune of ten thousand strings [of cash], yet when you die you cannot take with you a single cash.
- 17 When I saw this affair I felt very indignant. How could any one wrong another to such a degree as this?
- 18 Not only must the husband be able to earn, but the wife must know how to save. If, while the husband earns a board in the fields, the wife runs through with a door at home, his being able to earn money will be of no avail.
- 19 Last night one clock and two watches were stolen by a thief from Kwoñ Tsi Pin's watchmaker's shop.
- 20 Take these five ingredients, grind them into a fine powder and make them up into thirty pills,—of which take one every evening.
- 21 Within the next few days, when you go on the street, you may look for and buy a gong to be struck at meal times.

VOCABULARY.

- 3 軸 *Chou²*. An axle, a pivot, axis of motion; a roller:—see Sub.
- 串 *Ch'wan⁴*. To string together; to connect; a string:—see Sub.
- 6 貫 *Kwan⁴*. A string of cash; to string; to go through, to implicate:—see Sub.
- 頁 *Yie⁴*. The head; a leaf of a folio; a slat, a slice:—see Sub.
- 2 幅 *Fu²*. A strip of cloth; a hem; a border; a roll:—see Sub.
- 3 敵 *Yü³*. . . . An ancient musical instrument. (w.)
- 6 鯉 *Li³*. . . . The carp.
- 1 奇事 *Ch'i² shi⁴*. A remarkable thing, a wonder, a marvel; a miracle.
- 1 枷 *Chia¹*. A cangue or wooden collar:—Note (7).
- 宅 *Chai², Chê²*. A dwelling, a residence, a house; a location, a position.
- 對敵 *Tui⁴ ti²*. . . . To join battle, to confront.
- 鐘表 *Chung¹ piao³*. Clocks and watches, a clock, a striking clock.
- 研 *Yen²*. To grind, to rub fine, to powder; to search into.
- 柁 *T'oa²*. A tie-beam or girder between pillars; the triangular frame over each partition, consisting of a girder, two rafters and an upright.
- 樑 *Liang²*. . . . A beam, a girder; a mast.
- 檁 *Lin³*. The poles or beams which extend from one rafter to the other:—Note (22).
- 擱木 *Koa¹ mu⁴*. The wooden plate above a door or window. (c. & n.)
- 托板 *T'oa² pan³*. . . . The same. (s.)

將緊要的出路堵住，那賊往那裏跑呢。

安一面鼓，若一家有了事，把鼓播起來，人家都聽得就

落欸。○古來²⁷拿賊的方法，是一個村，堡蓋一座樓，樓上

物送給他。○東面²⁶那四幅畫屏，像是鄭板橋畫的，却沒

給我一封筆，十塊錢，一籃茶葉，今天必得預備一點禮

樣管他，總斷不了那宗風流氣。○前兩天，一位朋友送

望着，真像一幅好畫圖。○那是²⁴天生的一段材，無論怎

頭戴一頂斗篷，身披一件蓑衣，手拿一根鞭子，遠遠的

板木，還不得成文的錢嗎。○樑²³有二十一根，檁，再加上門窗

三間房子，也得買兩架⁵。○有²³一天，天下小雨，我見放牛的，

- 22 Even if you build but three rooms, it will be necessary to buy two sets of beams, twenty-one rafters, and in addition, the doors and windows with the supporting plates over them. Will it not cost a lot of money?
- 23 One day when it was drizzling, I saw a cowherd wearing a straw hat on his head and a rush coat on his back and holding in his hand a long staff. Looking at him from a distance, he looked just like a well drawn picture. *whip stick*
- 24 That disposition is born in him. No matter how you control him there is no getting rid of that propensity to dissipation.
- 25 A few days ago a friend made me a present of a bunch of pens, ten sticks of ink and a basket of tea. To-day I must provide some present for him.
- 26 Those four sets of scrolls to the east look like the painting of Ching Pan Ch'iao, though his signature is not subscribed. *Ch'iao*
- 27 The ancient method of catching thieves was to build in each village a tower with a drum in it, then if any family missed anything the drum was beaten, and all hearing it at once closed up all the chief ways of exit, so that the thief had no means of escape.

- 成文 *Ch'êng² wên²*. A great many, a lot of [cash]. (Pekingese.)
- 放牛 *Fang⁴ niu²*. To herd cattle; to pasture cattle.
- 葦 *Wē³*. A rush, a reed; tall coarse grass.
- 笠 *Li⁴*. A rain-hat made of coarse grass or bamboo splints; a hamper; a crate.
- 葦笠. A coarse conical rain-hat.
- 篷 *P'êng²*. Coarse matting; an awning, a booth; a ceiling.
- 斗篷 *Tou³ p'êng²*. A coarse conical rain-hat made of straw. (s.)
- 蓑 *Soi¹*. A cloak of thatched leaves or grass.
- 蓑衣 *Soi¹ i¹*. The same.
- 畫圖 *Hwa⁴ t'u²*. A painting.
- 風流 *Fêng¹ liú²*. Dissipated, dissolute, rakish; gay, fast, wild.

- 茶葉 *Ch'a⁴ yie⁴*. Tea leaves, tea. ²⁵
- 屏 *P'ing²*. A screen; a set of scrolls; an ornamental tablet. ⁶
- 欸 *K'wan³*. To respect; a signature, an inscription; a kind; a section, an article. ²⁶
- 落欸 *Lo⁴ k'wan³*. To affix a signature, to attach an inscription or stamp. ²⁶
- 古來 *Ku³ lai²*. Of old, for a long time, ancient, from ancient times. ²⁷
- 方法 *Fang¹ fa³*. Plan, method, expedient, arrangement; prescription. ²⁷
- 村堡 *Ts'un¹ p'u⁴*. A village, a town. ²⁷
- 播 *Lei²*. To rub fine; to beat, to drum. ²⁷
- 緊要 *Chin³ yao⁴*. Important—same as 要緊, but savors of book style. ²⁷
- 有事 *Yu³ shi⁴*. To have business, engaged; to meet with something unusual,—an accident or a misfortune. ²⁷

課六十二百一第

LESSON CXXVI.

我¹⁰本^來根^起的[○]事[。]的^就養^兒
 曉^得來^是託^兒根^姑王⁶○嗎[。]就^厭兒^原
 得^他來^付裏^娘○起⁵○這⁴他[。]為^防
 借^的是^你沒^有○池^的難^些本^不起³先^你
 的^時浙^江你^就沒^有沒⁷的^女人^原是^他所^該
 候[。]在^這就^不息^呢○誰^叫財^主家[。]的^管
 本^原裏^應承[。]當⁸我^底家[。]了[。]的^說
 來^本入^落承[。]○初¹我^底家[。]了[。]的^說
 就^籍戶[。]○我⁹他^底家[。]了[。]的^說
 沒[。]○我⁹他^底家[。]了[。]的^說

- 1 The primary idea in bringing up sons, is to provide against old age.
- 2 I abominated him from the first.
- 3 Is this what you said at first?
- 4 This affair does not properly come under his jurisdiction.
- 5 At first it was rather difficult, but by and by it became easy.
- 6 Wang Wên Ch'í's wife originally belonged to a rich family.
- 7 There is no help for it: whose fault is it [but my own] that I have amounted to nothing?
- 8 When he first came to ask your good offices, you should not have promised.
- 9 Originally a Chekiang man, I have taken up my residence here.
- 10 I know that when he originally bor-

NOTES.

3 張 敵, a noted Chinese painter,—specially noted for painting peonies.

4 Both 封 and 角 are t'ung-hsing as classifiers of dispatches.

6 As a classifier of fish, 條 is much more common than 尾, which is wên.

7 A cangue is a heavy board or block of wood, about three and a half feet square, with a hole in the centre large enough to admit a man's neck. It is made in two halves, and is bolted together and locked around the neck. Culprits are usually sentenced to wear it a number of days, sitting at the gate of the yamên—sometimes at the gate of the person they have sinned against. Generally each culprit has his own cangue, but in some cases the board is made long, with two or more holes, and those who have been guilty of a like offense are locked in together.

8 那 一 天 at the opening of a sentence, is used much as the colloquial English, "the other day."

12 幾 串 銅 錢, a few strings of copper cash—a facetious amplification.

13 Broken silver is usually tied up in packets of fifty taels each, so that a packet ordinarily means this sum. A less amount is however also called 一封.

17 那 有 is here very emphatic. It expresses both the surprise and the indignation of the speaker. The translation falls short of the Chinese.

18 Although is implied at the beginning of this sentence.

22 A Chinese house has, properly speaking, only one pair of rafters over each partition. The 樑 extend between these rafters, the number of them usually being seven, one over the top of each wall, one at the comb, and two between. There is considerable confusion in the application of 花 樑 and 樑 in different sections. Arches are not built over windows and doors, but the superincumbent wall is supported by a heavy wooden plate, for which each locality has its own name.

26 鄭 板 橋, another noted painter.

LESSON CXXVI.

BEGINNING.

原 Originally, primarily.

原 來 Originally, from the first; the fact is, properly, in the nature of the case.

原 起 Originally, primarily; always.

原 先 At first, primarily.

原 本 Originally, primarily, at the outset, in the nature of the case:—Note (16).

原 根 兒 Originally, at first, in the first place. (C. & N.)

原 起 根 兒 The same.

原 底 子 The same. (S.)

起 先 At the first, at the outset; heretofore.

起 頭 Originally, at first, in the beginning.

起 首 The same.

起 前 At first, from the first. (S.)

起 初 Originally, primarily, at first, in the first place, in the beginning.

起 初 頭 The same. (N. & C.)

June 20. 1920

小名就叫巧雲。這塊地本來是姓張的，如今就是神。好直絕。不理他。太初有道與神同在。這麼勸措呢。他原本是本情對不住你，却不好養。這孩子太精細，我前根起錢，那會了。那一個孩子太精細，我前根起錢，那知是咱們給他弄壞了，也不知道原底兒就是這麼的。鄭福德先起，不會逃學，如今却學了。原來世上姓張姓王姓李的最多。也打算還。他們倆，起初相好，近來絕了交略。

rowed it, he did not intend to return it.
 11 They two were originally good friends, but recently they have cut each other's acquaintance.
 12 In point of fact, Chang, Wang and Li are the most common surnames in the world.
 13 It is hard to say whether we spoiled it for him, or whether it was so originally.
 14 Ching Fu Tê was not originally given to playing truant, but he has now learned to do it.
 15 That child was too precocious. I thought from the first he would not live to grow up.
 16 This is money which he has worked for. It is wrong to hold it back in this way.
 17 He has treated you badly it is true, yet it is not right for you to utterly disregard him.
 18 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.
 19 That woman was born on the seventh of the seventh month, hence her little name is Skilful Cloud.

起根 From the first, in the first place, primarily, always.
 根起 The same,—but less general.
 根兒裏頭 Primarily, in the first place. (n.)
 底起根裡 Originally, at first, in the first place. (n.)
 底根兒裡 The same. (n. & s.)
 本 Originally, properly.
 本來 Originally; properly, the truth is, in fact.
 本情 Original state of the case, in the nature of things, really, it is true, of course.
 開頭 At first, beginning from, in the first instance.

開先 The same. (s.)
 太初 In the beginning, at the birth of time.
 當初 At the beginning, at the first, in the first place.
 以來 From the first; heretofore.
 自來 Heretofore, ever, all along, always,—with a negative, never.
 從根 From the first, from the beginning,—with a negative, never. (n. & c.)
 從頭 The same.
 一起頭 In the first place, at the outset.
 一開手 At first, at the start, at the outset.
 一上手 The same.

VOCABULARY.

8 託付 T'oa¹ fu⁴. To ask the help or services of, to entrust to, to depend upon.
 9 浙 Ché⁴. A stream in Chekiang from which the province is named.
 9 落戶 Lo⁴ hu⁴. To reside, to make one's residence, to settle.
 9 籍 Chi²... A list, a register, a docket:—see chi⁴.

入籍 Ju⁴ chi². To be enrolled as a resident, to acquire citizenship.
 滑學 Hwa² hsue²... To play truant. (c.)¹⁴
 精靈 Ching¹ ling². Bright, smart, precocious, quick-witted; ethereal.¹⁵
 同在 Tung² tsai⁴. At the same place, together, with, in company with.

仔細訪問，纔知道是有憑有據的事情。○原打算要買
 錢大東西本情也就是好啊。○起初連我也不信，以後
 聽打聽從頭根我在酒飯館子裏沒有賬。○你別說是價
 人設的。○開起頭先教訓人種莊稼的，是神農。○你不信打
 的，更不像樣兒了。○這些律法原本來是為不孝不弟的
 有錢買的貴。○我的書起根兒就沒念好，如今荒疎
 了有五十萬。○你起根兒是多錢買的，答那時候
 這是我知道的。○他起打頭只有五千銀子的本，現今賺
 ○我自來心軟。○架不住人央求。○他原就臉皮薄。
 典在姓王的手裏。○從明天起開頭，午飯後要兩點鐘上學。

- 20 This piece of land belonged originally to one Chang, but is now mortgaged into the hands of a man named Wang.
- 21 Beginning from to-morrow, school will open in the afternoon at two o'clock.
- 22 I have always been tender-hearted and unable to resist entreaty.
- 23 I know he has always been bashful.
- 24 He had originally only five thousand taels of capital, but he has now cleared about five hundred thousand.
- 25 For how much did you buy it in the first place? Ans. I was rich then, and I paid well for it.
- 23 My scholarship was imperfect in the first place, and now by neglect it has become still more indifferent.
- 27 These laws were made primarily for the unfilial and unfraternal.
- 28 It was Shin Nung who first taught men to cultivate the earth.
- 29 If you do not believe [just go and] inquire. I have never had any account at a saloon or restaurant.
- 30 Do not suppose the price is high, for the goods are really first class.
- 31 Neither did I believe it at first, but afterwards, upon making careful inquiry, I found out that it was a veritable fact.
- 32 I originally intended to buy a pound of oil of peppermint and half a pound of olive oil, but subsequently, because

- 16 措 *K'én³*. To oppress, to wrong, to grind down; to vex, to obstruct.
- 16 勸措 *Lé¹ k'én³*. To oppress, to grind, to keep back what is due.
- 22 臉軟 *Lien³ juan³*. Unable to resist entreaty, tender-hearted, lenient.
- 22 心軟 *Hsin¹ juan³*. The same.
- 22 臉皮 *Lien³ p'í²*. The face as expressive of emotions or character.
- 22 臉皮薄 *Lien³ p'í² poá²*. Shamefaced, bashful, diffident.
- 22 嫩 *Nèn⁴, nun⁴*. Delicate; weak, soft; tender.
- 22 臉嫩 *Lien³ nèn⁴*. Bashful, diffident.
- 22 荒疎 *Hwang¹ su¹*. To neglect, to disuse.
- 22 像樣 *Hsiang⁴ yang⁴*. As it should be, passable, very fair.
- 26 不像樣 *Pu⁴ hsiang⁴ yang⁴*. Inferior, indifferent; out of bounds.

- 飯館 *Fan⁴ kwan³*. An eating-house, a restaurant.
- 磅 *P'ang¹*. A pound,—used for the sound.
- 薄荷 *Poa⁴*. Peppermint. See *poá²*.
- 荷 *Ho²*. The small-leaved water lily.
- 薄荷. Peppermint.
- 橄欖 *Kan³ lan⁸*. The olive.
- 掄 *Lun²*. To choose; to take turns, by turn. Also *lün¹*.
- 掄流 *Lun² liu²*. To take turns, one by one in order.
- 元勳 *Yüan² hsün¹*. A distinguished patriot, especially one who aids in founding a kingdom or dynasty.
- 江山 *Chiang¹ shan¹*. Land, territory, realm, domain.
- 紳 *Shên¹*. A sash; those who are privileged to wear sashes, literati.

好也。叫以前的好處蓋掩了。
 上開手能交到好處以後自然越交越厚就是有點不
 如同沒有魂兒似的。○無論交友是交財若是一
 來越長越壯。○他從從增36小節孝牌坊以後聽說他不大
 穩當就擱下了。○他原從增36小節孝牌坊以後聽說他不大
 算舉保舉他給他一立一座山的就是他。○姚34期原是東漢開國
 的元勳。一起頭打江山的就是他。○原35先紳士們打
 子過現在却是三家掄流着。○姚34期原是東漢開國
 買了半磅。○當33初分家的時候他定規要跟着小兒
 一磅薄荷油半磅橄欖油後來因為錢不穀就每一樣

my money was insufficient, I bought a half pound of each kind.
 33 Originally, when the family was divided, he decided to live with the youngest son, but now he lives by turns with the three.
 34 Yao Ch'i immortalized himself in the founding of the Eastern Han dynasty. It was he who, in the first place, subjugated the land.
 35 In the first place the literati intended to recommend the erection of a monumental arch commemorating her virtue, but afterwards, hearing that her reputation was not the best, the project was dropped.
 36 When Tsêng Fu was still young, he showed some little vigor of mind; but as he grew, he became more and more stupid. Ans. From the first he was not bright, and he had all the time a vacant stare as if he had lost his wits.
 37 Whether in the intercourse of friendship or of business, if a good foundation is laid at the outset, afterwards, as a matter of course, the longer the intercourse continues the more cordial it will become; so that even if some little difference should arise, it is covered over by the former goodwill.

- 35 紳士 Shên¹ shī⁴. . . . Gentry, literati; head-men.
- 35 舉保 Chū² pao³. . . . Same as 保舉.
- 35 節孝 Chiē² hsiao⁴. Chaste and faithful widowhood.
- 35 牌坊 P'ai² fang¹. A commemorative arch:— Note (35).
- 36 佯 Yang². . . . To feign; unreal, feigned; dreary.
- 36 佯向 Yang² hsiang⁴. To look blank, a vacant look; to dream, to muse. (L.)

- 陵 Léng⁴. To stare, to look intently, to gaze; a vacant look, a stare.
- 發陵 Fa¹ léng⁴. To stare, to look dazed; vacant, dazed, stupefied.
- 開手 K'ai¹ shou³. To begin; at first, at the outset.
- 上手 Shang⁴ shou³. . . . The same.
- 蓋掩 Kai⁴ yen³. To cover up, to conceal, to hide from view.

NOTES.

1 This sentence no doubt expresses the chief idea in the desire of the Chinese for sons, though the wish to have some one to offer sacrifices to them after death is also very potent.
 9 落戶 means simply to reside or locate, while 入籍 means to be registered as a citizen. There seems to be no established rule in regard to this registry.
 12 原來, as here used, is not to be understood as referring to the state of things in ancient or former times, but rather as giving emphasis to a fact both past and present. These are by far the most common family names in China.
 15 好養, good to rear; that is, possible to rear,—predestined to live and grow up to adult years.

16 原來 is used to add assurance to the fact stated, somewhat as we use the phrase, in point of fact. 捫到 means that the labor has been performed and the money is due.
 19 巧雲 the star Atair in Cygnus. The mythological story is that 巧雲 is the seventh daughter of 玉皇上帝, and the wife of 牽牛郎 (Denab), and is wonderfully skilful in needlework and all feminine accomplishments. 牽牛郎 borrowed money from 玉皇上帝 for the expenses of his wedding. He failed to repay it, and 玉皇 to punish him, took 巧雲 home, and ever since that allows

第一二七課

N

LESSON CXXVII.

你的¹上孟子，還沒念到底嗎？○我再三問他，到底沒問明白。○善惡³到頭終有報。○末⁴末了，我依了他。○罷⁵了罷了，終久是你有眼力。○這個法子，歸⁷要使不上。○你⁷說不是罵我，到底是罵誰呢。○你⁸這樣懶，終久是要要飯吃。○你¹⁰這樣瞞哄人，終久還壞是壞的自己。○你¹¹知他不將恩報，竟將仇報。○終¹²久親戚是親戚，朋友誰肯出這樣的力呢。○這¹³條路雖然遠點，到底可更方

- 1 Have you not yet finished reading the first half of your Mencius?
- 2 I asked him again and again and after all did not get a satisfactory answer.
- 3 When good and evil have reached their measure, there will finally be a recompense.
- 4 Finally I assented to him.
- 5 Well, well, after all your insight was the best.
- 6 After all this plan will be impracticable.
- 7 You say you are not reviling me, whom then are you reviling?
- 8 If you are so lazy as this, sooner or later you will come to beggary.
- 9 After all the man who does right benefits himself, and the one who does wrong injures himself.
- 10 Deceiving people in this way [do you suppose you] can keep up the deception to the end?
- 11 Who would have supposed that instead of requiting with kindness, he would requite with injury?
- 12 After all "blood is thicker than water."

her to visit her husband and two children only one day in each year; viz., on the seventh of the seventh month. Her mother-in-law takes revenge by compelling her, in that one day, to wash all the dishes the family has used during the year, and to tidy up the whole house. On that day she is worshipped as 巧女姐姐 by Chinese girls and young women who hang up her picture, spread before it offerings of fruit and flowers, and make prostrations, praying her to impart to them some of her wonderful skill. This story has many variations in different localities.

20 姓張的 ought by rights to be 姓張的的, but one 的 is elided.

29 酒飯館 is a contraction for 酒館和飯館.

35 節孝牌坊, an ornamental arch or gateway erected across a street, or at the side of a high-way, to commemorate the constancy of a young widow who has remained faithful to her mother-in-law until death; which is considered the acme of female virtue and filial duty. They are usually allowed on the recommendation of the literati of the woman's native place, made to the literary chancellor of the province. 不大穩當, not very stable or reliable. In this connection it means, virtue not reliable, character not above suspicion.

36 精氣神兒 is a colloquial dissection and amplification of the term 精神.

LESSON CXXVII.

ENDING. Kuai'lo' chi'

到底 To the end, at last, after all, in the end, then.

到了兒 or 到未了兒 At the last, in the end, finally.

到臨了 At the end, near the close, finally.

究竟 After all, finally.

究竟 At last, after all, ultimately, finally.

畢竟 The same—but slightly bookish.

期畢 In the end, finally, sooner or later.

歸期 After all, finally, ultimately, at last. (C. & N.)

歸齊 The same. This is the writing generally adopted in Peking. It does not, however, accord so well with the meaning as 期, moreover wherever hard sounds are used it is incorrect, as it is fundamentally a soft sound. 期 on the other hand is both hard and soft, and is correct everywhere. The tone is changed by the combination from the first to the fourth, as is common in such cases.

却是一輩子的時候。李德隆至今還沒得缺。究竟要
 作一個批評。媒人誇獎我們親家怎樣財主。究竟
 好一無所有。你依你的法子。我依我的法子。我
 竟到了兒。大家都能得好處。劉三起頭並不是
 個馬流屍。只因有些無二鬼。常勾引他。竟成了一
 塊大滾刀肉。這宗族譬如一股水。流出去。分作
 幾條。分作幾十條。究竟都是這一股泉裏的水。
 人得功名。真是一時的傲倖。你看林有能。府縣考
 都取在末尾。這回院考。碰着了題。竟進了個第五

- 23 Her mother never returned home, and no one knows where she went.
- 24 Although Isaac tried his best to keep at peace with him, yet after all he was not able to do so.
- 25 Up to this time Li Té Lung has not obtained an office. He will finally be an expectant official all his life.
- 26 At first I said nothing, but finally I gave him a good overhauling.
- 27 The middleman vaunted about how wealthy our relative was, and here it turns out that he has nothing at all.
- 28 You follow your way and I'll follow my way, and I fancy that in the end we shall all come out right.
- 29 Liu Sau was not originally a dissolute fellow, but being constantly led astray by a set of renegades, he at last became a regular desperado.
- 30 This ancestry is like a stream of water which, flowing forth, divides into several branches or several tens of branches, nevertheless they all come from one source.
- 31 A man's getting a degree is in truth a mere accident of fortune. Look at Lin Yu Néng; at the fu and hsien examinations he stood at the tail end, yet at the recent collegiate examination he

- 無賴子 Wu² lai⁴ tsi³. A vagabond, a tramp; a knave, a dissolute fellow.
- 馬流 Ma³ liu². Dissolute, profligate. (c.)
- 流屍 Liu² shi¹. A vagabond, a tramp; a dissolute fellow. (s.)
- 只因 Chi³ yin¹. Only because, inasmuch as, but since, but:—Les. 181.
- 無二鬼 Wu² ér⁴ kwei³. A rascal, a knave, a sharper, a renegade.
- 勾引 Kou¹ yin³. To lead astray, to entice, to decoy, to inveigle; to draw on.
- 滾刀筋 Kun³ tao¹ chin¹. A reckless and obstinate villain, a desperado, a wretch.
- 滾刀肉 Kun³ tao¹ jou⁴. The same:—Note (29).
- 分作 Fèn¹ tso⁴. To divide, to separate, to parcel out.
- 傲 Chiao³. To do, to act; fortunate, lucky.
- 倖 Hsing⁴. Unusually fortunate, very lucky.
- 傲倖. Good fortune, luck, a happy chance.

- 院考 Yuan⁴ k'ao³. The literary examinations held in each prefecture by the 學院, or Literary Examiner:—Note (31).
- 宋 Sung⁴. To dwell; a surname.
- 撒 Sa³. To scatter, to sow, to put forth, to spill, to leak:—Note (34). See sa¹.
- 撒潑 Sa³ p'oa¹. To do with one's might, to make a strenuous effort, a spurt.
- 放潑 Fang⁴ p'oa¹. The same. (L.)
- 趨 Tsan³. To urge forward, to hasten.
- 攢勁 Tzan³ chin⁴. To do with one's might, to make a strenuous effort.
- 糕 Kao¹. A raised sweet cake, either baked or steamed.
- 雞蛋糕 Chi³ tan⁴ kao¹. A sponge cake.
- 攪和 Chao³ ho². To mix, to stir.
- 蛋黃 Tan⁴ hwang². The yolk of an egg.
- 蛋清 Tan⁴ ch'ing¹. The white of an egg.
- 蛋白 Tan⁴ po². The white of an egg.
- 烤 K'ao³. To toast, to bake; to dry at the fire.

在一塊兒輕輕攪和起來，立時就烤。
 麪攪和勻了，末尾再把蛋白清打起沫來，都合
 五兩，先把蛋黃和糖，使勁攪和起來，後加上
 怎麼做呢？
 了，今天可以做個雞蛋糕，你不會我教給你，
 從三里橋挑來了。○福田啊，點心已經沒有
 宋成仁挑不了二百斤柴伙，他放了幾盞，竟
 搓了，又上河裏過攪了，到底齊還不乾淨，
 回去罷。○這件衣裳，我已經用熱水加胰子
 名秀才。○我好意勸他，他總不聽，咱們不如

happened on the right theme, and after all graduated in the fifth place of honor.
 32 I exhorted him with the best intentions, but he quite refuses to hear. The best thing is for us to go back.
 33 I have rubbed this garment with hot water and soap, and have taken it to the river and rinsed it, and after all it is still not clean.
 34 Everybody said that Sung Ch'êng Jên could not carry two hundred catties of firewood, but by making a strenuous effort, he after all carried it from the three li bridge.
 35 Fu T'ien, the dessert is all used up; you may make a sponge cake to-day. If you do not know how, I will teach you. Ques. How do you make it? Ans. Take of eggs nine ounces, white sugar nine ounces, and flour five ounces: first, thoroughly mix the yolks of the eggs and the sugar, then add the flour and stir till quite smooth: lastly, beat the whites of the eggs into a froth, and mix all together, stirring lightly, and bake at once.

NOTES.

1 Mencius is for convenience divided into two parts, called 上 and 下, which are usually bound in separate volumes. 到底 is here used in its primary sense, and, properly speaking, does not illustrate the subject of the lesson.

3 This is a very useful and important saying. It is not drawn from classical sources, but is found used by Buddhist and Taoist writers, and is very ancient. 到頭 qualifies 善惡, meaning that when good and evil conduct have reached the limit set to them by fate, or by the gods, there will then be a recompense. 終 is the usual writing, though 總 is sometimes found, and would seem more forcible. If it be used the sense is *certainly*, rather than *finally*.

9 A more literal rendering would be, *after all when one does good, the one who gets the good is himself, and when one does evil, the one who suffers the evil is himself.*

11 The use of 報 implies that the person referred to had been the recipient of favor. The translation gives the approximate force of 竟 without any special word.

15 臉面 is the "face" that the other party felt constrained to give to the party interceding, hence it is practically equivalent to *influence*.

22 To 上 a shoe, is to sew the sole fast to the upper.

25 得缺 To get a vacancy; that is, to get a position which has been made vacant by death or otherwise. 候補老爺, a humorous appellation which defies literal translation into English.

27 As soon as a betrothal is concluded the families begin to call each other 親家. It is not an uncommon trick for the go-between to deceive one party (or both) in regard to the circumstances of the other.

29 滾刀筋 or 肉 Turn-knife-tendon or muscle, that is, a piece of tendon or muscle so hard and tough that the knife glances off it, (some say so soft and flabby that it rolls under the knife),—a fellow so depraved that no appeal to virtue or reason, or even to force, makes any impression on him. 一塊 is applied contemptuously.

31 The candidates for literary degrees in each district are first examined by the district magistrate (縣考), and the best, noted and reported. All the candidates in each prefecture are then assembled and examined by the prefect (府考), and the best, noted. All this is preparatory to the examination by the 學院, who makes the circuit of his province twice in three years, and holds examinations in each Fu city, and confers the degrees. 碰着題, to hit the theme. It is a common thing for candidates to write out, in miniature hand, copies of superior essays on standard themes and conceal them on their persons, or to commit a number of such essays to memory, in hope that the theme given may prove to be one of these. When by such means a candidate finds himself in possession of a first class essay, on the required theme he is said to 碰題.

34 It was omitted in Les. 8 to make the proper distinction in the tone of 撒. Read sa¹ it means, to open out, to let loose.

課八十二百一第

LESSON CXXVIII.

們我¹⁰ ○ ① ○ 年好靜¹ 句他¹
 若一若⁹ 他⁸ 近⁷ 來喇。好看嗎。○ 書一見¹
 是一見就知鼓作² 的這天氣一冷一熱好濟³ 的。○ 你⁴ 這反一正。就歡喜的³
 對一對的走還齊整一些。○ 人¹² 你¹¹ ○ 小妾。病。了。幾更安
 對一對的走還齊整一些。○ 人¹² 你¹¹ ○ 小妾。病。了。幾更安
 對一對的走還齊整一些。○ 人¹² 你¹¹ ○ 小妾。病。了。幾更安
 對一對的走還齊整一些。○ 人¹² 你¹¹ ○ 小妾。病。了。幾更安

- 1 As soon as he saw the letter from home, he was wild with joy.
- 2 These two texts are diametrically opposite.
- 3 As soon as the teacher comes, the scholars are quiet.
- 4 When you plant them in rows this way, do they not look much better?
- 5 Without realizing it we have had intercourse for upwards of ten years.
- 6 My memory is poor: in a twinkling I have forgotten.
- 7 The weather has been changeable recently, hence there is much sickness.
- 8 One of the two women he has with him is his wife, and the other a concubine.
- 9 If pus were not forming, would it be a throbbing pain?
- 10 I knew at a glance that she was a bad character.
- 11 It will be more orderly for you to go in pairs.
- 12 When men begin to grow old, the marrow in their bones gradually dries up.

LESSON CXXVIII.

— IN COMPOSITION.

July 11, 1920

Although — has already served as the basis of three lessons, it requires still another.

When — is joined with a verb it marks the exact point of time of the action, and may be rendered, just as, the moment, etc. It is usually followed by a 就 in the next clause, and the two are together equal to, as soon as, whenever, etc.

When — is repeated with words of opposite meaning, it denotes alternation, transition, or enumeration: as,

一反一正 One the wrong, the other the right side, the reverse of each other, opposite sides; negative and positive.

一來一往 Coming and going, back and forth, intercourse.

一冷一熱 Cold and hot by turns, alternations of temperature, changeable.

一妻一妾 A wife and a concubine, the one a wife and the other a concubine.

一大一小 The same; also applied to other distinctions of rank, and of size.

一男一女 A man and a woman; male and female.

一漲一退 Advancing and receding by turns; ebbing and flowing; fluctuating.

一興一衰 Flourishing and declining by turns, progressing and receding, changing.

一紅一白 Red and white by turns, alternations of color.

一起一落 Rising and falling by turns; bobbing up and down; heaving. These are but specimens of many others like them.

When — is repeated with the same word, it denotes order of arrangement or succession: as,

一行一行 Row by row; in rows, in ranks.

一握一握 One grasp or compression after another, by throbs, pulsating.

一掘一掘 One dig or thrust after another, by throbs, lancinating. (c.)

一掣一掣 One pull after another, by jerks, by throbs; twitching, palpitating. (s.)

就是怕急，一急心裏就慌了。我見他臉上，一紅一白，
 爲逢疼起來，就摸着一塊一塊的。人做事，不怕多，
 所以魂一離身，人就死了。他肚子裏，必有積塊，因
 是見不得風，一見風，就流淚。身體是靠靈魂得活，
 一走，碰在門框上，把頭碰了一個大疙瘩。我的眼就
 我說話，我一說話，他就別挑字眼。今天真晦氣，纔往外
 一¹⁶年一年的攢下去，自有富厚的日子來到。他¹⁷不讓
 一¹⁵男一女。○世道一興一衰，好像海潮一漲一退似的。○
 一陣一陣的，下，還擋不住走。○天主起初造人，是造一
 一上了年紀，骨髓就漸漸的枯了。○就怕下大了，這麼

13 Raining this way in showers need not prevent our going. What I fear is that it will rain hard.
 14 When God at first created man, he created one man and one woman.
 15 The progress of events in the world is a series of advances and retrogressions, like the rising and falling of the tides.
 16 Laying by year by year, affluence will naturally ensue.
 17 He will not allow me to speak. Whenever I speak, he finds fault with what I say.
 18 I have been very unlucky to-day. Just as I was going out, I struck my head on the door frame and raised a great lump.
 19 Somehow my eyes cannot endure the wind. As soon as the wind strikes them, the tears flow.
 20 The body is dependent on the soul for life, hence the moment the soul leaves the body, death ensues.
 21 There must be some obstruction in his bowels, for whenever the pain comes on, one can feel lumps.
 22 In working, a large amount is not so much to be feared as is hurry, for whenever one is hurried, the mind becomes confused.
 23 I saw the color come and go in his

一對一對 One pair after another, pair by pair; in pairs.
 一陣一陣 One spell after another, by spells; intermitting.
 一年一年 One year after another, by the year.
 一個一個 Unit by unit, in detached pieces; one by one, seriatim.

一塊一塊 Piece by piece, in pieces, in bits, in lumps.
 一層一層 Story by story, step by step, consecutively; in layers.

Phrases of this class are very numerous. All classifiers may be so used, also many words denoting time, quantity, or action.

VOCABULARY.

9 握 *Woa⁴, Wu⁴*. To grasp, to clench, to compress; a handful.
 9 掘 *Chue²*. To dig, to excavate, to scoop; to throb, to lancinate.
 11 齊整 *Chi² cheng³*. Even, uniform, regular, well arranged, orderly.
 13 髓 *Sui³*. The marrow.
 13 骨髓 *Ku³ sui³*. The marrow in a bone.
 15 世道 *Shi⁴ tao⁴*. The world, the course of events, the times.
 15 海潮 *Hai³ ch'ao³*. The tides.

漲 *Chang⁴*. To rise (as water); to expand, to dilate; to rise in price; to advance.
 富厚 *Fu⁴ hou⁴*. Wealthy, affluent.
 框 *K'wang⁴*. An outer frame, a border.
 積聚 *Chi² chu⁴*. An obstruction or compaction in the bowels; an embolus.
 積塊 *Chi² k'wai⁴*. The same.
 扎實 *Cha¹ shi²*. Strong, firm, secure; forcible, conclusive.
 欺生 *Chi¹ sheng¹*. To insult or impose upon strangers.

第一百二十九課

LESSON CXXIX.

去年新¹安的電線是從上海起，到北京止。○既²不爲名，又不爲利，你想他到底是爲甚麼呢。○初³這人的主意，不可忽然，而天，忽然而地的，應當起一斤，要四十個錢，成包的，只⁴管三十六個錢，到底成⁵總的買，強似⁵零買。○地球上的南北線，名爲經線，就是從南極起，到北極爲止。○那些⁶好花錢的人，起初也是捨不得，以後越⁷花越肯花，末了就是願意花，也沒有甚麼花了。○你⁷既不能念書，又不願學手藝，到底打算怎麼度日呢。○

- 1 The new telegraph line put up last year, extends from Shanghai to Peking.
- 2 If he is seeking neither reputation nor money, what then do you suppose he is seeking?
- 3 A man's purpose should not be subject to great and sudden changes, but what it is at first, it should continue to be, and remain the same to the end.
- 4 If you buy only one catty it costs forty cash; in whole packages the price is only thirty-six cash; in the end it is better to buy at wholesale than at retail.
- 5 The lines running north and south on the globe are called meridians. They extend from the south pole to the north pole.
- 6 Those who are so free with their money were also loath to part with it at first, but afterwards the more they spent the more lavish they became, until at last they found their desires ahead of their means.
- 7 Seeing you cannot get an education, and are not willing to learn a trade, what do you propose to do for a living?

LESSON CXXIX.

CORRELATIVE PARTICLES.

Ability to use a language effectively, and especially ability to use it for the expression of complicated thought, depends largely on the ready and effective use of correlative particles. They are the framework upon which connected thought is strung. Such particles have of course been introduced to some extent in previous lessons, but for the purpose of aiding the learner in finding and acquiring their ready and accurate use, I have arranged a number of lessons on this basis, of which this is the first and simplest. The others, twelve in all, will follow at intervals:—

- 從...起...到...止, From... to.
 到底...強似 After all... better than.
 到底...勝似 After all... better than.
 既不...又不...到底 If not... nor... really; or, since not... nor yet... after all; or, seeing not... and not... then.
 起初...以後...末了 At first... afterwards... at last; or, at first... then... finally.
 These translations are only approximate; they will vary somewhat with the subject and the connexion.

VOCABULARY.

- 成包 Ch'êng² pao¹. By the bundle or package, wholesale.
- 成躉 Ch'êng² tun³. By the lot, by the quantity, wholesale. (c. & s.)
- 成總 Ch'êng² tsung³. The same.
- 勝似 Shêng⁴ sì⁴. Superior to, better than, more advantageous.
- 零買 Ling² mai³. To buy at retail, or in small quantities.
- 地球 Tí⁴ ch'iu². The earth; a globe.

特為來找我的晦氣。起初說些好話，跟我借一吊錢，我不較起來，到底少貪利。強似多貪利。他看着我，是倭儂廢。有一個人，一籠只掙三十個錢，一天却龍能賣十龍屈。這比為止。有一個賣肉包子的，三天賣一籠，能掙一百錢。又○李玉春¹²的舅子，在家裏發瘡^瘡脾^脾紅^紅喇^喇，以後青喇，末了又黃喇。遇見了強盜^{強盜}嚇的臉上起初紅喇，以後青喇，末了又黃喇。是從這個禮拜一起，到下禮拜一為止。○太太¹¹聽說老爺來，到底用汽機，勝似用人力。○每禮拜派一個管事的，就一止。○用汽機，雖然多費本錢，然而折算起他所做的活官府設立粥廠，是從今年十一月初一起，到轉年二月初

- 8 The soup kitchen provided by the officials, opens on the first of the eleventh month of this year, and continues to the first of the second month of next year.
- 9 Although steam power costs more at first, yet if you take into account the work it does, it is better in the end to use steam than to use hand labor.
- 10 A monitor is appointed each week, beginning with Monday of this week and ending with Monday of next week.
- 11 When the lady heard that her husband had met with robbers, her face at first became red, and then turned livid, and finally, pale.
- 12 Li Yü Ch'uu's brother-in-law is at home suffering from ague. [He has an attack] every day, lasting from midnight until daylight.
- 13 A certain seller of meat dumplings sold one platter in three days, on which he cleared one hundred cash; another cleared only thirty cash on each platter, but in one day he could sell ten platters; from which it appears that after all it is best to be satisfied with small profits.
- 14 He thought I was a saphead (green), and came on purpose to victimize me. At first he spoke plausibly and wanted to borrow a thousand cash of me, but I refused to lend it to him. Afterwards he only wanted five hundred,

- 5 經 Ching⁴. The warp; what runs lengthwise; meridians. See ching¹.
- 5 線 Ching⁴ hsien⁴. Meridian lines.
- 7 度日 Tu⁴ ji⁴. To live; to make a living.
- 9 官府 Kwan¹ fu⁹. An officer, officers.
- 4 設立 Shé⁴ lí⁴. To set up, to establish, to institute, to open, to provide.
- 9 廠 Ch'ang⁹. A shed; a dépôt, a storehouse; a manufactory.
- 9 粥廠 Chou¹ ch'ang⁹. A soup kitchen where gruel is dispensed to the poor.
- 9 汽 Ch'i⁴. Steam, vapor.
- 9 汽機 Ch'i⁴ chi¹. A steam engine.
- 12 舅子 Chiu⁴ tsi³. A wife's brother.
- 12 脾寒 P'i² han². Ague.
- 12 天亮 T'ien¹ liang⁴. Dawn, daylight.

- 肉包子 Jou⁴ pao¹ tsi³. A steamed mince dumpling.
- 倭 Woá¹. A name for Japan; zinc; crumpled; soiled; weak, flabby.
- 儂 Nang⁴. Slow, dull, irresolute.
- 倭儂 Dirty, slovenly, squalid; weak, soft.
- 倭儂廢 Woá¹ nang⁴ fei⁴. A silly goose, a sap-head, a mooncalf.
- 特為 Tè⁴ wei⁴. Specially, on purpose.
- 撮攤 Ts'ou⁴ yung⁹. To coax and drag away, to hustle off.
- 真實 Chên¹ shí². True, real, genuine.
- 交情 Chiao¹ ch'ing². The mutual affection of friends, friendship.
- 盛 Shêng⁴. Abundant, exuberant; prosperous; flourishing; excellent. See ch'êng².

才自然衆多，國家自然就強盛了。
 就是在乎振興學校，因為學校若能振興，人
 局，又不在乎多買鐵甲船，到底是在什麼呢。
 不下。○國家強盛的根本，既不在乎設立一
 16 這場雨下的到底不大，却仍舊強似一點
 的人交友，淨是嘴裏的交情，心裏並不實在。
 年間交朋友，到底有點真實滋味，強似如今
 一頓，旁邊的人，好歹把他撮拉着走喇。○往
 放起才來了，說我該他一百吊錢，叫我打了
 借給他，以後只借五百，我還是不借，末了，就

but I still refused. At last he grew outrageous and declared that I owed him a hundred thousand cash, upon which I gave him a sound drubbing, the bystanders hustling him off as best they could.

- 15 The friendships of former times were better than those of the present; they had something genuine in them, whereas now-a-days friendship is merely in words without any reality in the heart.
- 16 After all the rain was but slight, still it is better than that it should not have rained at all.
- 17 Since the source of a nation's prosperity is not in the establishing of arsenals, nor yet in the purchasing of many ironclads, in what then is it? It is in the advancement of education; for if education is advanced, of course men of ability will abound, which will necessarily make the nation prosperous.

- 17 強盛 *Ch'iang² shêng⁴*. Flourishing, prosperous; rigorous, puiant.
- 7 在乎 *Tsai⁴ hu¹*. Same as 在:—Note (16).
- 7 砲局 *P'ao⁴ chü²*. An arsenal.
- 7 鐵甲船 *T'ie³ chia³ ch'wan²*. An iron armored ship,—an ironclad.
- 7 振 *Chên⁴*. To stir up, to excite; to restore, to repair; to alarm.

- 7 振興 *Chên⁴ hsing¹*. To cause to flourish, to advance, to promote.
- 校 *Hsiao⁴*. A school house. Also *chiao⁴*.
- 學校 *Hsüe² hsiao⁴*. A school, a seminary; education, learning, science. (w.)
- 人才 *Jên² ts'ai²*. A man of ability, a gifted man; talent. (w.)
- 衆多 *Chung⁴ tod¹*. Very many, numerous, abundant.

NOTES.

2 According to the translation, 爲 here seems to mean to seek. It really means for the sake of, and a verb must be supplied to complete the sense.

3 忽然而天忽然而地的. The 而 has here approximately the force of 就:—See Les. 138. 天和地 are used figuratively to express strong contrariety.

5 The south pole takes the precedence in China.

8 In scarce years, and in many places every year, the officers open kitchens in the winter, where rice or millet gruel is given out daily to the poor.

11 老爺 is rendered husband, because the connection shows that the person spoken of was the woman's husband.

12 脾寒 is a t'ung-hsing term for ague, but in Central Mandarin 瘧子 is more frequently used, and in the South 瘧疾.

13 The article referred to as a 屨 or 籠, is in Peking called a 籠屨, and in Chinanfu and elsewhere a 籠子.

Different forms have probably given rise to different names. It is primarily a slotted bamboo frame fitting closely in the kettle and resting on its sides; bread and cakes are spread on it to be cooked or warmed by the steam from the water or food which is boiling beneath. This is a 篋子. A hoop is sometimes added which gives the article the form of a sieve, and it is then called a 屨. This hoop is sometimes attached to a matting top (or bottom if you please), instead of to the slotted 篋子, for which it serves as a cover, and the whole is called a 籠 or 籠屨. As many cakes or dumplings as this platter will hold for cooking is called 一籠, or 一屨.

14 老實 here means green, pliant, spiritless, but falls far short of the force of the expression with which it is mated.

16 在乎 is a book form, frequently used in colloquial. The 乎 is a mere euphonic particle, having no effect on the meaning of 在.

課十三百一第

LESSON CXXX.

子來嗎？答：可以試試，可管許不離大離。○我於世再經
 二番託他，莫非他又忘記喇。○你們倆能豎起這梯
 ○莫不是尹先生來了，別人敲門不能這樣急。○這第
 更重喇。○家裏有白糖沒有，想還許有一點，却不能多。
 載過去了。○今天英子沒來上學，豎許是他母親病的
 是我記錯了，我却總覺着不能。○頭那個人掉的料許就
 在那裏。○這條手巾，少多不是前頭他在棧房，如今也
 嗽，敢許是喫的鹹菜多喇。○先頭他在棧房，如今也
 的。○說起那個人來，占管許你必認得。○行也孩子這
 人¹的好歹，我許品得出來。○那句話，行也孩子這

- 1 I can generally form a fair estimate of a man's character.
- 2 It may be that he used the expression without thinking.
- 3 Speaking of that man—you most probably know him.
- 4 This continual coughing is probably because the child has eaten too much salt pickle.
- 5 A little ago he was in the ware-room, and probably he is still there.
- 6 This handkerchief was most likely dropped by that man in front.
- 7 Possibly my memory is at fault, but I hardly think it can be.
- 8 By using one ferry-boat we may perhaps get them taken over.
- 9 Ying-tsi did not come to school to-day. I presume his sick mother is worse.
- 10 Is there any white sugar in the house? Ans. There may still be a little, but there cannot be much.
- 11 It must be that Mr Yin has come. No one else would knock so furiously.
- 12 It must be he has forgotten again this, the second, time that we have depended upon him.
- 13 Can you two set up this ladder? Ans. We'll try. Most probably we can.
- 14 When I have had a few more years of experience, I may perhaps be considered a man of good judgment.

LESSON CXXX.

PROBABILITY.

hsu 許 Probably, perhaps, possibly, likely, may be. 許 is the most generally useful and extensively used word for expressing probability.

行許 Perhaps, possibly, it may be. (c.)

管許 Probably, quite likely, most likely, in all probability.

han 占許 Probably, in all probability, most likely. (c.)

許得 Perhaps, possibly, it may be. (L.)

lioo 料得 The same. (s.)

想許 I presume, probably, it may be. (N.)

多半是 Most likely, most probably.

少不是 or 少不得 The same. (L.)

敢 I dare say, I presume. (s.)

想必 Most likely, in all probability. (s.) See Les. 96.

敢 I dare say, perchance, possibly, probably, I venture. *sh*

巧了 May possibly, perchance, peradventure, mayhap.

好像 It seems as if:—Les. 99.

或者 Possibly, it may be:—Les. 56.

莫不是 It must be that.

莫非是 The same.

橫豎 Probably, most likely, I venture. *heng shu*

shu 庶幾 May perhaps, perchance,—a book term often used by educated men, but sounding a little pedantic.

時候，或巧者了，就奪回來了。
 的管若是我們的官星顯的
 上給他個措手不及去偷他
 氣可以挑選五百精兵今晚
 我們的砲臺來，我就是不
 我回家給你找。奪許不
 家裏書案桌子上，答許啊等
 天和酒來，橫豎檄在你
 裏到底沒找着，我細想想，昨
 弄了。○我的烟袋荷包在家

27 After all, I could not find my tobacco pouch anywhere at home, and, upon considering, I think it must be that yesterday when I was drinking wine with you, I left it on your book table. Ans. Possibly you did. I will look it up for you when I go home.

28 I cannot be satisfied unless we recapture our fort. You may select five hundred tried soldiers and, coming on them suddenly to-night, take them by surprise. If my lucky star should be in the ascendant, perchance we may recapture it.

NOTES.

1 許 is here used to express that peculiar shade of assumed humility which suggests a touch of self-conceit. The idea of probability is implied. The distinction in the tone of 品 is not made in Peking, where all meanings are p'in³.

4 鹹菜 Turnips or other vegetables pickled in brine and cut up into little bits. The Chinese put no salt in their rice or millet, but eat this *hsien ts'ai* with it instead. It is popularly supposed that eating too much 鹹菜 will cause coughs and asthma.

10 Different teachers will give different opinions as to whether 還許 or 許還 is the better. So also in English we can say, *There is perhaps still a little*, or *There is still a little, perhaps*.

15 There is much variety in the use of words for yeast. 引子, and 酵子, and 引酵, and 麪酵, and 發麪, and 麪肥, are all used in various places. 酵 expresses the idea of fermentation, and 引 that of propagation. In Shantung and Peking and perhaps elsewhere, 引子 means the yeast proper, either wet or dry, and 酵 the sponge.

18 The front of most Chinese shops consists of upright boards sliding in grooves. They are taken down in the

morning and put up at night. Hence 關板 is to "shut up shop." To close up for the night is 上板.

19 好像 is stronger than 巧了, and would require us to translate, *It seems as if he had, but I do not remember*.

20 易經 The oldest and most obscure of the Chinese classics. The diagrams on which it is founded are attributed to 伏羲, but the text was written by 文王, and afterwards expanded by Confucius. It is essentially a book of divination.

22 傷觸 is somewhat bookish; 觸犯 is the more colloquial form. 觸 alone is also used.

25 Chinese women, whose feet are larger than is esteemed pretty, often make a false foot of wood which they wear underneath the heel of their own foot, the toes and front part of which are bent nearly straight down as if standing on tiptoe.

26 詭計多端 *Abound in deceitful stratagems*,—a book phrase.

28 偷營, to come suddenly upon the encampment of an enemy and capture it by surprise. 官星 *Official star*. Each officer, in theory at least, regards himself as under the guiding influence of some particular star.

LESSON CXXXI.

APPREHENSIVENESS.

恐 I fear, lest. *K'ung*
 怕 I fear, I am afraid, I presume. *p'a*
 恐怕 I fear, I am afraid, lest, peradventure, I apprehend; probably. Though *properly* expressing apprehension of something undesirable, 恐怕 is often used, especially in the South, for simple probability.

恐其 The same as 恐怕, but a little more colloquial.

只怕 I only fear, it is to be feared; I suspect; but, peradventure.

只恐 It is to be feared, the danger is.

就怕 I am afraid, the fear is, lest.

就恐 The same.

惟恐 I fear, it is to be feared, lest perchance, peradventure.

第一百三十一課

LESSON CXXXI.

出來那裏敢曠功呢。○應當遠離匪類人，恐怕叫
 你把這件事看得太容易了。○趕着做還怕做不
 來。○他¹¹有一半點好處，惟是怕人不知道。○恐¹²怕
 你難作好人。○晚上應該早早關門，恐其有賊進
 一點，恐怕錢不設用的。○在這樣繁華地方，我怕
 仍舊忍耐，恐其把他越發慣壞了。○以後要儉省
 說話。○他⁶說是要守算，我恐怕他守不住。○若⁷是
 恐怕趕不回來。○別的我都不怕，就是怕他不讓
 老爺怕沒喫過我們的茶罷。○到⁴落沒太陽的時候，
 臨時恐怕預備不及。○我大媽娘的病，恐其難好。○

1 I fear that when the occasion arrives, we will not have time to get ready.
 2 My aunt will not, I fear, recover from her disease.
 3 I presume you, sir, have not before eaten of our dishes.
 4 I suspect we shall not be able to get back by sunset.
 5 I do not fear anything else; I only fear he will not allow me to speak.
 6 She says she will remain a widow, but I apprehend she will not be able.
 7 If we continue to indulge him, I fear we shall spoil him all the more.
 8 Henceforth we must be a little more saving lest our money be insufficient.
 9 In such a gay place as this, I fear you will find it hard to lead a virtuous life.
 10 At night you should shut the door early, lest thieves get in.
 11 When he does any little praiseworthy thing, he is so afraid people will not know it.
 12 I fear you underrate the difficulty of this affair.
 13 I fear I cannot finish even by hurrying; how then should I venture to idle away time.
 14 You should keep aloof from dissipated

VOCABULARY.

- 恐 *K'ung*³. Apprehensive, alarmed; suspicious; lest, supposing, perhaps:—see Sub.
- 惟 *Wei*². To consider; just so, precisely; but, only; and so, only that:—see Sub.; also Les. 150.
- 9 繁華 *Fan*² *hwa*². Gay, fashionable, festive; dissipation.
- 13 曠 *K'wang*⁴. Vacant, waste; spacious; to relax, to neglect.
- 13 曠功 *K'wang*⁴ *kung*¹. To neglect work or duty, to idle away time.
- 14 遠離 *Yüan*³ *li*². To keep aloof from, to avoid, to give a wide berth.
- 16 飲 *Yin*⁴. To give an animal drink. See *yin*³.
- 17 走岔 *Tsou*³ *ch'a*⁴. To take different roads; to work at cross purposes.
- 18 替換 *T'i*⁴ *hwan*⁴. To substitute, to exchange, to take turns.
- 側 *Ts'ê*⁴, *Chai*³. Lateral, inclining, awry, uneven, tilted.
- 側稜 *Chai*¹ *lêng*⁴. Inclined, uneven, tilted, edgewise.
- 凸 *Tu*³, *Ku*³. Projecting, convex, bulged. Also read *kung*³ in Nanking.
- 橋凸 *Ch'iao*² *kung*³. Bulged, warped, uneven, tilted. (s.)
- 洩漏 *Hsie*⁴ *lou*⁴. To leak out, to come to light, to let out a secret.
- 瞰 *Sa*². To look about, to glance at.
- 瞰目 *Sa*² *mu*⁴. To look about, to glance around, to take a look. (c.)
- 眈 *Hsüe*². To look sharply, to look about.
- 眈目 *Hsüe*² *mu*⁴. To look askance, to look about, to take a look. (N.)
- 瞥 *P'ie*¹. To glance at, to look askance at.

了。警目目樂不晚恐換差驢他
 只怕這怕這匹馬好大龍性若不牽着恐怕撒歡。○楊
 警職吹目目。○恐²³○只²²怕太不喜歡來若喜歡來我們都
 這²⁴匹馬好大龍性若不牽着恐怕撒歡。○楊²⁶
 晚還有不洩漏的嗎。又我²¹回²⁰去¹⁹的恐¹⁸怕¹⁷不¹⁶做¹⁵一¹⁴個¹³人¹²怕¹¹扛¹⁰不⁹住⁸。○安⁷在⁶那⁵個⁴橋³側²稜¹
 恐¹⁶怕¹⁵倒¹⁴了。打¹³着¹²孩¹¹子。○事¹⁰情⁹就⁸恐⁷怕⁶不⁵做⁴一³個²是¹凸⁰着⁻¹地⁻²方⁻³。
 換¹⁶着¹⁵做¹⁴一¹³個¹²人¹¹怕¹⁰扛⁹不⁸住⁷。○安⁶在⁵那⁴個³橋²側¹稜⁰
 差¹⁶人¹⁵迎¹⁴他¹³去¹²罷¹¹。又¹⁰恐⁹走⁸岔⁷了⁶道⁵兒⁴。○該³有²兩¹個⁰人⁻¹替⁻²
 驢¹⁶不¹⁵吃¹⁴草¹³。恐¹²怕¹¹是¹⁰渴⁹了⁸。可⁷以⁶打⁵點⁴水³來²飲¹飲⁰他⁻¹。○工⁻²活⁻³。
 他¹⁶拉¹⁵下¹⁴去¹³。○就¹²怕¹¹他¹⁰一⁹得⁸了⁷錢⁶。再⁵不⁴正³經²做¹工⁰夫⁻¹。○
 若¹⁷

men lest they drag you down with them.
 15 What I fear is, that if he gets the money, he will not afterwards do his work properly.
 16 The donkey is not eating his food. I fear he is thirsty; bring some water and give him a drink.
 17 If I should send any one to meet him, the danger is they might take different roads.
 18 There should be two to work by turns. I am afraid one man could not stand it.
 19 If you set it in that uneven place, I fear it may fall over and strike the children.
 20 The only doubt is as to whether he did it. If he did it, there is no doubt but that it will leak out sooner or later.
 21 If I am late returning, I fear the old folks will be uneasy.
 22 I only fear your ladyship will not care to come; if you would like to come, we shall all be perfectly delighted.
 23 I presume he has already hidden it. You might go to his house and take a sly look.
 24 This is a very spirited horse. If he is not led, I fear he may get frisky and run away.
 25 This method having been practiced for so long, it will necessarily, I fear, be a mere formality.

- 2 警 警 瞧 P'ie¹ p'ie¹ ch'iao². To look about, to glance around. (s.)
- 2 龍 性 Lung² hsing⁴. Spirited, mettlesome, fiery (of horses).
- 2 撒 歡 Sa¹ hwan¹. To frisk, to prance, to gambol, to curvet.
- 2 已 久 I³ chiu³. A good while, a long time; equal to 已經久了.
- 2 未 免 Wei⁴ mien³. Not to be avoided, unavoidable; necessarily.
- 棠 Tang². A species of crab-apple.
- 2 彪 Piao¹. Streaks, veins; ornate; foolish, eccentric, silly.
- 2 半 彪 子 Pan⁴ piao¹ tsü³. A fool, an ass, a mad-cap, a crack-brain.
- 2 螞 Ma³. A leech; an ant. Also ma⁴.
- 2 蟻 I³. An ant.

- 螞 蟻 An ant.
- 白 螞 蟻 A white ant; a good-for-nothing, a loafer, a drone, a deadhead. (s.)
- 促 織 Ts'u⁴ chü¹. The cricket. 2 5
- 鷹 Ying¹. The falcon, eagle, hawk, etc. 2 5
- 鶉 Ling². The lark, the wagtail. 2 5
- 百 鶉 Pai³ ling³. The thick-billed lark; a thrush. 2 5
- 對 詞 Tui⁴ ts'i². To bear witness; to respond to a charge, to answer. 2 5
- 敵 手 Ti³ shou³. An opponent, an antagonist, a match; the adverse party. 2 5
- 借 字 Chie⁴ tsi⁴. A promissory note. 2 5
- 欠 據 Ch'ien⁴ chü⁴. The same. (s.)
- 鴻 Hung². The swan; vast, immeasurable; profound.
- 言 明 Yen² ming². To state explicitly, to agree, to arrange definitely.

四年本利還清，恐後無憑，立此據帖字存照。分

李鴻發錢一百二十吊整，言明月利一分。

楊三敵手。○立²⁹欠^欠借^借據^據帖^帖字^字人王學易今借到

織玩百大鴿鴈。所以叫²⁹他白半^半堂對詞恐其不是

○江²⁸南棠那^那是個武將。只恐你還巴結不上呢。

真是個文官。武將。只恐你還巴結不上呢。

麼呢。答你巴結他，是個武將。我巴結他幹甚

又仔細，惟恐有問屈了的地方。他²⁷也不

太爺真是好官，無論甚麼官司，都是仔細

26 Yang T'ai Yie is certainly a good magistrate. No matter what the case may be, he is exceedingly careful, lest perchance he should do some injustice.

27 He is neither a civil officer nor a military captain; why should I court his favor? Ans. You court his favor because he is a wealthy aristocrat. If he were indeed a civil or military officer, it is to be feared that paying court to him would be beyond your reach.

28 Chiang Nan T'ang is a crack-brained fellow. From his youth he has done nothing but fight quails and fly falcons (fight crickets and play with thrushes), hence I fear it will not do to have him appear in court as respondent. He is no match for Yang the third.

29 The drawer of this note, Wang Hsue I, has this day received of Li Hung Fa the sum of one hundred and twenty thousand cash, which is to bear interest at one per cent. per month, and it is agreed that principal and interest shall be paid in full within four years. Lest hereafter proof should be wanting, this note is given in evidence.

NOTES.

4 沒 is not here a contraction for 沒有, but means of itself properly, to disappear.

5 Chinese officials, when they think they already understand a case, or when they are bribed or influenced in other ways to take a given view of it, are in the habit of refusing peremptorily to allow the party assumed to be in the wrong to speak for himself, or to offer evidence.

11 The conditional character of the first clause is implied in the structure of the sentence. In some localities 知不道 is regularly used for 不知道.

15 As here used 工夫 means work, that is, that which occupies time. This use is not unfrequent.

17 走裕道 to go by a branch road, and so fail to meet one who goes by the other road, to miss by taking different roads.

20 This is a somewhat perplexing sentence. It is translated as referring to the past, and to an absent party. It is equally applicable to the present as a direct address; The only uncertainty is about your doing it; once done it is sure to leak out sooner or later.

21 老見的 or 老的兒 is much used in the North for parents when speaking to others. It is somewhat inelegant,

but not in the least disrespectful. The second form seems to be a sort of unconscious transposition of the first. In the South 兒 is omitted and 老的 used.

25 虛應故事 vainly fulfil the old thing, that is, to follow a mere routine. A book phrase.

27 巴結 is here used in its more unusual sense of paying court to, or fawning upon. 武將 is rarely used, save as here in correlation with 文官.

28 鬥鴿鷄, to fight quails, 放大鷹, to let loose the great falcon. Fighting quails, and catching rabbits and small birds with falcons, are favorite amusements with Chinese sportsmen, especially in the North. 白螞蟻, a white ant, that is, one that has always enjoyed itself eating and resting within doors, and has never been bronzed by toil and exposure, hence a house-plant, a loafer.

29 This is the usual form of a promissory note. One per cent. per month is considered very low interest for small amounts. Two per cent. is very common, and is what all the pawn shops exact. Three and even five per cent. a month are often asked, and not unfrequently paid.

第一百三十課

倘若他不肯來，也要揪他來。設若年少時學好了，就如生成的一般。○倘若或你不信，可以問問他連襟。○倘若世上沒有惡人，怎能顯出善人來呢。○如若有人欺負你，不要和他爭競。○設或是我做得來的，我還能推辭嗎。○假如別人輕慢你的父母，你心裏必不歡喜。○要緊要買好的，如或錢不敷，請你給我墊上。○倘若或來提問的時候，小人難以回話。○他若賣了更好，設若不賣，可以再加上五百錢。○設如這事，在你自己身上，再不能說得這麼輕省。○倘若說他不好，他心裏就慚愧、怨恨。○應該看事作事，如若不然，怕你要吃大虧。○他做惡不改，倘和他交往，必定壞了我們的名聲。○莊稼是好莊稼，設若不下這

LESSON CXXXII.

- 1 If he is not willing to come, then bring him by force.
- 2 If anything be well learned in youth, it becomes like a second nature.
- 3 If you do not believe it, you may ask his brother-in-law.
- 4 If there were no bad men in the world, how would good men be recognized as such?
- 5 In case any one insults you, do not contend with him.
- 6 If it were something I was able to do, do you suppose I would decline?
- 7 If some one should sneer at your father and mother, you would assuredly not be pleased.
- 8 Be sure and buy good ones; in case the money is not sufficient, please advance it for me.
- 9 If at any time the case is transferred [to a higher court], your humble servant will find it hard to make answer.
- 10 If he accepts the offer, so much the better; if not, then you may add five hundred cash.
- 11 If this business concerned you, you would not, by any means, speak so lightly of it.
- 12 If you reprove him, he is ashamed and hates you.
- 13 You should be guided by circumstances, otherwise you may suffer serious loss.
- 14 He is a hopelessly bad man; if we associate with him, our reputation will certainly be ruined.
- 15 The crops were good, and if this

LESSON CXXXII.

CONDITIONAL PARTICLES.

July 27, 1920

The common and most frequently used conditional particle is 若 or 若是, given in Les. 14.

倘若 If, supposing that,—generally joined with 若 or 或.

倘若 If, supposing, premising.

倘或 If, etc.;—not sensibly different from 倘若, but a little more bookish.

如 If;—generally joined with 若 or 或.

如若 If, in case.

如或 If, in case,—not sensibly different from 如若.

設若 If, supposing that, suppose, if it should happen.

設或 If, provided,—not sensibly different from 設若.

設如 If,—same as 設若.

設使 If, suppose. A book term.

假若 If, in case, suppose.

假如 Same as 假若.

假使 Same as 設使.

了 你 嗎。 設 假 使 你 延 捱 着， 竟 不 問 你 要 也 罷 了， 究 竟 正 項 錢 糧 依 舊 是 脫 不 了 的， 你 們 喜 歡 拖 欠 是 爲 什 麼 呢。 不 知 是 誰 將 一 個 路 倒 的 送 在 我 地 裏， 老 族 長 說 不 如 寂 悄 的 把 他 掩 埋 了， 不 用 稟 官， 我 看 總 是 不 對。 假 若 走 漏 風 聲， 被 人 挾 告， 這 不 是 個 活 亂 子 嗎。 聽 說 你 們 外 國 所 住 的 房 子， 走 的 道 路， 用 的 器 具， 做 的 工 程， 好 像 是 別 有 天 地。 設 若 只 隔 三 五 千 路， 我 定 要 去 逛 逛 見 見 世 面。 設 如 和 少 年 發 達 的 人 談 起 功 名 來， 就 當 說 是 捷 足 先 登 若 和 那 些 久 望 發 達 的 人 談 起 功 名 來， 就 當 說 是 大 器 晚 成。

24 If, by delaying, it came to pass that you were not ultimately compelled to pay, it might do; but in the end your legal taxes you cannot escape: why then are you so anxious to defer payment?
 25 I wonder who brought a [dead] outcast and laid him on my land. The head of the clan says it would be better to bury him quietly without reporting to the magistrate, but I do not think so. If [I do so, and] a report of it gets out, and I am accused by some one, it will be a serious affair for me.
 26 I hear that in the foreign country, the houses you live in, the roads you travel on, the utensils you use and the work you carry on, all seem as if it were a different world. If it were only a few thousand li, I would certainly visit you and see the sights.
 27 If you should be talking about degrees to one who got his degree young, you should say, "The nimble foot gets up first"; if talking of degrees to those who have long been hoping for a degree, you should say, "Great utensils are long in reaching completion."

24 捱 *Yai²*. To lean upon; to put off, to procrastinate; to bear, to suffer.
 24 延 捱 *To put off, to postpone, to delay.*
 24 錢 糧 *Ch'ien² liang²*..... Taxes.
 24 拖 欠 *T'o² ch'ien⁴*. To defer payment, to evade paying a debt.
 25 斃 *Pi⁴*..... To fall down dead, to die.
 25 倒 臥 *Tao³ wo⁴*. To fall and die; one found dead on the street or at the roadside, the dead body of an outcast.
 25 路 倒 *Lu⁴ tao³*..... The same.
 25 路 斃 *Lu⁴ pi⁴*..... The same.
 25 掩 埋 *Yen³ mai²*. To hide in the ground, to bury.

25 寂 *Chi⁴*..... Silent, quiet; lonesome, solitary.
 25 走 漏 *Tsou³ lou⁴*. To leak out, to become known; to let out a secret.
 24 風 聲 *Feng¹ sheng¹*..... A rumor, a report.
 24 挾 *Hsie²*. To presume upon, to extort, to squeeze, to take advantage of. Also *chia¹*.
 24 挾 告 *Hsie² kao⁴*. To accuse at law, to bring suit against in order to injure.
 26 工 程 *Kung¹ ch'eng²*. Work, public works; handiwork; performance.
 27 發 達 *Fa¹ ta²*. To prosper, to get rich; to get a degree, to succeed in life.
 27 捷 *Chie^{2,4}*. To gain a victory, to complete; prompt, quick.

NOTES.

2 This sentence is given as it stands in the Sacred Edict. As spoken, however, 年少時 is not smooth. Either 年 or 時 should be omitted, or, better still, expand the expression into 年少的時候.
 9 This is the language of a jailor or an underling in a yamên to whose safe keeping a prisoner of some consequence

has been committed. 小人 is here used as a demeaning term instead of 我. The use of 來 intimates the coming of a messenger or deputy with orders for the transfer of the case, 回話, make answer concerning the condition or whereabouts of the prisoner.

第一三十三課

LESSON CXXXIII.

若¹不是²你³就⁴必⁵是⁶他⁷。若⁸是⁹行¹⁰好¹¹自¹²能¹³得¹⁴好¹⁵。○設¹⁶或¹⁷心¹⁸裏¹⁹沒²⁰有²¹口²²裏²³自²⁴然²⁵說²⁶再²⁷去²⁸。○他²⁹請³⁰我³¹不³²能³³爲³⁴別³⁵的³⁶事³⁷情³⁸不³⁹出⁴⁰來⁴¹。○就⁴²是⁴³作⁴⁴保⁴⁵。○倘⁴⁶若⁴⁷船⁴⁸僱⁴⁹不⁵⁰是⁵¹借⁵²錢⁵³。○走⁵⁴到⁵⁵這⁵⁶裏⁵⁷。○倘⁵⁸若⁵⁹不⁶⁰得⁶¹着⁶²中⁶³安⁶⁴。○只⁶⁵好⁶⁶打⁶⁷早⁶⁸路⁶⁹走⁷⁰就⁷¹是⁷²了⁷³。○若⁷⁴不⁷⁵得⁷⁶着⁷⁷你⁷⁸老⁷⁹恰⁸⁰巧⁸¹。○若⁸²是⁸³重⁸⁴看⁸⁵妻⁸⁶子⁸⁷。○就⁸⁸必⁸⁹不⁹⁰輕⁹¹他⁹²手⁹³裏⁹⁴。○倘⁹⁵若⁹⁶柴⁹⁷糧⁹⁸米⁹⁹草¹⁰⁰太¹⁰¹貴¹⁰²。○只¹⁰³可¹⁰⁴看¹⁰⁵岳¹⁰⁶父¹⁰⁷岳¹⁰⁸母¹⁰⁹。○倘¹¹⁰若¹¹¹設¹¹²或¹¹³京¹¹⁴裏¹¹⁵改¹¹⁶變¹¹⁷小¹¹⁸少¹¹⁹買¹²⁰不¹²¹可¹²²多¹²³存¹²⁴。

- 1 If it is not you, then it must be he.
- 2 If a man does good, he will of course receive good.
- 3 If the weather is unfavorable, there is no way but to go at some other time.
- 4 If it is not in his mind, of course it cannot come out of his mouth.
- 5 He cannot want to see me for anything else than either to borrow money or to ask me to go his security.
- 6 If you fail to hire a boat, you will just have to go by land.
- 7 If you, good sir, had not happened along in the nick of time, we could not have escaped death at his hands.
- 8 If a man has a high regard for his wife, he will, of course, not despise his father-in-law and mother-in-law.
- 9 When grain and fuel are very dear, it is best to buy but little and not keep much on hand.
- 10 If a change is made to the small

11 在你自己身上, on your own body; i.e., concerned you. 再 here takes special emphasis; by any means is an approximate rendering.

18 The sentence is from the Sacred Edict and accords with orthodox Chinese teaching. The idea it expresses is at variance, however, with the general sentiment of mankind, and even the Chinese while they approve the sentiment theoretically, do not often feel so in fact. Fraternal affection is not remarkably prevalent amongst them. Notice in 這兄弟 the use of the definite for the indefinite.

22 衣冠禽獸, a clothed and capped beast,—a book phrase.

23 念佛, to repeat 阿彌陀佛, that is, Amitábha Buddha. This is done as a meritorious prayer or penance, as the Romanists repeat *pater noster*.

24 Originally taxes were paid in grain, and are still in some parts of China, hence the term 錢糧, which is now

applied to taxes generally. 糧 is also used alone, even when the payment is in money. 正項, the regular or legal amount; 項 is used as a classifier.

25 Of the three terms used, 路倒 is the official one. It is no uncommon thing for wandering outcasts to die on the road, especially in the winter. Chinese are very much afraid of having such an outcast die on their land or premises, as it generally involves them in considerable expense at the yamén. When a man finds such a corpse on his land or premises, he will, if possible without discovery, move it on to the land of his neighbor, or his enemy. Bodies are sometimes moved several times in this way. 活亂子, an urgent or insuperable difficulty or embarrassment.

26 別有天地, a book phrase equal to 另一個天地, another heaven and earth, that is, a different world.

27 捷足先登 and 大器晚成 are both complimentary sayings in the book style.

LESSON CXXXIII.

CORRELATIVES WITH IF.

若是...就必 If... of course, then must.
 若是...自能 If... of course, necessarily.
 若是...只好 If... no way but.
 若是...自然 If... of course, naturally.
 若是...怎能 If... how can.
 若是...未必 If... not likely, not probable, uncertain whether.

若不...就必 If not... then must.
 若不...只好 If not, unless... then only, just have.
 若能...免得 If can... and so avoid or prevent.
 若能...省得 If could... and so avoid or save.

那¹⁹不^少肯^留人^自未^必了[。]能^勝審^詞就^肯銅^錢
 個^人少^你留^宿自^然必^肯錢^貨
 渾^身你^若我^們沒^有幫^助上^關貨^物
 是^油是^不只^可法^兒你^自然^必跌^落
 不^是給^他去^投治[。]○設^或跌^價。
 是^個調^處說^下店[。]○若^是大^老爺[。]○若^是他^家裏[。]
 個^油調^處說[。]就^是他^肯留^宿更^好。[。]若^是不[。]
 匠[。]就^是好^看他[。]○若^是能[。]
 就^是個^廚子[。]○若^是能[。]
 就^是個^廚子[。]○若^是能[。]

cash in the capital, the prices of goods will naturally fall.
 11 If he had sufficient to live on at home, it is not likely he would go to Kwantung.
 12 If the warrant is already issued, of course you will have to go and stand trial.
 13 Don't you assume that you can impose upon him because he is weak; if he should summon all his strength, it is not at all certain that you could master him.
 14 They are either scolding or fighting every day. I am tired of hearing it.
 15 You think he is your friend, do you? But if you do not curry favor with him, I question very much whether he will help you.
 16 In case your worship should yourself appoint him head clerk, of course no one could hinder it.
 17 If he is willing to lodge us, so much the better; if he is unwilling to lodge us, we shall have to go to an inn: that's all.
 18 He has stirred up a deal of trouble, and unless you mediate for him, we shall have to witness his disgrace.
 19 That man is all covered with grease; if not a painter, he must be a cook.

倘若...只好 or 只可 If... it is best, just have to, the only way is.
 倘若...未必 If... not certain, not likely.
 設若...未必 If... not likely.
 設或...自然 If, in case... of course, naturally.

設或...就必 If... certainly.
 [若]不是...就是 If not... then—, or, either... or. In this combination 若 is understood before 不是.
 倘若...只得 If... it will be necessary.

VOCABULARY.

3 天道 T'ien¹ tao⁴. Heavenly doctrine, divine truth; the weather.
 5 作保 Tso⁴ pao³. To go security, to become surety for.
 8 岳母 Yo⁴ mu³. Wife's mother.
 14 改變 Kai³ pien⁴. To change, to modify, to alter.
 10 貨物 Hwo⁴ wu⁴. Goods, merchandise, commodities.
 12 審 Shen³. To investigate; to discriminate, to examine and judge.

12 對審 Tui⁴ shen³. To confront in court, to stand trial.
 13 發潑 Fa¹ p'od¹. To put forth all the strength, with all the might. (s.)
 15 買奉 Mai³ feng⁴. To curry favor with, to put under obligation; to bribe.
 16 經承 Ching¹ ch'eng². The head clerk of an office.
 17 留宿 Liu³ hsiu³. To invite to stay over night, to keep over night.
 17 留歇 Liu³ hsiu¹. The same. (s.)

把他告倒了，管保眾人沒有不願意的，免得他常常橫行。不過眼前沒有好手比着，倘若見了博學名家，他未必能出得俗。○幸虧他老三不在家，設若他在家裏，未必能了了得。○這部書卷數很多，設或不號出來，就必亂了頭緒。○若能學的會畫拉副對子，會寫個人名字，也省得一動筆的事情，必得求人。○若是我們待他好，他自然也待我們好，若是我們待他不好，他怎能待我們好呢。○雖然老的沒留下什麼，也不要灰心，若是起五更起半夜眠，少吃減

- 20 If you can carry the suit against him and prevent his constantly acting so outrageously, I can assure you everybody will be pleased.
- 21 It was simply that there was no first class man present with whom to compare. If he were to meet men of acknowledged ability, it is not likely he would appear more than ordinary.
- 22 Fortunately his third brother was not at home: if he had been at home, it is not likely it would have been settled so quickly.
- 23 This book is in a great many volumes; if we do not number them, they will certainly become misarranged.
- 24 If he can simply learn enough to scratch off door inscriptions and write people's names, it will save the necessity of being under obligation to some one every time any writing is to be done.
- 25 If we treat him well, he will naturally treat us well; if we do not treat him well, how can he [be expected to] treat us well?
- 26 Although your father did not leave

- 投店 *T'ou² tien⁴*.....To go to or stop at an inn.
- 投下處 *T'ou² hsia⁴ ch'u⁴*. To find a stopping place, to secure lodgings.
- 跟頭 *Kên¹ t'ou²*. On one's head, a somersault.
- 栽跟頭 *Tsai¹ kên¹ t'ou²*. To fall heels over head; to disgrace or make a fool of oneself, to fizzle out.
- 渾身 *Hun² shên¹*.....The whole body, all over.
- 油匠 *Yu² chiang⁴*.....A painter.
- 橫行 *Hêng⁴ hsing²*. To act unreasonably, outrageous conduct, perversity.
- 博學 *Pod² hsüe²*. Extensive learning, profound scholarship, learned.
- 名家 *Ming² chia¹*. One distinguished in his profession, a noted artist.
- 快當 *K'wai⁴ tang⁴*. Quick, prompt, expeditious.
- 頭緒 *T'ou² hsü⁴*. A beginning, a clue, order, method; an ally, a champion.
- 畫拉 *Hwa⁴ la¹*. To scratch off, to scribble, to scrawl.

- 搨 *T'a¹*. To take a rubbing of an inscription on stone; an impression, a facsimile. To scrawl, to scribble. (s.)
- 對子 *Tui⁴ tsü²*. A pair of correlated scrolls or inscriptions.
- 眠便 *Mien²*.....To close the eyes, to sleep. (w.)
- 家 *Pien⁴ chia¹*. A wealthy family; the rich, the well-to-do, gentle folks.
- 膽氣 *Tan² ch'i⁴*.....Courage, bravery.
- 帥領 *Shwai⁴ ling²*. A leader, a general, a commander-in-chief.
- 鴉片 *Ya¹ p'ien⁴*.....Opium.
- 罌 *Ying¹*.....A small jar with ears; a vase. (w.)
- 粟 *Su⁴*.....Rice in the hull, paddy.
- 罌粟 *Ying¹ su⁴*. The poppy plant.
- 罌粟花 *Ying¹ su⁴ hwa¹*.....The poppy.
- 氏 *Shi⁴*.....Family, a person; female, a surname.
- 秋審 *Ch'iu¹ shên²*. The autumnal assizes:—Note (30).
- 翻供 *Fan¹ kung¹*. To retract testimony previously given, to recant.
- 監斃 *Chien¹ pi⁴*.....To die in prison:—Note (30).

得回一吃窮有氣未倚用
 把他口年鴉在膽○必若自然
 監供。叉鴉鴉氣○能趕過窮能
 斃倘王片鴉片氣古○能趕過窮能
 了。若劉的烟片烟怎語說。膽小不
 一打了一概禁除掉自然罌粟花的與
 回再兩回秋審翻了供回來只
 翻了兩回秋審翻了供回來只
 了。若劉的烟片烟怎語說。膽小不
 一打了一概禁除掉自然罌粟花的與
 回再兩回秋審翻了供回來只
 翻了兩回秋審翻了供回來只

you anything, you should not lose heart, for if you rise early and retire late and economize in everything, your circumstances will necessarily improve.

27 If those who are now wealthy were poor, it is not certain that they would not defraud and cheat others. I question whether they would be as good as we who, though poor, still have some purpose to do right.

28 The old saying is, "A man of little courage will never be a general." If courage is wanting, how can one become a great leader?

29 The poverty of China is simply due to opium. If we could get rid of all who plant the poppy and all who eat opium, we should naturally grow richer year by year.

30 Mrs. Wang of the Liu family has been twice to the autumnal assizes, and has twice retracted her testimony; if she retracts this time, the only way will be to procure her death in prison.

NOTES.

2 自能 is an abbreviation for 自然能.

6 In many places 把 or 跟 or 從 would be used instead of 打.

7 着 is here used in a sense fairly equivalent to happened. When so used it is in many places read tsok (not chok). It is only so used after 若, or other equivalent word.

10 Since the time of Hsien Feng a species of large cash have been used in Peking. They were intended to pass for ten ordinary cash, and accordingly have 當十 stamped on them. They are not, however, equal in weight to ten ordinary cash, and as soon as official pressure was relaxed, they ceased to pass at their nominal value, and were estimated at their real value. It is not the real, but the nominal price, that would change with the abolition of these large cash.

21 見 takes the sense of to meet, to come into the presence of. 免得俗, to avoid being ordinary, 出得俗, to escape being ordinary.

26 眠 is a book word, not ordinarily used in Mandarin. The Sacred Edict from which this sentence is taken, is

commonly accounted Mandarin, but it is a rare thing to find in it a full sentence without some smack of wên-li.

30 王劉氏. The common way of designating a woman when there is occasion to write her name, is to add to her husband's family name that of her own, followed by the character 氏. On cards, or where it is desired to show respect, a 門 is added, as 王門劉氏. In all important criminal convictions, especially in those involving a death penalty, it is required that the prisoner, together with a copy of the testimony, be sent up to the Provincial Judge (按察使) for examination and confirmation of the sentence. If the prisoner retracts his testimony and confession, the case is remanded for a new trial. The Provincial Judge holds his court annually in the autumn, hence the term 秋審. In embarrassing cases, or where corrupting influences are at work against a prisoner, it is not an uncommon thing for an accused person to be "done" to death in prison, by torture, starvation, cold, etc. This is spoken of as 監斃. A report is first sent up that the prisoner is ill, and afterwards another report stating that he has died of disease, and thus the case drops.

LESSON CXXXIV.

OPTATIVE FORMS.

願 To wish,—may, would that, I hope.

但願 May, would that, oh that, I trust.

The Chinese language has no means of expressing a strong desire so admirably as the

English "Oh that." 但願 approximates it more nearly than any other term.

巴不得 To wish, to long, anxious that, would that.

Aug. 12, 1920

第一三四四課

LESSON CXXXIV.

願¹ 巴² 不得³ 天明。○若⁴ 由⁵ 得⁶ 自己⁷ 的⁸ 性⁹ 兒¹⁰ 恨¹¹ 不¹² 能¹³ 一¹⁴ 步¹⁵ 到¹⁶ 家¹⁷。
 ○我¹⁸ 巴¹⁹ 不得²⁰ 和²¹ 你²² 們²³ 吃²⁴ 杯²⁵ 酒²⁶ 親²⁷ 近²⁸。○張²⁹ 順³⁰ 聽³¹ 了³² 這³³ 話³⁴。
 恨³⁵ 不³⁶ 得³⁷ 一³⁸ 口³⁹ 吞⁴⁰ 了⁴¹ 這⁴² 婆⁴³ 娘⁴⁴。○人⁴⁵ 都⁴⁶ 望⁴⁷ 望⁴⁸ 巴⁴⁹ 不⁵⁰ 得⁵¹ 養⁵² 個⁵³ 好⁵⁴ 孩⁵⁵ 子⁵⁶ 然⁵⁷。
 而⁵⁸ 却⁵⁹ 不⁶⁰ 能⁶¹ 個⁶² 個⁶³ 都⁶⁴ 好⁶⁵。○我⁶⁶ 實⁶⁷ 在⁶⁸ 想⁶⁹ 你⁷⁰ 恨⁷¹ 不⁷² 能⁷³ 現⁷⁴ 在⁷⁵ 就⁷⁶ 面⁷⁷ 對⁷⁸。
 面⁷⁹ 纔⁸⁰ 好⁸¹。○但⁸² 願⁸³ 你⁸⁴ 們⁸⁵ 都⁸⁶ 體⁸⁷ 恤⁸⁸ 我⁸⁹ 多⁹⁰ 方⁹¹ 為⁹² 我⁹³ 原⁹⁴ 諒⁹⁵ 一⁹⁶ 點⁹⁷。○他⁹⁸ 對⁹⁹。
 嘴¹⁰⁰ 裏¹⁰¹ 雖¹⁰² 然¹⁰³ 說¹⁰⁴ 是¹⁰⁵ 不¹⁰⁶ 喜¹⁰⁷ 歡¹⁰⁸ 心¹⁰⁹ 裏¹¹⁰ 却¹¹¹ 是¹¹² 望¹¹³ 巴¹¹⁴ 不¹¹⁵ 能¹¹⁶ 說¹¹⁷ 出¹¹⁸ 來¹¹⁹。○我¹²⁰ 如¹²¹ 今¹²² 恨¹²³ 不¹²⁴ 能¹²⁵ 眼¹²⁶ 睛¹²⁷ 不¹²⁸ 讓¹²⁹ 他¹³⁰ 說¹³¹ 我¹³² 却¹³³ 恨¹³⁴ 不¹³⁵ 得¹³⁶ 他¹³⁷ 說¹³⁸ 出¹³⁹ 來¹⁴⁰。○我¹⁴¹ 如¹⁴² 今¹⁴³ 恨¹⁴⁴ 不¹⁴⁵ 能¹⁴⁶ 眼¹⁴⁷ 睛¹⁴⁸ 不¹⁴⁹ 讓¹⁵⁰ 他¹⁵¹ 說¹⁵² 我¹⁵³ 却¹⁵⁴ 恨¹⁵⁵ 不¹⁵⁶ 得¹⁵⁷ 他¹⁵⁸ 說¹⁵⁹ 出¹⁶⁰ 來¹⁶¹。○我¹⁶² 如¹⁶³ 今¹⁶⁴ 恨¹⁶⁵ 不¹⁶⁶ 能¹⁶⁷ 眼¹⁶⁸ 睛¹⁶⁹ 不¹⁷⁰ 讓¹⁷¹ 他¹⁷² 說¹⁷³ 我¹⁷⁴ 却¹⁷⁵ 恨¹⁷⁶ 不¹⁷⁷ 得¹⁷⁸ 他¹⁷⁹ 說¹⁸⁰ 出¹⁸¹ 來¹⁸²。○我¹⁸³ 如¹⁸⁴ 今¹⁸⁵ 恨¹⁸⁶ 不¹⁸⁷ 能¹⁸⁸ 眼¹⁸⁹ 睛¹⁹⁰ 不¹⁹¹ 讓¹⁹² 他¹⁹³ 說¹⁹⁴ 我¹⁹⁵ 却¹⁹⁶ 恨¹⁹⁷ 不¹⁹⁸ 得¹⁹⁹ 他²⁰⁰ 說²⁰¹ 出²⁰² 來²⁰³。○我²⁰⁴ 如²⁰⁵ 今²⁰⁶ 恨²⁰⁷ 不²⁰⁸ 能²⁰⁹ 眼²¹⁰ 睛²¹¹ 不²¹² 讓²¹³ 他²¹⁴ 說²¹⁵ 我²¹⁶ 却²¹⁷ 恨²¹⁸ 不²¹⁹ 得²²⁰ 他²²¹ 說²²² 出²²³ 來²²⁴。○我²²⁵ 如²²⁶ 今²²⁷ 恨²²⁸ 不²²⁹ 能²³⁰ 眼²³¹ 睛²³² 不²³³ 讓²³⁴ 他²³⁵ 說²³⁶ 我²³⁷ 却²³⁸ 恨²³⁹ 不²⁴⁰ 得²⁴¹ 他²⁴² 說²⁴³ 出²⁴⁴ 來²⁴⁵。○我²⁴⁶ 如²⁴⁷ 今²⁴⁸ 恨²⁴⁹ 不²⁵⁰ 能²⁵¹ 眼²⁵² 睛²⁵³ 不²⁵⁴ 讓²⁵⁵ 他²⁵⁶ 說²⁵⁷ 我²⁵⁸ 却²⁵⁹ 恨²⁶⁰ 不²⁶¹ 得²⁶² 他²⁶³ 說²⁶⁴ 出²⁶⁵ 來²⁶⁶。○我²⁶⁷ 如²⁶⁸ 今²⁶⁹ 恨²⁷⁰ 不²⁷¹ 能²⁷² 眼²⁷³ 睛²⁷⁴ 不²⁷⁵ 讓²⁷⁶ 他²⁷⁷ 說²⁷⁸ 我²⁷⁹ 却²⁸⁰ 恨²⁸¹ 不²⁸² 得²⁸³ 他²⁸⁴ 說²⁸⁵ 出²⁸⁶ 來²⁸⁷。○我²⁸⁸ 如²⁸⁹ 今²⁹⁰ 恨²⁹¹ 不²⁹² 能²⁹³ 眼²⁹⁴ 睛²⁹⁵ 不²⁹⁶ 讓²⁹⁷ 他²⁹⁸ 說²⁹⁹ 我³⁰⁰ 却³⁰¹ 恨³⁰² 不³⁰³ 得³⁰⁴ 他³⁰⁵ 說³⁰⁶ 出³⁰⁷ 來³⁰⁸。○我³⁰⁹ 如³¹⁰ 今³¹¹ 恨³¹² 不³¹³ 能³¹⁴ 眼³¹⁵ 睛³¹⁶ 不³¹⁷ 讓³¹⁸ 他³¹⁹ 說³²⁰ 我³²¹ 却³²² 恨³²³ 不³²⁴ 得³²⁵ 他³²⁶ 說³²⁷ 出³²⁸ 來³²⁹。○我³³⁰ 如³³¹ 今³³² 恨³³³ 不³³⁴ 能³³⁵ 眼³³⁶ 睛³³⁷ 不³³⁸ 讓³³⁹ 他³⁴⁰ 說³⁴¹ 我³⁴² 却³⁴³ 恨³⁴⁴ 不³⁴⁵ 得³⁴⁶ 他³⁴⁷ 說³⁴⁸ 出³⁴⁹ 來³⁵⁰。○我³⁵¹ 如³⁵² 今³⁵³ 恨³⁵⁴ 不³⁵⁵ 能³⁵⁶ 眼³⁵⁷ 睛³⁵⁸ 不³⁵⁹ 讓³⁶⁰ 他³⁶¹ 說³⁶² 我³⁶³ 却³⁶⁴ 恨³⁶⁵ 不³⁶⁶ 得³⁶⁷ 他³⁶⁸ 說³⁶⁹ 出³⁷⁰ 來³⁷¹。○我³⁷² 如³⁷³ 今³⁷⁴ 恨³⁷⁵ 不³⁷⁶ 能³⁷⁷ 眼³⁷⁸ 睛³⁷⁹ 不³⁸⁰ 讓³⁸¹ 他³⁸² 說³⁸³ 我³⁸⁴ 却³⁸⁵ 恨³⁸⁶ 不³⁸⁷ 得³⁸⁸ 他³⁸⁹ 說³⁹⁰ 出³⁹¹ 來³⁹²。○我³⁹³ 如³⁹⁴ 今³⁹⁵ 恨³⁹⁶ 不³⁹⁷ 能³⁹⁸ 眼³⁹⁹ 睛⁴⁰⁰ 不⁴⁰¹ 讓⁴⁰² 他⁴⁰³ 說⁴⁰⁴ 我⁴⁰⁵ 却⁴⁰⁶ 恨⁴⁰⁷ 不⁴⁰⁸ 得⁴⁰⁹ 他⁴¹⁰ 說⁴¹¹ 出⁴¹² 來⁴¹³。○我⁴¹⁴ 如⁴¹⁵ 今⁴¹⁶ 恨⁴¹⁷ 不⁴¹⁸ 能⁴¹⁹ 眼⁴²⁰ 睛⁴²¹ 不⁴²² 讓⁴²³ 他⁴²⁴ 說⁴²⁵ 我⁴²⁶ 却⁴²⁷ 恨⁴²⁸ 不⁴²⁹ 得⁴³⁰ 他⁴³¹ 說⁴³² 出⁴³³ 來⁴³⁴。○我⁴³⁵ 如⁴³⁶ 今⁴³⁷ 恨⁴³⁸ 不⁴³⁹ 能⁴⁴⁰ 眼⁴⁴¹ 睛⁴⁴² 不⁴⁴³ 讓⁴⁴⁴ 他⁴⁴⁵ 說⁴⁴⁶ 我⁴⁴⁷ 却⁴⁴⁸ 恨⁴⁴⁹ 不⁴⁵⁰ 得⁴⁵¹ 他⁴⁵² 說⁴⁵³ 出⁴⁵⁴ 來⁴⁵⁵。○我⁴⁵⁶ 如⁴⁵⁷ 今⁴⁵⁸ 恨⁴⁵⁹ 不⁴⁶⁰ 能⁴⁶¹ 眼⁴⁶² 睛⁴⁶³ 不⁴⁶⁴ 讓⁴⁶⁵ 他⁴⁶⁶ 說⁴⁶⁷ 我⁴⁶⁸ 却⁴⁶⁹ 恨⁴⁷⁰ 不⁴⁷¹ 得⁴⁷² 他⁴⁷³ 說⁴⁷⁴ 出⁴⁷⁵ 來⁴⁷⁶。○我⁴⁷⁷ 如⁴⁷⁸ 今⁴⁷⁹ 恨⁴⁸⁰ 不⁴⁸¹ 能⁴⁸² 眼⁴⁸³ 睛⁴⁸⁴ 不⁴⁸⁵ 讓⁴⁸⁶ 他⁴⁸⁷ 說⁴⁸⁸ 我⁴⁸⁹ 却⁴⁹⁰ 恨⁴⁹¹ 不⁴⁹² 得⁴⁹³ 他⁴⁹⁴ 說⁴⁹⁵ 出⁴⁹⁶ 來⁴⁹⁷。○我⁴⁹⁸ 如⁴⁹⁹ 今⁵⁰⁰ 恨⁵⁰¹ 不⁵⁰² 能⁵⁰³ 眼⁵⁰⁴ 睛⁵⁰⁵ 不⁵⁰⁶ 讓⁵⁰⁷ 他⁵⁰⁸ 說⁵⁰⁹ 我⁵¹⁰ 却⁵¹¹ 恨⁵¹² 不⁵¹³ 得⁵¹⁴ 他⁵¹⁵ 說⁵¹⁶ 出⁵¹⁷ 來⁵¹⁸。○我⁵¹⁹ 如⁵²⁰ 今⁵²¹ 恨⁵²² 不⁵²³ 能⁵²⁴ 眼⁵²⁵ 睛⁵²⁶ 不⁵²⁷ 讓⁵²⁸ 他⁵²⁹ 說⁵³⁰ 我⁵³¹ 却⁵³² 恨⁵³³ 不⁵³⁴ 得⁵³⁵ 他⁵³⁶ 說⁵³⁷ 出⁵³⁸ 來⁵³⁹。○我⁵⁴⁰ 如⁵⁴¹ 今⁵⁴² 恨⁵⁴³ 不⁵⁴⁴ 能⁵⁴⁵ 眼⁵⁴⁶ 睛⁵⁴⁷ 不⁵⁴⁸ 讓⁵⁴⁹ 他⁵⁵⁰ 說⁵⁵¹ 我⁵⁵² 却⁵⁵³ 恨⁵⁵⁴ 不⁵⁵⁵ 得⁵⁵⁶ 他⁵⁵⁷ 說⁵⁵⁸ 出⁵⁵⁹ 來⁵⁶⁰。○我⁵⁶¹ 如⁵⁶² 今⁵⁶³ 恨⁵⁶⁴ 不⁵⁶⁵ 能⁵⁶⁶ 眼⁵⁶⁷ 睛⁵⁶⁸ 不⁵⁶⁹ 讓⁵⁷⁰ 他⁵⁷¹ 說⁵⁷² 我⁵⁷³ 却⁵⁷⁴ 恨⁵⁷⁵ 不⁵⁷⁶ 得⁵⁷⁷ 他⁵⁷⁸ 說⁵⁷⁹ 出⁵⁸⁰ 來⁵⁸¹。○我⁵⁸² 如⁵⁸³ 今⁵⁸⁴ 恨⁵⁸⁵ 不⁵⁸⁶ 能⁵⁸⁷ 眼⁵⁸⁸ 睛⁵⁸⁹ 不⁵⁹⁰ 讓⁵⁹¹ 他⁵⁹² 說⁵⁹³ 我⁵⁹⁴ 却⁵⁹⁵ 恨⁵⁹⁶ 不⁵⁹⁷ 得⁵⁹⁸ 他⁵⁹⁹ 說⁶⁰⁰ 出⁶⁰¹ 來⁶⁰²。○我⁶⁰³ 如⁶⁰⁴ 今⁶⁰⁵ 恨⁶⁰⁶ 不⁶⁰⁷ 能⁶⁰⁸ 眼⁶⁰⁹ 睛⁶¹⁰ 不⁶¹¹ 讓⁶¹² 他⁶¹³ 說⁶¹⁴ 我⁶¹⁵ 却⁶¹⁶ 恨⁶¹⁷ 不⁶¹⁸ 得⁶¹⁹ 他⁶²⁰ 說⁶²¹ 出⁶²² 來⁶²³。○我⁶²⁴ 如⁶²⁵ 今⁶²⁶ 恨⁶²⁷ 不⁶²⁸ 能⁶²⁹ 眼⁶³⁰ 睛⁶³¹ 不⁶³² 讓⁶³³ 他⁶³⁴ 說⁶³⁵ 我⁶³⁶ 却⁶³⁷ 恨⁶³⁸ 不⁶³⁹ 得⁶⁴⁰ 他⁶⁴¹ 說⁶⁴² 出⁶⁴³ 來⁶⁴⁴。○我⁶⁴⁵ 如⁶⁴⁶ 今⁶⁴⁷ 恨⁶⁴⁸ 不⁶⁴⁹ 能⁶⁵⁰ 眼⁶⁵¹ 睛⁶⁵² 不⁶⁵³ 讓⁶⁵⁴ 他⁶⁵⁵ 說⁶⁵⁶ 我⁶⁵⁷ 却⁶⁵⁸ 恨⁶⁵⁹ 不⁶⁶⁰ 得⁶⁶¹ 他⁶⁶² 說⁶⁶³ 出⁶⁶⁴ 來⁶⁶⁵。○我⁶⁶⁶ 如⁶⁶⁷ 今⁶⁶⁸ 恨⁶⁶⁹ 不⁶⁷⁰ 能⁶⁷¹ 眼⁶⁷² 睛⁶⁷³ 不⁶⁷⁴ 讓⁶⁷⁵ 他⁶⁷⁶ 說⁶⁷⁷ 我⁶⁷⁸ 却⁶⁷⁹ 恨⁶⁸⁰ 不⁶⁸¹ 得⁶⁸² 他⁶⁸³ 說⁶⁸⁴ 出⁶⁸⁵ 來⁶⁸⁶。○我⁶⁸⁷ 如⁶⁸⁸ 今⁶⁸⁹ 恨⁶⁹⁰ 不⁶⁹¹ 能⁶⁹² 眼⁶⁹³ 睛⁶⁹⁴ 不⁶⁹⁵ 讓⁶⁹⁶ 他⁶⁹⁷ 說⁶⁹⁸ 我⁶⁹⁹ 却⁷⁰⁰ 恨⁷⁰¹ 不⁷⁰² 得⁷⁰³ 他⁷⁰⁴ 說⁷⁰⁵ 出⁷⁰⁶ 來⁷⁰⁷。○我⁷⁰⁸ 如⁷⁰⁹ 今⁷¹⁰ 恨⁷¹¹ 不⁷¹² 能⁷¹³ 眼⁷¹⁴ 睛⁷¹⁵ 不⁷¹⁶ 讓⁷¹⁷ 他⁷¹⁸ 說⁷¹⁹ 我⁷²⁰ 却⁷²¹ 恨⁷²² 不⁷²³ 得⁷²⁴ 他⁷²⁵ 說⁷²⁶ 出⁷²⁷ 來⁷²⁸。○我⁷²⁹ 如⁷³⁰ 今⁷³¹ 恨⁷³² 不⁷³³ 能⁷³⁴ 眼⁷³⁵ 睛⁷³⁶ 不⁷³⁷ 讓⁷³⁸ 他⁷³⁹ 說⁷⁴⁰ 我⁷⁴¹ 却⁷⁴² 恨⁷⁴³ 不⁷⁴⁴ 得⁷⁴⁵ 他⁷⁴⁶ 說⁷⁴⁷ 出⁷⁴⁸ 來⁷⁴⁹。○我⁷⁵⁰ 如⁷⁵¹ 今⁷⁵² 恨⁷⁵³ 不⁷⁵⁴ 能⁷⁵⁵ 眼⁷⁵⁶ 睛⁷⁵⁷ 不⁷⁵⁸ 讓⁷⁵⁹ 他⁷⁶⁰ 說⁷⁶¹ 我⁷⁶² 却⁷⁶³ 恨⁷⁶⁴ 不⁷⁶⁵ 得⁷⁶⁶ 他⁷⁶⁷ 說⁷⁶⁸ 出⁷⁶⁹ 來⁷⁷⁰。○我⁷⁷¹ 如⁷⁷² 今⁷⁷³ 恨⁷⁷⁴ 不⁷⁷⁵ 能⁷⁷⁶ 眼⁷⁷⁷ 睛⁷⁷⁸ 不⁷⁷⁹ 讓⁷⁸⁰ 他⁷⁸¹ 說⁷⁸² 我⁷⁸³ 却⁷⁸⁴ 恨⁷⁸⁵ 不⁷⁸⁶ 得⁷⁸⁷ 他⁷⁸⁸ 說⁷⁸⁹ 出⁷⁹⁰ 來⁷⁹¹。○我⁷⁹² 如⁷⁹³ 今⁷⁹⁴ 恨⁷⁹⁵ 不⁷⁹⁶ 能⁷⁹⁷ 眼⁷⁹⁸ 睛⁷⁹⁹ 不⁸⁰⁰ 讓⁸⁰¹ 他⁸⁰² 說⁸⁰³ 我⁸⁰⁴ 却⁸⁰⁵ 恨⁸⁰⁶ 不⁸⁰⁷ 得⁸⁰⁸ 他⁸⁰⁹ 說⁸¹⁰ 出⁸¹¹ 來⁸¹²。○我⁸¹³ 如⁸¹⁴ 今⁸¹⁵ 恨⁸¹⁶ 不⁸¹⁷ 能⁸¹⁸ 眼⁸¹⁹ 睛⁸²⁰ 不⁸²¹ 讓⁸²² 他⁸²³ 說⁸²⁴ 我⁸²⁵ 却⁸²⁶ 恨⁸²⁷ 不⁸²⁸ 得⁸²⁹ 他⁸³⁰ 說⁸³¹ 出⁸³² 來⁸³³。○我⁸³⁴ 如⁸³⁵ 今⁸³⁶ 恨⁸³⁷ 不⁸³⁸ 能⁸³⁹ 眼⁸⁴⁰ 睛⁸⁴¹ 不⁸⁴² 讓⁸⁴³ 他⁸⁴⁴ 說⁸⁴⁵ 我⁸⁴⁶ 却⁸⁴⁷ 恨⁸⁴⁸ 不⁸⁴⁹ 得⁸⁵⁰ 他⁸⁵¹ 說⁸⁵² 出⁸⁵³ 來⁸⁵⁴。○我⁸⁵⁵ 如⁸⁵⁶ 今⁸⁵⁷ 恨⁸⁵⁸ 不⁸⁵⁹ 能⁸⁶⁰ 眼⁸⁶¹ 睛⁸⁶² 不⁸⁶³ 讓⁸⁶⁴ 他⁸⁶⁵ 說⁸⁶⁶ 我⁸⁶⁷ 却⁸⁶⁸ 恨⁸⁶⁹ 不⁸⁷⁰ 得⁸⁷¹ 他⁸⁷² 說⁸⁷³ 出⁸⁷⁴ 來⁸⁷⁵。○我⁸⁷⁶ 如⁸⁷⁷ 今⁸⁷⁸ 恨⁸⁷⁹ 不⁸⁸⁰ 能⁸⁸¹ 眼⁸⁸² 睛⁸⁸³ 不⁸⁸⁴ 讓⁸⁸⁵ 他⁸⁸⁶ 說⁸⁸⁷ 我⁸⁸⁸ 却⁸⁸⁹ 恨⁸⁹⁰ 不⁸⁹¹ 得⁸⁹² 他⁸⁹³ 說⁸⁹⁴ 出⁸⁹⁵ 來⁸⁹⁶。○我⁸⁹⁷ 如⁸⁹⁸ 今⁸⁹⁹ 恨⁹⁰⁰ 不⁹⁰¹ 能⁹⁰² 眼⁹⁰³ 睛⁹⁰⁴ 不⁹⁰⁵ 讓⁹⁰⁶ 他⁹⁰⁷ 說⁹⁰⁸ 我⁹⁰⁹ 却⁹¹⁰ 恨⁹¹¹ 不⁹¹² 得⁹¹³ 他⁹¹⁴ 說⁹¹⁵ 出⁹¹⁶ 來⁹¹⁷。○我⁹¹⁸ 如⁹¹⁹ 今⁹²⁰ 恨⁹²¹ 不⁹²² 能⁹²³ 眼⁹²⁴ 睛⁹²⁵ 不⁹²⁶ 讓⁹²⁷ 他⁹²⁸ 說⁹²⁹ 我⁹³⁰ 却⁹³¹ 恨⁹³² 不⁹³³ 得⁹³⁴ 他⁹³⁵ 說⁹³⁶ 出⁹³⁷ 來⁹³⁸。○我⁹³⁹ 如⁹⁴⁰ 今⁹⁴¹ 恨⁹⁴² 不⁹⁴³ 能⁹⁴⁴ 眼⁹⁴⁵ 睛⁹⁴⁶ 不⁹⁴⁷ 讓⁹⁴⁸ 他⁹⁴⁹ 說⁹⁵⁰ 我⁹⁵¹ 却⁹⁵² 恨⁹⁵³ 不⁹⁵⁴ 得⁹⁵⁵ 他⁹⁵⁶ 說⁹⁵⁷ 出⁹⁵⁸ 來⁹⁵⁹。○我⁹⁶⁰ 如⁹⁶¹ 今⁹⁶² 恨⁹⁶³ 不⁹⁶⁴ 能⁹⁶⁵ 眼⁹⁶⁶ 睛⁹⁶⁷ 不⁹⁶⁸ 讓⁹⁶⁹ 他⁹⁷⁰ 說⁹⁷¹ 我⁹⁷² 却⁹⁷³ 恨⁹⁷⁴ 不⁹⁷⁵ 得⁹⁷⁶ 他⁹⁷⁷ 說⁹⁷⁸ 出⁹⁷⁹ 來⁹⁸⁰。○我⁹⁸¹ 如⁹⁸² 今⁹⁸³ 恨⁹⁸⁴ 不⁹⁸⁵ 能⁹⁸⁶ 眼⁹⁸⁷ 睛⁹⁸⁸ 不⁹⁸⁹ 讓⁹⁹⁰ 他⁹⁹¹ 說⁹⁹² 我⁹⁹³ 却⁹⁹⁴ 恨⁹⁹⁵ 不⁹⁹⁶ 得⁹⁹⁷ 他⁹⁹⁸ 說⁹⁹⁹ 出¹⁰⁰⁰ 來¹⁰⁰¹。○我¹⁰⁰² 如¹⁰⁰³ 今¹⁰⁰⁴ 恨¹⁰⁰⁵ 不¹⁰⁰⁶ 能¹⁰⁰⁷ 眼¹⁰⁰⁸ 睛¹⁰⁰⁹ 不¹⁰¹⁰ 讓¹⁰¹¹ 他¹⁰¹² 說¹⁰¹³ 我¹⁰¹⁴ 却¹⁰¹⁵ 恨¹⁰¹⁶ 不¹⁰¹⁷ 得¹⁰¹⁸ 他¹⁰¹⁹ 說¹⁰²⁰ 出¹⁰²¹ 來¹⁰²²。○我¹⁰²³ 如¹⁰²⁴ 今¹⁰²⁵ 恨¹⁰²⁶ 不¹⁰²⁷ 能¹⁰²⁸ 眼¹⁰²⁹ 睛¹⁰³⁰ 不¹⁰³¹ 讓¹⁰³² 他¹⁰³³ 說¹⁰³⁴ 我¹⁰³⁵ 却¹⁰³⁶ 恨¹⁰³⁷ 不¹⁰³⁸ 得¹⁰³⁹ 他¹⁰⁴⁰ 說¹⁰⁴¹ 出¹⁰⁴² 來¹⁰⁴³。○我¹⁰⁴⁴ 如¹⁰⁴⁵ 今¹⁰⁴⁶ 恨¹⁰⁴⁷ 不¹⁰⁴⁸ 能¹⁰⁴⁹ 眼¹⁰⁵⁰ 睛¹⁰⁵¹ 不¹⁰⁵² 讓¹⁰⁵³ 他¹⁰⁵⁴ 說¹⁰⁵⁵ 我¹⁰⁵⁶ 却¹⁰⁵⁷ 恨¹⁰⁵⁸ 不¹⁰⁵⁹ 得¹⁰⁶⁰ 他¹⁰⁶¹ 說¹⁰⁶² 出¹⁰⁶³ 來¹⁰⁶⁴。○我¹⁰⁶⁵ 如¹⁰⁶⁶ 今¹⁰⁶⁷ 恨¹⁰⁶⁸ 不¹⁰⁶⁹ 能¹⁰⁷⁰ 眼¹⁰⁷¹ 睛¹⁰⁷² 不¹⁰⁷³ 讓¹⁰⁷⁴ 他¹⁰⁷⁵ 說¹⁰⁷⁶ 我¹⁰⁷⁷ 却¹⁰⁷⁸ 恨¹⁰⁷⁹ 不¹⁰⁸⁰ 得¹⁰⁸¹ 他¹⁰⁸² 說¹⁰⁸³ 出¹⁰⁸⁴ 來¹⁰⁸⁵。○我¹⁰⁸⁶ 如¹⁰⁸⁷ 今¹⁰⁸⁸ 恨¹⁰⁸⁹ 不¹⁰⁹⁰ 能¹⁰⁹¹ 眼¹⁰⁹² 睛¹⁰⁹³ 不¹⁰⁹⁴ 讓¹⁰⁹⁵ 他¹⁰⁹⁶ 說¹⁰⁹⁷ 我¹⁰⁹⁸ 却

對跟人、空話。食願呢。講頭有人
 你到呢。○我巴不得和他老人家多活幾年，看我們過日子，我們年輕的
 說到底有倚靠。○我的兒子同喜啊，我恨不得你此時在家，
 幾句話把你母親託付你。○我們在天上，願人都
 餓暖衣過太平日子。○上去的時候，望老兄給我說幾句好
 天老爺今年開恩，使得風調雨順，沒有蟲災，我們就可以飽
 為他們爭吵的事，我巴不得給他們說，貼了，再走。但
 說不出好來。○就怕你不肯學，既然要學，巴不能教你成人
 人情，有甚麼滋味呢。○我但說那等願你飽暖的話，送這些空
 有人替他想法子。○你但我說那等願你飽暖的話，送這些空

to save himself, he is more than willing for some one else to find a plan for him.
 15 What point is there in merely saying, "I wish you were full and warm," making this empty pretence of charity?
 16 I only wish I could speak well of them, but I cannot do so truthfully.
 17 I was only afraid you were not willing to learn; seeing, however, that you desire to learn, I shall be but too glad to give you the opportunity to make a man of yourself.
 18 With reference to their quarrel, I very much wish I could bring about a settlement before I go.
 19 Would that this year the Heavenly Sire would show favor, give wind and rain in season and not send a scourge of insects; then we should have plenty to eat and wear and live in peace.
 20 When you go in, I hope you will speak a good word for me.
 21 I should like very much to go in company with you, but the fact is my business is very pressing these few days, so that I cannot spare the time.
 22 I hope the old gentleman will live a good number of years to advise us in our plans, that we young folks may have some one to depend upon.
 23 My son, T'ung Hsi, I would that you were now at home that I might speak with you and commit your mother to your care.

- 14 求救 *Ch'iu² chiu⁴*. To seek an escape, to pray for salvation.
- 13 稱 *Ch'én⁴*. Suitable, to suit; corresponding, becoming. See *ch'êng⁴* and *ch'êng¹*.
- 15 飽暖 *Pao³ nwan³*. Full and warm, fed and clothed.
- 16 開恩 *K'ai¹ én¹*. To be gracious or merciful, to show favor, to grant a prayer.
- 19 災 *Tsai¹*. A calamity sent from heaven, divine judgments, a scourge, a misfortune.
- 21 搭伴 *Ta¹ pan⁴*. To become companions, to go in company with.
- 24 降臨 *Chiang⁴ lin²*. To descend from heaven, to come from above.

- 74 旨意 *Chi³ i⁴*. The will or purpose of one in authority, an edict.
- 護己 *Hu⁴ chi³*. Partial to oneself, to look out for number one; ungenerous.
- 蝙蝠 *Pien¹ fu²*. The bat.
- 嗚嗚 *Ch'i¹*. The sound of indistinct talking.
- 嗚嗚喳喳 *Ch'i¹ ch'a¹*. Chattering, garrulous; to prattle, to jabber.
- 聒 *Kwo³⁴*. To stun, to make the ears ring; clamor. See *kwa¹⁴*.
- 站口 *Chan⁴ k'ou³*. A stopping place, a lodging place, a station.
- 果兒 *Kwo³ ér²*. Eggs,—a Pekingese term, not often used without the addition of 白; viz., 白果兒.

好，兩 不 快 說 夜 黑 推 有 在 尊
 答 張 了 搬 話 裏 得 了 地 你
 好 餅 個 出 話 有 乾 乾 如 的
 啊 打 站 去 聒 精 乾 淨 同 名
 那 臥 口 我 吵 神 淨 淨 行 為
 裏 幾 望 我 的 旁 的 的 是 在 聖
 不 個 老 走 人 也 常 的 自 天 願
 是 雞 先 的 也 常 到 己 上 的 你
 交 蛋 先 的 睡 不 到 的 有 世 降
 朋 末 生 不 着 三 四 個 了 上 臨
 友 了 賜 着 更 天 個 不 好 人 願
 呢 隨 點 所 以 我 巴 處 護 的
 要 給 方 以 我 巴 處 護 的
 多 你 便 又 渴 又 渴 急 緊 慢
 少 你 家 又 渴 又 渴 急 緊 慢
 錢 去 給 忙 慢 也 到
 好 收 給 我 也 到

- 24 Our Father which art in heaven; Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven.
- 25 Most people in the world look out for number one. When anything praiseworthy occurs, they take the credit of it; when anything blameworthy happens, they are anxious to disclaim it entirely.
- 26 They two are like bats, lively after dark. They generally keep chattering until the third or fourth watch of the night, disturbing other people so that they cannot sleep; for this reason I wish they would soon move out.
- 27 I have been traveling until I am exceedingly hungry and thirsty, and I am unable to reach a stopping place. Will you kindly accommodate me, sir, by baking a couple of cakes and poaching a few eggs for me, and I will pay you your price. Ans. All right. It is always worth while to make a friend.

NOTES.

- 9 The use of both 多方 and 一點 is somewhat redundant.
- 12 就是死不了 Or, somehow I cannot die.
- 14 求救無門, to seek for escape, but find no opening,—a book expression in common use.
- 15 空頭人情, empty-headed sympathy,—a sham favor, empty talk instead of substantial aid.
- 16 Note how 講 is substituted for 說, because immediately followed by another 說.
- 18 爲 is here used, as it frequently is, in the general sense of, as to, with reference to.
- 19 風調雨順 Winds gentle and rains seasonable,—a book phrase often quoted. 飽食暖衣 Food plenty, clothing warm,—another book phrase.

- 22 他和老人家 are in apposition.
- 26 吵 expresses the action of those who make the disturbance, and 聒 the effect on the ears of those who are disturbed.
- 27 饑又饑渴又渴. Repetition with 又 is an intensive form of the book language, sometimes introduced in speaking, especially by educated men. 緊慢 here means, in the exigency, for the time being, which is a departure from its primary and ordinary meaning. 給你錢由你收 is a phrase based on the custom of handing the string of cash to the person to take off as many as he chooses. A shorter phrase is 給你錢留.

LESSON CXXXV.

EXCEPTIVE PHRASES.

- 非 Unless, save, without.
- 非離 Unless, without, no way but.
- 除非 Unless, except, aside from.
- 除了 Except, unless, exclusive of, none but.
- 離了 Without, aside from, except, save.
- 錯過 Aside from, except, without, but for.

第一百三十五課

LESSON CXXXV.

錯¹² ○ 辦他。非誰既罰晚常¹
 過¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 救¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 主¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 耶¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 穌¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 誰¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 都¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 沒¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 有¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 功¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 勞¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 贖¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 人¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 的¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 罪¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 他¹³ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 要¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 強¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 霸¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 佔¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走
 我¹¹ ○ 這¹¹不成的。○要⁹非他¹¹也討使然他四常走

- 1 When you are constantly traveling, you cannot get on without a wallet.
- 2 The whole day long he is never at home except at meal times.
- 3 No one except Chiu Chin Shan has such cleverness as this.
- 4 Unless he is mulcted to the amount of forty thousand cash, I can by no means consent.
- 5 [You cannot disobey my orders] unless you leave my family. While you are in my family, you must obey.
- 6 I would not have yielded the point to any other than to you, my adopted father, no matter who might have come.
- 7 Who save you, Brother Liu, would have such discernment?
- 8 [He cannot escape] unless he always hides and never lets me see him. If once I get my eyes on him, he will not get away.
- 9 If you want to open a lock, you must find the right key. As I see this business, unless you go, it cannot be accomplished.
- 10 Although there are many prescriptions for compounding itch medicine, yet without sulphur none is effective.
- 11 This is a good book, only it is too profound. Without a teacher to explain it, it is unintelligible.
- 12 Aside from Jesus the Saviour, no one has the merit necessary to atone for the sins of men.

VOCABULARY.

裕 *Ta*¹..... A bag, a wallet.
 褌 *Lien*²..... A pouch, a waist-bag.
 褌褌 *A wallet, a pouch, a purse; drilling.*
 錢褌子 *Ch'ien*² *ta*¹ *tsi*³. A purse, a wallet:—
 Note (1).
 指使 *Chi*³ *shi*³. To order, to direct, to instruct,
 to point out.
 指派 *Chi*³ *p'ai*⁴. To order, to direct, to pre-
 scribe.
 乾參 *Kan*¹ *tie*¹. An adopted father:—Les. 72.
 Note (3).
 來 *P'u*¹. To hide oneself, to lie low, to keep out
 of sight,—a colloquial local character.
 高見 *Kao*¹ *chien*⁴. Good judgment, penetration,
 discernment:—Note (7).

硫磺 *Liu*² *hwang*²..... Brimstone, sulphur. 1.
 奧 *Ao*⁴. The southwest corner; mysterious, 1/
 obscure, deep.
 深奧 *Shen*¹ *ao*⁴..... Difficult, profound. 4
 霸佔 *Pa*⁴..... To rule by force, to encroach on. 13
 強霸 *Ch'iang*² *pa*⁴. To take by force, to usurp, 13
 to seize illegally.
 結果 *Chie*² *kwod*³. To bear fruit, to yield; to 13
 finish, to put an end to, to kill.
 五服 *Wu*³ *fu*². The five grades of mourning
 dress, ancestry:—Note (15).
 訟 *Sung*⁴..... Litigation, a prosecution.

算的女兒，除非把我頭殺了，但凡有我這口氣，他就不用打他媽不行。他婆家並沒有親房近支，在五天一黑，就離了。有柳芳林，錯過他出名，事還不能成喇。他兩個的官司，並不是不好說和，是中間有壞人唆訟，如今要了事，除非把那個壞人弄出去。你昨天冒犯你爺爺，到如今他還怒氣不息，也不吃飯，我看非你去磕頭賠禮，他是不能消氣的。這裏的肉案子，從去年都齊了行喇，無論到那一家，錯過二百錢一斤，是不行的。膠和鰾都粘不住，非螺絲釘不行。離了莊稼漢上糧，上銀子，你們把什麼做兵

chuan-yang
1941
chia
fomen
Piang

- 13 If he expects to take my daughter by force, [he cannot do it] except by first making an end of me. While I have breath in my body, he need not think of it.
- 14 In the day time, whoever pleases may take up the child; but as soon as night comes, no one will do save his mother.
- 15 She has no near relative of her husband's family. Of those for whom she would wear mourning, there is only Liu Fang Lin, and without his name the business cannot be settled.
- 16 The lawsuit between the two would not be difficult to compromise but that there is an evil-minded man stirring them up. There is no way, at present, to settle the matter unless that obnoxious man is driven out.
- 17 You offended your grandfather yesterday, so that his anger has not yet abated and he refuses to eat. In my opinion his anger will not be appeased unless you go and apologize and do him reverence.
- 18 Since last year, all the meat dealers of this place have combined to adopt a uniform price. No matter to which one you go, there is no buying for less than two hundred cash per catty.
- 19 Neither common glue nor fish glue will hold it; nothing but screws will serve the purpose.

- 16 唆訟 *Soa¹ sung¹*. To incite to litigation.
- 17 怒氣 *Nu⁴ ch'i⁴*. Anger, wrath, passion.
- 17 磕頭 *K'oa¹ t'ou²*. To knock the head on the ground as an act of worship or of ceremony, to kotow.
- 18 消氣 *Hsiao¹ ch'i⁴*. To abate one's anger, to become reconciled.
- 18 肉架子 *Jou⁴ chia⁴ tsi³*. A butcher's stand, a meat shop.

- 18 肉案子 *Jou⁴ an⁴ tsi³*. The same.
- 19 鰾 *Piao⁴*. Fish glue, gelatine.
- 19 螺絲釘 *Loa² si¹ ting¹*. A wood screw, a machine screw.
- 20 蠶 *Ts'an³*. The silkworm.
- 21 護衛 *Hu⁴ wei⁴*. To protect, to defend.
- 21 冬至 *Tung¹ chi⁴*. The winter solstice.
- 21 夏至 *Hsia⁴ chi⁴*. The summer solstice.
- 21 天文家 *T'ien¹ wen² chia¹*. Astronomers.

NOTES.

1 A 錢褡子 is a closed bag with a slit in the middle of the side, and serves as purse and hand-bag combined. It is usually carried over the shoulder, or if riding, across the saddle.
 5 The structure of this sentence is highly idiomatic. The clause in brackets has to be supplied in order to exhibit the full idea in English. A free translation would be, *While you are in my family, you must obey my orders.* See also 8th and 13th sentences.

6 乾爹和你 are in apposition, the latter being added for emphasis as well as to express endearment and respect. 使不了這個臉去 cannot make use of this face, that is to say, in the matter in hand I would not have yielded to the intercession of any other. The face referred to is that of the adopted father, and implies that the concession was made in order to avoid putting him to the blush for having failed in his suit.

會算。最低除了天文家旁人都
 計、甚麼時候最高、甚麼時候
 一點兒上、就爲夏至、但要算
 爲冬至、往北行到最高的那
 行到最低的那一點兒上、就
 嗎。此處還平²¹常人只知日頭往南
 什麼穿在身上呢、你們想到
 餉、離了養蠶織布的、你們把

20 Aside from taxes in grain and money paid by the farmers, what is there to supply your wages? Aside from those who raise silk worms and weave cloth, who is there to furnish you the clothes you wear? When you think of this, should you not strive to protect them?

21 Ordinary people simply know that when the sun has moved southward until it has reached its lowest point, that is the winter solstice; and when it has moved northward to its highest point, that is the summer solstice; but as for computing when it is at the highest and when at the lowest point, none but astronomers are able to do this.

7 高見 The 見 is put for 見識, and 高 is descriptive, including also a compliment to the person addressed.

8 跑不了他 Note the transposition by which the proper subject of the verb is made to come after it, which is a colloquial rather than a book form.

10 In wén-li 硫 is generally used for sulphur, though 磺 is occasionally used. In Mandarin the two words are always joined.

13 口 and 氣 do not here combine into a phrase as they generally do. 氣 is accented and 口 may be regarded as a classifier.

15 親房近支 Own house and near branch; that is, a near relative. The expression is taken from books. 五服

are five kinds of mourning apparel, worn for different lengths of time by persons of different degrees of consanguinity. Persons whose ancestors of the fifth generation unite in one belong to the 五服, and are supposed to wear a certain kind of mourning for a certain time. Beyond this degree of consanguinity, the relationship is ignored.

19 和 is properly conjunctive, but here, being followed by 都 with a negative, it becomes disjunctive.

20 In most parts of the country 把 would be replaced by 拿 or 將.

21 天文家, the family (i.e., class) who make astronomy a study or profession. This use of 家 is both wén-li and Mandarin.

LESSON CXXXVI.

PHRASES OF ASSURANCE.

^{kwod 3 5} 果 Really, in very deed,—not often used alone.

果然 Really, in fact, actually, indeed; sure enough.

果不然 The same. The insertion of this negative forms a curious solecism, as it practically makes no difference in the meaning. It may perhaps be explained by considering the phrase as an interrogative affirmative.

果真 Really, in reality, sure enough, absolutely, actually.

真果 The same,—but less widely used.

真個 The same as 真果 and probably a corruption of it. (N.)

當真 Really, in very deed, in fact, for a fact, in earnest.

如果 If indeed, if in truth, in case.

VOCABULARY.

祝 Chu⁴. To pray for blessings, to bless (by praying for); to congratulate.

³ 河南 Ho² nan². The province of Honan.

⁵ 半信半疑 Pan⁴ hsin⁴ pan⁴ i². Uncertain, dubious, doubtful.

⁶ 震壓 Chén⁴ ya⁴. To intimidate, to overawe, to frighten.

打死 Ta³ si². To kill by blows, to kill:—Les. 183.

咎 Chiu¹. A fault, an error; to criminate. (w.)

課六十三百一第

LESSON CXXXVI.

嗎、或者是說着玩呢。君子口裏無戲言，那有說着玩的。之中，果有一猴，露着頭，伸着手。○你真個要入一個股分。所需用的東西，這裏可以供給。○行不二三里，見那石匣。不咎，那又成了聖人喇。○你們如果願意在這裏住幾天，唬震壓震壓他，還能當真打死他嗎。○他若果然能既往來在朋友跟前打聽，果然是真的。○我不過是連打帶嚇。前言，果真他照這條路來了。○起初我還半信半疑的，後如果往河南去，從上路就該岔道。○我從早就怕他不符這麼說的嗎。答：真果真的，我不撒謊。○你道說你是往河南去，人若果然不知道孝順，反不如禽獸了。○祝雲亭真果真是

- 1 If a man really does not recognize his filial obligations, he is beneath the beasts.
- 2 Did Chu Yün T'ing really say this? Ans. He really did. I am telling no lie.
- 3 You say you are going to Honan. If indeed you are going to Honan, you should have turned off this road at the last fork.
- 4 I have feared for some time that he would violate his promise; and, sure enough, this is just what he has done.
- 5 At first I only half believed it, afterwards I inquired of some friends and found that it was really true.
- 6 I was only beating and threatening him in order to frighten him. Do you suppose I would really kill him?
- 7 If he is indeed able to forgive and forget the past, then he must be accounted a sage.
- 8 In case you are really willing to stay here a few days, we can provide whatever you require.
- 9 We had not gone over two or three li, when, sure enough, I saw a monkey putting out his head and hands from within that stone box.
- 10 Do you in reality wish to take a share, or are you only in sport? Ans. "The superior man is not given to joking;" there is no sport about it.

- 6 需用 Hsü¹ yung⁴. Required for use, necessary, requisite.
- 7 股分 Ku³ fên⁴. A share in a business or company.
- 8 戲言 Hsi⁴ yen². Words spoken in sport, a jest, humor, pleasantry.
- 9 打破 Ta³ p'ö⁴. To break in pieces, to smash, to break up, to destroy.
- 10 天理 T'ien¹ lí³. The law of heaven, the principles of right, moral truth.
- 11 公平 Kung¹ p'ing². Just, right, equitable.
- 12 定貨賬 Ting⁴ hwo⁴ chang⁴. An order for goods, an order book.
- 13 唇舌 Ch'un² shé². Talk, words, speech.

- 14 嘴舌 Tsui³ shé². The same.
- 15 磨嘴舌 Moa³ tsui³ shé². To talk, to bandy words, to expatiate, to dispute, to haggle.
- 16 費唇舌 Fei⁴ ch'un² shé². The same.
- 17 覆 Fu². Back and forth, to and fro; to overthrow, to upset; to reply.
- 18 回覆 Hui² fu². To answer, to reply.
- 19 瞎說 Hsia¹ shwo⁴. To talk at random, to talk nonsense; to exaggerate, to tell lies.
- 20 勸善 Ch'üan⁴ shan⁴. To exhort to virtue, to preach.

果個外片塊嘴唇下上先也氣這呢。
 的頭來也可以呢。你還能一口兩舌嗎。昨天孩子跑來家說，真
 後來我出去一看，果然不是個外國人，下來勸善，叫
 也可以呢。你還能一口兩舌嗎。昨天孩子跑來家說，真
 片塊也可以呢。你還能一口兩舌嗎。昨天孩子跑來家說，真
 塊也可以呢。你還能一口兩舌嗎。昨天孩子跑來家說，真
 下了三片塊的定貨賬，如今價錢果然跌落了，他也可以和我磨費
 上三百塊的定貨賬，如今價錢果然跌落了，他也可以和我磨費
 先定規買我二百塊。後來又說，就是三百塊也可以，我就
 也就跟着你學公平了。豆餅正在要跌價的時候，益順
 氣的，也就跟着你學和氣了，果然公平處事，那不公平的，
 這個天理，可就傷的大喇。自己果然和氣待人，那不和
 呢。他們兩下做親，門當戶對，若果真是你給他打破了，

- 11 It is in every way appropriate for these two to marry. If you have really broken up the match, you have grievously violated the will of heaven.
- 12 If you yourself are really pacific in your treatment of others, those who are not peaceably inclined will learn from you to be peaceable. If you yourself are really just in your dealings, those who are unjust will learn from you to be just.
- 13 Just when the price of beancake was on the point of falling, I Shun decided to buy of me two hundred cakes, but afterwards added the words, "or three hundred if you like;" upon which I put him down for three hundred cakes. Now that the price has actually fallen, he haggles with me, saying he only bargained for two hundred. I replied, "Why then did you say 'three hundred if you like' ? Can you go back on your word ?"
- 14 Yesterday one of the children came running home saying, "A [foreign] devil has come." I replied, "Stop your foolish talk," but he answered excitedly, "It's really so." When I went out, I saw at once that it really was so—that a foreigner had come exhorting men to be good and to reverence Heaven and Earth and father and mother. Truly he was a laughable object.

- 1 可笑 K'od⁸ hsiao⁴..... Laughable, ridiculous.
- 15 砒 Hsin⁴..... Arsenic:—Note (15).
- 15 砒 P'i²..... An ore of arsenic; white arsenic.
- 15 砒霜 P'i² shwang¹. White arsenic, arsenious acid.

- 15 滷 Lu⁵.... Crude soda; pickle, brine:—Note (15).
- 15 服毒 Fu³ tu²..... To take poison. /5
- 16 褪 Tun⁴..... To disrobe; to prune, to trim. /6
- 16 招風 Chao¹ feng¹..... To catch the wind. /6
- 16 敲 Ch'ie¹..... Leaning, toppling over. /6

NOTES.

3 道 is much used in Mandarin books at the beginning of a clause or sentence, meaning he said, or so and so said.
 4 不符前言 Not to accord with previous words, to break one's word.
 7 既往不咎 Not resenting what is already past, not cherishing enmity for past offences. 那又成了聖人喇 that would be to become a sage. One of the highest qualities of the so-called sage is that firm and self-contained equipoise of mind that is not disturbed by the wrongs endured from others.

11 做親, to become kindred; that is, to make a marriage alliance. 門當戶對, gate suitable and door agreeing; that is, the wealth and social standing of the families are similar. 天理 expresses the highest idea the Chinese have of right. 傷天理 is to violate the highest law, and expresses the idea of wrong doing more forcibly than any other term in the language. 這個 limits 天理 in this particular case to the principle that marriage between suitable persons is an ordinance of heaven, to defeat which is a great wrong.
 12 處事, to transact affairs, to act,—a wên-li expression.

人敬天敬地敬父母，實在叫人可笑。①他成天家說是要吃砒霜，要喝瀉水，都看他嚇唬人。那想到他當真就服毒死了呢。○人做好夢不靈，做壞夢準成。去年五月間，我做了一夢，夢見一羣牲口，向我亂踢亂咬的，一直把我咬醒了。自己心裏猜，怕要有事，以後果不然叫那些勇好一頓打，幾乎要了命。○老17人的話，到底該聽我的爺爺，從多日就告訴我，把房子後頭那棵樹褪一褪，免得招風，我却沒拿着當事，誰想這場大風，真果把樹颳歪了，把房子也壓壞了。

- 15 She was constantly threatening that she would eat arsenic or drink brine, but all supposed she was merely trying to frighten us. Who would have thought that she would really take poison and kill herself?
- 16 When one has a good dream, nothing comes of it, but a bad dream never fails. Last year in the fifth month I had a dream; I dreamed that a drove of animals came wildly kicking and biting at me, insomuch that I woke up. I turned the matter over in my mind and was afraid something would happen. Afterwards, sure enough, those soldiers gave me such a beating as came very near finishing me.
- 17 After all, the advice of old people should be heeded. My grandfather has been telling me for ever so long to trim that tree behind the house and prevent its catching the wind, but I paid no attention to the matter, when, sure enough, this high wind blew the tree over on the house and damaged it.

13 一口兩舌, *two tongues in one mouth; that is, one mouth speaking two things, going back on one's word.*

14 鬼子 or, as often, 洋鬼子, is not only called out at foreigners for the purpose of dishonoring and stigmatizing them, but is the term by which the people in common conversation universally designate foreigners. Its use is comparatively recent, and probably sprang originally from the idea of grotesqueness suggested to the Chinese mind by the hair, beard, and dress of foreigners.

15 服毒, *to submit to [the taking of] poison.* 服 is used for 吃, because the taking of the poison requires a constraint of the natural taste and feelings. 砒 is crude arsenic. It is often written 信, but medical books and foreign chemistries use 砒.

瀉水 is the pickle used in making bean-curd. It is made of crude salt and contains more or less caustic soda, and is very poisonous.

LESSON CXXXVII.

GENERAL INTENSIVES.

Sept. 9, 1922

The more common words of this class were given in Lesson 15.

極 Very, extremely, exceedingly, to the last [degree].
極其 Extremely, exceedingly, entirely, etc. 其 is added for euphony.

到極處 To the last degree, to the utmost, in the extreme.

甚 Very, to a high degree, exceedingly, specially. 甚儘 The extreme, very exactly, perfectly.

儘之 Continuously, indefinitely, so long.

實 Decidedly, truly, emphatically; reliable, matter of fact.

十分 Entirely, perfectly, in the highest degree.

深 Deeply, thoroughly, fully.

得利害 Very severe, extremely, immoderately, extravagantly.

的利害 The same,—的 being evidently a [corruption of 得].
數着 The best, the worst, etc.

到所以然 (To the reason why), consummate, with a vengeance, to the uttermost.

到所以然處 The same.

到家 To the stopping place, to the last degree, to the uttermost.

第一百三十七課

LESSON CXXXVII.

我們在那裏極方便。○李長松病得不甚重。○他這樣強佔人家田產，可惡極了。○我看他的心，偏的利害。○他這樣強佔着實不好。○有話快說，別儘之耽誤工夫。○河邊有各種鮮花，十分好看。○他說了無數的壞話，甚不中聽。○父子兩個樂極生悲，不能說出話來。○那地方的風俗，真是淫亂極了。○他的三個姑娘，數着那個小的人物好。○柳瑞廷在那裏住呢？答：在前街上，儘東頭住。○我看這樣辦法，極其妥當。○那兩個人，心中甚拘泥，不隨和兒。○山上，有極大極密的樹林，甚是茂盛。○你們兵民，都要着實小心謹慎。○他縣考在儘末了，府考又在儘末了嗎？○這時候不大疼了，就是纔擦

- 1 We are very conveniently situated there.
- 2 Li Ch'ang Sung is not very sick.
- 3 His taking the land by force in this way, is detestable to the last degree.
- 4 In my opinion his mind is extremely biased. [bad.]
- 5 This kind of a disposition is decidedly
- 6 If you have anything to say, say it quickly, and don't waste time indefinitely.
- 7 On the banks of the river were all kinds of fresh flowers which were extremely beautiful.
- 8 He said a great many unreasonable (offensive) things, very unpleasant to hear.
- 9 The extreme joy of father and son produced such emotion that they were unable to speak.
- 10 The customs of the place were indeed licentious in the extreme.
- 11 Of his three daughters, the physique of that youngest one is the best.
- 12 Where does Liu Jui T'ing live? Ans. He lives on the front street at the extreme eastern end. [satisfactory.]
- 13 I consider this plan of action entirely
- 14 Those two men are exceedingly obstinate and contrary.
- 15 On the mountain was an exceedingly large and dense forest which was very luxuriant.
- 16 You soldiers and people should all be very cautious and circumspect.
- 17 In the hsien examination he was the very last [on the list]; in the fu ex-

VOCABULARY.

- 1 甚 Shên⁴. Very:—see Sub. See shên².
- 3 強佔 Ch'iang² chan⁴. To take by force, to usurp.
- 3 田產 T'ien² ch'an³. Lands, possessions.
- 6 歪話 Wai¹ hwa⁴. Unreasonable, preposterous; irrelevant, misleading.
- 6 淫 Yin². To soak; licentious, lewd; excessive.
- 6 淫亂 Yin² lwan⁴. Licentiousness, debauchery, adultery.
- 11 人物 Jên² wu⁴. Personal appearance, form, physique, presence.
- 14 拘泥 Chu¹ ni². Obtuse, self-opinionated, pig-headed, obstinate, stubborn.

- 隨和 Sui². ho². To follow the crowd, to concur, to acquiesce.
- 茂 Mao⁴. Exuberant, flourishing; elegant.
- 茂盛 Mao⁴ shêng⁴. Luxuriant, flourishing, prosperous.
- 謹慎 Chin³ shên⁴. Careful, cautious, discreet, circumspect.
- 正身 Chêng⁴ ta⁴. Important, weighty.
- 身段 Shên¹ twan⁴. Stature, size; body.
- 響亮 Hsiang³ liang⁴. Resonant, clear, ringing, sonorous.
- 華麗 Hwa² li⁴. Elegant, stylish, fine.
- 悲嘆 Pei¹ t'an⁴. Sad, grieved, distressed, mournful.

上藥疼得利害。○孔子說的話，雖極平常，却極正大。○你看着他無能嗎，在他莊上還數着他呢。○你若能打，儘管給我打，打出禍來是我的。○現在就要去嗎，答：不甚要緊，等一會兒也可以。○我僱的這個老媽子，是好極咯，粗細工夫，他都做。○人死後還要復活，這是我深信不疑的。○那個人所占的段量不大，聲音倒極響亮。○論這房子，雖不十分華麗，然而所佔的地方，却極其清雅。○我這些年，是靠山倒靠海乾，思想起來，真是悲嘆之極。○你還不去進館，儘在這裏賣獸作甚麼。○那是已經受封誥的太太，你看他頭戴鳳冠，身穿蟒袍，脖子上掛着朝珠，實在體面到極處。○村中雖有許多人家，却東一家，西一

- amination was he the last again?
 18 It does not hurt very much at present, but when the medicine was first rubbed on, it pained me very severely.
 19 Although the sayings of Confucius are very plain, yet they are exceedingly weighty.
 20 You think he is a man of no capacity, do you? The fact is, he is the best man in his village.
 21 If you can fight, then fight your best for me; and if you hurt somebody, I'll pay the damages.
 22 Must I go just now? Ans. It is not specially important, by and by will do.
 23 This old servant woman I have hired is first rate. She can do both fine and coarse work.
 24 That men will rise again after death, is something I fully believe.
 25 That man is not large in body, but he has a ringing voice.
 26 Although this house is not specially stylish, yet the position it occupies is very quiet.
 27 Everything is against me these few years. I am distressed beyond measure whenever I think of it.
 28 Have you not yet gone to school? What are you here so long for?
 29 That is a lady who has received a title of nobility. See, she wears on her head a phoenix hat, on her shoulders an embroidered gown, and on her neck there hangs a string of pearls. Her dress is elegant in the extreme.
 30 Although the town has a large popu-

- 賣獸 *Mai⁴ tai¹*. To fool away time, to dawdle, to loiter, to dilly-dally.
- 誥 *Kao⁴*. To enjoin upon, to order; to grant a patent.
- 封誥 *Fèng¹ kao⁴*. To confer a title or patent of nobility, to decorate.
- 冠 *Kwan¹*. A cap, a hat, a crown, a crest. See *kwan⁴*.
- 鳳冠 *Fèng⁴ kwan¹*. A hat or coronet with pendants and having a phoenix embroidered or gilded on it. It is worn by ladies of rank, and in some places by brides of all ranks.
- 蟒 *Mang³*. A python with yellow scales.
- 蟒袍 *Mang³ p'ao²*. A ceremonial robe embroidered with dragons.

- 脖 *Pod²*. The neck; the navel.
- 頸 *Kèng³*. The neck, the throat.
- 朝珠 *Ch'ao² chu¹*. A long string of beads worn by officials.
- 跨 *K'wa⁴*. To straddle, to pass over, a stride; wide apart.
- 跨拉 *K'wa⁴ la¹*. Scattered, sparse. (L.)
- 殘 *Ts'an²*. To destroy, to kill; broken, fragmentary; ravening, cruel.
- 殘忍 *Ts'an² jèn³*. Cruel, unmerciful, hard-hearted.
- 胡琴 *Hu² ch'in²*. A Chinese violin, a fiddle:— Note (32).
- 聲調 *Shèng¹ tiao⁴*. Voice, tune.
- 絃 *Hs'in²*. The string of a lute, violin, etc.

在那裏攪鬧等人攆着纔走，真沒眼色到所以然處。
 人家急急的收拾行李，預備明天早早起行，你却儘之
 了去，然後他遠遠望着你，你一漏空，他就鑽進去了。
 圈套大，不論甚麼事，預先拿話勾引你，把你的主意套
 他外面皮兒，雖像愚蠢，心裏却奸猾到極處，法子多
 兩吊六七百錢一石，有時賣兩吊五，那就是賤到底家喇。
 風俗就不好，早路碼頭更甚。○這幾年的米，總掉不下
 唱的那個聲調兒，大門口有個賣唱的，拉着四根絃的胡琴，
 忍得利害。○說某人性同虎狼，就是說他的性情，殘
 家跨拉得相連。○

lation, yet the houses stand here and there very much scattered.
 31 To say that a man's disposition is like that of a tiger or wolf, is equivalent to saying that it is outrageously cruel.
 32 There is a minstrel at the gate playing a violin, and his voice is in perfect harmony with the instrument. It is a treat to hear him.
 33 In every emporium of trade, morals are bad, and this is specially true of such as are inland.
 34 For these several years the price of rice has not ranged lower than two thousand and six or seven hundred cash per picul. A few times it sold for two thousand five hundred, which was the very cheapest.
 35 Although in appearance he seems stupid, yet at heart he is crafty to the last degree; his devices are many and his toils far reaching. No matter what the business is, he first approaches you plausibly and pumps you, and then stands off and watches. As soon as he catches you off your guard, he takes advantage of you.
 36 He is anxious to put his luggage in order so as to start early in the morning, yet you insist on remaining and keeping up your uproar until you are driven out. You seem to be utterly wanting in a sense of propriety.

石 Tan⁴. A measure of ten 斗; A picul, one hundred catties:—Note (34).
 愚蠢 Yu² ch'un⁸. Silly, stupid, obtuse.
 奸猾 Hwa². Cunning, treacherous; clever.

奸猾 Chieh¹ hwa². Treacherous; crafty, knavish, subtle.
 漏空 Lou⁴ k'ung⁴. To expose a weak place, to be off one's guard.

NOTES.

6 儘之 is sometimes written 儘自. Being nothing more than a euphonic ending, 之 is the better writing; moreover the sound of 之 is everywhere correct, while 自 is in many places incorrect.
 9 樂極生悲 is a book phrase meaning that extreme joy gives rise to sadness, that is, manifests itself in emotions that seem akin to sadness. The same phrase is also used to mean, excessive joy is the precursor of sorrow.
 12 前街 may mean the front street as we understand front; or it may mean, the south street as opposed to the 後街, or street to the north. 前 and 後 are frequently so used; thus 山前 means on the south side of the hill, and 山後 on the north side. The South Gate of Peking is called 前門.

14 不隨和兒 To refuse to agree with others or with the majority, contrary, intractable.
 21 打出禍來 To strike out a calamity; that is, to strike or fight so as to produce serious consequences.
 24 深信不疑, profoundly believing and free from doubt,—a book phrase.
 26 倒 expresses the unexpected contrast between the size of the man and the strength of his voice.
 27 靠山山倒靠海海乾, when I trust in the hill, the hill falls over; and when I trust in the sea, the sea dries up; a bold figure for expressing unprecedentedly bad luck.
 32 賣唱的 A street minstrel, one who sings for a living 胡琴, a Mongolian lute, which is played with a bow like a violin, though the original Chinese 琴 is a lute, which is played by striking with the fingers.

第一三八八課

LESSON CXXXVIII.

樹林中，將就歇歇，養養精神再走罷。○他已經病了，不但折福，並且還要破家。○你且在這路旁邊工夫又純，還能沒有進益嗎。○杜占鰲天分既高，而且之，那有生而知之的呢。○杜占鰲天分既高，而且不但是要按理，並且更要看情。○人都是學而知兒裏相好，而且又連了幾層親。○和親近人交往，不只是不能成事，且又往往誤事。○他們倆底根給叫人不服處，就是因為能說而不能行。○他倆底根○有人自己不好，並且不教兒女學好。○他那個那淨是些似是而非的話。○他的漢丈大而且胖。

- 1 That talk is all specious fallacy.
- 2 His figure is large and also portly.
- 3 Some men are not good themselves, and moreover they do not train their children to be good.
- 4 The reason he cannot influence others is that he does not practice what he preaches.
- 5 The dilatory man not only fails to accomplish anything, but he frequently hinders the accomplishment of things.
- 6 They two were originally friends, and they have also become connected by several intermarriages.
- 7 In our intercourse with near relatives we must not only regard the claims of reason, but still more those of affection.
- 8 Men all get knowledge by learning. Where is the man who is gifted with it by nature?
- 9 Tu Chan Ao's talents are of a high order, and his time is wholly given to study; can he do otherwise than excel?
- 10 If this extravagance becomes habitual, he will not only curtail his happiness, but he will also bankrupt his estate.
- 11 Come, be content to rest here in this grove at the road side and refresh yourself before going on further.

34 石 is simply 石 *shí* with a dot added for the sake of distinction. It is not recognized by Kanghi and is frequently written simply 石, though *tan* is not a recognized pronunciation of 石. It is properly a *measure* of ten 斗, but is in practice constantly confused with 擔 *tan*, a *weight* or load of 100 catties. As a mea-

sure, it is exceedingly variable in different places, because the 斗 is so variable. In Têngchow a 斗 is about one and a third bushels, and consequently a 石 is over thirteen bushels. In some other places the 斗 is less than a peck, and the 石 of course proportionately small.

LESSON CXXXVIII.

TRANSITIONAL CONJUNCTIONS.

Both 而 and 且 have already appeared in sundry combinations in previous lessons, but their own special force remains to be considered.

而 And, yet, but. 而 often expresses a close connection or transition which has no corresponding word in English. It is properly a book word, but is often used in colloquial.

且 But, and, moreover, furthermore. The difference between 而 and 且 is often very little. They will frequently replace each other.

且 For the time being, temporarily, first.

Thus used, 且 does not stand as a connective of clauses, but is thrown in directly after the subject in order to make a place for what follows, to serve as a stepping stone to it. It is in this case approximately equal to 暫且 or 先 or 就, but is less explicit.

而且 And, and also, yet, moreover.

並且 And, also, but, moreover.

When connecting clauses, 而 and 且, as well as 而且 and 並且, are nearly always followed by 又 or 也 or 再.

了五六個月，而且飯食又不佳，所以纔瘦枯了。○你既然不
 老不少，而且也沒有殘疾，怎麼還討飯吃呢。○我且問你，他
 不恭敬你，你還恭敬他。來若沒有。○這件事，不如託來順罷，
 因為他有工夫，而且也有成事的才幹。○這件事，不當做而做的，與
 當做而不做的，都不合理之當然。○你該把這張禱告文，念
 熟了，並且常常照樣禱告。○你且出去，等我們商議商議，再
 告訴你。○人的聰明，不只得之於父，且更得之於母，所以男
 人念書，既能加上兒女的聰明，若是女人也念書，更能加上
 兒女的聰明。○學問的大好處，就是在乎能開人的心竅，使
 心越用越靈，而且能知古今的事，通達萬物的理，使人無往

- 12 His being so thin is because he has been ill for five or six months, moreover his food also has not been the best.
- 13 Why are you begging, seeing you are neither an old man nor a child nor yet a cripple?
- 14 He did not show you respect [you say]; just let me ask you, did you show him respect?
- 15 It would be better to entrust this affair to Lai Shun, because he has the time to spare, and he also has the ability to put it through.
- 16 Doing what ought not to be done, and not doing what ought to be done, are both contrary to the principles of right reason.
- 17 You ought to commit this form of prayer carefully to memory, and constantly to pray after this manner.
- 18 Do you go out a little while and wait till we have consulted, after which we will inform you.
- 19 A man's mental endowments are derived, not alone from his father, but still more from his mother; therefore seeing the education of the father adds to the capacity of the children, still more will the education of the mother add to their capacity.
- 20 The great advantage of learning consists in its developing the faculties of the mind, so that the more they are exercised the more efficient they become; moreover by this means a man

VOCABULARY.

- 5 拉疲 *La¹ p²i²*. Dilatory, behindhand, negligent, careless, heedless.
- 5 拖疲 *T²o¹ p²i²*. The same. (s.)
- 5 拉場 *La¹ t²a¹*. The same. (N.)
- 9 杜 *Tu⁴*. A fine grained wood used for engraving; a surname.
- 9 鰲 *Ao²*. A huge sea fish.
- 9 純 *Ch²un²*. Pure, unmixed; entirely, wholly; simple, guileless, sincere.
- 9 進益 *Chin⁴ i²*. Improvement, progress.
- 10 浪 *Lang⁴*. A wave, a billow; profligate; wasteful; impertinent, lawless.
- 10 浪費 *Lang⁴ fei⁴*. To spend extravagantly, to squander, to waste.

- 折福 *Ché² fu²*. To lessen blessings, to cut off enjoyments:—Note (10).
- 9 破家 *P²o⁴ chia¹*. To lose property, to bankrupt one's estate.
- 飯食 *Fan⁴ shí²*. Food, victuals. / 2
- 佳 *Chia¹*. Beautiful, good, superior, excellent. / 2
- 瘦枯 *Sou⁴ k²u¹*. Poor, lean, ill-favored, emaciated. / 2
- 殘疾 *Ts²an² chi²*. Deficient in limb or organ, crippled, maimed. / 3
- 當然 *Tang¹ jan²*. That which ought to be, right:—Note (16).
- 禱 *Tao³*. To pray to the gods, to supplicate. / 7

而不樂。○水是二分輕氣，一分養氣，化合而成的。○大哥，你這幾年出門很好阿，大有所望阿，²³見笑，我有甚麼能幹甚麼呢，不過餬口而已。○人一做了賊，不但是對不住天地鬼神，並且對不住親戚朋友，也不但是對不住親戚朋友，而且對不住父母兄弟，又不但是對不住父母兄弟，且是對不住妻子兒女，又不但是對不住妻子兒女，且更對不住自己的良心。○從前買這樣的貂鼠馬褂，²⁴至公道，也得四百兩銀子，你看這一件，顏色兒多麼黑，毛道兒多麼厚，又平正，且是風毛出得齊截，面子的緞子又厚，花樣兒也新鮮，又合如今的時候兒，問你要三百銀子，還算多了嗎。

comes to know ancient and modern affairs, and to understand the laws of nature, so that wherever he turns he finds enjoyment.

21 Water is composed of two parts of hydrogen and one of oxygen chemically combined.

22 Well, sir, you have been quite successful in your business these few years [I hear], and your prospects are good. Ans. You are too facetious. What capacity have I? What business can I do? It is all I can do to make a living.

23 When a man becomes a robber, he not only sins against the gods, but he also sins against his own relatives and friends; and he not only sins against his relatives and friends, but also against his parents and brothers; and not only against his parents and brothers, but also against his wife and children; and not only against his wife and children, but still more against his own conscience.

24 Formerly a sable coat of this kind would have cost at least four hundred taels. Just look at this one, what a pure black it is, how thick the fur is and how smooth, and also how even is the border; the satin cover also is heavy, and the figure is new and just in the present style. Can it be considered dear at three hundred taels?

- 1) 禱告 *Tao³ kao⁴*. To pray, to supplicate; prayer, supplication.
- 1) 禱告文 *Tao³ kao⁴ wên²*. A written form of prayer.
- 2⁰ 通達 *T'ung¹ ta²*. To see through clearly, to understand, to comprehend.
- 2¹ 養氣 *Yang³ ch'i⁴*..... Oxygen.
- 2¹ 化合 *Hwa⁴ hod³*. To combine chemically, to unite in one.
- 2² 餬 *Hu¹²*..... Congee; to get a sustenance.
- 2² 餬口 *Hu¹ k'ou³*. To get or make a living, to earn one's bread.
- 2² 而已 *Er² i³*. And nothing more, only, simply, barely. (w.)

- 貂 *Tiao¹*.....The Siberian sable.
- 貂鼠 *Tiao¹ shu³*.....The sable, the marten.
- 至不濟 *Chi⁴ pu⁴ chi⁴*. At the very least, at least.
- 毛道 *Mao² tao⁴*.....Class or quality of fur.
- 毛頭 *Mao² t'ou²*.....The same. (s.)
- 平正 *P'ing² chêng⁴*.....Level, even, smooth.
- 風毛 *Fêng¹ mao²*. A fur border or facing:— Note (24).
- 齊截 *Ch'i³ chie²*.....Even, regular, smooth.
- 新鮮 *Hsin¹ hsiên¹*.....New; fresh, bright.
- 時樣 *Shi² yang⁴*. The prevailing style, the fashion.

課九十三百一第
 我原不能走路，又加上今天起身晚了，所以到如今纔來。○那個人用不得，常常爭競工錢，還帶着不愛做工活。○我覺着渾身發燒，就像火烤的一樣，又搭上害耳底疼得連頭顱都腫了。○他本來身子就弱，再加上病了這幾天，溝的氣味兒，很不好，都沒有。○這幾天冷熱的，所以人都不能又搭着天氣，忽冷忽熱的，心痛的病，直保養身子。○芹子發了心，疼的病，直叫喚了四天，還帶着一吃藥就吐，你說愁

LESSON CXXXIX.

- 1 I never was a good walker, and besides I started late this morning; hence it is that I have but just arrived.
- 2 That man is not useable; he is continually disputing about his wages, and moreover he does not like to work.
- 3 My whole body feels burning hot as if roasted by the fire, and in addition, I have such a severe ear-ache that the whole side of my face is swollen.
- 4 He was originally delicate, and having had this spell of sickness in addition, he has not even strength to walk.
- 5 These few days the stench from cleaning the drains is noisome, and in addition, the weather is very changeable, so that no one is able to preserve his health.
- 6 Ch'in-tsi's papa has had an attack of dyspepsia which has kept him groaning incessantly for four days, and moreover, when he takes any medicine he immediately throws it up. Isn't it trying?

NOTES.

- 1 似是而非, as if it were but is not, that which resembles truth or fact, but is not such.
- 8 學而知之, a book phrase meaning to acquire knowledge by the labor of learning, as opposed to 生而知之, to be endowed with knowledge by birth or intuition.
- 10 折福, to cut off or deduct (by evil deeds) from the sum total of blessings allotted to each individual by the gods. 破家, to lose or waste money so as to involve the sacrifice of one's property and estate.
- 14 且 is here thrown in to interrupt the sentence and make a place for the question immediately following.
- 15 不如 implies a comparison, the first half of which is unexpressed.
- 16 理之當然, reason's oughtness, right reason. The phrase is often turned about and said 當然之理.

- 19 之 as here used is quite equivalent to 着 in meaning, and being used in imitation of book style is entirely *t'ung hsing*.
- 20 This sentence was made by a Chinaman who had tasted of Western education and knew its value. 無往而不樂, go nowhere without finding joy; that is, finding enjoyment in everything.
- 23 對不住, cannot endure confronting, unable to face, that is, self-condemned, hence, to offend, to sin against. 天地鬼神, heaven and earth demons and gods; a comprehensive summary of divine powers and beings, all of which are required to fully express the Chinese idea of divinity. The best translation of the whole is simply, gods.
- 24 風毛 is a narrow border of extra long fur sewed on along the edges where the satin outside is joined to the fur lining. 公道, just,—from the side of the purchaser; that is, cheap.

LESSON CXXXIX.
 CONJUNCTIVE PHRASES.

還帶着 or 還帶之 And moreover, furthermore.
 再加上 And in addition, and furthermore, and still more.
 再搭上 The same.

再者 And again, and further, and in the next place.
 再是 The same.
 又加上 And in addition, and besides.
 又搭上 or 又搭着 The same.

還不着，真是苦惱極了。○他雖然長了十五歲，比起你來，
 不是一個孩子，你好動手打他嗎？再者說，打狗看主面，他
 罰，已經就殼受的，再搭上臭蟲咬，蚊子叮，連抓也抓
 呢。○人在監裏，帶着手銬，腳鍊，又被鐵鍊捆鎖這些刑
 又加上蓋了五間房子，你想我有多少錢，還能有存項
 他。○我在二月，陪送了一個姑娘，八月娶了一個媳婦。
 者，叫他來的時候，可以從東路走，我好趕着牲口去迎
 ○請你帶個口信給我的外甥，叫他十六日來聽戲，再
 子褲綠緞子襖，戴着滿頭的翠花，看着真如天仙一般。
 人不愁人呢。○王太太原來就俏俊俏，又搭上穿着紅綢

7 Lady Wang is naturally handsome, and when, in addition, she is dressed in red silk trowsers and a green satin sacque and has her head covered with turquoise feather work, she really looks like a fairy.
 8 Will you please carry word to my nephew to come on the sixteenth to the theatre, and further tell him, when he comes to come by the east road that I may take an animal to meet him.
 9 In the second month I gave my daughter her marriage outfit, in the eighth month I brought home a daughter-in-law, and, in addition, I have built a house of five rooms; how much money do you suppose I have, that I should still have cash on hand?
 10 When a man is in prison, and has on handcuffs and shackles and is bound with an iron chain; these inflictions are already all he can bear; but when, in addition, the bed-bugs bite, and the mosquitoes sting, and he cannot even scratch; he is indeed wretched in the extreme.
 11 Although he is a youth of fifteen, yet in comparison with you he is but a child; does it become you to strike him? Besides it is said, "When you would strike a dog, have regard to his master." Suppose the boy did

VOCABULARY.

- 發燒 *Fa¹ shao¹*. To feel feverish, to burn with fever.
- 顯 *Sai¹*. The jaws, the cheeks.
- 頰 *Chia¹*. The lower jaw, the cheek, the chops.
- 顯頰. The cheeks, the jaws, the side face.
- 溝 *Kou¹*. A ditch, a drain, a sewer; a gutter, a ravine.
- 氣味 *Ch'i⁴ wei⁴*. Smell, stench, fumes.
- 保養 *Pao³ yang³*. To protect, to preserve, to keep.
- 芹 *Ch'in²*. Celery; parsley; cress.
- 心疼 *Hsin¹ t'eng²*. Pain in the chest, heart-burn; dyspepsia.
- 俏爭 *Ch'iao⁴ cheng¹*. Pretty, handsome, neat, elegant. (s.)
- 翠花 *Ts'ui⁴ hwa¹*. Artificial flowers made of the feathers of the turquoise king-fisher.
- 天仙 *T'ien¹ hsien¹*. An immortal, a genius, a fairy.
- 口信 *K'ou³ hsin⁴*. News sent by word of mouth, a message.
- 陪送 *P'ei² sung⁴*. To escort, to accompany ceremonially; to fit out.
- 存項 *Ts'un² hsiang⁴*. Money on hand, cash.
- 銬 *K'ao⁴*. Fetters for the hands, manacles. This character is not recognized by Kanghi, but is in general use in official documents.
- 手銬 *Shou³ k'ao⁴*. Manacles, handcuffs.
- 鍊 *Lien⁴*. To smelt, to refine; to work out by experience, to discipline; a chain.
- 捆 *K'un³*. To bind, to fasten, to gird.
- 捆鎖 *K'un³ soa³*. To bind, to chain, to pinion; to secure, to fasten.
- 臭蟲 *Ch'ou⁴ ch'ung²*. A bed-bug.

就是得罪你，你也該告訴我，等我給你出氣，你該自己打他這麼個樣子嗎？^①文王¹²生來就有聖德，天下固然不能不服，又搭着紂王，殘害忠良，暴虐黎民，所以民心就越發歸文王了。^①人都說是守業難，你看李雲慶家，一連五六輩子財主，現在他的三個兒子，又都巴巴結結的過日子，一個瞎花錢的也沒有，還帶着三個媳婦，也很和睦，永沒有爭吵打架之說，若都能像這樣守業，還有個守不住的嗎？^①若是好馬，腿必定結實，耐得勞苦，樣兒也好，又伶俐，騎上如同飛鷹一般，你這匹馬，算個什麼，口也老了，下巴骨都牽拉了，再是腿也軟，肯打

offend you, you should have told me, and allowed me to give you satisfaction; you ought not yourself to have beaten him in this way.

12 From his birth Wên Wang had the virtues of a sage, so that the nation could not fail to give him its allegiance, and when, in addition, Chou Wang maltreated his faithful officers and oppressed the common people, the hearts of the people all the more turned to Wên Wang.

13 Everybody says that preserving an inheritance is difficult. Look at Li Yün Ch'ing's family; they have been rich for five or six consecutive generations, and now his three sons are all thrifty, not one is spending money foolishly, and moreover his three daughters-in-law are all very harmonious, there is never the least sign of quarreling or fighting. If all followed this example, would any fail to preserve their patrimony?

14 In the case of a good horse, his legs are sound and will stand fatigue; he is well shaped and his movements quick; when you mount him, away he flies like a hawk. But this horse of yours—of what account is he? He is old and his jaw droops, also his legs are weak and he has a habit of

¹⁰ 蚊 Wên². A mosquito, a gnat.

¹⁰ 苦惱 K'u³ nao³. Wretched, miserable; forlorn, cast down.

¹¹ 出氣 Ch'u¹ ch'i⁴. To aspirate; to vent one's anger; to avenge, to vindicate.

¹² 紂 Chou⁴. A trace, a breech-strap:—Note (12).

¹² 殘害 Ts'an² hai⁴. To treat cruelly, to maltreat, to abuse.

¹² 忠良 Chung¹ liang². Faithful and virtuous [officers]. (w.)

¹² 虐 Nüe⁴, Yoä⁴. Cruel, tyrannical; harsh.

¹² 暴虐 Pao⁴ nüe⁴. To oppress, to tyrannize over, to ill-use.

¹² 黎 Li². Black; many, numerous.

¹² 黎民 Li² min². The black haired people, the Chinese people. (w.)

¹³ 守業 Shou³ yie⁴. To preserve an inheritance:—Note (13).

¹⁴ 勞苦 Lao² k'u³. Labor, toil, fatigue.

¹⁴ 伶俐 Ling² pien⁴. Quick, active, nimble, agile, prompt.

¹⁴ 下巴 Hsia⁴ pa¹. The lower jaw.

¹⁴ 下巴骨 Hsia⁴ pa¹ ku³. The jaw bone, the lower jaw.

¹⁴ 打前失 Ta³ ch'ien² shi¹. To stumble.

¹⁴ 打前絆 Ta³ ch'ien² pan⁴. The same.

¹⁴ 打踢絆 Ta³ t'i¹ pan⁴. The same.

¹⁴ 儇 Ts'an⁴. Perverse; mean, contemptible.

¹⁴ 儇頭 Ts'an⁴ t'ou². Mean, contemptible, shabby, scrubby.

¹⁵ 一來 I¹ lai². In the first place:—Note (15).

¹⁵ 直直 Chi². Directly, entirely, absolutely.

¹⁵ 毀滅 Hui³ mie⁴. To destroy utterly, to annihilate, to abolish.

是巧奪民心，預備吞大清的江山就是了。

學、開醫院，他們還能白花這些錢，白出這些力嗎，無非不孝父母的，這還算是好道理嗎，再是他們各處立義教訓人不拜祖宗，這就是忤逆不孝，你想教人不敬神，聖人嗎，三來他們教訓人不拜菩薩，這就是眼中無神，滅聖教，聖教該是人毀滅的嗎，還有比孔子更大的將好處硬強送給人的嗎，二來傳耶穌道理，直直是毀信，一來他們當初進中國，乃是硬強進來的，天下還有國人來中國傳教是我們中國人的好處，我一點也不

stumbling: who would waste provender keeping such a screw as this?

15 You say that foreigners coming to China to propagate their religion is a blessing to us Chinese. I don't believe a bit of it. In the first place, their entrance into China was originally by force, but who in the world undertakes to force good things on people. In the second place, the preaching of Christianity aims directly at the destruction of Confucianism. Ought the doctrines of the sages to be destroyed? Is there any greater sage than Confucius? In the third place, they teach men not to worship the Poosas; that is, to have no fear of the gods before their eyes, and they teach men not to worship their ancestors; that is, to be undutiful to parents. Do you consider that a good doctrine which leads men not to worship the gods nor to honor their parents? Moreover they are everywhere establishing charity schools and opening hospitals. Would they spend all this money and take all this pains for nothing? By no means. It is simply an ingenious plan for stealing the hearts of the people, and so preparing the way for gobbling up our imperial master's broad domain.

聖教 Shêng⁴ chiao⁴.....Confucianism.
 夫子 Fu¹ tsi². A sage, a rabbi, an honored teacher.
 菩薩 P⁴u² sa¹. An inferior Buddha, an idol, a god.
 祖宗 Tzu³ tsung¹.....Ancestors, progenitors.

忤逆 Wu³.....Disobedient, intractable, froward.
 逆 Ni⁴. Rebellious; contrary; to oppose, to resist; to anticipate.
 忤逆 Undutiful; refractory, incorrigible.
 義學 I⁴ hsue².....A charity school.
 醫院 I¹ yüan⁴.....A hospital, a dispensary.

NOTES.

3 害耳朵底子, to have a pain, or ulcer, in the bottom of the ear, to suffer from earache.
 6 芹子他爹, Ch'in-tsi, his father. This redundant expression is a common colloquial idiom, especially in the North. It is a general practice to designate parents by the names of their children.
 9 By using 呢 at the end, the question is made to turn on the 多少 above, rather than on the last clause.
 10 In former times manacles were made of wood, and the character 梏 was used, now they are generally made of iron, and 鑕 has come into use.

12 聖德, the virtues of a sage, the highest type of mental and moral qualities. 紂王, otherwise called 紂辛, the most infamous tyrant known in Chinese history. He imprisoned 文王, but subsequently released him. He was defeated and dethroned by 武王, and with him ended the Shang dynasty. 殘害忠良暴虐黎民, a set form of words in the book style.
 13 守業, to preserve and build up by prudence, diligence and economy the inheritance transmitted from parents,—a virtue, which owing to the tendency of affluence to produce

個糧食摺子。○一¹⁶營兵分爲五哨，就是前後
 五間半裏頭安的一盤磨，一盤碾子，還有幾
 底子。○這¹⁴一排哇子，都種的芹菜。○南¹⁵屋是
 炷香大行的地方，所以人都有個求永生的
 還淨牒一吊二。○他¹³們那裏，是金丹教和一
 三吊錢的票子，買了兩刀毛邊紙，去一吊八
 門上掛着¹¹一紅彩門外貼着喜字。○那¹²是
 得去要。○他¹¹那院裏，不知是誰娶親，我看見
 聽臧家莊做甚麼呢。答：在那裏有一筆賬，我
 山¹⁰蛋¹⁰一包，上海大米四包，見字查收。○你打

potatoes and four bags of Shanghai rice. Please take delivery on receipt of this memorandum.
 10 Why are you inquiring for Tsang Chia Chwang? Ans. I have an account there which I am going to collect.
 11 I wonder who in his yard is getting married. I see a red cloth hung around the door, and the character "rejoice" pasted outside.
 12 That was a three thousand cash note. I bought two reams of maopien paper which took one thousand eight hundred cash, and there is left just one thousand two hundred.
 13 In their neighborhood the Golden-pill sect and the One-stick-of-incense sect flourish, on which account the people generally have an antecedent idea of seeking immortality.
 14 This row of beds is all planted in celery.
 15 The south room is five spans and a half. In it there is a flour mill, a hulling mill and also several grain bins.
 16 One regiment is divided into five

VOCABULARY

班子 Pan¹ tsi³..... A troupe of actors.
 炷 Chu⁴..... A wick, a stick of incense.
 哨 Shao⁴. To sing (as a bird), to whistle; to call (as a guard); to patrol; a company of a hundred men.
 頭响 T'ou² shang³..... The forenoon.
 遮擋 Chê¹ tang³. To ward off, to defend, to shelter, to hinder.
 壘 Lei³. To pile up one on the other, to build; a heap; a rampart.
 葯 Yao⁴, Yue⁴ Yao⁴. Medicinal herbs; another form of 藥.
 山葯 Shan¹ yoa⁴..... The Chinese yam.
 山葯豆 Shan¹ yoa⁴ tou⁴. The potato (yam beans). (N.)
 地蛋 Ti⁴ tan⁴..... The potato (earth eggs). (C.)
 洋山芋 Yang² shan¹ yü⁴. The potato (foreign wild taro). (S.)
 查收 Ch'a² shou¹. To examine and receive, used on letters and parcels.
 臧 Tsang¹.... Generous, virtuous; a surname. (W.)

永生 Yung³ sheng¹. Everlasting life, immortality.
 畦 Hai¹..... A bed in a garden.
 芹菜 Ch'in² ts'ai⁴..... Celery.
 碾 Nien³. A hulling mill for rice or millet. Note (15).
 圍 Tun⁴..... An osier bin for holding grain.
 碑 Pei¹..... A stone tablet, a grave-stone.
 刻 K'oa¹..... To engrave, to carve. See k'oa¹.
 劫 Chie². To plunder, to rob on the highway; a Hindoo kalpa, a cycle, an aeon.
 文約 Wên² yoa¹. An indenture, a deed, a bond.
 名人 Ming² jên². A noted man, a celebrated character.
 梅花 Mei² hwa¹. A prune blossom; the flowering almond.
 蘭花 Lan² hwa¹. An orchidaceous plant with a fragrant flower.
 昂 Ang³. To elevate; stately, grand; dear or high in price.

丹、有 ① 載 窗、典 客、臘 碑、左
 鄭 趙 這²⁰ 明、幾 房 還 月 請 右
 板 子 一 不 鋪 子、殺 間、去 中、
 橋 昂 捲 然、炕、是 了 就 看 看 一
 的 的 子 到 幾 買 十 在 看 上 哨
 蘭 馬、畫、交 個 房 子、七 這 個 又
 花。王 都 房 子、鍋 臺、上 的 地 刻 的 十
 ○ 鐸 是 子 的 文 帶 一 方、的 甚 棚。
 不²¹ 的 甚 麼 時 約 着 個 劫 斷 甚 ○ 前¹⁷
 但 梅 麼 名 候 上 幾 人。了 麼 字。
 會 花、張 人 怕 都 扇 合 ○ 一 幫 ① 有
 獸 張 畫 的、差 一 幾 管 關 去¹⁸ 一
 之 敵 的、的 答 錯。一 扇 合 是 東 年 統 座

companies; the front, rear, left, right and middle; and each company is divided into ten platoons.
 17 There is a monument just in front; please go and see what inscription is on it.
 18 Last year in the twelfth month a company of travellers from Manchuria was robbed just in this place, and one young man of seventeen was killed.
 19 No matter whether you are mortgaging or buying a house, the number of doors and windows and k'angs and kettle-ranges which are included should all be distinctly specified in the deed; otherwise, when the time for the delivery of the house comes, there is danger of a misunderstanding.
 20 By what noted artists were the paintings on this roll made? Ans. The horse is by Chao Tsi Ang, the flowering almond is by Wang Toǎ, the peony by Chang Wu and the orchid by Chéng Pan Ch'iao.
 21 Not only are a male and a female of

並用 *Ping⁴ yung⁴*. To use together, to use at once.
 22 黃表 *Hwang³ piao³*. A special kind of yellow paper used to burn in sacrificing to the gods. Holes are punched in it, and it is then supposed to represent copper cash.

石匠 *Shi³ chiang⁴*..... A stone-cutter.
 包工 *Pao¹ kung¹*..... Work done by the job.
 日工 *Ji⁴ kung¹*..... Work done by the day.
 卯子工 *Mao³ tsi³ kung¹*..... The same.

NOTES.

2 子 is added to 班 when it means a company of actors, but not when it means a class of constables in a yamén.
 3 甜水, sweet water as distinguished from 苦水, bitter water, that is water containing alkaline salts.
 4 Or, as men require breath, so the gods require incense. The meaning of this proverbial saying probably is, that as a man's life depends on the breath he breathes, so a god's life and prosperity depend on the incense he receives. 佛 is frequently substituted for 神.
 8 The strands of a rope are put figuratively for the persons associated in business.
 9 Potatoes being of foreign introduction, and having received no settled name, the people of each port have given them a name of their own. There are others besides those in the text, as 地包 in Shantung, and 薯蕷 at Kiukiang.
 11 On the occasion of a wedding, a long red scarf is festooned above the frame of the street door, and the character 喜 written on red paper is pasted in all prominent places in view of the bride's chair as it approaches the house of the bridegroom. This latter is for good luck, while the red scarf is simply a sign of festivity. The sentence implies that several families lived in the same courtyard.

13 There are a great many small religious sects in China. They are not really distinct from the great religious systems of the land, but rather included in them, though in most cases involving more or less of a protest against their errors and corruptions. The government is disposed to regard all such sects as seditious. The 金丹教 is a sect springing from Taoism, and gives prominence to the supposed "pill of immortality." This pill is called golden, partly to express its preciousness, and partly because transmuted gold is supposed to be an important constituent of it. The 一炷香 is a sect which lays great stress on prayers and penances. Their theoretical time for kneeling in prayer is the time it takes one stick of incense to burn out.
 15 A 碾 or 碾盤 consists of a heavy stone roller like a millstone, set on its edge and mounted on a large flat stone five or six feet in diameter. It has an axle and is surrounded by a frame in which it turns like a wheel. The inner side of this frame pivots on a centre-post, and as the roller is drawn or pushed round it rolls with a slipping motion on the base, upon which the grain is spread to be hulled. A 摺子 is different from a 囤子, though used for the same purpose. The latter is a very large round osier basket, often from three

工他那黃看爺一的一
 上合商個表見明一對東母
 算量姓紙春天對花西爲
 是做張帶揷子過燒石瓶也
 卯一的來。叫五獅一對
 日子統座石Φ他七子對說
 工碑匠你²³務你枕是
 上合看看來可以買天家一對
 算看看我要去四進他對比
 包和叫刀城老旗方

birds and beasts called a pair, but everything in which two are used together is called a pair; for instance, [we say] a pair of vases, a pair of pillows, a pair of flagstaves or a pair of stone lions.

22 To-morrow is the day for burning the fifth seven for the children's maternal grandfather. When you go into the city to-day and see Ch'un-tsai, tell him to be sure and buy four reams of yellow paper and bring them home with him.

23 Go and call that stone-cutter named Chang. I want to consult him about making a tablet so as to see whether it will be cheaper to have it done by the job or by the day.

to five feet wide, and from four to eight feet high. The former is made of long strips of matting about fifteen inches wide, carried round and round like the threads of a screw, each round being telescoped by half its width or more into the one below it. It usually has a low basket for a bottom, and is constructed gradually as the grain is filled in.

18 Notice how the omission of a subject for the verb really turns it into a passive.

20 These are the names of the most famous painters of China.

22 俺家他老爺 is a highly idiomatic expression. 家 joined with 他, stands for the children of the family, whose maternal grandfather is the person referred to. On the death of a parent the sons burn paper money on the recurrence of each seventh day, until seven times, that is, the forty-ninth day. Daughters are usually excused if they burn five times.

23 The term 卯子工, used in Peking, probably comes from the custom of calling the roll or counting the workmen in the morning.

LESSON CXLII.
 SPECIAL INTENSIVES.

Mandarin abounds in special intensives. Some of these intensives are applied to a considerable number of adjectives, but the greater number are limited to one or two special ones. Many of them are evidently founded on resemblance, similar to our "snow white," "ice cold," "red hot," etc., but in many cases no such origin is apparent. If the real origin of the usage in each case were known, doubtless it would be found that all are based on some kind of resemblance. The fact that the figure intended is oftentimes unknown or uncertain, makes the proper writing in such cases more or less uncertain. Elegant and forcible speech depends in no small degree on the ready command of these qualifiers. Their proper translation is difficult, and in many cases impossible. Having no special intensives in English, we are compelled to use general intensives instead.

Four lessons are given to the illustration of this class of words, beginning with those applied to the greater number of words. The usage differs very much in different localities, necessitating many

double readings, and even these do not represent nearly all the variations. The student should inquire of his teacher, not only concerning the readings given, but for others not given.

- 希 Rare, sparse,—generally includes an idea of depreciation. It is widely used, but more frequent in the South than in the North.
- 希破 Shamefully ragged, all in tatters.
- 希鈍 Miserably dull, dull as a beetle. (s.)
- 希慢 Very slow, awfully slow. (s.)
- 希爛 Extra soft, well cooked; rotten, falling to pieces; in pieces, in tatters. [pliable.]
- 希軟 Very soft or weak; quite limber or
- 希瘦 Very thin, miserably lean. (s.)
- 希碎 In small pieces, in bits, all to flinders.
- 希鬆 Exceedingly loose; very negligent.
- 希矮 Very low, excessively low. (s.)
- 希窄 Very narrow, excessively narrow. (s.)

Sep 22
 1924

子、有的還剛硬，也有的都霉爛喇，給你三十個錢，包元
 屠戶，真下得手，一個漫活的畜牲，說殺就殺了。○這些桃
 魚，很希，連那活透的鮫魚，纔賣十七八個錢一斤。○今年的
 房子，精矮，還帶着精窄，不如去另找個大些的。○今年的
 出個眉眼來，誰知還是希鬆平常。○我實在看不上中那個
 處，總做不出那個樣兒來。○京裏的酥果子，是透酥透酥的，別
 濕，晚上怎麼睡覺呢。○寶指¹⁷望他來接手辦，必要辦
 一個大花瓶，叫您孩子給我打的希粉¹⁵。○鋪蓋都淋得透精
 別看他的門戶高，房屋大，家裏却是漫精¹⁴。○囫圇¹⁴的
 軟還行嗎。○你臉上怎麼希瘦呢，^答這幾天瀉肚瀉的。○

do to mix the dough too soft.
 12 How is it that your face looks so very thin? It is caused by the diarrhoea I have had for a few days.
 13 Don't be deceived by the fact that he has a high gate and a large house; the family are as poor as they can be.
 14 My big vase, perfectly sound, your children have broken all to pieces for me.
 15 Our bedding is all wet through and through, how can we sleep to-night?
 16 The short cakes made in the capital are exceedingly crisp, no other place can produce them of the same quality.
 17 I sincerely hoped that when he succeeded to the business, he would put matters and things in order; but I am disappointed to find that he is just as careless as others.
 18 I really do not like that house at all, it is very low, and besides exceedingly cramped. It would be better to look for one a little larger.
 19 Fish are dirt cheap this year, even perfectly fresh ling only sell for seventeen or eighteen cash per catty.
 20 Those butchers are too reckless, they will butcher a live animal without the least hesitation.
 21 Some of these peaches are still as hard as bullets, and some are

漫粉 ^{man⁴ fun²} Fully alive, very loose or moveable. (s.)
 粉 ^{fun²} Powder, the bloom of fruit,—conveys the idea of pulverulence.
 粉碎 ^{sui⁴} All in pieces, fine as powder. [(s.)
 粉嫩 ^{nen⁴} Blooming fair or ruddy; very tender.
 充 ^{ch'ung¹} To fill,—conveys the idea of completeness.
 充俊 ^{ch'ue⁴} Perfectly beautiful, very pretty. (c.)
 潔 ^{chie²} Clear, pure,—conveys the idea of purity.

潔白 Pure white, perfectly white.
 沙 Granular,—conveys the idea of granularity.
 沙嫩 Exceedingly tender or crisp. (s.)
 When in any case a given intensive is not used and the dialect affords no other intensive to take its place, Chinese teachers incline to insert 挺 as an equivalent, which however is not a special but a general intensive:—See Les. 15.

VOCABULARY.

水飯 ^{shui³ fan⁴} Rice water, with the rice in it:—Note (1).
 充 ^{ch'ung¹} To fill full, to satiate; to act in the capacity of; extreme.
 潔 ^{chie²} Clear, pure, free from sin or defilement, untainted.
 薙頭刀 ^{T'ü⁴ t'ou² tao¹} A razor.

濘 ^{Nang⁴} Muddy, sloppy, slippery.
 迸 ^{Peng⁴} To drive off; to crack open, to split; to leap, to prance.
 暄 ^{Hsuan¹} Genial, pleasant; light, spongy, mellow.
 瀉 ^{Hsie⁴} To leak, to ooze; to purge.
 瀉肚 ^{Hsie⁴ tu⁴} To purge, to have diarrhoea.

第一百二十四課

LESSON CXLII.

○精通裏去來別外們陣通希
 我⁹混日漫怪○給頭雖怪嫩
 吃喇頭怕害你⁶他漫通爭是冷的
 這可以還醜臊替⁶我的亮的同縣的
 藕倒高的的我去溜太月却上
 沙酥脆出高的他⁷說說恐怕不用
 嫩脆的去呢○昨天說罷我他燈籠
 的實再換這⁸到我自潑撒
 在美可一些水我那自己出
 口一些水我那自己出

- 1 Perfectly tender chives, and yet you object that they are old.
- 2 It is rather cold just now. Won't you shut that door?
- 3 Although from the same county, we are still a long distance apart.
- 4 The moonlight is quite bright outside, there is no need of a lantern.
- 5 Don't fill it brim full for him, lest he spills it.
- 6 Do you go and speak for me, I am too much ashamed to go myself.
- 7 Yesterday when he arrived at our place, the sun was still ever so high.
- 8 This water is all muddy; you may throw it out and get some more.
- 9 I find this water-lily root exceedingly tender and of a most delicious flavor.

NOTES.

1 水飯 is different from 稀飯 or 黏粥 in that it is not boiled into a gruel, but is simply boiled soft and eaten swimming in the water in which it is boiled.

2 The translation does not convey the force of 呢. Of course there is, it is burning briskly, would approximate the idea.

6 百折不回 a hundred breaks not bend back; that is, he is like a stiff stick, so unyielding that a hundred efforts will not cause it to break and double back on itself.

7 The call of one at the wayside selling cooked meat.

10 暄 is here used by accommodation. There is no proper character to express the idea of spongy or mellow.

11 麪 is dough as well as flour. In the process of making bread, the dough is called 麵 until it has been made into rolls or loaves, and then it is called by the name

given to it after it is baked. Vermicelli, however, is 麵 to the end.

18 大些的, larger by some, somewhat larger.

20 More literally, verily those butchers find no difficulty in taking hold; they take the life of a vigorous animal without the least hesitation.

23 Cucumbers are everywhere called 黃瓜, but the original and correct writing is 王瓜. Writing 黃瓜 is a concession to the pronunciation.

26 不對齒, the points or teeth not opposite, 齒 being used for points, or as an alternate to avoid the repetition of 牙.

27 媳婦 is here translated wife, because beauty, which is the quality here attributed to her, would be valued by her husband, but not by her father-in-law, who would rather prize diligence, docility, etc.

LESSON CXLII.

SPECIAL INTENSIVES.

通 To permeate, the whole,—conveys the idea of through and through, entirely, wholly.

通嫩 Perfectly fresh, or tender. (c. & s.)

通亮 Perfectly light, very bright. (s.)

通混 Thoroughly turbid, or muddy. (c. & n.)

通紅 All over red, entirely red, a bright red.

通肥 All over fat, rolling fat, fat. (c.)

老 Old,—applied to words expressive of size and distance. Old things are supposed to have grown great.

老遠 Ever so far, very distant.

老高 Ever so high, very high or lofty.

老大 Ever so big, very large or great.

老厚 Ever so thick, enormously thick.

老粗 Ever so large, very large, or coarse.

老長 Ever so long, very long.

溜 To flow, to glide,—conveys the idea of evenness or smoothness, and is applied chiefly to lines and surfaces.

洗罷溜河裏碧澄清的。○宋家真是個財主的
 的溜精楞的預備秋後穿。○你快拿到河裏去
 覺着稀冷清的。○可以給我做個小綿襖絮
 已在家裏不害怕嗎？答：害怕倒不害怕，就是
 修理那個打毬場，把他鞦韆的坦平的。○你自
 爹還沒有二十五嗎？○可以去找人修理他
 不值得一駝的。○你想他孩子已經老大喇，輕
 葉兒畫的實在現活。○這兩個騾子都輕
 熱，身上很覺着發懶。○通紅的花兒碧綠的
 ○那塊冰溜滑，要得小心纔能過去。○今天漫

- 10 That piece of ice is very slippery, it will be necessary to take care in crossing it.
- 11 It is excessively hot to-day and I feel very lazy.
- 12 The painting is very life-like indeed with those bright red blossoms and emerald green leaves.
- 13 These two [mule] loads are quite light, less than animals ought to carry.
- 14 Just think, the son is already ever so big, and is the father not yet twenty-five?
- 15 You may go and find a man to put the ball ground in order. Have it rolled perfectly smooth.
- 16 Are you not afraid to stay at home alone? Ans. No, I am not afraid; but I feel somewhat lonesome.
- 17 You may make me a small wadded coat with quite thin wadding, ready for wearing when autumn sets in.
- 18 Take it at once to the river and wash it. The water in the river is quite clear.
- 19 The Sung family certainly have the

溜滿 Level full, brimming full. (c. & s.)
 溜滑 Very slippery, smooth as glass.
 溜平 Perfectly smooth, level as a board.
 溜楞 Very thin, thin as paper. (c. & s.)
 溜光 Very smooth, smooth as glass. (c. & n.)
 溜圓 Perfectly round, round as a ball.
 怪 Strange, monstrous. As an intensive 怪 is rather general than specific, there being no special limit to its application, save that it always implies something *unpleasantly* excessive. It is moreover only a semi-intensive, answering very nearly to our words *quite*, *rather*, *somewhat*, etc. Its use may perhaps be explained by considering it an exaggeration, as "horribly" is often used in colloquial English.
 爭 To strive for precedence,—conveys the idea of pre-eminence. Some would prefer to write 增 to add.
 爭亮 Exceedingly bright, glistening.
 爭輕 Exceedingly light, light as possible. (c.)
 爭肥 Exceedingly fat, rolling fat. (n.)
 飄 To sway or float on the wind,—conveys the idea of buoyancy.

飄輕 Very light, light as a feather, light as air. (s.)
 酥 Crisp, flaky,—conveys the idea of crispness.
 酥脆 Very crisp, short, flaky, or brittle.
 酥焦 Very crisp, short, or flaky.
 焦 Scorched,—conveys the idea of brittleness.
 焦脆 Very crisp, short as a crackling. (n.)
 坦 A plain,—used by way of comparison.
 坦平 Level as a plain, very level. (s.)
 碧 Green jade stone,—used by way of comparison.
 碧清 Extremely clear or limpid, clear as [crystal. (s.)]
 碧綠 Emerald green.
 油 Oil,—used by way of comparison.
 油光 Very smooth, sleek as oil.
 澄 Clear, limpid,—conveys the idea of transparency.
 澄清 Transparently clear, clear as crystal. [(c. & n.)]
 赤 Red, flesh color,—conveys the idea of ruddiness.
 赤紅 Very red, blood-red, flaming red.

天上他媽家去喇梳的油光的頭穿的簇新
 都是碧清一眼能望到底的六九子奶媳今
 真嚇人的。①山後那個泉眼的水管多
 膊也腫的老粗，還有老長的一道紅線，看着
 指頭上長了一個疔，連手背都腫的老厚，
 管多稱幾兩去吃罷。①淑貞的右手，第二個
 這是早晨纔炒的。花生果酥焦脆的，你只
 你生氣，不如讓他免得叫他打的怪疼的。①
 的精通肥。①女人還能勝過男人嗎，他若再向
 的樣子，你看他家出來的驢子馬和狗，個個吃

appearance of wealth. Look at the mules, horses and dogs which come out of their door; every one is rolling fat.
 20 Can a woman overcome a man? If he gets angry with you again, it will be better to give up to him and avoid the pain of his blows.
 21 These peanuts were just roasted this morning and are exceedingly crisp, you're safe in buying a supply of them to eat.
 22 Shu Chên has a felon on the second finger of her right hand, so that even the back of her hand and her forearm are swollen up ever so thick, and there is a long red line [extending up her arm]; really it is something frightful to look at.
 23 That spring north of the hill is always clear as crystal, one can see straight to the bottom of it.
 24 Liu Chiu-tsi's wife went home to see her mother to-day. Her hair was combed smooth as oil and she had on a brand new silk coat and

湛 Deep and clear,—conveys the idea of entireness.
 湛新 Entirely new, brand new.
 湛明 Bright,—conveys the idea of shining.
 明亮 Shining bright, glistening.

精混 Extremely muddy, very turbid.
 精輕 Extremely light, very light. (c. & n.)

精薄 Extremely thin. (c. & n.)
 精肥 Extremely fat. (s.) [smooth. (s.)]
 滑滑 Exceedingly slippery, excessively
 冷冷 Very cool; lonesome. (s.)
 醜醜 Exceedingly ugly, horribly ugly. (s.)
 漫亮 Very light, bright as day. (s.)
 漫熱 Very hot or warm, oppressively hot. (s.)
 簇新 Entirely new, brand new. (s.)

VOCABULARY.

碧 Pi⁴..... Green jade-stone.
 澄 Têng⁴, ch'êng². Clear, limpid; to pour off, to decant.
 簇 Ts'u⁴..... An arrow head; a crowd, a group
 赤 Ch'i⁴. Carnation red, flesh color; naked; destitute, barren.
 韭 Chiu³..... Chives, scallions.
 韭菜 Chiu³ ts'ai⁴..... Chives, scallions.
 藕 Ou³..... Water-lily plant, the water-lily root.
 可口 K'ou³ k'ou³..... Savory, delicious.
 美口 Mei³ k'ou³..... Delicious, savory, tasty.

發懶 Fa¹ lan³. To be lazy, to feel languid or weary; to be disinclined.
 現活 Hsien⁴ hwo²..... Life-like, natural.
 爸爸 Pa⁴..... Papa,—always doubled in use. (N.)
 輓 Kun³..... To roll, a rolling motion.
 孤單 Ku¹ tan¹. Alone; lonely, solitary, lonesome.
 冷清 Lêng³ ch'ing¹. Cold, chilly; lonesome; cool, distant.
 炒 Ch'ao³. To fry with constant stirring; to scramble eggs; to roast or brown (as peanuts or coffee).

非從橋上不能過去。
 點水現在叫水沖了一道老長的大溝。
 記事的時候那個地方不過多少存一
 誰願意抱就抱一點也不認生。
 疼愛親般。溜圓的一個大頭兩個眼睛
 愛溜圓的一個大頭兩個眼睛
 親般。○馬先生的小孩兒長的實在
 般。○馬先生的小孩兒長的實在
 隊的時候叫太陽一照真如同明鏡一
 國兵所用的洋鎗都擦磨的明亮到出
 裏的都好就是兩隻大脚怪醜的。
 的袖子襖赤紅的洋機褲子。○裏紫

bright red muslin trowsers. She was dressed up nicely in every respect, only that her two big feet looked horribly ugly.

25 The guns used by western soldiers are polished up bright, so that when they are on parade, the sun shining on the guns makes them gleam like mirrors.

26 Mr. Ma's child has grown to be a very loveable boy, with his large round head and two laughing eyes. Whoever wishes may take him in their arms, he is not in the least strange.

27 When I was first old enough to remember, there was only a little water standing here; but now the water has washed a great gully which one cannot cross save by going over the bridge.

21 落花生 *Loa⁴ hua¹ shêng¹*..... Peanuts.

21 長生果 *Ch'ang³ shêng¹ kwô³*. The same:—
 Note (21).

21 花生 *Hwa¹ shêng¹*..... The same.

22 淑 *Shu⁴*... Limpid; virtuous, uncorrupted. (w.)

22 貞 *Chên¹*. To divine; chaste, virtuous, un-
 defiled.

22 疔 *Ting¹*..... A venereal ulcer; a felon.

22 手背 *Shou³ pei⁴*..... The back of the hand.

泉眼 *Ch'üan³ yen³*..... A fountain, a spring. 23

紫 *Tsa¹, Cha¹*. To wind around and bind, to
 bandage, to tie securely.

裹 *Kwo³*..... To wrap around, to bind. 24

紫裹 *To dress up, to accoutre, to trick out; to*
patch up, to mend.

洋鎗 *Yang³ ch'iang¹*. A foreign gun, a gun,
 a pistol.

擦磨 *Ts'a¹ mo²*..... To rub, to scour, to polish. 21

NOTES.

7 呢 indicates a tone of surprise which cannot be expressed in a translation.

14 Lit., *Just think, his son is already ever so big, and is his father not yet twenty-five?* which, however, conveys a wrong sense, since one 他 stands for the father and the other for the son. Practically 他 is equivalent to the definite article, as in the translation.

15 A piece of ground devoted specially to ball playing is a foreign idea, but rolling is familiar to the Chinese, as they roll all their threshing floors.

17 秋後 does not mean *after the autumn*, but rather *立秋後, after the setting in of the autumn.*

20 The person spoken of is probably the woman's husband. It is quite an ordinary occurrence for a man, especially a young man, to whip his wife.

21 The three terms given for peanuts represent approximately the Northern, Central and Southern names, but the Northern term is most widely used.

22 The 的 at the end of this sentence is represented in the translation by the word *something*. A more literal rendering would be, *really it is appalling to look at*. The 的 might be omitted without special detriment.

23 一眼, *one eye; that is, at one look, at a glance, readily.*

24 The addition of 兩隻 gives emphasis.

第一四十三課

LESSON CXLIII.

○這¹³些沒有滋味的話，有甚麼說頭呢。○他¹⁴出高抬秤頭。頭。○像¹¹我這等孤苦人，你當是還有甚麼奔頭。○有個靠頭兒。○孫¹⁰先生講書，人都嫌沒有聽語，帶着許多髒話。○我⁹坐在這裏就好，這裏盡頭。○這⁷碗羹，好體面口頭。○他⁸的口頭有甚麼難辦。○我⁵家裏一個親人也沒有，還有甚麼戀頭呢。○你⁶該讓他一點，不可做到。○山³前的景緻，很有看頭。○看⁴這件事的來頭，必要難辦。○他²打鎗，一點準頭沒有。○這有什麼笑頭呢。

- 1 What is there to laugh at in this?
- 2 He cannot shoot with the least accuracy.
- 3 The view south of the mountain is well worth seeing.
- 4 It is evident from the way this thing presents itself that it will be very hard to manage.
- 5 At home I have not a single near relative. What is there to hold my affections?
- 6 You ought to make some concession to him and not go to extremes.
- 7 This bowl of oyster soup has a very fine flavor.
- 8 His favorite expressions are characterized by a great deal of vulgarity.
- 9 Sitting here just suits me, as I have something to lean against.
- 10 All complain that Mr. Sun's expository lectures are uninteresting.
- 11 Do you suppose that a forlorn old man like me has anything to live for?
- 12 It cannot be said that it is short weight, it is only that it is not good weight.
- 13 What is the use of this insipid talk?

LESSON CXLIII.

頭 JOINED TO VERBS AND ADJECTIVES.

In addition to its use with nouns as in Les. 47, 頭 is also joined to verbs and adjectives. When joined to a transitive verb, it gives a meaning equal to something to, or worthy of, as 聽頭 something to hear; that is, something worth hearing. When joined to an adjective, it gives the force of a noun of corresponding meaning. Intransitive verbs are used participially, and follow the use of adjectives. These statements have some exceptions and modifications, as appears in the following list. For additional list see supplement.

- 笑頭 Something to laugh at, worth laughing at, laughable.
- 準頭 Accuracy of aim, a definite object.
- 看頭 Something worth looking at, pleasing to the eye, a sight.
- 來頭 The aspect of an approaching event or person, looks.
- 戀頭 Something worthy of being longed for or attached to, attachment.

- 盡頭 The extreme, the uttermost, the bitter end, the last drop.
- 口頭 Taste, flavor,—口 being put by metonymy for 嘗. [support.]
- 靠頭 Something to lean upon, backing.
- 聽頭 Something worth hearing, entertainment, instruction.
- 奔頭 Something worthy of pursuit, an object, an aim.
- 高頭 Extra height, elevation, projection above:—Note (12).
- 抬頭 The same,—抬 being taken participially. It is also used to mean, worth carrying, weighty.
- 說頭 Worth saying, point, interest.
- 去頭 Worth going, worth while to go.
- 活頭 Living time, space or time to live, prolongation of life.
- 甜頭 Sweetness; a perquisite, a cumshaw.

159 searched
finding lucky

© K'uei F'59

不歡喜見我，我還有什麼去頭呢。○看你這個樣子，怕沒有大活頭。○除了他應得的工錢，一點外出息也沒有人。○人在世上，沒有幾天的混頭。○做這桿手鎗，真得有個好手頭。○夢是心頭想。○這種儂頭風箏，怎麼放得起呢。○李紹祖得空就往那裏去，也不知那裏有他的什麼想頭。○幸虧你的嘴頭上能說，不然就被他問倒了。○若是他跟前有個小廝，那還有個望盼頭。○他不愛出力，敢保在孫師傅那裏沒有大住頭。○你聽了誰的撮掇，爲着什麼事情，起這個念頭，我實在不懂喇。○這一個驢，一分養頭也沒有，現攔着大路他不走，單願意往

- 14 When he does not wish to see me, what point is there in my going?
- 15 Judging from your present appearance, I fear you have not long to live.
- 16 In addition to his regular wages, there are no perquisites at all.
- 17 In a few days man shuffles through this mortal life.
- 18 To make this pistol has certainly taken a high order of skill.
- 19 Dreams are the uppermost thoughts of the mind.
- 20 How can one fly such a rickety old kite as this?
- 21 Whenever Li Shao Tsu has time he runs over there. I wonder what allurements there is for him at that place.
- 22 It is fortunate you have a ready tongue, otherwise his questions would have put you in a predicament.
- 23 If she has a young son, she still has an object to live for.
- 24 He does not like to work; I venture he will not stay long with Sun Shī-fu.
- 25 To whose instigation have you been listening? Why you have taken up this idea I really do not understand.
- 26 This donkey is not at all worth his keeping: he will not go in the broad road before him, but is all the time wanting to sheer off to the side.

混頭 Time or space for shifting along.
 手頭 Skill of hand, dexterity, 一手 being put by metonymy for 巧. [ing.
 儂頭 Vile, scrubby, rickety, good-for-nothing.
 想頭 Longing, desire, allurements.
 嘴頭 Capacity or faculty for talking; the mouth as the organ of speech.
 盼頭 Something to hope for, expectation, incentive, inspiration.
 望頭 The same.
 住頭 Staying time, length of time.

念頭 Thought, idea, notion, opinion.
 養頭 Worth supporting, worth keeping.
 賺頭 Something gained, profit. chuan
 講究頭 Worth talking about, worthy of consideration. chuang³ chiu
 玩頭 Amusement, entertainment. wan
 樸頭 Something to resort to, dependence. pu
 年頭 The harvests of the year, the season, the crops, 一年 being put by metonymy for 收.
 添頭 Something added, an increase, a supplement. tien

VOCABULARY.

- 1 打鎗 Ta³ ch'iang¹..... To shoot; to hunt.
- 3 景緻 Ching³ chi⁴..... Scenery, view, sight.
- 7 驢 Li⁴..... Oysters.
- 孤苦 Ku¹ k'u³..... Lonely, forlorn, desolate.
- 孤老 Ku¹ lao³. Old and childless; forlorn, 11
..... desolate. [perquisites.
- 外出息 Wai⁴ ch'u¹ hsi²..... Extras, 16
- 手鎗 Shou³ ch'iang¹..... A pistol. 18

了數、總要留點添頭。
 多、還價不嫌少，所以買東西的時候，不好一口還到
 着田地，賤貴都找不出買要主來。○俗語說，要價不嫌
 底沒摸着門兒。○今年³²這個年頭，真是取借無門，憑
 真、忽然起了修煉的念頭，用了好些日子的工夫，到
 他媽媽，因此媽媽一死，就覺着沒有³¹靠頭了。○徐悟
 點玩頭也沒有。○小孩子在平日間，一時也離不開
 ○實²⁹指望到會上³⁰去玩，開開心就好了，那知道一
 頭。○²⁸那個混帳²⁷東行子，有甚麼大講究頭，斷不可題他。
 路邊旁裏²⁷○大約他不能賺錢，就是賺，也沒有大賺

27 He will not likely make any money, and if he does it will not be much.
 28 What is there worthy of so much consideration in that worthless villain? Don't mention his name.
 29 I confidently hoped that by going to the fair, the amusements and diversion of mind would set me all right; but it turned out after all that there was nothing worth seeing.
 30 In ordinary circumstances a child cannot do, for even a little while, without its mother: hence when its mother dies, it feels without any dependence at all.
 31 Hsü Wu Chên, all at once, took up the idea of becoming an ascetic, but, after trying for some time, he wholly failed to get hold of the clue.
 32 In such a year as this there is not the least chance to borrow, and with houses and lands to sell, one can find no purchaser at any price.
 33 The proverb says, "One cannot ask too high a price nor offer too low a one." Therefore in buying a thing, it is not best to offer at once all you are willing to give, but always leave room for rising.

- 20 箏 Chêng¹..... A harpsichord; a kite.
- 20 風箏 Fêng¹ chêng¹..... A kite.
- 25 攪 Ts'wan¹..... To fling; to stir up, to foment.
- 25 撥 Ts'oa³..... To exchange, to mix up. See to⁴.
- 攪撥 To excite by misrepresentation, to carry tales and foment a quarrel; to instigate, to inveigle.
- 25 撮弄 Ts'oa¹ lung⁴. To stir up, to excite, to foment, to egg on.
- 25 行子 Hang² tsì³..... A tribe, a set, a fellow.

- 開心 K'ai¹ hsin¹. To dissipate care or trouble, to divert the mind, to relax.
- 平日 P'ing² ji⁴. In ordinary times, commonly, ordinarily.
- 修煉 Hsiu¹ lien⁴. To practice the austerities of an ascetic.
- 取借 Ch'ü³ chie⁴..... To borrow money.
- 要主 Yao⁴ chu³..... A buyer, a purchaser.
- 買主 Mai³ chu³..... The same.

NOTES.

8 口頭, as here used, belongs rather to Lesson 47 than to this one; yet 頭 is not regularly joined with 口, as it is with 骨 and 舌. 髒話 is the Southern form, in the North 髒 is rarely used without 說 before it.

10 講書 here refers to expounding the classics, as is regularly done in Chinese schools.

12 It is the general custom to give good weight, by weighing with the beam of the steelyards considerably above the horizontal. This is spoken of in Peking as 抬頭, in Shantung as 高頭, and in the South as 出秤, going

beyond the scale. It should perhaps be added that steelyards are generally made to weigh a little light.

17 Note the difference between 活頭 (15) and 混頭. The former has reference to living, simply; the latter regards the manner of living.

19 This is a puzzling sentence, and 頭 as here used are generally under the subject of the lesson. A friend suggests the following translation; A dream is the surface thought of the heart.

22 上得場, fit to appear on the arena, equal to the emergency.

F539
Chuan
Dunk

躲在一邊了。¹⁰我走的畧遲點，趕我到了，他已
 等人專好播弄是非，及至人家鬧起事來，他就
 外，至於心裏的意思，誰能看得透呢。○有一
 及趕吃了飯，就該上學喇。○我們但能看人的
 時候，等預備好了，總要到黑。○快打打辮子罷，
 時趕預備好了，總要到黑。○天已經到了這個
 趕我去了，已經鎖了門。○天已經到了這個
 提。○我就是怕有病，至於做活多少，那不要緊。
 要用可以拿去罷，論到錢上，咱們兩個，斷不可
 總得從小管，及至長成了人，再就管不好喇。○
 告訴他是我的本分，至於聽不聽在他。○孩子

LESSON CXLIV.

- 1 My duty is to tell him; as to his heeding it or not, that rests with him.
- 2 Children should, by all means, be governed from the first. When they have grown to adult age, they cannot then be successfully governed.
- 3 If you wish to use it, take it; as for pay, that is not to be mentioned between us two.
- 4 What I fear is sickness; as to the amount of work to be done, that is of no consequence.
- 5 When I arrived the door was already locked.
- 6 It is already so late that by the time we get ready it will be dark.
- 7 Be quick and comb your hair; by the time you have eaten, it will be time to go to school.
- 8 We can only see a man's exterior; as to the designs of his heart, who can penetrate them?
- 9 There is a class of men whose chief delight is in stirring up strife, but as soon as the parties get to fighting they slip out of the way.
- 10 I started a little late and by the time

23 小厮 means properly a slave or servant, but is in many places applied to little boys, as 丫頭 is to little girls.
 25 The first two clauses of this sentence might be regarded as independent interrogations, and the third an exclamation by way of comment, thus: *Whose instigation have you been listening to? For what reason have you taken up this idea? I really do not understand it.* The insertion of a 呢 after 攬撥, and another after 念頭, would fix this

construction, but their omission does not necessarily exclude it.
 26 現放着 ought by rights to apply to the person speaking, whereas Chinese teachers make it descriptive of the road. In this case 的 must be supplied after 着, or else 着 be changed to 的. I have translated as if 的 were written instead of 着.
 33 Or, *The buyer is not offended at a high asking price, nor the seller at a low offer.*

LESSON CXLIV.
PREPOSITIONAL PHRASES.

至於 As to, with reference to, with respect to:—See Les. 191. Sub.
 論到 As to, as for, with reference to, with respect to.
 說到 The same.
 論及 The same.
 及 By the time,—not often used alone.
 及至 When, but when, by the time.

及至於 But when, by the time, at the time.
 及攻 By the time, when. (c.) *chi' kung'*
 趕 By the time, as soon as. (c. & n.) *kan'*
 等 The same. (s.)
 及趕 By the time, when, as soon as. (c. & n.)
 及等 The same. (s.)
 及到 The same. (s.)
 趕到 By the time, at the time, when.

① chuang' c
 ② kan' k' all
 ③ hsu' sun' m' law
 ④ chieh' entirely

了, 我却一字不知。①他調治痔瘡疔瘡, 這一切的外科還
 點。①他們怎樣打架, 我都親眼見過, 至於以後怎樣和息
 喇。①論及兩家的錢財, 不差什麼, 就是張家的人口多一
 好了沒有, 那裏好了呢, 及趕我去的時候, 早就咽了氣
 女婿就中得, 至於家裏貧富, 絕然不論。①先先生的外祖父,
 頭子硬得扎固, 論及韜畧, 他却不及他哥哥。①他只求有個好
 十分歡喜, 及至於要的時候, 他就惱了。①賈不齡就是嘴
 得賣給我, 論及別的, 咱們說不着。①借給他的時候, 他是
 做得一樁兩樁, 膽子就大了。①你已經用了定錢, 你就必
 經喊了冤喇。①人初時間做了壞事, 心裏也過不去, 及至

best { tiao' chih' }

I arrived he had already appealed for protection.
 11 When a man first does wrong, his mind is ill at ease; but when he has done so once or twice, his courage increases.
 12 You have already received the earnest money, and you must sell to me. There is no room to talk about anything else.
 13 When I loaned it to him, he was highly pleased; but when I asked him for it, he got angry.
 14 Chia P'ei Ling's tongue is extremely sharp, but in strategy he is inferior to his elder brother.
 15 He simply seeks for a good son-in-law, whether poor or rich he does not care in the least.
 16 Has your maternal grandfather recovered? Ans. No, indeed. By the time I arrived he had already breathed his last.
 17 The two families are about equal in wealth, but the Changs have a somewhat larger family.
 18 I saw their fighting with my own eyes, but as to how they were afterwards reconciled I know nothing whatever.
 19 He treats hemorrhoids and syphilitic ulcers and this whole class of external

VOCABULARY.

- 攻 Kung¹. To attack, to assault; to apply to; to arouse, to stimulate; to put in order.
- 打辮子 Ta³ pien⁴ tsi³. To comb and plait the hair.
- 外貌 Wai⁴ mao⁴. External appearance, the exterior.
- 播 Pod³. To sow, to scatter; to publish abroad; to reject; to shake, to winnow.
- 播弄 Pod³ lung⁴. To move, to operate; to manage, to stir up, to foment.
- 喊冤 Han³ yüan¹. To call for justice, to appeal for protection:—Note (10).
- 初時間 Ch'ü¹ shi² chien¹. At first, at the start, in the beginning.
- 定錢 Ting⁴ ch'ien². Earnest money, money to bind a bargain.
- 不 P'ei³, P'i³. Unequaled, distinguished.
- 蛤 Kod², Ka². A frog; a lizard; any bivalve shell. Also ka¹.
- 蛤固 Ka² ku⁴. Severe, stern, savage, fierce, relentless. (c. & n.)
- 硬扎 Ying⁴ cha¹. Severe, stern, fierce. (s.)
- 韜 T'ao¹. A quiver, a scabbard; to sheath.
- 畧 T'ao¹ lue⁴. Devices, stratagems.
- 祖父 Tsu³ fu⁴. Paternal grandfather.
- 外祖父 Wai⁴ tsu³ fu⁴. Maternal grandfather.
- 錢財 Ch'ien² ts'ai². Money; wealth.
- 和息 Ho² hsi². To make up a quarrel, to make peace, to become reconciled.
- 痔 Chi⁴. Piles, hemorrhoids.
- 痔瘡 Chi⁴ ch'wang¹. Piles; rectal ulcers.

① ch'ou' n'ply
 ② ion'
 ③ k'ou' deu' exhibit
 ④ ch'au' towards
 ⑤ h'ou' ankle
 ⑥ h'ou' clean

算可以，若論到內科，臟腑裏的病，他却是一門不通。○包²⁰
 運隆，就是吃飯，趕得過好人的，說到做活，十個也抵不住一個。
 ○我聽見背後裏，賽得過好的一聲，及趕我一掉臉頭，已經咬着。
 你昨天到聖廟裏去，看見孔子甚麼樣兒呢？說到他的
 樣兒，實在出奇，面目醜陋，五露朝天，一點也不好看，但他
 既有那樣的聖德，人可沒有嫌他醜的。論²³到求着成仙
 的人，真有些誠心的，我在泰山上看見一個洞，洞裏有個
 道士，從多年就在那裏打坐，修煉飲食，一天減似一天，漸
 漸的也不吃，也不喝，及到我看見的時候，他坐在那裏已
 經死了，身上只有皮包骨頭，指甲有半尺多長。

ailments very well, but as to the diseases of the internal organs he is entirely ignorant.

- 20 In eating, Pao Yün Lung counts a full hand (excels); as for work, ten of him would not count one.
- 21 I heard a growl behind me, and before I could turn my head he had bitten me.
- 22 You went yesterday to visit the temple of the sage: what does Confucius look like? Ans. He is certainly very remarkable in appearance, his features are uncouth and his face slants backwards, so that he is very far from good looking; but since he had such sagely virtue no one objects to his looks.
- 23 Speaking of those who seek immortality, there certainly are some of them sincere. At the T'ai Mountain I saw a cave and in the cave a Taoist priest who for many years had been sitting there schooling himself. He took less and less nourishment each day until, at last, he neither ate nor drank at all. At the time I saw him he had already died sitting there, and his body was nothing but skin and bone, his finger nails being over six inches long.

- 19 疔瘡 Ting¹ ch'wang¹. Syphilitic ulcers.
- 19 外科 Wai³ k'oa¹. Medical practice relating to the external parts and organs.
- 19 內科 Nei⁴ k'oa¹. Medical practice relating to the internal parts and organs.
- 19 臟 Tsang⁴. The thoracic viscera; the contents of the trunk.
- 19 腑 Fu³. The abdominal viscera.
- 19 臟腑. The internal parts and organs of the body.
- 20 賽 Sai⁴. To present thanks; to strive for superiority, to emulate, to rival.
- 21 欸 Hu¹, Ch'wa¹. Suddenly; a gust of wind; to bang, to whiz, to growl.

- 21 掉臉 Tiao⁴ lien³. To turn the head, to look around, to turn about.
- 22 出奇 Ch'u¹ ch'i². Remarkable, wonderful, strange, startling.
- 23 面目 Mien⁴ mu⁴. The face, the features, the countenance.
- 成仙 Ch'eng² hsien¹. To become an immortal:— Note (23).
- 誠心 Ch'eng² hsin¹. Sincere, honest, ingenuous, guileless.
- 道士 Tao⁴ shi⁴. A Taoist priest.
- 打坐 Ta³ tsoa⁴. To sit continuously as a means of ascetic contemplation.

NOTES.

5 Or, By the time I arrived he (or they) had locked the door. There is nothing to show whether 鎖 is to be taken actively or passively.

10 An 一 might be inserted before 點. When any one is violently assaulted or maltreated, he flies to the yamên and calls loudly on the magistrate for protection and redress.

第一百四十五課

LESSON CXLV.

聽他這些話，豈不淨是以大壓小，以強壓弱
 來的事情，以好的爲法，以不好的爲戒。○你
 的婦女們，多以出頭露面爲羞恥。○記得古
 讎。○漸漸習以爲常，連覺也不覺了。○中國
 費力。○你們作兒女的，不可以父母拘管爲
 總以道爲是。○若單以口舌與他相爭，甚是
 人常以自己的私心，測度君子。○有道的
 成名。○要以公道爲主，兩家不可相虧。○小
 天家的專以賭博爲事。○以此辛苦讀書，可
 人以無事爲福。○不可以外貌取人。○他整

- 1 Men regard freedom from trouble as happiness. [appearance.]
- 2 Judge not according to the outward
- 3 He makes gambling his constant and sole employment.
- 4 Studying with such assiduity as this, he should get his degree.
- 5 Make justice your rule and let neither party wrong the other.
- 6 The mean man always makes his own selfishness the standard by which he measures the superior man.
- 7 Wisdom is justified of her children.
- 8 If you limit your contention with him to words, the case will be exceedingly difficult.
- 9 You who are children must not regard the restraints of your parents as proceeding from enmity.
- 10 Habit gradually becomes so confirmed that one is not even conscious of it.
- 11 Most Chinese women consider it a shame to show their faces in public.
- 12 Former things are kept in remembrance that the good may be used as examples and the bad as warnings.
- 13 Just listen to him: is he not square-

This is called 賊寬. In very urgent cases he also beats the drum at the inner door, placed there for the purpose, which (theoretically) compels the immediate attention of the magistrate.

12 The payment of a small portion of the price in order to fix a bargain is a common custom, especially in buying houses or lands.

18 一字不知 is an affectation of book style. The ordinary colloquial would be 一點兒不知道.

19 一門不通, does not comprehend a single step or principle, incompetent in every respect. 門 is equal to 法門, art, method, principle; department, branch.

22 聖廟, holy temple, that is, the temple of Confucius, which has in it an image of Confucius, and also of each of

his chief disciples. There is such a temple in every *hsien* city. According to tradition, Confucius was far from prepossessing in appearance. 五露朝天, the five orifices pointing towards heaven, viz., the eyes, nostrils, and mouth. 朝天 means that the chin protruded and the forehead retreated, so as to give his face the appearance of being directed upwards.

23 成仙, to become an immortal, by a process intended to eliminate the gross and the sensual, and at the same time to nourish and stimulate the spiritual and the ethereal. This process consists in sitting erect and motionless with the features fixed in an attitude of contemplation (打坐), in holding the breath and acquiring the art of breathing only at long intervals, in gradually reducing the amount of food to a minimum, and in sundry other exercises and austerities.

LESSON CXLV.

THE INSTRUMENTAL VERB. 以

1³ 以 To use, to take, to regard as,—the common instrumental verb of the book language, but often used in Mandarin, especially in ready-made forms and phrases.

以爲 To regard as, to take as, to use as. In the majority of the cases in which 以 is used

as an instrumental verb in Mandarin, it is followed by 爲, either directly or separated by a few words.

以 being a book word gives character to the whole lesson, most of the sentences being more or less *wên*.

song name selfworm

遠 遠 跟 隨 以 備 使 喚 你 以 為 大 花 翎 家 怕
 還 叫 人 暗 暗 的 傳 了 一 二 十 個 能 事 的 衙 役
 次 上 京 進 了 永 定 門 以 為 是 進 了 城 咯 他 們
 蟻 蟻 和 蜜 蜂 為 榜 樣 效 法 他 的 殷 勤 我 初
 以 為 真 都 是 因 習 而 不 察 的 緣 故 應 當 以
 桑 為 重 嗎 像 這 樣 渺 茫 無 憑 的 事 人 竟 信
 以 善 勝 惡 你 們 可 不 大 家 省 悟 着 實 以 農
 的 那 人 倒 以 為 非 你 不 可 為 惡 所 勝 應 當
 嗎 人 的 良 心 大 不 相 同 常 有 這 人 以 為 是

ly advocating [the principle] that might makes right?
 14 The consciences of men differ widely. It frequently happens that what one man regards as right, another considers wrong.
 15 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.
 16 Should not all take warning, and emphatically regard farming and silk raising as the important things?
 17 That men should believe and regard as true anything so vague and unattested as this, is simply because they accept it without examination.
 18 You should take the ant and the bee as patterns, and imitate their diligence.
 19 The first time I went to Peking, I entered the Yung-ting gate and supposed I had entered the city, but was told that I was still outside the city, and that only after entering the South Gate would I be inside.
 20 He sent and secretly summoned ten or twenty efficient constables to follow him at a distance ready for service.
 21 Do you suppose that he of the double

VOCABULARY.

4 成名 Ch'êng² ming². To obtain a degree; to acquire distinction.
 6 私心 Si¹ hsin¹. Selfishness, partiality; underhand, secret.
 6 度 Toá¹. To guess, to estimate, to measure. See tu⁴.
 6 測度 Ts'ê¹ toá¹. To measure, to estimate, to calculate, to fathom.
 9 拘管 Chū¹ kwan⁹. To restrain, to control, to hold in check.
 11 婦女 Fu⁴ nü³. A woman.
 11 出頭 Ch'u¹ t'ou². To come forward, to assume responsibility; to appear in public, to show oneself.
 11 露面 Lou⁴ mien⁴. To show one's face, to appear in public:—Note (11).
 17 渺 Miao³. Indistinct, vague; boundless.
 17 冥 Ming². Dark, obscure, the unseen world.
 茫 Mang². Vast and vague as the ocean.

渺冥. Indistinct, vague; uncertain, unattested. 17
 渺茫. Vague, misty, indistinct; vast. 17
 蟻 Yang³. An insect.
 蟻 蟻 I³ yang³. An ant, an emmet. Read ki³ 18
 蜜蜂 Mi⁴ fêng¹. A bee, a honey-bee. 18
 榜 Pang³. To beat, to bamboo; a placard of 18
 榜樣 Pang³ yang⁴. A model, an example, a pattern.
 效法 Hsiao⁴ fa³. To imitate, to copy, to pattern after. 18
 跟隨 Kên¹ sui². To follow, to attend. 20
 翎 Ling². A plume, a tail feather, a feather. 21
 花翎 Hwa¹ ling². A peacock's feather, a variegated plume.
 惹氣 Jé³ ch'i⁴. To provoke to anger, to irritate, to vex; to quarrel. 21

你嗎、人家是不願意和你惹氣啊。能作
 大惡、又能行大善、而且能以大善蓋掩大
 惡、使人只知他的善為善、不以他的惡為
 惡、這纔算是大光棍、就如從前有個李飛
 虎、若見那些富貴有勢力的、橫行霸道、
 不幹正事、他就硬強問他要銀子、不給不
 行、要出一千八百來、就和附從他的人、
 吃夥用、一點不彼此、若有窮人求他、都
 是三千五百吊的幫助、你看現在這些打光
 棍的、有這麼一個嗎。

plume is afraid of you? He is simply averse to having a dispute with you.

22 It is the characteristic of an accomplished rascal that he is able to perpetrate great crimes while practising great virtues, and moreover is able to use these great virtues to cover up his great crimes, so that while men recognize his virtues they are oblivious to his crimes. For instance, there was formerly one Li Fei Hu, who, when he saw rich and powerful men given to high handed oppression and neglecting the ordinary virtues of life, would peremptorily demand money of them and would take no denial, and when he had extorted from them eight hundred or a thousand [taels], would use it for the common wants of himself and his followers, making no distinction whatever of *meum* and *tuum*. If a poor man appealed to him, he was sure to get a lift of from three to five thousand [cash]. Look at the present race of rascals will you? Is there one such among them?

霸道 *Pa⁴ tao⁴*. The way of a tyrant, oppression; usurpation; intimidation.
 附從 *Fu⁴ ts'ung²*. To follow, to submit to, to obey.

打光棍 *Ta³ kwang¹ kun⁴*. To lead the life of a villain; to act without regard to consequences; to live by one's wits; to play the sharper.

NOTES.

6 小人 君子 In Confucian ethics these two terms are constantly recurring opposites. They are the saint and sinner of classical religion. 小人 is the selfish, mean-spirited man, 君子 is the high-minded and honorable man.

7 Or, He that has truth always regards truth as right; that is, a man of principle is always loyal to his principles.

9 Be careful to read 可 and 以 separately, and not, as they so frequently are, one word. 父母拘管為礙 would be distinctly improved by inserting a 的 after 父母. It may mean, either enmity on the part of the parents, or an occasion of enmity on the part of the child. It is probably intended to include both ideas.

11 出頭露面, to show one's face, to appear in public; to be forward, to take the lead. 露面 is a rhetorical repetition of 出頭.

12 This sentence might also be taken as an address or exhortation in the second person.

13 以大壓小以強壓弱, use the great to oppress the small, the strong to oppress the weak. The second expression is from book language, and the first is an imitation of it added for emphasis.

15 為 with 所 here makes a passive. A more literal rendering would be, you should not become such as evil overcomes.

17 習而不察, to adopt without investigation, a convenient and expressive book phrase in common use colloquially.

19 Against the south face of the wall of Peking city proper, called by foreigners the Tartar city, there is built an outer city wall (外城) of three sides, including within it the whole southern wall of the Tartar city, which has in it three gates, of which the central one is the 前門. The 永定門 is the gate of this outer city, which is in a line with the 前門.

20 以備, for the purpose of being ready,—a common book phrase occasionally used in colloquial Mandarin.

21 大花翎, a large or double peacock plume worn as a badge of honor. It is here used as an epithet for designating a particular well known man or family. The full force of 人家 cannot be preserved in a translation. 和你惹氣 implies mutual provocation and quarrelling.

22 夥吃夥用, to eat and use in company; that is, in common.

① 復 shā fū
② 復 fū shā

第一百四十六課

LESSON CXLVI.

鹿鳴高最愛賣誇富，其實那裏有個大錢。雖是一族人，其中也分親疎遠近，人都叫他「獸子」，其實他更不「獸」。能知其當然，不能知其所以然。古人以為地是平的，其實却是圓的。這其中的妙趣，只可意會，不可言傳。其餘的事，等我回來再安排罷。○學生偷閒掉鬼，覺得是哄先生，其實正是哄自己。○昨天說的如官當府的，今天忽然又反復了，這其中必有緣故。○他說是「評脈」，其實不過用指頭混摸一回。○其裏不知其外的事，我叫他「粹然」，問把我問陵了。○孔子說：「發憤忘食，言其在熱心用功的時候，雖是饑餓，也覺不出來。」○先盛滿了那個燂子。

- 1 Lu Ming Kao is much given to boasting (making capital) of his wealth, while the fact is he is not worth a cash.
- 2 Although [they are] of the same clan, yet within the clan some are more nearly related than others.
- 3 Everybody calls him a simpleton, but, in fact, he is very far from being a simpleton. [the reason why.]
- 4 Only the obligation can be known, not
- 5 The ancients supposed the earth to be flat, but in reality it is round.
- 6 The exquisite sentiment herein contained can only be conceived, it cannot be expressed in words. [I return.]
- 7 The other matters I will arrange when
- 8 Students idle away time and play tricks thinking they are cheating the teacher, whereas they are really cheating themselves.
- 9 Yesterday it was settled quite satisfactorily, and to-day the settlement is suddenly repudiated. There must be some cause for this.
- 10 He said he was feeling my pulse, whereas he simply felt around at random for a while with his fingers.
- 11 Men are not acquainted with what lies beyond their own sphere. He suddenly asked me a question which quite nonplussed me.
- 12 Confucius said, "When I worked with ardor I forgot my food": that is to say, when a man gets very much

LESSON CXLVI.

MANDARIN USES OF 其.

其 holds approximately the same place in book language that 他 does in Mandarin, save that 其 is used freely of things as well as of persons. In Mandarin 其 is, for the most part, only used in certain connections and as a component of certain phrases. The following are the most common special phrases in which it occurs. It has already been used several times.

- 其實 In fact, in point of fact, in reality, whereas.
- 其中 Herein, amongst, in the midst of.
- 其間 In the midst of, amongst.

- 其餘 The remainder, the residue, the rest.
- 其裏 The inside, that which is within.
- 其外 The outside, that which is without.
- 其言其 To say. That is, that is to say, as much as
- 取其 To take for, to consider as:—Note (16).
- 准其 To allow, to permit.
- 隨其 To follow; to let, to allow.
- 聽其 To let, to allow.
- 究其實 In point of fact, the fact is, after all.

在 了。 覺 言 其 你¹⁶ 並 事 極 其
 這 就 其 他 和 非 不 好 餘
 事 我¹⁸ 學 人 性 他 要 可 而 的
 上 出 好 不 子 交 人 專 出 究 可
 還 好 了 可 直 往 務 於 其 以
 有 心 若 濫 快 爽 是 取 外 實 倒
 甚 勸 和 交 爽 是 取 外 實 倒
 麼 私 你 壞 人 爲 常¹⁷ 其 他 有 把 心 裏 的 善 念 丟 掉 了 我 取
 私 你 壞 人 爲 常¹⁷ 其 他 有 把 心 裏 的 善 念 丟 掉 了 我 取
 斃 嗎 模 爽 不 知 不 覺 就 學 壞
 起 打 不 知 不 覺 就 學 壞
 俗¹⁹ 人 起 不 知 不 覺 就 學 壞
 語 來 了 其 實 我
 說 家 貧 出

p'ui fall
 cheng chi
 sang
 min

interested in his work, he does not even realize that he is hungry.
 13 First fill that jar, and the remainder you may pour into this crock.
 14 You think he spoke very well, and yet, in point of fact, he knows nothing at all about the doctrine.
 15 When I said one must not do good for a purpose, I meant by it that one must not have a selfish end, not that I would have men intent only on the outward appearance, discarding all virtuous purpose in the heart.
 16 What excellence do you find in him that you cultivate his acquaintance? Ans. I am taken with his straightforwardness.
 17 The common saying is, "That which touches vermilion becomes red, and that which touches ink becomes black;" that is to say, you should not associate promiscuously with others, for if you associate with good men, you will unconsciously practice their virtues; and if you associate with bad men, you will unconsciously learn their vices.
 18 I exhorted you from the best of motives and yet you rebuff me; after all what underhand design have I in this business?
 19 The saying is, "When a family is poor, it has dutiful sons; when

VOCABULARY.

鳴 Ming³. The cry of a bird or animal; to sound out, to resound.
 誇富 K'wa¹ fu⁴. To boast of one's wealth, to profess to be rich.
 賈富 Mai⁴ fu⁴. To make capital of one's wealth by displaying it.
 所以然 Soa³ i³ jan². The reason why, the cause, the wherefore.
 默會 Moa⁴ hui⁴. To conceive mentally, to imagine.
 意會 I⁴ hui⁴. To conceive mentally, to feel the force of an idea which cannot be expressed in words.
 言傳 Yen² ch'uan². To express in words, to state viva voce.
 偷閒 T'ou¹ hsien². To steal time, to evade doing, to shirk, to idle time.

掉鬼 Tiao⁴ kwei³. To play tricks, to hoodwink; to prevaricate, to shuffle.
 診脈 Chen^{1,3}. To examine, to verify, to ascertain.
 診脈 Chen¹ moa⁴. To examine or feel the pulse. (N.)
 評脈 Ping² moa⁴. The same. (c.)
 號脈 Hao⁴ moa⁴. The same. (s.)
 憤 Fèn⁴. Ardent, eager, excited; urgent desire or purpose.
 發憤 Fa¹ fèn⁴. To grow excited, to act with intense ardor.
 熱心 Jé⁴ hsin¹. Hearty, zealous, earnest, eager, interested.
 罈 T'an². An earthenware jar.
 鉢 Poa¹. An earthenware basin or crock; a priest's or beggar's alms-dish.

時候仍舊是寫尾不寫翼。我們這裏叫了都叫翼。自便也就是了。說成人不用管。帶回去。你准其儘之和他作結。船票方纔准其儘之和他作結。能捨身為國。到船主查客的時候。不能奉養無愧。國亂的時候。試金石一般。因為家貧的時候。孝子國亂顯忠臣。這言其貧亂如同忠孝的。

the country is in anarchy, patriots appear:” that is to say, poverty and anarchy are, as it were, the touch-stones of patriotism and filial piety; for when the family is poor, only the truly filial are able to serve [their parents] perfectly; and when the nation is in disorder, only the truly patriotic are ready to sacrifice themselves for their country.

20 When the captain checks off the passengers, each one must have a ticket or he will not be permitted to land. If any one is without a ticket, he will certainly be carried back again.

21 Why do you keep continually vexing him? The saying is, “If he has it in him, he’ll make a man without being governed; and if not, governing to death will not make a man of him.” In my opinion you would better just let him have his own way.

22 According to the proper pronunciation of the characters we should say wei-pa, but we here incorrectly pronounce it i-pa, yet in writing we still write wei not i.

- 15 貪圖 *T'an¹ t'u²*. To covet, to lust after, to hanker after, to wish for.
- 15 丟掉 *Tiu¹ tia⁴*. To reject, to cast away, to discard, to throw away.
- 16 直爽 *Chi² shwang³*. Straight-forward, candid, frank. (N.)
- 16 直快 *Chi² k'wai⁴*. The same. (c. & s.)
- 17 濫 *Lan⁴*. To overflow; lawless, irregular; excessive; promiscuous.
- 17 濫交 *Lan⁴ chiao¹*. To associate promiscuously with others.
- 18 臣 *Ch'en²*. A vassal, a minister, a statesman.

- 試金石 *Shi⁴ chin¹ shi²*. A touch-stone.¹⁹
- 奉養 *Feng⁴ yang³*. To support dutifully, to minister to respectfully.
- 結冤 *Chie¹ yuan⁴*. To make an enemy, to provoke enmity, to aggravate.
- 作冤 *Tsoa⁴ yuan⁴*. To act the part of an enemy, to vex, to aggravate.
- 自便 *Tsi⁴ pien⁴*. At one's own convenience, as one pleases.
- 翼 *I⁴*. . . . The wings of a bird; to assist; to defend.²⁰
- 下筆 *Hsia⁴ pi³*. To write; to begin to write; to compose.

NOTES.

2 遠近 is added chiefly for rhetorical effect. The reversed order is an accident, growing out of the fact that 遠 and 近 are commonly joined in this order.

3 The use of 更 implies a comparison with others, and suggests the idea that so far from being a simpleton, he is sharper-witted than the average of men.

4 Or, It is only possible to know the oughtness of it, not the wherefore. This sentence expresses its idea more elegantly and forcibly than the English language is capable of doing.

6 這 properly belongs to some such word as sentence or phrase understood, which has been displaced by the abrupt introduction of 其中. See also (9).

9 如官如府, perfectly satisfactory, all ship-shape; readily, easily. A very common and very expressive local phrase. Its proper writing and analysis are both quite uncertain.

11 其裏不知其外的事. He that is within does not know that which is without; that is, a man is not

第一四十七課

LESSON CXLVII.

天¹這¹樣¹短¹，吃¹兩¹頓¹飯¹就¹合¹式¹。這²一²稜²帽²辮²子²，有²多²少²。這³是³一³百³二³十³細³的³，兩³道³斜³的³。○⁴這⁴麼⁴一⁴縷⁴子⁴，要⁴三⁴道⁴直⁴的⁴，○⁵你⁵上⁵灘⁵縣⁵的⁵時⁵候⁵，請⁵你⁵一⁵百⁵二⁵十⁵個⁵，我⁵纔⁵已⁵經⁵數⁵過⁵了⁵。○⁶你⁶看⁶你⁶一⁶分⁶爲⁶二⁶十⁶卷⁶，共⁶一⁶百⁶回⁶。○⁷這⁷桶⁷橘⁷子⁷，是⁷一⁷百⁷是⁷打⁷了⁷一⁷道⁷大⁷裂⁷。○⁸這⁸桶⁸橘⁸子⁸，是⁸一⁸百⁸給⁸我⁸買⁸一⁸件⁸皮⁸襖⁸，一⁸條⁸腰⁸裙⁸子⁸。○⁹這⁹麼⁹一⁹縷⁹子⁹，要⁹三⁹道⁹直⁹的⁹，○¹⁰你¹⁰上¹⁰灘¹⁰縣¹⁰的¹⁰時¹⁰候¹⁰，請¹⁰你¹⁰一¹⁰百¹⁰二¹⁰十¹⁰個¹⁰，我¹⁰纔¹⁰已¹⁰經¹⁰數¹⁰過¹⁰了¹⁰。○¹¹你¹¹看¹¹你¹¹一¹¹分¹¹爲¹¹二¹¹十¹¹卷¹¹，共¹¹一¹¹百¹¹回¹¹。○¹²這¹²桶¹²橘¹²子¹²，是¹²一¹²百¹²是¹²打¹²了¹²一¹²道¹²大¹²裂¹²。○¹³這¹³桶¹³橘¹³子¹³，是¹³一¹³百¹³給¹³我¹³買¹³一¹³件¹³皮¹³襖¹³，一¹³條¹³腰¹³裙¹³子¹³。○¹⁴這¹⁴麼¹⁴一¹⁴縷¹⁴子¹⁴，要¹⁴三¹⁴道¹⁴直¹⁴的¹⁴，○¹⁵你¹⁵上¹⁵灘¹⁵縣¹⁵的¹⁵時¹⁵候¹⁵，請¹⁵你¹⁵一¹⁵百¹⁵二¹⁵十¹⁵個¹⁵，我¹⁵纔¹⁵已¹⁵經¹⁵數¹⁵過¹⁵了¹⁵。○¹⁶你¹⁶看¹⁶你¹⁶一¹⁶分¹⁶爲¹⁶二¹⁶十¹⁶卷¹⁶，共¹⁶一¹⁶百¹⁶回¹⁶。○¹⁷這¹⁷桶¹⁷橘¹⁷子¹⁷，是¹⁷一¹⁷百¹⁷是¹⁷打¹⁷了¹⁷一¹⁷道¹⁷大¹⁷裂¹⁷。○¹⁸這¹⁸桶¹⁸橘¹⁸子¹⁸，是¹⁸一¹⁸百¹⁸給¹⁸我¹⁸買¹⁸一¹⁸件¹⁸皮¹⁸襖¹⁸，一¹⁸條¹⁸腰¹⁸裙¹⁸子¹⁸。○¹⁹這¹⁹麼¹⁹一¹⁹縷¹⁹子¹⁹，要¹⁹三¹⁹道¹⁹直¹⁹的¹⁹，○²⁰你²⁰上²⁰灘²⁰縣²⁰的²⁰時²⁰候²⁰，請²⁰你²⁰一²⁰百²⁰二²⁰十²⁰個²⁰，我²⁰纔²⁰已²⁰經²⁰數²⁰過²⁰了²⁰。○²¹你²¹看²¹你²¹一²¹分²¹爲²¹二²¹十²¹卷²¹，共²¹一²¹百²¹回²¹。○²²這²²桶²²橘²²子²²，是²²一²²百²²是²²打²²了²²一²²道²²大²²裂²²。○²³這²³桶²³橘²³子²³，是²³一²³百²³給²³我²³買²³一²³件²³皮²³襖²³，一²³條²³腰²³裙²³子²³。○²⁴這²⁴麼²⁴一²⁴縷²⁴子²⁴，要²⁴三²⁴道²⁴直²⁴的²⁴，○²⁵你²⁵上²⁵灘²⁵縣²⁵的²⁵時²⁵候²⁵，請²⁵你²⁵一²⁵百²⁵二²⁵十²⁵個²⁵，我²⁵纔²⁵已²⁵經²⁵數²⁵過²⁵了²⁵。○²⁶你²⁶看²⁶你²⁶一²⁶分²⁶爲²⁶二²⁶十²⁶卷²⁶，共²⁶一²⁶百²⁶回²⁶。○²⁷這²⁷桶²⁷橘²⁷子²⁷，是²⁷一²⁷百²⁷是²⁷打²⁷了²⁷一²⁷道²⁷大²⁷裂²⁷。○²⁸這²⁸桶²⁸橘²⁸子²⁸，是²⁸一²⁸百²⁸給²⁸我²⁸買²⁸一²⁸件²⁸皮²⁸襖²⁸，一²⁸條²⁸腰²⁸裙²⁸子²⁸。○²⁹這²⁹麼²⁹一²⁹縷²⁹子²⁹，要²⁹三²⁹道²⁹直²⁹的²⁹，○³⁰你³⁰上³⁰灘³⁰縣³⁰的³⁰時³⁰候³⁰，請³⁰你³⁰一³⁰百³⁰二³⁰十³⁰個³⁰，我³⁰纔³⁰已³⁰經³⁰數³⁰過³⁰了³⁰。○³¹你³¹看³¹你³¹一³¹分³¹爲³¹二³¹十³¹卷³¹，共³¹一³¹百³¹回³¹。○³²這³²桶³²橘³²子³²，是³²一³²百³²是³²打³²了³²一³²道³²大³²裂³²。○³³這³³桶³³橘³³子³³，是³³一³³百³³給³³我³³買³³一³³件³³皮³³襖³³，一³³條³³腰³³裙³³子³³。○³⁴這³⁴麼³⁴一³⁴縷³⁴子³⁴，要³⁴三³⁴道³⁴直³⁴的³⁴，○³⁵你³⁵上³⁵灘³⁵縣³⁵的³⁵時³⁵候³⁵，請³⁵你³⁵一³⁵百³⁵二³⁵十³⁵個³⁵，我³⁵纔³⁵已³⁵經³⁵數³⁵過³⁵了³⁵。○³⁶你³⁶看³⁶你³⁶一³⁶分³⁶爲³⁶二³⁶十³⁶卷³⁶，共³⁶一³⁶百³⁶回³⁶。○³⁷這³⁷桶³⁷橘³⁷子³⁷，是³⁷一³⁷百³⁷是³⁷打³⁷了³⁷一³⁷道³⁷大³⁷裂³⁷。○³⁸這³⁸桶³⁸橘³⁸子³⁸，是³⁸一³⁸百³⁸給³⁸我³⁸買³⁸一³⁸件³⁸皮³⁸襖³⁸，一³⁸條³⁸腰³⁸裙³⁸子³⁸。○³⁹這³⁹麼³⁹一³⁹縷³⁹子³⁹，要³⁹三³⁹道³⁹直³⁹的³⁹，○⁴⁰你⁴⁰上⁴⁰灘⁴⁰縣⁴⁰的⁴⁰時⁴⁰候⁴⁰，請⁴⁰你⁴⁰一⁴⁰百⁴⁰二⁴⁰十⁴⁰個⁴⁰，我⁴⁰纔⁴⁰已⁴⁰經⁴⁰數⁴⁰過⁴⁰了⁴⁰。○⁴¹你⁴¹看⁴¹你⁴¹一⁴¹分⁴¹爲⁴¹二⁴¹十⁴¹卷⁴¹，共⁴¹一⁴¹百⁴¹回⁴¹。○⁴²這⁴²桶⁴²橘⁴²子⁴²，是⁴²一⁴²百⁴²是⁴²打⁴²了⁴²一⁴²道⁴²大⁴²裂⁴²。○⁴³這⁴³桶⁴³橘⁴³子⁴³，是⁴³一⁴³百⁴³給⁴³我⁴³買⁴³一⁴³件⁴³皮⁴³襖⁴³，一⁴³條⁴³腰⁴³裙⁴³子⁴³。○⁴⁴這⁴⁴麼⁴⁴一⁴⁴縷⁴⁴子⁴⁴，要⁴⁴三⁴⁴道⁴⁴直⁴⁴的⁴⁴，○⁴⁵你⁴⁵上⁴⁵灘⁴⁵縣⁴⁵的⁴⁵時⁴⁵候⁴⁵，請⁴⁵你⁴⁵一⁴⁵百⁴⁵二⁴⁵十⁴⁵個⁴⁵，我⁴⁵纔⁴⁵已⁴⁵經⁴⁵數⁴⁵過⁴⁵了⁴⁵。○⁴⁶你⁴⁶看⁴⁶你⁴⁶一⁴⁶分⁴⁶爲⁴⁶二⁴⁶十⁴⁶卷⁴⁶，共⁴⁶一⁴⁶百⁴⁶回⁴⁶。○⁴⁷這⁴⁷桶⁴⁷橘⁴⁷子⁴⁷，是⁴⁷一⁴⁷百⁴⁷是⁴⁷打⁴⁷了⁴⁷一⁴⁷道⁴⁷大⁴⁷裂⁴⁷。○⁴⁸這⁴⁸桶⁴⁸橘⁴⁸子⁴⁸，是⁴⁸一⁴⁸百⁴⁸給⁴⁸我⁴⁸買⁴⁸一⁴⁸件⁴⁸皮⁴⁸襖⁴⁸，一⁴⁸條⁴⁸腰⁴⁸裙⁴⁸子⁴⁸。○⁴⁹這⁴⁹麼⁴⁹一⁴⁹縷⁴⁹子⁴⁹，要⁴⁹三⁴⁹道⁴⁹直⁴⁹的⁴⁹，○⁵⁰你⁵⁰上⁵⁰灘⁵⁰縣⁵⁰的⁵⁰時⁵⁰候⁵⁰，請⁵⁰你⁵⁰一⁵⁰百⁵⁰二⁵⁰十⁵⁰個⁵⁰，我⁵⁰纔⁵⁰已⁵⁰經⁵⁰數⁵⁰過⁵⁰了⁵⁰。○⁵¹你⁵¹看⁵¹你⁵¹一⁵¹分⁵¹爲⁵¹二⁵¹十⁵¹卷⁵¹，共⁵¹一⁵¹百⁵¹回⁵¹。○⁵²這⁵²桶⁵²橘⁵²子⁵²，是⁵²一⁵²百⁵²是⁵²打⁵²了⁵²一⁵²道⁵²大⁵²裂⁵²。○⁵³這⁵³桶⁵³橘⁵³子⁵³，是⁵³一⁵³百⁵³給⁵³我⁵³買⁵³一⁵³件⁵³皮⁵³襖⁵³，一⁵³條⁵³腰⁵³裙⁵³子⁵³。○⁵⁴這⁵⁴麼⁵⁴一⁵⁴縷⁵⁴子⁵⁴，要⁵⁴三⁵⁴道⁵⁴直⁵⁴的⁵⁴，○⁵⁵你⁵⁵上⁵⁵灘⁵⁵縣⁵⁵的⁵⁵時⁵⁵候⁵⁵，請⁵⁵你⁵⁵一⁵⁵百⁵⁵二⁵⁵十⁵⁵個⁵⁵，我⁵⁵纔⁵⁵已⁵⁵經⁵⁵數⁵⁵過⁵⁵了⁵⁵。○⁵⁶你⁵⁶看⁵⁶你⁵⁶一⁵⁶分⁵⁶爲⁵⁶二⁵⁶十⁵⁶卷⁵⁶，共⁵⁶一⁵⁶百⁵⁶回⁵⁶。○⁵⁷這⁵⁷桶⁵⁷橘⁵⁷子⁵⁷，是⁵⁷一⁵⁷百⁵⁷是⁵⁷打⁵⁷了⁵⁷一⁵⁷道⁵⁷大⁵⁷裂⁵⁷。○⁵⁸這⁵⁸桶⁵⁸橘⁵⁸子⁵⁸，是⁵⁸一⁵⁸百⁵⁸給⁵⁸我⁵⁸買⁵⁸一⁵⁸件⁵⁸皮⁵⁸襖⁵⁸，一⁵⁸條⁵⁸腰⁵⁸裙⁵⁸子⁵⁸。○⁵⁹這⁵⁹麼⁵⁹一⁵⁹縷⁵⁹子⁵⁹，要⁵⁹三⁵⁹道⁵⁹直⁵⁹的⁵⁹，○⁶⁰你⁶⁰上⁶⁰灘⁶⁰縣⁶⁰的⁶⁰時⁶⁰候⁶⁰，請⁶⁰你⁶⁰一⁶⁰百⁶⁰二⁶⁰十⁶⁰個⁶⁰，我⁶⁰纔⁶⁰已⁶⁰經⁶⁰數⁶⁰過⁶⁰了⁶⁰。○⁶¹你⁶¹看⁶¹你⁶¹一⁶¹分⁶¹爲⁶¹二⁶¹十⁶¹卷⁶¹，共⁶¹一⁶¹百⁶¹回⁶¹。○⁶²這⁶²桶⁶²橘⁶²子⁶²，是⁶²一⁶²百⁶²是⁶²打⁶²了⁶²一⁶²道⁶²大⁶²裂⁶²。○⁶³這⁶³桶⁶³橘⁶³子⁶³，是⁶³一⁶³百⁶³給⁶³我⁶³買⁶³一⁶³件⁶³皮⁶³襖⁶³，一⁶³條⁶³腰⁶³裙⁶³子⁶³。○⁶⁴這⁶⁴麼⁶⁴一⁶⁴縷⁶⁴子⁶⁴，要⁶⁴三⁶⁴道⁶⁴直⁶⁴的⁶⁴，○⁶⁵你⁶⁵上⁶⁵灘⁶⁵縣⁶⁵的⁶⁵時⁶⁵候⁶⁵，請⁶⁵你⁶⁵一⁶⁵百⁶⁵二⁶⁵十⁶⁵個⁶⁵，我⁶⁵纔⁶⁵已⁶⁵經⁶⁵數⁶⁵過⁶⁵了⁶⁵。○⁶⁶你⁶⁶看⁶⁶你⁶⁶一⁶⁶分⁶⁶爲⁶⁶二⁶⁶十⁶⁶卷⁶⁶，共⁶⁶一⁶⁶百⁶⁶回⁶⁶。○⁶⁷這⁶⁷桶⁶⁷橘⁶⁷子⁶⁷，是⁶⁷一⁶⁷百⁶⁷是⁶⁷打⁶⁷了⁶⁷一⁶⁷道⁶⁷大⁶⁷裂⁶⁷。○⁶⁸這⁶⁸桶⁶⁸橘⁶⁸子⁶⁸，是⁶⁸一⁶⁸百⁶⁸給⁶⁸我⁶⁸買⁶⁸一⁶⁸件⁶⁸皮⁶⁸襖⁶⁸，一⁶⁸條⁶⁸腰⁶⁸裙⁶⁸子⁶⁸。○⁶⁹這⁶⁹麼⁶⁹一⁶⁹縷⁶⁹子⁶⁹，要⁶⁹三⁶⁹道⁶⁹直⁶⁹的⁶⁹，○⁷⁰你⁷⁰上⁷⁰灘⁷⁰縣⁷⁰的⁷⁰時⁷⁰候⁷⁰，請⁷⁰你⁷⁰一⁷⁰百⁷⁰二⁷⁰十⁷⁰個⁷⁰，我⁷⁰纔⁷⁰已⁷⁰經⁷⁰數⁷⁰過⁷⁰了⁷⁰。○⁷¹你⁷¹看⁷¹你⁷¹一⁷¹分⁷¹爲⁷¹二⁷¹十⁷¹卷⁷¹，共⁷¹一⁷¹百⁷¹回⁷¹。○⁷²這⁷²桶⁷²橘⁷²子⁷²，是⁷²一⁷²百⁷²是⁷²打⁷²了⁷²一⁷²道⁷²大⁷²裂⁷²。○⁷³這⁷³桶⁷³橘⁷³子⁷³，是⁷³一⁷³百⁷³給⁷³我⁷³買⁷³一⁷³件⁷³皮⁷³襖⁷³，一⁷³條⁷³腰⁷³裙⁷³子⁷³。○⁷⁴這⁷⁴麼⁷⁴一⁷⁴縷⁷⁴子⁷⁴，要⁷⁴三⁷⁴道⁷⁴直⁷⁴的⁷⁴，○⁷⁵你⁷⁵上⁷⁵灘⁷⁵縣⁷⁵的⁷⁵時⁷⁵候⁷⁵，請⁷⁵你⁷⁵一⁷⁵百⁷⁵二⁷⁵十⁷⁵個⁷⁵，我⁷⁵纔⁷⁵已⁷⁵經⁷⁵數⁷⁵過⁷⁵了⁷⁵。○⁷⁶你⁷⁶看⁷⁶你⁷⁶一⁷⁶分⁷⁶爲⁷⁶二⁷⁶十⁷⁶卷⁷⁶，共⁷⁶一⁷⁶百⁷⁶回⁷⁶。○⁷⁷這⁷⁷桶⁷⁷橘⁷⁷子⁷⁷，是⁷⁷一⁷⁷百⁷⁷是⁷⁷打⁷⁷了⁷⁷一⁷⁷道⁷⁷大⁷⁷裂⁷⁷。○⁷⁸這⁷⁸桶⁷⁸橘⁷⁸子⁷⁸，是⁷⁸一⁷⁸百⁷⁸給⁷⁸我⁷⁸買⁷⁸一⁷⁸件⁷⁸皮⁷⁸襖⁷⁸，一⁷⁸條⁷⁸腰⁷⁸裙⁷⁸子⁷⁸。○⁷⁹這⁷⁹麼⁷⁹一⁷⁹縷⁷⁹子⁷⁹，要⁷⁹三⁷⁹道⁷⁹直⁷⁹的⁷⁹，○⁸⁰你⁸⁰上⁸⁰灘⁸⁰縣⁸⁰的⁸⁰時⁸⁰候⁸⁰，請⁸⁰你⁸⁰一⁸⁰百⁸⁰二⁸⁰十⁸⁰個⁸⁰，我⁸⁰纔⁸⁰已⁸⁰經⁸⁰數⁸⁰過⁸⁰了⁸⁰。○⁸¹你⁸¹看⁸¹你⁸¹一⁸¹分⁸¹爲⁸¹二⁸¹十⁸¹卷⁸¹，共⁸¹一⁸¹百⁸¹回⁸¹。○⁸²這⁸²桶⁸²橘⁸²子⁸²，是⁸²一⁸²百⁸²是⁸²打⁸²了⁸²一⁸²道⁸²大⁸²裂⁸²。○⁸³這⁸³桶⁸³橘⁸³子⁸³，是⁸³一⁸³百⁸³給⁸³我⁸³買⁸³一⁸³件⁸³皮⁸

兩擡食盒就送去了。○
 兩節你看吃虧不吃虧。○
 吊錢買了一棵樹。○
 商議合村。○
 是有眼嗎。○
 這塊方端硯。○
 上常貼着兩張帖。○
 道關數那第一道難過。○
 真是一團和氣。○
 五個錢呢。○
 從來說和氣生財。○
 這個人

10 It has been said, "A peaceable temper brings wealth." This man is the embodiment of good temper, how can he help getting rich?
 11 Of those three locks, the first is the most difficult to pass.
 12 I notice that you constantly have plasters stuck on each of your temples. What do you wear them for?
 13 This Tan inkstone is first-rate; look, and you will see it has an eye on it.
 14 I propose to consult the town about building a small bridge over that gulch to the west.
 15 I have bought a catalpa tree for twelve thousand cash. It is nine spans and a half in diameter and will cut two lengths. Do you think I have been cheated?
 16 These presents can be sent in two racks of boxes; it is not worth while to use four racks.

回 *hui* A turn,—classifier of chapters in novels.
 桶 *ch'ung* A tub,—classifier of things in tubs or casks, as oranges, pears, etc.
 策 *chieh* A handful,—classifier of bunches or bundles of kao-liang stalks, onions, etc.
 紮 *tsa* To wind around and tie,—classifier of things in bunches, as tape, cord, etc.
 帖 *t'ieh* A placard,—classifier of things pasted up or posted. [or pellets.
 團 *tuan* A lump,—classifier of things in lumps
 方 *fang* A square,—classifier of panes of glass, inkstones, etc.
 擡 *cha* A handful,—classifier of measurements made with the hand.
 擗 *nan* A span,—classifier of measurements made with the hand:—Note (15).
 節 *chieh* A joint,—classifier of things in fixed lengths, as logs, verses, etc.

擡 *t'ai* To carry on a pole,—classifier of loads carried by two. *chang*
 章 A chapter,—classifier of parts of a book, of documents, etc.
 篇 A section or leaf,—classifier of poems, essays, and of leaves of books.
 滴 A drop,—classifier of things in drops. *ti* 590
 馱 A mule or donkey load or pack,—classifier of loads or packs.
 擔 A load, a picul,—classifier of loads or piculs. *tan*
 箱 A box,—classifier of things in boxes. *hsiang*
 盒 A small covered box or can,—classifier of things in small boxes.
 匣 A small box with moveable lid,—classifier of things in such boxes. *hsia*
 號 A mark,—classifier of lessons. *hao*
 首 A head,—classifier of hymns, poems, etc. *shou*

VOCABULARY.

網 *K'un*³. To bind, to tie up; a bundle, a coil, a roll.
 擗 *Nan*³, *Na*³. To span with the thumb and finger, a span.
 擡 *Cha*¹. To seize, to clutch, to grab, to squeeze; a handful, a span.

策 *Chien*³. A bunch, a handful. This character is not authorized by the dictionaries, but is given in the *Wu Fang Yüan Yin*.
 簪子 *Mao pien*⁴ *tsi*³. Straw braid.
 緣條 *Yuan*³ *t'iao*². Facing, binding.

斤哈啡，所以手裏不能有存錢。現在我
 子八十盒子牛奶膏，五百匣鉛粉，二百五十
 去了。○他今天纔買了四十箱火油，五桶柑
 就往玻璃窗上一撞，撞碎了一塊玻璃，跑出
 驚花貓，上廚房偷什麼吃，給我打急了眼，他
 十三擔煤，今年就毀燒的咯。○方纔有個大
 粒沙。○已經買了二十馱子松柴，再去買上
 所知道的，不過像海中的滴水，海邊的一
 四十篇。○天下事物之理，是無窮無盡，我們
 上卷是八章，一共三十二篇，下卷九章，一共

- 17 The first part has eight chapters, in all thirty-two leaves; the second part has nine chapters, in all forty leaves.
- 18 The principles involved in universal nature are infinite. Those which we know are but as a drop in the ocean or a grain of sand on the sea shore.
- 19 I have already bought twenty loads of pine-tops and when in addition I have bought thirteen piculs of coal, I will have sufficient fuel for the present year.
- 20 Just now a large brindled cat came into the kitchen to steal something to eat. I chased it until it grew desperate, when it gave one bound against the window breaking a pane of glass and so escaped.
- 21 He has just to-day bought forty boxes of kerosine oil, five tubs of oranges, eighty tins of condensed milk, five hundred boxes of white lead and two hundred and fifty cattles of coffee, and therefore cannot have any ready money on hand.
- 22 At present I only recite one lesson a day. Ques. How much do you commit for a lesson? Ans. I commit

- 5 灘 *Wei*². A small river in Eastern Shantung running into the Gulf of Pechili.
- 5 灘縣 *Wei*² *hsien*⁴. A city on the river *Wei*, 200 miles west of *Chefoo*.
- 5 裙 *Ch'ün*². A skirt, a petticoat.
- 4 橘 *Chü*². An orange, the mandarin or loose-peel orange.
- 1 秫稭 *Shu*¹ *chie*¹. The stalks of *kao-liang*.
- 1 閘 *Cha*². A flood-gate; a dam; a lock; a sluice; a customs barrier, a guarded gate.
- 12 鬢 *Pin*⁴. The hair on the temples, locks; tresses.
- 12 鬢角 *Pin*⁴ *chiao*³. The temples.
- 12 膏藥 *Kao*¹ *yao*⁴. A medicated plaster.
- 14 河溝 *Hoa*² *kou*¹. The dry bed of a mountain torrent, a gulch.
- 食盒 *Shi*² *hoi*². A set of large trenchers in a frame:—Note (16).
- 16 無窮 *Wu*² *ch'üing*². Endless, perpetual; boundless, infinite.
- 16 無盡 *Wu*² *chin*⁴. The same.
- 14 松柴 *Sung*¹ *ch'ai*². Pine bushes or brush dried for fuel.
- 20 驚花 *Li*² *hwa*¹. Dark spotted, brindled.

- 柑 *Kan*¹. The close-skinned Canton or Swatow orange.
- 牛奶膏 *Niu*² *nai*³ *kao*¹. Condensed milk.
- 2 鉛粉 *Ch'ien*¹ *fên*³. Carbonate of lead.
- 2 官粉 *Kwan*¹ *fên*³. The same.
- 2 啡 *Fei*¹. A phonetic character.
- 2 哈啡 *K'a*¹ *fei*¹. Coffee.
- 2 傳 *Chuan*⁴. A record; a narrative; traditions. See *ch'uan*².
- 雞片 *Chi*¹ *p'ien*⁴. Sliced chicken, fricasseed chicken.
- 拌 *Pan*⁴. To divide; to mix; to make into a salad.
- 肚 *Tu*³. The stomach. See *tu*⁴.
- 炸 *Cha*². To fry in oil or lard:—See *cha*⁴.
- 脂蓋 *Chi*¹ *kai*¹. Minced meat wrapped in slices of fat pork.
- 滋 *Sung*¹. A river near Sung-kiang-fu; to dress meat or fish by cutting into strings, covering with the yolk of an egg, frying in lard and lastly steaming.
- 滙 *Hui*⁴. To deposit money; a check, a draft; to cook by cutting into shreds, dipping in starch batter and then frying in lard.

1 low' upper story
 2 Shang' noun
 3 ch'oi' table
 4 ch'ih' + sh'uan' join

天只背一號書，一號念多少呢，答念三
 首詩，兩篇文章，五篇左傳，進寶，你去告
 訴萬順樓的掌櫃的，叫他明天中午給我
 預備一桌，八老八八三的小道酒席，八個小碗，要
 他一碗溜雞片，一碗拌肚，一碗炸脂蓋，一
 碗淞魚，一碗滙三絲，一碗燒肉，一碗暴腰
 子，一碗蜜餞蓮子，八個大碗，要他一碗炒
 蟹黃，一碗滙蹄筋，一碗溜蝦仁，一碗炸裏
 脊，一碗魚翅，一碗紅燉肉，一碗大海參，一
 碗炒魚肚，若再添菜，可以現點。

three odes, two essays and five leaves of the Tsoā Chuan.
 23 Chén Pao, you go and tell the manager of the Wan Shün restaurant to prepare for me, to-morrow at noon, a dinner of twice eight bowls (three courses, old style). Let the eight small bowls be,—one of fricasseed chicken, one of pork tripe salad, one of pork rolls fried in oil, one of shred fish fried in lard, one a ragout of three kinds of meat dressed with starch and fried in lard, one of grilled pork cutlets, one of sliced pork kidneys stewed in gravy and one of candied lotus nuts. Let the large bowls be,—one of scrambled crabs' roe, one of shred pigs' feet sinews fried in lard, one of shelled lobsters dressed with broth, one of pork tenderloin fried in lard, one of sharks' fins, one of stewed pork basted with sugar, one of large trepang and one of smothered fish stomachs. If more is wanted we will order it at the time.

三絲 San¹ si¹. Shreds of three kinds of meat, (as chicken, fresh pork, and ham,) a ragout.
 暴 Ts'wan⁴. A cooking range; a mess; to cook over again in a different form; to parboil, then slice and stew in gravy.
 腰子 Yao¹ tsi³. The kidneys.
 蜜餞 Mi⁴ chien¹. Fruits preserved in honey or sugar, candied fruits.
 蓮子 Lien² tsi³. Lotus nuts.
 蟹 Hsie⁴. A crab.
 蟹黃 Hsie⁴ hwang². The roe of crabs.

蹄筋 Ti² chin¹. The sinews of pigs' feet.
 蝦 Hsia¹. A lobster; a shrimp; a prawn; a crawfish.
 蝦仁 Hsia¹ jên². Shelled lobsters.
 裏脊 Li³ chi³. The tenderloin.
 燉 Tun⁴. To simmer slowly, to stew, to seethe.
 參 Shên¹. The ginseng plant. See ts'an¹ and ts'ên¹.
 海參 Hai³ shên¹. Bêche-de-mer, sea-oucumber, trepang.
 魚肚 Yü² tu³. Fish stomachs; gelatine.

NOTES.

1 In the winter many of the poorer classes eat only two meals per day. In the North the non-laboring classes eat only two meals per day at all seasons.

6 西遊記. A Chinese novel, giving a mythological account of the adventures of 陳玄奘, commonly known as 唐僧, a priest who made a journey to the West in the seventh century in search of sacred books.

7 碎倒沒碎, broken it is not. This form of expression implies that the party addressed supposed it was broken.

10 一團和氣, a lump of good humor.

13 The best inkstones come from the banks of a small stream called 端溪, in the province of Kwangtung, hence they are called 端硯. The "eye" on the inkstone is a sort

of spiral marking or whorl in the stone, supposed to indicate an extra quality.

15 There are two kinds of 楸樹, known as Catalpa Bungei and Katalpa Kaemferi. The latter grows as a forest tree in Manchuria. The logs are exported and extensively used for making coffins and furniture. The appearance both of the tree and of the wood is very similar to walnut. The common name in Shantung for the Kwantung variety is 核桃楸 walnut ch'iu, and the fruit is said to resemble a very small walnut. In the vocabulary to Les. 47 the tree is erroneously defined as walnut. 兩節, two lengths, that is, two coffin lengths. When lumber is cut in the forests it is cut into coffin lengths, about seven and a half feet, this being the chief use of lumber in China. 楠 as here used

第一四八課

LESSON CXLVIII.

是 我 的 們 吃 細 以 子 兒 絕² 你¹
 一 手 嗎。 掌 牛 的 告 看 絕² 這
 種 上 ○ 秤 肉、 麻 訴 着 細 的 篇
 頂 活^喬 方⁷ 最 聞 他、 蒼 絞⁵ 麩、 文
 好 腥 纒 公 着 繩 子。 叫 他 黃、 吃 他 章
 的 的。 洗 道、 就 嫌 我⁵ 給 着 還 嫌⁵ 做
 藥 ○ 金⁸ 沒 看 他 一 我 搓 活^焦 ○ 真 是
 就 是 雞 洗 不 活^喬 輩 子 酸。 這³ 絕^妙
 活^烈 惡 納 手、 是 羶 ○ 不 一 根 些 妙
 苦 霜 弄 坦 四 ○ 我⁶ 愛 絕 可⁴ 杏 ○
 叫 原 得 平 我⁶ 愛 絕 可⁴ 杏 ○

- 1 This essay of yours certainly is most admirably done.
- 2 Extra fine flour, and yet he objects to its coarseness.
- 3 These apricots look quite yellow, and yet to the taste they are sour as vinegar.
- 4 You may tell him to twist for me a very fine hempen cord.
- 5 I have never in my life relished beef, I dislike its rank odor.
- 6 Our weighing is entirely fair : see, is not the beam perfectly level ?
- 7 I have just been cleaning some fish and have not washed my hands, so that they have a very rank fish smell.
- 8 Quinine is a very excellent kind of medicine, but it is exceedingly bitter,

should be read *na*. Some teachers prefer 捺 as a better writing for this classifier.

16 The dishes of food and other presents are spread out in large trenchers, which are then piled one on top of the other in a frame, each being supported on the rim of the one underneath. They are sometimes round and sometimes square. The frame supporting the trenchers is carried on a pole by two persons, constituting a 擡 or load.

18 天下事物之理, the principles of all the affairs and things in the world.

20 打急了眼, beat its eyes excited, or glaring.

22 The 文章 here referred to are essays of standard excellence, which are committed to memory as models of style. 左傳, Tsao's narrative, an amplification and exposition of

Confucius' 春秋, said to have been written by 左邱明 and constituting one of the five classics. The term is explained by others as "the assisting narrative," that is, traditional explanations of the 春秋, handed down from generation to generation, and finally committed to writing when the art of Chinese writing was sufficiently developed to serve the purpose.

23 八八 is an abbreviation for eight large and eight small bowls. The three courses (道) are marked by the setting on of three rounds of candies and fruits (點心). Old style means large dishes. 溜 To cut in bits or slices, cook and dress with gravy, to fricassee; in some places, to warm over again by steaming. 燒, as here used is to broil or grill on a gridiron.

LESSON CXLVIII.

SPECIAL INTENSIVES.

Oct. 14. 1920

chieh¹ 絕 To overpass,—conveys the idea of surpassing.
 chieh¹ miao⁴ 絕妙 Surpassingly excellent, most admirable.
 chieh¹ hsi⁴ 絕細 Extremely fine, or minute, or slender.
 chieh¹ mi⁴ 絕密 Extremely fine or close, delicate.
 chiao² 皎 Bright,—expresses lustre and is applied to bright colors.
 chiao² hsiang⁴ 皎黃 Bright yellow, brilliant yellow. (c.)
 chiao² tsang⁴ 皎藍 Bright blue, brilliant blue. (c.)
 tsang⁴ 蒼 Azure,—conveys the idea of lustre.
 tsang⁴ hsiang⁴ 蒼黃 Bright yellow, brilliant yellow. (s.)
 tsang⁴ hsiang⁴ 蒼白 Azure white, iron grey:—Note (22).

huo¹ 活 Alive,—conveys the idea of activity, vigor.
 huo¹ huan⁴ 活酸 Intensely sour. (s.)
 huo¹ hsiang⁴ 活腥 Very rank, intensely fishy. (s.)
 huo¹ hsiang⁴ 活羶 Very rank, intensely fetid. (s.)
 huo¹ ku⁴ 活苦 Intensely bitter, pungently bitter. (s.)
 huo¹ hsiang⁴ 喬 Lofty; curved,—expresses excess and is applied to smells.
 huo¹ hsiang⁴ 喬羶 Exceedingly rank, intensely strong or fetid. (c.)
 huo¹ hsiang⁴ 喬腥 Very rank, a strong fishy smell. (c.)
 huo¹ hsiang⁴ 喬氣息 Very rank, musky, nauseating. (c.)

去針得那如色染子他歲
 看他腳下裏山幾布還女紡
 只刮去能齊天當帶婿的
 因刮呢呢。處還時着烈惡線
 他淨再。Q少得是醜兒
 常淨做的這¹⁸若再^舉咬天個烈惡勻絲
 咳○時的一○的藍駱羅羅醜勻勻
 嗽我¹⁹候的針要古¹⁷可屢屢子一淨勻
 吐願要絕那^一說就¹⁶用大○
 痰意天密的能^掌新^四世是品黑尊¹⁵
 家天天的交齊事掉藍痲疤子

K'oo' k'af
 Souw
 t'o'
 t'ann

- 14 Look at that little girl—only nine this year, and yet the thread she spins is as even as can be!
- 15 'Tsun-tsi's husband is horribly ugly, his face is all covered with big dark pock-pits, and besides he is a hunch-back.
- 16 Cloth colored with aniline blue is bright blue at the first, but the trouble is it fades. After a few days [exposure] it has to be dyed again.
- 17 The old saying is, "Human affairs are like hills, the even places are rare." If you are determined to secure entire uniformity you will certainly fail.
- 18 How can I deliver such sewing as this? The next time you must take very fine stitches, making them firm and smooth.
- 19 I should like to go and see him every day, but that he is constantly

臊 Sao¹. Rank; fetid,—as the smell of perspiration or of urine; reeking, stinking. See sao⁴.
 羶 Shan¹. Rank, fetid,—as the smell of goats or sheep; noisome.
 腥 Hsing¹. Rank, strong,—as the smell of fish or flesh.
 6 掌秤 Chang³ ch'eng⁴. To superintend weighing, to weigh.
 8 金雞納 Chin¹ chi¹ na⁴. Cinchona.
 8 金雞納霜 Chin¹ chi¹ na⁴ shwang¹. Quinine.
 9 大衫 Ta⁴ shan¹. An unlined coat or gown.
 4 搥 Sai¹. To shake, to wave, to flutter.
 7 飄搥 P'iao¹ sai¹. Graceful, airy, jaunty.
 7 飄灑 P'iao¹ sa³. The same.
 11 裁刀 Ts'ai² tao¹. A knife for paring the edge of books, or for cutting paper.
 11 切刀 Ch'ie¹ tao¹. The same.
 13 糕 Kao¹. Rice dumplings; fruit jelly or jam; sponge or other similar cakes.
 15 秈 Hsien¹. Common rice. (s.)

米 Hsien¹ mi³. The same.
 勻 Yün² ching⁴. Uniform, even.
 羅子 Lo² kwō¹ tsi³. A humpback.
 羅鍋腰 Lo² kwō¹ yao¹. The same.
 駱駝腰 Lo² t'ō² yao¹. The same.
 品藍 P'in³ lan². Aniline blue.
 掉色 Tiao⁴ shai³. To lose color, to fade.
 針脚 Chên¹ chiao³. Stitches.
 刮淨 Kwa¹ ching⁴. Even, smooth.
 氣息 Ch'i⁴ hsi². The smell of urine; rank, strong, stinking, fusty.
 尿 Niao⁴. To urinate; urine.
 尿罐子 Niao⁴ kwan⁴ tsi³. A chamber utensil, a urinal.
 馬桶 Ma³ t'ung³. A chamber utensil, a commode.
 頂棚 Ting³ p'eng³. A ceiling:—Note (21).
 虛棚 Hsü¹ p'eng². The same. (c.)
 仰板 Yang³ pan³. The same. (s.)

NOTES.

4 The using of both 告訴 and 叫 is somewhat redundant, though adding to the explicitness of the order given.
 8 Chinanfu rejects all of the three forms in the text and says 喬苦.

9 It is popularly supposed by the Chinese that eating too much salt will cause coughs and asthma.
 10 In many places in Central and Northern Mandarin 飄灑 is spoken p'iao sai, and on this account is oftentimes

四 罕 人 螫 子 牀 快 多 就 腥 齋 齋
 百 他 就 的 從 上 拿 少 熏 氣
 里 走 是 生 仰 虛 頂 似 睡 去 日 的 息
 路 得 看 疼 板 榻 榻 不 洗 刷 子 惡 所
 穩 中 一 夜 上 掉 在 的 時 候 有 個 大 喝
 跑 得 又 快 一 天 能 跑 希 大 我

coughing and expectorating, which gives the room such a rank smell that I dare not go in. Whenever I go in, the smell nauseates me, so that I feel like vomiting.
 20 This chamber utensil has not been washed for ever so many days so that it has a very offensive smell. Take it out at once and wash it.
 21 Last night when I was lying on the bed dozing, a large scorpion fell down from the ceiling on my face and stung me, causing such a severe pain that the whole night I did not sleep.
 22 His Excellency Mr. Wang is specially pleased with that iron-grey horse belonging to the Li family. He is taken with its easy gait and its great speed, which is equal to four hundred li in a day.

written 飄摠. Some teachers adhere to 灑 but give it a second reading when meaning to sprinkle, viz., Sai³ or shai³, which in fact is its original reading.

13 所以不黏, the therefore of its not being glutinous; that is, the reason why it is not glutinous.

14 人家, as here used, could only be translated into English by using the name of the person for which it is a substitute.

15 女婿 is here used for husband, being taken from the standpoint of the mother-in-law, just as a man's wife is so generally called his daughter-in-law.

16 Aniline colors are extensively used in China, but the Chinese have not yet learned the art of so using them as to make fast colors.

18 那能交得下去呢, the language of an employer to an employe and may mean either, How can I deliver such sewing to my customers, or, How can you deliver such sewing to me.

21 The Chinese do not generally ceil their houses, and when in the case of a more pretentious house they do make a ceiling, it is usually paper pasted on a light frame of bamboo, cane or sorghum stalks. In some cases boards are used, either nailed on the undersides of the rafters, or on the joists of the second floor. In the North such ceilings are usually called 天花板. The term 仰板 is used either of a board ceiling, or of a second floor as seen from below. 虛棚 applies to a light paper ceiling enclosing a triangular space between itself and the roof. Besides the three terms here given, there is also the term 仰棚, which is widely used. Chinese houses know nothing of plastered ceilings.

23 似睡不睡, as if asleep but not asleep, that is, half asleep, dozing.

22 蒼白 Azure white; that is, in the case of a horse, iron grey. As thus used, 蒼 modifies the meaning rather than intensifies it.

Oct. 15, 1920

LESSON CXLIX.

SPECIAL INTENSIVES.

As the intensives in this lesson are each confined to one or two applications they are not separately defined. The special force of each intensive is indicated, as far as may be, by the first definition in each combination, which is approximately literal.

雪白 Snow white, immaculate white.
 漂白 Bleached white, pure white, clear white.
 滾熱 Boiling hot, scalding hot,—said even of solid things,—as cakes.
 鬆臭 A rotten smell or stench, stinking, putrescent. (c.)
 Sung' ch'ou⁴

罄淨 Entirely exhausted, all gone, used up.
 漆黑 Black as varnish, black as ebony, jet black, shining black. (c. & n.)
 烏黑 Black as a raven or crow. (c. & s.)
 墨黑 Black as ink, jet black. (c. & s.)
 啊熱 Oppressively hot, stifling. (c.)
 悶熱 Oppressively hot, very close, stifling.
 澈白 Transparently white, pure white. (s.)
 淹濕 Soaking wet, dripping wet. (c.)
 漬濕 Soaking wet, wringing wet. (s.)
 漬酸 A yeasty sour, intensely sour. (s.)

一 百 ○ 好 這 順 筆 喇 片 布 血
 薙 里 別 體 蘋 直 怎 菸 匠 紫
 把 路 看 面 果 的 麼 一 漂 的 袍
 鬍 我 我 涼 聞 大 還 點 的 的 子
 子 先 這 菜 着 路 不 不 的 布 子
 刮 把 個 就 是 是 揭 能 是 是 絞
 一 刀 驢 是 攔 噴 下 貼 掉 雪 黃
 刮 子 子 的 攔 香 天 下 秤 掉 白 的
 好 子 小 的 醋 氣 這 呢 你 的 套
 上 走 的 蒜 的 樣 這 樣 打 的 褲
 丈 的 却 多 在 燥 條 的 紙 的 很
 人 風 了 在 熱 路 的 殼 子 進 合
 家 快 弄 嘴 怕 一 點 響 乾 時
 吃 的 弄 裏 是 要 點 響 乾 派
 酒 的 弄 裏 是 要 點 響 乾 派
 啊 的 弄 裏 是 要 點 響 乾 派
 ○ 你 把 天 能 走 二 辣 ○
 做 頭 走 二 辣 ○

over ten days, so that all the fuel is soaking wet.
 10 That school-boy has on a deep purple coat and bright yellow leggings, exactly in the fashion.
 11 The cloth bleached by the fullers of Ch'ang-i is white as snow. Nothing could be finer.
 12 Perfectly dry leaf tobacco from the Southern Hills. Loss of weight is quite impossible.
 13 The pasteboard you made is already fully dry. Why have you not taken it down?
 14 There is not the least turn in this road. It is a perfectly straight highway.
 15 I fear it is going to rain, the weather is so scorching hot.
 16 This apple has a very fragrant smell, and it is also very sweet to the taste.
 17 This is a very fine salad, save that they have put in too much vinegar and garlic making it fearfully sour and sharp.
 18 Don't be misled by the small size of this donkey of mine, he is as fleet as the wind, he can travel two hundred li in a day.
 19 When I have stropped the razor to a keen edge, I will shave your head and

VOCABULARY.

- 11 漂 P'iao³.....To bleach, to whiten by bleaching.
- 澈 Ch'è⁴.....Pellucid, clear.
- 絳 Chiang⁴.....A deep red, crimson.
- 喇 Hsiang³.....An abbreviated writing of 響.
- 15 燥 Tsao⁴.....Dry, scorched, parched.
- 6 噴 P'èn¹.....To spurt, to spread as an odor.
- 緋 Fei¹.....Purple silk; lilac color, scarlet.
- 漬 Chi⁴.....Soaked, soggy, moldy, stained.
- 8 粉紅 Fèn³ hung²...Pale red, pink:—Note (8).
- 8 水紅 Shui³ hung².....The same.
- 10 紫 Tsi³.....Purple, purplish yellow.
- 12 套褲 T'ao⁴ k'u⁴.....Leggings, overalls.
- 12 時派 Shi² p'ai⁴. The prevailing fashion, the mode.
- 11 漂布匠 P'iao³ pu⁴ chiang⁴. A bleacher, a fuller.
- 12 片菸 P'ien⁴ yen¹. Leaf tobacco pressed in flat bunches.

- 邑 I⁴.....A walled city; a camp; a capital.
- 掉秤 Tiao⁴ ch'êng⁴.....To lose weight. 12
- 賸秤 Shè² ch'êng⁴.....To lose weight. 12
- 裱 Piao³. To paste on, to mount as maps or pictures. 13
- 殼 Ch'io⁴, Ch'üè⁴. Husk; skin; bark; shell; crust. 13
- 紙殼子 Chi³ ch'io⁴ tsi³.....Pasteboard. 13
- 彎轉 Wan¹ chwan³. Crooked, tortuous, round about, a turn. 14
- 涼菜 Liang² ts'ai⁴.....A vegetable salad. 17
- 鋒 Fêng¹. The point of a spear, the tip; bristling; a keen edge. 18
- 蒜 Swan⁴.....Garlic. 17
- 辣 La⁴.....Acrid, pungent, sharp, hot; severe. 17
- 拿準 Na² chun³. To take accurate aim, to go straight to the mark; correct, unerring.

必得做的四筆直纔好，多少有點彎彎，就不拿準喇。○他們兄弟兩個，大不一樣，一個是漆黑，一個是雪白，真是——

生九種。○這些柿子沒透，咬在嘴裏，活巴剌的。○亞非利加人，雖然皮色烏黑，他自己仍然以為好看。○無論是做素菜，是做葷菜，淡了固然不好，鹹也是不好。○昨天來家，走了十里路的夜道，天又陰的漆黑，對面不見人，伸手不見掌，把我跌了好幾個跟頭。○雙子那個閨女，實在慚愧，一提起他女婿來，把他羞的滿臉緋紅。○我看見王三扯了一個馬褂子面兒，纔七十二個錢一尺，那個褶襠是挺厚的，色是顯天青的，老遠看着，真和哈喇一樣。

how husband
needed?
fe
bri
li

- 20 An arrow should be made straight as a line. If it is warped in the very least, it will not fly straight.
- 21 They two brothers are entirely different, one very swarthy and the other very fair. How true it is that "one mother gives birth to many kinds."
- 22 These persimmons are not fully cured. They have a very astringent taste.
- 23 Although the color of the African's skin is jet black, yet he himself still thinks it beautiful.
- 24 No matter whether you are cooking vegetables or meats, it is, of course, not good to make them too fresh, nor is it good to make them very salt.
- 25 In coming home last night I came ten li after dark. It was cloudy and dark as Egypt; you couldn't see a man before you nor a hand before your face. The result was that I got several tumbles by the way.
- 26 That little maiden, Shwang-tsü, is exceedingly bashful. The simple mention of her [intended] husband makes her blush scarlet.
- 27 I saw the stuff which Wang the third has just bought for a short coat at only seventy-two cash per foot: the drilling is very thick and of a glossy blue-black color; from a distance it looks just like broadcloth.

- 21 百般 *Pai³ pan¹*. Many kinds, every kind, multifarious, various.
- 22 柿 *Shi⁴*. The persimmon, or China fig.
- 22 溇 *Lan⁸*. To pickle fruits in brine; to ripen by steeping in hot water:—Note (22).
- 22 澀 *Shé⁴, Sé⁴*. Rough, harsh; astringent.
- 23 亞非利加 *Ya⁴ fei¹ li⁴ chia¹*. Africa.

- 葷 *Hun¹*. Cooked meats; dishes avoided by those who fast.
- 素菜 *Su⁴ ts'ai⁴*. Vegetable dishes, vegetable food:—Note (24).
- 葷菜 *Hun¹ ts'ai⁴*. Vegetables cooked with meat:—Note (24).

NOTES.

3 Chinesefu rejects all of the three forms in the text, and says 喬臭.
 8 粉紅 means white and red mixed; that is, pale red or pink, so that in this case 粉 modifies rather than intensifies the meaning.
 10 絳紫, scarlet purple seems a confusion or contradiction of terms, but it must be remembered that both terms are somewhat vague. 血紫. The Chinese take venous not arterial blood as the standard, and so say blood purple.
 11 昌邑 A district city in Shantung, between Lai-chow and Wei-hsien.

12 南山 is said to be a range of hills in the prefecture of 台州 in Manchuria, which produces on its sides an extra fine quality of tobacco.
 13 Pasteboard is made straight and smooth by being pasted against a board or a wall, and left there to dry.
 16 The Chinese have no generic name for apple, but a specific name for each variety of apple. Foreign apples are usually called 蘋果, because they outwardly resemble this variety more than they do any other.
 21 一母生百般 is a common phrase to express the idea that the children of the same parents are often very

課十五百一第

LESSON CL.

人、誰散不開。○你¹³我是孤身在外，只恐有錯。
 一條，他是兼管一切。○人¹²生在世，惟夫妻二
 看書不獨消閒，而且又長學問。○我¹¹是專管
 招。○他⁹一個去，叫我不放心。○禍⁸無門，惟人自
 自。○一個去，叫我不放心。○禍⁸無門，惟人自
 國有一種牙醫生，專門給人收拾牙。○你⁷獨
 呢。○人⁵總得講理，不可一味的使鬧脾氣。○西⁶
 老婆。○別⁴人都肯了，獨獨你不肯，是為甚麼
 能自己獨得了。○催³晃任誰不怕，惟獨怕他
 天¹下惟有理可以服人。○大²家的東西，你不

- 1 Right is the only thing in the world that commands universal assent.
- 2 You cannot appropriate to yourself alone what belongs to the whole company.
- 3 Ts'ui Mien does not fear anybody at all, except his wife.
- 4 Everybody else is willing, how is it that you alone are unwilling?
- 5 A man should be reasonable, and not give loose rein to his own idiosyncrasies.
- 6 There is in the West a class of [men called] dentists who make a special business of repairing teeth for people.
- 7 I am afraid to have you go all alone.
- 8 Calamities and blessings are conditioned entirely on a man's own actions.
- 9 He has done nothing all his life but manage lawsuits.
- 10 Reading not only whiles away time, it also advances one's scholarship.
- 11 I give my attention all to one thing; he has the whole under his control.
- 12 According to the constitution of human society, it is only husband and wife who are inseparable.

different, both in character and appearance. 一龍生九種 is another phrase for expressing the same idea. Its derivation is uncertain.

22 Persimmons are plucked before they are quite ripe, and are cured by steeping them in warm water. This brings out the yellow color and takes away the astringent taste. Chinanfu rejects all of the three forms in the text and says 喬澀.

24 素菜, vegetables cooked alone without meat, fish or animal oil. 葷菜, meats, including eggs, fish and animal oils, together with strong smelling vegetables, as onions and garlic. 菜 is often used alone to include all admixtures of both. This distinction of 素 and 葷 is made by the Buddhists, who make merit by abstaining from 葷.

LESSON CL.

RESTRICTIVE PARTICLES AND PHRASES. 專^{chuan} 專^{chuan} 專^{chuan}

This lesson may be regarded as a continuation and completion of Lesson 49.

惟 Only, but, sole, except,—a book word, but often used in colloquial, especially when joined with 獨.

獨 Alone, only, specially,—often doubled for emphasis.

惟獨 But, only, save, except, sole.

一味的 Simply, with one single purpose, always:—Note (5).

專^{chuan} Special, wholly, with all the mind, intent.

專門 Specially, wholly, solely.

專一 Solely, wholly, undividedly, merely.

獨自一個 or 獨自一個 By oneself, all alone.

孤 Alone, single, solitary.

就是 Is not unfrequently so used as to take the place of 惟 or 獨, as in (14), (16).

什麼、怎麼獨獨叫你老人家、
 般、惟獨我的兄弟、乃是前世的冤家。
 和、項羽的眼睛、是兩個瞳人。
 自己獨出心裁。○平常人的眼睛、都是一個瞳人、惟有舜
 可以先去領教領教那些年高的人、然後再下手辦、不可
 呢、^答能者多勞、先生既然能事、所以獨獨來找先生。
 歲的一個孩子。○這是合會的事情、你怎麼獨獨來找我
 丁的、去年八月害癘亂病、十口人死了九口、就是剩了六
 要精於那一樣、必得專一學那一樣。○我莊上有一家姓
 ○別的他都不要、就是想枇杷吃。○不論是手藝、是學問、

- 13 You and I are abroad alone, and the danger is that we may make some mistake.
- 14 He longs for some bibos to eat, but wants nothing else.
- 15 In whatever you would be proficient, whether handicraft or learning, you must give it undivided attention.
- 16 There was a family by the name of Ting in our village, who took cholera last year in the eighth month, and of a family of ten, nine died leaving only one, a child six years old.
- 17 This matter belongs to the whole society, why do you specially come to me about it? Ans. "The capable man has most to do." Since you, sir, have the ability therefore we come specially to you.
- 18 Go first and learn awhile of those who are older, and only after doing this undertake the management yourself; you must not attempt to strike out independently.
- 19 Ordinary people's eyes have only one pupil, but Shun's and Hsiang Yü's eyes had each two pupils.
- 20 Other people's brothers are like hands and feet to them, but my brother is a born enemy.
- 21 What are all the young people doing, that they send you, aged sir, tottering along?
- 22 If you always forbear with him, he

VOCABULARY.

- 獨 *Tu*². Solitary, alone; by oneself, single; widowed; only, yet:—see Sub.
- 2 崔 *Ts'ui*¹. A high mountain; a surname.
- 1 冕 *Mien*³. A crown, a coronet.
- 5 講理 *Chiang*³ *li*³. To discuss the merits of a matter, to be reasonable.
- 5 鬧脾氣 *Nao*⁴ *p'i*² *ch'i*⁴. To indulge one's peculiar disposition, to give rein to one's special idiosyncrasies; to act contrarily.
- 5 使脾氣 *Shi*³ *p'i*² *ch'i*⁴. The same.
- 2 撥弄 *Poa*¹ *lung*⁴. To manage, to manipulate; to stir up; to foment.
- 10 遣 *Ch'ien*³. To commission, to send; to let go.

- 消遣 *Hsiao*¹ *ch'ien*³. To seek amusement, to while away time, to saunter about, to dissipate care.
- 10 消閒 *Hsiao*¹ *hsien*². The same.
- 兼 *Chien*¹. To include, to embrace; along with; together with; equally; connected.
- 離散 *Li*² *san*⁴. To separate, to go apart, to scat- ter; to become estranged.
- 孤身 *Ku*¹ *shên*¹. Alone, solitary.
- 枇杷 *P'i*² *pa*¹. The bibo or biwa, a common fruit in Central China.
- 13 領教 *Ling*³ *chiao*⁴. To receive instruction, to learn from, to take lessons from; I am much obliged (for the information).

都不嫁，偏偏嫁了一個戲子。這希奇不希奇呢。
 女人有天生下賤的，聽說上海有個婊子，連一位巡撫他
 奉的神，大概是在廟裏敬拜，惟有竈君是在家裏敬拜。
 着理直氣壯，不受他欺負，所以纔鬧大攤喇。中國所事
 些人，獨獨不他兒子。他是欺負我孤門獨戶，我就仗
 們先生太不公道，明是他兒子領頭惹了禍，他却打了這
 然他在世俗上，也做些好事，還不許是專為務名嗎。○咱
 完了詩，都躺下安歇，惟獨亞伯思想父親，睡不安穩。○衆人
 邊買賣，他們都不錯，惟獨我沒落下一個大錢。○衆人唱
 味的忍耐他，他倒以為你是無能，就越發欺負你喇。○這

will regard you as of no account (a soft-head), and will all the more insult you.

- 23 They all came out fairly well in this speculation save myself, and I did not realize a cash.
- 24 When the company had finished singing, they all lay down to sleep; but Abel kept thinking of his father and did not sleep soundly.
- 25 Although in the eyes of the world he has done some praiseworthy things, yet may they not have been done merely for the sake of a good name?
- 26 Our teacher is too unjust. It was clearly his son who took the lead in stirring up the trouble, yet he whipped all the others but never touched him.
- 27 He presumed to insult me because we are but a single family; while I, standing on the justice of my cause, refused to submit to his insults; hence it is that the strife has become so serious.
- 28 The gods served in China are for the most part worshipped in temples, but the Kitchen God is worshipped at home.
- 29 Some women are base by nature. I have heard that there was a prostitute at Shanghai who would not marry even a governor, but insisted on marrying an actor. Was not that very remarkable?

- 18 年高 Nien² kao¹. Old men, men of experience, elders.
- 19 瞳 T'ung². The pupil of the eye; the image reflected in the pupil.
- 19 瞳人 T'ung² jèn². The same.
- 19 羽 Yü³. Wings, plumes, feathers.
- 20 前世 Ch'ien² shi⁴. A former life, a previous state of existence.
- 21 磕磕絆絆 K'oa¹ pan⁴. Trembling, tottering from age.
- 22 戰戰兢兢 Chan⁴ k'oa¹. The same.
- 22 撒 Sou³. To shake; to arouse.
- 22 抖撒 Tou³ sou³. To shake, to tremble; to shiver, to quake; to arouse.
- 23 無能 Wu² neng². Impotent; inefficient; weak, good-for-nothing, of no account.

- 膿包 Nung² pao¹. A silly fool (lit., a bag of pus), a lackbrain, a soft-head. (s.)
- 領頭 Ling³ t'ou². To lead the way, to take the lead, to go ahead.
- 大發 Ta⁴ fa¹. Grave, serious, important.
- 大攤 Ta⁴ t'an¹. The same. (s.)
- 敬拜 Ching⁴ pai⁴. To reverence, to worship.
- 竈王 Tsao⁴ wang². The Kitchen God:—Note (28).
- 竈君 Tsao⁴ chün¹. The same.
- 下賤 Hsia⁴ chien⁴. Base, mean, low, vicious, depraved.
- 婊 Piao³. A prostitute, a harlot.
- 戲子 Hsi⁴ tsi³. An actor, a comedian.

第一百五十一課

LESSON CLI.

他¹的便宜，豈肯叫人得呢。²自
 己不正，焉能正人。³這等喪良^{low}
 心的錢，豈能長久嗎。⁴既在矮^{low}
 檐下，焉敢不低頭。⁵叔既不去，
 去哥哥與兄弟，難道也不去嗎。
 ○你⁶這婦人，焉知不能救丈夫
 呢。⁷百姓都安安靜靜的，豈不
 快活嗎。⁸你也太多疑，難道一
 個聖旨，敢傳假的。⁹蛟龍豈是
 池中物。¹⁰我給先生代勞行不

- 1 Will he allow any one to get the advantage of him ?
- 2 How can a man correct others who is not himself correct? [ing?]
- 3 Can this kind of dishonest gain be last-
- 4 Since I am under authority, how dare I do otherwise than submit ?
- 5 Seeing you, uncle, will not go, is it possible that my brothers will also refuse to go ?
- 6 How do you, who are a wife, know that you cannot save your husband ?
- 7 Is it not delightful when the people are all quiet and peaceable ?
- 8 You are too suspicious. Do you think any one would dare proclaim a false Imperial Edict ?
- 9 Is a dragon to be found in a fish-tank ?
- 10 How would it be for me to take your

NOTES.

5 一味的, *one taste*; that is, holding on persistently and without consideration to one idea.

8 A piece of Taoist moralizing in the book style, but constantly in the mouths of Chinese religionists.

11 兼 is a book term, not often used in Mandarin.

12 人生在世 *As man exists in this world*,—a common phrase, but difficult to translate. 夫妻 In Mandarin neither of these words is ordinarily used alone for husband or wife, but when joined together they form a common and easily understood term.

17 能者多勞, a proverbial phrase in book style, meaning that the services of the man who has ability are always most in demand.

18 領教那些年高的人 is equivalent to 領那些年高的人的教. The 領教 is used as if it were a single transitive verb. It is rather to be regarded as a passive,—to be instructed by. 獨出心裁, to proceed alone and devise a plan; that is, to ignore the advice and the precedents of others and strike out for oneself, to act independently.

20 前世的冤家, *an enemy from a previous state of existence, a transmigrated or prenatal enemy.*

21 獨 is not specially represented in the translation. It implies that there was a purpose in sending the old man, and that it was unbecoming in the circumstances.

27 理直氣壯, *when the cause is right the courage is strong.* The phrase is here appropriated and used as a whole, with the meaning given in the translation. 孤門獨戶, *lone gate and single door*; that is, a single family living in a neighborhood where it has no relatives. The Chinese depend very much for protection on their relatives. A single family living alone feels weak.

28 竈王 or 竈君 or 竈神 is one of the most ancient of Chinese gods. His picture is pasted over the cooking range, and he is worshipped by every family at stated times, especially on the twenty-third of the last month when he ascends to heaven to make his annual report to 玉皇上帝, and on the last day of the year when he returns to his former place. He is the special patron god of the family. There are no temples built to him. There are various accounts of his origin. One of the most rational, though not the most popular, is that he was at first a man named Chan (mispronounced Tan) Tsi Kwoā 禪子郭 who invented fire by rubbing sticks together, and was hence regarded as a god and deified as the Kitchen God.

LESSON CLI.

SPECIAL INTERROGATIVES.

19 Oct. 1920

豈 A direct interrogative particle, always expressing more or less of surprise or impatience. It stands at the beginning of a clause and expects a negative answer, unless a negative is included in the question, when it of course expects an affirmative answer. The clause or sentence beginning with 豈 sometimes ends with 嗎, sometimes with

呢, and sometimes without either 嗎 or 呢. There is no rule as to which shall be used in a given case, and the choice seems to be left largely to the fancy of the writer or speaker. As 豈 asks a direct question the concluding word ought to be 嗎. 豈 is sometimes translated *how* or *why*, but incorrectly as it is properly the sign of a direct question.

豈有此理。○事情既¹⁹然定了局，你又反復了，這豈
 娘，本不願意給于五的兒子作媒的，硬強作主，真
 有八十歲，難道六十多歲還生產嗎？○王三的姑
 豈不知道嗎？○那女子只好十八九歲，這婆子倒
 膽，焉敢屢次擋¹⁷勸兵。○這原是¹⁶我一生的毛病，我
 難，我豈有不救你之理。○趙子龍若非全身都是
 不自己打算自己的呢。○你是¹⁴我的恩人，你今有
 的，豈不好嗎？○他們既然凡事都外着我，我焉得
 焉有君替臣死的道理呢。○你¹²我彼此恭敬敬
 行，答好說，豈不敢勞駕。○亘¹¹古以來，只有臣替君死，

place? Ans. You are very kind, but I could not think of troubling you.
 11 From ancient times it has only been known that a minister has given his life for his prince; what reason would there be in a prince giving his life for his minister?
 12 Is it not the proper thing for us to treat each other with mutual respect?
 13 Since they ignore me in everything, why should I not look out for myself?
 14 You are my benefactor, and now that you are in trouble can I do otherwise than help you?
 15 If Chao Ts'i Lung were not the very embodiment of courage, would he dare repeatedly to withstand the soldiers of Ts'ao?
 16 I know quite well that this has been a life-long fault of mine.
 17 That young woman cannot be over eighteen or nineteen while this woman is fully eighty; can a woman of over sixty bear children?
 18 Wang the third was from the first unwilling to give his daughter to Yü the fifth's son, but the middleman took it into his own hands and settled it. Nothing could be more unreasonable.
 19 After the terms are fully settled you

難道 It is hard to say, how can you say, you don't mean to say, is it so?—an interrogative form used both in colloquial and in books. It expresses a strong presumption on the part of the speaker.
 焉 How, why,—an indirect interrogative particle, generally used to express a strong affirma-

tion. It stands at the beginning of a clause, and is generally used in connection with the following words, viz., 能, 敢, 知, 有, 得, which are arranged in the order of the frequency of their use. 焉 is primarily a book word, but is often used in Mandarin.

VOCABULARY.

- 豈 Ch'í. A direct interrogative particle:—see Sub. Also k'ai³.
- 焉 Yen¹. A final affirmative particle in Wên-li; an initial interrogative particle meaning, how, why:—see Sub.
- 3 長久 Ch'ang² chiu³. Continual, permanent, lasting.
- 4 低頭 Ti¹ t'ou². To lower the head, to stoop; to yield, to submit.
- 5 多疑 Tod¹ í². To be suspicious.
- 8 聖旨 Shêng⁴ chí³. An imperial edict; the holy will or purpose of God.

- 代勞 Tai⁴ lao². To fill the office or perform the work of another.
- 蛟 Chiao¹. A dragon with scales:—Note (9).
- 亘 Kên⁴. A limit, the extreme point; universal.
- 亘古 Kên⁴ ku³. Of old, from the earliest times; antiquity.
- 恩人 Ên¹ jên². A benefactor, a saviour.
- 一生 I¹ Shêng¹. A life time, the whole life.
- 生產 Shêng¹ ch'an³. To give birth to; to bring forth, to bear.
- 豈有此理 Ch'í³ yu³ ts'í³ lí³. Is it reasonable? is it possible? outrageous, out of the question.

你怎麼不讓別人看呢。^答就是公用的書，也有個先來後
 是不符前言，豈不成了匹夫了嗎。○那是一部公用的書，若
 夫子說未知生焉知死。○咱們說話再不能不符前言。若
 的道理，孔夫子說未能事人焉能事鬼，又問死的道理，孔
 的身子，既然沒有殘疾，豈不當知足嗎。○子路問事鬼神
 了，把銀子昧下了。○你看那個癩子，走路多麼累贅，我們
 太豈有此理了，人家託他帶的銀子和信，他竟是把信燒
 是口是心非，我是心口如一，豈不強過他們嗎。○楊老四
 和姓李的，沒有苟且之事，姓李的焉敢來搶他呢。○他們
 算是大丈夫嗎。○你想明明的乾坤，朗朗的世界，若是他

turn round and rue the bargain. Do you consider this manly?
 20 If she had had no illicit intrigue with the man Li, do you think he would dare to come in the face of divine and human law and carry her off?
 21 Their words are good, but their intentions are evil. My words and intentions are alike. Am I not better than they?
 22 Yang the fourth is too outrageous for anything. Some one sent some money and a letter by him, when, behold, he burned the letter and used the money.
 23 Look at that lame man, how laboriously he walks. Since our bodies are free from deformity, should we not be content with our lot?
 24 When Tsi Lu asked about serving the gods, Confucius said, "While you are not able to serve men how can you serve the gods?" He also asked concerning death, to which Confucius replied, "While you do not understand life how can you understand death?"
 25 We will not fail to abide by what we have said. He who does not keep his word debases himself.
 26 That is a book for public use, why is it that you will not allow anyone else to see it? Ans. Even if it is for public use, still "first come first served." When I am just in the midst of reading it must I give way and let him see it first?

- 20 坤 *K'un*¹. Obedient; earth; the moon; a wife, female.
- 20 乾坤 *Ch'ien*² *k'un*¹. Heaven and earth, the cosmos; natural reason; male and female.
- 10 苟 *Kou*³. If; illicit, adulterous; careless, inconsiderate.
- 20 苟且 *Kou*³ *ch'ie*³. Illicit intercourse, intrigue; careless, reckless.
- 11 昧 *Mei*¹. Dark, obscure; to suppress; to embezzle, to appropriate.
- 13 癩 *Ch'üe*². Lame; to limp, to halt.
- 13 累贅 *Lei*¹ *Chui*¹. Troublesome, laborious, embarrassing; tedious, repetitious:—Note (23).
- 12 知足 *Chi*¹ *tsu*². Satisfied, content.
- 25 符前言 *Fu*² *ch'ien*² *yen*². To fulfil a promise, to keep one's word.

- 25 匹 *P'i*³. A mate; mean, vulgar. See *p'i*¹.
- 25 匹夫 *P'i*³ *fu*¹. A common man, a plebian; a base fellow, a mean-spirited man.
- 21 公用 *Kung*¹ *ying*⁴. Common property; for public or general use.
- 21 供 *Kung*⁴. To place before, to offer; to support, to supply; offerings. See *kung*¹.
- 21 獻 *Hsien*⁴. To offer in worship; to present to a superior, to hand up to.
- 21 供獻 Offerings; sacrifices.
- 21 上供 *Shang*⁴ *kung*⁴. To present offerings, to worship with an offering.
- 長命 *Ch'ang*² *ming*⁴. Long-lived, to live to old age.
- 短命 *Twan*³ *ming*⁴. Short-lived, to die prematurely.

就沒一個短命的嗎。
 現做和尚道士的，個個都是活七八十歲。
 佛爺腳下，就長命了，我且問你，難道這些
 捨在廟裏，做了和尚道士，以為出了家，在
 28 更²⁸有把自己好兒好女，怕他養活不大，
 惱你，降禍於你，這神佛也是一個小人了。
 就保護你，若是不與他燒錢上供，神佛就
 既是一個神佛，豈有貪圖你的元寶供獻
 看嗎。27 你想想，從來說聰明正直的為神，
 到，難道我正看着的時候，還必得讓他先

27 Consider how it has long been said, "That is divine which is both wise and upright." Seeing he is a divine Buddha will he covet your silver and your offerings and so protect you? If, because you do not burn paper and make offerings to him, he is angry with you and sends misfortune on you, this divine Buddha is nothing but a base fellow.

28 There are still others who, fearing that their sons and daughters may not live to adult age, take them to the temples and devote them to the Buddhist or Taoist priesthood, supposing that by abjuring family ties and sitting at the feet of Buddha they will secure long life. I would ask such, is it a fact that all who have become priests have lived to be seventy or eighty years old and not one has been short-lived?

NOTES.

2 Notice how 正 is first an adjective, then a verb.

3 喪良心, to lose the conscience, to become callous to the claims of right and justice. 喪良心的錢 is money obtained by shamefully dishonest means.

4 Or, The circumstances being such as they are, how can I do otherwise than acquiesce. Lit. Since I am under the low eaves how can I refuse to bow my head?

8 This sentence stands in the Fortunate Union without any final particle, but according to the genius of the spoken language it ought to have a 嗎. It is not uncommon for writers of books to omit colloquial particles for the sake of brevity or of dignity.

9 It is uncertain whether 蛟 and 龍 should here be regarded as distinct animals, or 蛟 be regarded as defining the species of 龍. The sentence is proverbial, and used as a figure.

13 外 is here used as a verb.

15 趙子龍, one of the heroes of the "Three Kingdoms," distinguished for size and beauty of person, and noted for the most daring bravery. Liu Pei is reported to have said of him, 子龍全身都是膽, Tsi Lung's whole body is gall. The gall is regarded as the seat of courage.

20 乾坤 is put for the moral restraints of the higher law, and 世界 for the legal penalties of the state; so that the whole expression, 明明的乾坤朗朗的世界, is an elegant periphrasis for divine and human law.

22 The phrase 豈有此理 is here taken as a whole, and so qualified by 太. Still greater liberties are sometimes taken with this phrase; thus we sometimes hear 豈有此理得很.

23 累贅 In this particular phrase 累 is in many places read lei.

24 子路 was one of Confucius' disciples. The record of these questions is found in the Analects. It is worthy of note that while 子路 said 鬼神, Confucius in his reply only used 鬼. He was led to this no doubt by the rhetorical necessity of only putting one word in correlation with 人. His choice of 鬼, however, implies that in this connection 鬼 includes 神. That is to say, all gods are first men and then gods, which accords with Chinese theogony, and with the prevailing sentiment of the Chinese people. The sage cleverly evaded both questions.

25 Two teachers, one from Peking and one from Shantung, fixed the readings of 符 as given in Lea, 62, viz., fu³ and fu². This proves to be incorrect, as the readings vary too much in different localities to warrant any general distinction. The fundamental reading is fu².

27 聰明正直的為神 is adapted from the words of the 左傳, which are, 神聰明正直而壹者也. It expresses the idea that the distinguishing traits in the character of a 神 are wisdom and virtue.

28 怕他養活不大. The 他 here stands for the children, and is really the object of 養活, as if the sentence read 怕養活他不大. The construction is Wen-li rather than Mandarin. Parents do not always go the length of really giving their sons to be priests, but only make a pretence of doing so by having them shave their heads and wear the usual garb of priests until grown up, when they throw off the disguise. Sometimes they give them to the priesthood conditionally for a time, and redeem them when half grown. Children devoted to the priesthood are supposed to be under the special protection of the gods and hence more likely to escape the accidents of youth, and grow up to manhood. 現 is wén for 現在.

第一五百二十二課

LESSON CLII.

你看¹這個法子怎麼樣。答
 我²看未必行得了。
 天生的性情，不一定是因為工夫不到。○要知道說好話的，
 不準³成⁴就是好人。○雖⁴是父母的心腸，也未必沒有偏向。○
 咱們的糧食，能接^{chick}上新的不能^答。我看能^接得上，借媽媽^媽却
 說不見^得其能。○不⁶必然一回還清，就是陸續^的，也無不可。
 他⁷自己可說是能行，其實到底能行不能行，也未可知。○
 每⁸課的生字，必得一般多嗎。答
 要緊，○你⁹就是背地裏有筋，若是某人在眼前，未必見^得其你
 敢說這些硬氣話罷。○現在¹⁰過了九點半鐘，怕他已經睡了，
 不見^得其能睡，他常行十點鐘纔睡覺。○天¹¹下的事情不可

- 1 What do you think of this plan? Ans. I scarcely think it will succeed.
- 2 Embarrassment springs from natural temperament, not necessarily from want of proficiency.
- 3 You ought to know that he who talks fairly is not certainly a good man.
- 4 Even the heart of a parent is not certainly free from partiality.
- 5 Will our grain hold out until the new crop comes in? Ans. I think it will hold out, but mother says she is doubtful of it.
- 6 It is not absolutely necessary to pay all at once. There is no objection to its being paid in instalments.
- 7 He himself however says it will answer, but whether after all it really will answer or not is uncertain.
- 8 Must there be the same number of new characters in each lesson? Ans. Not necessarily; a few more or a few less is not important.
- 9 You are very brave behind peoples' backs. If the party in question were present, it is doubtful if you would venture to speak so defiantly.
- 10 It is now more than half-past nine o'clock; I fear he has gone to bed. Ans. I scarcely think he has gone to bed; he does not usually retire until ten o'clock.
- 11 How things will turn out cannot be known beforehand. It is not certain

LESSON CLII.

PHRASES OF UNCERTAINTY.

^{Wei⁴} 未必 Not certainly, not necessarily, scarcely think.
 未必然 Not certain, not likely, not necessarily.
 不一定 Not certain, doubtful, contingent.
 不必 Not certainly, not likely; need not, better not.
^{chi²} 不必然 Not certainly, not necessarily.
 不準成 Not certain, not sure, not settled, problematical. [dubious].
 不見其 Not likely, scarcely think, doubtful,

不見得 The same. (s.)
 那見其 Do you suppose? You need not think, far from certain.
 那見得 The same. (s.)
 未必見其 Not very likely, doubtful, dubious.
 未必見得 The same. (s.)
 未可知 Who knows? no knowing, quite uncertain. Used at the end of a sentence to express a doubt of what has preceded.

逆料今日看着是福未必不是後日的禍今日看
 着是禍未必不是後日的禍所以只得聽天由命
 就是了。○別混加批評聖人還能有錯嗎。答這個
 也未必然。孔夫子說苟有過人必知之他既然明
 說自己有錯我們怎能說他沒有錯呢。彭¹³儒林
 那是一位道學先生不見得能做出這樣僭分的
 事來。○但¹⁴凡是個真耿直人。性體子都是急躁而性
 子急躁的人却未必都是耿直。○大¹⁵概不能是遭
 了事情必是路上被風雨阻住了。或者家中偶然
 有事沒能應時起身也未可知。○雖¹⁶說事大事小

that what seems happiness to-day may not prove misfortune to-morrow, nor that what seems misfortune to-day may not prove a blessing to-morrow. Therefore the only way is to abide the decision of fate.

- 12 Do not make hasty comments. The sage cannot make a mistake. Ans. That is not at all certain. Confucius said, "If I have any errors people are sure to know them." Seeing he himself plainly said he had errors, how can we say that he had none?
- 13 P'êng Yü Lin is an exemplary man. I scarcely believe he is capable of doing such an unwarrantable thing.
- 14 Every straightforward man has a hasty temper, but it does not follow that everyone who has a hasty temper is straightforward.
- 15 I hardly think he has met with any accident; it is most likely that he has been detained on the road by the weather, or something has unexpectedly occurred at home so that he could not start at the time appointed. Yet who knows?
- 16 Although it is said, "whether great or whether small, meeting face to face

VOCABULARY.

- ² 怯場 Ch'ie⁴ ch'ang³. Excited by the presence of spectators, embarrassed.
- ⁴ 心腸 Hsin¹ ch'ang². The heart, feelings, affections. [to one side.
- ⁴ 偏向 P'ien¹ hsiang⁴. Partial, unfair,
- ⁶ 還清 Hwan² ch'ing¹. To pay off, to pay in full.
- ⁶ 陸 Lu⁴. Dry land, terra firma; detached, in portions. Also liu⁴.
- ⁶ 陸續 Lu⁴ hsi⁴. Successively, one by one in order, in instalments.
- ⁸ 筋 Chin⁴. Strength, force, energy, muscle.
- ⁹ 硬郎 Ying⁴ lang². Muscular, vigorous; bold, defiant.
- ⁹ 漢氣 Han⁴ ch'ie⁴. Bold, manly, resolute; defiant, boastful.
- 常行 Ch'ang² hsiang². Ordinarily, commonly, usually.
- ¹¹ 逆料 Ni⁴ liao⁴. To anticipate, to know beforehand.

- 彭 P'eng². Near; numerous; a surname. /5
- 道學 Tao⁴ hsue². The science of morals, the teaching of the sages; /3 consistent, exemplary, orthodox:—Note (13).
- 僭 Chien⁴. To arrogate to oneself, to usurp, to assume. /3
- 僭分 Chien⁴ fen⁴. To usurp, to assume without authority; unwarrantable. /3
- 耿 Keng³. Bright; constant; ingenuous. /14
- 耿直 Keng³ chi². Sincere, straightforward, downright, frank, ingenuous. /14
- 性體 Hsing⁴ t'ie³. Disposition, temper, temperament, character. /14
- 應時 Ying⁴ shi². According to appointment, at the proper time. /5-
- 關係 Kwan¹ hsi¹. To concern, to have relation to, to involve; consequences, result, effect. /10
- 爽當 Shwang³ tang⁴. Prompt, quick, expeditious. /10

一到就了，但這是關係人命的事，未必見得能了的這麼爽當。
 ○我勸你別任性喇，俗語說，官斷十條路，你雖然覺得有理，那
 見其一定能贏官司呢，就是果真贏了，也是贏的你叔叔，於你
 臉上並無光彩。人總要看眼色行事，咱們若是到人家裏
 說閒話，人家的廚房，已經擺上飯了，咱們還不走，豈不耽誤人
 家吃飯嗎？人家當面雖不必說什麼，背後必說一點眼色沒有。
 ○看他說得這樣確，許是我當初聽恍惚了，也未可知。聽
 說十里舖，有一帮子和尙化緣，一定要化五十吊錢，少一吊也
 不肯聽那個說法，必是一些戒和尙，那也不一定，還不許是
 些野和尙，假粧戒和尙的樣子欺騙人嗎。

settles all;” yet it is not likely that this affair, which involves the life of a man, can be settled so quickly as this.

17 I should advise you not to be overconfident. There is a saying, “The verdict of a magistrate may take any one of ten roads.” Although you think you have right on your side, yet it is far from certain that you will gain your case; and even if you really do gain it, you are gaining it against your uncle, which will not be any credit to you.

18 One should always act with due discernment. If I go into the house of another to have a chat, and when the cook has already set out the food, still do not go, will I not interfere with their meal? Although they may not say anything to my face, yet behind my back they will surely say that I have no discernment.

19 Seeing he speaks so positively it may be that in the first instance my hearing was at fault, and yet there is no knowing.

20 I hear there is a company of Buddhist priests at the ten li village collecting money. They are determined to get fifty thousand cash and will take nothing less. Judging from the report they must be ordained priests. Ans. That is not certain. May they not be a lot of vagabond priests falsely pretending to be ordained in order to deceive people?

- 11 任性 Jên⁴ hsing⁴. Obstinate, headstrong, reckless, overconfident.
- 17 光彩 Kwang¹ ts'ai³. Glory, splendor, lustre; honor, credit.
- 17 輝 Hui¹. Glorious, refulgent, splendid.
- 17 光輝 Kwang¹ hui¹. Glory, splendor, brilliance; honor, credit.
- 17 恍惚 Hwang³. Wild, mad; fluttered, confused.
- 17 惚 Hu¹. Minute; in doubt, hesitating.
- 17 恍惚. Flurried, confused, uncertain, indistinct.
- 17 化緣 Hwa⁴ yüan². To raise a subscription for religious or charitable uses, to collect money, to levy a contribution.
- 17 粧 Chwang¹. To dress up, to adorn; to feign, to pretend, to assume a character.
- 17 假粧 Chia³ chwang¹. To pretend, to feign, to simulate falsely.
- 17 欺騙 Ch'i⁴ p'ien⁴. To cheat, to defraud, to deceive, to circumvent.

NOTES.

6 無不可 The more expanded colloquial form would be, 沒有什麼不可以處。
 7 可 is inserted to convey the idea that notwithstanding the supposed improbability, he still thinks the plan will succeed.

9 筋 strength, is here put for bravery.
 11 聽天由命 is equal to 聽天命. This sentiment, which is often heard, looks like a belief in an overruling Providence; yet in fact it amounts to little more than a belief

第一百五十三課

LESSON CLIII.

幾句笑話何至這樣翻臉。○那首詩唱得
不分親戚就動手，那如何使得呢？
○做甚麼要甚麼，爲何不經心做呢？
○身父母。○有空兒何不到我這裏走走呢。
○我的身體從何處來，怎麼就不想念你的生
等貴重。○有屬自來香，何用必大風揚。○你
我的事情與你何干。○我的身家性命，何
何人。○在家孝父母，何必遠燒香。○這
○這點事情，何足爲難。○若不是他，還有
他爲何管我的閒事。○你們的意思如何。

- 1 Why does he meddle in my private affairs?
- 2 What is your opinion?
- 3 What is there in this trifling affair that need present any difficulty?
- 4 If it is not he who else could it be?
- 5 If at home you honor your parents, what necessity is there to go great distances to burn incense?
- 6 This is my business. What concern is it of yours? [and family?]
- 7 How precious are the lives of myself
- 8 If you have musk on your person the fragrance is self-diffusing. Why take pains to stand in the wind (what need of a hurricane to spread it)?
- 9 Where did your body come from? How is it you do not keep in mind the parents who gave you birth?
- 10 Why do you not come to visit me when you have leisure?
- 11 When you are doing anything you should fix your mind upon that. Why do you not take more care?
- 12 It will never do to strike right and

in blind fate. The personality of 天 is too vague to make 命 mean anything more than fate.

13 道學先生 One who not only teaches the doctrines of the sages, but professes to practice them, and protests against the laxity of modern times.

18 人家家裡. The first 家 belongs to 人. 咱們, though translated I, is used in a general sense as equal to one, any one. 廚房 is put for cook. This figure of speech is quite common.

20 It is a common thing for priests to fix on a certain

sum which they determine to collect, apportion it among their constituents, and then insist on each man subscribing his apportioned share. A 戒和尚 is a priest who has been regularly ordained by an abbot, and has taken the vows or orders of the priesthood. He has on his head the round scars (from 8 to 12) of the burning moxa, and carries the certificate of the abbot by whom he was ordained. He is entitled to temporary entertainment in any temple in the empire, and may collect money in any of the eighteen provinces. A 野和尚 is an unordained priest who is not domiciled in any particular temple but wanders from place to place.

LESSON CLIII.

THE INTERROGATIVE PRONOUN 何.

何 is the *Wên-li* equivalent of 甚麼, but is also much used in Mandarin, especially in ready-made phrases. Of these phrases the following are the most important:—

爲何 For what,—why. 何 is often used alone in the sense of 爲何.

如何 As what,—how, what.

何如 What as,—how, what, how about, what of. Always stands at the end of a clause.

何必 Why must,—why, why should, what occasion.

何干 What concern,—what business, what connection with, what relation to.

何等 What sort,—how (much, great, etc.)

何用 What use,—why.

何足 What sufficiency,—what need, why.

何至 What extent,—how come to the point of, why.

何苦 What bitterness,—why take the trouble, what sense, what occasion.

何苦來 The same.

變着法子難爲我，於你又沒有甚麼益處，這是何苦來呢。○你²⁶ 靠²⁵ 他的手藝²⁴ 何如。○你常遊手好閒，你的父母妻子，何所倚²³ 他的學問何愁不進學呢。○看他的樣子倒不錯，但不知²² 這等學問都是時常見面的人，何用這麼多周旋²¹ 西。○咱們都是親身來了，就是了，何必又送這些東²⁰ 捨了呢。○吾兄既是親身來了，就是了，何必又送這些東¹⁹ 那個，你看這個何如。○爲何只顧報這點子仇，竟把身子¹⁸ 得去呢。○他既然不聽好話，何必儘之勸他呢。○看¹⁷ 太絮煩了，何不換首新鮮的呢。○你們自己問心，如何過¹⁶ 得去呢。○他既然不聽好話，何必儘之勸他呢。○看¹⁵ 太絮煩了，何不換首新鮮的呢。○你們自己問心，如何過¹⁴ 得去呢。○他既然不聽好話，何必儘之勸他呢。○看¹³ 太絮煩了，何不換首新鮮的呢。○你們自己問心，如何過¹² 得去呢。○他既然不聽好話，何必儘之勸他呢。○看¹¹ 太絮煩了，何不換首新鮮的呢。○你們自己問心，如何過¹⁰ 得去呢。○他既然不聽好話，何必儘之勸他呢。○看⁹ 太絮煩了，何不換首新鮮的呢。○你們自己問心，如何過⁸ 得去呢。○他既然不聽好話，何必儘之勸他呢。○看⁷ 太絮煩了，何不換首新鮮的呢。○你們自己問心，如何過⁶ 得去呢。○他既然不聽好話，何必儘之勸他呢。○看⁵ 太絮煩了，何不換首新鮮的呢。○你們自己問心，如何過⁴ 得去呢。○他既然不聽好話，何必儘之勸他呢。○看³ 太絮煩了，何不換首新鮮的呢。○你們自己問心，如何過² 得去呢。○他既然不聽好話，何必儘之勸他呢。○看¹ 太絮煩了，何不換首新鮮的呢。○你們自己問心，如何過

left without regard to friend or foe.
 13 What is there in these few playful words to warrant taking such offense?
 14 That hymn has been sung until it is worn out. Why not change to something new? [do?]
 15 Just ask yourselves, how would it ever
 16 Why persist in exhorting him seeing he will not listen to good advice?
 17 If you do not fancy that one, what do you think of this one?
 18 Why are you bent on venting this bit of spite even if it costs you your life?
 19 It is enough for you, my dear fellow, to come to see me. Why also make these presents?
 20 Why should we who are always meeting each other use so many formalities?
 21 With such scholarship as this, there should be no trouble in getting a degree?
 22 He certainly presents a good appearance, but what skill he has remains to be seen.
 23 While you continually loaf around in idleness what have your parents and family to depend upon for a living?
 24 To-day the chwang-yüan is parading the street. See how imposing the display.
 25 For him to suffer is all very well, the affair being his own, but why should you involve yourself?
 26 Your persistent effort to annoy me

VOCABULARY.

- 5 何 *Hó², Hé²*..... Which? what? how? why?
- 8 麝 *Shé⁴*..... The musk-deer, *musk*.
- 11 經心 *Ching¹ hsin¹*. With the mind; to take care, to give heed.
- 14 翻臉 *Fan¹ lien³*. To resent, to take offense, to flare up, to fly into a passion.
- 15 問心 *Wén⁴ hsin¹*. To take counsel of conscience, to ask oneself.
- 14 熟煩 *Shu² fan²* Repetitious, monotonous; worn out, humdrum, uninteresting.
- 19 親身 *Oh'in¹ shén¹*..... In person, personally.
- 旋 *Hsüan²*. To come round to the same point, to do or act in turn; then, next, quick. Also *hsüan⁴*.
- 周旋 *Chou¹ hsüan²*. To circulate, to bring about; to treat with great attention or formality.
- 多禮 *Tó² lí³*. Much ceremony, many formalities, formal.
- 狀元 *Chwang⁴ yüan²*. The highest graduate of the hanlin:—Note (24).
- 遊街 *Yu² chie¹*. To parade the street with music and banners:—Note (24).
- 轟轟烈烈 *Hung¹ lie⁴*. The din and rush of a great display; resounding, imposing, grand.
- 聲勢 *Shéng¹ shí⁴*. Parade, display; distinction, eclat; majesty, awe.

扎^{chā}線^{xiàn}又^{chā}何^{hé}難^{nán}之^{zhī}有^{yǒu}呢^{ne}。不^{bù}論^{lùn}是^{shì}搭^{dā}揀^{jiǎn}緝^{jí}搗^{dǎo}鉤^{gōu}繯^{liào}釘^{dīng}捺^{nà}以及^{yǐ}描^{miáo}畫^{huà}。
 勸^{quàn}你^{nǐ}不^{bù}必^{bì}呀^{ya}。但^{dàn}凡^{fán}磨^{mó}得^{de}開^{kāi}。也^{yě}就^{jiù}是^{shì}了^{le}。何^{hé}苦^{kǔ}認^{rèn}真^{zhēn}呢^{ne}。做^{zuò}針^{zhēn}我^{wǒ}。
 你^{nǐ}他^{tā}若^{ruò}是^{shì}不^{bù}依^{yī}我^{wǒ}。我^{wǒ}把^{bǎ}他^{tā}全^{quán}盤^{pán}子^{zi}端^{duān}出^{chū}來^{lái}。好^{hǎo}不^{bù}好^{hǎo}呢^{ne}。我^{wǒ}請^{qǐng}教^{jiào}。
 何^{hé}如^{rú}。答^{dá}。噫^{yī}。張^{zhāng}志^{zhì}達^{dá}的^{de}文^{wén}章^{zhāng}。那^{nà}能^{néng}趕^{gǎn}上^{shàng}李^{lǐ}貞^{zhēn}的^{de}呢^{ne}。我^{wǒ}請^{qǐng}教^{jiào}。
 犯^{fàn}王^{wáng}法^{fǎ}。豈^{qǐ}不^{bù}是^{shì}個^{ge}大^{dà}癡^{chī}子^{zi}嗎^{ma}。張^{zhāng}志^{zhì}達^{dá}的^{de}文^{wén}章^{zhāng}。比^{bǐ}李^{lǐ}貞^{zhēn}的^{de}。
 生^{shēng}在^{zài}太^{tài}平^{píng}無^{wú}事^{shì}的^{de}時^{shí}候^{hou}。有^{yǒu}衣^{yī}有^{yǒu}食^{shí}。何^{hé}苦^{kǔ}信^{xìn}從^{cóng}那^{nà}些^{xiē}邪^{xé}教^{jiào}。干^{gān}。
 吾^{wú}。你^{nǐ}把^{bǎ}我^{wǒ}作^{zuò}何^{hé}等^{děng}人^{ren}看^{kàn}待^{dài}。你^{nǐ}們^{mēn}百^{bǎi}姓^{xìng}。拿^{ná}着^{zhe}父^{fù}母^{mǔ}的^{de}遺^{yí}體^{tǐ}。
 爲^{wéi}他^{tā}着^{zhe}急^{jí}。○怎^{zěn}麼^{me}問^{wèn}了^{le}半^{bàn}天^{tiān}。你^{nǐ}一^{yī}味^{wèi}的^{de}吞^{tūn}吞^{tūn}吐^{tǔ}吐^{tǔ}。支^{zhī}支^{zhī}不^{bù}掉^{diào}。
 ○有^{yǒu}時^{shí}想^{xiǎng}。這^{zhè}孩^{hái}子^{zi}不^{bù}是^{shì}我^{wǒ}的^{de}。何^{hé}必^{bì}掛^{guà}念^{niàn}。然^{rán}而^{ér}到^{dào}底^{dǐ}免^{miǎn}不^{bù}掉^{diào}。

brings you no advantage. Why take all this trouble for nothing?
 27 At times I think, The child is not mine, why should I worry myself? but after all I cannot help being anxious about him.
 28 Why is it that after questioning you half a day, you do nothing but equivocate and evade? What sort of a man do you take me to be?
 29 What occasion is there for you people, bearing the body received from your parents, born in peaceful times and having clothing and food, to believe in those heretical sects and break the law? Are you not exceedingly silly?
 30 How does Chang Tsi Ta's essay compare with Li Ching's? Ans. Humph! what comparison is there between Chang Tsi Ta's and Li Ching's essays?
 31 What is your advice? If he takes issue with me, would it not be well to make the whole affair public? Ans. I would advise you not to do so. It is better to put a decent face on it if you can. What use is there in stating all the facts?
 32 What special difficulty is there in the art of sewing? Whether it be to hem, to fell, to stitch or to close up, to sew in lining, to quilt, to sew on [buttons or tapes] or to stitch [a sole], to trace, to draw, to do ornamental work or to embroider, nothing is required but a practiced hand.

- 28 吐 T'u³. To spit out; to tell, to own up; to stammer, to hesitate. See t'u³.
- 28 吞吐 T'un¹ t'u³. To hesitate, to stammer, to mumble.
- 29 信從 Hsin⁴ ts'ung². To believe in, to follow the lead of, disciple
- 29 邪教 Hsie² chiao¹. A heretical sect.
- 29 干犯 Kan¹ fan⁴. To break a law, to offend against, to trespass.

- 請教 Ch'ing³ chiao⁴. To ask for information or advice; please tell me. 31
- 全盤子 Ch'üan² p'an² tsi³. The whole affair, or business. 31
- 緝 Ch'ih¹. To pursue, to search for; to stitch. 32
- 繯 Yin⁴. To baste, to quilt. 32
- 描 Miao². To trace, to copy; to draw, to sketch. 32

NOTES.

5 This is a Confucian protest against Buddhist and Taoist worship of the gods which often leads the worshipper to go long distances to worship at the shrine of noted deities. With Confucianists, reverence for parents is the cardinal virtue.
 8 迎風站, stand in the face of the wind, that it may spread the perfume, the possession of which you wish to be known. The saying is of course used as a figure.

13 何至, why to the extent of, is somewhat bookish. 何, being derived from book language, has a tendency to ally with itself similar words and forms.
 19 吾兄, my brother, is a book term occasionally used in colloquial. It is only heard in familiar and direct address. 吾, as a pronoun, is the wén-lí equivalent of 我, and its use in Mandarin is almost confined to this term.

課四十五百一第

LESSON CLIV.

箱⁸糊¹薄²生³却⁴栢⁵用⁶那⁷下⁸來⁹外¹⁰
 子¹¹糊¹²的¹³不¹⁴毒¹⁵狠¹⁶嫂¹⁷他¹⁸裏¹⁹去²⁰起²¹雨²²說²³話²⁴罷²⁵。外²⁶
 裏²⁷的²⁸可²⁹以³⁰拿³¹出³²去³³晾³⁴一³⁵晾³⁶。外³⁷巴³⁸狠³⁹人⁴⁰用⁴¹不⁴²得⁴³。外⁴⁴
 裝⁴⁵的⁴⁶甚⁴⁷麼⁴⁸。擡⁴⁹着⁵⁰這⁵¹樣⁵²沉⁵³。外⁵⁴頭⁵⁵的⁵⁶風⁵⁷尖⁵⁸溜⁵⁹溜⁶⁰的⁶¹。請⁶²
 到⁶³家⁶⁴裏⁶⁵。外⁶⁶頭⁶⁷的⁶⁸風⁶⁹尖⁷⁰溜⁷¹溜⁷²的⁷³。請⁷⁴
 到⁷⁵家⁷⁶裏⁷⁷。外⁷⁸頭⁷⁹的⁸⁰風⁸¹尖⁸²溜⁸³溜⁸⁴的⁸⁵。請⁸⁶
 到⁸⁷家⁸⁸裏⁸⁹。外⁹⁰頭⁹¹的⁹²風⁹³尖⁹⁴溜⁹⁵溜⁹⁶的⁹⁷。請⁹⁸
 到⁹⁹家¹⁰⁰裏¹⁰¹。外¹⁰²頭¹⁰³的¹⁰⁴風¹⁰⁵尖¹⁰⁶溜¹⁰⁷溜¹⁰⁸的¹⁰⁹。請¹¹⁰
 到¹¹¹家¹¹²裏¹¹³。外¹¹⁴頭¹¹⁵的¹¹⁶風¹¹⁷尖¹¹⁸溜¹¹⁹溜¹²⁰的¹²¹。請¹²²
 到¹²³家¹²⁴裏¹²⁵。外¹²⁶頭¹²⁷的¹²⁸風¹²⁹尖¹³⁰溜¹³¹溜¹³²的¹³³。請¹³⁴
 到¹³⁵家¹³⁶裏¹³⁷。外¹³⁸頭¹³⁹的¹⁴⁰風¹⁴¹尖¹⁴²溜¹⁴³溜¹⁴⁴的¹⁴⁵。請¹⁴⁶
 到¹⁴⁷家¹⁴⁸裏¹⁴⁹。外¹⁵⁰頭¹⁵¹的¹⁵²風¹⁵³尖¹⁵⁴溜¹⁵⁵溜¹⁵⁶的¹⁵⁷。請¹⁵⁸
 到¹⁵⁹家¹⁶⁰裏¹⁶¹。外¹⁶²頭¹⁶³的¹⁶⁴風¹⁶⁵尖¹⁶⁶溜¹⁶⁷溜¹⁶⁸的¹⁶⁹。請¹⁷⁰
 到¹⁷¹家¹⁷²裏¹⁷³。外¹⁷⁴頭¹⁷⁵的¹⁷⁶風¹⁷⁷尖¹⁷⁸溜¹⁷⁹溜¹⁸⁰的¹⁸¹。請¹⁸²
 到¹⁸³家¹⁸⁴裏¹⁸⁵。外¹⁸⁶頭¹⁸⁷的¹⁸⁸風¹⁸⁹尖¹⁹⁰溜¹⁹¹溜¹⁹²的¹⁹³。請¹⁹⁴
 到¹⁹⁵家¹⁹⁶裏¹⁹⁷。外¹⁹⁸頭¹⁹⁹的²⁰⁰風²⁰¹尖²⁰²溜²⁰³溜²⁰⁴的²⁰⁵。請²⁰⁶
 到²⁰⁷家²⁰⁸裏²⁰⁹。外²¹⁰頭²¹¹的²¹²風²¹³尖²¹⁴溜²¹⁵溜²¹⁶的²¹⁷。請²¹⁸
 到²¹⁹家²²⁰裏²²¹。外²²²頭²²³的²²⁴風²²⁵尖²²⁶溜²²⁷溜²²⁸的²²⁹。請²³⁰
 到²³¹家²³²裏²³³。外²³⁴頭²³⁵的²³⁶風²³⁷尖²³⁸溜²³⁹溜²⁴⁰的²⁴¹。請²⁴²
 到²⁴³家²⁴⁴裏²⁴⁵。外²⁴⁶頭²⁴⁷的²⁴⁸風²⁴⁹尖²⁵⁰溜²⁵¹溜²⁵²的²⁵³。請²⁵⁴
 到²⁵⁵家²⁵⁶裏²⁵⁷。外²⁵⁸頭²⁵⁹的²⁶⁰風²⁶¹尖²⁶²溜²⁶³溜²⁶⁴的²⁶⁵。請²⁶⁶
 到²⁶⁷家²⁶⁸裏²⁶⁹。外²⁷⁰頭²⁷¹的²⁷²風²⁷³尖²⁷⁴溜²⁷⁵溜²⁷⁶的²⁷⁷。請²⁷⁸
 到²⁷⁹家²⁸⁰裏²⁸¹。外²⁸²頭²⁸³的²⁸⁴風²⁸⁵尖²⁸⁶溜²⁸⁷溜²⁸⁸的²⁸⁹。請²⁹⁰
 到²⁹¹家²⁹²裏²⁹³。外²⁹⁴頭²⁹⁵的²⁹⁶風²⁹⁷尖²⁹⁸溜²⁹⁹溜³⁰⁰的³⁰¹。請³⁰²
 到³⁰³家³⁰⁴裏³⁰⁵。外³⁰⁶頭³⁰⁷的³⁰⁸風³⁰⁹尖³¹⁰溜³¹¹溜³¹²的³¹³。請³¹⁴
 到³¹⁵家³¹⁶裏³¹⁷。外³¹⁸頭³¹⁹的³²⁰風³²¹尖³²²溜³²³溜³²⁴的³²⁵。請³²⁶
 到³²⁷家³²⁸裏³²⁹。外³³⁰頭³³¹的³³²風³³³尖³³⁴溜³³⁵溜³³⁶的³³⁷。請³³⁸
 到³³⁹家³⁴⁰裏³⁴¹。外³⁴²頭³⁴³的³⁴⁴風³⁴⁵尖³⁴⁶溜³⁴⁷溜³⁴⁸的³⁴⁹。請³⁵⁰
 到³⁵¹家³⁵²裏³⁵³。外³⁵⁴頭³⁵⁵的³⁵⁶風³⁵⁷尖³⁵⁸溜³⁵⁹溜³⁶⁰的³⁶¹。請³⁶²
 到³⁶³家³⁶⁴裏³⁶⁵。外³⁶⁶頭³⁶⁷的³⁶⁸風³⁶⁹尖³⁷⁰溜³⁷¹溜³⁷²的³⁷³。請³⁷⁴
 到³⁷⁵家³⁷⁶裏³⁷⁷。外³⁷⁸頭³⁷⁹的³⁸⁰風³⁸¹尖³⁸²溜³⁸³溜³⁸⁴的³⁸⁵。請³⁸⁶
 到³⁸⁷家³⁸⁸裏³⁸⁹。外³⁹⁰頭³⁹¹的³⁹²風³⁹³尖³⁹⁴溜³⁹⁵溜³⁹⁶的³⁹⁷。請³⁹⁸
 到³⁹⁹家⁴⁰⁰裏⁴⁰¹。外⁴⁰²頭⁴⁰³的⁴⁰⁴風⁴⁰⁵尖⁴⁰⁶溜⁴⁰⁷溜⁴⁰⁸的⁴⁰⁹。請⁴¹⁰
 到⁴¹¹家⁴¹²裏⁴¹³。外⁴¹⁴頭⁴¹⁵的⁴¹⁶風⁴¹⁷尖⁴¹⁸溜⁴¹⁹溜⁴²⁰的⁴²¹。請⁴²²
 到⁴²³家⁴²⁴裏⁴²⁵。外⁴²⁶頭⁴²⁷的⁴²⁸風⁴²⁹尖⁴³⁰溜⁴³¹溜⁴³²的⁴³³。請⁴³⁴
 到⁴³⁵家⁴³⁶裏⁴³⁷。外⁴³⁸頭⁴³⁹的⁴⁴⁰風⁴⁴¹尖⁴⁴²溜⁴⁴³溜⁴⁴⁴的⁴⁴⁵。請⁴⁴⁶
 到⁴⁴⁷家⁴⁴⁸裏⁴⁴⁹。外⁴⁵⁰頭⁴⁵¹的⁴⁵²風⁴⁵³尖⁴⁵⁴溜⁴⁵⁵溜⁴⁵⁶的⁴⁵⁷。請⁴⁵⁸
 到⁴⁵⁹家⁴⁶⁰裏⁴⁶¹。外⁴⁶²頭⁴⁶³的⁴⁶⁴風⁴⁶⁵尖⁴⁶⁶溜⁴⁶⁷溜⁴⁶⁸的⁴⁶⁹。請⁴⁷⁰
 到⁴⁷¹家⁴⁷²裏⁴⁷³。外⁴⁷⁴頭⁴⁷⁵的⁴⁷⁶風⁴⁷⁷尖⁴⁷⁸溜⁴⁷⁹溜⁴⁸⁰的⁴⁸¹。請⁴⁸²
 到⁴⁸³家⁴⁸⁴裏⁴⁸⁵。外⁴⁸⁶頭⁴⁸⁷的⁴⁸⁸風⁴⁸⁹尖⁴⁹⁰溜⁴⁹¹溜⁴⁹²的⁴⁹³。請⁴⁹⁴
 到⁴⁹⁵家⁴⁹⁶裏⁴⁹⁷。外⁴⁹⁸頭⁴⁹⁹的⁵⁰⁰風⁵⁰¹尖⁵⁰²溜⁵⁰³溜⁵⁰⁴的⁵⁰⁵。請⁵⁰⁶
 到⁵⁰⁷家⁵⁰⁸裏⁵⁰⁹。外⁵¹⁰頭⁵¹¹的⁵¹²風⁵¹³尖⁵¹⁴溜⁵¹⁵溜⁵¹⁶的⁵¹⁷。請⁵¹⁸
 到⁵¹⁹家⁵²⁰裏⁵²¹。外⁵²²頭⁵²³的⁵²⁴風⁵²⁵尖⁵²⁶溜⁵²⁷溜⁵²⁸的⁵²⁹。請⁵³⁰
 到⁵³¹家⁵³²裏⁵³³。外⁵³⁴頭⁵³⁵的⁵³⁶風⁵³⁷尖⁵³⁸溜⁵³⁹溜⁵⁴⁰的⁵⁴¹。請⁵⁴²
 到⁵⁴³家⁵⁴⁴裏⁵⁴⁵。外⁵⁴⁶頭⁵⁴⁷的⁵⁴⁸風⁵⁴⁹尖⁵⁵⁰溜⁵⁵¹溜⁵⁵²的⁵⁵³。請⁵⁵⁴
 到⁵⁵⁵家⁵⁵⁶裏⁵⁵⁷。外⁵⁵⁸頭⁵⁵⁹的⁵⁶⁰風⁵⁶¹尖⁵⁶²溜⁵⁶³溜⁵⁶⁴的⁵⁶⁵。請⁵⁶⁶
 到⁵⁶⁷家⁵⁶⁸裏⁵⁶⁹。外⁵⁷⁰頭⁵⁷¹的⁵⁷²風⁵⁷³尖⁵⁷⁴溜⁵⁷⁵溜⁵⁷⁶的⁵⁷⁷。請⁵⁷⁸
 到⁵⁷⁹家⁵⁸⁰裏⁵⁸¹。外⁵⁸²頭⁵⁸³的⁵⁸⁴風⁵⁸⁵尖⁵⁸⁶溜⁵⁸⁷溜⁵⁸⁸的⁵⁸⁹。請⁵⁹⁰
 到⁵⁹¹家⁵⁹²裏⁵⁹³。外⁵⁹⁴頭⁵⁹⁵的⁵⁹⁶風⁵⁹⁷尖⁵⁹⁸溜⁵⁹⁹溜⁶⁰⁰的⁶⁰¹。請⁶⁰²
 到⁶⁰³家⁶⁰⁴裏⁶⁰⁵。外⁶⁰⁶頭⁶⁰⁷的⁶⁰⁸風⁶⁰⁹尖⁶¹⁰溜⁶¹¹溜⁶¹²的⁶¹³。請⁶¹⁴
 到⁶¹⁵家⁶¹⁶裏⁶¹⁷。外⁶¹⁸頭⁶¹⁹的⁶²⁰風⁶²¹尖⁶²²溜⁶²³溜⁶²⁴的⁶²⁵。請⁶²⁶
 到⁶²⁷家⁶²⁸裏⁶²⁹。外⁶³⁰頭⁶³¹的⁶³²風⁶³³尖⁶³⁴溜⁶³⁵溜⁶³⁶的⁶³⁷。請⁶³⁸
 到⁶³⁹家⁶⁴⁰裏⁶⁴¹。外⁶⁴²頭⁶⁴³的⁶⁴⁴風⁶⁴⁵尖⁶⁴⁶溜⁶⁴⁷溜⁶⁴⁸的⁶⁴⁹。請⁶⁵⁰
 到⁶⁵¹家⁶⁵²裏⁶⁵³。外⁶⁵⁴頭⁶⁵⁵的⁶⁵⁶風⁶⁵⁷尖⁶⁵⁸溜⁶⁵⁹溜⁶⁶⁰的⁶⁶¹。請⁶⁶²
 到⁶⁶³家⁶⁶⁴裏⁶⁶⁵。外⁶⁶⁶頭⁶⁶⁷的⁶⁶⁸風⁶⁶⁹尖⁶⁷⁰溜⁶⁷¹溜⁶⁷²的⁶⁷³。請⁶⁷⁴
 到⁶⁷⁵家⁶⁷⁶裏⁶⁷⁷。外⁶⁷⁸頭⁶⁷⁹的⁶⁸⁰風⁶⁸¹尖⁶⁸²溜⁶⁸³溜⁶⁸⁴的⁶⁸⁵。請⁶⁸⁶
 到⁶⁸⁷家⁶⁸⁸裏⁶⁸⁹。外⁶⁹⁰頭⁶⁹¹的⁶⁹²風⁶⁹³尖⁶⁹⁴溜⁶⁹⁵溜⁶⁹⁶的⁶⁹⁷。請⁶⁹⁸
 到⁶⁹⁹家⁷⁰⁰裏⁷⁰¹。外⁷⁰²頭⁷⁰³的⁷⁰⁴風⁷⁰⁵尖⁷⁰⁶溜⁷⁰⁷溜⁷⁰⁸的⁷⁰⁹。請⁷¹⁰
 到⁷¹¹家⁷¹²裏⁷¹³。外⁷¹⁴頭⁷¹⁵的⁷¹⁶風⁷¹⁷尖⁷¹⁸溜⁷¹⁹溜⁷²⁰的⁷²¹。請⁷²²
 到⁷²³家⁷²⁴裏⁷²⁵。外⁷²⁶頭⁷²⁷的⁷²⁸風⁷²⁹尖⁷³⁰溜⁷³¹溜⁷³²的⁷³³。請⁷³⁴
 到⁷³⁵家⁷³⁶裏⁷³⁷。外⁷³⁸頭⁷³⁹的⁷⁴⁰風⁷⁴¹尖⁷⁴²溜⁷⁴³溜⁷⁴⁴的⁷⁴⁵。請⁷⁴⁶
 到⁷⁴⁷家⁷⁴⁸裏⁷⁴⁹。外⁷⁵⁰頭⁷⁵¹的⁷⁵²風⁷⁵³尖⁷⁵⁴溜⁷⁵⁵溜⁷⁵⁶的⁷⁵⁷。請⁷⁵⁸
 到⁷⁵⁹家⁷⁶⁰裏⁷⁶¹。外⁷⁶²頭⁷⁶³的⁷⁶⁴風⁷⁶⁵尖⁷⁶⁶溜⁷⁶⁷溜⁷⁶⁸的⁷⁶⁹。請⁷⁷⁰
 到⁷⁷¹家⁷⁷²裏⁷⁷³。外⁷⁷⁴頭⁷⁷⁵的⁷⁷⁶風⁷⁷⁷尖⁷⁷⁸溜⁷⁷⁹溜⁷⁸⁰的⁷⁸¹。請⁷⁸²
 到⁷⁸³家⁷⁸⁴裏⁷⁸⁵。外⁷⁸⁶頭⁷⁸⁷的⁷⁸⁸風⁷⁸⁹尖⁷⁹⁰溜⁷⁹¹溜⁷⁹²的⁷⁹³。請⁷⁹⁴
 到⁷⁹⁵家⁷⁹⁶裏⁷⁹⁷。外⁷⁹⁸頭⁷⁹⁹的⁸⁰⁰風⁸⁰¹尖⁸⁰²溜⁸⁰³溜⁸⁰⁴的⁸⁰⁵。請⁸⁰⁶
 到⁸⁰⁷家⁸⁰⁸裏⁸⁰⁹。外⁸¹⁰頭⁸¹¹的⁸¹²風⁸¹³尖⁸¹⁴溜⁸¹⁵溜⁸¹⁶的⁸¹⁷。請⁸¹⁸
 到⁸¹⁹家⁸²⁰裏⁸²¹。外⁸²²頭⁸²³的⁸²⁴風⁸²⁵尖⁸²⁶溜⁸²⁷溜⁸²⁸的⁸²⁹。請⁸³⁰
 到⁸³¹家⁸³²裏⁸³³。外⁸³⁴頭⁸³⁵的⁸³⁶風⁸³⁷尖⁸³⁸溜⁸³⁹溜⁸⁴⁰的⁸⁴¹。請⁸⁴²
 到⁸⁴³家⁸⁴⁴裏⁸⁴⁵。外⁸⁴⁶頭⁸⁴⁷的⁸⁴⁸風⁸⁴⁹尖⁸⁵⁰溜⁸⁵¹溜⁸⁵²的⁸⁵³。請⁸⁵⁴
 到⁸⁵⁵家⁸⁵⁶裏⁸⁵⁷。外⁸⁵⁸頭⁸⁵⁹的⁸⁶⁰風⁸⁶¹尖⁸⁶²溜⁸⁶³溜⁸⁶⁴的⁸⁶⁵。請⁸⁶⁶
 到⁸⁶⁷家⁸⁶⁸裏⁸⁶⁹。外⁸⁷⁰頭⁸⁷¹的⁸⁷²風⁸⁷³尖⁸⁷⁴溜⁸⁷⁵溜⁸⁷⁶的⁸⁷⁷。請⁸⁷⁸
 到⁸⁷⁹家⁸⁸⁰裏⁸⁸¹。外⁸⁸²頭⁸⁸³的⁸⁸⁴風⁸⁸⁵尖⁸⁸⁶溜⁸⁸⁷溜⁸⁸⁸的⁸⁸⁹。請⁸⁹⁰
 到⁸⁹¹家⁸⁹²裏⁸⁹³。外⁸⁹⁴頭⁸⁹⁵的⁸⁹⁶風⁸⁹⁷尖⁸⁹⁸溜⁸⁹⁹溜⁹⁰⁰的⁹⁰¹。請⁹⁰²
 到⁹⁰³家⁹⁰⁴裏⁹⁰⁵。外⁹⁰⁶頭⁹⁰⁷的⁹⁰⁸風⁹⁰⁹尖⁹¹⁰溜⁹¹¹溜⁹¹²的⁹¹³。請⁹¹⁴
 到⁹¹⁵家⁹¹⁶裏⁹¹⁷。外⁹¹⁸頭⁹¹⁹的⁹²⁰風⁹²¹尖⁹²²溜⁹²³溜⁹²⁴的⁹²⁵。請⁹²⁶
 到⁹²⁷家⁹²⁸裏⁹²⁹。外⁹³⁰頭⁹³¹的⁹³²風⁹³³尖⁹³⁴溜⁹³⁵溜⁹³⁶的⁹³⁷。請⁹³⁸
 到⁹³⁹家⁹⁴⁰裏⁹⁴¹。外⁹⁴²頭⁹⁴³的⁹⁴⁴風⁹⁴⁵尖⁹⁴⁶溜⁹⁴⁷溜⁹⁴⁸的⁹⁴⁹。請⁹⁵⁰
 到⁹⁵¹家⁹⁵²裏⁹⁵³。外⁹⁵⁴頭⁹⁵⁵的⁹⁵⁶風⁹⁵⁷尖⁹⁵⁸溜⁹⁵⁹溜⁹⁶⁰的⁹⁶¹。請⁹⁶²
 到⁹⁶³家⁹⁶⁴裏⁹⁶⁵。外⁹⁶⁶頭⁹⁶⁷的⁹⁶⁸風⁹⁶⁹尖⁹⁷⁰溜⁹⁷¹溜⁹⁷²的⁹⁷³。請⁹⁷⁴
 到⁹⁷⁵家⁹⁷⁶裏⁹⁷⁷。外⁹⁷⁸頭⁹⁷⁹的⁹⁸⁰風⁹⁸¹尖⁹⁸²溜⁹⁸³溜⁹⁸⁴的⁹⁸⁵。請⁹⁸⁶
 到⁹⁸⁷家⁹⁸⁸裏⁹⁸⁹。外⁹⁹⁰頭⁹⁹¹的⁹⁹²風⁹⁹³尖⁹⁹⁴溜⁹⁹⁵溜⁹⁹⁶的⁹⁹⁷。請⁹⁹⁸
 到⁹⁹⁹家¹⁰⁰⁰裏¹⁰⁰¹。外¹⁰⁰²頭¹⁰⁰³的¹⁰⁰⁴風¹⁰⁰⁵尖¹⁰⁰⁶溜¹⁰⁰⁷溜¹⁰⁰⁸的¹⁰⁰⁹。請¹⁰¹⁰
 到¹⁰¹¹家¹⁰¹²裏¹⁰¹³。外¹⁰¹⁴頭¹⁰¹⁵的¹⁰¹⁶風¹⁰¹⁷尖¹⁰¹⁸溜¹⁰¹⁹溜¹⁰²⁰的¹⁰²¹。請¹⁰²²
 到¹⁰²³家¹⁰²⁴裏¹⁰²⁵。外¹⁰²⁶頭¹⁰²⁷的¹⁰²⁸風¹⁰²⁹尖¹⁰³⁰溜¹⁰³¹溜¹⁰³²的¹⁰³³。請¹⁰³⁴
 到¹⁰³⁵家¹⁰³⁶裏¹⁰³⁷。外¹⁰³⁸頭¹⁰³⁹的¹⁰⁴⁰風¹⁰⁴¹尖¹⁰⁴²溜¹⁰⁴³溜¹⁰⁴⁴的¹⁰⁴⁵。請¹⁰⁴⁶
 到¹⁰⁴⁷家¹⁰⁴⁸裏¹⁰⁴⁹。外¹⁰⁵⁰頭¹⁰⁵¹的¹⁰⁵²風¹⁰⁵³尖¹⁰⁵⁴溜¹⁰⁵⁵溜¹⁰⁵⁶的¹⁰⁵⁷。請¹⁰⁵⁸
 到¹⁰⁵⁹家¹⁰⁶⁰裏¹⁰⁶¹。外¹⁰⁶²頭¹⁰⁶³的¹⁰⁶⁴風¹⁰⁶⁵尖¹⁰⁶⁶溜¹⁰⁶⁷溜¹⁰⁶⁸的¹⁰⁶⁹。請¹⁰⁷⁰
 到¹⁰⁷¹家¹⁰⁷²裏¹⁰⁷³。外¹⁰⁷⁴頭¹⁰⁷⁵的¹⁰⁷⁶風¹⁰⁷⁷尖¹⁰⁷⁸溜¹⁰⁷⁹溜¹⁰⁸⁰的¹⁰⁸¹。請¹⁰⁸²
 到¹⁰⁸³家¹⁰⁸⁴裏¹⁰⁸⁵。外¹⁰⁸⁶頭¹⁰⁸⁷的¹⁰⁸⁸風¹⁰⁸⁹尖¹⁰⁹⁰溜¹⁰⁹¹溜¹⁰⁹²的¹⁰⁹³。請¹⁰⁹⁴
 到¹⁰⁹⁵家¹⁰⁹⁶裏¹⁰⁹⁷。外¹⁰⁹⁸頭¹⁰⁹⁹的¹¹⁰⁰風¹¹⁰¹尖¹¹⁰²溜¹¹⁰³溜¹¹⁰⁴的¹¹⁰⁵。請¹¹⁰⁶
 到¹¹⁰⁷家¹¹⁰⁸裏¹¹⁰⁹。外¹¹¹⁰頭¹¹¹¹的¹¹¹²風¹¹¹³尖¹¹¹⁴溜¹¹¹⁵溜¹¹¹⁶的¹¹¹⁷。請¹¹¹⁸
 到¹¹¹⁹家¹¹²⁰裏¹¹²¹。外¹¹²²頭¹¹²³的¹¹²⁴風¹¹²⁵尖¹¹²⁶溜¹¹²⁷溜¹¹²⁸的¹¹²⁹。請¹¹³⁰
 到¹¹³¹家¹¹³²裏¹¹³³。外¹¹³⁴頭¹¹³⁵的¹¹³⁶風¹¹³⁷尖¹¹³⁸溜¹¹³⁹溜¹¹⁴⁰的¹¹⁴¹。請¹¹⁴²
 到¹¹⁴³家¹¹⁴⁴裏¹¹⁴⁵

melancholy feeling
Ch'ou ch'ang
chi + help
cui-hue

順溜頭麼不少不的然我看
 口。的。髮愁穿濟略皮看
 ○○自腸呢兒穿也○色
 你²³這²²從害○我²¹長○老²⁰的
 去^{ts'ai'cut'hl}個^{niem'chou'}黏^{niem'chou'}了²¹的²⁰的¹⁹
 裁²³一²²場²¹外²⁰兄¹⁹爛¹⁸常¹⁷
 一張²³稀²²溜²¹溜²⁰的¹⁹的¹⁸白¹⁷
 紙²³來²²的²¹喝²⁰着¹⁹實¹⁸
 來²³不²²要²¹太²⁰寬¹⁹窄¹⁸
 寬²³容²²在²¹禿²⁰溜¹⁹子¹⁸甚¹⁷
 也²³吃²²也²¹牙²⁰口¹⁹生¹⁸雖¹⁷

ts'ai'cut'hl
niem'chou'
kuan'
chai'

- 17 With such bright moonlight as there is at present, I regard traveling by night as preferable to traveling by day.
- 18 Although her complexion is naturally dark, yet from the constant use of cosmetics she appears quite fair.
- 19 It is already boiled very tender, even one with poor teeth could eat it.
- 20 My good sir, you have plenty to eat and plenty to wear, and your children and grandchildren are all flourishing, what have you to worry about?
- 21 My nephew formerly had a very heavy head of hair, but since his attack of typhoid fever, it has fallen off until he is now completely bald.
- 22 This gruel is quite thin and exactly suits my taste.
- 23 Go and cut me a piece of paper; not too wide, a narrow strip will answer.

顛 To jog, to vibrate,—as a doublet imparts the idea of rising and falling.
 顛顛的 On the run, on the trot.
 沉顛顛的 Very heavy—bending the carrying pole. (c. & n.)
 明晃晃的 Very bright, dazzling bright,—imparts the idea of radiance.
 惡狠狠的 Relentless, unconscionable,—imparts the idea of intensity.
 毒整整的 Poisonous, relentless, virulent,—imparts the idea of virulence. (c. & s.)
 楞薄薄的 Quite thin,—imparts the idea of thinness. (c. & s.)
 沉重重的 Decidedly heavy, weighty,—imparts the idea of weight. (s.)

kuan'
ch'ien'
ming'huang'
ku' shi'
hsiu'po
ch'ien'

快當當的 Quick, speedy, on the run,—imparts the idea of juncture of time.
 白白白的 Quite white or fair,—imparts the idea of similarity. (s.)
 齊整整的 Very uniform, quite regular, the full number,—imparts the idea of completeness.
 光禿禿的 Quite smooth, entirely bald,—imparts the idea of baldness.
 苦殷殷的 Quite bitter, very bitter,—imparts the idea of abundance.
 苦澀澀的 Quite bitter, disagreeably bitter,—imparts the idea of astringency. (s.)
 赤條條的 Stark naked,—imparts the idea of slenderness.

VOCABULARY.

- 晃 Hwang³. Bright, dazzling, flashing.
- 栢 Poa⁴, The cypress; the cedar; as a surname—read pai³.
- 怕羞 Pa⁴ hsiu¹. To fear shame, to feel ashamed. (s.)
- 螫 Shi⁴. Poisonous; malignant:—See chie¹.
- 岡 Kang^{1,3}. A peak, a range; a summit.
- 抹 Moa^{3,4}. To rub out, to blot out; to go round a corner; to rub on, to smear. See ma¹.
- 轉彎 Chwan³ wan¹. To make a turn, to wind about, to go round a corner.
- 抹角 Moa⁴ chiao³. To go or turn round a corner.
- 乍猛的 Cha⁴ meng³ ti¹. Suddenly, all at once, in a moment. (s.)
- 皮色 Pi² shai³. Color of the skin, complexion.
- 搽粉 Cha⁴ fen³. To powder, to paint.

訴了他，他這纔穿上衣裳去了。
 子裏張羅開咯，早晚等到火要滅的時候，有人告
 吹喝救火，我急忙跑去一看，見他赤條條的，在院
 夜裏，我叫蛇蚤咬的還沒睡着，忽然聽見他家裏
 狠狠的罵。○說起李光大失火來，真有故事，那天
 從此他算恨他到了骨頭咯，多會提起來，他就惡
 他在家裏爲姑娘的時候，被這王三爺打了一頓，
 他挑着一百多斤的擔子，走起來還輕生生的。○大
 溜溜的。○我們空身人，還走累喇，你看前頭那個大
 溜溜的就行。○這是大葉子茶，下的多了，就苦

24 This is the large-leaved tea; if you put in too much it will be bitter.
 25 Even we who are walking empty-handed are tired out, yet just look at that big fellow in front; though carrying a load of over a hundred catties he still steps along as lightly as you please.
 26 When she was a girl at home she was beaten by this man Wang San Yie, and from that time she has hated him thoroughly. The mere mention of him calls forth the fiercest abuse.
 27 Speaking of the fire at Li Kwang Ta's, there is a good story about it. That night I was pestered by the fleas and had not yet gone asleep, when suddenly I heard some one in his house call out, Fire! I hurriedly ran over to see, when I found him in the yard perfectly nude, making a great ado. By and by when the fire was nearly put out, some one told him and only then did he think to go and put on his clothes.

- 5 肖 *Hsiao*⁴..... Like, similar; small; inferior.
- 牙口 *Ya*² *k'ou*³..... The teeth.
- 20 担 *Tan*¹..... A short writing of 擔
- 21 瘟症 *Wên*¹ *ching*⁴. Epidemic sickness, especially epidemic typhoid fever.
- 22 空行 *K'ung*¹ *hsing*². Without lading, unencumbered, empty-handed.
- 23 空身 *K'ung*¹ *shên*¹. Unencumbered, empty-handed; not pregnant.

- 吃蚤 *Kod*⁴ *tsao*³..... A flea. 27
- 吹 *Yao*¹..... To cry out, to call to. 27
- 喝 *Hod*⁴. To call out; to shout at, to scold. See 27
..... *hod*¹.
- 吹喝. To scold; to call out, to shout; to cry wares. 27
- 早晚 *Tsao*⁵ *wan*³. Sooner or later, first or last; by and by, when. 27

NOTES.

5 大嫂 is much used as a general title for women. A woman may be addressed as 大嫂 by people of near the same age, but one ten or more years older than the speaker should be called 大娘. The proper reading of 嫂 is *shí*⁴, but it is often used for 蚤, and hence is read colloquially *ché*².
 10 做面子活, to do face work; i.e., to be an eyeservant.
 11 抹角 is rarely used, save as joined with 轉彎. In some places to rub out or off is read *mo*², and to rub on, *mo*⁴, in other places both meanings are read alike; viz., *mo*².
 14 Peking teachers put 乾巴巴的 for 熬巴巴的, and Southern teachers put 重巴巴的. All agree as

to the use of 巴, but differ as to the proper word with which to join it in this connection. The three terms are probably not entirely equivalent.
 18 乍猛的 is a Southern term belonging to, but not included in, *Lea*, 115.
 25 大哥, as here used, is somewhat depreciatory. When joined with a surname, as 李大哥, etc., or when used to a friend, or of a real brother, it is respectful and proper; but as a general term it is avoided, especially in direct address. This arises from the fact that 大哥 is used as a slang term by rakes and vagabonds.
 27 那天夜裡, the night of that day; i.e., that night. 救火, Save fire! that is, Fire! Fire!

第一五十五課

LESSON CLV.

有¹甚麼急事，你這麼慌張張的。○這些飯已經壞喇，酸滋滋的，怎麼吃呢。○天氣這樣暖和，的，咱們出去逛逛罷。○這雙羽綾鞋，我穿着緊，臉上是富態態的。○不必買他的東西，每逢制他的秤，他就賴。○吳建章肚子裏，並較他的見識，說起話來，一點準頭沒有。○不起眼的一個小瘡，時刻還疼絲絲的。沒有。○不起眼的一個小瘡，時刻還疼絲絲的。○敢是溜進雨來喇，怎麼窗臺上的東西，都濕漬拉的呢。○這個老婆真是潑婦，整天家嘴裏

- 1 What urgent business is on hand that you are in such a flurry ?
- 2 This food is already spoiled. How can one eat sour stuff like this ?
- 3 Seeing the weather is so mild, let us go out and take a walk.
- 4 Although Fêng T'ai-t'ai is not particularly handsome, yet her face has a genteel appearance.
- 5 I find this pair of satinet shoes rather tight; they do not altogether suit me.
- 6 It is better not to buy anything more of him. Every time you test his scales he makes a fuss about it.
- 7 Wu Chien Chang is wanting in good common sense. He talks all at random and entirely without point.
- 8 A trifling boil not worth noticing, yet it pains me all the time.
- 9 I presume the rain must have blown in. How else would the things on the window sill be so wet ?
- 10 This woman is a regular virago; her mouth is always full of railing.

cheng's whole 1127

chun? regular

LESSON CLV.

SPECIAL DUPLICATE ADJUNCTS.

張 To expand,—imparts the idea of *increase*, or *excitement*.
 慌張張的 In a state of confusion or alarm, all in splutter.
 雲張張的 Cloudy, piles of clouds; flighty, at random, wildly. (c.)
 漬 Water-soaked,—imparts the idea of *sog-*
 酸漬漬的 Quite sour, a sourish taste, disagreeably sour, disgusting. (c. & s.)
 濕漬漬的 Quite wet, very damp, soggy. (s.)
 黏漬漬的 Disagreeably sticky. [washy.
 水漬漬的 Soggy, watery, washy, wishy-
 滋 Luxuriant,—imparts the idea of *profuseness*.
 酸滋滋的 Decidedly sour, too sour. (N.)
 賴滋滋的 Grumbling, whining, fault finding. (s.)
 唧 The hum of voices,—imparts the idea of

賴唧唧的 Grumbling, whining, fault finding. (c. & N.)
 罵唧唧的 Continual scolding, constantly railing. (c. & N.)
 哭唧唧的 Sobbing and crying, whimpering. [pering.
 緊梆梆的 To tie,—imparts the idea of *firmness*.
 硬梆梆的 Pinching tight, too tight, quite firm or tense. [rock.
 硬梆梆的 Very firm or solid, solid as a rock.
 牢梆梆的 Quite firm or secure; quite readily, certainly. (c. & s.)
 和 To harmonize,—imparts the idea of that which is *smooth, agreeable*.
 暖和和的 Quite warm, agreeably warm.
 平和和的 Mild, peaceable; average.
 軟和和的 Quite soft, pliable, yielding.
 孜 Unceasing,—imparts the idea of *continuity*.

huang

nieng

tz'u

lai

tz'u

能 的 派 你 活 嗎 敦 怎 財 馬 馬
不 事 的 看 也 ○ 敦 麼 臉 馬 馬
喜 呢 苦 他 更 人 的 樣 上 咧 咧
呢 像 他 更 人 的 樣 上 咧 咧
○ 我 的 孫 子 今 年 十 四 歲 進 了 學 我 怎
○ 我 的 汗 衫 子 該 洗 喇 出 點 汗 黏 糊 漬

- 11 Money is a man's life-blood, hence when he gets rich his face wears a cheerful smile.
- 12 What is ailing you? Ans. I do not know what, save that I feel stupid and dizzy.
- 13 With a thick mattress spread under him and covered with a soft quilt, can he fail to sleep comfortably?
- 14 If a man is naturally well-proportioned, he is not only comely but he is also quicker at his work.
- 15 Yang the fourth will never be a prosperous man. Just look at him; he always speaks as if he were ready to cry, and his whole face has a woe-begone expression.
- 16 You are looking very happy; what is it that pleases you? Ans. My grandson, who is fourteen this year, has just got his degree. How can I be otherwise than happy?
- 17 My undervest needs washing. Whenever I perspire a little, it becomes sticky and clings to my body.
- 18 Look at that boy of Sun Hsi Yüan's. Ever since they settled his betrothal he is as happy as the day is long.

樂 喜 嘻 樂 笑 潤 光 油 汪 淚 富 霧 霧 疼
孜孜的 Constantly smiling, cheerful.
喜孜孜的 Covered with smiles, very happy, in good spirits. (c.)
嘻嘻 To laugh,—imparts the idea of mirth.
樂嘻嘻的 Smiling, happy. (s.)
笑嘻嘻的 Laughing, smiling, giggling, in a good humor.
潤 Moist, shining,—imparts the idea of moistness or gloss.
光潤潤的 Sleek, shining, smooth.
油潤潤的 Moist, soft and rich. (s.)
汪 A pool,—imparts the idea of plentitude.
油汪汪的 Quite moist, soft and oily.
淚汪汪的 Tears brimming, eyes full of tears.
富態態的 A genteel appearance, a well-to-do look,—imparts the idea of style or mien.
霧罩罩的 Foggy; muddled, indistinct, at random,—imparts the idea of covering. (c. & n.)
霧騰騰的 The same.
疼絲絲的 Aching, a fretting pain,—imparts the idea of continuity.

濕 昏 厚 哭 俏 牢 硬 賴 俏 黏 穩 光
拉拉的 Very wet, dripping wet, soaking wet:—see Les. 166.
沉沉的 Stupid, confused in mind, very dull,—imparts the idea of heaviness.
敦敦的 Quite thick; quite generous, free-handed,—imparts the idea of bountifulness.
哭啼啼的 Ready to cry, tearful, weeping,—imparts the idea of crying. (s.)
俏皮皮的 Quite brisk, active; slender, well-proportioned,—directs attention to the external appearance. (c. & n.)
牢樁樁的 Quite firm, reliable; readily, certainly,—imparts the idea of firmness. (c. & n.)
硬刺刺的 Hard, gritty; quite tough,—imparts the idea of hardness.
賴糊糊的 Persistent fault finding, whining, grumbling. (n.)
俏生生的 Brisk, active; graceful, well proportioned. (c. & s.)
黏糊糊的 Disagreeably sticky, adhesive.
穩當當的 Steady, firm; readily, certainly.
光堂堂的 Very smooth, sleek, shining.

黃道白黑，真果像死了人的一般。
 當真眼淚汪汪的哭將起來，口裏不住的絮絮叨叨，數
 硬刺刺的，就是水漬漬的，並沒有正經飯味。那²⁴子，
 的，弄的油潤潤的，真是好²³弄²⁴的。
 吃東西，臉上就光潤潤的，分外的好看。○會²³弄²⁴乾飯
 若是上京，一年穩²⁰當²¹當²²，說不出大壞²¹來。○有²¹你²²這²³樣²⁴的²⁵手²⁶藝²⁷。
 的，不算大好，也說不出大壞²¹來。○有²¹你²²這²³樣²⁴的²⁵手²⁶藝²⁷。
 身都硬綁綁的。○在²⁰貴²¹處²²的²³年²⁴成²⁵怎²⁶麼²⁷樣²⁸呢²⁹。
 他講說，上上奶媳奶婦，整天的是笑嘻嘻的。○真¹⁹好²⁰結²¹實²²孩²³子²⁴，
 糊塗的，都貼在¹⁸身上。○你¹⁸看¹⁹孫²⁰喜²¹元²²家²³那²⁴個²⁵學²⁶生²⁷，
 自從給

- 19 What a very robust child. His whole body is as firm and strong as possible.
- 20 How are the crops in your neighborhood? Ans. Only ordinary. They are not very good, nor can one say they are very poor.
- 21 With such mechanical skill as you have, if you should go to the capital, you could certainly earn two hundred thousand cash per year.
- 22 When a man habitually lives on good food, his face has a soft, sleek appearance that is especially pleasing.
- 23 One who knows how to cook dry rice makes it rich and moist, and it is exceedingly palatable; but one who does not understand the art makes it either hard and gritty, or soft and soggy, so that it is entirely without its proper flavor.
- 24 That simpleton, sure enough, with eyes full of tears burst out crying, and kept up a continuous stream of incoherent complaints, just for all the world as if some one were dead.

hui
295
tao

tai' i' hio'

VOCABULARY.

- 4 馮 Fêng². A horse running; a surname.
- 5 羽綾 Yü³ ling². Satinet, lasting.
- 建 Chien⁴. To establish; to erect, to confirm; to build.
- 8 起眼 Ch'i⁸ yen⁸. Worthy of notice, considerable.
- 霧 Wu⁴. Fog, mist, vapor.
- 9 潏 Shao⁴. Water driven by the wind, to splash, to spray, to sprinkle.
- 11 潑婦 P'oi¹ fu⁴. A shrew, a virago, a termagant.
- 11 罵罵咧咧 Ma⁴ lie². Continually scolding, constantly railing.
- 孜 Tsi¹. Unwearied effort, unceasing affection.
- 嘻 Hsi¹. To laugh, to titter; the sound of merriment; delighted.

- 頭暈 T'ou² yün⁴. Light-headed, dizzy.
- 敦 Tun¹. Simple, generous; sincere, solid; affluent; to honor.
- 舒服 Shu¹ fu². Comfortable, at ease, satisfied; well.
- 啼 T'i². To cry, to bewail, to weep; to crow, to scream.
- 一派 I¹ p'ai⁴. A branch; all, entire.
- 苦像 K'u⁸ hsiang⁴. A sorrowful appearance, a woe-begone expression.
- 爽利 Shwang⁸ li⁴. Quick, prompt.
- 汗衫子 Han⁴ shan¹ tsi³. An undervest.
- 分外 Fên⁴ wai⁴. More than usual, extraordinary; special, extra. Les. 172.

第一百五十六課

LESSON CLVI.

不必上街去吃。○既然免不了打官司，索性人情做到底罷。○這裏已經預備了你的飯，好。○夥計既然搭不好，買賣諒來也必做不來。○我們已經約定了，諒來他今天不能不嗎。○心裏焦，你又去俏皮他，豈不是火上加油。○既然看我不好，索性我也討好了。○他家這個時候，索性等到明天早早走罷。○東家個舉人，諒來學問不很大。○今天已經到了，已經過去的事情，不必再究問了。○既然是

- 1 The affair is already past, it is better not to rake it up again.
- 2 Seeing he is a chü-jên, it is not likely his scholarship is very inferior.
- 3 As it is so late to-day, you may as well wait till to-morrow and take an early start.
- 4 As my employer has a poor opinion of me, I might as well not try to please him.
- 5 Seeing his mind is already irritated, is it not simply pouring oil on the fire for you to go and twit him.
- 6 We have already made a definite appointment, so he will scarcely fail to come to-day.
- 7 Seeing he cannot get on with his employè, it is not likely his business will succeed.
- 8 Having copied more than half of it for nothing, you might as well finish it for him on the same terms.
- 9 Your food is already prepared here, you need not go on the street to eat.
- 10 Since we cannot avoid going to law, let us make a big row with him.

NOTES.

4 富態態的 expresses that fresh, soft, well-preserved look which results from good living and freedom from toil and exposure.

6 刺他的秤 or 較他的秤, to test or try his scales. Purchasers frequently, in fact generally, weigh with their own scales the articles they buy, as a check on the dishonesty of the seller. There is practically no legal standard of weights and measures in China.

11 銀子錢, silver and cash; that is, money.

15 一派的苦像, a complete spread of sorrowful looks, a woe-begone expression. The idea of the sentence is that the man's appearance betokens bad luck.

19 好 serves as an intensive, qualifying 結實.

24 眼淚 does not here form a compound term, but 眼 stands alone, and is qualified by 淚汪汪的. 數黃道黑 (or 白) to recount the yellow and tell the black (or white); i.e., to go over and over with variations.

LESSON CLVI.

CORRELATIVE PARTICLES:

已經... 諒來 Having, already... likely, so.
 已經... 索性 Seeing, having... might as well, may as well. So' häng [ter not.
 已經... 不必 Already... need not, bet-
 已經... 何必 Since, having... why.
 已經... 還能 Seeing, having... can still.
 既然... 諒來 Seeing, having... likely, probably. [well, let us.
 既然... 索性 Seeing, having... might as So' häng

既然... 怎麼 Seeing, having... why, how.
 既然... 還能 Seeing, having... can still.
 既然... 就當 Seeing, having... should, should have.
 既然... 只管 Seeing, having... simply, go ahead.
 既自 or 既然... 豈不 Seeing... is it not, will it not.
 既... 又 Having... then, also.

huang lang

tsa² hit

chiong "stared"

不念舊惡的人，他已經當面說了你諒來不能
 情理嗎，^答 嚙嚙，那來的話呢。[○] 崔¹⁷先生是個
 人。[○] 你¹⁶既打了他，又要叫他賠東西，還有這宗
 有名樹有影，眾人既然都稱讚他，諒來必是好
 經吃了一個饅頭子，大諒不能很餓。[○] 俗¹⁵語說，人
 又荒唐了，這是一種甚麼人呢。[○] 他¹⁴在路上已
 交¹³朋友總得言而有信，既滿口應[○]許人家，臨時
 經¹³打[○]了我的飯碗，我索性和他[○]拼[○]對[○]命[○]就[○]結[○]了。[○]
 我這些[○]糲[○]子[○]吃，豈不叫[○]我[○]越[○]發[○]糊[○]塗[○]嗎。[○] 他¹²已
 和[○]他[○]大[○]鬧[○]一[○]鬧[○]罷。[○] 我¹¹心[○]裏[○]既[○]已[○]糊[○]塗[○]，你[○]又[○]給

- 11 I am already stupid; if you give me this paste to eat, will it not make me all the more stupid?
- 12 Since he has taken away my livelihood, I might as well finish the business by pitting my life against his.
- 13 In intercourse with friends one should always keep his word. What sort of a man is he who, having made an explicit promise to another, gives him the slip when the time comes.
- 14 He ate a roll on the road; it is not likely he is very hungry
- 15 The proverb says, "Reputation is to a man as the shadow to the tree." Seeing that everybody speaks well of him, he is very probably a good man.
- 16 Having beaten him, what show of reason is there in your demanding that he make good the loss? Ans. Tut! tut! tut! I had no such idea.
- 17 Mr. Ts'ui is a man who does not cherish the memory of a wrong. Having reprovod you to your face, it is not likely that he will hereafter hold any enmity against you.
- 18 Seeing his ideas are so high, will it

VOCABULARY.

- 究問 Chiu¹ wên⁴. To interrogate; to pry into, to inquire; to take up.
- 舉人 Chü³ jên². A graduate of the second degree, for which examinations are conducted in the provincial capitals.
- 慥 Nao¹. Worthless, inferior, trashy.
- 慥 Ts'ao². Inferior, trashy, See tsao¹.
- 俏皮 Ch'iao⁴ p'i². Quick, active, agile; light, trim; to tease, to twit.
- 打趣 Ta³ ch'ü⁴. To tease, to chafe, to twit, to joke.
- 對命 Tui⁴ ming⁴. To stake the life against that of another, to engage in a mortal combat, to fight to the death.
- 拼命 P'in¹ ming⁴. The same.
- 滿口 Man³ k'ou³. Mouth filled with; clearly, explicitly, positively, fully.
- 臨時 Lin² shi³. As the time approaches, when the test comes, at the last moment.
- 讚 Tsan⁴. To commend, to praise. [roll.
- 饅 Chüan³. A steamed dumpling; a steamed
- 稱讚 Ch'êng¹ tsan⁴. To praise, to speak well of, to eulogize.
- 記恨 Chi⁴ hên⁴. To cherish hatred, to hold spite.
- 心意 Hsin¹ i⁴. Thought, purpose, aspiration, idea.
- 改嫁 Kai³ chia⁴. To marry again (said of a widow).
- 節烈 Chie² lie⁴. Inflexible virtue, unyielding devotion to a deceased husband.
- 值日 Chi² ji⁴. Day of duty, on duty:—Note (22).
- 謔 Nüe⁴. To ridicule, to mock, to trifle with.
- 戳 Ch'oa¹. To stab, to prick; to taunt, to nag; a seal, a stamp.
- 謔薄 Nüe⁴ pao². To taunt, to tease.
- 戳薄 Ch'oa¹ pao². To taunt, to tease, to nag, to chafe.
- 認保 Jên⁴ pao³. The graduate who becomes security for a candidate entering for the first degree.

聖諱，還能指望進學嗎。○他²⁵哥哥既然是個兵部
 我這個派保，怎麼不敢保呢。○李²⁴永勝已經犯了他
 票子，你何必只是戳²³他呢。○認²³保既然敢保他，
 值日的，他也是個值日的。大老爺已經出了他的
 和他談節烈的事，豈不是不知趣嗎。○你²²也是個
 好嗎。○你²¹想一個改嫁的婦人，既是怕人笑話，若
 既然都懊悔分家，你索性勸勸他們，再合起來不
 這二三百錢算計的這麼清呢。○他²⁰們弟兄兩個，
 派使，豈不是個難事嗎。○已¹⁹經定規不要他，何必為
 再記恨你。○他¹⁸的心意既已高，還要叫他聽人指³⁴

not be a difficult thing to make him subject to the will of another?
 19 Having decided to dismiss him, why, for the sake of these two or three hundred cash, reckon the account so closely?
 20 Since the two brothers are sorry that they divided the estate, would it not be well for you to exhort them to unite again?
 21 Consider the case of a remarried widow. Being already apprehensive of ridicule, would it not show a great want of good taste to talk to her about the devotion due to the memory of a deceased husband?
 22 Since, according to the regular order, it is his turn as well as yours, why, when the magistrate puts his name on the warrant, do you persist in taunting him?
 23 Seeing the leading security is ready to guarantee him, why should I, who am but second, not venture to do as much?
 24 Having used a forbidden character, what hope has Li Yung Shêng of getting a degree?
 25 Seeing that his brother is one of the

- 23 挨保 *Ai³ pao³*. The second or sub-security for a candidate:—Note (23).
- 27 派保 *P'ai⁴ pao³*.....The same.
- 24 聖諱 *Shêng⁴ hui⁴*. Sacred names, tabooed characters:—Note (24).
- 26 兵部 *Ping¹ pu⁴*. The Board of Punishments in Peking.
- 26 代書 *Tai⁴ shu¹*. A lawyer, a scrivener:—Note (26).
- 25 尙書 *Shang⁴ shu¹*. A president of one of the Six Boards. Each board has two presidents, one Tartar and one Chinese.
- 26 乾老子 *Kan¹ lao³ tsai³*. Adopted father:—Note (26).
- 26 下力 *Hsia⁴ li⁴*. To use effort, to work energetically, to strive.
- 27 膜 *T'ien³*...To go to excess; to enrich, to thicken.
- 27 膜臉 *T'ien³ lien³*. To put on a bold face, to be brazen-faced, thick-skinned.
- 27 捨臉 *Shê³ lien³*.....The same. (s.)
- 27 厚臉 *Hou⁴ lien³*.....The same. (s.)

- 探前 *T'an⁴ ch'ien²*. Early, beforehand, in anticipation of. (c.)
- 探先 *T'an⁴ hsien¹*.....The same. (s.)
- 探誑 *Hsüan¹*.....Deceitful; to impose on.
- 誑弄 *Hsüan¹ lung⁴*.....To befool, to cajole.
- 鬧事 *Nao⁴ shi⁴*. To raise a row, to make a disturbance, to get into a scrape.
- 看笑話 *K'an⁴ hsiao⁴ hwa⁴*. To laugh at, to make fun of. (n.)
- 看笑場 *K'an⁴ hsiao⁴ ch'ang³*...The same. (c.)
- 聽笑聲 *T'ing¹ hsiao⁴ shêng¹*...The same. (s.)
- 分派 *Fên¹ p'ai⁴*. To direct, to prescribe, to supervise, to lay out.
- 豌豆 *Wan¹*...The pea—introduced from the West. 20
- 豌豆 *Wan¹ tou⁴*.....Peas.
- 看柿 *K'an⁴ shi⁴*.....The tomato:—Note (28). 20
- 西紅柿 *Hsi¹ hung³ shi⁴*.....The same. 28
- 洋柿子 *Yang² shi⁴ tsî³*.....The same. 28
- 嬰 *Ying¹*.....An infant, a babe. (w.)
- 嬰孩 *Ying¹ hai²*.....An infant, a babe.

打他，那是斷乎使不得的。
 少不關你事。○教子嬰孩，教婦初來，既慣他，又
 豌豆、六哇子。³²⁹ 聽笑笑聲場話。呢。○他²⁸既然分派叫你種兩哇子
 大衆看看笑笑。呢。○他²⁸既然分派叫你種兩哇子
 受他們的誼弄，鬧出這麼一場丟人的事來，叫
 他們是帮虎吃食的人，就當^{探探即}防備，爲甚麼
 他使勁兒嗎。○你²⁷還^{厚捨}着臉說呢，你既然知道
 是親必顧，劉代書既然他乾老子，還能不爲
 哥作尙書，他連個知縣也摸不着作。○俗語說，
 尙書，他怎麼只作一個知縣呢。^答若不是他哥

presidents of the Board of Punishments, how is it that he is only a chi-hsien? Ans. If he had not had a brother who was president of a Board, he would not have been even a chi-hsien.

26 The saying is, "Kin are ever kind." Seeing Liu the scrivener is his adopted father, can he fail to exert himself on his behalf.

27 Well you ought to be ashamed to tell it. Since you knew that they were fellows who would help a tiger eat his prey, you should have been on your guard. Why allow them to cajole you into such a disgraceful scrape as this, and make yourself a public laughing stock.

28 Since he has directed you to plant two beds of peas and six of tomatoes, simply go and plant them as he told you; the quantity is no business of yours.

29 Discipline a child from infancy, and a wife from her marriage. It will never do to begin punishing after you have indulged the formation of bad habits.

account to midwife Kuen

NOTES.

1 已經過去的事情 properly means, that which is already past, but the general is here put for the particular, hence it means, the affair is already past.

2 窮 is much used in some parts of the North as the equivalent of 歹, or of 不濟.

3 The use of 人情 implies that the copying was from the first a matter of favor not of wages.

11 To eat paste muddles a man's wits, because being thick and viscid it closes up the orifices of his mind (心竅).

12 打了我的飯碗, broken my rice bowl; i.e., caused me to lose the employment upon which I depended for a living. 砸 is preferred in Peking.

13 言而有信, faithful to one's word,—a book phrase.

14 饅子. In some places a 饅子 is a steamed rolly-polly mad- with mince meat instead of with sweetmeats; in other places it is simply raised dough twisted into "rolls," and steamed.

15 The comparison is implied by the juxtaposition and similar construction of the phrases.

16 那來的話呢, abbreviated from 那裡來的話呢.

17 念舊惡, to cherish the memory of an old injury, to hold spite,—a classical phrase used by scholars.

21 The structure of this sentence is irregular. The first clause may be regarded as independent, the regular construction beginning with 既是.

22 值日, the day on which one's turn comes. The underlings in a yamen are divided into companies or sections,

which take turns in receiving and executing the commands of the officer. The use of the term 值日 is confined to this connection. 只是 commonly means only, but it here means to persist in. It is frequently so used.

23 The 挨保, or sub-security (called 派保 in some places) is of much less importance than the 認保, or principal security, who is supposed to be personally acquainted with the circumstances of the candidate, and with whom the responsibility chiefly rests. It is required that both these securities have the degree of 廩生, or preferred hsiu-ts'ai. On this account they are commonly called 廩保.

24 The characters forming the personal names of deceased emperors of the reigning dynasty are "forbidden." To use one of them in an essay is an offence fatal to all hope of getting a degree, no matter what the merits of the essay may otherwise be.

25 是親必顧, he who is a relative will certainly regard. The 是 is emphatic, being used for 凡是 or 但凡 是. The 代書 is a licensed scrivener, whose special business it is to draw up indictments and counter indictments. He is not, however, allowed to present them for his client, nor to plead the case as a lawyer. 乾老子 means the same as 乾爹, but would not be used in speaking face to face as would 乾爹.

28 看柿, mock-persimmon, that is, tomato. Being recently introduced into China each locality has its own name for tomatoes.

處，叫一個監生這樣污辱他，豈肯干休嗎？¹⁹ 人都是
 被他害喇。¹⁸ 你看孫進士是誰，如果他沒有甚麼短
 要緊當小心的，萬一有個失手差脚，燒了房子，却就
 看，如果告示還不出，何妨再去遞張催稟呢。○火¹⁷ 門看
 役搜出來，豈不是自投法網嗎？¹⁶ 可以先上衙門看
 一般嗎。○你們常販這些私貨，真是擔險，萬一被巡
 呢。○¹⁴ 班戲子的呢。○¹³ 但凡有利的事，誰肯不爭着去做
 有領班戲子的呢。○¹² 但凡是有利的事，誰肯不爭着去做
 自己的男人，豈肯賣了他嗎。○¹¹ 如果是個本分人，那
 人闖進來，却就有了笑話喇。○¹¹ 如果是個貞潔女人，

and going about stripped to the waist, if perchance some one should suddenly step in wouldn't that be a joke?
 11 If she were really a virtuous woman, would her own husband be willing to sell her?
 12 What man of good character would be manager of a theater?
 13 Who does not strive to have a share in whatever is profitable?
 14 If indeed he has such mechanical skill as that, would he be dressed like a beggar?
 15 You who are constantly engaged in smuggling are certainly playing a desperate game. If by any chance the detectives find you out, will you not have put your own neck in the noose?
 16 Go first to the yamên and see, and if the proclamation is not yet issued, what objection is there to presenting a petition urging its issue?
 17 It is important to be careful of fire, lest perchance your carelessness results in the burning of your house, which would be a great loss.
 18 Consider who Sun Chin-shi is. If his skirts were indeed clear, would he tamely allow a man who is but a chien-shêng to lampoon him like this?
 19 A man must be reduced to extremi-

- 5 饒恕 Jao³ shu⁴. To forgive, to excuse, to pass over.
- 11 貞潔 Chen¹ chie³. Virgin purity; chaste, virtuous.
- 14 穿戴 Ch'wan¹ tai⁴. Clothing; to wear.
- 15 擔險 Tan¹ hsien³. Dangerous, perilous; to run great risk.
- 16 網 Wang³. A net; a web; a law.
- 17 法網 Fa³ wang³. The toils or clutches of the law.
- 18 告示 Kao⁴ shi⁴. A proclamation, a manifesto.
- 19 催稟 Ts'ui¹ ping³. A petition urging action in a case at law.
- 失手 Shi¹ shou³. To let a thing fall; to mistake through carelessness or by accident; to pilfer.
- 差脚 Ch'a¹ chiao³. To make a misstep.

- 失手差脚. To make a mistake; an accident; carelessness.
- 進士 Chin⁴ shi⁴. A graduate of the third degree, the examinations for which are held in the Capital and open to all 舉人.
- 監生 Chien⁴ shêng¹. A literary degree obtained by purchase:—Note (18).
- 村辱 Ts'un¹ ju³. To stigmatize, to lampoon, to berate; to blackguard.
- 污辱 Wu¹ ju³. To put to shame, to bespatter, to lampoon, to berate.
- 不得已 Pu⁴ tê² i³. No help for it, in straits, unavoidable:—Les. 179. Sub.
- 討要 T'ao³ yao⁴. To ask for, to beg for.
- 點破 Tien³ p'oa⁴. To disclose, to divulge, to let out, to reveal.
- 委屈 Wei³ ch'ü¹. Injustice, wrong.
- 僥倖 Chiao³. Fortunate, lucky. Used for 倖.
- 僥倖 Chiao³ hsing⁴. A happy chance, luck, good fortune.

天上逍遙自在，難道用着你們塑他的
 金身，給他蓋房子住嗎？再不許你往
 外，發石頭萬一冤家路兒窄，一下把人
 打死，豈不是個活漏子嗎？街上傳說
 黃大人，因為私寇兵餉，已經被統領殺
 了，我看這必是仇人咒他，如果是真，他
 家裏豈能沒有信嗎？^{ch'w}父母已經這麼
 大的年紀，連件裝送老的衣裳都沒有，萬
 一早上晚下，得個急促暴病死了，豈不瞎巴
 結了一輩子嗎？

in heaven, he needs that you should make him a gilded image and build a house for him to live in?

27 Hereafter you must not throw out stones. If by chance some one doomed to die should be passing by, and should be struck and killed, would it not be a dreadful calamity?

28 It is currently reported on the street that Hwang Ta-jên has been put to death by the commanding general for embezzling the soldiers' pay. I think the report must be the work of an enemy defaming him. If it were true would not his family have heard of it?

29 Our father and mother at such an age, and yet we have not even garments in which to bury them. If some morning or evening they should suddenly sicken and die, would not the toils of their whole life have been in vain?

25 易 and 難 are used emphatically, in contrast with each other. The structure is *wên*. In Mandarin 告 is not used by itself in the sense of, to ask. It is so used in combination in the phrase 求告.

26 天尊 *Honored in heaven*, a title of dignity applied by the Taoists to their chief gods.

27 冤家路兒窄, *the road of enemies is narrow*; that is, *enemies are sure to meet, or, vengeance is sure to overtake its victim*. The phrase is a puzzling one of which various explanations are given. It involves a mixture of ideas of metempsychosis, fate, providence and the agency of disembodied spirits.

28 私寇兵餉, *to withhold illegally a portion of the soldiers' pay*. This is a very common abuse in China. When confined within reasonable bounds it generally passes unnoticed.

29 This sentence assumes what is a prevalent idea in China; viz., that one of the prime objects of life is to provide a good coffin and good clothes, in which to be buried. The bounden duty of sons is to provide these things beforehand for their parents. The reason these things are so important is, that the deceased is supposed to appear in the next world in the dress and style in which he leaves this world, and his standing and circumstances there are supposed to be as much affected by these things as they would be here.

LESSON CLVIII.

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS

This lesson is supplementary to the thirty-fifth lesson.

全 All,—the whole, completely, wholly.

全然 All,—completely, entirely,—with negative,—not at all.

共 All,—everybody; altogether.

俱 All,—the whole lot,—usually follows a list of particulars.

俱都 All,—every one.

俱以 All,—a book term in which 以 is added for euphony.

皆 All,—the whole number, all included.

皆都 All,—the same as 皆 alone.

盡 All,—everything; completely, entirely.

盡皆 All,—every single one, every last one.

盡情 All,—the whole business; entirely, perfectly.

大凡 All,—everyone, whoever; generally.

大列 All,—of a company or class; nearly always joined with 位 and used as a complimentary term.

諸 All,—each and every one:—mostly used in special phrases.

共總 Altogether, in all, total.

統共 The same.

統總 The same.

第一千五百八十八課

LESSON CLVIII.

人情，他就全然不懂了。○你看官化東家裏，輩輩不做好事，一個不賓服的。○有一等書獃子，只知道念四書，論到世事，人心裏真是海量，一點也不古板，大凡和他共事的人，沒有都以神爲本。○踏破鐵鞋無覓處，得來全不費工夫。○那個大洲的人數，雖然多如海邊的沙，但往上追到極遠之處，俱別旁的毛病，皆可將就，惟獨手不穩，這是沒法將就的。○五所作所爲，盡皆順利。○豐泰棧專辦洋貨，一應俱全。○共知的事情。○諸位弟兄，請聽我的話。○兒在外蒙神保佑，列位都請坐下，咱們常來常往，何必這樣多氣。○這是人所事情成敗全在於你。○若是和他好說，他算全然沒聽見。

- 1 Whether the affair succeeds or fails depends wholly on you.
- 2 If you speak mildly with him, he pays no attention to you at all.
- 3 Please be seated, gentlemen. Why should we who are constantly seeing each other be so formal? [knows.]
- 4 This is something that everybody
- 5 Will all the brethren please give ear to my words?
- 6 Since leaving home, I (your son) have been favored with the protection of God, and everything I have undertaken has prospered.
- 7 Fêng-t'ai store: special dealers in all kinds of miscellaneous goods, foreign and Cantonese.
- 8 Other faults may all be borne with, but purloining is something that cannot be tolerated.
- 9 Although the inhabitants of the five continents are as numerous as the sand on the sea shore, yet if we follow up [their history] to the remotest antiquity, we find the source of all in God.
- 10 You may wear out a pair of iron shoes searching for a thing and not find it; when it turns up, it does so without the least trouble.
- 11 That is truly an honorable man, and not in the least narrow-minded. Of all who do business with him there is not one who does not defer to him.
- 12 There is a class of learned idiots who know nothing but to study the four

VOCABULARY.

- 皆 *Chie¹*. All, all persons or things of the same class:—see Sub.
- 俱 *Chü¹*. . . . All,—collectively:—see Sub.
- 3 列位 *Lie⁴ wei⁴*. You gentlemen, sirs.
- 6 順利 *Shun⁴ li⁴*. Successful, prosperous, auspicious.
- 7 雜貨 *Tsa² hwo⁴*. Miscellaneous goods; groceries.
- 8 洲 *Chou¹*. An island; a continent, a region.
- 9 海量 *Hai³ liang⁴*. Broad-minded, honorable, magnanimous; self-control.
- 10 踏 *Cha¹*. To tread on, to step on; to walk.

- 覓 *Mi⁴*. To search for, to seek, to hunt up. //
- 板滯 *Pan³ chi⁴*. Obtuse, thick-headed; narrow-minded, opinionated.
- 古板 *Ku³ pan³*. Old-fashioned, set in one's way; narrow-minded, bigoted; obtuse.
- 共事 *Kung⁴ shi⁴*. To act together with, to be a business associate.
- 賓 *Pin¹*. A visitor, a guest; to acknowledge, to acquiesce.
- 賓服 *Pin¹ fu²*. To approve, to be pleased with; to submit to, to defer to.
- 書獃子 *Shu¹ tai¹ tsü³*. A learned idiot; a book worm:—Note (12).

t'sai p'uan
ku' supports p'uel

三百二十八個字，五經上有二千四百二十六個字，統共總
 你猜四書五經統共總有多少字呢？
 和諸般的惡事。○倉猝之間，作成此事，那能盡美盡善呢。
 餽口，還算希奇嗎。○在何處有妒嫉分爭，就在何處有攪亂。
 總教的十來個學生，每個學生還拉不上一吊錢，他說沒法
 我統共還沒有一斗麥子，那裏有借給你的呢。○你想他共
 信書，不如無書。○張大哥你借斗麥子給我過年，好不好。
 雖然這是書上的話，却也不可盡信，因為孟子明明的說，盡
 好，只有兒孫忘不了，癡心父母古來多，孝順子孫誰見了。
 如今他的子孫，俱以發達，那裏有天理呢。世人皆說神仙

books. As to the affairs of the world and of society, they know nothing at all.
 13 Look at Kung Hwa Tung's family; for generations they have been a worthless lot, yet now his descendants have all gotten rich. There is no such thing as justice.
 14 The life of the genii is what all men approve, but the desire for children they cannot give up. Many doting parents there ever have been, but dutiful children who has seen?
 15 Although this is recorded in a book, yet it must not be implicitly believed, for Mencius distinctly says, "It would be better to have no books at all than to believe everything that is recorded in books."
 16 Brother Chang, can you lend me a bushel of wheat to put me over the new year? Ans. Altogether I have not got a bushel of wheat, how should I have any to lend you?
 17 Just consider; he has in all only ten or twelve pupils, and his pupils will not average a thousand cash each. Is it strange that he says he cannot make a living?
 18 Wherever envying and strife are, there is confusion and every evil work.
 19 Having done it up on the spur of the moment, how can it be entirely perfect?
 20 Guess what is the total number of characters in the Four Books and Five Classics. Ans. I know the number. There are 2828 in the Four

- 13 官 *Kung*¹..... A mansion; a palace; a temple.
- 13 發籍 *Fa*¹ *chi*². To get rich, to become wealthy; to lay up money.
- 11 佩 *P'ei*⁴. To wear on the girdle, to keep as a souvenir, to remember.
- 11 佩服 *P'ei*⁴ *fu*⁴..... To defer to, to submit.
- 17 希奇 *Hsi*¹ *ch'i*². Wonderful, surprising, remarkable, strange.
- 18 嫉 *Chi*⁴..... Envy, jealousy.
- 19 妒 *Tu*⁴..... Jealous, envious.
- 15 嫉妒. To be jealous of, to envy; envy, jealousy.
- 16 攪亂 *Chiao*³ *lan*⁴. To confuse, to throw into disorder, to disturb.
- 14 倉 *Ts'ang*¹.... A granary, a bin; startled, hurried.

- 倉猝 *Ts'ang*¹ *ts'u*⁴. In a moment, on the spur of the moment; hurried, flurried:—Note (19).
- 20 五經 *Wu*³ *ching*¹. The five classics:—Note (20).
- 拐角 *Kwai*³ *chiao*³. An angle, a corner; to go round a corner.
- 醬 *Chiang*⁴..... Sauce used as a condiment, soy.
- 薑 *Chiang*¹..... Ginger.
- 椒 *Chiao*¹..... Hot spicy plants; pepper.
- 花椒 *Hwa*¹ *chiao*¹..... Prickly-ash berries.
- 胡椒 *Hu*³ *chiao*¹..... Black pepper.
- 曲折 *Ch'ü*¹ *chê*². Crooks and turns, ins and outs, complications.

人厭惡，可見世人所厭惡的，未必不是好人。

兩件以外，別的俱是枉然。孔子當日周流列國，常常被受飢寒，二是常常出一點力，可以舒筋活血，不生疾病，除這兩件以外，別的俱是枉然。孔子當日周流列國，常常被爲人只有兩件大事，一是多多掙幾吊錢，可以飽食暖衣，不

是熱了，你看來來往往的人，皆都穿了夏布大褂。依我看，凡出頭管事的，還有不落褒貶的嗎。○入伏以後，天氣到底盡情知道，却總知道個八九分。○俗語說，管閒事落不是，大俱全。○你去問問馮連登罷，這件事的細微曲折，他雖不能家雜貨店，憑你買油鹽醬醋，棗子白糖生薑花椒胡椒茶葉四千七百五十四個。這條街往西轉彎，走到拐角，就是鄭

Books, and 2426 in the Five Classics, making 4754 in all.

- 21 Going west on this street you make a turn and presently come to the corner where is Mr. Chêng's grocery, at which you can buy everything in the way of oil, salt, sauce, vinegar, dates, sugar, ginger, prickly-ash berries, black pepper and tea.
- 22 Go and ask Fêng Lien Têng; although he may not be acquainted with all the details of this affair, yet he certainly knows the greater part.
- 23 It is a common saying that "he who meddles in the affairs of others will get into trouble." Who ever takes the lead in anything and yet escapes criticism?
- 24 It is undoubtedly hot after the beginning of midsummer. Notice how the passers by are all wearing grass cloth gowns.
- 25 In my opinion there are only two important things in life; one is to make a good lot of money, so as to have plenty to eat and wear and not suffer from hunger or cold, the other is to take a little regular exercise so as to keep up the tone of the system and prevent sickness. Aside from these two things all else is vanity.
- 26 When Confucius was traversing various countries, he was constantly hated by the people, from which we see that he who is hated by others is not necessarily a bad man.

- 23 褒 Pao¹..... To admire, to praise.
- 23 貶 Pien³..... To censure, to disparage; to dismiss.
- 27 褒貶. Criticism, fault-finding, disparagement.
- 24 夏布 Hsia⁴ pu⁴..... Grass cloth.
- 25 大褂 Ta⁴ kwa⁴..... A long coat, a gown.
- 25 飢 Chi¹..... Same as 饑.
- 24 飢寒 Chi¹ han²..... Hunger and cold.

- 舒筋 Shu¹ chin¹. To relax the muscles; to take exercise. (w.)
- 活血 Hwo² hsie³. To stimulate or accelerate the circulation.
- 疾病 Chi² ping⁴. An ailment, a disease, sickness, illness.
- 枉然 Wang³ jan². Vain, useless; in vain, to no purpose.
- 周流 Chou¹ liu²..... To circulate, to traverse.

NOTES.

1 成破, equivalent to 或成或破. 在於 is a redundant expression smacking of books.

6 The language of a letter from a son who is abroad, to his parents at home.

7 一應俱全, one answer all complete; that is, every inquiry [for goods] meets with an affirmative response. The phrase is thoroughly wên. It is represented in the trans-

lation by the words all kinds. The whole sentence is the inscription on a signboard.

10 無覓處 no place to find, that is, cannot be found, — a book phrase not ordinarily used in Mandarin.

12 書獃子, a book simpleton, that is, a man of limited abilities who, by his exclusive attention to books, has unfitted himself for the practical affairs of life. 世事人

第一五九課

LESSON CLIX.

交、意的和○的安自己我去有事、我、我看¹
 怎的咱們看⁷的事情,是排,己,去,必、你¹
 麼特打作結朱九這情,就,是,特,意,為,大,眾,的,規,矩,嗎。○還⁴
 偏特兒給對寬。○他⁸個樣子,是來給打算。○沒⁶有別樣
 偏兒的看。○一⁹生⁹了氣,就○倘²若家²中
 交、往、一、個、無、類、來、類、好、可、故、要、行、別、樣、你、不、叫、
 我、看、你、是、明、知、故、問。○他³不³家²中

- 1 I believe you are asking just for the sake of asking.
- 2 If anything occurs at home, we will send a special message to you.
- 3 Since he forbids me to go, I am all the more determined to go.
- 4 Can the customs of the whole community be changed solely on your account?
- 5 It is arranged in this way with special reference to you.
- 6 I have no other business, I came simply to bring a lunch for your journey.
- 7 Judging from Chu Chiu's manner, he deliberately intends to act as our enemy.
- 8 Whenever he gets angry, he takes to slinging things about for effect.
- 9 Was there no one with whom to

情, the affairs of the world and the amenities of life,—may be regarded as a rhetorical transposition of 世人的事情。

14 This sentence is a verse from a ballad in the "Dream of the Red Chamber." In 神仙, the persons are put for the state of those persons. A man can only attain the immortality of the 神仙, by a life of severe asceticism, utterly inconsistent with marriage and the rearing of children. The rhythm of the verse requires that in 見了, the 了 should be read with more emphasis than properly belongs to it.

15 The sentiment here attributed to Mencius is one of his many sensible sayings. The original reference was to the 書經.

16 倉猝之間 is a book phrase rarely heard in colloquial. The whole sentence smacks of book style.

20 五經, the Five Classics; that is, 易經 or Book of

Changes, 書經 or Book of History, 詩經 or Book of Poetry, 春秋 or Confucian Annals (commonly called 左傳), and 禮記 or Book of Rites. 四書五經, Four Books and Five Classics, is the common phrase by which the writings of the sages are designated. These comprehend all the books commonly studied in Chinese schools.

21 This is the language of a poster or advertisement, directing attention to a certain shop.

25 舒筋活血, expand the muscles and enliven the blood,—an expression taken from medical language. The sentiment of the sentence is thoroughly Chinese.

26 周流列國, a book expression, rarely used except as applied to Confucius, who, accompanied by a number of his followers, visited the several petty kingdoms composing the empire, offering his services to the rulers as a teacher and reformer of government and manners.

LESSON CLIX.

PHRASES OF SPECIAL INTENT.

- 特 Specially, expressly, of set purpose, solely.
- 特特 Emphatic for 特.
- 特意 Specially, expressly, fully intending.
- 特為 On purpose, specifically, expressly, for the special purpose of.
- 故 On purpose, for the sake of.
- 故意 Purposely, of set purpose.
- 偏 Purposely, bent on, must needs, all the more, persistently, perversely, contrarily. Compare Les. 112.
- 偏偏 Emphatic for 偏.

- 着意 or 有意 Intentionally, deliberately.
- 誠心 Purposely, intentionally. (c. & n.)
- 安心 The same. (c. & s)
- 處心 Intentionally, of purpose.
- 有心 The same.
- 打心裡 Of set purpose, deliberately, intentionally, sincerely, really. (n. & c.) [cerely.
- 滿心裡 With full intent, fully expecting, sincerely.
- 單 or 單為 Specially, specifically, simply.
- 本心裡 Of set purpose, deliberately; of oneself. (s.)

了²⁰ 我²⁰ 爲¹⁸ 並¹⁸ 心¹⁸ 滿¹⁸ 打¹⁸ 着¹⁸ 有¹⁸ 夫¹⁸ 的¹⁸ 由¹⁸ 子¹⁸
 你的²¹ 命²¹ 喇²¹ ○ 明²¹ 曉²¹ 得²¹ 子²¹ 弟²¹ 不²¹ 是²¹ 偏²¹ 要²¹ 護²¹ 短²¹ 反²¹ 說²¹ 小²¹ 孩²¹ 子²¹ 家²¹
 我²⁰ 囑²⁰ 咐²⁰ 你²⁰ 不²⁰ 要²⁰ 上²⁰ 樹²⁰ 你²⁰ 偏²⁰ 要²⁰ 上²⁰ 萬²⁰ 一²⁰ 從²⁰ 上²⁰ 頭²⁰ 掉²⁰ 下²⁰ 來²⁰ 却²⁰ 就²⁰ 要²⁰
 爲¹⁸ 大¹⁸ 聲¹⁸ 叫¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 故¹⁸ 意¹⁸ 的¹⁸ 不¹⁸ 答¹⁸ 應¹⁸ 這¹⁸ 豈¹⁸ 不¹⁸ 是¹⁸ 領¹⁸ 謝¹⁸ 就¹⁸ 是¹⁸ 喇¹⁸ ○ 我¹⁸ 特¹⁸
 老¹⁸ 兄¹⁸ 既¹⁸ 有¹⁸ 處¹⁸ 的¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 這¹⁸ 是¹⁸ 本¹⁸ 打¹⁸ 心¹⁸ 裏¹⁸ 的¹⁸ 話¹⁸ 呢¹⁸ 還¹⁸ 是¹⁸ 牙¹⁸ 嘴¹⁸ 外¹⁸ 的¹⁸ 話¹⁸ 呢¹⁸
 並¹⁸ 不¹⁸ 是¹⁸ 有¹⁸ 心¹⁸ 的¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 這¹⁸ 是¹⁸ 本¹⁸ 打¹⁸ 心¹⁸ 裏¹⁸ 的¹⁸ 話¹⁸ 呢¹⁸ 還¹⁸ 是¹⁸ 牙¹⁸ 嘴¹⁸ 外¹⁸ 的¹⁸ 話¹⁸ 呢¹⁸
 心¹⁸ 比¹⁸ 人¹⁸ 心¹⁸ 不¹⁸ 可¹⁸ 想¹⁸ 結¹⁸ 他¹⁸ 成¹⁸ 人¹⁸ 誰¹⁸ 知¹⁸ 他¹⁸ 就¹⁸ 是¹⁸ 沒¹⁸ 有¹⁸ 出¹⁸ 息¹⁸ ○ 應¹⁸ 當¹⁸ 將¹⁸ 己¹⁸ 自¹⁸
 滿¹⁸ 心¹⁸ 裏¹⁸ 要¹⁸ 巴¹⁸ 想¹⁸ 他¹⁸ 成¹⁸ 人¹⁸ 誰¹⁸ 知¹⁸ 他¹⁸ 就¹⁸ 是¹⁸ 沒¹⁸ 有¹⁸ 出¹⁸ 息¹⁸ ○ 應¹⁸ 當¹⁸ 將¹⁸ 己¹⁸ 自¹⁸
 打¹⁸ 着¹⁸ 意¹⁸ 說¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 還¹⁸ 叫¹⁸ 他¹⁸ 往¹⁸ 東¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 偏¹⁸ 往¹⁸ 西¹⁸ 叫¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 打¹⁸ 狗¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 偏¹⁸ 打¹⁸ 雞¹⁸ ○ 我¹⁸
 有¹⁸ 意¹⁸ 說¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 還¹⁸ 叫¹⁸ 他¹⁸ 往¹⁸ 東¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 偏¹⁸ 往¹⁸ 西¹⁸ 叫¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 打¹⁸ 狗¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 偏¹⁸ 打¹⁸ 雞¹⁸ ○ 我¹⁸
 夫¹⁸ 看¹⁸ 孩¹⁸ 子¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 還¹⁸ 叫¹⁸ 他¹⁸ 往¹⁸ 東¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 偏¹⁸ 往¹⁸ 西¹⁸ 叫¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 打¹⁸ 狗¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 偏¹⁸ 打¹⁸ 雞¹⁸ ○ 我¹⁸
 的¹⁸ 呢¹⁸ ○ 我¹⁸ 特¹⁸ 爲¹⁸ 去¹⁸ 找¹⁸ 他¹⁸ 他¹⁸ 故¹⁸ 意¹⁸ 的¹⁸ 躲¹⁸ 了¹⁸ ○ 單¹⁸ 爲¹⁸ 出¹⁸ 上¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 的¹⁸ 工¹⁸
 單¹⁸ 爲¹⁸ 出¹⁸ 上¹⁸ 你¹⁸ 的¹⁸ 工¹⁸

associate, that you must needs make friends with a vagabond?
 10 I went expressly to find him, but he purposely avoided me.
 11 It was your only business to watch the child, and yet you allowed him to creep into the water.
 12 That was only a thoughtless speech of his. He was not intending to reprove you.
 13 When told to go east, you perversely go west; when told to strike the dog, you purposely strike the chickens.
 14 I was sincerely hoping that I could make a man of him, but I find there is no outcome in him.
 15 You should measure others' feelings by your own, and not purposely stir up people's indignation.
 16 He did not see you and so knocked you over. It was quite unintentional.
 17 Do you really mean this, or is it only mere talk?
 18 Seeing you have prepared it specially for me, I cannot refuse to accept the favor.
 19 I took pains to call you in a loud voice, and you purposely did not answer. You are trying to earn a flogging, are you?
 20 I charged you not to climb the tree and yet you persist in doing so. If by chance you should fall down, that will be the end of you.
 21 You know very well that the young people were to blame, yet you persist

VOCABULARY.

- 滿心 *Man³ hsin¹*. The whole heart, wholly; bent on, bound to:—see Sub.
- 作對 *Tsoa⁴ tui⁴*:.....To act as an enemy.
- 無來由 *Wu² lai² yu²*. A tramp, a renegade, a worthless scamp:—Note (9).
- 無賴子 *Wu² lai⁴ tsi³*:.....The same.
- 爬 *P'a²*:.....To creep, to crawl. Also *p'a¹*.
- 巴想 *Pa¹ hsiang³*. To desire greatly, to long for, to hope for. (s.)
- 領謝 *Ling³ hsie⁴*. To return thanks, to accept a favor [for which thanks are due].
- 護短 *Hu⁴ twan³*. To screen a fault, to condone, to excuse.
- 好事 *Hao⁴ shi⁴*. To be a busybody, to love scandal; to be fond of amusement.
- 柱 *Chu⁴*:.....A pillar, a post; a main dependence.
- 誕 *Tan⁴*:.....To boast, to tell lies; disorderly.
- 掉誕 *Tiao⁴ tan⁴*. To tell lies, to talk at random; mischievous, incorrigible.
- 掉脾 *Tiao⁴ p'i²*. Mischievous, perverse, incorrigible.
- 蛤 *Koa¹, Ka¹*:.....A crepitating sound. See *k'oa²*.
- 鈴 *Koa⁴*:.....A creaking sound.
- 蛤吧蛤吧 *Koa¹ pa¹*. To crack, to snap, to crepitate, to click.
- 鈴扎鈴扎 *Koa⁴ cha¹*:.....The same.

第 一 百 六 十 課

LESSON CLX.

以掙我不點告我還錢打你
 儉兩不不是訴實能來着他的就
 省三去是是。係還。○別講的滿
 也吊你。○你。是。是。的。身
 是錢。就。仍。你。是。不。的。是。口
 養五該。舊。們。是。知。的。也
 活六不。應。是。同。道。賭。博。沒。有。也
 不口來。該。彼。胞。即。博。賬。嗎。○就。未
 過人子嗎。○他。就。兄。使。便。知。道。也。必
 來的。花。消。○他。每。打。着。不。所。問。的。錢。有。錢。○
 你。便。便。月。縱。之。着。敢。的。的。我。本。就
 單。能。只。然。有。敢。的。的。我。本。就

- 1 Even if your whole body were full of mouths, you could not lie out of it.
- 2 Even supposing he should have the best of luck, it is not likely that he can recover his capital.
- 3 The fact is I have not the money, and even if I had it, I would not pay his gambling debts.
- 4 I really know nothing of the matter you are inquiring about, and even if I did know, I would not dare to tell you.
- 5 You are own brothers, and even if some wrong has been done, you should still mutually forbear.
- 6 Even though I did not go, was that a sufficient reason for your not coming?
- 7 He only earns two or three thousand cash a month and has a family of five or six to provide for, so that even if he does know how to economize, he will not be able to support them.

NOTES.

1 明知故問, *knowing perfectly well yet make a point of asking.*

9 什麼人不好交. *What man is not fit to associate with? that is, are there not enough of good people with whom to associate, that you, etc.? 無來由, a man without family, friends or property,—a reckless tramp. A Chinaman's sense of duty and obligation is largely dependent on his connection with family and property. Some would write 無賴油, explaining thus,—無賴 is to live by one's wits and 油子 or 老油子 is an expert at deceit, a slippery fellow, hence 無賴油 is one who is expert at living without a support. 無賴的 is used in the South and 無賴子 in the North.*

13 說對一個令人反感的人.

17 牙外的話 *words outside the teeth; that is, jesting*

or deceitful words which mean nothing. 嘴上的話 *mere talk, empty words.*

18 領謝 differs from 領情 in that the latter always implies the acceptance of the favor, whereas the former is sometimes used as a polite form of declining a favor.

22 我偏不下去 means more than, *I won't do it. It means, I won't do it just because you order me to do it, or, the more you tell me to come down the more I won't come down.*

26 四不像 was originally applied to a mythological animal that was neither bird, beast, fish nor reptile, but a composite of all. The term has been adapted, and is used of one who is neither 士, 農, 工 nor 商, neither scholar, farmer, artisan nor merchant, that is, a clown, a duds, a man without any profession or means of living. 粧模做樣 is a rhetorical transposition of 粧做模樣.

LESSON CLX.

HYPOTHETICAL WORDS AND PHRASES.

就 or 就是 Even if:—Les. 44 Sub. 4 (1).
 就算是 Even supposing, even if, even on the supposition.
 就打着 or 就打之 Even if, even on the supposition.
 雖就是 Even should, even although.
 即便 Even if, even in case.
 即便 *chi' pien't*

即使 *shih* The same. (s.) A book term.
 即或 Even if, even in case.
 縱 If, even if, even although. *tsung*
 縱然 Even if, even though, even allowing.
 縱就是 Even if, even supposing, even admitting.

人獨騎萬不可去，就是你有力氣，也當知道好漢打不出村去。○有理行遍天下，無理寸步難行，縱然他們人多，就不講理了嗎。○這個情我實在不願意去，討求即便我去，也恐怕不下來。○學生在專心致志的時候，縱然聽見街上有玩耍活龍的，他的心也不外散。○莫說你打不過他，就算是能打過他，豈不惹下後患了嗎。○看他那個灑脫的樣兒，縱有些小過錯，也不足為怪。○正道，若是閉了關的時候，縱有一萬兵，也上去不得，你二位焉能上去。○你這個人實在扯拉惹忽，借了人的傢什，永遠不送，就算是失落不掉了，也不怕耽誤人家用嗎。○人有能事的，有不能事的，能事的，雖就是半路上變

- 8 You must not think of going single-handed. Even if you are strong, you must remember that one fighting man cannot put to rout a whole town.
- 9 With reason on one's side, he can go anywhere; without it, it is hard to take a single step. Even if their number is great, will they not listen to reason?
- 10 I am very loth to go and ask this favor; and even if I do go, I fear I shall not be successful.
- 11 When the student's mind is intently engaged in study, his attention would not be distracted even though he heard that they were exhibiting a live dragon on the street.
- 12 The fact is you are not able to beat him; and even supposing you were able, would you not be laying up trouble for the future?
- 13 Judging from the free and easy way he has, it would not be at all strange if he had some trifling faults.
- 14 When once Ts'ao Chêng Tao has closed up the barriers, even if you had ten thousand soldiers you could not force them; how then can you two do it?
- 15 You are certainly a careless fellow, borrowing people's tools and never returning them. Even supposing you do not lose them, are you not afraid you will disoblige the owners?
- 16 Some men have tact, others have not. When a man has this faculty, even should the aspect of an affair change

VOCABULARY.

- 縱 *Tsung*⁴. Remiss, careless; to indulge, to give rein to; even if, allowing, supposing; perpendicular.
- 胞 *P'ao*¹, *Pao*¹. The placenta; *uterine*; a vesicle, a blister; a fish bladder.
- 同胞 *T'ung*² *pao*¹. Uterine brothers, own brothers.
- 灑脫 *Sa*³ *t'oa*¹. Careless, free and easy; reckless, headlong.
- 磊 *La*³. Uneven, disorderly, unkempt.
- 磊忽 *La*³ *hu*¹. Negligent, heedless, careless; slovenly.
- 扯疲 *Ch'e*³ *p'i*². The same. (s.)
- 變卦 *Pien*⁴ *kwa*⁴. Change of circumstances, a new turn of affairs:—Note (16).
- 扶持 *Fu*² *ch'i*³. To hold up, to support; to assist, to help.
- 揣 *Ch'wai*³. To feel after, to estimate, to guess.
- 揣摸 *Ch'wai*³ *mo*¹. To feel after; to think over, to surmise, to fancy.
- 估摸 *Ku*¹ *mo*¹. To estimate, to conjecture, to fancy, to imagine.
- 領理 *Ling*³ *li*³. To lead, to conduct, to show the way.
- 領路 *Ling*³ *lu*⁴. The same.
- 矮 *Ts'oa*². A person of small stature, a dwarf.
- 瘰癧 *Lod*³, *Lei*³. Scrofulous ulcers, king's evil.
- 瘰 *Li*¹. Scrofulous swellings or ulcers on the neck.

了卦，他也能隨機應變，把事辦妥了。○已經十五六歲的東西，還能跑掉嗎？答：即便跑不掉了，你一時閒找不着他，他家裏活不見人，死不見屍，能不問你要嗎？○古語說，單絲不成線，孤樹不成林，他縱有頂天的本事，沒有人扶持，還行嗎？○我揣摸着他，不敢去告，縱然就是去告，他也不佔了上風。○若是要臉的人有了錯處，縱然人家不說他，他也很覺慚愧，若是不臉的人有了錯處，縱然人家說他，他也不知羞恥。○這樣的匪類，還能養出個好兒子來嗎？縱然是有個好兒子，也必叫他領路壞了。○你要說張家那個矮子，生癩瘡，不但頸子，連胸膛和胳膊，他母親害癩子，頸子，上有瘡，連胸膛和胳膊。

Ko' baich
ta' er

Ko' chow
yung
chou

when it is half done, yet he can adapt himself to the circumstances and bring it to a satisfactory issue.

17 Can a brat of fifteen or sixteen lose himself entirely? Ans. Even suppose he cannot be entirely lost, yet if, for the time being, you cannot produce him, will not his family, not finding him either alive or dead, demand him at your hand?

18 There is an old saying, "A single filament of silk does not make a thread, a single tree does not make a grove." Even if he had the most transcendent ability, he could not succeed without the help of others.

19 I fancy he will not venture to go to law; and even if he should, he will not make anything by it.

20 When a man who has any self-respect is in the wrong, even though no one should reprove him, he still experiences a deep sense of humiliation; but when one who has lost all self-respect is in the wrong, he feels no shame even when reprovod.

21 Can a dissipated man like this bring up a virtuous son? If he should have a good son, he is certain to lead him astray.

22 Are you about to propose for that dwarf girl of the Changs'? Her mother was afflicted with scrofulous sores, having ulcers not only on her

癩瘡 A scrofulous ulcer, an indolent sore.
 癩子頸 Li⁴ tsi³ keng³. A scrofulous ulcer on the neck.
 臃 T'ang². Fat, plump; a protuberance; the breast.
 胸膛 Hsiung¹ t'ang². The bosom, the breast, the thorax.
 胳膊 Kod² chou³ wo¹. The armpit.
 癩 Lao². Any wasting disease.

癆病 Lao² ping⁴. Phthisis, consumption; any wasting disease.
 輔 Fu³. To help, to second, to assist.
 輔助 Fu³ chu⁴. To help, to assist, to succor, to lend one's aid.
 繫 Hsi⁴. Let down by a rope, to suspend; a suspension cord, a handle. Also chi⁴.
 削 Hsiao¹, Hsue¹. To pare off, to shave, to scrape; to extort; to deprive of.

NOTES.

4 是 is often omitted after 實係, but its use adds emphasis. As 係 (wén) and 是 (Mandarin) are really equivalents, the fact that 是 is thus used after 係 shows the extent to which the meaning of 係 is obscured in the phrase 實係.

5 同胞弟兄, sons of the same mother.
 8 單人獨馬 (or 驢), a single man, or a single horse (or horseman), a phrase derived from war, meaning that a single soldier, whether on foot or horse, is useless against numbers. The derived meaning is obvious.

裏也算安穩咯。
 治不好，那是他命該如此，於我們心
 定是什麼方兒，就治好了，即或到底
 頂了天喇。○從來說，有病亂投醫，不
 他的賣頭好，一天掙個百兒八十的，
 過是針尖削鐵的一點利兒，就算是
 以輔助你嗎。○現在挑八根股繩，也不
 麼一個矮子，身體那樣軟弱，他還能
 不傳在他身上嗎，即便不傳，你娶這
 窩裏，也都有瘡，而且又有癆病，還能

neck, but also on her breast and arms, and moreover she also has consumption, which diseases cannot but be transmitted to her daughter. Even if not transmitted, should you marry such a dwarf, with so weakly a body, can she be any help to you?

23 At present the money made by peddling is like the moiety of iron scraped from the point of a needle. Even granting that he is a good salesman, at the very most he can only make eighty or a hundred cash per day.

24 It is said, "When you are sick, call all the doctors you can." There is no knowing what prescription may cure him; and if after all he fails to be cured, it will be because it was so ordained by fate; our minds also will be at rest.

11 專心致志, *mind single and purpose fixed*; that is, the mind concentrated on one object, absorbed in thought. A ready made book phrase. 活龍, a live dragon. The reference is to the feast of lanterns on the 15th of the first month, when dragons composed of lanterns strung together are carried through the street, forming a spectacle of attractiveness which few boys could resist. Much less could they resist the exhibition of a real live dragon on the street.

15 For 蒸 some write 拉, but the former is the more suitable. It is probable that 拉疲 should also be written with 蒸.

16 能事, to have a capacity for managing things. 事 is used as a verb. 變了卦, change of diagram,—a figure

taken from the diagrams in the Book of Changes, which are used in divining and fortune-telling.

19 佔上風, to obtain the place or seat nearest the wind,—whoever is next the wind gets the first and freshest breeze, hence the meaning, to get the advantage of.

23 挑八股繩, to carry eight strands of rope. Peddlers carry their stock in two baskets or boxes, each suspended by four ropes. 針尖削鐵, to scrape iron from the point of a needle; that is, to make very small profits. 百 does not usually take 兒 after it. It is here added to separate the 百 from the number following. 賣頭好 may mean either makes good sales, or is a good salesman.

LESSON CLXI.

PHRASES OF RECURRENT TIME.

間或 Occasionally, sometimes, in case.

偶爾 Unexpectedly, occasionally, by times:—See Les. 115. Sub.

輕易 Lightly, thoughtlessly, not often. With a negative—seldom, rarely, scarcely ever.

半晌 For the most part, seldom, rarely,—always followed by a negative. (c.)

成久 For the most part, ordinarily. With a negative, rarely, hardly ever. (s.) [ever. (c.)]

幾工 Always with a negative,—rarely, hardly

VOCABULARY.

發市 Fa¹ shi⁴. To make sales, to have customers.

發利市 Fa¹ li⁴ shi⁴. The same. (s.)

僻 Pei⁴, Pi⁴. Quiet, private, secluded, out of the way. See pi⁴.

僻靜 Pei⁴ ching⁴. Secluded, out of the way, bye, retired.

知心 Chi¹ hsin¹. Congenial; like-minded, sympathetic.

倍 Pei⁴. Fold, times; to double.

第一百六十一課

LESSON CLXI.

我們家裏來，快請坐罷。○這¹⁰這樣的字眼兒，就是閒書上、間偶
 今日怎麼生了這麼大的氣呢。○你⁹是個希客，成久不
 箭的，差不多都是用鎗砲。○近⁷來上陣打仗，大半概響沒有用弓
 個半個小的，也都好用。○李⁸殿魁那個人，輕易不生氣
 見的時候，心裏必加倍的親熱。○這⁶都是好錢，間或有一
 到了人地兩生的地方，輕易遇不見個知心的，一旦遇
 處。○我⁴們這裏太僻靜喇，幾^輕易見不着個人來。○若⁵是
 那些大洋行，半^半輕^易不見他發^工利^市，逢發^利市，却就不在少
 今的官，輕易沒有動大板子打人的，常行都是小板子。○
 這句話，在本地並不是簡^直的，不說，問^偶或爾也有說的。○如²

- 1 This expression is not entirely unheard in this neighborhood; it is used occasionally.
- 2 At the present time, magistrates do not often punish with the large bamboo, they commonly use the small bamboo.
- 3 Those large foreign hongts seldom seem to have a customer, but when they have one their sales are always heavy.
- 4 Our place here is entirely too retired. We rarely see any one.
- 5 If one goes where both people and place are strange, he seldom meets with a congenial spirit; when however he does meet with such a one, he is sure to be doubly drawn towards him.
- 6 These are all good cash, if occasionally there are one or two small ones they will still pass.
- 7 In the wars of recent times bows and arrows have rarely been used. Nearly all use muskets and cannon.
- 8 That man Li Tien K'wei rarely gets angry; how comes it that he got into such a passion to-day?
- 9 You are quite a stranger. It is a rare thing that you come to our house. Please take a seat.
- 10 This phraseology is occasionally found in novels, but I have never come across it in the classics.

- 5 加倍 *Chia¹ pei⁴*. To add as much again, to double.
- 6 一半個 *I¹ pan⁴ kou⁴*. An occasional one, one here and there, a few.
- 6 一個半個 *I¹ kou⁴ pan⁴ kou⁴*. The same. (s.)
- 6 好使 *Hao³ shi³*. Good to use, suitable, serviceable, current, passable.
- 6 好用 *Hao³ yung⁴*. The same. (s.)
- 7 上陣 *Shang⁴ chen⁴*. To go into battle.
- 7 弓 *Kung¹*. A bow; archery.
- 7 殿 *Tien⁴*. A grand hall, a palace, temple.
- 10 字眼 *Tsi⁴ yen³*. Form of speech, phraseology, words.
- 10 閒書 *Hsien³ shu¹*. Novels, light literature.

- 經書 *Ching¹ shu¹*. Classical books, the writings of the sages.
- 寡婦 *Kwa³ fu⁴*. A widow. //
- 路兵 *Lu⁴ ping¹*. Guards on the highway, patrol, men.
- 失事 *Shi¹ shi⁴*. To lose by thieves or robbers, to have a mishap.
- 鼎 *Ting³*. A three-legged caldron; firm, settled. //3
- 狡 *Chiao³*. Crafty, wily, specious.
- 狡狴 *Chiao³ hwa²*. Crafty, cunning, subtle, treacherous.
- 獻勤 *Hsien⁴ ch'in²*. To make capital of one's zeal for another, to act the sycophant, to toady.

家裏去，那一天我去了，心裏指望吃他一頓好飯，他竟端上
 不敢說話。篋子莊上我親家，好不通情理，我輕易不到他
 久穿不着。這以後我叫他拾錯子拾怕了，在他跟前，輕易
 山珍海味，只是成半輕久吃不着，也並非沒有綾羅緞疋，只是
 的。要飽總得家常飯，要暖還得粗布衣，我家裏並非沒有
 大人跟前，勤功十分得寵，所以逢他說話，輕易沒有敢駁文
 兵看守，幾久少，有失事的。朱萬鼎為人極其狡猾，常在魯
 裏去。○走路還是走大路妥當，間或有險要的地處，都有路
 在他男人既然死了，若沒有要緊的事情，不好輕易往他家
 或爾有用的，經書上從來沒見。○俗語說，寡婦門前是非多，現

- 11 The saying is, "Many scandals flit about a widow's door." Seeing her husband is now deceased, if you have no important business, it is best for you not to go there when you can avoid it.
- 12 When traveling it is best to go by the great road, since in case of any special danger there is a guard of soldiers at hand. It is a rare thing that there is any mishap.
- 13 Chu Wan Ting is an exceedingly crafty man. He is constantly bringing his services to the notice of Lu Ta-jên with whom he is in high favor, so that when he says a thing no one lightly ventures to oppose.
- 14 For satisfying the appetite ordinary diet is the best, and for warmth coarse clothing is the best. It is not that we have no delicacies in our house, but ordinarily we do not eat them; nor is it that we have no silk and satin, but ordinarily we do not wear them.
- 15 Since that time I have been tripped up by him so often that I have grown wary, and seldom venture to say anything in his presence.
- 16 That relative of mine in Lou-tsi-chwang has no idea of the fitness of things. I seldom go to his house, but one day I went hoping to get one good meal off him, when, behold, he simply set out a saucer of salt

ching
kuar

- 13 獻功 Hsien⁴ kung¹. To make capital of one's merit, to curry favor, to act the flunkey.
- 13 寵 Ch'ung³. To think highly of, to favor, to prefer; to indulge, to dote on.
- 13 得寵 Tê² ch'ung³. To be in favor; to be indulged.
- 13 駁文 Poá² wên². To contradict, to take issue with, to oppose.
- 14 家常 Chia¹ ch'ang². Common, ordinary, usual, every-day.
- 14 山珍 Shan¹ chên¹. Savory dishes from the hills, game.
- 16 蘿蔔 Lod². Parasitic plants.
- 16 花言巧語 Pod¹, Pei⁴. A fragrant white flower.

- 蘿蔔 Radishes, turnips, carrots, etc.
- 花言巧語 Hwa¹ yen² ch'iao³ yü³. A pompous, affected, or specious style of speech.
- 巧言花語 Ch'iao³ yen² hwa¹ yü³. The same.
- 實實落落 Shi² loá⁴. Real, bona fide, veritable; plain, substantial.
- 苟儉 Kou³ chien³. Stingy, mean, shabby; a niggard, a skinflint.
- 畜鬼 Sé⁴ kwei³. A miser, a niggard. (s.)
- 貓兒頭 Mao¹ ér² t'ou². An owl.
- 解手 Chie³ shou³. To attend to a call of nature, to ease oneself.
- 跌死 Tie¹ sí³. To fall and kill oneself, to be killed by a fall:—Les. 183.

個跟頭，一下跌死了，你看到底靈不靈呢。

很覺喪氣，後來到了半夜，他要出來解手，一出門跌了一

見一個貓兒頭，在院子樹上叫了三聲，又笑了三聲，他就

道士，前年四月間，犯了癆病，吐血很重，到第三天晚上，聽

不祥，這個我可十分相信，在我莊的西廟上，有個姓子的

些妖巧講究，我輕易不信，惟獨說貓兒頭叫喚，必定主着

個，也必是爲窮所逼，斷沒有和這個老畜鬼一樣的。○這

不說心裏說，像這樣的實落，輕易却沒大有，偶或有一半

說，到我們這裏，不用虛之套套子，全是實實落落的，我嘴裏

一碟子鹹蘿蔔，拿上兩個窩頭，女親家還花言巧語的

turnips and a couple of kao-liang cakes, his wife meanwhile going on to say, in the most plausible style, "When you come to see us there is no occasion for putting on a great show of formality, so we just have everything plain and substantial." I said nothing, but I thought to myself: It is not often one gets treated quite so plainly as this; and if occasionally such a case should occur, it is from the necessities of poverty. I venture you will not find another like this old skinflint.

17 I don't generally believe in these superstitious notions; but that the hooting of an owl is a sure sign of bad luck, I do most thoroughly believe. At the temple to the west of our village there lived a Taoist priest by the name of Yü. In the fourth month of the year before last he was taken with consumption, and began to spit a great deal of blood. On the evening of the third day he heard an owl on a tree in the yard give three hoots and three laughs, which he felt was a very bad omen. Afterwards, getting up in the middle of the night to attend to a call of nature, he tripped as he went out of the door, and falling headlong killed himself. Could any omen be more undoubted than that?

NOTES.

2 The 大板子 is a strip of bamboo about three or four inches wide and five feet long, and is wielded by the executioner with two hands. The 小板子 is about two or two and a half inches wide and three feet long, and is usually wielded with one hand. The beating is done on the bare thighs, the culprit being held down on his face by two lictors, one sitting on his shoulders and the other on his feet.

4 The 來 at the close serves simply as a final particle, equivalent to 了 or 喇.

6 間或 is not much used in Peking, and 卽或 is here supplied in its place by the Peking teacher. It is not, however, the equivalent of 間或 which is followed in the translation. If 卽或 be followed, then "if occasionally" should be even if.

9 希客 A rare guest, one whose visits are "few and far between." 快 is used to express cordiality, but will hardly bear translating.

13 獻勤 To make a business of bringing one's diligent services prominently to the notice of a master or superior,

and so curry favor and gain confidence. 獻功 means substantially the same thing, but is a less offensive term.

14 山珍 is rarely separated from its companion phrase 海味, though the latter is frequently used alone. 珍 is not often used of things to eat, but is so used in this phrase in allusion to the cost and difficulty of procurement. 緞疋, webs of satin. The addition of 疋 gives the idea of a considerable quantity. There is also the analogous phrase, 布疋.

15 拾漏子 or 錯, to gather up a slip or mistake; that is, to trip up, to catch. 找 is also used instead of 拾.

16 窩窩頭 Cakes in the shape of a bird's nest; usually made of kao-liang meal, sometimes of corn meal. They are largely eaten by the poorer classes in Northern China. The 窩 is not always repeated. 女親家 or 親家母, a son's wife's mother, or a daughter's husband's mother. Both terms are widely used though neither is entirely t'ung-hsing. 親家婆 is also used.

請¹你去少等一等，立時就²好喇。○他們一聽說，隨即³去看了⁴一⁵。○我把東西一交給我，隨時就回去⁶了。○我出去買一點菜，立刻就回來。○有⁷話一直⁸抄⁹出他的批來，隨即寫¹⁰了一個¹¹訴¹²呈¹³。○人¹⁴已經¹⁵病了。○你不必回下處，就從這裏一直的去罷。○馬¹⁶曰：「德真是聰明過人，無論甚麼書，看過一遍，立刻就明白了。」○就打着他見信立時起行，這時候也不來。

LESSON CLXII.

- 1 Please wait a little ; it will take but a moment.
- 2 As soon as they heard of it, they went at once and took a look.
- 3 As soon as he had delivered the things to me, he at once returned.
- 4 I am going out to buy a few vegetables and will return immediately.
- 5 If you have anything to say, speak it out ; why so much humming and hawing ?
- 6 When we had secured a copy of his verdict, we at once wrote a defence and handed it in from the roadside.
- 7 When they had finished their lunch, they started forthwith.
- 8 When a man's disease has reached such a point as that, even though the medical treatment insures recovery, yet the patient cannot be well in a moment.
- 9 You need not return to your lodgings ; why not go directly from here ?
- 10 Ma Yü Tê's ability is really extraordinary. No matter what book it is, let him but read it over once, and forthwith he knows all about it.
- 11 Even supposing he started the moment he received the letter, he

LESSON CLXII.

INSTANTANEITY.

This lesson is closely connected with Les. 115. The two subjects differ as the word *suddenly* differs from the word *immediately*.

- 立時 Instantly, immediately, in a moment.
- 立刻 The same.
- 立即 At once, immediately, forthwith.
- 登時 Instantly, in a moment, immediately. (s.)
- 隨即 At once, forthwith.

- 隨時 At once, forthwith, immediately.
- 隨就 Forthwith, without delay.
- 隨趕着 At once, forthwith, immediately. (N.)
- 隨跟之 The same. (c.)
- 隨跟身 The same. (s.)
- 即時 Forthwith, instantly.
- 馬上 At once, promptly, quickly :—Les. 118.
- 一直的 Forthwith, straightway, directly.

VOCABULARY.

- 半吐半咽 Pan⁴ t'u³ pan⁴ yen⁴. To hesitate, to stammer, to hum and haw. (N.)
- 半含半吐 Pan⁴ han² pan⁴ t'u³. The same. (c. & s.)
- 半吞半吐 Pan⁴ t'un¹ pan⁴ t'u³. The same. (c. & s.)

- 訴呈 Su⁴ ch'êng². A counter accusation, a defence, a vindication.
- 輿 Yü². A chariot, a carriage ; to contain.
- 攔輻 Lan² chiao⁴. To stop an official chair to present a petition :—Note (6). (N.)
- 攔路 Lan² lu⁴. The same. (c.)
- 攔輿 Lan² yü². The same. (s.)

○罷喇，你馬上交來三百兩，也准你罷。受人之託，必當
 線傳信，不論相隔多遠，從這頭一發，那頭立時就知道了。
 話立即轉身走了，也不知他有甚麼要緊的事。○若用電
 往那裏去找呢。○王先生進來連坐也沒坐，只說了幾句
 ○你看路上有多少人，管保隨隨隨跟跟跟身身身就就叫人家拾去喇，你
 你就一直的去做罷，你這麼當有作無的，還能混過去嗎。
 鬆了口，應當隨即和他立立約字，恐其事緩有變，該你做的，
 的。○王文祥並沒來辭行，竟一直的走了嗎。○賣主既然
 喇。○一¹³地¹²已經早透了，你看澆上兩瓢水，隨隨跟着就吃掉
 得不到。

could not have arrived by this time.
 12 The ground is already dried through. Notice when you pour on a few dipperfuls of water, how it is absorbed at once.
 13 When I spoke of my money being missing, his face instantly flushed; in all probability he is the man who stole it.
 14 Wang Wên Hsiang did not come to say good bye, but just went straight off?
 15 The seller having yielded assent, you ought forthwith to have drawn up an agreement, lest delay should lead to a change of mind [on the seller's part].
 16 Whatever you ought to do, go ahead and do it. You cannot get out of it by ignoring the matter in this way.
 17 Look at the number of people there are on the road. I'll warrant you some one picked it up immediately. What chance is there of your finding it?
 18 Mr. Wang came in but did not even sit down; he simply said a few words and turned about and left at once. I do not know what important business was on hand.
 19 In sending a message by telegraph, no matter what the distance, as soon as the message is started from this end it is instantly known at the other end.
 20 All right; pay over three hundred taels promptly, and I'll let you off.

- 6 日 Yüeh⁴... To speak, to utter; designated, called.
- 10 過人 Kwod⁴ jên². Beyond others, beyond the average, extraordinary.
- 12 澆 Chiao¹... To irrigate, to water, to pour on.
- 12 滲 Shên⁴... To leak, to soak into, to absorb.
- 14 辭行 Ts'ü² hsing². To take leave, to bid adieu, (used of the person departing).
- 15 賣主 Mai⁴ chu³... The seller.
- 15 鬆口 Sung¹ k'ou³. To yield assent, to concede, to agree to.
- 14 緩 Hwan³. Slow, lax; easily, gently; to delay, to neglect. (w.)
- 21 親口 Ch'in¹ k'ou³. With one's own mouth, explicitly.
- 21 遲延 Ch'ü² yen². To delay, to put off, to procrastinate, to loiter.
- 22 欽 Ch'in¹... To respect; imperial, governmental.

- 欽差 Ch'in¹ ch'ai¹. An imperial commissioner, a minister, an envoy.
- 升 Shêng¹. A measure of ten 合, varying in different places from a pint to a gallon; to rise, to ascend, to advance.
- 升轎 Shêng¹ chiao⁴. To get into or mount a sedan chair:—Note (23).
- 姑媽 Ku¹ ma¹... A father's sister.
- 軋 Ya⁴. The creaking sound of a wheel; to grind or crush on a碾.
- 颶風 Hsüan⁴... A revolving wind.
- 颶風 Hsüan⁴ fêng¹... A whirlwind.
- 拋 P'ao¹. To cast off, to reject, to throw overboard; to project, to fling.
- 錨 Mao²... An anchor, a grappling iron.
- 艙 Ts'ang¹. The compartments of a ship, the hold.

mien mills low

又蓋嚴艙口，免得灌進水去。
 咯。○我們一知道來了颶風，隨即落了篷，拋下錨。
 了馬上就來。○我的姑媽正在那裏套着牲口軛。
 隨就同之着你走。○他說還有一點點事兒，辦妥當
 飯立即升轎，連歇息也沒歇息。○等我換上衣裳，
 欽差怎麼來的這樣快呢。○欽差到了公館，吃了
 米先生來找你，看見你不在家，就走了。
 辦，不要遲延，叫人着急。○十點鐘的時候，有一位
 忠人之事，你既然親口應承了，就當立刻給人

- 21 "When you receive a trust from any one, you should faithfully execute it." Having explicitly made the promise, you should redeem it at once and not cause anxiety by your delay.
- 22 About ten o'clock there was a Mr. Mi came looking for you. When he found you were not at home he immediately went away.
- 23 How did the minister arrive so quickly? Ans. When he reached the hotel he took dinner and forthwith got into his chair and started. He did not even take time to rest.
- 24 Wait till I have changed my dress, and I will go with you at once.
- 25 He says he has a very little business, and that as soon as it is finished he will come at once.
- 26 My aunt was just hitching up the donkey to hull millet, but seeing me coming, she at once unharnessed the donkey and lead (escorted) me into the house.
- 27 As soon as we knew that a whirlwind was approaching, we at once took in sail and cast anchor, and also battened down the hatchway to prevent the water from pouring in.

you
water
Kuan
hatch

ping mahai
pie cast
mao anchor

NOTES.

5 半吐半咽, *half spitting out, half swallowing*, or 半含半吐, *half holding in, half spitting out*, a fair equivalent of *hum and haw*.

6 The 批 is the comment or verdict of the magistrate on the indictment of the prosecutor. This verdict is usually posted in front of the yamen, or it may be obtained in advance from the under officer having it in charge by paying him a small fee. When a man is accused he always puts in a vindication or counter indictment. Custom allows any man or woman to present a petition or indictment to an officer as he is going along the street in his chair. The party usually kneels in the middle of the street in front of the chair holding up the paper in his or her hand, when the chair-bearers

will stop (especially if tipped) and allow of its presentation.

7 晌尖 means the noonday halt for food and rest. 中尖 and 中伙 are both used in the same sense in the South.

15 事緩有變 *A thing delayed may change*,—a book expression. 緩 is used colloquially, only in a few such phrases.

16 當有作無, *to regard that which is as if it were not, to ignore*. The reverse phrase 當無作有 is also used.

21 The use of 之 indicates that the expression in which it occurs is derived from books.

23 升轎 is formal and official. The term in common use is 上轎.

LESSON CLXIII.

ADVERSATIVES OF SURPRISE.

10 Nov 1920
shoi lias

誰料 Who would have thought, to everybody's surprise. [surprise.]

誰知 But behold, what do you think, to my

不料 Behold, who would have supposed, unexpectedly. [know.]

那知 Dear me, but do you know, don't you

殊不知 Don't you know, but in fact, where-as in fact. (Bookish.)

豈知 The fact is, but you know,—with a negative—don't you know, you ought to know.

竟不知 Yet after all, but behold.

第一百六十三課

LESSON CLXIII.

昨日那樣的晴天，誰料今天下這樣的大雨。○我指望勸勸他，好了，誰知越勸他，他越生氣。○我在那裏向東踱着，不料叫他一把推在崖坡子底下，把手腕子獨了。○爲這麼一點小事，誰料鬧到這麼個分兒。○我當是這兩年他歸了正道，那知他還是無所不爲。○小時看着他極好，誰料他長成這麼個東西。○別人糟蹋我倒還罷了，不料自己的弟兄也糟蹋起來喇。○丁鳳鳴、縣府考都，不怎麼樣，誰料院考竟進了個第一。○我打算投摸了他去，他必然有些幫助，誰知他竟抹反臉無情。○自己喫喝嫖賭吹，却不叫後人跟他學，殊不知上梁不正底梁歪，有其父必有其子。○你怎麼挂

- 1 As clear as it was yesterday, who would have thought that to-day there would be such a heavy rain?
- 2 I hoped that a little exhortation would make it all right, but, to my surprise, the more I exhorted him the angrier he became.
- 3 I was squatting there facing the east, when, all unexpectedly, with one push he threw me down the bank and sprained my wrist.
- 4 Who would have thought that a quarrel like this would have arisen from so small a matter?
- 5 I supposed that during these past two years he had reformed; but, dear me! there is nothing too bad for him to do.
- 6 When he was a boy he was very promising; who would have thought he would grow up to be such a renegade as this?
- 7 It is quite enough for others to abuse me; who would have supposed that my own brother would join in the abuse?
- 8 At the district and prefectural examinations, Ting Fêng Ming was only mediocre, but, to everybody's surprise, at the general examinations, he got his degree and stood first on the roll.
- 9 I thought when I applied to him, that he would certainly give me some assistance, but, to my astonishment, he treated me with cold indifference.
- 10 He himself indulges in every kind of dissipation, yet does not allow his offspring to imitate him; but don't you know that "when the upper beam is out of true, the lower one also

VOCABULARY.

- 晴 *Ch'ing*².....Clear, cloudless, blue sky.
 殊 *Shu*¹. To kill, to exterminate; unlike, differing; really, very.
 3 躑 *Tun*².....To squat, to sit on the heels.
 3 崖 *Yai*².....A precipice, a bank, a declivity.
 3 搗 *Ch'od*¹. To pierce, to harpoon; to jar by a fall, to sprain.
 4 物件 *Wu*⁴ *chien*⁴. An article, an object, a thing, a concrete some-

- thing; a blockhead, a good-for-nothing; a renegade.
 挂 *Chu*³.....To prop; to lean upon. //
 楊 *Kwai*³.....A staff, a crutch. //
 楊棍 *Kwai*³ *kun*⁴.....A staff, a crutch. //
 趾 *Ts'i*³, *Ts'ai*³.....To tread, to step, to stand on. //
 脚手 *Chiod*³ *shou*³.....A scaffold, scaffolding. //
 趾脚 *Ts'i*³ *chiod*³.....The same:—Note (11). //
 跳架 *T'iao*⁴ *chia*⁴.....The same. //

*Chinese saying
anecdotes*

*hair
slow
regarded
25-29-
- present*

*1600
Chinese
202/1/5*

*rank
child
control*

把腿跌壞了。○看他所穿戴的，真好像個富家公子，那知道從頭到腳都是借的。○前日指望騙他來，打一頓出出氣，不料轉被他打了個不堪。○他日指望騙他來，打一頓出出氣，不好，豈知若是不管他，這正是看不上他，不願意爲他費事。罷了罷了，我從多年和你交往，竟不知你身上有這麼大的工夫。○那些沒有見識的人，都以爲富貴在乎風水，殊不知或富或貴，全是上天爲主，於風水毫無相干。○他仗着官銜大，權柄大，就橫行霸道，欺壓黎民，覺着沒有人擋得住。○喇，殊不知天外有天，人外有人，叫劉大人一本把他辦事，竟不知他我還存着一個照應他的心，怕他年輕不會辦事，竟不知他

will be askew?" "Like father likeson."
 11 How is it that you are using a crutch?
 Ans. Day before yesterday I was repairing a house for the Sun family, when what should I do but fall from the scaffolding and hurt my leg?
 12 Judging from his dress he appears to be a wealthy young aristocrat, but do you know, the entire suit is borrowed.
 13 I hoped when I inveigled him over here the day before yesterday, that I would have the satisfaction of giving him a beating, when, behold, he turned the tables on me and gave me a frightful pommeling.
 14 He simply thinks that when the teacher does not punish him, he is treating him kindly, while the fact is, if he does not punish him, it is because he has given him up and is unwilling to take any more trouble with him.
 15 Well, well, I have been acquainted with you all these years and yet I never knew you had such skill as this.
 16 People of no independence of judgment imagine that riches and honor depend on feng-shui, whereas in fact, both riches and honor depend on the will of Heaven and have nothing whatever to do with feng-shui.
 17 Presuming on the possession of a high rank and great power, he acted in a reckless and unscrupulous manner, oppressing the people and imagining that nothing could withstand him. But you know, "There is no height that has not a height above it, and no man who has not his superior." Liu Ta-jên by one bill of charges upset him.

- 12 公子 Kung¹ ts³. Son of a prince; son of a rich family, an aristocratic young man; a fop, a swell.
- 16 風水 Fêng¹ shui³. Geomancy:—Note (16).
- 15 相干 Hsiang¹ kan¹. Involved in, connected with, to have to do with.
- 17 銜 Hsien². To control; rank, official position.
- 11 官銜 Kwan¹ hsien². Official title or position, rank, office.
- 11 欺壓 Ch'i² ya⁴. To oppress, to despoil, to wrong.

- 恭道行 Ts'an¹. Same as 恭. *impress*
- 韻詩 Yün⁴. A rhyme, a chord; to rhyme.
- 嚴緊 Yen² chin³. Severe, exacting, strict.
- 施教 Shi¹ chiao⁴. To teach, to instruct; to propagate doctrines.
- 甘苦 Kan¹ k'u³. Bitterness, sorrow; straits, trials.

Chow 10¹ 10² 10³ 10⁴

幾固你緊說徒詩問章的
 升然你必打因文無六道
 幾逢實常就此怎數韻行
 碗買羅在招惹打有的敢還詩比
 也是就是不知學生的氣這也
 不容幾窮人的甘苦我們有錢的
 易斗幾人的甘苦我們有錢的人
 的。石、甘苦、我們、有錢的人、
 那知那些窮人、就是買米糧、
 買米糧、

- 18 At first I had an idea of helping him, fearing that being young he would not know how to manage his affairs, when, behold, his training is superior to that of any of us.
- 19 You all think that ability to write an essay in eight divisions and a poem in six rhymes, is what constitutes good scholarship, but do you not know that the learning of the world is boundless, and that there are many things more important than odes and essays? How then can he who is proficient only in writing odes and essays count himself a good scholar?
- 20 The proverb says, "A strict master makes good pupils," hence there are teachers who depend solely upon severity, no matter whether pupils are large or small they ferule them on every occasion, whereas the truth is that in all things there is a golden mean. If one is too severe he will keep his pupils always angry at him, which is not characteristic of good teaching.
- 21 You really know nothing of the straits of the poor. When we who have money buy grain, we buy several bushels or several tens of bushels, but with these poor people, mind you, to buy even a few gallons or a few pints (bowls) is difficult.

NOTES.

5 無所不為 *Nothing that he will not do; that is, nothing too bad for him to do, given to every vice.*

6 The use of 東西 to express contempt is *t'ung-hsing*. 物件 is also used in the same way in Northern and Central Mandarin, and expresses a still stronger contempt. It is applied either to imbecility or to viciousness.

8 Examinations are held in each fu city twice in three years (the year of the triennial examination in the provincial city being omitted). The first of these examinations is called 歲考, and includes both civil and military, both those who have a degree and those who are seeking a degree. The second examination, called 科考, is only civil, and those who have a degree are not required to attend, save those who propose to compete at the ensuing triennial examination. Both the 歲考 and the 科考 are called 院考. The names of the successful candidates are posted up in order of merit. Hence the first is the most honorable, though the degree is the same.

9 抹面無情, *he stroked his face and ignored all friendship, that is, he stroked his face with his hand and put on an expression of utter indifference.* 反臉無情, *he turned his face away and ignored all friendship.*

10 吃喝嫖賭 These four have long been considered the cardinal vices of dissipation, but China is now compelled to add a fifth; viz., opium smoking, which is what is intended by 吹.

11 There is no *t'ung-hsing* term for scaffolding. In Peking it is called 脚手; in Eastern Shantung, 跳脚; in Chinanfu, 架子; along the Yangtse, 跳架 or 跳板; and doubtless there are still other terms in use.

13 轉 expresses the unexpected "turn" that affairs took.

15 工夫 is put for *skill*, because skill is the result of time spent in practice. Thus used, it nearly always refers to boxing, unless otherwise indicated.

16 風水, *wind (or air) and water*,—a supposed subtle influence or ether pervading the crust of the earth, which by its movements produces and controls growth and decay, life and death, prosperity and adversity. Those who profess to understand and explain it, draw their stock of terms and phrases chiefly from the Book of Changes.

17 一本, *one volume or book*. 本 or 本章 is used technically of a memorial presented to the Emperor.

18 道行 is borrowed from the language of religious devotees.

第一六四課

LESSON CLXIV.

不做聲，他還能再找你嗎？
 我素常
 壺管保他們不能不應允。
 你只用
 來了這麼些呢。
 只用請他們喝幾
 艱難。○我只當是要來一個人，誰料
 孩子們只知好飯可口，那知錢財的
 的正坐的正，那怕他們怎麼說呢。
 到了，管保立時就開開
 南關去聽戲呢。○只用老爺的片子
 你。○我²只當他上學去了，誰知他上
 只要¹你拿定主意，無論誰也制不^了

- 1 Only make up your mind firmly, and nobody can successfully oppose you.
- 2 I supposed that of course he had gone to school, when, behold, he had gone to the south suburb to attend a theater.
- 3 Simply let your Excellency's card be sent in, and I venture to say he will be liberated at once.
- 4 Only let your "walk and conversation" be upright, and you need not fear what they say.
- 5 Children simply know that good food suits their taste, what do they know of the difficulty of getting money?
- 6 I supposed only one man was coming, who would have thought that all these were coming?
- 7 Only invite them to drink a few bottles, and I'll warrant you they will not refuse [your request].
- 8 Just you keep quiet, and there is no

10 Eight is the orthodox number of divisions in a literary essay. These divisions are not announced or numbered, but are rather paragraphs or rhetorical parts. This method of division, which is essential to an essay that would take a degree, is said to have been introduced by 王安石 of the Sung dynasty. The regular form of an ode at the end

of an essay, is six verses of four lines each, of which the second and fourth rhyme, the six rhymes also rhyming with each other.

21 甘苦 is formed after the model of quality by opposites (Les. 50), but the stress in this case all falls on the 苦, 甘 simply serving as an intensive.

LESSON CLXIV.

CORRELATIVE PARTICLES.

只要...無論 Only...no matter, nobody.
 只要...那怕 Only...need not fear.
 只要...那管 Only...even if, no matter.
 只要...就是 Only...even if.
 只用...管保 Only, simply...I'll venture, I'll warrant.
 只用...那管 Only...need not care, what care, even if.
 只用...自然 Only...naturally, as a matter of course.
 只用...還能 Only, just...no danger, [cannot].
 只用...無論 Only...no matter.
 只當...誰知 Supposed, thought...most unexpectedly, would you believe it.

只當...誰料 Supposed...behold, who would have thought it.
 只覺...那知 Supposed...whereas, when in fact.
 只知...那知 Only, simply...not, but yet, to my surprise.
 只覺...誰料 Supposed...who believe.
 只以為...誰知 Supposed of course...behold, unexpectedly.
 只以為...不料 Supposed of course...unexpectedly, suddenly.
 只說...那知 Said, supposed...yet, behold.
 只說...歸期 Said, supposed...yet notwithstanding, yet after all.

了點了用正怎閩虧帖。只
 手惻了一把他月麼羅心○以
 那隱年他鎖又、樣斷事人¹⁰爲
 管之心只說鎖起輸了呢。是非。怕半知沒有仇
 人家沒要疼還四只○夜生前人、
 虧不知疼瞎了、五十吊。大成己這¹⁵裏有¹⁶現成的鎖鍊子、只
 不○甚歸歸他嗎。○¹⁶他的眼、前年疼
 虧○麼實期還好○¹⁶他的眼、前年疼
 呢。爲憐¹⁸憫¹⁸好的。○¹⁷樊昌發一
 ○從¹⁸這一人、只用叫¹⁷他得
 一仗看起
 來、

- danger of his disturbing you again.
 9 I have all along supposed I had no enemies, when, behold, yesterday some one assailed me in an anonymous placard.
 10 Men only regard the enjoyments of the present life; who considers the suffering of the life to come?
 11 Only do not violate conscience, and you need not fear the devil knocking at your door at midnight.
 12 Only keep the approval of your own conscience, and you need not fear the judgment of Yen-loä.
 13 Only keep the good opinion of your own husband, and you need not care what your father-in-law or mother-in-law may think.
 14 It was said that Wang Ta Ch'eng had renounced gambling, and yet during the first month he has again lost forty or fifty thousand [cash].
 15 Here is a lock and chain ready to hand; only fasten him with them and he will find it hard to escape.
 16 His eyes pained him all the year before last, and it was supposed he would lose his sight, yet after all, they are now entirely well.
 17 Fan Ch'ang Fa is destitute of all pity; he does not know what mercy is. Only let him get the advantage, and what does he care whether others suffer or not.
 18 It is evident from this one battle that Gen. Hwang has no strategic

VOCABULARY.

- 3 釋 *Shi⁴*. To unloose, to liberate; to dissipate; to cease; Buddhist.
 3 開釋 *K'ai¹ shi⁴*. To release, to liberate, to make free.
 3 釋放 *Shi⁴ fang⁴*. To let loose, to set free, to liberate, to emancipate.
 7 允 *Yün³*. To permit, to assent, to promise.
 7 應允 *Ying¹ yün³*. To assent, to agree, to promise.
 5 做 *Tsu⁴*. To let out, to divulge:—see *tsot⁴*.
 5 做聲 *Tsu⁴ shêng¹*. To tell, to divulge, to mention:—same as 作聲.
 7 素常 *Su⁴ ch'ang²*. Commonly, ordinarily; all along, hitherto.

- 匿 *Ni⁴*. To hide, to abscond; clandestine. 9
 匿名 *Ni⁴ ming²*. Anonymous. 1
 生前 *Shêng¹ ch'ien²*. The present life. 10
 虧心 *K'wei¹ hsin¹*. To violate conscience, to do what is known to be wrong.
 閩 *Yen²*. A village gate, a hamlet, a lane.
 閩羅 *Yen² loä²*. The Buddhist Rhadamanthus:—Note (12).
 鎖鍊 *Sod³ lien⁴*. Lock and chain, shackles. 15
 樊 *Fan²*. An enclosed space; a surname. 17
 惻隱 *Ts'ê⁴*. To pity, to sympathize. 17
 隱 *Yin³*. Retired; covered; private; painful, compassionate; to keep back, to avoid.

Long victory

Li Kwang Tou
Shih 4 case

足見黃大人沒有韜畧，只用多少有點韜畧，無論怎麼就打勝了。○他光看書上的講究，只覺着照像是容易事，那知其中的巧處很多。○作官只用有好斷才，又有愛民如子的心，自然必作清官。○都說李光斗難伺候，我看一點不難，只用摸着他的脾氣，無論怎樣就行了。○學問一道，只用肯專心致志，自然必能造就到好處。○你放心罷，只要有我這口氣，到了時候，那管是借是當，也必還你的錢。○我的小兒進了一個武秀才，只說有一百兩銀子就費了，那知連學規帶請客，花了一百五十多兩。○人那能一點錯處沒有呢，只要知過必改就是了。○我只覺着他是知己的朋友，纔把家眷全

Shu an 4 family

- skill. With only a little knowledge in that direction, he could not have failed to win a victory.
- 19 Simply looking at the directions in the book, he thinks that taking photographs is a very simple affair, whereas it involves a large amount of practical skill.
 - 20 Only let an officer have judicial ability, and a heart that loves the people as his own children, and he will as a matter of course be a good officer.
 - 21 Everybody says that Li Kwang Tou is hard to serve, but I don't see any difficulty; only once understand his peculiarities, and no matter what you do it is all right.
 - 22 Scholarship is a thing in which it is only necessary to have a single and resolute purpose, and you will naturally attain to excellence.
 - 23 Never fear; only let the breath remain in my body, and I will repay you the money when the time comes, even if I have to borrow or pawn.
 - 24 When my younger son got his military degree, he said that if he had one hundred taels it would be sufficient, whereas finally, including fees and feast, he spent more than one hundred and fifty.
 - 25 Where is the man without any faults at all? If only he is willing to reform his errors when he knows them, it is well.
 - 26 I supposed he was a true friend when

- | | | | |
|------|--|------|---|
| 1 惻隱 | Sympathy, compassion, pity, fellow-feeling. | 1 偏離 | P'ien ¹ li ² . To diverge, to turn aside, to deviate, to incline. |
| 1 得手 | Te ² shou ³ . To get an opportunity, to get the advantage. | 1 遼遠 | Liao ² Distant, far away. |
| 1 照像 | Chao ⁴ hsiang ⁴ . To take pictures, to photograph. | 1 遼遠 | Liao ² yüan ³ . Far off, at a distance, remote. |
| 1 造就 | Tsao ⁴ chiu ⁴ . To progress, to attain, to accomplish. | 1 死屍 | Si ³ shi ¹ A dead body, a corpse. |
| 1 舵 | Tod ⁴ A rudder. | 1 抽身 | Ch'ou ¹ shên ¹ . To start backward, to withdraw suddenly. |

NOTES.

2 The addition of 呢 at the end emphasizes the surprise expressed by 誰知.
 4 走的正, 坐的正, moving straight, and sitting straight; that is, straight, or correct in everything. 走 and 坐 are used figuratively to comprehend the active and passive aspects of life.

9 匿名帖, an anonymous placard, also called a 沒頭帖 (usually read as if written 木頭帖), a headless card; that is, one without a superscription.
 12 閻羅, or more frequently, 閻王 or 閻君 the ruler and judge of the lower world,—a Buddhist divinity introduced into China during the Sung dynasty. Th

$\frac{1}{2}$ t'sao' heng' } can-
 $\frac{1}{2}$ s' k'ung' } stove
 $\frac{1}{2}$ kuo' t'ai' }

tsai' ruel

是要打壞喇，誰知他爬起來，揚揚不睬就走了。
 31 這個一棍子，那個一石頭，打了一袋菸的工夫，我只說
 着歇息，誰料走到跟前，還是一個死屍，嚇得我抽身就跑了。
 今年又回來喇。○ 30 遼遠的望着，我只當是行路的，在路旁躺
 有音信，他妻子只以為他死了，去年秋裏纔嫁了人，不料他
 知道他在 竈空裏 窩着呢。○ 29 姜似山上關東，十五六年沒
 麼在潤喜跟前，說他爺爺的不是呢。○ 我 28 我只當是他走了，誰
 直向前，若是舵不正當，船就自然偏離左右。○ 你 28 你先頭裏怎
 人心主宰萬事，就如舵管船一般，只用舵正當，船就自然一
 託付他，誰料他存心不良，竟把我的老婆孩子都賣了呢。

I entrusted my family entirely to him, and yet, contrary to all anticipation, he proved a treacherous villain, and actually sold both my wife and children.

- 27 The heart controls everything just as the rudder controls the ship. Only let the rudder be amidships, and the vessel will naturally go straight forward; but if the rudder be not amidships, the vessel will naturally incline to one side or the other.
- 28 Why did you a little while ago in Jun Hsi's presence find fault with his grandfather? Ans. I quite supposed he had gone, when behold he was squatting in the chimney corner.
- 29 Chang Si Shan went to Manchuria and nothing was heard of him for fifteen or sixteen years. His wife supposed of course he was dead and only last fall married again, when this year he most unexpectedly returned.
- 30 Looking from a distance, I just supposed it was a traveller lain down at the roadside to rest, but when I came near, behold, it was a dead body. I was so frightened that I drew back with a start and ran away.
- 31 They beat and pelted him, some with sticks and some with stones, for as much as ten minutes. I quite expected he would be badly disabled, but, to my surprise, he got up and walked off as if nothing had happened.

people often speak of 十殿閻君, the rulers of the ten temples; that is, one for each of the ten court rooms of the Buddhist hell. The fifth (五殿閻君) is often spoken of as the fiercest of the ten.

14 只說, only say; that is, the only talk heard on the subject was that he had reformed. The first month is the great time for gambling. Many who resist temptation all the rest of the year fall at this season.

15 跑了他. It would seem as if he were the object of the verb. It is not, however, but, notwithstanding its position, remains the subject. The whole clause is equivalent to 他還能跑了嗎.

20 愛民如子, to love the people as one's own children, is the acme of excellence in an officer. 清官 means properly, an upright officer who does not take bribes, but is often used, as here, to include all the excellencies of an able and faithful officer.

24 When one gets a degree he has to pay the 老師 a graduation fee, more or less according to his ability, and

custom requires him to make a feast for his friends, so that altogether, getting a degree is an expensive piece of good fortune.

25 知過必改, knowing a fault will certainly reform, is here quoted as a ready made book phrase.

26 存心不良, the purpose of the heart not good. 不良 is emphatic, and the phrase always refers to some deceitful or treacherous purpose.

27 主宰 is here used as a verb. The comparison assumes water free from currents and the wind "dead aft."

28 竈空. The space or corner at the side of the cooking range.

31 這個一棍子那個一石頭, this one a stick and that one a stone; that is, some with sticks and some with stones. 一袋菸的工夫, the time of smoking one pipe. This is often used as a measure of time, and means about ten minutes. 揚揚不睬, tossing the head in a careless way, putting on an air of indifference.

第一百六十五課

LESSON CLXV.

你纔吃了飯，又要什麼吃嗎？
 去見你，不料你竟來喇。
 昨天晚上正在半夜的時候，忽然有人喊叫有賊，把我驚的再沒
 睡着。○要知心腹事，但聽口中言。○孩子纔不哭了，你又鬧弄他，
 真真討厭。○先生正在位上寫字，不料從仰板棚窰窿裏掉下一條
 大長蟲來。○這門親事若要成，必得叫他們兩個對面。○若
 要叫我與他取改和好，除非他親自來認錯。○你妹妹把你外甥送喇，
 現在必得你去保他，纔能出來。○這場官司若要翻，非離投奔馬
 老爺不行。○小姑娘正在睡覺的時候，忽然狗咬了一聲，把他
 醒了，他就直哭不歇。○放空船不能十分穩當，若要穩當，總得

- 1 You have just eaten your dinner, and are you already wanting something to eat?
- 2 To know the future, it is only necessary to look at the past.
- 3 We were just on the point of going to see you, when, to our surprise, here you really come.
- 4 To understand etiquette requires an age of considerably over ten years.
- 5 Last night, just at midnight, some one suddenly called out, "Thieves!" and gave me such a fright that I could not get asleep again.
- 6 If you would know the thoughts of a man's heart, just listen to the words of his mouth.
- 7 The child had but just quit crying, and here you are teasing him again. Really you are too exasperating.
- 8 While the teacher was at his desk writing, a huge snake unexpectedly fell down from a hole in the ceiling.
- 9 If this match is to be brought about, it will be necessary for the two to see each other.
- 10 If I am to make peace with him, there is no way but for him to come in person and acknowledge his fault.
- 11 Your sister having accused your nephew of undutifulness, in order to procure his release, it will be necessary for you to go and become security for him.
- 12 To get a reversal of the verdict in this case, it will be necessary to secure the services of Ma Lao-yie.
- 13 While the little girl was sleeping soundly, the dog suddenly gave a

hard next

won't firm

reverse

hao' k'uei
187-192
ch'ao' tui

LESSON CLXV. CORRELATIVE PARTICLES.

纔...又 Just..... again, now, already.
 若要 or 待要...總得 If, in order to
 must, necessary.
 若要 or 待要...必得 If, in order to
 must, necessary.
 若要 or 待要...非離 If, in order to
 must, necessary, no way but.
 要知...但看 In order to know..... only
 necessary to look.

要知...但聽 In order to know..... only
 necessary to listen.
 正...忽然 Just when, while..... sud-
 denly, unexpectedly.
 正...不料 Just when, while..... sud-
 denly, unawares, behold.
 正...可巧 Just when, while..... when
 luckily. [that.
 必得...纔 It is necessary, must... in order

上滿了載。○¹⁵ 魯鏡心那真是一個名醫，就是架子太大，若要請他看病，至少也得二兩銀子的藥敬，還必得用轎子去接他，他纔肯來。○¹⁶ 車王爺正在拉車趕腳的時候，不料皇上的旨意到了，叫他作鐵帽子王。○¹⁷ 若要人不知，除非己不為。○¹⁸ 大家正在那裏免三去四的吆喝，不料衙役從後門裏進去，把賭錢的和看邊兒鬧的，都拿了去喇。○¹⁹ 這個灰色雞，真不填還人，纔下了十來個蛋，又要賴抱窩。○²⁰ 夜間正要出汗的工夫，不料他把被都掀了，所以今天不但見強，倒越發見重喇。○²¹ 必得先種下，然後纔能收成，你若不先愛人，怎能指望人愛你呢。○²² 前日我對一位先生講道理，他也批駁我，我也批駁他，正說得高興的時候，不料從旁邊來了一個

bark and woke her up, and she has cried ever since.
 14 An empty ship cannot be perfectly steady; to secure steadiness it must be filled with cargo.
 15 Lu Ching Hsin is indeed a noted physician, but he holds himself quite too high. If you want to call him, you must give him a present of at least two taels, and also send a chair for him, or he will not come.
 16 When the Carter King was following his calling as a carter, there suddenly came to hand an imperial edict creating him an Iron Crown Prince.
 17 If you would not have others know of it, the only way is not to do it.
 18 Just when the whole company were noisily engaged at the game, the police unexpectedly came in by a back door and arrested both gamblers and lookers on.
 19 This gray chicken does not pay for her keeping. She has only laid ten or a dozen eggs and now she wants to sit.
 20 During the night, just as the perspiration was about to break out on him, he unexpectedly threw off the quilts, so that to-day he is not only no better but on the contrary is worse.
 21 You must sow before you can reap. If you do not first love others, how can you expect that others will love you?
 22 Day before yesterday I was talking with a gentleman on the doctrine, and we were having quite a spirited discussion, but, just when the interest was at its height, a drunken fellow

468 chi's wies 351

VOCABULARY.

- 禮性 *Li³ hsing⁴*.....Politeness, etiquette. (s.)
- 鬧弄 *Tou⁴ lung⁴*. To aggravate, to tease, to irritate, to chafe.
- 仰棚 *Yang³ p'eng²*..... A ceiling.
- 照面 *Chao⁴ mien⁴*. To see face to face:—Note (9).
- 投奔 *T'ou³ pên⁴*. To appeal to, to depend upon, to ask help of.
- 放空 *Fang⁴ k'ung¹*. To go or travel empty or unloaded (as a ship, cart, etc.).
- 贄 *Chi⁴*. A present to a superior; a fee to a teacher.

- 贄見禮 *Chi⁴ chien⁴ li³*. A present or a fee to a teacher or to a professor of any art.
- 看眼 *K'an⁴ yen³*..... To be a spectator.
- 填還 *T'ien² hwan²*. To repay, to reimburse, to requite.
- 還債 *Hwan² chai⁴*. To pay a debt, to discharge an obligation.
- 賴抱 *Lai⁴ pao⁴*..... To sit on an empty nest.
- 批駁 *P'i² po²*. To reverse the decision of a lower court; to rebut, to refute.
- 醉漢 *Tsui⁴ han⁴*..... A drunken man.

色、叫我們不要言語、後來到晚上、他就暗暗的把我們放了。
 年、被紅鬍子擄的、那時已經當了頭腦、他向我們使了一個眼
 正、打算怎樣可以逃命、可巧遇見了李作福的一個親戚、是早
 年、八月間、我和李作福、在關東被紅鬍子擄去、坐在車上、我們
 子、生了一個男小兒子、正在有用的時候、忽然得病死了、同治四
 花、剛纔出了大門、看見我又回去喇、李憲章真是苦命、一輩
 穿的衣裳十分襤褸、頭上梳着一個小髮髻、還戴着兩枝芍藥
 患、必得給他一個斬草除根。○今天我打張芙蓉門前走、見他
 君子、無毒不丈夫、又說打蛇不死、轉背傷人、所以若要免去後
 醉、鬼漢、嘴裏胡言亂語的、把那位先生衝走喇、古語說、量小非
 漢、鬼漢、嘴裏胡言亂語的、把那位先生衝走喇、古語說、量小非

happened along and, by his incoherent talk, drove the gentleman away.
 23 The old saying is, "He who has a narrow mind cannot be a superior man; he who cannot rise above his feelings cannot be manly;" also, "Strike a serpent without killing it, and it will turn back and wound you:" therefore if you would avoid trouble hereafter, you must finish him root and branch.
 24 To-day as I went by Chang Fu Yung's door, I saw her in a very ragged dress, with her hair done up in a little knot and wearing in it a couple of peonies. Just as she came out of the street door, she saw me and turned and went in again.
 25 Li Hsien Chang has truly had a hard lot. In all his life he has had only one son, and just when he came to be of some use, he suddenly took sick and died.
 26 In the fourth year of T'ung-chi in the eighth month, I and Li Tsoā Fu were taken captive in Manchuria by the red-bearded robbers. We were sitting on the cart, and just planning how we might escape with our lives, when, luckily, we met with a relative of Li Tsoā Fu's who had been taken captive by the red-beards years ago, and was at that time a leader among them. He gave us a wink not to say anything, and afterwards at night he secretly let us go.

轉背 Chwan⁴ pei⁴. To turn round; to turn back.
 芙蓉 Fu² jung². The rose mallow.
 襤褸 Lan². Torn in shreds, ragged.
 襤褸 Lü³. The lapel of a coat; soiled, dirty.
 髮髻 Chwa¹. The hair done up in a knot on top of the head.
 髮 Chi⁴. The tuft or knot of a woman's hair.

髮髻. The hair done up in a tuft or knot.
 芍藥 Shwo², Shao². The peony.
 芍藥 Shao² yao⁴. The roots of the peony; the peony.
 憲 Hsien⁴. To govern; a law, a precept. (w.)
 逃命 T'ao² ming⁴. To flee for life, to escape with life.
 頭腦 T'ou² nao³. A chieftain, a leader, a ring-leader.

NOTES.

3 The use of 竟 implies that the person referred to had been expected, but for some reason his coming had been despaired of.
 5 睡着 Here, as also in the thirteenth sentence, 着 is used emphatically.

9 打個照面, strike a face to face; that is, to see each other face to face, though not necessarily to converse together. It is not often that this is demanded on the occasion of a first marriage, but it generally is in the case of

課六十六百一第

LESSON CLXVI.

受病認。我。搗。價。好。的。走。○ 晴¹
 嗎。○ 看。的。不。○ 大²
 你。見。賣。○ 街³
 走。是。給。德。這。要
 熱。的。他。下。號。個。肉。麻。上
 騰。喘。拿。實。○ 二⁶ 錢。底。俐。亂
 騰。呵。虛。去。在。麻。嫂。疲。硬。做。轟。日
 的。的。他。了。○ 走。拉。爭。刺。不。如。還
 飯。的。還。麻。子。拉。爭。刺。要。從
 我。吃。喝。翻。眼⁷ 起。的。推。帶。霧
 們。冷。涼。眼。睜。來。一。沒。前。作。騰
 喫。水。不。不。睜。快。樣。大。擦。不。街
 點。怕。承。的。的。煮。後。作。上
 兒。承。的。的。煮。後。作。上

- 1 Do not go until it clears up. It is still quite foggy to-day.
- 2 The main street is so much crowded that it would be better to go by a side street.
- 3 Do it up promptly and don't dilly-dally.
- 4 This meat after all is tough as leather; it is not sufficiently boiled.
- 5 Money is so hard to collect of Yü Tê, that, the price being the same, we will sell to others rather than to them.
- 6 Our second brother's wife has an energetic step and moves round with wonderful celerity.
- 7 It was he who took it. I saw him do it, as plainly as possible, and yet he turns round and denies it.
- 8 Are you not afraid that drinking cold water when all out of breath from running will make you sick?
- 9 Here is steaming hot rice. Had we

a second marriage. 照面 is rarely used, save in this special connection. In the North 對面 replaces it.

11 When a son becomes incorrigibly undutiful, his parents may accuse him to the magistrate and demand his punishment. This is to 送. It may be done by a father or widowed mother, or by a grandfather or widowed grandmother, or, in the case of an orphan, by a paternal uncle. It always results in severe punishment, and, in the case of a parent who disowns his son, may cause him to be put to death.

15 架子太大, *framework too large*; that is, he puts on too much style, is too pretentious.

16 At the founding of the present dynasty, the title of prince was conferred on the eight leaders who assisted in founding the dynasty. In token that this title was to be hereditary and perpetual, an iron cap or crown was given to each, and they were in consequence called 鐵帽子王. In the course of time, one of these hereditary kings was guilty

of crimes which cost him his life, and having no son, his title was given to his nearest collateral heir. This good fortune fell on a young man who, at the time the imperial edict arrived, was serving as a carter, and was in consequence dubbed, 車王爺.

18 免三去四 This phraseology has its explanation in the gambling game they were playing.

23 無毒不丈夫, *without severity (poison) not manly*; that is, he who is not able to restrain his sympathies and disregard trifles, has not the strength of a true manhood. 打蛇不死 is the same as 打不死蛇, the object being inserted before the qualifier. 剪草除根, *clip off the grass and remove the root, to destroy utterly*—"root and branch."

26 紅鬍子, *redbeards*, is the term commonly applied to the bands of predatory robbers that abound in Manchuria. They wear false red beards as a mask, and to give them an appearance of fierceness.

LESSON CLXVI. *Ch'ou⁴*
 SPECIAL DUPLICATE ADJUNCTS.

fang Nov 22, 1908

騰 To ascend,—as a doublet, imparts the idea of rising and expanding.

霧騰騰的 Ascending vapor; foggy, misty.

熱騰騰的 Steaming hot.

慢騰騰的 Slow, deliberate, pompous.

轟 To rush,—as a doublet, imparts the idea of rushing and noise. Some would prefer to write 闐.

亂轟轟的 The confused noise of many coming and going, bustling, crowded.

臭轟轟的 Very rank, stinking, noisome.

鬧轟轟的 Thronged, crowded, bustling.

拉 To drag,—as a doublet, imparts the idea of dragging after or extending beyond proper limits.

疲拉拉的 Dilatory, lax, paying money in dribblets.

低拉拉的 Overcome with grief, the eyes brimming with tears.

酸拉拉的 Shuddering, aghast, flesh creeping
 [ing.]
Suan'

1 chin' yiguan
2 tsau' huanit
3 huan' huanit

再走不好嗎。○你老實實的罷，不要動手動腳的。○你
看他稜睜睜的，越說他，他越不服。○他身上雖是滾熱，
頭上却是汗津津的。○外邊冷颼颼的，快給孩子再套上件
那個小點點的。○孫先生不慌不忙說起話來慢悠悠的，真是
衣裳罷。○我願意從那裏經過，那裏靠大糞場，
一個文雅人。○雖然老了，身上還壯實實的，就和一個
臭蟲蟲的。○他雖然老了，身上還壯實實的，就和一個
小夥子一樣。○用他的秤稱一百斤，用咱們的秤，低拉
小漢子。○連羣子就是好唱，整天家嘴裏哼唧
拉的。○你嘗着什麼味兒，沒有別的味兒，就是苦參
唧唧的。○你嘗着什麼味兒，沒有別的味兒，就是苦參

- not better eat a little before we go?
- 10 Behave yourself, and stop fidgeting with your hands and feet.
 - 11 See what a sullen look he has. The more he is reprov'd the more in-subordinate he becomes.
 - 12 Although his body is very feverish, his head is quite moist.
 - 13 Which one is Li Ch'ang K'eng's son? Ans. That very little fellow is he.
 - 14 It is quite chilly out of doors; put some more clothes on the child immediately.
 - 15 Mr. Sun is very self-possessed, and in conversation he speaks with deliberation. He is truly a man of refinement.
 - 16 I do not like to go by that road. It passes close by the compost yards, where there is a most noisome smell.
 - 17 Although he is old, he is still quite vigorous—just like a young man.
 - 18 With his scales, it weighs one hundred catties; with ours, the beam is decidedly low at ninety-five.
 - 19 Lien K'un-tsi is very fond of singing; he is all the time humming at something.
 - 20 What flavor do you get from it? Ans. Nothing more than a slightly bitter taste.

心拉拉的 Decidedly low, drooping.
實 Solid, real,—as a doublet, imparts the idea of reality, solidity.
老實實的 Quiet, well-behaved, steady.
壯實實的 Quite strong, vigorous, robust.
結實實的 Quite firm, strong, robust.
麻俐俐的 Quickly, promptly, briskly,—imparts the idea of celerity.
硬爭爭的 Quite tough, gelatinous; obstinate,—imparts the idea of resistance. (C. & N.)
稜睜睜的 A sullen look, a glare, a sinister expression,—imparts the idea of staring.
眼睜睜的 In plain sight, before the eyes.
孤單單的 All alone, solitary, lonely,—imparts the idea of singleness.
喘噓噓的 Quite out of breath, panting,—imparts the idea of breathing hard. (C. & N.)
喘呵呵的 The same. (C. & S.)

毛飀飀的 Shuddering, flesh creeping, hair on end,—imparts the idea of creeping.
肋搗搗的 Quite vigorous, energetic, buxom,—imparts the idea of stepping firmly. (s.)
快搗搗的 Quite prompt, energetic, brisk.
小點點的 Quite small, very little, wee, tiny,—imparts the idea of smallness.
汗露露的 Perspiring freely, quite moist,—imparts the idea of dew, moisture. (c. & s.)
汗津津的 The same.
冷颼颼的 Whistling cold, quite chilly, raw,—imparts the idea of blowing, rushing.
慢悠悠的 Quite slowly, deliberate, self-possessed,—imparts the idea of enduring. (c. & s.)
唱謳謳的 Singing in a low voice, humming; musical,—imparts the idea of monotonous sound. (o.)
苦參參的 Bitter as ginseng, decidedly bitter, slightly bitter,—used by way of comparison.

Huan' East

shen'

chuan' yu

chui'

ma' li' li' ti

ji' cheng'

leng' cheng'

Ku' tan'

chuan' hui'

死死賣押他們賣羊就四真海
 停等二十押他們賣這覺個是好參
 着着吊錢我剛給話着兒命嫩
 叫自己本家勸了去嗎。多書去是如去三

31 Ch'in Yüe Tei is a very fortunate man. While yet quite young he has three sons of nearly the same size.

32 If there is a corpse in a room, one feels a shudder when he enters; from which we see the truth of the saying, "A dead man is like a tiger, and a dead tiger is like a lamb."

33 That piece of land of Wang the third's, was after all sold to Chu the sixth. Yesterday evening I called on Chu the sixth, and they had just finished writing the deed and the witnesses were about to sign it. Ans. If it were I, I also would sell to Chu the sixth. Manifestly the price is higher by twenty thousand cash,—enough to support a family for over two months. Why should he wait indefinitely for one of his own family to take it off his hands for less than it's worth?

VOCABULARY.

麤 *Sou*¹... Chilly, the sound of the wind, rustling.
 悠 *Yu*¹. Sorrowful; far-reaching, remote; reiterated.
 謳 *Ou*¹... To sing, to hum; a song, a ditty.
 膨 *P'eng*²... Fat, bloated, puffed out.
 杈 *Ch'a*⁴. A pitchfork; the crotch of a tree; a stump.
 翻眼 *Fan*¹ *yen*³. To change looks, to play false, to back out of.
 承認 *Ch'eng*² *jèn*⁴. To admit, to own up, to confess.
 小夥子 *Hsiao*³ *hwod*³ *tsi*³. A youth, a strippling, a young chap.
 小漢子 *Hsiao*³ *han*⁴ *tsi*³. A boy, a youth, a young man.
 玉米 *Yü*⁴ *mi*³... Indian corn:—Note (22).
 包米 *Pao*¹ *mi*³... The same.
 六穀 *Liu*⁴ *ku*³... The same.
 艮 *Kèn*³... Tough, gluey, gelatinous. Also *kèn*⁴.

用錢 *Yung*⁴ *ch'ien*². A middleman's fee,—usually a percentage on the price.
 興旺 *Hsing*¹ *wang*⁴. To prosper, to flourish, to thrive.
 門市 *Mèn*² *shì*⁴. The street frontage of a store or shop. [life.
 一輩子 *I*¹ *pei*⁴ *tsi*³... A life-time, whole [life.
 嗟 *Chie*¹... To sigh, to lament.
 嗟嘆 *Chie*¹ *t'an*⁴. To sigh, to lament, to regret, to pity.
 悅 *Yüe*⁴... Gratified, pleased, delighted.
 心 *Shèn*³. Aghast, horrified; shuddering, the flesh creeping.
 文契 *Wèn*² *ch'i*⁴... An indenture, a deed.
 中人 *Chung*¹ *jèn*²... A middleman, a witness.
 押 *Ya*². To sign; to affix a seal; a signature, a mark:—see *ya*¹.
 畫押 *Hwa*⁴ *ya*²... To sign a legal document.

NOTES.

1 翻眼. To change the eyes, that is, to change an expression of approval or assent to one of disapproval or dissent, hence to go back on, to back out of, to play false.
 3 推前撥後, to shirk the front and shuffle to the rear; that is, to hesitate, to dilly-dally, to vacillate.

15 不慌不忙, not excited, not hurried, self-possessed. Sedateness and sobriety are essential to the reputation of a Chinese scholar or literary man.
 16 聾 is very expressive as applied to a stench. We have something analogous to it in the term "noisome."

課七十六百一第

LESSON CLXVII.

酸溜溜的甜
 沒有一時的
 嗎。○裏上⁷海
 家裏死獸
 來黑青碌
 可青的須
 亮的、不要
 棵紅色的現
 坐。○這棵
 涼亭上風
 1 涼亭上風
 2 這棵白梅
 3 花素淡的
 4 不如那裏
 5 去坐
 6 不及那
 7 亮
 8 小
 9 起

- 1 It is cool and airy in the summer house. We would better go and sit there.
- 2 This white almond flower is chaste and plain; not so showy as that red one.
- 3 In writing an essay you should be perspicuous, and not use an obscure, ambiguous style.
- 4 I don't want it too large; just a neat fit is the thing.
- 5 The flour from this firm becomes dark when mixed. It is not at all white.
- 6 Lying round home all the time and not making the least effort,—it is no wonder you have nothing to eat.
- 7 Shanghai is indeed a great metropolis of trade. There is no time in the whole year when it is not full of bustle.
- 8 This species of fruit is both tart and sweet, and is very delicious.

22 The Chinese do not prize a light and dry corn bread, but rather that of a moist and gummy consistency. In the North, Indian corn is also called 棒子 pang⁴ tsai³.

24 經紀, an expert. Nearly all kinds of buying and selling are done through the hands of a professional broker or expert, who of course gets a fee—generally from the seller, but in some cases from the buyer as well.

28 All persons are required to kneel in the presence of a magistrate. Such as have a degree are nearly always invited to rise and stand. Others also may be invited to rise and stand at the pleasure of the magistrate.

29 養活 usually forms a phrase meaning to nourish, and, as usual in such cases, the stress is thrown on the first character. Here, however, the words are used independently, and without special stress on either.

31. 好命, a happy fate, fortunate, lucky. To have several sons while yet young, is the height of good fortune,

chiefly because it secures a support in old age.

32 人死如虎虎死如羊, a man dead is like a tiger, because after death the soul has power to take vengeance: a tiger dead is like a lamb, because he has no soul. This saying seems to have come down from a time anterior to the advent of the doctrine of transmigration in China. It shows the instinctive belief in the future existence of the human soul.

33 Signing a Chinese legal document does not consist in writing the name, but in making or affixing a mark. This mark is usually a simple cross, but scholars frequently write as their mark a monogram of some motto, as 正大光明, which is the one most widely used. 叫我, as here used, is equivalent to, if it were I, if I were in his place. 死 is used as an adverb meaning indefinitely.

LESSON CLXVII.

SPECIAL DUPLICATE ADJUNCTS. h⁵⁵ü'

This lesson concludes the subject of duplicate adjuncts. For additional list see Supplement.

風颼颼的 Airy, breezy; chilly,—imparts the idea of blowing. ㄉㄨㄛˊ ㄌㄧㄨˊ

顯亮亮的 Quite plain or clear, manifest, perspicuous,—imparts the idea of light. h⁵⁵ü' liang⁴

高亮亮的 Quite high, light and airy. (c.)

小可小的 A neat fit, close-fitting,—imparts the idea of perfect conformity.

青須須的 Somewhat dark, blackish, discolored,—imparts the idea of somewhat.

黑碌碌的 Quite dark, blackish,—imparts lu' the idea of discoloration. (s.)

死挺挺的 Quite motionless, supine, inflexible,—imparts the idea of rigidity. t⁵⁵ing³

死獸獸的 Listless, lumpish, dronish,—imparts the idea of listlessness. (c. & s.) t⁵⁵ai'

癡獸獸的 Vacant, silly, puzzle-headed. ch⁵⁵sh⁵⁵

家還是橫
 在關東當紅鬍子的。把預備得現成成的材
 不要炒糊了。炒黃子創縱野喇。如今來
 纔喝了一些稀飯。涼陰森的的實得喇。他
 攪上點鹽鹹。港港的可以多吃的時候多
 血淋淋的。看見真是肉麻。做的時候多
 李三今天喝醉了馬街。叫人把頭打的
 多歲的人。外邊鬧嚷嚷的。有甚麼事呢。
 呢。○看你臉上嫩和俏的。實在不像五十
 來的這個人。在學嗎。怎麼說話文縷縷的

- 9 Is this man who has just come a graduate? His conversation has quite a literary flavor.
- 10 Your soft, fresh face certainly does not look like that of a man over fifty years of age.
- 11 What is going on that there is such a clamor outside?
- 12 Li San got drunk to-day and began reviling on the street, when some one pommelled his head till it was dripping with blood. The sight of it was enough to make one's flesh creep.
- 13 In making it, put in a liberal allowance of salt; being thoroughly salt, it will last the longer.
- 14 I have just eaten some rice gruel—quite cold, and I feel very much refreshed.
- 15 Do not parch them till they are burned. If parched a light yellow, it will be sufficient.
- 16 He was a robber while in Manchuria, which developed in him a savage disposition, and even now since he has come home, he acts in a reckless way.

熱鬧鬧的 Bustling, busy, crowded,—imparts the idea of *bustle*.

甜蜜蜜的 Sweet as honey, quite sweet,—used by way of comparison. (C. & s.)

文縷縷的 Having a literary wrinkle, pedantic, professorial. The primary sense of 文 suggests the use of 縷, the expression being figurative and, as here used, slightly humorous.

鬧嚷嚷的 Clamorous, the noise of wrangling,—imparts the idea of *vociferation*.

血淋淋的 Dripping with blood, bloody, blood trickling down,—imparts the idea of *dripping*.

鹹湛湛的 Quite salt,—imparts the idea of *moisture*. (C. & s.)

涼森森的 Quite cool, cold; cooling; chilly,—imparts the idea of *coolness*.

涼陰陰的 Quite cool; cooling; chilly,—imparts the idea of *cold*. (s.)

黃嫩嫩的 Pale yellow, tinged with yellow,—imparts the idea of *tenderness*. (N.)

黃朧朧的 Pale or light yellow,—imparts the idea of *dim light*. (c.)

橫虎虎的 Reckless, violent, overbearing,—imparts the idea of *fierceness*.

橫丟丟的 Reckless, turbulent, violent,—imparts the idea of *recklessness*. (c.)

橫霸霸的 Reckless, overbearing, domineering,—imparts the idea of *usurpation*. (s.)

現成成的 All prepared, ready to hand,—imparts the idea of *readiness*.

素淡淡的 Quite plain, modest, chaste,—imparts the idea of *plainness and insipidity*.

冷淡淡的 Quite cool, distant, unfriendly.

大發發的 Quite large, extra large,—imparts the idea of *increase*. (C. & N.)

大樣樣的 Very large, ample,—imparts the idea of *style*.

大道道的 Quite large, broad, wide,—imparts the idea of a *highway*. (s.)

肉襍襍的 Gross, expressionless, lubberly,—imparts the idea of *grossness*.

氣諄諄的 Flushed with anger, bursting with rage,—imparts the idea of *fierce anger*.

氣忿忿的 Very angry, flushed with anger,—imparts the idea of *irritation*.

氣恨恨的 Very angry, scowling, fuming,—imparts the idea of *hatred*.

現活活的 Gay, showy, flashy,—imparts the idea of *life, activity*.

華奢奢的 Showy, gaudy, garish,—imparts the idea of *display*. (c.)

ch'ü
 jian
 3.n
 chan
 liang son
 yin
 nent
 heng
 tui

用功。舉會的、個道發樣一那料、
 ○會下、在、眼、的、天、一、你、
 ○試來、在、半、的、長、回、當、
 我²⁵心裏、的、點、我²⁰似、他、是、
 昨裏、的、也、看、他、一、天、
 日也、是、華、現、頭、站、了、
 碰眼熱熱、有、奢、活、着、嗎、
 見巴腸、點、奢、活、的、○
 一巴腸、喜、事、○
 個、然、我²³已²²你²¹一、
 狠、而、他²⁴看、見、他、
 幾、自、看、見、他、笑、
 乎、己、却、不、家、
 叫、他、不、肯、
 了、了、了、了、了、

- 17 Having the material all prepared, do you suppose it will be any great trouble to make it?
- 18 Ever since I reproved him that time, he always treats me coldly when he meets me.
- 19 Children grow larger every day, so that in making their clothes it is better to make them quite large.
- 20 His face appears quite gross, and his eyes have a vacant expression. He is without the slightest indication of intelligence.
- 21 Did you not see him standing just in front of the screen ready to burst with rage?
- 22 Over fifty years old, and yet tricked out in such a showy style!
- 23 I saw him coming out smiling pleasantly. He must have met with some good fortune.
- 24 When he sees some one attain the degree of chü-jên or chin-shi, his heart is filled with eager longing, nevertheless he is not willing to apply himself to study.

笑咪咪的 A pleasant smile, a broad grin,—imparts the idea of *half-closed eyes*.
 急齣齣的 Eager, craving, yearning,—imparts the idea of *breathless emotion*. (c. & n.)
 熱腸腸的 Quite eager, craving, yearning,—imparts the idea of *strong desire*. (c. & s.)
 驚慌慌的 Frightened, nervous, all in a tremor,—imparts the idea of *distraction*.
 辣辣辣的 Tingling sharp, quite pungent,—imparts the idea of *tremor*.
 紅鋪鋪的 Blooming red, rosy, glowing,—imparts the idea of *diffusion*.
 高梢梢的 Quite high, lofty, elevated,—used by way of comparison. (s. & n.)
 寬綽綽的 Roomy, quite large, spacious,—imparts the idea of *amplitude*. (c. & n.)
 寬敞敞的 Quite large, roomy, extensive, ample,—imparts the idea of *spaciousness*. (s.)

紫英英的 Bright purple, purplish,—imparts the idea of *elegance*.
 紫微微的 Slightly purple, purplish,—imparts the idea of *minuteness*. (s.)
 紫夠夠的 Deep purple, dark purple,—imparts the idea of *excess*. (c. & n.)
 紫烏烏的 Deep purple, dark purple,—imparts the idea of *blackness*. (s.)

胖敦敦的 Quite fat, plump, lusty.
 酸溜溜的 Quite sour, tart.
 甜絲絲的 Quite sweet, decidedly sweet.
 嫩俏俏的 Soft, fresh, youthful, sprightly.
 嫩和和的 Quite tender, youthful.
 鹹津津的 Quite salt, decidedly salt.
 黃生生的 Light yellow, a yellow tinge.
 眼巴巴的 Longing, eager, wistful.

VOCABULARY.

颯 Liu².....The sighing sound of the wind.
 縐 Chou⁴. Crape; wrinkled, corrugated, variegated; crisp.

蔌 Lu⁴.....Green jasper; toilsome, wearying.
 森 Shen¹. Overgrown with trees, somber, cool; severe, stern.

太紫成了黑紫色。紫色十分鮮明，若說紫烏夠的，就是嫌他快。○若說紫微微的，就是少帶一點。房子高梢亮的，寬綽的，人住着倒極暢。家屯那處房子，就是太寫遠了，其實那個怕太辣，○湯裏叫我的，好喇。○租郭病也沒有。○湯裏叫我的，好喇。如今長的胖敦敦的，臉上紅鋪鋪的，一點這，就是前年生病積的，那個孩子，你看他到如今提起來，我心裏還是驚慌慌的。○

25 I met a wolf yesterday, and barely escaped being eaten up by him. Even yet when it is mentioned, I find myself all in a tremor.
 26 This is the child that was suffering from innutrition the year before last. See how fat he has grown. His cheeks are rosy, and he is perfectly well.
 27 I have put too much pepper in the soup; I fear it will be too hot. Ans. Never fear; it's all the better for being a little fiery.
 28 That house in Kwoa-chia-t'un is too inconvenient of access & rent; although the house itself is quite high and roomy, and would make a very cheerful residence.
 29 If you speak of a thing as being bright purple, you mean that it has a tinge of purple and is very brilliant. If, however, you speak of a thing as being a dead purple, you mean that the purple is too deep, amounting to a black purple.

朧 *Lung*²..... The rising moon; obscure, dim.
 穢 *Nai*⁴..... Stupid; gross, defiled.
 奢 *Shé*¹..... Wasteful, extravagant; gay, fast.
 眯 *Mi*³. Sand in the eyes; blinking, eyes half shut.
 棘 *Su*⁴..... To trouble; to shudder; to tingle.
 梢 *Shao*¹. The end of a branch, the extremity, the small end.
 夠 *Kou*⁴. Enough, sufficient; adequate. Often interchanged with 毅.
 6 動 *Tung*⁴ *t'an*²..... To move, to stir.
 整 *Chéng*³ *nién*². The whole year, the year through.
 在學 *Tsai*⁴ *hsüé*². Having the first degree:— Note (9).
 糊 *Hu*²..... To scorch, to burn in cooking.
 半點 *Pan*⁴ *tien*³..... A very little, the least bit.

諱 *Héng*⁴. To look at angrily; to berate, to scold.
 照壁 *Chao*⁴ *pi*⁴. A wall before a door or entrance serving as a screen.
 會試 *Hui*⁴ *shí*⁴. To compete for, or to take, the degree of 進士.
 疝 *Kan*¹. A disease characterized by enlargement of the belly and atrophy of the limbs, tabes mesenterica.
 疝積 *Kan*¹ *chi*¹..... The same. (s.)
 屯 *T'un*²..... To collect; a village, a camp.
 窩 *Tiao*⁴..... Deep, cavernous, remote.
 窩遠 *Tiao*⁴ *yüan*³. Remote, out of the way, bye, inconvenient of access.
 暢 *Ch'ang*⁴. Joyous, exhilarating; penetrating; spreading.
 暢快 *Ch'ang*⁴ *k'wai*⁴. Happy, in good spirits, cheerful.

NOTES.

3 蒙頭蓋臉, a rhetorical duplication, used as a figure to denote an involved and obscure style. The three forms are Northern, Central and Southern.
 9 在學, in school. To get the first degree is, theoretically, to enter the government school supposed to be taught by the 老師, which, however, as a matter of fact, does not exist.
 12 罵街 To walk along the street back and forth,

railing and reviling at the top of the voice, not usually mentioning names, but by indirect allusions directing the abuse at this or that individual. It is not an infrequent occurrence in country villages.
 20 帶 To carry, that is, in this case, to manifest.
 24 會試 To assemble and essay; that is, to compete at the capital for the degree of 進士. The phrase is also sometimes used to signify the obtaining of the degree.

第一百六十八課

LESSON CLXVIII.

今日洗了一天衣裳，實在¹累³的慌。○我²和他會過一面，記得他¹胖布布刺刺⁴的。○王³大人原來是反叛出身，後來投降的，所以現在雖然作了官，仍舊還是兇布布刺刺⁵的。○這⁵件事真是可惱，連我也氣的慌。○你⁶吃的飽布布刺刺⁷的，還來拿打花心喇。○挑⁷這五六十斤的擔子，還嫌壓⁸的慌嗎。○放⁸這麼大的砲，他也不怕震的慌。○僱⁹個牲口搭搭脚兒罷，我看你走得¹⁰太累的慌。○乾¹⁰急沒法下手，實在叫人躁得¹¹殼受¹¹。○若嫌熱的慌，可以¹¹把衣裳脫了罷。○別¹²看他臉上惡布布刺刺¹¹的，心裏却極

- 1 I have been washing all day, and am terribly tired (done up).
- 2 I met him once, and I remember he was excessively fat.
- 3 Wang Ta-jên is a man who was originally a rebel, but afterwards submitted. Hence it is that, although he is now an officer, he still has altogether a savage disposition.
- 4 Your not coming until this time is enough to make one very anxious.
- 5 This business is certainly aggravating; even I am out of all patience.
- 6 You have eaten as much as you can hold, and now you come here to get off your jokes.
- 7 You don't feel overburdened with this load of only fifty or sixty catties, do you?
- 8 He does not mind the shock from the discharge of even so large a cannon as this.
- 9 Hire a donkey and rest your legs a little. I see you are quite tired out.
- 10 To be in [such] suspense and yet unable to do anything, is extremely trying.
- 11 If you feel oppressed with the heat, you can lay off some of your clothing.
- 12 Don't be misled by the forbidding

LESSON CLXVIII.

INTENSIVES OF UNPLEASANT EXCESS.

得慌¹¹⁷或的慌, is an intensive somewhat like 得很 in form, but of much less extensive application, and indicating a different kind of intensity. It is only applied to feelings of mind or body, and conveys the idea of exhaustion, or that peculiar feeling of distress which seeks in vain for relief from an unpleasant sensation. It is quite *t'ung-hsing*, but has a much wider use in some sections than in others, and is oftener heard in colloquial than found in books. The original form is doubtless that with 得, but 的 is now generally substituted for it. In cases in which 的慌 is not used, 殼受 is substituted for it, but the shade of meaning is not quite the same.

布刺的 is an intensive generally applied only to physical appearance, and expresses an unseemly or offensive excess. It is colloquial, but

entirely *t'ung-hsing*, being changed in the South to 布刺拉的. The writing is somewhat uncertain. 布刺, to spread out to criticism or reprehension, gives the best approximation to the meaning. 不純 is sometimes written, but no rational analysis is apparent, as it expresses the very opposite of what is intended.

布漬的 is an intensive used in Northern and occasionally in Central Mandarin, and having very much the same force as 布刺的. The proper characters are somewhat uncertain. Some would write 不及, but this gives no clue to the chief idea implied; moreover, 及 being hard, is only correct where all sounds are soft. The lesson embraces the most common words with which these intensives are used. Others will be found in the supplement.

裏很良善。○天過於冷，就是在家裏，還覺凍的。○只因多日沒見，心裏很想得慌。○不要惹他，他陵布刺刺的光淨打人。○你的胸口疼，覺得脹的慌不，就是覺得脹的疼。○張有能真是海量，遇着這樣的事，總沒見他愁的慌。○人家都希罕男孩子，你怎麼倒希罕女孩子呢？答：我嫌這些男孩子野野鬧，頭布布刺刺的腦的腦的，光淨禍害人。○就是鐵石的人，聽了他的那個話，也沒有不慘得慌的。○你這麼狀布刺刺的一點精神沒有，不怕人家偷東西去嗎？○這一連好幾天，沒能出門，又加上事情不順，所以心裏很悶的。○那屋裏有蛇蚤，又有臭蟲，夜裏實在叮咬得慌。○葛石巖的日子，這二年也敗落喇，雖然不算大窮，却是過的累布刺刺的。○你這個麪淨小麩子，而且也有沙，誰吃誰嫌牙

expression of his face, for he has a most kindly heart.
 13 The weather is so excessively cold that even in the house I am freezing.
 14 I have not seen you for so long that I long exceedingly for you.
 15 Do not irritate him; he is irascible and given to striking people.
 16 Do you feel any sense of distention with your dyspepsia? Ans. I do feel a painful sense of distention.
 17 Chang Yu Nêng is certainly a man of great self-control. Though meeting with such things as these, he showed no sign of being worried.
 18 Other people all desire sons; how is it that you on the contrary desire daughters? Ans. I dislike boys because they are so terribly boisterous, and are always getting into mischief.
 19 Even a man of iron or stone could not listen to what he said without a strong feeling of sympathy.
 20 Are you not afraid some one will steal your things? you are so absent-minded and pay no attention to anything.
 21 I have not been able to go out for these several days, and besides matters have not been going smoothly, on account of which I feel very much depressed.
 22 That room is infested both with fleas and bed-bugs. I was much worried through the night with their biting.
 23 Koā Shī Yen has also been failing in circumstances these two years. Although he cannot be called very poor, yet he finds it hard to make the ends meet.

VOCABULARY.

- 3 叛 P'an⁴..... To rebel, to revolt.
- 3 反叛 Fan³ p'an⁴..... To rebel; a rebellion.
- 降 Hsiang². To submit; to cause to submit; to hold under the influence of:— see chiang⁴.
- 投降 T'ou² hsiang². To give up and submit (of a rebel).
- 作官 Tsou⁴ kwan¹. To be a magistrate, to fill office.
- 5 可惱 K'ou³ nao³. Provoking, vexatious, aggravating.

- 良善 Liang² shan⁴. Good, kind-hearted, humane, benevolent.
- 禍害 Hwo⁴ hai⁴. Injury, calamity; to get into mischief, to involve in trouble.
- 作害 Tsou⁴ hai⁴. To get into mischief, to involve in trouble or loss.
- 野頭野腦 Yie³ t'ou² yie³ nao³. Wild, turbulent, boisterous, unruly:—Les. 184.
- 巖 Yen²..... A precipice, a cliff; hazardous.

就是兩條腿很蹩的慌，腰也疼的慌，兩隻胳膊都常累得酸布漬的。
 婆子光活還顧不過來，那裏還顧得死怎麼樣呢，現在別的我都不愁。
 恐怕就是紮十隻牛給你，也替你喝不了這些混水啊。
 坐在這裏替人家洗衣裳，從來有多少水，被你弄髒咯，你到百年之後，
 起路來酸，就是說出句話來，也是酸布漬的。
 不是個正經東西。○王秉福那個人，真酸極喇，不但臉上的樣子酸，走
 是不言不語在那裏坐着，也是邪布刺拉的，無論叫誰一看，就知道他
 去喝水，睏的慌，就去睡覺。○高仗着有點浮聰明，凡事以強壓弱，就
 你使的慌就歇一歇，累的慌就少做一點，餓的慌就去吃飯，乾的慌就
 你使的慌就歇一歇，累的慌就少做一點，餓的慌就去吃飯，乾的慌就

- 24 This flour of yours is full of fine bran, moreover it also has sand in it. Whoever eats of it complains of its grittiness.
- 25 These three sisters-in-law are fighting continually, so that the whole neighborhood is disturbed by their crying and shrieking.
- 26 If you are tired, rest a little; if you are oppressed with work, do a little less; if you are hungry, go and take a meal; if you are thirsty, go and take a drink; and if you are drowsy, go and take a sleep.
- 27 Kao Ch'iu relies on his having a little superficial shrewdness and so tyrannizes over others in everything. Even when he is sitting quietly and saying nothing, he has a sinister expression. Whoever looks at him can see at a glance that he is a knave.
- 28 That man Wang Ping Fu is certainly a most disagreeable fellow. Not merely are the expression of his face and his style of walking disagreeable, but even his talk is quite disgusting.
- 29 Well, old grandmother, sitting here as you do every day washing clothes for people, how much water do you suppose you have defiled in all these years? When you are gone ten paper cows will not be sufficient to drink up all this dirty water for you. Ans. Humph, a poverty-stricken old woman like me, finds it hard enough to get a living, let alone busying myself with what is to come after death. My only worry at present is that my legs get so stiff sitting, and my back aches, and my arms are so used up that they hurt me all the time.

- 23 敗落 *Pai⁴ lo⁴*. To decline, to fail, to wane, to go to ruin.
- 24 麩 *Fu¹*..... Bran.
- 25 四鄰 *Sì⁴ lín²*. The neighbors on all sides, the neighborhood.
- 26 號 *Hao²*. To scream, to shriek, to howl, to wail. See hao².
- 27 睏覺 *K'un⁴ chiao⁴*..... To sleep. (c.)

- 28 倭 *Ch'iu²*..... An ornamented cap.
- 29 不言不語 *Pu⁴ yen² pu⁴ yü³*. Saying nothing, silent.
- 30 老大娘 *Lao² ta⁴ niang²*. An elderly woman, old lady:—Note (29).
- 31 咳 *Hai²*. An exclamation of surprise or of dissatisfaction. See k'oa².
- 32 蹩 *Ch'üan²*. To double up the legs as in sitting on them, to double up, to draw in.

課九十六百一第

LESSON CLXIX.

誰肯把女兒嫁他呢。何況那勤學那個討人嫌的
 連自己也不能保佑。何況是保佑人呢。○窮苦家
 還要有點抬頭喇。何況是買柴伙呢。○廟裏的神
 還得是大罪。況又辜負他的恩典。○就⁸是⁹買¹⁰銀子
 經就是大罪。況又辜負他的恩典。○就⁸是⁹買¹⁰銀子
 況且公事上。又很小⁶心。很勤謹。○犯⁷神的律法。已
 樣疎忽懈怠呢。○你⁵就是最小⁶心。也難沒有錯處。何況這
 學生呢。○你⁵就是最小⁶心。也難沒有錯處。何況這
 有⁴你幫助呢。○這⁴個字連先生都不會講。何況是
 況是這點小事呢。○他³並不²殺我自己打的。何況
 連我¹還不能。何況是你。○大²事不知辦了多少。何

- 1 Even I am not able, how much less are you able!
- 2 I have managed any number of important affairs; how much more can I dispose of this trifling matter?
- 3 He is no match for me alone; how much more when I have you to help me!
- 4 Even the teacher cannot explain this character, much less can a pupil.
- 5 Even though you take the greatest pains, it will be difficult for you to avoid mistakes; how much more then if you are so careless and lazy?
- 6 He will have nothing at all to do with any questionable course of conduct; much more in the case of official business, in which he is most careful and assiduous.
- 7 To break God's law is of itself a great sin; how much greater [the sin] when, in addition, his grace is also abused.
- 8 Even if I were buying silver, you would have to give a little extra weight; how much more when I am buying fuel?
- 9 The gods in the temples cannot even protect themselves, much less can they protect men.

NOTES.

1 使的慌 tired, "used up,"—much used in Shantung, but not t'ung-hsing. 累的慌 is t'ung-hsing, but is not exactly equivalent, meaning rather, overburdened, distressed by excess of labor.

8 打花花哨, get off your euphonious twitter,—applied in derision to one who is trying to say smart things. 拿人開心, to enjoy oneself at the expense of another, to make game of.

9 搭搭脚, take a passage for your feet, that is, rest your legs by riding.

10 For this use of 乾, see Les. 94.

16 不 is emphatic, standing for the negative side of the question.

25 鬼哭狼號, demons crying and wolves yelping; a forcible figure to describe the crying and screaming of the sisters-in-law in their quarrels.

27 以強壓弱, using main force to oppress the weak,—a book phrase.

29 老大娘 is a widely used term of respect. It may be addressed to any elderly woman whose age and position does not entitle her to be addressed as 老太太. It is a widespread belief amongst Chinese women that to defile clean water is sin, and that they will be punished for it in another world by being compelled to drink all the water they have defiled in this world. Paper cows are burned that they may help them through with the disagreeable task.

12 Dec. 1920

LESSON CLXIX.

THE COMPARATIVE CONJUNCTION. shang + ch'ieh

k'uang⁴ 况 Moreover, still more, besides. Not often used alone in Mandarin, though frequently so used in wên-li.

何况 How much more, or how much less;

still more, or still less,—much used in correlation with 尙且, see Les. 175.

况且 Still more, still further; moreover, besides; especially.

樣兒。○你的身子也是父母生成的，何況身外之物，豈不更屬父母嗎？¹²這一頓現成的飯，何足掛齒，況且你的甚麼東西我沒吃過啊。○你就是親眼看見他的過錯，也証不住他，何況是風聞聽來的呢。○爲這暫時的榮耀，人還費事去求，何況爲天上永遠的榮耀，豈不更當求嗎。○就¹⁵算他是個會說的，也說不過這個理去，況且他的嘴很呢。○連自己的親姑姑，他還沒上沒下的罵，何況是我們呢。○必定叫人家儘其所有的，都給了你，能穀嗎，況且給是人情，不給是本分。○你看外人比我年紀大，我還要這樣敬重，何況是我的親哥哥呢。○我若穿上好的，不但不

- 10 Who is willing to give his daughter in marriage to a poor family? how much less to such a disreputable fellow as Lang Ch'in Hsue!
- 11 Your bodies, even, were generated by your father and mother; and do not things outside your bodies still more rightfully belong to them?
- 12 What is there worth speaking of in this one common meal? especially as there is nothing of yours of which I have not eaten.
- 13 You could not prove the crime against him even if you had seen it with your own eyes, how much less when it is a mere rumor.
- 14 When men take pains to seek even this transitory glory, should they not much more seek the everlasting glory of heaven?
- 15 Even supposing he were a plausible speaker, he could not maintain this position; how much less seeing he is exceedingly slow of speech.
- 16 In defiance of all propriety he reviles even his own aunt; how much more will [he revile] us.
- 17 Can you expect a man to give you everything he has? especially as to give is a favor, and not to give is no wrong.
- 18 Consider how I am expected to show respect even to a stranger who is my senior, how much more to my own elder brother.

VOCABULARY.

- 懈 Hsie⁴..... Remiss, negligent, listless, slow.
- 5 疎懈 Su¹ hsie⁴. Careless, remiss, dilatory, indolent, laggard.
- 6 勤謹 Ch'in² chin³. Diligent, assiduous; industrious.
- 辜 Ku¹..... A fault, a crime, a sin; to hold guilty.
- 7 辜負 Ku¹ fu⁴. To misuse, to abuse; to prostitute; to squander.
- 8 戥 Teng³. A small steelyard specially constructed for weighing silver and gold.
- 10 窮苦 Ch'iu² ku³. Poor, poverty-stricken, indigent.
- 15 訥 No⁴. Slow of speech, awkward speech, stammering.
- 16 姑姑 Ku¹ ku¹..... A paternal aunt.

- 職 Chi². To oversee; official duty; province, function.
- 武職 Wu³ chi²..... Military office, military.
- 10 羞愧 Hsiu¹ k'wei⁴..... Ashamed, mortified.
- 20 執法 Chi² fa³. Taking the law as guide, according to law.
- 20 按法 An⁴ fa³..... The same.
- 20 按法 Chwang¹..... The same as 粧.
- 21 妝飾 Chwang¹ shi¹. Adornment, dress, style; outward gloss.
- 22 煎 Chien⁴. To scald; to steep; to temper. Also chien¹.
- 22 蘸 Chan⁴..... To dip, to immerse; to temper.
- 22 發條 Fa¹ tiao²..... A coiled spring, a spring.

得樣兒而且不舒服況且我們這武職的差使也用不着好衣裳。一時官府把你問倒自己也覺得羞愧況你若告下詭狀官府按執法還要問你個反坐。○你們這小信的人野地裏的草今日還在明日就丟在爐裏神還叫他有這樣的妝飾何況你們呢。○你是²²不明白煎發條的法子你想那已經²⁰烤過兩回的都斷了何況是一回沒烤過的豈不更要斷了嗎。○論²³到學英文這本是一件頂要緊的事情凡有志求學問的都當學習因為今日的天下一切有用的上等學問和有名的書籍差不多全屬英文所以一通英文就能通天下的學問可以加增人的知識開廣人的眼界這豈不是念書的一大樂嗎不但這樣而

- 19 If I wear fine clothes, they are not only unbecoming but also uncomfortable; besides, we who belong to the military class do not need elegant clothes.
- 20 If at any time the magistrate should ask you a question that knocks you off your feet, you would yourself feel ashamed; and moreover if you have brought a false charge, the magistrate may, in accordance with the law, inflict on you the punishment which the accused would have had to suffer.
- 21 If God so clothe the grass of the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven, shall He not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?
- 22 You don't understand the method of tempering springs. Just think; if a spring, whose temper has been twice drawn, breaks, how much more will one break whose temper has not been drawn at all.
- 23 The learning of English, of which you speak, is indeed a very important matter. Every one who aspires to be a scholar should learn it. For nearly all the most useful and important sciences known in the world at the present time, together with all the most noted books, are in English. Hence when a man knows English, he has access to the learning of the world, and can enlarge his knowledge

學習 *Hsüe² hsi²*..... To learn, to study.
上等 *Shang⁴ têng³*. Superior, first-rate, important.
加增 *Chia¹ tsêng¹*. To add to, to increase, to enlarge.
知識 *Chi¹ shi²*. Knowledge, enlightenment, insight.
開廣 *K'ai¹ kwang³*..... To enlarge, to extend.
眼界 *Yen³ chie⁴*. Boundary of sight, scope of vision, mental horizon.
教習 *Chiao¹ hsi²*..... A teacher, a professor.
翻譯 *I⁴*..... To explain, to interpret.
翻譯 *Fan¹ i⁴*..... To interpret, to translate.

精通 *Ching¹ t'ung¹*. Thorough, well-versed, competent, finished.
効用 *Hsiao⁴ yung⁴*. To labor for, to exert oneself on behalf of, to serve.
較比 *Chiao³ pi⁴*..... To compare.
財利 *Ts'ai² li⁴*..... Money, profit, gain.
佔先 *Chan⁴ hsien¹*. To outstrip, to excel, to get the advantage.
上達 *Shang⁴ ta²*. To ascend, to rise, to advance in honors, to strive for excellence or superiority.
捷便 *Chie² pien⁴*. Convenient, brief, pointed, labor-saving.

而且也要學到好處。就是一條四通八達的路，要緊想法子學，業的，都當知道，這英文就是一個捷便門，以凡有志上達的，或是想着成大功，立大在財利道上，也都是通英文的人佔先，所人，豈不是一大光彩嗎，何況在功名道上，能精通英文的，為國家効用，較比用西國學繙譯的，也是用的西國人，倘若本國有作西學教習的，全是用的西國人，作西且英文，也是國家所等用的，你看現在所

and extend his mental horizon; and is not this one of the chief enjoyments of a scholar? Not only so, but English is needed by the government. You observe that all teachers of Western science and all translators of scientific books, who are employed, are foreigners. If there were natives of our own country who were competent scholars in English, and could serve the government in this capacity, would it not be much more creditable than to use foreigners? Moreover, both in getting degrees and in making money, those who have a knowledge of English have the advantage. So that all who desire to rise, or to attain distinction, or to acquire a fortune, should know that the English language is the labor-saving plan, the high way, in fact, to success. Be sure you find a way to learn it, and learn it well.

NOTES.

2 It will be noticed that some of the sentences containing 何況 end with 呢, and some do not. There is no evident reason why they should not all end with 呢.

12 掛齒, to hang on the teeth; i.e., to speak of,—only used as following 何足.

16 沒上沒下, ignoring upper and lower; i.e., in defiance of the obligation to respect superiors.

17 More literally, Is it practicable to require that a man shall certainly give you everything that he has?

19 不得樣 or 不成樣, inappropriate, not befitting, not in style.

20 問倒 To ask searching questions which nonplus the person examined and convict him of falsehood. 反坐,

to sit in the opposite seat; i.e., to take the place of the accused; to impute to one the crime of which he falsely accuses another, and punish him accordingly. This is a recognized principle of Chinese law.

22 發條 is a comparatively recent term, devised in all probability to designate the spring of a watch,—發 describing the use of the spring, and 條 its form. The term has now, however, come to be applied to springs of all kinds and shapes. In Peking to temper steel is 焯 and in Shantung 焯, the proper characters being in both cases uncertain. The 焯 term is 焯 to 'ui' which is sometimes used colloquially at Nanking.

23 四通八達, four ways open and eight ways communicating; that is, giving access to all quarters, a high way;—see Les. 187.

LESSON CLXX.

ENUMERATION OF PARTICULARS.

24 Dec. 1920

又...又 Both...and.

又...都又 ()... but yet, and yet.

又...而 又 ()... and yet, and besides.

The first 又 is untranslatable; it is implied in the order of the sentence.

一來...二來, etc. In the first place... in the second place, etc.

一不...二不 Neither...nor. With a negative, cardinal numbers are often thus used instead of the ordinals.

一則...一則 } First...second, etc. The first form, which simply repeats the 一則 with each particular, is sometimes used, especially in books, but the proper numbers are most generally used.

課十七百一第

LESSON CLXX.

不和他女婿一心。○約瑟爲甚麼不給他弟兄們打算官職呢。
 在叫我又捨不得錢。那有又好又賤的貨呢。○行又¹³不是止又¹²不是實
 的。却¹¹一樣的事情。叫有心眼兒的人辦。又¹⁴省力。又¹⁵快當。○你又要好
 呢。天下找不出多少來。○我¹⁰和他一不¹¹沾¹²係¹³難¹⁴爲¹⁵。○又有德又有才的人
 又不敢擔事。所以他常常自己找¹⁶一些¹⁷個¹⁸難¹⁹爲²⁰。○凡事又好出頭。而却
 ○我看買個鍍銀的好。一則體面。二則不長²¹鏽。○凡事又好出頭。而却
 他家裏又不缺²²喫。又不缺²³穿。○那²⁴個人的心術不好。又狠毒。又詭詐。
 斗。○自己又不²⁵按²⁶理²⁷行。而²⁸却²⁹又³⁰想³¹着³²叫³³人³⁴說³⁵個³⁶好³⁷。這豈不是難事嗎。
 他天生得又聾又啞。○我的嘴又拙。心又笨。○這些糧食。又³⁸潮³⁹濕⁴⁰。又⁴¹賤⁴²虧

- 1 He was both deaf and dumb from his birth. [is dull.
- 2 My speech is awkward and my mind
- 3 This grain is both wet and short in measure.
- 4 You act unreasonably and yet you desire men to praise you. Is not this an impossible thing?
- 5 At his home there is no lack either of food or of clothing.
- 6 That man's heart is depraved; he is both cruel and treacherous.
- 7 I think it would be better to buy a silver-plated one. In the first place, it is genteel; and in the second place, it will not rust.
- 8 He wants to lead in everything, and yet he is afraid to take responsibility; hence he is constantly getting himself into difficulty.
- 9 But few men are to be found in the world who are both virtuous and gifted.
- 10 I am neither a relative of his nor an old friend; why should I be partial towards him?
- 11 When a thing is done by a man of ability, it is so done as to both save labor and secure despatch.
- 12 You want a superior quality, and yet you are loth to pay the price. Where will you find goods that are both cheap and good?
- 13 It will not do to proceed, neither will it do to stop. Truly I am in an embarrassing position.
- 14 It is no wonder that the Chiang family are not pleased with their daughter-in-law. She is both greedy and lazy, and besides, she is not true to her husband's interest.

VOCABULARY.

斗 K'wei¹ tou³. Short measure; to lose measure.
 賤斗 Shè² tou³. To lose measure, to fall short.
 鏽 Hsiu⁴. Rust, an oxide.
 擔事 Tan¹ shi⁴. To bear responsibility, to undertake to do a thing.
 沾 Chan¹. To receive [favors], to enjoy; to participate in, to have to do with; soiled.

當意 Tang¹ i⁴. Pleased with, acceptable, agreeable.
 官職 Kwan¹ chi². Office, official rank.
 分散 Fèn¹ san⁴. To scatter, to disperse.
 聚集 Chū⁴ chi². To assemble, to gather together, to collect.
 驚眼 Ching¹ yen³. To stir up a craving for, to excite desire.

來他們本是牧羊的人，未必有作官的才學。二來作官必分散，難以再聚集在一處。三來分散在伊及人當中，免不得隨他們的風俗，去拜假神。○你留這些現錢做什麼，叫人家看見驚眼，倒不如買點銀子藏着，一則省得有人來借，二則免得有賊來偷，你就沒有這點打算嗎。○吳天保真是個有福分的人，你看他活的時候，家裏又發功名，又發財，他一死了，立時就敗落喇。凡來歷不明，踪跡可疑的人，都立刻舉報出來，斷不可容在甲內，一則免得失事，二則免得帶累。這裏腳的風俗，一來不合天理，二來不合人情，怎麼說是不合天理呢，因為天給人的四肢百體，各有其用，而腳的用處，是在乎能站能走，但是一裹起來，却就難站難走了，況且孩子在七八歲，正是

15 Why did not Joseph provide official positions for his brethren? Ans. First, they were shepherds, and probably had not the talents and education necessary for officials; second, if they became officials, they must needs separate, and it would be difficult for them to come together again; third, if scattered amongst the Egyptians, they could not avoid following their customs and worshipping false gods.

16 Why do you keep so much ready [copper] cash to excite the cupidity of beholders? It would be much better to exchange it for silver, which you can hide away. In the first place, you will be saved from borrowers; and in the second place, you will avoid its being stolen by thieves. Haven't you this small amount of forethought?

17 Wu T'ien Pao was evidently a favorite of fortune. See how while he lived, his family increased both in honors and riches, but as soon as he is dead, their good fortune at once departs.

18 All persons of uncertain antecedents or of suspicious conduct, you should report at once and by no means harbor them in the neighborhood; first, to avoid theft; and second, to avoid complications.

19 The custom of foot-binding is, in the first place, contrary to reason; and, in the second place, contrary to natural affection. Why is it contrary to reason? It is so because each of the several members of the body which Heaven has given to men, has its proper use, and the use of the feet is to stand and walk; but if they be

福分 *Fu² fèn⁴*. Portion of happiness, lot, fortune.

踪跡 *Tsung¹*..... A vestige, a footprint.

跡 *Chi⁴*..... A trace; vestiges; effects.

踪跡. Footprints, traces, vestiges; antecedents.

舉報 *Chü³ pao⁴*. To report, to state, to give an account of.

裹腳 *Kwo³ chiao³*. To bind the feet as Chinese women do.

肢 *Chi¹*. The limbs, the members of the body.

虧損 *K'wei¹ sun³*. A deficiency, a defect; injury, to impair, to stunt.

旗裝 *Chi² chwang¹*. Manchu dress,—especially that of the feet.

強壯 *Chi² iang³ chwang⁴*. Strong, vigorous, robust.

疼痛 *T'eng² t'ung⁴*..... Pain, suffering.

難堪 *Nan² k'an¹*. Difficult to bear, intolerable, insupportable.

終身 *Chung¹ shên¹*..... The whole life.

得肋 *Tè² chin⁴*. The advantageous application of strength.

的、然、筋、難、况、旗、因、不、脚、又
 還、不、的、堪、又、裝、爲、合、必、長
 可、合、時、而、裹、一、女、天、要、骨
 仍、人、候、且、了、樣、兒、理、虧、頭
 舊、情、所、終、脚、也、本、怎、損、又
 給、又、以、身、不、大、來、麼、他、長
 女、不、說、受、但、不、是、說、的、肉
 兒、合、是、累、頭、如、軟、是、身、的
 裹、天、不、永、四、男、弱、不、體、時
 脚、理、合、遠、五、人、的、合、所、候
 嗎、爲、人、沒、年、强、即、人、以、若
 父、母、情、有、疼、壯、便、情、說、是
 既、得、痛、何、和、呢、是、裹

bound, standing and walking are made very difficult. Besides, at seven or eight years is just the age when the bones and muscles are developing, and if the feet are bound, the child's body will certainly be stunted in its growth. Hence I say that the custom is contrary to reason. Why is it contrary to natural affection? It is so because girls are by nature delicate, so that, even with feet dressed as Manchus, they are far from being as robust as men; how much more when their feet are bound. Not only do they suffer intolerable pain during the first four or five years, but they are handicapped all through life, and are never able to use their strength to advantage. Hence I say it is contrary to natural affection. Seeing then that it is contrary both to natural affection and to reason, is it right for parents to continue binding their daughters' feet?

NOTES.

8 The translation given assumes that 他 refers to a child, or to some subordinate member of the household. It may, however, with equal propriety be referred to the head of the family, in which case the translation should be, *In his family, etc.*

10 故, as here used, stands for 故交, an old acquaintance. 係 is equivalent to 是. It is a *wen-li* character, but as used in this phrase, is thoroughly colloquial.

11 The use of 一樣 suggests the idea that the same thing done by some one else would not be so well done.

13 進退兩難, *advances and retreat alike difficult, in*

a dilemma, in a strait betwixt two,—a very common and expressive phrase.

18 Cities and large towns are formed by the officers into wards or companies of ten families each, which are called 甲. The names are registered, and if any one of the ten is guilty of a misdemeanor the whole company are involved and are compelled to share the consequences.

19 裹脚, to bandage the feet; that is, to compress or "bind" them as Chinese women do. The more common colloquial term is 包脚. 四肢百體 *four members and hundred [parts of the] body*. There is an ellipsis of some word equivalent to *parts or organs*. The phrase is a summary expression for the whole body.

LESSON CLXXI.

SPECIAL TERMS OF POLITE ADDRESS.

The Chinese are much given to the use of exaggerated terms of politeness, especially in case of limited acquaintance, or when meeting in a ceremonious way. A number of these terms have already occurred in previous lessons. The list here given, while not exhaustive, is sufficient for all practical purposes.

貴 Honorable—applied to names, ages, affairs, dwellings, cities, countries, etc.

貴姓 What is your honorable surname? Most of these complimentary terms, when used in direct address, carry with them the force of the question appropriate to the case.

貴處 What is your honorable residence? that is, from whence do you come?

貴府 Where is your honorable residence? that is, where do you live? where is your home?

貴寓 Where are your honorable lodgings or apartments? [county?]

貴縣 What is your honorable district or

貴國 Your honorable country, or which is your honorable country?

貴庚 What is your honorable age? Applied chiefly to young persons, but not to children.

貴甲子 What is your honorable age?

第一七十一課

LESSON CLXXI.

生當。是稱。答。倖。二。縣。處。賤。沒¹
 今。○。是。書。席。要。的。十。答。名。領。
 年。家²。啟。不。到。敢。歲。敝。天。教。
 貴^高。有。老。夫。過。祥。敢。縣。處。榜。貴。尊。
 甲^壽。子。妻。子。辦。符。閱。貴。是。姓。
 子。男。失。子。來。代。縣。登。科。蓬。台。大。啊。
 已。人。兒。敬。往。處。要。我。呢。賤。
 經。不。失。的。館。到。兄。貴。答。姓。
 虛。遭。敬。書。何。弟。庚。草。王。
 度。橫。答。札。貴。處。是。答。字。
 六。事。好。席。有。乙。今。登。尊。大。官。
 十。○。說。哦。阿。答。何。酉。年。雲。諱。名。印。
 八。老³。不。原。不。貴。科。癡。呢。
 喇。先。敢。來。敢。幹。儂。長。貴。答。

1 I have not the pleasure;—what is your honorable surname? Ans. My humble surname is Wang. Your distinguished name? Ans. My humble name is T'ien Pang. Your great title? Ans. My vulgar title is Fêng Yün. From what honorable place (county) do you come? Ans. My obscure residence is P'êng-lai. What is your honorable age? Ans. This year is the twentieth of my imbecile life. In what honorable class did you get your degree? Ans. Fortune favored your younger brother in the inferior class of I-yü (1885). May I presume to ask where you are going, and what is your honorable business? Ans. I am going to fill a position in the district of Hsiang-fu. May I inquire what is your official position? Ans. I cannot claim to have any official position; I am going to act as corresponding clerk. Ah! then, you are a reverend secretary. I beg pardon, I beg pardon. Ans. You compliment me overmuch.
 2 A man who has a good wife does not get into trouble.
 3 Venerable sir, what is your great age?

These characters being the first of the 天干 and 地支 are taken as representative. This term is applied to persons of greater age than the former, though not to the very old.

貴幹 What is your honorable business? i. e., occasion of your coming?

貴科 Which was your honorable class? The use of this term implies that the person addressed has a degree.

貴席 What is your honorable office? Only used of the official assistants in a yamên. The theoretical reference is to such as eat at special tables, not with the common herd.

賤 Mean. Mostly used with names and surnames in response to 貴 in the preceding question.

賤內 My unworthy wife.

敝 Deteriorated, worthless. Applied to places, in response to 貴 in the question.

[borough.]

敝處 My contemptible residence, or neigh-

敝縣 My contemptible district or county.

敝國 My contemptible country.

敝寓 My contemptible lodgings.

官印 Official style or name. The first character assumes an official status, and the second is used in allusion to printed cards, or an engraved seal.

大 Great,—in addition to its use to signify elder, 大 is used as a complimentary term in a few cases.

大名 Great or honorable name.

大號 Great or honorable designation. The 號 is a name or style taken by educated men, and is supposed to have some fanciful connection with the 名. Some few persons have a 名, a 號 and a 字, but most persons only have two names, the second one being called either 號 or 字.

大人 Great man, honored sir,—used in letters as a term of respect after 父親 母親, 夫子, 先生, etc. In classical use 大人 is the correlative of 小人, in official language 大人 is the honorary title given to certain grades of officials.

小 Small,—besides the term 小的 (which see) 小 is occasionally used as a demeaning term.

小弟 Insignificant younger brother, your humble servant.

小號 Insignificant designation or firm.

有¹¹先¹¹次¹¹到¹¹問¹¹到¹¹還¹¹先⁶笑[○]
 一¹¹生¹¹來¹¹貴¹¹現¹¹府¹¹在¹¹府¹¹在¹¹在¹¹生⁶見[○]
 個¹¹家¹¹中¹¹貴¹¹府¹¹現¹¹在¹¹上¹¹去¹¹是¹¹貴⁶國[○]
 家¹¹兄¹¹都¹¹寓¹¹看¹¹家¹¹母¹¹現¹¹在¹¹去¹¹是¹¹去¹¹國⁶
 一¹¹個¹¹有¹¹甚¹¹那¹¹到¹¹還¹¹不¹¹令¹¹世¹¹多¹¹年¹¹是¹¹美⁶國[○]
 舍¹¹弟¹¹人¹¹答¹¹做¹¹能¹¹衰¹¹弱¹¹康¹¹健¹¹○
 一¹¹個¹¹有¹¹寓¹¹在¹¹去¹¹我⁹啊¹¹我⁸我⁷下¹¹有¹¹幸¹¹了¹¹○
 小¹¹犬¹¹子¹¹嚴¹¹父¹¹狀¹¹○
 一¹¹家¹¹慈¹¹母¹¹街¹¹○
 小¹¹還¹¹○
 這¹¹要¹¹承¹¹承¹¹沒¹¹尊¹¹○

Ans. I have already wasted sixty-eight years.
 4 Is that your worthy wife who has just gone into the house? Ans. That is my humble housekeeper,—a ridiculous object.
 5 Your unworthy servant is fortunate in having you, gentlemen, come to his humble dwelling.
 6 What is your honorable country, sir? Ans. My unworthy land is the United States of America.
 7 I supposed your honored father was still living. Is it many years since his decease?
 8 I have not been to see you for several years. Is your honored mother still in good health? Ans. You are very kind, thank you. My mother is not as yet greatly enfeebled.
 9 I have long desired to go to visit your honorable residence, but have not yet been able to do so.
 10 Where is your honorable stopping place during the present examinations, sir? Ans. My unworthy apartments are on the Chwang-yüan street.
 11 What family have you at home, sir? Ans. I have my father and mother,

小犬 Small dog,—a demeaning term for a son.
 犬子 Canine son,—a demeaning term applied to a son, either large or small. 子 is not an enclitic but a noun qualified by 犬. [to the 號.
 台甫 Exalted title,—a polite way of referring
 草字 Grass characters or name,—grass expressing the idea of common or unworthy.
 草舍 Thatched cabin, my humble dwelling.
 寒舍 Cold cabin, my cheerless dwelling.
 高壽 What is your venerable age?—only used in addressing old people.
 翁 An old man. Age is honorable; hence this term is applied by way of compliment even to comparatively young men. It is always joined to the first of the two characters constituting the name, the other being omitted.
 令 Good, worthy of regard,—chiefly applied to family relationships.
 令尊 Your worthy sire.
 令堂 Your worthy mother.
 令郎 Your worthy son.
 令愛 Your worthy daughter.

令正 Your worthy wife. 正 refers to the wife as distinguished from a concubine.
 令昆仲 Your worthy brothers.
 Besides the above, 令 is also applied to 兄, 弟, 姊, 妹, 叔, 姪, etc.
 老 Old,—largely used as a term of respect.
 老夫子 Aged master, respected sir,—applied to a teacher, or to a professor of any fine art.
 老人家 Old gentleman. Frequently joined with the pronoun 你 or 他.
 老先生 Venerable sir.
 老 is also joined with many relationships as, 父親, 母親, 哥, 兄, 兄台, 弟, 弟台, etc.
 家 Family,—is used by the speaker to designate members of his own family, but expresses no special disrespect or otherwise.
 家嚴 Family discipline, my father. Used of parents after death, rarely while they are living.
 家慈 Family forbearance, my mother.
 家 is also used with 父, 母, 兄, 伯, 叔, etc.
 賢兄 or 賢弟 Worthy younger brother.

走道他的春人吃了○津是女
 嗎送他的先不, 吃了天衛排再
 答君令先生, 然, 了色衛行者
 外千里, 你怎, 早飯已罪。第還
 頭終那, 麼一, 再晚, 甚八。有
 有, 位不, 臉走, 請老, 麼○兄¹³ 拙
 個, 姑認, 書○看¹⁵ 到, 寶台○閣¹²
 朋, 娘識, 氣呢。○閣¹⁵ 下, 號, 答
 友, 一, 他嗎, 下○有¹⁶ 必, 舍小
 找, 別, 他, 這○位相, 是, 住號
 我, 他, 的, 令愛。○公, 一, 是
 去, 怎¹⁸ 的, 這, 位, 相, 公, 就
 看, 麼, 老, 令, 愛。○公, 就
 看, 先, 自¹⁷ 就
 病, 生, 古, 是
 失, 要, 是, 長, 斯, 文, 天, 玉, 天, 弟

also one older and one younger brother, a young son and a little daughter, and also my stupid thorn.

12 Which son are you, sir? Ans. Your younger brother is the eighth in order.

13 Where are you getting rich (i. e., doing business)? Ans. I am toiling away in Tientsin. What is the precious title of your firm? Ans. Our insignificant title is Eastern Flourishing Jewel.

14 It is already quite late, sir; I shall be pleased to have you spend the night under my humble roof, and you can go on after breakfast to-morrow morning.

15 From your appearance, sir, I judge you are a literary man; otherwise whence this academic expression of countenance?

16 There is a Mr. Li Ch'ang Ch'un whom you know, do you not? This young gentleman is his son, and that young lady is his daughter.

17 The old saying is, "Though you accompany a friend a thousand li there must be a farewell at last."

18 How is this? must you go, respected sir? Ans. A friend without inquires for me to go and see a patient. Please excuse me.

賢妻 A virtuous or prudent wife,—not used in direct address.

舍弟 A younger brother who shares the same cabin, my younger brother.

舍妹 My younger sister, is also used.

在下 The one beneath, your humble servant,—a depreciatory term for oneself.

拙荆 Stupid thorn, my wife.

閣下 Dweller in a lofty house, respected sir,—a formal term expressing high respect, and much used in conversation in some places; in other places rarely used, save in letters or books.

台下 The exalted one at whose feet I stand, honored sir. Less used than 閣下.

尊駕 Exalted sitter in the carriage. Riding in a carriage is a mark of a gentleman. It is similar to, but less used than, 閣下.

尊嫂 Respected sister-in-law.

尊姓 What is your exalted surname? 尊名 is also used.

尊諱 Exalted agnomen, honorable name.

愚 Stupid,—a depreciatory substitute for 我, used in letters.

愚弟 Stupid younger brother, is also used [in the same way.]

失陪 I am wanting in courtesy, please excuse me,—said when taking an early leave.

失敬 I have failed to show the respect I should have shown,—used when a stranger is suddenly recognized as being more than he was supposed to be.

承問 I am obliged to you for asking, thank [you.]

少見 I have not seen you for a long time; you have been much missed,—generally doubled and used in response to the greeting of a friend whom one has not seen for some time.

彼此 [The fault is] mutual, I am equally to blame,—always doubled, and used in response to some phrase or expression implying an apology.

久仰 I have long respected you, your reputation has preceded you.

久違 I have absented myself too long. I have too long neglected you,—belongs properly in the mouth of the party who has been absent,

生的品學俱高，果然是名不虛傳。○貴處
 生，可認識嗎？答：就是小對久仰。先
 事，如心，勿勞，慚念。○貴縣有位先
 尊，嫂大人，及令姪。○天福均安，愚
 天，來的時候，煩尊駕帶來。○敬請兄
 地，脈氣。○這座墳，正在穴眼上，一起
 墳，因為這座墳，正在穴眼上，一起
 ○我勸老弟一句好話，千萬不要起這
 甚多，望祈留意。若有地方，代為吹
 陪，失陪。○閣下在此，已經年久，眼
 中，熟人

- 19 You, sir, have been in this place a long time, and have a large circle of acquaintances. Please then keep me in mind, and in case a situation offers, I beg you will recommend me for it.
- 20 I will give you a little good advice, my respected brother. Do not for the world move this grave, for it is just on the center of the vein. If you disturb it, the good luck will all be dissipated.
- 21 Yesterday I forgot my fan at your residence. May I trouble you, respected sir, to bring it with you when you come to-morrow?
- 22 To my excellent brother, my respected sister-in-law and my worthy nephew T'ien Fu; greeting. Everything is satisfactory with your unworthy brother; you need have no anxiety.
- 23 There is in your honorable district a Mr. I Ch'èng Chang; are you acquainted with him? Ans. Your humble servant is he. I have long desired to meet you. Your character and scholarship are alike exalted. Your reputation is well deserved.
- 24 The green hills and flowing streams of your honorable neighborhood are most charming. Ans. You flatter us, sir. Our

but in practice is used indiscriminately by friends who have not seen each other for some time.

寶號 Precious firm-name; what is the name of your respected firm?

寶眷 Your precious family.

台 Exalted, is used as a term of respect after the names of various relationships as 兄台,

弟台, 伯台, 叔台, etc., also 老台 aged or honored sir.

These terms being for the most part the language of mere conventional politeness, do not carry with them nearly the force that their literal signification would seem to imply. It is worthy of note that these stilted terms of politeness for the most part associate with them a high style of Mandarin.

VOCABULARY.

- 台** T'ai². Eminent, exalted, your honor:—see Sub. Also used as a short writing of 臺.
- 甫** Fu³. The first; a second name or style.
- 賢** Hsien². Worthy, virtuous; one whose gifts and virtues exceed those of others, but do not equal the sage or 聖人:—see Sub.
- 犬** Ch'üan³. A dog, villainous:—see Sub.
- 違** Wei². To oppose, to disobey; to leave, to avoid, to neglect:—see Sub.
- 酉** Yu³. Ripe, mellow; the tenth of the twelve branches.

- 處館** Ch'u³ kwan³. To fill the position of a teacher, secretary or clerk.
- 代辦** Tai⁴ pan⁴. To do or act instead of; to ex- cute for another; a deputy.
- 書札** Shu¹ cha². Letters, despatches, petitions, etc., correspondence.
- 啟** Ch'i³. To explain; to open; to report.
- 書啟** Shu¹ ch'i³. An official writer, a secretary, a scrivener.
- 橫事** Hêng⁴ shi⁴. A misfortune, a disaster, a calamity, trouble.

朋友雖自己年長也當自稱爲弟或是親
 所以都不敢驚動了。○若²⁷不十分切己的
 人家不願叫人知道。○小兒完婚甚倉猝
 禮得很哪。答好說。去年家父的生辰他老
 令尊壽誕。令郎又完婚。我都沒去道喜。少
 納福啊。托尊駕的福。都很平安。○昆²⁶仲²⁶彼少
 少見。府上老世伯老伯母和令²⁶仲²⁶彼少
 老兄回來喇。久違久違。彼此見
 獎。我們做處山瘦地薄。實在不像地方。○
 山清水秀。真是幽雅極喇。先生過於誇

obscure neighborhood is very uninviting with its bare hills and sterile soil.
 25 You have returned have you, worthy elder brother? Yes, I am back again, I beg pardon for neglecting you so long. Don't mention it: we have missed you very much (the neglect is mutual). Are your venerable father, respected mother and brothers all well? Thanks to your kind wishes; they are all quite well.
 26 Last year, when your worthy sire passed his birthday, as also when your son celebrated his nuptials, I quite failed to present my congratulations, which was a great want of civility. Ans. Don't mention it. Last year my honored father did not wish his birthday made public, and my son's wedding took place quite suddenly, hence no special ado was thought advisable in either case.
 27 Unless [the person addressed] be a very intimate friend, although you are yourself the elder, you should still speak of yourself as younger brother. In the case of relatives or very dear friends, all who are of the same generation, and younger than yourself, should be

住宿 *Chu⁴ hsiu³*. To stop for the night, to lodge all night.
 斯 *S¹*..... To split; this, that; presently.
 斯文 *S¹ wên²*..... Scholarly, literary.
 書氣 *Shu¹ ch'ü⁴*. The air of a literary man, an academic look.
 年久 *Nien² chiu³*..... For many years.
 祈 *Ch'ü²*..... To pray, to beg, to request.
 望祈 *Wang⁴ ch'ü²*..... Same as 望乞.
 代爲 *Tai⁴ wei⁴*..... Instead of, on behalf of.
 穴 *Hsüe²ü⁴*. A cave; a den; a pit; a sinus, a cavity.
 如心 *Ju² hsin¹*. According to one's mind, pleasing, satisfactory.
 勿 *Wu⁴*. Not, do not,—a book term; used in Kiangnan for 不.
 惦念 *Tien⁴ nien⁴*. To think of, to be anxious about.
 幽 *Yu¹*..... Shady; solitary; retired; obscure.
 幽雅 *Yu¹ ya³*. Retired and beautiful, serene and quiet shade.

世伯 *Shi⁴ po²*. Old uncle,—used in writing, in conversation 老大爺 is used.
 伯母 *Pod² mu³*. The wife of a father's elder brother,—used in writing, 大娘 being used in conversation.
 昆 *K'un¹*..... Alike; brothers.
 昆仲 *K'un¹ chung⁴*..... Brothers. (w.)
 壽誕 *Shou⁴ tan⁴*. The day which marks the age, birthday.
 完婚 *Wan² hun¹*. To celebrate a marriage:— Note (26).
 生辰 *Shêng¹ ch'ên²*. Time of birth,—more bookish than birthday.
 切己 *Ch'ie⁴ chi³*..... Intimate, cordial.
 年長 *Nien² chang³*..... Elder, older.
 在行 *Tsai⁴ hang²*. To be included in any craft; skilled in any art or craft, expert; reasonable, according to the requirements or proprieties of the case.
 敢問 *Kan³ wên⁴*. May I presume? I venture to inquire,—used apologetically.
 身分 *Shên¹ fen⁴*..... Rank, standing; estate.

白、大、老、先、總、人、弟、稱、是、戚、
 總、爺、人、生、要、和、是、或、
 要、二、家、老、在、他、為、是、
 稱、爺、或、伯、行、人、賢、知、
 得、老、稱、台、或、說、胞、弟、
 合、兄、大、台、話、弟、○、
 身、台、哥、老、稱、彼、○、
 分、老、二、先、此、出²⁸、
 弟、哥、你、生、呼、門、親、
 呼、老、你、呼、的、兄、當、
 凡

addressed as worthy younger brother, except that an own younger brother should be addressed as own brother.
 28 In the conversation of a stranger with others, the respective styles of address used should always be in harmony with the proprieties of the case. Whether the address be sir, or respected sir, or respected elder uncle, or respected younger uncle, or you, good sir; whether it be oldest brother, or elder brother, or oldest uncle, or second uncle, or respected elder brother, or respected younger brother; it should in all cases accord with the standing of the person addressed.

NOTES.

1 沒領教, have not received information; that is, I have not the pleasure of knowing your name. The phrase is often used alone, the following 貴姓 being understood. 尊姓 and 貴姓 are equally t'ung-hsing, but the latter is much more commonly used. This sentence shows how briefly the Chinese can sometimes ask and answer questions by simply speaking the leading words.

2 This sentence is a common saying,—a compliment to the sagacity and influence of woman.

4 見笑 is used apologetically on account of the assumed inferior looks of the wife.

8 啊 is here used as an interrogative particle, or rather, it is the euphonic ending of a clause which is made interrogative by the inflection of the words. The difference between this form and that with 嗎 is, that 嗎 leaves the answer quite equivocal, while this form assumes or anticipates an affirmative answer.

12 行幾, which in order,—only used of brothers, and arises from the custom of designating brothers by numbers. 排行第八 is a stately way of saying 行八.

14 天色已晚, the color of the sky is already late,—

alluding to the fading light of sunset, a book expression frequently used by street ballad-singers.

17 君 is used by compliment to a guest. The saying is used when parting from a guest, after escorting him a short distance.

20 穴眼, the eye of the cavity,—the principle or central portion of the supposed passage or vein on which the grave is situated, and through which the propitious influences circulate.

地氣, earth breath,—the subtle essence which is supposed to permeate and animate the earth, and which constitutes the basis of the feng-shui. 地脈, earth pulse, is another name for the same essence, which is supposed to circulate in the earth as the blood does in the body.

22 This is the stereotype phraseology of the first part of a letter written home.

23 品學俱高, character and scholarship both excellent,—a book expression.

25 納福, to receive, or be in possession of, happiness.

26 The Chinese regard an engagement as a quasi marriage, so that the actual marriage is but the completion of what was before begun, hence the term 完婚.

LESSON CLXXII.

OVERPLUS.

Nearly all the terms connected with this idea gather round the word 外, outside, as appears below.

以外 Besides, in addition to, aside from.

格外 Beyond the bound or rule, special, extra, more.

分外 Beyond what is required, extra, especial, unusual.

另外 In addition, extra.

餘外 Besides, aside from, more than.

額外 Beyond the requirements of the case, extra.

越外 Excessive, gratuitous. (s.)
 之外 A book term equivalent to 以外.
 偏外 Much more, all the more, extra. (c.)
 旁外 不相干 Irrelevant, beside the mark.
 餘裏掛外 Projecting within and hanging over without, irrelevant, useless. (l.) [(c. & n.)
 多餘 Superfluous, unnecessary, to no purpose.
 白多 The same. (s.) [mainder. (n.)
 浮餘 Superfluous, unnecessary; surplus, re-
 餘浮 Surplus, overplus, remainder. (c.)

第一百七十二課

LESSON CLXXII.

外多煮一點。○他不聽好話，勸他也是多餘的。○沒有別的東西
 餘裏掛外的話。○平常煮飯可以拘數，但這幾天有客，必得格
 買的不一個多餘的沒有。○他並沒說出個正經理來，淨說了些
 嗎。○我¹⁰因身體軟弱，比別人格外怕冷。○我們是按着人數
 有別的快樂。○這⁹是前有車後有轍的事情，還能¹¹越外問你要
 處挪借的喇，你跟我⁹要，也是白淨多餘的。○除⁸了這個以外，我沒
 亮。○請⁶兄台格外費心，小弟過後必來感情。○我的⁷饑荒是沒
 外抄出個底子來，預備以後對証。○月⁵亮到了中秋，分外的明
 不敢喇。○一³樣的故事，就叫他一說，就²偏外有滋味。○請⁴先生另
 除¹這個以外，再沒瞧見別的吗。○求²大老爺格外施恩，童生再

- 1 Did you see nothing besides this?
- 2 I beseech your honor to show me special mercy. I will not dare to repeat the offence.
- 3 The same story acquires an entirely new interest when he tells it.
- 4 Kindly write off an extra copy, that it may be preserved as a voucher.
- 5 In mid-autumn the moon is especially brilliant.
- 6 I trust, my dear fellow, you will take extra pains. Your unworthy brother will not fail to requite the favor in due time.
- 7 It is impossible for me to raise the money to pay my debts, so that your dunning is all to no purpose.
- 8 Aside from this I have no other happiness.
- 9 This is something for which there is abundant precedent. Do you suppose I would demand of you more than the regular amount?
- 10 Being physically weak, I am much more sensitive to cold than others.
- 11 We bought according to the number of persons. There is not a single one too many.
- 12 He did not give any satisfactory explanation, but simply said a lot of irrelevant things.
- 13 Ordinarily in cooking one can estimate the quantity required; but these few days, having guests, it is necessary to cook a little more than usual.
- 14 It is futile to exhort him. He will not listen to good advice.

VOCABULARY.

童生 *T'ung² shêng¹*. A student who has attended
 the examinations one
 or more times, an undergraduate.
 額 *É^{2,4}*. The forehead; a fixed quantity, *what is*
 *settled by law or custom.*
 典故 *Ku⁴ tien³*. A precedent, a quotation; a
 *story, a tradition, an anecdote.*
 底子 *Ti³ tsí³*. The first draft; a copy for pres-
 *ervation.*
 對証 *Tui⁴ chêng⁴*. To prove, to verify, to sub-
 *stantiate.*

感情 *Kan³ ch'ing²*. To be thankful; to return
 *a favor.*
 轍 *Ché²*. The track of a wheel, a rut; a prece-
 *dent.*
 拘數 *Chü¹ shu⁴*. To fix a number, to estimate,
 *to judge.*
 理當 *Li³ tang¹*..... *Ought, by rights.*
 塢 *Wu³*. A bank, a low wall, an entrenched
 *camp.*
 船塢 *Ch'wan² wu³*..... *A dry dock.*

西、只有那兩個箱子，餘外還有我的行李。○這八百錢是我額外送你的酒錢。答多謝先生的賞。○爲修這個船塢，他一共領了二十萬銀子，這其中不能沒有餘浮。○你既然有這樣的名師，理當分外恭敬纔是，怎麼倒輕藐他呢。○除你之外，再沒有人能成全我這件事，因此我又來煩瑣你咯。○我的眼睛已經疼花喇，一喝點酒，就格外的磨昏。○王先生說話淨壓蓋人，明明人家說的有理，他偏想個法子，顯出人家沒有理來。○民間兌糧納稅，雖說有一定的額數，但是一經官吏書差的手，總必額外多要一些點。○喪了家眷，固然沒有不難受的，但是若有丟下的小孩子，人就格外難受。○我那裏還餘多餘着幾吊錢，你若是不費用的，只管拿

- 15 Aside from those two boxes, there is nothing save my personal luggage.
- 16 These eight hundred cash are an extra present for yourself. Ans. Many thanks for your kindness.
- 17 He received in all twenty thousand taels for building this dry dock, of which he cannot but have something left over.
- 18 Having so distinguished a teacher, you ought to treat him with unusual respect. How is it that you treat him with contempt?
- 19 There is no one except you who can carry this business through for me, so I have come again to trouble you.
- 20 My sight has already become blurred through this pain in my eyes, and whenever I drink a little wine, it is still more indistinct.
- 21 Mr. Wang is given to browbeating people. When the other party is clearly in the right, he still finds some way of showing that he is in the wrong.
- 22 Although the taxes and duties paid by the people are supposed to be fixed by schedule, yet in passing through the hands of the officers and collectors, something extra will of course be demanded.
- 23 A man is of course grieved when he loses his wife, but in case she leaves little children, he feels the loss still more keenly.
- 24 I have there a surplus of a few thousand cash. If you are in need of it, just take it and use it.

煩瑣 *Fan² so²³. To trouble, to worry, to bother, to harass.*

磨昏 *Ma²³. Bleared, indistinct.*

磨昏 *Hu¹⁴. To see obscurely.*

磨昏 *Eyes blurred, indistinct vision.*

壓量 *Ya⁴ liang². To presume, to domineer, to browbeat, to snub. (c.)*

招 *Ch'ia¹. To claw; to grab; to twist; to plait.*

招尖子 *Ch'ia¹ chien¹ tsi³. To domineer, to usurp the first place, to browbeat; to share illicit gains. (s.)*

兌糧 *Tui⁴ liang². To pay tax either in grain or money.*

納稅 *Na⁴ shui⁴. To pay duty.*

吏 *Li⁴. An officer; a subordinate, a deputy; a secretary.*

額數 *É² Shu⁴. The legal rate, the regular schedule.*

一下子 *I¹ hsia⁴ tsi³. At one time.*

恙 *Yang⁴. Nervous, out of sorts; a sickness, an ailment.*

病病恙恙 *Ping⁴ yang⁴. Unwell, ailing, out of sorts.*

吸氣筒 *Hsi¹ ch'⁴ t'ung³. An air-pump.*

通力輪 *T'ung¹ li⁴ lun². A balance wheel.*

分手工的，那些格外費工的，還有兩對兩的，是淨多餘的。○叫銀匠打首飾，有管四手工的，有管五給你們呢。○這²⁹個吸氣筒，原用不着通力輪，加上一個也的，我們也是居家過日子的人，那裏有這麼多餘錢，來路過人太多了去喇，一天沒有一百，也有八十個來討錢飯，一點也吃不下去，必得另外弄做小鍋的喫。○你們這些²⁸他已經那麼大的年紀，又常病病恹恹的，所以大鍋的²⁷叫他到上海去辦貨，又另外給他三十兩碎銀子做盤費，却了不了。○慕本仁的東家，一下子交給他二十個元寶，去用。○你們別想我是個多浮餘兒兒，若是沒有我，你們自己

- 25 You need not think that I am a supernumerary; you cannot settle the matter yourselves without me.
- 26 Mu Pên Jên's employer gave him twenty ingots of silver at once, and sent him to Shanghai to lay in goods; and in addition gave him thirty taels of small silver for traveling expenses.
- 27 Being so old and constantly ailing, it is impossible for him to eat the ordinary food of the family. It will be necessary to cook something specially for him.
- 28 You traveling mendicants are quite too numerous. There are not less than eighty or a hundred of you coming each day. How should we, who also have to earn our living, have money to spare to give to all of you?
- 29 This air pump has no need of a balance wheel; to add one is entirely superfluous.
- 30 When silver ornaments are ordered of a silversmith, the charge for making is in some cases forty, and in some cases fifty per cent of the weight of the silver, and in case the work is very elaborate, the charge is equal to the weight.

NOTES.

2 Any one who has attended one literary examination is entitled to the appellation 童生. In this case, the party calls himself 童生 in order to bring to the notice of the magistrate the fact that he is a literary man.

9 前有車後有轍, *the wagon in front leaves its track behind*; that is, there are precedents by which the matter is determined.

22 官吏書差, *magistrates, officers, clerks and police*. 書 stands for 書辦. The 官 and 書 are collectors of taxes, and the 吏 and 差 are collectors of customs.

24 多餘 as here used—in the sense of *surplus* or *remainder*, is vouched for by Peking teachers, but it is not so

used in Shantung, where it is only used in the sense of *superfluous* or *unnecessary*.

26 辦貨, *manage goods*; that is, to lay in and transport home a supply of goods for sale.

27 大鍋的飯, *food cooked in the large kettle*; that is, the ordinary family fare as opposed to 小鍋的飯; that is, delicacies cooked in small quantities and with special pains.

28 太多了去喇. This addition of 去喇, after adjectives preceded by 太, or a word of similar import, is a colloquialism much in vogue in some places.

LESSON CLXXIII.

EMPHATIC ASSENT.

赶自 or 赶自的 Certainly, of course, I should say. (C. & N.)

自然是 Naturally, of course, to be sure.

可不是 Of course, that's so, you're right, exactly so.

可不是罷咧 The same, —罷咧 being [added for emphasis.]

第一七百七十三課

LESSON CLXXIII.

○馬雲龍不過十二三歲，就記得好幾部書，文章做的也很
 一回却是必要喫的喇，那是不用講的，就怕衆位不賞臉。
 是不错的。○我們從早盼望你得兒子，好來喫你的喜蛋，這
 麼些孩子，天天又要吃又要穿，真不是玩的兒，那可不是難
 東西，還能給他錢嗎？那是一定的。○我一個寡婦拉着這
 他的花消過嗎？○俗語說，不見兔子不撒鷹，借住見他的
 窮的樣，趕自是，他女人有一千多銀子的私體，還不要
 的，還能叫你開錢嗎？○周文錦這幾年沒有進項，却不像受
 不用開錢，今兒晚上的酒飯，都算我的，那是自然的。○先生
 爲我們的事，還能叫人受拖累嗎？答：那是自然的。○先生

- 1 Can we allow others to be embarrassed with our affairs? Ans. Of course not.
- 2 You need not pay, sir; let this evening's wine and refreshments stand to my account. Ans. What are you talking about? Do you suppose I will let you pay my score?
- 3 Chou Wên Chin has had no income (means of living) these several years, and yet he does not seem badly off. Ans. Well, I should say not. His wife had over a thousand taels laid up of her own, which is enough for his living, is it not?
- 4 The proverb says, "Don't loose the falcon till you see the hare." Do you think we will pay him the money before we get the goods? Ans. Of course not.
- 5 It is truly no trivial matter for a widow, as I am, to bring up all these children,—finding food and clothing for them every day. Ans. That's so. It is difficult, no mistake.
- 6 We have long been hoping you would have a son that we might get a feast out of you, and now we must certainly have it. Ans. That goes without saying. I am only afraid you will not do me the honor.
- 7 Ma Yün Lung, though only twelve or thirteen years old, has memorized several books and also writes quite a good essay. He will surely make

那麼不是 Of course, that's so. (s.)
 那是自然的 That's a matter of course, that's understood.
 那是一定的 That's certain, that's so, that's a fact.
 那是已就的 That's understood, you may rest assured of that. (C. & N.)
 那是已在的 That's understood, that's a foregone conclusion. (C. & N.)
 那是實話 That's a fact, that's so, that's sure.
 那是不用說的 That goes without saying, of course.

那是不用講的 The same. (s.)
 那何用說 The same as the last, but put in the interrogative form for emphasis.
 那還問 Why ask that? of course not. (s.)
 那兒的話 What are you talking about? what do you mean?
 那來的話 The same.
 那裏的話 The same.
 着 That's so, just so, exactly. Much used in some localities to express full assent, and is oftentimes repeated after each sentence. It is not essentially different from 噫 (Les. 70), which writing is preferred by some teachers.

可以往後必有個出息，答自然是這樣的聰明，還能不發達嗎？
 ○盧相臣太不認交情了，跟他借件單袍子穿穿，他橫豎支吾着不借，他若再跟我們借東西，也不用借給他。答那是自然的。○我對你們告訴罷，人家說家小口下，總要知道根底，因為這不是一個驢子馬，不合式還可以再挑換。答那是實話。○他¹⁰若帶着人來打架，你們這些小夥子，要緊助我一膀之力。答那何用講，借們都是自己，不幫助你幫助誰呢。○我¹¹若和自已親愛的人，多日沒見，覺着見了，不知有多少話要說，及至果真見了面，又覺着無話可說，你看這奇不奇。答可不是罷。○從¹²來說，前人開路後人行，若我待我的父母不好，將來

his mark by and by. Ans. Of course he will. Such talents cannot fail of success.

8 Lu Hsiang Ch'ên is too unneighborly. I asked him to lend me an unlined coat to wear, but he shuffled about and made all sorts of excuses for not lending it. When he comes again to borrow anything of us, we will not lend it to him. Ans. That's understood.

9 I tell you what it is, when a man bargains for a wife, he wants to know the bottom facts; for it's not as in the case of a mule or a horse, which if unsuitable, one can exchange. Ans. That's a fact.

10 If he brings men with him to fight, you young fellows must not fail to come to my assistance. Ans. Of course we will. We are all of one family. If we do not help you, whom should we help?

11 When for a long time I have not seen one whom I love, I feel as if I had no end of things to talk about; but when I actually see him, I then feel as if I had little or nothing to say. Strange, isn't it? Ans. That it certainly is.

12 The old saying is, "Men walk in the steps of their predecessors." If I treat my parents badly, will my children treat me well? Ans.

VOCABULARY.

掛誤 *Kwa⁴ wu⁴*. Trouble, embarrassment; to involve in.
 拖累 *T'oi¹ lei⁴*. The same. (s.)
 開錢 *K'ai¹ ch'ien²*. To give out money, to pay, to pay off.
 利路 *Li⁴ lu⁴*. Means of living, employment, occupation. (c.)
 嚼過 *Chüe² kwod⁴*. Outlay, expenses, livelihood, living.
 寡居 *Kwa³ chü¹*. To live in widowhood; a widow.
 賞臉 *Shang³ lien³*. To show respect, to honor, to compliment.
 挑換 *T'iao¹ hwan⁴*. To exchange, to transpose, to interchange. (s.)

倒換 *Tao³ hwan⁴*. To exchange.
 親愛 *Ch'in¹ ai⁴*. To love dearly.
 蜡 *Cha¹4*. An imperial sacrifice for the fruits of the year:—Note (13).
 兵船 *Ping¹ ch'uan²*. A war-ship, a man-of-war, a gunboat.
 管子 *Ying² tsi³*. The Chinese city at Newchwang.
 走動 *Tsou³ tung⁴*. To have intercourse or dealings with, to associate with; to have a movement of the bowels.
 數過 *Shu³ kwod⁴*. To lecture, to berate.
 託夢 *T'od³ mêng⁴*. To appear to in a dream.
 源泉 *Yüan²*. A fountain, a spring; source, origin.
 來源 *Lai² yüan²*. Source, origin.

我的兒子，還能待我好嗎？
 四帶着孫子聽戲，看他大有享福的樣兒。
 月掙十二塊洋錢，第二個在水師營，每月掙六兩銀子，第三個在管子，喫三釐小分子，有這麼三個好兒子，還能不享福嗎？
 走動，今天叫他這一數過，管保再就不上門兒喇。
 死了不明白，死的俺孩子爹，昨天夜裏託夢給我，跟我要個馬褂子，若果真不明白，怎麼知道回來要東西呢？
 爲海水被烈日一曬，就化爲氣。
 就是雲彩。
 兒落在地上，這就是雨。
 但是空中比地面上更冷，所以雲彩就縮爲水點兒，水點兒，這遭我可明白下雨的道理喇，領教領教。

Exactly so. That is sound doctrine.

13 I met Fei the fourth yesterday at the Pa-cha Temple listening to the play with his grandchildren. He looked as if he were in very prosperous circumstances. Ans. Of course he is. His oldest son is on a man-of-war getting twelve dollars per month, the second son is in the naval encampment getting six taels per month, and the third is in a business house in Newchwang sharing three per cent of the profits. Having three such good sons, why should he not enjoy life?

14 Chang Hsi has been unwilling for some time to associate with him, and after the lecture he read him to-day, I venture he will not darken his door again. Ans. You may rest assured of that.

15 People say we are not conscious after death. Last night my deceased husband appeared to me in a dream, and asked me for a short coat. If he were indeed unconscious, how would he know to come back and ask for things? Ans. That's a fact.

16 The sea is the chief source of the rain. It is because the hot sun shining on the sea turns the water into vapor. Ans. Just so. Now the vapor naturally rises. Ans. Exactly. And when it rises it becomes clouds. Ans. Just so. But it is colder in the upper air than on the surface of the earth, therefore the clouds soon condense into rain drops; and these drops of water falling on the earth make the rain. Ans. Just so. I now understand the philosophy of rain. Thanks. Thanks.

NOTES.

1 那是自然的 is an affirmative answer to a question implying a negative, and hence in effect makes a negative and must be so translated.

5 拉 is used of rearing children, in allusion to the effort required to "drag along" the load of care and toil. 不是玩, no joke, no fun in it,—a very common phrase.

6 喜麵, vermicelli of rejoicing. In North China, vermicelli (noodles) is the essential dish at all ordinary feasts of rejoicing. In the South, eggs take the place of vermicelli.

10 一膀之力, one shoulder's strength; that is, assistance, a lift. 自己 is constantly used, as here, to signify, belonging to the same family, or to one's own family.

13 八蜡廟, a temple dedicated to the gods of grasshoppers, or locusts. There are eight of these gods, supposed to have authority over as many kinds of insects. The sacrifice referred to by the term 蜡, (or as originally written 蜡), probably had reference to deliverance from the ravages of insects. Grasshoppers are commonly called 蚂蚱, and 蜡 is not now applied to them.

第一百七十四課

LESSON CLXXIV.

徐¹先生最老實不過。○這²樣混帳東西，非打不可。○
 他³是武秀才，又待能⁴怎麼樣呢？武秀才還能喫了人不
 成。○劉⁴家那個小黑驢，最⁵快不過，你去借他的騎
 罷。○今⁵天並沒有人來，難道⁶一個鞍子，還能長上腿
 自己跑了不成。○我⁶看他未必肯來，答⁷他不來却不
 中⁷行。○馮⁷太太那個人，最⁸直爽不過，是說⁸是非，再
 不能⁸藏頭露面。○難⁸道你這些話，都是從肺腑裏掏
 出來⁹的，真話不成。○那⁹樣不識高低的人，非⁹強着他
 不行。○天¹⁰父待我們罪人的恩典，極大無比。○他¹¹這
 樣打死我的親兵，非償命不行。○你¹²們回去告訴馬

- 1 Mr. Hsü is simple-minded to the last degree.
- 2 Nothing less than a flogging will answer for such a scoundrel as this fellow is.
- 3 Suppose he is a military graduate, what can he do? Can a military graduate eat up people?
- 4 That little black donkey of the Liu family's is very fleet. Go and borrow it of them and ride.
- 5 No one has been here to-day. Do you mean to say that a saddle could grow legs and run away of itself?
- 6 I think it is very doubtful whether he will be willing to come. Ans. But he *must* come.
- 7 Mrs. Fêng is an uncommonly straightforward person. With her, right is right and wrong is wrong. Deceit is wholly foreign to her character.
- 8 Do you mean to assert that what you have said is downright honest truth?
- 9 With such a short-witted fellow as this, there is no way but to use force.
- 10 The mercy of our Heavenly Father toward us is great beyond comparison.
- 11 Having killed one of my body-guard, I insist that he shall pay the penalty with his life.
- 12 Do you go back and tell Ma Shu

LESSON CLXXIV.

FINAL NEGATIVE INTENSIVES.

The following negative finals form a somewhat miscellaneous class, which, for want of a better term, I have characterized as *intensives*.

不過 Not to be exceeded, to the last degree, exceedingly, very,—used to strengthen the force of a previous intensive.

不可 Cannot but,—nearly always preceded by 非, giving the sense of nothing less, nothing short of, etc.

不行 Will not do, can't be allowed, must.

不中 Will not serve the purpose, must, positively must. (c. & s.)

無比 Beyond compare,—used to strengthen the force of a previous intensive.

不成 Expresses an emphatic protest, and is used at the end of an interrogative clause, which is generally introduced by 難道. It has no answering word in the English language. It forms a very forcible idiom and is entirely *t'ung-hsing*.

VOCABULARY.

鎗 *Shao*¹. The arrow leaving the bow; rapid, fleet.

鞍 *An*¹..... A saddle.

率 *Shwai*⁴⁷. To follow, to conform to; to lead, to cause to follow; a leader, a guide; a term in a proportion; a resumé; suddenly.

鋪料豎溜還 不豎溜能 開的，心裏却最 並看 不出 事情 的 訣 竅 來。

糊塗不過，無論遇見什麼事情，一點也

叫 我 碰 見 喇，非 給 我 錢 不 行，²⁵ 我 沒 有 錢 却 怎 麼 樣 呢，你

了 他 不 可。²⁵ 這 裏 找 找 不 着 你，那 裏 找 找 不 着 你，今 天 可

東 西，東 家 跑 西 家 闖，不 做 針 線 只 會 浪，這 樣 的 老 婆，非 退 休

心 的 話 來，²³ 除 錯 非 賠 我 不 行。²⁴ 饒 老 婆 懶 修 飾，專 聽 門 外 賣

○ 若 是 將 好 話 說，不 賠 也 不 要 緊，你 既 然 說 出 這 樣 喪 良

十 桌 客 不 可，但 有 眾 位 的 面 子，你 們 看 怎 麼 好 就 怎 麼 好。

都 天 天 刷 洗，真 是 極 乾 淨 無 比。²² 依 我 的 意 思，非 罰 他 請

scoured up every day. Nothing could exceed their perfect cleanliness.

22 According to my idea, nothing short of fining him ten tables of guests should be accepted; but in deference to you, gentlemen, let it be just as you think right.

23 If you had spoken reasonably, I would not have insisted on your making good the loss; but since you have chosen to speak in this unconscionable way, I shall accept nothing short of reparation.

24 A greedy wife, too lazy to keep herself neat, always listening for the step of the huckster, and forever gadding about, who will do no sewing, but gives herself to wantoning;—there is nothing to be done with such a wife but to divorce her.

25 I have been looking everywhere for you in vain. Now that I have happened on you to-day, I will not let you off unless you pay me. Ans. But what if I have no money? Can you make me dig it out of the ground?

26 Don't be misled by those bright glowing eyes of his. In point of fact he is thick-headed to the last degree. He hasn't the least faculty for managing anything; he never gets the clue to things.

NOTES.

4 The use of 的 makes 他 refer to the owner; if it were omitted, 他 would naturally refer to the donkey.

7 露面藏私, show the face, but conceal an evil purpose,—to speak fair words when evil is intended. 藏頭露面, conceal the head but reveal the face, has practically the same meaning.

8 肺腑裏掏出來, brought forth from the lungs and viscera. Sentiments and intentions proceed not only from the "heart," as with us, but from the "inward parts" generally.

9 不識高低, not to recognize the difference between high and low; that is, not able to see a point, obtuse, short-witted.

10 王命, Royal authority. The power of life and death, aside from the processes of law, is conferred upon certain officers. Such officers are said to have 王命; that is, the authority to condemn and execute at will, such as is possessed by a 王 or prince.

24 The first part of this sentence is a four line verse with two rhymes. It epitomizes in terse but forcible language the characteristic faults of a worthless wife.

LESSON CCLXXV.

CORRELATIVE PARTICLES.

就是...還能 | If should...could, would.
就是...也得 | Even if...must.
就是...也要 | Even if...will.

就是...也不 | Even, even if...not.
就是...也強似 | Better...than.
不但是...而且 | Not only...but also.

第一七五課

LESSON CLXXV.

不用哭喇，你就是哭三天三夜，他還能再活過來嗎？
 不但是花冤錢，而且還糟蹋身子。○他們兩個，那些鈎搭連環
 的事，就是神仙也斷不清。○實在沒有新的，舊的也可以。
 是舊的，也得有啊。○我和六五子的冤仇，不但這輩子解不開，
 就是再一輩子，也解不開。○他連個題講尚且作不好，何況是
 作滿篇呢。○人不但要善良像鴿子，也要靈巧像蛇。○種莊稼
 那能看二分利呢，所以就是賣地還賬，也強似年年給人拿利。
 ○講着給他一半現錢，他尚且不願意賣，何況要全賒着呢。○
 孝子不但養活父母，而且又敬愛他。○晉惠公說，一個平常人
 尚且不可侮慢，何況我為國君呢。○無論¹²是說話是作行¹¹文，不但

- 1 Come, come, stop crying. If you should cry for three days and nights, it would not bring him to life again.
- 2 Opium smoking not only wastes money, but it also destroys the health.
- 3 The tangle of these two men's affairs is such that even the genii could not decide between them.
- 4 If you really have no new ones, old ones will do. Ans. But what if I haven't even old ones?
- 5 My enmity with Liu Wu-tsi, not only cannot be allayed in this lifetime, it cannot even be allayed in the next lifetime.
- 6 He cannot even write an explanation of the theme, how much less can he write a complete essay.
- 7 A man should not only be harmless as a dove, he should also be wise as a serpent.
- 8 It is impossible to realize twenty-four per cent profit at farming. Hence it is better to sell land and pay one's debts, than to pay interest year by year.
- 9 He is not willing to sell, even when offered one-half ready money, how much less if it is all on credit.
- 10 A dutiful son not only supports his father and mother, he also honors and loves them.
- 11 Prince Hui of Chin said, "You ought not to insult even a common man, how much more me, your prince."
- 12 Both in speaking and in writing you should aim, not only at brevity, but

不但...更. Not only.....but still more.
 不但...就是也. Not only...but even,
 but also.
 不但...倒. Not only.....but on the
 contrary.

不但...也. Not only.....also.
 尚且...何況. Even...how much more.
 尚且...何況更. Even.....how
 much more.
 尚且...更. Even if.....much more.

VOCABULARY.

善良 *Shan⁴ liang²*. Good, upright, honorable;
 harmless. (w.)
 鴿 *Ké¹*.....A dove; a pigeon.

敬愛 *Ching⁴ ai⁴*. To respect and love, to re-
 vere, to honor.
 晉 *Chin⁴*. To flourish; name of an ancient
 feudal kingdom.

要求其簡捷，更要求其顯亮明白。○若是能作一部好書，不但於
 當世有益處，就是於後世也有益處。○叫¹⁴他¹⁴到¹⁵幾時是個頭
 兒呢，這回¹³就是割上一死，也要和他¹⁴拔¹⁴這¹⁴個¹⁴高¹⁴低¹⁴。○連¹⁵僱人幫
 助，尙且累得丟盔卸甲的，若不僱人，更不知累到甚麼樣兒喇。○
 外人尙且要愛，何況自己的兄弟，更要相親相愛。○我¹⁷就是願意
 學醫道，因爲懂得醫道，不但能利己，而且也能濟世。○他¹⁸不但爲
 人打算事情，打算的周到，就是在交接應酬上，也沒有比他再通
 世路的了。○他¹⁹覺着是賈大人的鄉親，賈大人必賞他個臉，歸
 不但沒討出臉來，反倒討了個無趣。○你²⁰想有官壓服，惡人尙且
 橫行，若沒有官壓服，豈不更要橫行嗎。○俗語說，酒肉朋友，柴米

- still more at clearness and perspicuity.
- 13 If you can write a good book, it will be a benefit, not only to the present, but to succeeding generations.
 - 14 How long must I put up with his domineering? This time we'll see who is the best man, even if it costs me my life.
 - 15 If even with hired help we are fatigued beyond endurance, to what extreme would our fatigue reach if we had no hired help at all?
 - 16 You ought to love even strangers, how much more should you love your own brothers.
 - 17 The thing I want to learn is medicine; for if one understands medicine, not only can he benefit himself but he can also be a blessing to society.
 - 18 Not only is he thorough in planning matters for others, but also in the varied intercourse of life, there is none more conversant with the amenities than he.
 - 19 He thought that as he had been Chia Ta-jên's neighbor, Chia Ta-jên would certainly treat him with politeness; whereas he not only did not receive any consideration, but on the contrary was subjected to humiliation.
 - 20 You should consider; if bad men are violent even with officers to restrain them, how much more violent would they become if there were no officers to restrain them.
 - 21 The proverb says, "Feasting makes good friends; money keeps the peace between husband and wife." Hence when a man becomes very poor, not

侮 *Wu³*..... *To insult; to ridicule; to neglect.*
 侮慢 *Wu³ man⁴*. *To insult, to contemn; to set at naught.*
 行文 *Hsing² wên²*. *To write, to compose in writing; to send a dispatch.*
 作文 *Tsoa⁴ wên²*. *To write, to compose in writing.*
 簡捷 *Chien³ chie²*..... *Brief, terse, concise.*
 顯亮 *Hsien³ liang⁴*. *Clear, perspicuous, evident, manifest.*
 盔 *K'wei¹*..... *A defence for the head, a helmet.*
 撩 *Liao⁴*. *To brush off; to throw away; to leave, to forsake:—See liao².*

利己 *Li⁴ chi³*. *To benefit oneself; to act selfishly.*
 周到 *Chou¹ tao⁴*. *Everywhere, catholic; complete, thorough.*
 交接 *Chiao¹ chie¹*. *Intercourse, fellowship; communication.*
 世路 *Shi⁴ lu⁴*. *The customs and fashions of the world; obsequious, complaisant.*
 世務 *Shi⁴ wu⁴*..... *The same.*
 鄉親 *Hsiang¹ ch'in¹*. *Residents of the same neighborhood, neighbors.*
 壓服 *Ya¹ fu²*. *To restrain, to keep down, to curb, to control.*

我也抱怨那家子就是踏着金銀上炕我也不貪圖。
 不嫁二夫郎，所以這家子就是倒踢的。
 雨就是一切的客商官員也是如此。
 給人做媒了。○到²⁶大早的時候，不但有莊稼人，掘龍潭，打旱魃，許願求
 的很。○從那²⁵一遭我算傷了腦子，就是有人託我親爹來說，我也不
 論多大的事情，叫他一辦，不但不板，而且一個人也不得罪，真是圓通
 個不但是懶，而且又饒，你說怎麼過日子呢。○張²⁴二先生真會辦事，無
 兩針，不但見輕，倒越發見重喇。○他²³光懶也好，或者是光饒也好，這
 起。○你的腿疼還沒好嗎？²²那裏好了呢，前日叫一個搖拉駱鈴的，針了
 夫妻，所以人到過於窮了，不但朋友看不起，就是自己的妻子也看不

only do his friends slight him, but even his own wife becomes estranged.
 22 Is not the pain in your leg well yet? Ans. No, I should say not. Day before yesterday I got one of those camel-leading (bell-ringing) quacks to stick a couple of needles into it which made it, not only no better, but decidedly worse.
 23 If she were only lazy, it would not matter; or if she were only greedy; but this one is not only lazy but greedy as well. How do you suppose I can make a living?
 24 Mr. Chang the second is an accomplished business man. No matter how extensive the business he undertakes, it is accomplished without difficulty. Nor does he offend a single person. He is certainly a most capable man.
 25 From that experience I learned a lesson. Even if anyone should get my own father to ask me, I would not be go-between for him.
 26 When there is a great drought, not only do farmers seek rain by digging up the dragon pool, destroying the drought demon and making vows, but even merchant travelers and officials all do the same.
 27 The saying is, "A good horse will not carry two saddles (not eat leavings); and a virtuous woman will not marry two husbands." Therefore even if this family squander their inheritance so that they have neither house nor land, I will not reproach myself; and if that family be decked out in silver and gold, I will not covet it.

串鈴 *Ch'wan⁴ ling²*. A bell in the shape of a ring:—Note (22).
 圓通 *Yüan² t'ung¹*. Capable, accomplished, versatile.
 惺 *Hsing¹*. To consider, to comprehend, to take in; to recall.
 潭 *T'an²*. Deep; a pool or pond.
 魃 *Pa²*. The demon of drought.
 旱魃 *Han⁴ pa²*. The same:—Note (26).
 許願 *Hsü³ yüan⁴*. To make a vow; to promise with an oath.

客商 *K'oa⁴ shang¹*. A commercial traveller, a merchant.
 鞴 *Ch'an⁴*. A saddle and flaps; a saddle.
 鞍鞴 *An¹ ch'an⁴*. A saddle.
 倒敗 *Tao³ pai⁴*. To fail, to come to grief; to ruin; to squander. (s.)
 抱怨 *Pao⁴ yüan⁴*. To regret, to reproach oneself; to be spiteful.
 跣 *Tien³*. To limp; to stand or walk on tiptoe, to walk softly. Also *tie¹*.

課六十七百一第

LESSON CLXXVI.

○ 和 人 穿 固 兩 下 是 仇 嫌 不 是
 潘⁸ 你 乃 好 然 相 貧 爲 尋 找 是 張
 秀 拌 抬 是 的 是 情 窮 爲 臣 事 尋 他 三
 雲 嘴 槓 一 上 粗 不 願 焉 知 後 來 不 富 固 然 是 難 但
 不 是 但 是 體 的 算 的 省 錢 但 仍 舊 是
 莊 戶 人 家 乃 是 你 也 不 該 打 他 固 然 不 可
 個 是 乃 此 乃 當 但 夾

- 1 It was not that Chang the third wished to pick a quarrel, but that Li the fourth had a grudge against him, and set upon him.
- 2 To be a king is of course difficult, yet to be a minister is far from easy.
- 3 Although he is poor at present, yet who knows but that hereafter he may be rich.
- 4 This agreement is made with the full consent of both parties, and must not be broken.
- 5 Inferior clothing is of course cheaper, and yet after all it is more economical to wear good clothing.
- 6 Husband and wife are not two, but are one flesh.
- 7 He should not dispute with you, it is true, nor ought you to strike him.

NOTES.

3 鈎搭連環 *Hooks locked and links connected; i.e., entanglements, complications.* The phrase violates the usual symmetry. It ought to be 鈎搭環連.

5 This sentence assumes the transmigration of the soul, and that the wrongs done in this existence will be carried forward to the next one for adjustment.

6 題講, *an exposition of the theme, an introduction setting forth the main points of the text.* It is also frequently called 起講, *to set forth an exposition.* 滿篇, *a full or complete essay; that is, one having all the requisite parts.* 篇 is used with reference to the folded sheet on which the essay is written.

11 惠公, A prince of the kingdom of 晉, whose personal name was 夷吾. He used these words when in exile.

14 拔鋼眼, *to strive with the steel eye; that is, to settle by trial who is the stronger.* The figure is taken from the drawing of wire through the eye of a steel cone-plate. 見個高底, *to see who is the better man.* 見見血, *to carry it through to the bitter end.*

15 丟盔擄甲, *to throw away the helmet and drop the armor; that is, to do so in the haste and exhaustion of flight,—a strong figure to express great hurry and fatigue.*

21 The idea of the saying is that in order to retain a man's friendship, one must be able to reciprocate his invitations (to feasts, etc.), and to retain the affection of a wife one must be able to support her.

22 拉駱駝的, *a camel-leader; that is, an itinerant doctoor who goes about with a camel, partly to carry his outfit, and partly to serve as an advertisement.*

23 It is very evident from the sentiment of this sentence that the speaker is a young man who is speaking of his wife. The use of 這個 is highly characteristic.

25 惺了腦子, *to get the brain waked up, to learn by dear experience, to cut one's eye-teeth.*

26 掘龍潭, *to dig up the dragon pool.* In time of great drought the people sometimes go to the temple of Lung-wang and dig up the dry pool in the temple yard, which is supposed to be the home of the dragon. This is done to make him uncomfortable and frighten him, so that he will send rain. 打旱魃, *destroy the Drought Demon.* Drought is attributed to the agency of a malicious demon who is supposed to reside in the coffin of some dead person. The corpse in the coffin in which he resides does not decay, and the grave mound remains moist when the ground all around is dry. The explanation of this is that the demon compels the dead man to carry water every night and water the grave. The supposed remedy is to tear open the grave and the coffin, pull the corpse to pieces and scatter the pieces in various places. This very thing is frequently done, despite the protestations of the friends of the dead. These things are not only done by the ignorant, but by the educated as well.

27 雙鞍轡 does not mean a double saddle, but a change of saddles, which implies a change of owners.

LESSON CLXXVI.

CORRELATIVE PARTICLES.

不是.....乃是 Not.....but.
 乃...不 Indicates the adversative correlation of the clauses, but has no answering words in English. The use of 乃 adds a slight

emphasis, somewhat approximating the force of *indeed, or in fact.*

固然.....但是.....也 Of course, indeed.....yet.

固然是不好，就是過了，也是一樣的不好。○雖然衆人死，焉知明日還活着。○作¹⁷事務要合乎中道，因爲不及仍舊擋不住告。○人¹⁶的壽數原不可定，雖然今日尙未沒封印以後，雖然說是不許告狀，其實若有不法的大事，是一種深奧學問，不是十天半月就能學明白的。○官¹⁵乃情有可原，作官的仍舊是向活的，不向死的。○格¹⁴物但是罪，就是去玩耍，也不是正理。○殺¹³人固然該償命，但是此¹¹乃朝廷大事，不可多嘴。○安¹²息日做生活，固然是犯

- 書香子弟。○柳樹甲雖然聰明，其實沒有甚麼書底子兒。○固然是當論理，但是絕不論情，仍舊不能和睦人。○
- 8 P'an Hsiu Yün is not a rustic but the scion of a literary family.
 - 9 Liu Shu Chia, although bright, is not in reality a profound scholar.
 - 10 The right is to be kept in view of course, nevertheless to have no regard at all to sentiment, is not the way to make peace.
 - 11 This is important imperial business, and should not be lightly criticized.
 - 12 It is of course a sin to work on the Sabbath, and even to spend the time in amusement is not the proper thing.
 - 13 A murderer should of course pay the forfeit with his life, yet the circumstances may afford occasion for clemency, and magistrates naturally favor the living rather than the dead.
 - 14 Natural science is a profound subject, which cannot be mastered in ten or fifteen days.
 - 15 Although it is said that suit cannot be entered after the magistrate has closed his seals, yet if there should be any flagrant violation of the law, suit may still be instituted.
 - 16 The years of a man's life are uncertain. Although one does not die to-day, yet how does he know that he will be alive to-morrow?
 - 17 In your conduct you should always follow the golden mean, for while neglect of duty is of course wrong, to

固然.....但是.....仍舊 It's true, of course.....yet.
 固然.....就是.....也 Of courseyet, and even. [knows.
 雖然...焉知 Although...yet, yet who

雖然.....其實 Although.....yet.
 雖然...其實...仍舊 Although... yet... still.
 雖然...却...乃 Although...yet... but

VOCABULARY.

滋事 *Tsi¹ shi⁴.* To pick a quarrel; to stir up, to create a disturbance.
 挾嫌 *Hsie³ hsien².* To estrange, to be or to set at variance; to have a spite or grudge at, to be at outs.
 挾仇 *Hsie² ch'ou².* To be enemies, to have a spite or grudge at.
 找尋 *Chao³ hsün².* To accuse, to set upon, to charge, to take to task.
 貧窮 *P'in³ ch'ung².* Poor, needy.
 抬槓 *Kang⁴.* The same as 杠.

抬槓 *T'ai² kang⁴.* To dispute in a loud voice, to altercate, to wrangle.
 拌嘴 *Pan⁴ tsui³.* To dispute, to controvert, to bandy, to chaffer.
 潘 *P'an¹.* A river in Honan; a surname.
 莊戶 *Chwang¹ hu⁴.* Rustic, farmer.
 書香 *Shu¹ hsiang¹.* Redolent of books, literary, scholastic.
 書底 *Shu¹ ti³.* Education, scholarship, acquirements.

話、也要放長耳朵聽聽。○這話雖是他們在背地裏說的，不要。○正經話固然要聽，就是街市上，那些閒雜人等的不要，就是富家的姑娘，若沒有好門第，好人物，他仍舊是是我去惹呼人，乃是人來惹呼我。○窮家的姑娘，他固然是服。○我本是一個異鄉人，雖然常與人有不和的事，却不
有威嚴，三軍纔肯遵令，但若沒有愛心，三軍仍舊不能悅
女一般，雖然打他，其實却是愛他。○爲元帥的，固然必得
奢華，總要量力而行。○先生教導學生，就如父母教導兒
呢。○人辦紅白喜事，固然不可過於儉省，但也不可過於
都說他是好人，若不仔細查問，焉知他不是鄉愿一類的

exceed the bounds of propriety is equally wrong.
18 Although everybody says he is a good man, yet if you do not carefully inquire, how can you be sure that he does not belong to the class of specious impostors?
19 In conducting weddings and funerals one should not of course be too parsimonious, nor should he make too great a display, but should always keep within his means.
20 A teacher instructs his pupils just as parents teach their children. Although he punishes them, yet in fact, he loves them.
21 A general must be strict, it is true, that so the soldiers may obey his commands; yet if he shows no affection, they will not yield a cheerful obedience.
22 Originally I was not a resident of this place; and although I often have trouble with others, it is not that I pick quarrels with them, but that they pick quarrels with me.
23 Of course he does not want the daughter of a poor family, and he will not accept even the daughter of a rich family, if the standing of the family is not good, or if the young lady is not comely.
24 Legitimate conversation you should of course give attention to, and even the

封印 Fêng¹ yin⁴. To lock up the seals, to close a public office.
查問 Ch'a² wên⁴. To inquire, to search.
鄉愿 Hsiang¹ yüan⁴. A smooth-tongued specious fellow, an impostor, a wolf in sheep's clothing:—Note (18).
奢 Shê¹. Wasteful, extravagant.
奢華 Shê¹ hwa². Extravagance, display.
教導 Chiao¹ tao⁴. To instruct, to teach.
威嚴 Wei¹ yen². August, severe, stern.
遵令 Tsun¹ ling⁴. To obey, to observe a command.
悅服 Yue⁴ fu². To obey cheerfully, to assent readily, to approve.
異鄉 I⁴ hsiang¹. A new-comer, a settler, a stranger.

招惹 Chao¹ jê³. To irritate, to vex, to pick a quarrel.
惹呼 Jê³ hu³. To irritate, to stir up, to provoke, to pick a quarrel.
門第 Mên² ti⁴. Standing (of a family), reputation, character, social position.
閒雜 Hsien² tsa². Idle, loafing; disreputable; trash.
冶 Yie³. To fuse, to smelt.
縲 Lei³. To bind as a criminal; to secure.
縲 Hsie⁴. To tie, to secure, to fetter.
縲 Hsie⁴. Bonds, imprisonment.
貝 Pei⁴. Precious, valuable; money, treasure.
寶 Pao³ pei⁴. Precious, a treasure.
禍根 Hwo⁴ kên¹. A root of evil, a source of misfortune.

也 不 一 定 就 是 實 情 因 爲 做 住 衙 門 的 人 甚 麼 法 子 都 有 焉 知 不 是 隔 壁 告 狀 特 爲 說 給 大 老 爺 聽 呢。

○ 公 冶 長 雖 在 縲 纆 之 中 其 實 却 不 是 他 的 罪 所 以 出 監 之 後 孔 子 還 情 願 將 自 己 的 女 兒 給 他 作 妻。

○ 東 莊 上 淘 金 的 得 了 一 塊 大 金 有 九 斤 半 重 誰 不 說 是 得 了 寶 貝 呢 那 知 道 因 爲 分 贓 不 平 出 了 人 命 把 金 都 花 淨 了 另 外 又 賠 上 若 干 從 此 知 道 這 金 乃 是 他 們 的 禍 根 並 不 是 他 們 的 寶 貝。

○ 我 們 所 顧 念 的 不 是 看 得 見 的 乃 是 看 不 見 的 因 爲 看 得 見 的 是 暫 時 的 看 不 見 的 是 永 遠 的。

gossip of loafers on the street should not go unheeded.

- 25 Although this was spoken in secret it is not certainly the truth, for there is no end to the tricks of yamèn people. How do you know that they were not playing a part,—talking on purpose for your honor to hear?
- 26 Although Kung Yie Ch'ang was in bonds, yet he was not in fact guilty of any crime, hence after his release, Confucius of his own accord gave him his daughter to wife.
- 27 The gold diggers in the village to the east found a nugget of gold weighing nine and a half catties. Who would not say that they had found a treasure? And yet because of an unsatisfactory division a murder resulted, on account of which they spent all the gold and a deal of money besides, from which we see that this gold was really a source of misfortune rather than a treasure.
- 28 We regard not that which is seen but that which is unseen; for that which is seen is temporary, but that which is unseen is eternal.

NOTES.

1 Note that 尋找 and 找尋 mean different things, or at least are used in different ways; the former means to seek for, to search, the latter means to look for, or go to, for the purpose of, accusing or taking to task.

4 This is one of the stereotyped forms of words used at the end of written agreements.

9 書底 refers to the time and strength spent in school committing and expounding the classics, which are supposed to be the foundation of all learning.

15 封印 is the technical term for locking the seals and shutting up a public office for a vacation or a holiday.

16 尙未 is a book expression equivalent to 還沒. It is not used in colloquial, save by scholars who wish to air their learning.

18 Confucius says of the 鄉愿 that he is 德之賊也, a thief of virtue,—one who puts on the semblance of virtue for the sake of popularity, but who is not really virtuous.

19 公事 is here used out of its ordinary sense to mean a wedding or a funeral. This use is not 尙未. In Peking 大事 is used in the same way. Red is the prevailing color at weddings, and white at funerals, hence 紅公事 or 紅大事 is a wedding, and 白公事 or 白大事 is a funeral. The phrase, 紅白喜事, seems altogether inappropriate, seeing that a funeral can hardly be classed as a

喜事. The term is nevertheless used in some sections. The funeral of a person who dies over eighty years of age is called a 喜喪.

21 三軍, the three armies; that is, the right, left and centre; but often used as here in the sense of, soldiers, forces, army.

24 閒雜人等, miscellaneous idlers and the like. 放長耳朵聽 is, so to speak, to stretch the ears so as to hear the more and hear on all hands, not as a participant in the conversation, but incidentally as a bystander.

25 隔壁告狀, to state the case from an adjoining room; that is, to talk in one room on purpose to be heard in another. An officer will sometimes listen by stealth to the talk of his underlings or his prisoners, hoping thus to get at the truth; while they, knowing or supposing he is listening, play off on him by saying to each other, as if secretly, the very things they want him to hear and believe.

26 公冶長 was accused of murder, but was not convicted. Confucius subsequently gave him his daughter in marriage, thus testifying his belief in his innocence.

27 分贓不平, divide the booty unjustly. The term 贓 is probably used, because those who found the gold, attempted to divide it secretly, without sharing with the whole company. The phrase is a ready made one, more properly used of dividing spoil.

第一百七十七課

LESSON CLXXVII.

可以¹把那張桌子些微的往南磨一磨。○這塊木頭將²聽兒的殼材料。○請³你把這事的根本來歷，畧畧說給我聽。○拿⁴來我再銼一銼，答⁵你別銼大喇，絲來毫去銼一點。○先生沒有工夫，不過畧畧兒的講了一遍。○我⁶去的時候，將⁷趕上送他們走。○這場雨下的不大，不過⁸僅有三指。○柳老二的病，今天稍微⁹好一點。○這¹⁰些飯是昨天賸的，微微的有一點酸味兒。○你¹¹給的價兒還不¹²穀本，些微的添一添，就賣給你。○這¹³個藥搽在瘡口上，稍微¹⁴有點兒疼。○有一¹⁵等擔不起大財的人，畧畧有一¹⁶點兒富裕，就狂的¹⁷了不得。○這¹⁸並不是我生事，他若是些須讓¹⁹身分，就狂的²⁰了不得。○這²¹並不是我生事，他若是些須讓

- 1 You may push that table just a very little to the south.
- 2 This piece of wood is barely sufficient.
- 3 Please give me a brief account of the origin and progress of this business.
- 4 Bring it here and I will file it some more. Ans. Be sure you do not file it too much. File it off just the least bit and it will do.
- 5 The teacher was pressed for time, and only explained it over once in a cursory way.
- 6 When I went I was barely in time to see them off.
- 7 This has not been a heavy rain, barely three fingers deep.
- 8 Liu the second is slightly better to-day.
- 9 This rice was left over from yesterday and is slightly sour.
- 10 The price you offer is not sufficient to cover cost; make it a little more and I will let you have it.
- 11 When this medicine is rubbed on the mouth of the ulcer it causes a slight smarting.
- 12 There is a class of men who cannot stand much money. Just let them acquire a little wealth, and they are puffed up beyond endurance.
- 13 It is not that I am quarrelsome. If he gave me the least chance of escape, I would drop the matter.
- 14 It has been said, "A three years severe drought will not starve a

LESSON ICLXXVII.

ADVERBIAL DIMINUTIVES.

些微 A little, just a little, a trifle.
 稍微 A very little, trifling, slightly. [bit.
 微微 A little, a very little, slightly, the least
 僅僅 Barely, merely, only.
 可^可 Barely, merely, neatly, scarcely. (s.)
 彊^彊 Barely, just, merely.
 將^將 The same. Those who use soft sounds incline to use this character; but it will not do where hard sounds prevail, as it is originally soft. The meaning of 彊 is equally suitable, and the sound is everywhere correct. [least bit.
 絲來毫去 A very little, a very trifle, the

些來小去 The same.
 一星半點 A very little, the least mite or particle.
 畧 A little, the least bit, any.
 畧畧 A very little, just a little; slightly; briefly; cursorily.
 畧微 Just a little, a very little.
 些須 The least, a very little, trifling.
 些小 Just a little, a very little, a wee bit. (x)
 畧小 The same. (s.)
 頗頗 Slightly, measurably, somewhat. (o)

的偏沉了，^答 絲來毫去偏一點，也不要緊，^掖 塞上個小石頭就墜過來喇。
 暑漏點話音兒，管保他就聽出來了。³⁰ 前頭那個馱子綁得好，後頭這個
 個學館，僅僅的掙二十來吊錢，數做甚麼的呢。²⁹ 明人不用細說，只用暑
 你看我從小用了多少功，花了多少錢，這纔進了學，以後求親告友謀了
 說很難，你看我如今打得頗頗的有點眉眼略。²⁸ 我再不叫孩子念書喇，
 見個高低，很合我的式，若暑打個^良 磴兒，也不是好漢子。²⁷ 這場官司人都
 翡翠搬指，好是好，就是我帶着暑^冰 打個大一點兒。²⁶ 誰還怕誰嗎，若果然要
 就嫌燙的慌，暑冷一點，他又嫌^冰 打的慌，再沒有這麼難伺候的喇。²⁵ 這個
 忍耐，不可一直的辭賬。²⁴ 光洗澡的水，就給他預備不好喇，暑熱一點，他
 點差錯，不可就吹燈散夥。²³ 在人家門裏作活，就是稍微有點冤屈，也當

- 23 When you are working for another, even if you suffer some trifling wrong, you should be patient and not hastily throw up your situation.
- 24 One cannot even prepare his bath-water to suit him. If it is the least bit too warm, he complains of being scalded, and if it is the least bit too cool, he complains of being chilled. Few men are as hard to serve as he.
- 25 This jade-stone ring is good, it is true, but it is the least mite too large for me.
- 26 You think I'm afraid of you do you? If you really want to see who is the better man, I am quite ready for you, and whoever shows any sign of backing out is no man.
- 27 Everybody said this suit would be difficult, but you see, I have carried it on in such a way that there is now a fair prospect of success.
- 28 I'll not send my children to school any more. Look how much labor I have expended from my youth, and how much money I have spent, in order to obtain a degree, and then only by dint of appealing to my relatives and friends did I secure a school, and it only brings me a little over twenty thousand cash [per year]. What does that amount to?
- 29 It is not necessary to state a thing in detail to a clever man. You only need to give him a slight hint, and you may be sure he'll understand.
- 30 That load in front is properly bound, but this one behind is out of balance. Ans. It is the least trifle uneven, but that is no matter; insert a small stone under the rope, and it will restore the balance.

NOTES.

7 三指 *Three fingers*; that is, the width of three fingers.
 9 The language used may apply either to taste or to smell.
 12 身分, here means *money, property*, in which sense it is not *l'ung-hsing*—not being so used in Peking.
 13 讓點路我走, *allow a little road [for] me to go*. The expression would be more elegant if 我走 were changed to 給我, as it often is; yet the form of expression in the text is quite common.
 15 In some sections 宅子 is constantly used for house instead of 房子; in other sections it is only used occasionally, and when so used, generally denotes all the houses in a court including the court itself.

16 This sentence would be precisely the same if addressed to the person himself.
 19 三 is put for 三個, and is read *Sa¹*.
 20 A cornelian mouth-piece to a pipe is much valued.
 22 吹燈散夥, *blow out the lamp and disperse the company*. The expression is probably taken from gambling; when one gets angry or disgusted, he blows out the light and so breaks up the game and scatters the company.
 26 誰還怕誰嗎, *who is afraid of whom?* that is, *do you think I am afraid of you?* 打個磴, *to make a halt, to hold back*. 打個良 *to show [a sign of] hesitation*. The former expression is Northern, the latter Central and Southern.

課八十七百一第

LESSON CLXXVIII.

規保後學上大個來。吊况、收成、今¹
裏邊有成大樣子。他⁴一畝、兩下必兩²
邊有下馬匪烟館裏原沒打算還錢。明⁶日、應⁵了後日、看那⁷
也不能車門、周園都是羣房、看這氣派、喜
錯。○新⁷進士來了報子、道喜
○新⁷進士來了報子、道喜
○新⁷進士來了報子、道喜

- 1 This year it has scarcely rained during the entire spring. From the look of things the wheat will certainly be a failure.
- 2 The two nations are both increasing their armies and preparing arms. Judging from appearances there will certainly be war.
- 3 I have already offered to the amount of one hundred *tiao* per acre for that piece of land, and he still will not sell. From the appearance of things I fear it cannot be bought.
- 4 To-day he promises that he will pay to-morrow, and to-morrow he promises that he will pay the next day. I judge from the way he acts, he has no idea of paying the money.
- 5 The latter half of the year Lao San has been constantly hanging around the opium shop. From the look of things I am afraid he has already fallen into dissolute habits.
- 6 This compound has in front a large gate for the entrance of horses; behind it has a wagon gate, and all around are rows of houses. Judging from the general style, I'll warrant that the inside is also in keeping.
- 7 The announcement of the new Chin-

LESSON CLXXVIII.

PHRASES OF INFERENCE.

The following phrases are all very similar in meaning and use. The definitions give the approximate literal meaning rather than the actual words found in the translations, which are modified to suit the connection. In all the phrases, either *這* or *那* may be used.

看這個光景 Judging from the appearance of things.

看這個景况 Judging from the appearance of affairs.

看這個樣子 Judging from the manner or style of things.

看這個樣式 Judging from the fashion of things.

看這個式樣 Judging from the shape of things.

看這個情形 Judging from the appearance of circumstances.

看這個形勢 Judging from the posture or situation of things.

看這個局勢 Judging from the condition or state of the game.

看這個行動 Judging from the course or bearing of things.

看這個舉動 Judging from the course or tenor of things.

看這個架子 Judging from the form or appearance of things.

看這個架式 Judging from the configuration of things.

看這個氣派 Judging from the style of things.

們託他的事，未必能替我們出力。○他¹⁵們兩個作買賣的時候，就很投契，象。○孫大人在酒席筵前，喫也不大願喫，喝也不大願喝，看這個形勢，我說來了報子，並沒動身，只管捶他的衣裳，看這個樣子，真有個太太的氣步，看這個形勢，他是打心裏要找我的¹³太在堂屋裏捶衣裳，聽¹⁴孫大人在酒席筵前，喫也不大願喫，喝也不大願喝，看這個形勢，我¹⁵們託他的事，未必能替我們出力。○他¹⁵們兩個作買賣的時候，就很投契，

的客，只是一頓光頭麪，看這個光景，新進士回家祭祖，必不能⁸李大人帶着礦師，又上金狗山驗礦去喇，看這個行動，金狗山的礦是⁹外頭的日光，怎麼又黃又暗呢，看這個樣子，必是¹⁰上¹¹麒麟街上那個長麻瘋的人，已經生了蛆喇，看那個¹²我退一步，他又往前趕一¹³我退一步，他就往前趕一步，我再退一步，他又往前趕一¹⁴孫大人在酒席筵前，喫也不大願喫，喝也不大願喝，看這個形勢，我¹⁵們託他的事，未必能替我們出力。○他¹⁵們兩個作買賣的時候，就很投契，

shi has come, and those who went to congratulate him, were simply treated to a meal of plain vermicelli. Judging from this, when he comes home to sacrifice to his ancestors, there will be no great ado made.

8 Li Ta-jên has again taken a mining engineer and gone to Chin-kou Hill to prospect for a mine. From the look of things the mine at Chin-kou Hill will doubtless be opened.

9 What makes the sunlight without so yellow and dull? From the appearance of things there must be an eclipse coming on.

10 On the last occasion at the test examination, several of the highest names each received a reward of 5000 cash. Judging from the appearance of things this time, 2000 cash is the utmost that each man will get.

11 That man on Chi-ling street who has leprosy, already has maggots on him. Judging from his condition, he cannot live over to-day.

12 When I yield a step, he advances a step; when I yield another step, he advances another step. It is evident that he intends to make trouble for me.

13 Madam was in the middle room pounding clothes, and when she heard that the announcement had come, she never moved, but kept right on with her work as before. From this it is evident that she has indeed the style of a lady.

14 While sitting at the feast Sun Ta-jên seemed reluctant either to eat or to drink. I judge from his manner that he will probably not exert himself in the affair we have entrusted to him.

15 When they were in business they were very intimate, now they each have a growing family of fine child-

VOCABULARY.

兵器 *Ping¹ ch'í⁴*. Arms, weapons, implements of war.

磨轉 *Moá⁴ chwan⁴*. To hang around, to loaf, to loiter.

情形 *Ch'ing² hsing²*. The appearance or look of things, circumstances.

周圍 *Chou¹ wei²*. Around, surrounding.

礦師 *Kung³ shí¹*. A mining engineer.

蝕 *Shí²*. To eat away, to encroach on; to eclipse, to be eclipsed.

日蝕 *I⁴ shí²*. An eclipse of the sun.

護日 *Hu⁴ í⁴*. The same:—Note (9).

決課 *Chüé² k'óá⁴*. A final or test examination:— Note (10).

現在兩家的孩子也都長得很好，彼此常送東西，看這個舉動，必是要結兒女親家。○我¹⁶見他家裏，是用白綾子糊房，紅緞子包恭凳，看那個氣派，真穀個人伺候的。○那¹⁷人的言語穩重，舉止端方，看這個行動，必是大家出身。○素常¹⁸我和他們並沒有來往，今天他忽然請我喝酒，而且那些陪我的人，也都不像好人，看這個局勢，他們必是要算牢籠我。○前¹⁹五天，我去問他們多會開船，他們說還有七十個酒罈沒上，等上完了就開，昨天我又去問他們，他們說還有二百個酒罈沒上，看這個架情形，不知多會兒纔走喇。○法蓮²⁰和尚喫大烟，將廟中的東西變賣淨了，自從會首們警戒他以後，他就起了誓，永不再喫，如今已經三年了，看這個式樣，是不能再開的喇。○李老²¹二這個人，我看他這個架子，是有點兒要搯不住。

ren, and are constantly making each other presents. Judging from the appearance of things their children will no doubt intermarry.

16 I noticed that in his house they used white lining satin to paper the rooms, and red satin to cover the commode. Judging from the style of things it will be as much as a man can do to wait on them.

17 That man's language is courteous and his manner dignified. Judging from his bearing he must belong to a good family.

18 Ordinarily I have had no intercourse with them, but to-day they have suddenly invited me to a feast; and moreover all the other guests are suspicious characters. From the look of things I suspect that they are setting a trap for me.

19 Five days ago I went and asked them when the vessel would sail. They said there were seventy jars of wine yet to be put on board, and that as soon as these were loaded, they would sail. Yesterday I went again and asked them. They said there were still two hundred jars of wine to load. Judging from the aspect of things it is hard to say when they will go.

20 Fa Lien the priest smoked opium and sold off everything in the temple; but when the trustees of the temple reproved him, he took an oath that he would never smoke again. That is now three years ago. Judging from the circumstances it is not likely he will begin to smoke again.

21 I judge from the appearance of this man Li the second, that he will hardly stand it.

大課 *Ta³ k'oa⁴*. The same.
 麒 *Ch'i²*. The male of the Chinese unicorn.
 麟 *Lin²*. The female of the Chinese unicorn.
 麒麟. A fabulous beast of auspicious omen.
 蛆 *Ch'ü¹*. Maggots bred in putrid flesh.
 架式 *Chia⁴ shi⁴*. *Condition, circumstances,*
 *appearance, outlook.*

堂屋 *T'ang² wu¹*. The middle room of a Chinese
 house, a hall.
 恭凳 *Kung¹ têng⁴*. A commode.
 舉止 *Chü³ chü³*. *Department, behavior; man-*
 *ner, style.*
 局勢 *Chü² shü⁴*. *Position [of the game], situa-*
 *tion, outlook.*
 搯 *Chi¹*. *To prop up; to withstand, to bear up,*
 *to endure, to stand.*

第一七百七十九課

LESSON CLXXIX.

勢地治都的喪纔間沒老
力步不無事本尋還法雖
又有誰得可情不死有推愛
有錢要○何。這⁵意○死無無奈
誰飯人⁷○是應酬⁴朋友人纔少
能吃若我⁶我⁶酬⁴友家嗎、說不
治呢。○是經打的家都是實老。
得你⁸現到無你、你⁸別得家何
○在無奈的你、你⁸別得家何
我⁹又有奈的、你⁸別得家何

- 1 Although parents love their children, yet somehow the children do not love their parents.
- 2 Only when he saw that evasion was impossible did he come to the point of telling the real truth.
- 3 Is there a man in the whole world who chooses to die? It is only when men are in desperate straits that they seek death.
- 4 Friends in offering congratulations, and relatives in presenting condolences, are not really desirous of making presents, but the circumstances give them no choice.
- 5 This is our own family affair; no one else can do anything about it.
- 6 I have thrashed you, and it is impossible for you to get any satisfaction out of me.
- 7 Save as a last resource, who is willing to beg.
- 8 At present you have both prestige and money, who is able to get the better of you?

NOTES.

1 沒大下雨, *it has not rained much*, is very different from 沒下大雨, *there has been no great rain*.

3 那塊地 would seem to be the subject of the verb, but it is not—a subject must be supplied.

6 走馬大門, a front gate large enough and high enough to admit a man on horseback.

7 光頭麩, a meal consisting entirely of *mien*,—which is considered very good, though not stylish. When a man gets a degree, special couriers carry the news to his friends, taking their chances of the pay they may get. When he himself returns home, he sacrifices to his ancestors, and is expected to invite his friends to a feast.

9 The Chinese traditional explanation of an eclipse is that the sun (or moon) is being eaten up by a great dog. The phrase 護日, *protecting the sun*, is derived from the practice of beating on drums and pans to frighten away the dog, and so save the sun.

10 Throughout the provinces the prefects hold a monthly examination of such graduates as choose to present themselves, giving a small stipend to a number of the best. Shortly before the triennial examination at the provincial capital, a special examination called a 決課 or 大課 is held, and those who attain a certain degree of excellence receive an allowance for traveling expenses.

11 再 has here the force of *certainly*, or, *in any case*. Its use implies that the man had lived unexpectedly from day to day, but that he certainly could not live another day.

13 That a wife should show no sign of excitement or pleasure on such an occasion as that of her husband getting a degree, is supposed to be the height of decorum and of lady-like bearing.

14 酒席眼前, *in the presence of the feast*; that is, at or during the feast.

15 結兒女親家, *make themselves kindred by contracting marriage alliances between their children*.

LESSON CLXXIX.

IMPRACTICABILITY.

奈何 What is to be done? *i. e.*, there is no help, no resource; yet nevertheless: also sometimes used as a verb,—to do to another, to put through.

無奈 Unable, no resource; yet; only; alas!

無奈何 Without resource, no help, no other way; only; last resort.

沒奈何 The same. [for it, in straits.

無計奈 No means of doing anything, no help

不得去淨這私慾心，無奈就是不能毀。○治¹⁰得了病，治不了命，若是命裏該死，那是沒有治的。○誰¹²願意賣房子地呢，但是到了過不去的時候，無奈也只得賣。○楊¹³老爺呢，從來不會還錢，今天怎麼當了衣裳，還張六的錢呢。○答：那是不得已喇，他滿心不願意當，張六又不答應。○起¹⁴先我看一個人就扛來喇，試驗試驗，出於無計，可奈何了，但凡有一線之路，也不好意思來。○起¹⁶先他不可奈何了，但凡有一線之路，也不好意思來。

- 9 Would that I could get entirely rid of this corrupt heart; but alas! I cannot.
- 10 You may cure the disease, but you cannot control fate. If it is ordained that he should die, there is no help for him.
- 11 If I had the money, I would willingly lend it to him; but it is out of the question when I haven't even enough for myself.
- 12 Who is willing to sacrifice house and land? Yet when one gets into a strait, he has no resource but to sell.
- 13 Heretofore Yang the eighth has not been given to paying his debts; how does it come that to-day he has pawned his clothes and paid Chang the sixth? Ans. It was because he could not help it. He was very loth to pawn them, but Chang the sixth gave him no choice.
- 14 At first I thought one man could bring it on his shoulder, but on trying I found it impracticable. It will require two men to carry it.
- 15 My coming now to seek help of you, sir, is because I am in a very great strait. If I had any resource at all, I would not think of coming.
- 16 At first he would not agree to kotow on the street, but the other party was inexorable. Only when he found there was no help for it did he finally assent.

無計可奈何 The same. (s.)
 無計奈何 The same.
 無可奈何 Impossible to do anything, in a tight place, in an extremity, at the end of one's tether.
 無可奈何 The same.
 無可如何 The same.
 不得已 No help for it, no choice, no other way, unavoidable, in straits.

不得已 The same.
 治或治得 To manage, to bring to terms, to put through;—with a negative, 治不得, unable to control or manage, impracticable.
 無法可治 Out of one's power, impracticable, no resource.
 沒有治兒 Impracticable, helpless, hopeless, incorrigible.

VOCABULARY.

奈 *Nai*⁴. A large yellow plum; a remedy, a resource; how? what way?
 諉 *Wei*³. To implicate; to shirk, to decline.
 推諉 *T'ui*¹ *wei*³. To make excuse, to evade; to retract, to back out.

推賴 *T'ui*¹ *lai*⁴. To evade, to back out; to throw the blame on another. (s.)
 烟癮 *Yen*¹ *yin*³. The craving of the appetite for opium.
 烟頭 *Yen*¹ *t'ou*². The amount of opium smoked in a given time.

得計而己。纔跟着走，叫賊兵打了。○那年的年成很不好，又加上他學不好，不聽教訓，沒奈何，只得用刑罰去治他。○起先不學好，不聽教訓，沒奈何，只得用刑罰去治他。○起先不主掉了。○難道朝廷喜歡打人嗎？只因姓不主意。○然不想着戒。二來烟癮太大，就是戒。○王元亨抽鴉片煙，是一點兒沒有的。來他○信他不過。但此時捉不着他的短處，却奈何他。○無奈何，他得。○無法可治。○我還有計，偏要奈何他。○信他不過。但此時捉不着他的短處，却奈何他。○無奈何，他得。○就是打他幾下，也無不可，但這是個兄弟媳婦，實在纔應承了。○若是我還有無一計，偏要奈何他。○無奈何，他得。○就是打他幾下，也無不可，但這是個兄弟媳婦，實在

- 17 If it was an elder brother's wife that was so hateful, I could talk back to her, or I might even slap her a few times; but this is a younger brother's wife, and I can do nothing at all with her.
- 18 I have one more plan, and I am determined to have another tussle with him.
- 19 We do not believe him of course, but since we are unable just now to fix any fault on him, we can do nothing to him.
- 20 Wang Yüan Hêng's opium smoking is past all remedy. In the first place, he has no will-power and no desire whatever to break off; in the second place, the habit has too strong a hold (he takes too much); even if he did desire to break off, he could not.
- 21 Do you think the emperor takes pleasure in beating men or putting them to death? It is only because the people will not be virtuous and heed instruction that, as a last resort, he employs punishments to control them.
- 22 At first he refused to go with them, whereupon the robbers struck him a couple of blows with a cudgel, and were about to kill him with a sword, when he yielded to necessity and followed them.
- 23 That year the crops were very poor, and besides, the family, both children and adults, were constantly sick, so

賊兵 *Tsei² ping¹*. Organized robbers, banditti; rebels.
 棒 *Pang⁴*. A club, a cudgel; a drumstick.
 馬棒 *Ma³ pang⁴*. A large rattan cudgel or whip carried by mounted robbers.
 祠 *Ts'²*. To sacrifice to ancestors; ancestral.
 祠堂 *Ts'² t'ang²*. An ancestral hall or temple:— Note (24).
 家雀 *Chia¹ ch'iao³*. The sparrow.
 麻雀 *Ma² ch'iao³*. The same.
 杌 *Wu⁴*. A stump; a square stool.
 杌凳 *Wu⁴ têng⁴*. A square seat or stool.
 獨凳 *Tu² têng⁴*. A square bench or stool for one person.
 躑 *Ch'iao¹*. Same as 躑.

躑脚 *Ch'iao¹ chiao³*. To stand on the toes, to walk on tip-toe.
 躑脚尖 *Tien³ chiao³ chien¹*. To stand on tip-toe.
 虛假 *Hsü¹ chia³*. False, empty, vain, imaginary.
 尊長 *Tsun¹ chang³*. The senior members of a family or clan.
 罰棍 *Fa³ kun⁴*. To condemn to be scourged; to beat, to scourge.
 跪香 *Kwei⁴ hsiang¹*. To kneel while a stick of incense burns out.
 點畫 *Tien³ hwa⁴*. To make signs with the finger, to gesture, to point out.
 指戳 *Ch'² ch'ü¹*. To make signs, to gesture, to point out.

大人孩子不斷的有病，所以到轉年春天，我們就沒法過了，出上工夫要着喫，也要不出來，無奈何，纔把小姑娘賣給他了。○在祠堂厦簷底下，有一窩麻雀，無奈沒有梯子構不着，答我看條杌凳子，獨躑躅着腳尖，就構着喇。○25明知道拜祖宗是虛假的事，但是我我不拜，尊長們不依，又要罰棍，又叫跪香，不拜不行，沒奈何，我纔屈着良心去拜了。○26從前我見那些打滿街，罵滿巷的老婆，若說男人管不住他，我就十分不服，誰知現在我也攤了這麼一個，真是無可奈何，無論怎樣打他，他就是耍，那一天叫我直打得沒有氣兒，奈纔住了手，想尋思着他再可不敢罵了，那知道他甦醒過來，嘴裏雖然罵不出聲兒來，還是用指頭指點指點着罵。

that the following spring we were reduced to want. We took to begging, but despite our efforts we could not get enough to live on, until finally, driven by necessity, we sold our younger daughter to him.

24 There is a nest of sparrows under the eave of the ancestral hall; the trouble is I cannot reach them without a ladder. Ans. I think that by getting up on four stools placed on top of each other, and standing on tiptoe, you can reach them.

25 I know quite well that worshipping ancestors is a vain superstition, but when I did not worship, the senior members of the family took me to task, and were about to give me a beating and make me do penance, and so compel me to worship. Only when there was no help for it, did I do violence to my conscience by worshipping.

26 It used to be that if any one said that a man could not control those women who set whole streets at defiance with their violence and vituperation, I was up in arms at once. Very unexpectedly one such has now fallen to my lot, and I am at my wits' end. No matter how you beat her she persists in reviling. One day I beat her until she fainted before I stopped, thinking that after that she would certainly be afraid to revile me, but what do you think? When she came to again, although unable to speak audibly, she signed defiance with her fingers.

NOTES.

10 There is throughout this sentence a play on the word 治, which means both to cure, and to control or bring under subjection. The Chinese are thorough-going fatalists.

15 一線之路 A road the size of a thread, the least possible opening or chance. The use of 之 shows that the phrase is a ready made one taken from books.

17 According to Chinese ideas of propriety, a man may be quite free in his intercourse with his elder brother's wife, but not with his younger brother's wife. In like manner he may be free with his wife's elder sister, but not with her younger sister.

20 烟頭 means the amount of opium smoked per day, which is here taken as a measure of the strength of the opium habit. It is not always a true gauge, however, as some men can smoke much more than others can without falling

greatly under the power of the habit. 烟癮 means the strength of the appetite itself, irrespective of the quantity smoked.

24 祠堂. See Les. 86 Note (5), where 祠堂 should have been written instead of 寺堂, which is only applied to Mohammedan mosques, and to Buddhist monasteries.

25 跪香. To kneel in front of a shrine or tablet with a stick of lighted incense held in the two hands, and so remain until the incense stick is burned out, which requires from an hour to an hour and a half. It is sometimes done voluntarily as a penance, and sometimes required as a punishment.

26 Notice the vividness of the phrase 罵不出聲兒來. The inarticulate motion of her lips was assisted by the significant gestures of her fingers.

課十八百一第

LESSON CLXXX.

是非、真是萬人可恨。○我們家老姥婆蓋了一座好齊整處也沒有、不是明明的欺壓人、就是暗暗的給人播弄此可知朋友是假的、惟有錢是真的。○孫國祺一點好成也可、不成也可。○他們爲百十個錢、就傷了和氣、從是他傳道的熱心、真是可取。○這是可行可止的事情、來、真是令人可嘆。○湯先生雖然沒有甚麼大本事、但樣的冷天、連個袍子沒穿、可見還是沒有錢。○思想起叫人可愛、人家不能不愛他。○都說王六有了錢喇、這不如小、小事不如了、可知起事不如息事好。○他天生他既然能起來上街、可見病的不是很重。○俗語說、大事

- 1 As he is able to get up and walk out, it is evident that he is not very sick.
- 2 The proverb says, "A trivial quarrel is better than a grievous one, and a settlement is better than a trivial quarrel;" from which it is evident that to settle a quarrel is better than to raise one.
- 3 He is by nature lovable, one cannot help loving him.
- 4 They say that Wang the sixth has gotten rich, yet on such a cold day as this he is out without even a wadded coat, from which it is evident that after all he has no money.
- 5 It really makes one sad to think of it.
- 6 Although Mr. T'ang has no great talents, yet his earnestness as a preacher is worthy of all praise.
- 7 This is not an essential matter, it may be dispensed with. If it is accomplished all right; and if not, all right.
- 8 Their friendship was sacrificed for a matter of a hundred cash, from which it is plain that friendship is a sham, money is the only thing that is real.
- 9 There is nothing good about Sun Kwoǎ-Ch'i. If he is not openly imposing on people, he is secretly making trouble for them. He is detested by everybody.
- 10 At our maternal grandmother's they have built a very fine looking tiled

LESSON CLXXX.

可 AS A VERBAL PREFIX.

可, prefixed to a verb, turns it into a verbal adjective, having in general the force of English adjectives ending in able, as **可憐** *pitiab*le, **可愛** *lovable*, etc. The number of verbs to which **可** is commonly applied is not great, though it may, if occasion require, be used with many others.

可見 Visible,—it is evident, it is seen, it appears, which shows.

可知 Knowable,—it may be known, from which it appears, which proves.

These two phrases differ from those following, in that they are not generally used as adjectives, but rather as inferential connectives.

可愛 Lovable,—winsome, prepossessing.

可嘆 Deplorable,—sad, heart-rending.

可取 Worthy of being chosen, agreeable, taking.

可行 Doable,—that which may be done, that which may proceed.

可止 Stopable,—that which may be dispensed with, that which may be quitted.

可恨 Abominable,—hateful, detestable.

可惜 Regrettable,—what a pity! alas!

可惱 Provoking to anger, exasperating.

可巧 By chance, accidentally, happily.

可託 Reliable,—trustworthy, to be depended on.

可敬 Respectable,—worthy of respect.

的瓦房，可惜山牆上開門，還帶着是個偏斜的，實在不成樣。○常言道，一日夫妻百日恩，從此可見夫妻的情分，比誰都大。○雖然他這樁事叫人可惱，然而仍有可取的地方。○纔要問他，可巧又來了一位親戚，把話頭兒打斷了。○李崇真那是千金可託的人，把錢交給他，是千妥萬當。○劉滙川既有那樣的聰明本事，還能這樣柔和謙遜，實在叫人可敬可愛。○事情雖然壞在他手裏，其實也有可原，不過爲他年紀輕，見識短，並不是出於故意的。○雖然有說他這個那個的，都是無根的流言，一點也不可想。○雖不可想，却是叫人可疑。○最

house, but what a pity they made a door in the end, and that too to the one side. It is decidedly not in good taste.

- 11 The common saying is, "One day husband and wife implies a hundred days' kindness," from which we see that the sympathy of husband and wife is greater than that of any other.
- 12 Although this business of his makes one indignant, yet there are still some redeeming features about it.
- 13 Just as I was about to ask him, a friend happened in and broke up our conversation.
- 14 Li Ch'ung Chên is a perfectly reliable man. Nothing could be more satisfactory than to deposit the money with him.
- 15 Though so wise and gifted, Liu Hui Ch'wan is yet able to exhibit such mildness and courtesy that one cannot but respect and love him.
- 16 Although the business came to grief in his hands, yet there is some excuse for him. It was simply the result of his youth and inexperience, and not that he wished it to be so.
- 17 Although there were various stories afloat about him, yet they were only vague rumors, entirely untrustworthy. Ans. Although untrustworthy,

可原 Excusable,—pardonable, allowance to be made for.
 可想 Reliable,—trustworthy, to be depended on.
 可疑 Questionable,—doubtful, dubious.
 可怕 Terrible,—to be feared, to be dreaded.

可惡 Detestable,—hateful, abominable.
 可殺 Killable,—deserving of death, ought to die.
 可留 Sparable,—deserving to be spared.
 可觀 Admirable,—worthy of being looked at, elegant, beautiful, showy.

VOCABULARY.

息事 Hsi² shi⁴. To settle a quarrel, to come to an agreement, to make peace.
 祺 Ch'i²..... Fortunate; felicitous.
 家婆 Chia¹ p'oa². A maternal grandmother.
 山牆 Shan¹ ch'iang². The gable, the end of a house.
 偏斜 P'ien¹ hsie². To the one side, off or aside from the centre.

成樣 Ch'eng² yang⁴. Becoming, in good taste, seemly.
 常言 Ch'ang² yen². A common saying, a trite saying.
 情分 Ch'ing² fen⁴. Affection, attachment, kindness, sympathy.
 崇 Ch'ung²..... Lofty, honorable; to adore.
 川 Ch'wan¹..... A mountain stream.
 柔和 Jou² ho²..... Mild, meek, forbearing.

人女上人分說俗¹⁹去娃孩可
 家學實却的。千語詭的怕的、
 賣却肥○₂₀里說。騙人、候、是
 了、揀可得梁老姻有緣人、他、父
 凡那惡很、老梁緣一緣千知父母
 評好的、了、知婆一線牽、來子就
 論自己的口稱說的幾天交友結親、
 這事的人、留要送不是實情話。○
 的都說那是可殺不給上某身緣又○
 處

yet they were sufficient to raisedoubts.
 18 The thing most to be feared is that
 parents will be blinded by affection.
 Look at Wang Kwang Hui. From
 the time he was a child his father
 and mother indulged him, and now
 he goes everywhere swindling people,
 and there is nothing too bad for him
 to do, which shows that the saying,
 "To indulge a son is no better than
 to kill him," is verily true.
 19 The saying is, "When there is a
 pre-existing affinity, friends will come
 a thousand *li* to meet; and when
 there is none, they will not become
 acquainted though face to face;"
 again, "Those destined for each
 other in marriage, though a thousand
li apart, are yet led by one thread;"
 from which it is evident, that friend-
 ships and marriages all have their
 predetermining laws.
 20 That old woman Liang is continually
 saying that she has eaten nothing
 for so many days, and yet she is as
 fat as she can be, which shows clearly
 that what she says is not really true.
 21 That man Sung is worthy of utter
 detestation. Giving out that he was
 taking people's daughters to the
 girls' school, he nevertheless selected
 the best one and kept her for a con-

遜 *Hsün*⁴. Conciliatory, humble, retiring.
 遜 *Ch'ien*¹ *hsün*⁴. Humble, conciliatory,
 yielding, *courteous*.
 流言 *Liu*² *yen*². Idle talk, unfounded rumors,
 *stories*.
 溺 *Ni*⁴. To sink; to suffocate; to be fond of, to
 *doat on*.
 溺愛 *Ni*⁴ *ai*⁴. To love to excess, to doat on,
 *blind to the faults of*.
 詭 *K'wang*¹. To talk wildly, to lie, to cheat.
 詭騙 *K'wang*¹ *p'ien*⁴. To swindle, to embezzle,
 to defraud, to fleece.
 誠然 *Ch'eng*² *jan*². In very deed, verily, as-
 *surely*.
 緣分 *Yüan*² *fên*⁴. Predestined fitness or adapta-
 *tion, a predetermined affinity*.
 珊 *Shan*¹. Coral.
 瑚 *Hu*². A sacrificial vessel.

珊瑚. Precious coral,—the red or pink variety.
 頂子 *Ting*³ *tsi*³. The "button" worn on top of
 the hat as a sign of literary
 or official rank:—Note (22).
 水文 *Shui*³ *wên*². A water-mark or vein in a
 stone or crystal.
 作意 *Tso*⁴ *i*⁴. The divisions or skeleton of an
 essay or discourse, *ideas*.
 氣調 *Ch'i*⁴ *tiao*⁴. The measured cadence of
 literary composition or of
 a chant, *rhythm, tune*.
 觀 *Kwan*¹. To look at, to observe, to note. Also
 *kwan*⁴.
 幹員 *Kan*⁴ *yüan*². A gifted officer of state.
 招搖 *Chao*¹ *yao*². To raise a disturbance, to draw
 a crowd, *to make an ado*.
 撞騙 *Chwang*⁴ *p'ien*⁴. To swindle, to fleece, to
 despoil, to grab.

官子、國在、了章、得毛、子、可
 親、名、家、大、看、還、毛、病、色、顏、留
 到、叫、的、有、又、在、病、答、頭、色、的
 處、朱、幹、可、有、糊、○、那、真、東、西。
 去、洪、員、觀、作、塗、去²³、是、好、
 招、江、可、○、意、陣、年、一、可、惜、
 搖、仗、惜、張²⁴、又、有、今、我、道、
 撞、着、他、大、有、今、我、看、他、水、
 騙、自、有、人、氣、年、他、文、算、
 己、個、真、調、我、的、算、一、
 是、舅、是、實、看、文、不、點、頂

cubine, and the others he sold. Every one who speaks of it says, such a rascal should be pnt to death without fail.
 22 The color of that coral button is very fine; what a pity it has this small defect. Ans. That is a natural vein, and cannot be regarded as a defect.
 23 When I examined his essays last year, they were all a mass of confusion. This year I have been looking at them, and I find they have both ideas and rhythm, and are very readable.
 24 Chang Ta-jên is really one of the talented officers of the land, but unfortunately he has a brother-in-law called Chu Hung Chang, who makes capital of his relationship, and goes about making a great ado and swindling people.

NOTES.

- 7 Or, *This is a thing that may be carried on, or it may be dropped; if completed, all right; if not, no matter.*
- 10 The Chinese consider it a great incongruity to have a door in the end of a house.
- 13 話頭兒, *the thread of the discourse.*
- 14 千妥萬當, *perfectly satisfactory.* See Les. 186.
- 18 溺愛不明, *blinded by excessive affection,—a book phrase.*
- 19 緣, here means the supposed occult and inscrutable chain of causes or attractions which operate to bring together those who have an affinity for each other, or who are predestined to be joined together. No English word is adequate to translate it.
- 20 In the North, 肥 is only used of animals or of meat, never of persons. In the South it is sometimes used of persons also.
- 22 頂子 The Chinese "button," as it is called by

foreigners, is of various kinds. All who have literary degrees, high or low, are thereby entitled to wear a gold (gilded brass) button. Officers wear buttons of various kinds, according to their rank. The lowest is glass, in two grades; the lower being milk color and the higher, clear (crystal). The next rank is blue, in two grades; the lower being jade-stone and the higher, sapphire. The highest is red, also in two grades; the lower being red coral and the higher, ruby. In each case the more brilliant or transparent color indicates the higher rank.

23 糊塗陣, *a confused array, a demoralized order of battle,—a forcible phrase to express the confusion and disorder of that which should be methodical.* 氣調 The Chinese lay great stress on the rhythmic flow of the style. Their reading and reciting is a sort of chanting. Whenever a Chinese scholar falls on a piece of good writing, he spontaneously takes to chanting it as he reads.

LESSON CLXXXI.

CORRELATIVE PARTICLES.

This lesson illustrates a few correlative particles in sets of three.

別說.....	即便.....	也	} To say nothing of..... even if..... ().
別講.....	即便.....	也	
As here used, 也 has no answering word in English.			
諒來.....	若不.....	還能	Most likely, probably..... if not..... would.
本當.....	只因.....	所以	Ought by rights..... but because,..... therefore.
雖然.....	若是.....	還能	Although..... yet if..... might.
若.....	雖然.....	也	If, when..... although..... yet.
雖然.....	只因.....	所以	Although..... yet because..... therefore.
別講.....	就是.....	還值	To say nothing of..... even if..... worth while.
雖然.....	只要.....	還能	Although, even though..... yet if, only..... will be, may.

課一十八百一第

LESSON CLXXXI.

口然在司才親大他不能莫別
 音話不好、在學本該便是○人慶壽、
 諒若學堂辜該打贏是個文舉、仗着武秀才來嚇我、
 來若是肯負那些光陰、心裏真是懊悔、因為我的聽⁷這⁸
 他還是肯用上工夫、還得多認識幾個字。○聽⁷這⁸
 是有錢、若不然、還能想開當舖嗎。○這⁸
 別說你父親還給你掙下點家業、即便一點沒掙下、你也
 不能把他丟扔了。○雖然我沒親眼看見、諒來必是你先罵
 他、你若先罵他、他還能打你嗎。○前³日本當親自來給
 大人慶壽、只因偶然得了一點寒疾、不敢見風、所以不能
 親來。○他⁴不用仗着武秀才來嚇我、莫別說他是個武秀
 才、即便文舉、我也不能去招求賠告他。○頭⁵一堂、官
 司本該打贏了、只因錢沒花到、所以纔打輸喇。○頭⁵一堂、官
 本該打贏了、只因錢沒花到、所以纔打輸喇。○頭⁵一堂、官

- 1 To say nothing of the fact that your father laid by something of an inheritance for you, even if he had laid by nothing, you could not cast him off.
- 2 Although I did not see it with my own eyes, yet I venture to say that you first reviled him. If you had not first reviled him, would he have struck you?
- 3 I certainly ought to have come in person day before yesterday to offer my congratulations on your birthday, sir, but on account of having taken a slight cold I could not venture out in the wind, and so was unable to come in person.
- 4 He need not think to frighten me with his military degree. What does a military degree signify? Even if he had a civil degree of the second rank, I would not go and make suit (own up) to him.
- 5 Judging from the first hearing, this suit ought certainly to have won; but because there was not enough money used, it was lost.
- 6 When I think of the time I wasted in school, I feel very sorry; for although my talents are inferior, yet if I had realized the importance of improving my time, I might have known many more characters.
- 7 Judging from this language, he probably has some money after all. If not, would he be thinking of opening a pawn shop?
- 8 To say nothing of his having had some experience, even if he had had no ex-

VOCABULARY.

慶壽 *Ch'ing⁴ shou⁴*. To present congratulations
 on the birthday,—some-
 times accompanied by a present.
 寒疾 *Han² chi⁴*. A cold, indisposition caused by
 a cold.
 招賠 *Chao¹ p'ei²*. To confess and make amends,
 to confess and apologize.
 打輸 *Ta³ shu¹*.....To be worsted, to lose.
 明悟 *Ming² wu⁴*. Talent, genius, endowments;
 intelligent, brilliant.
 才分 *Ts'ai² fèn⁴*.....Talent, parts.

口話 *K'ou² hwa⁴*. Style of speech, language,
 expression.
 分辨 *Fèn¹ pien⁴*. To distinguish, to pick out
 and assort.
 蔽 *Pi⁴*.....To repress; to obscure, to screen.
 蒙蔽 *Méng² pi⁴*. To cover up, to screen, to smother;
 er; to blind, to hoodwink.
 沾染 *Chan¹ jan³*. To contaminate, to soil, to
 corrupt.
 蛾 *Oá², É²*.....A moth, a miller.
 蝴蝶 *Hu² tie²*.....A butterfly.

他⁹那樣的聰明，莫^別說他還經練過，即便沒經練過，^{保管保也辦不錯。}○老兄爲小弟的親事，這樣費心，本當應允纔是，只因沒有父命，所以不敢遽然應承。○雖¹⁰說良心能以分辨是非，只因內被私欲蒙蔽，外被世俗沾染，所以真是真非，連良心也分辨不清楚了。○¹¹莫^別講是爲個蛾兒，就是爲個蝴蝶，你已經十來多歲的東西，還值得放開大喇叭¹²喉嚨子哭嗎。○人既然都這樣傳說，諒來是不屈他，若不然，一人和¹³他有仇，還能人人都有仇嗎。○官沒有不讓人和息的，雖然已經被傳到案，只要有人調處，遞上一張¹⁴告和息呈子，也能把事情按下。○人若不被聖靈重生，雖然願意行善，也不知善爲何物。○爲¹⁵我們的事，勞動這麼些人來說和，莫^別講還不能吃大虧，即便吃個三千五吊錢

perience, with his abilities, I warrant he would manage it successfully.
 9 Seeing you, good brother, have taken so much pains about my betrothal, I ought by rights to assent; but inasmuch as I have not yet had my father's consent, I cannot venture to promise at once.
 10 Although we say that conscience can distinguish right and wrong, yet because of the blinding effect of lust within, and the corrupting effect of the world without, it comes to pass that true right and wrong, even the conscience, is not able clearly to distinguish.
 11 It is only a moth: and even if it were a butterfly, is it worth while for you, a great thing over ten years old, to set up such a bawling about it?
 12 Probably he is not unjustly accused, seeing everybody reports it in this way. If it were not true, although one man might be his enemy, yet surely all would not be his enemies.
 13 No magistrate refuses the privilege of a settlement. Even although the parties are already summoned, only let there be some one to act as mediator, and a notice of settlement be presented, and the case may be arrested.
 14 When a man has not been renewed by the Holy Spirit, although he wishes to do good, he does not understand what it is to do good.
 15 Having put all these gentlemen to the trouble of coming to mediate in this business of ours, to say nothing of our not suffering any serious loss, even if we should lose three or five

喇 *La*³..... A prolonged sound. See *la*¹.
 叭 *Pa*¹..... An open mouth.
 喇叭 *A trumpet, a clarinet.*
 重生 *Ch'ung² shêng¹. To be born again; re-generation.*
 行善 *Hsing² shan⁴. To do good, to do works of benevolence; to do righteously.*
 起動 *Ch'i³ tung⁴. To disturb, to put to trouble.*
 維 *Wei²..... Connected with; whereas. (w.)*
 記仇 *Chi⁴ ch'ou². To hold a grudge, to cherish a purpose of revenge.*

如初 *Ju² ch'u¹..... As at first, as before.*
 復初 *Fu⁴ ch'u¹. To restore as it was originally, to begin again, to revert.*
 遇險 *Yu⁴ hsien³. To meet with danger or accident.*
 變故 *Pien⁴ ku⁴. An unforeseen occurrence, an emergency, an accident.*
 見影 *Chien⁴ ying³. To see a trace or indication of.*
 錢穀 *Ch'ien² ku³. A collector of taxes, a treasurer or cashier.*
 書信 *Shu¹ hsin⁴..... Letters; correspondence.*

了，所以必得用這三樣的師爺。
 官的，雖然大半是聰明人，只因公事太多，一個人擔當不
 地丁錢糧的叫錢穀，管寫稟帖書信的叫書啟，凡作州縣
 州縣衙門裏的師爺，不是一樣，管批呈子的叫刑名，管
 諒來必是，必有變遇，失事故，若是沒有變遇，還能到如今不見影兒嗎。
 的電報，算計保大，昨天就該來到烟台，但是到如今沒來。
 有完，現在不能脫身，所以只得等到年底了。○看上海來
 初初的，和人相好。○我雖然想着快快回家，只因公事還沒
 記仇，人雖然得罪了他，只要給他賠個禮，他就能仍舊復如
 的虧，也當給眾位圓上臉。○李維坤的大長處，就是不會

thousand cash, we ought to yield to their wishes in the case.
 16 The good point about Li Wei K'un is that he never holds spite. Even though one offends him, yet if an apology be made, he will be just as friendly as ever.
 17 Although I am anxious to return home as soon as possible, yet because my business is not finished I cannot get away at present, but will be compelled to remain till the end of the year.
 18 Judging from the Shanghai telegram, the Pau-ta should have reached Chefoo yesterday, but up to the present time she has not come. Something unusual has most likely occurred. If there had been nothing unusual, could it be that up to this time there should be no sign of her?
 19 The assistants in chou and hsien offices are not all of one grade. Those who have charge of opinions rendered on indictments, are called prosecuting attorneys; those who have charge of land and poll taxes, are called treasurers; those who have charge of writing petitions and letters, are called secretaries. Although chou and hsien magistrates are, for the most part, able men, yet because the public business is more than one man can attend to alone, they find it necessary to use these three kinds of official assistants.

NOTES.

- 2 諒來必是 Or, *It must be so.*
- 3 寒疾, a cold ailment,—any slight disease caused by exposure to cold.
- 4 文舉, a civil, as opposed to a military, *chü-jên.*
- 5 一堂 *One hall or court; that is, one hearing.* A suit is rarely finished at one hearing. The magistrate adjourns a case at any point he chooses, and calls up another. One case may, and often does, have many hearings.
- 7 還, as used in the first clause, implies that his having money had been doubted or denied; as used in the second clause, 還 adds emphasis to the question.
- 10 真是真非, *true right and true wrong; that is, an unerring discernment of what is right and wrong in each case.*
- 13 Law suits are a trouble to magistrates, and rarely a source of much profit, hence they are generally quite willing to have them settled by compromise. The 和息呈子 or 告和呈子 is presented, in the name of the parties,

- by the mediator or middleman, and embraces a statement of the terms of settlement.
- 14 行善 is here used by "Christian" to signify *righteous living*, but it is more commonly used by the Chinese to signify *acts of benevolence performed with a view to acquiring merit.*
- 15 叫眾位圓上臉, *cause these gentlemen to complete their face; that is, not put them to shame.*
- 16 不會記仇, *not know how to hold spite; that is, not naturally given to holding spite.*
- 18 烟台. The Chinese name of Chefoo, being the name of the fishing village which originally occupied the site. The name "Chefoo" comes from a village on the other side of the harbor, at which it was originally supposed the foreign town would be built, and which in fact has a much better anchorage. 變故, *a changed cause; i.e., an unforeseen turn of affairs.*
- 19 地丁, *land and poll*, which sums up taxes proper in China. Buildings and personal property are not taxed. Business men are supposed to pay tax in duties, which are levied afresh almost every time the goods are moved.

課二十八百一第

色、子、沒、有、○、所、是、頂、貪、若、
 一、他、錢、若、以、一、好、○、是、請、
 天、豈、就、看、他、個、的、○、看、樓、
 兩、不、花、他、是、頂、地、若、房、
 天、是、實、這、是、壞、方、看、街、
 還、白、在、樣、留、的、道、酒、
 不、指、不、窮、飯、地、那、更、
 礙、望、配、苦、更、好、○、我、
 事、了、可、本、就、是、○、酒、
 但、嗎、憐、當、不、留、○、樓、
 看、○、若、萬、一、人、家、有、了、
 他、的、脈、却、不、敢、保、兒、
 底、他、

LESSON CLXXXII.

- 1 If the host does not provide wine, so much the better; and even if there is wine, one should not give rein to appetite.
- 2 If you regard the fine buildings, and streets, and the flourishing business of Shanghai, it must be accounted a very excellent place; but if you look at the wine galleries and tea houses and promiscuous commingling of the sexes, it must be considered a very corrupt place.
- 3 We have all brought a lunch along. If he invites us to stop for dinner, so much the better; and if he does not, we will not suffer from hunger.
- 4 If one considers his poverty, he should by rights have assistance; but when one considers that he spends his money as fast as he gets it, he does not really seem worthy of pity.
- 5 If his uncle eventually has no son, he will of course adopt him; but if perchance his uncle should have a son, this hope would all come to nothing.
- 6 Judging merely from the color of his face, there is no danger for one or two days; but when his pulse is considered

LESSON CLXXXII.

CORRELATIVE PARTICLES—DOUBLE.

This lesson gives a specimen of the manner in which correlatives are joined together in couples for the expression of more involved ideas. There are many such combinations. The translations given are necessarily imperfect.

- 若是...更好...就是...也不... If... so much the better... even if, still if... not.
 若看...本是...但看...却是... If regard, if look at... naturally must... but if... must.
 本 and 却 will not bear literal translating.
 若看...本當...但看...實在... If consider... would naturally, should... but if... really.
 若看...本當...但看...還當... If consider... ought by rights... but if... should.
 若看...還...但看...卻... If look, judging from... ()... but if, but when... ().
 As here used, 還 and 卻 have really no answering words in English.
 若是...固然...萬一...豈... If... of course... but if perchance, in case... (?)
 豈 Can only be rendered by the sign of a question, being in these cases the sign of the interrogative affirmative.
 若是...固然...就是...仍舊... If... of course... and if, and yet... equally.
 若按...雖...就是...但想到...仍舊... Although... yet according to justice... yet when we consider, yet influenced by... better after all, may after all.
 It is here impossible to put the English in the same order as the Chinese.

○若⁷按理說，他夜間來偷我們的樹，雖是罰他也不為過，但想到他是我們本家的女姑爺，旁人又沒看見，總是該寬恕他纔是。○到那天，你實在不能脫身，就不必為難，因為你若能來幫助更好，就是不來幫助，也不至於丟差事。○劉⁹天祿已經這麼大了，要給他定親，總得商議商議他，若是啞密密的定了，以後若能合他的意，固然大家都好，萬一不合他的意，豈不得受他一輩子的埋怨嗎。○若¹⁰看秦英打死了皇親國丈，本當斬首，給國丈償命，但看他父秦山有功，今在西涼被困，還當暫且寬饒，差他救父回朝，將功折罪。○若¹¹按公道，他這樣倚勢欺人，就該趁此機會告他一狀，但想到千金置產，萬金置鄰，仍舊該寬讓他，只求過得去也就罷了。○

it is hard to say [what may happen].
 7 Although according to justice it would be no more than right to punish him for coming in the night and stealing our trees, yet when we consider that he is a son-in-law of ours, and that no one else saw him, we would better after all be lenient with him.
 8 If on that day you really cannot get away, you need not feel troubled; for although, if you can come and help, it will be much better, still your not coming will not involve any failure.
 9 Liu T'ien Lu being already so old it will be necessary to consult him in making a marriage contract for him. If we settle it up on the sly, then afterwards, in case she suits his mind, of course all will be well; but in case she should not suit his mind, will we not have to bear his life-long reproaches?
 10 If we regard simply the fact that Ch'in Ying killed the Emperor's father-in-law, we ought by rights to behead him in order to avenge the death of the imperial father-in-law; but if we consider the worthiness of his father Ch'in San, who is at present besieged in Shi-liang, we should relieve him temporarily, and send him to rescue and bring back home his father, and so atone for his crime by meritorious service.
 11 Seeing he thus uses his power to tyrannize over others, we ought in justice to embrace this opportunity to prosecute him; but considering that whilst "a thousand taels will buy a farm, it takes ten thousand to buy a

VOCABULARY.

樓房 *Lou² fang²*. A two or more storied house; an upper room.
 酒樓 *Chiu³ lou²*..... An up-stairs saloon.
 繼 *Chi⁴*. To connect, to succeed to, to become heir to.
 氣色 *Ch'i⁴ sè⁴*. Color of the face, looks, expression; appearance.
 為難 *Wei² nan²*. To regard as a difficulty; in difficulty, in straits, troubled.
 煩難 *Fan² nan²*.....The same.

誤事 *Wu⁴ shì⁴*.....To fail, to break down.
 丟差 *Tiu¹ ch'ai¹*. To disappoint the expectations of, to fail, to blunder, to make a mess of.
 皇親 *Hwang² ch'in¹*. The Emperor's relatives by marriage.
 國丈 *Kwo² chang⁴*. The Emperor's father-in-law:—Note (10).
 斬首 *Chan³ shou³*.....To behead.
 寬饒 *K'wan¹ jao²*. To deal leniently with, to show mercy, to relieve.

聽¹²說王玉珉和他哥哥又合起來喇，依我看來，若是能常和睦在一塊兒過，固然是好，萬一過不上來，再分開，可就叫人嗤笑大喇。○舜¹³的兄弟象，天天想着殺舜，到舜為天子的時候，若按俗理說，雖然就是把象殺了，也是公道，但舜想到手足的情分，仍然還好好的待他，可見舜真無愧為聖人了。○如¹⁴今小場的文章，最喜的是快馬輕刀，若學。是用功不到，固然不能進學，就是費力太大，仍舊不能進學。○我¹⁵有一個朋友，在河南桐栢縣作知縣，這幾天有意要去找他討個差使，却沒拿定主意，若到了那裏，他不忘舊交，固然必有照應，萬一高攀不上，豈不白跑這一邊嗎。

neighbor," it will be better after all to put up with him,—only so that we don't entirely lose face.

12 I hear that Wang Yü K'un and his elder brother are living together again. As I look at it, it is of course all right if they can indeed continue to live in peace, but if perchance they fail to live together harmoniously and separate again, people will make great fun of them.

13 Shun's younger brother Shang was every day wanting to kill him. When Shun became emperor, although according to the ordinary ideas of justice it would have been perfectly right to put Shang to death, yet Shun, influenced by fraternal affection, continued to treat him as kindly as ever; from which it is clear that Shun is not unworthy to be accounted a sage.

14 In the primary examinations at present, the popular thing is a sprightly superficial style; hence, while one who is not diligent cannot of course succeed, yet he who overdoes the matter will equally fail.

15 I have a friend who is magistrate in the T'ung-pai district of Honan. I have been thinking these few days to go and see him and ask him for something to do, but have not yet made up my mind. If, when I get there, he does not ignore the old acquaintance, I would of course be provided for; but if perchance I should fail to obtain recognition, I should have all my journey for nothing.

寬讓 *K'wan¹ jang⁴*. To make allowance for, to tolerate, to put up with.

珉 *K'un¹*. A kind of precious stone.

嗤笑 *Ch'ü³ hsiao⁴*. To laugh out of countenance, to ridicule, to make fun of.

天子 *T'ien¹ tsi³*. The Emperor:—Note (13).

手足 *Shou³ tsu²*. A figure for brothers, or for fraternal affection.

費力 *Fei⁴ li⁴*. To expend effort; to take pains, laborious.

舊交 *Chiu⁴ chiao¹*. Former friendship, old acquaintance.

攀 *P'an¹*. To grasp, to climb, to reach up to.

高攀 *Kao¹ p'an¹*. To claim acquaintance or friendship; to aspire to.

NOTES.

3 留飯 seems to say *keep or leave food*, but it really means *to invite one to stay for a meal*.

5 人家 here refers to the uncle, and is practically equal to a simple personal pronoun, though more definite in its reference.

7 The structure of this sentence is somewhat involved. 他夜間來偷我們的樹 is used parenthetically.

10 秦英 was the emperor's nephew, and though a mere stripling, was of giant strength. While he was out fishing, one of the emperor's fathers-in-law came along with

第一八百八十三課

LESSON CLXXXIII.

他就結了。○賊兵進了城，見人就殺，遇着小
 他不成。○這條狗不看家，光偷嘴，不如灌死
 子死是病死了，難道你不在家，我還能不能害死
 但凡是個有臉有皮的人，也就羞死了。○孩
 父親治病，誰料一副藥，把我父親存了好心，給
 急，真能把人急死。○只當是他存了好心，給
 把人都淹死了。○任憑怎樣催他，他也不着
 一跤，幾乎跌死。○口子外頭碰壞了一隻船，
 當就出去弔死了。○昨兒晚上，我母親跌了
 哎呀我的媽媽呀，疼死我喇。○他因為羞愧難

- 1 Oh, my mother! This pain is killing me.
- 2 Because he was mortified beyond endurance, he went out and hanged himself.
- 3 Last night my mother stumbled and fell and almost killed herself.
- 4 A ship has been wrecked outside the harbor and all on board drowned.
- 5 No matter how you urge him, he never gets in a hurry. It is really enough to worry one to death.
- 6 I of course supposed he was sincerely trying to cure my father, when, behold, by one dose of medicine he poisoned my father to death.
- 7 Anybody who had the least sense of shame would have been mortified to death.
- 8 The child's death was caused by disease. Is it a supposable thing that I took his life in your absence?
- 9 This dog will not watch the house, and is always filching something to eat. We might as well strangle him and be done with him.

his retinue making a great ado, and frightened away the fish. This angered 秦英, and, being spurred on by his companions, he set on the offender, and dashing him down, rent him asunder by his great strength. The story is recorded in the history of the Tang dynasty, and being frequently acted in theaters, is familiar to the people. 國丈, *state father-in-law*. The fathers of the Emperor's wives and concubines are so called,—perhaps because the "state" has the "privilege" of maintaining them and their families. 回朝, *return to the palace, or the immediate society of the emperor*. 將功折罪, *to make amends for crime by meritorious deeds*,—a recognized principle of Chinese governmental policy.

11 倚勢欺人, *to rely on power or prestige and so insult or oppress others*. 萬金量鄰. In China much more stress is laid on having good neighbors than is usually

the case in the West, not so much for the sake of gentility as for security and help in difficulty.

13 象 was the half-brother of 舜, being the offspring of the father's second marriage. Both the father and the younger son sought to compass the death of the elder son. 天子, *son of heaven*. The Emperor is so styled because he is supposed to reign by the direct appointment of Heaven, and to be the representative or vicegerent of Heaven. 俗理, *common reason*, the commonly accepted principles of right or justice, the lower as contrasted with the higher law or principle.

14 快馬輕刀, *a swift horse and a light sword*, a figure used to set forth a sprightly and incisive style. 費力太大, *put forth too much effort*; that is, by excessive pains and care make the essay too heavy and labored.

LESSON CLXXXIII.

THE AUXILIARY VERBS 死 AND 煞

死 To die,—is used as an auxiliary after verbs denoting the means or manner of killing. Though properly an auxiliary, 死 is not unfrequently used as a mere intensive. It has already been used a number of times in previous lessons.

煞 To kill,—is used as an auxiliary after verbs denoting the means or manner of killing. It is frequently, perhaps generally, used as an intensive, though it has the form and construction of an ordinary auxiliary. It is rarely used in Southern Mandarin.

孩子，¹⁰ 孩子，¹¹ 孩子，¹² 孩子，¹³ 孩子，¹⁴ 孩子，¹⁵ 孩子，¹⁶ 孩子，¹⁷ 孩子，¹⁸ 孩子，¹⁹ 孩子，²⁰ 孩子，²¹ 孩子，²² 孩子，²³ 孩子，²⁴ 孩子，²⁵ 孩子，²⁶ 孩子，²⁷ 孩子，²⁸ 孩子，²⁹ 孩子，³⁰ 孩子，³¹ 孩子，³² 孩子，³³ 孩子，³⁴ 孩子，³⁵ 孩子，³⁶ 孩子，³⁷ 孩子，³⁸ 孩子，³⁹ 孩子，⁴⁰ 孩子，⁴¹ 孩子，⁴² 孩子，⁴³ 孩子，⁴⁴ 孩子，⁴⁵ 孩子，⁴⁶ 孩子，⁴⁷ 孩子，⁴⁸ 孩子，⁴⁹ 孩子，⁵⁰ 孩子，⁵¹ 孩子，⁵² 孩子，⁵³ 孩子，⁵⁴ 孩子，⁵⁵ 孩子，⁵⁶ 孩子，⁵⁷ 孩子，⁵⁸ 孩子，⁵⁹ 孩子，⁶⁰ 孩子，⁶¹ 孩子，⁶² 孩子，⁶³ 孩子，⁶⁴ 孩子，⁶⁵ 孩子，⁶⁶ 孩子，⁶⁷ 孩子，⁶⁸ 孩子，⁶⁹ 孩子，⁷⁰ 孩子，⁷¹ 孩子，⁷² 孩子，⁷³ 孩子，⁷⁴ 孩子，⁷⁵ 孩子，⁷⁶ 孩子，⁷⁷ 孩子，⁷⁸ 孩子，⁷⁹ 孩子，⁸⁰ 孩子，⁸¹ 孩子，⁸² 孩子，⁸³ 孩子，⁸⁴ 孩子，⁸⁵ 孩子，⁸⁶ 孩子，⁸⁷ 孩子，⁸⁸ 孩子，⁸⁹ 孩子，⁹⁰ 孩子，⁹¹ 孩子，⁹² 孩子，⁹³ 孩子，⁹⁴ 孩子，⁹⁵ 孩子，⁹⁶ 孩子，⁹⁷ 孩子，⁹⁸ 孩子，⁹⁹ 孩子，¹⁰⁰ 孩子。

- 10 When the rebels entered the city, they killed every one they saw. If they came across a child, they took it by the legs and dashed it to death on the ground.
- 11 Just in the depth of winter, and without a stitch of wadded clothing! How many are there who would not freeze to death [in the same circumstances]?
- 12 While I was sheltering myself from the rain under a large tree, there suddenly came a clap of thunder the shock of which came very near killing me.
- 13 How did you happen to kill him? Ans. He drew a knife and was about to cut me, when I gave him a kick from beneath and killed him.
- 14 When chickens eat poisonous worms, the poison all collects in their brains; hence when chickens get very old, their heads are poisonous.
- 15 I was boxing with T'ang Jên Chie and, failing to guard myself, he gave me a blow on my floating ribs the pain of which nearly killed me.
- 16 Wang T'ien Hsi's child took a cold and his whole body was feverish, whereupon Wang T'ien Hsi prepared him a sweating draught, and, giving it to him, covered him with four or five quilts in order to force out the

VOCABULARY.

難當 *Nan² tang¹*. Hard to bear, beyond endurance, in a strait.
 跤 *Chiao¹*. To trip, to stumble, to fall.
 口子 *K'ou³ ts'í³*. A harbor, a port.
 看家 *K'an¹ chia¹*. To watch the house or home. (N.)
 殞 *Nao¹*. To poison.
 隆冬 *Lung² tung¹*. Intense cold, the depth of winter.
 數九 *Shu³ chiu³*. The nine times nine days following the winter solstice.
 霹 *P'í¹*. A clap, a report.
 靂 *Lí⁴*. A clap, a peal.
 霹靂. A clap or peal of thunder.
 炸雷 *Cha⁴ lei²*. A clap of thunder. (s.)

毒氣 *Tu² ch'í⁴*. A poisonous vapor or essence, poison.
 比拳脚 *Pí³ ch'üan² chiao³*. To make trial of skill at boxing, to box.
 套拳 *T'ao⁴ ch'üan³*. To box, to practice boxing.
 隄 *Tí¹*. A dike; to oppose, to guard; to fill up.
 隄防 *Tí¹ fang²*. To guard against, to be ready for, to ward off.
 肋 *Lei⁴*. The ribs.
 軟肋 *Jüan³ lei⁴*. The floating ribs.
 煎 *Chien¹*. To fry in oil; to simmer, to decoct medicines. See *chien⁴*.
 麻黃 *Ma² hwang²*. The horsetail.
 搗 *Wu³*. To cover with the hand, to muffle.

夫的罪名，真是錢能通神哪。十來年的官司，從本縣打到北京，也沒問成他謀害本
 人告了，楊乃武是個大財主，就用錢上下打點，直打了
 葛畢氏和姦夫楊乃武串同一氣，用毒藥害死本夫被
 重者打小販子，或一千或八百，就是死要得具結。
 打畫地事招點
 會算、要怎麼問，就怎麼問，若有不遵斷的，輕者打嘴巴，一
 地解打回來。○榮大老爺問案，最決斷不過，心裏一
 事喇，誰料他在夢中吐了實情，竟被即墨縣官拏住，打
 招死老崔婆子，一直跑上了嶗山，只覺着在那裏沒有
 點沒有，就是喉嚨腫的喘不出氣來，硬癥死了。○馬五

perspiration, when what should he do but smother the child to death.
 17 He had no other disease, save that his throat was so swollen that he could not get his breath, and he simply smothered to death.
 18 When Ma Wu had choked old Dame Ts'ui to death he fled at once to the Lao Mountains, thinking that there he would be safe; but, behold, all un-awares he let the secret out in his sleep, and finally was arrested by the Chi-mi magistrate and sent back to his own district for trial.
 19 Yung Ta Lao-yie is a man of the greatest positiveness. He at once forms an opinion of how the case stands, and as he thinks, so it must be. If any one dissents from the verdict, the lighter punishment is slapping on the face, and the heavier, a beating with the light bamboo, one thousand blows, or perhaps eight hundred. Even if wronged to death, you have to make a settlement.
 20 Mrs. Koā of the Pi family with her paramour, Yang Nai Wu, conspired together and procured the death of her husband by poison. Being accused, Yang Nai Wu, who was very wealthy, bribed both the lower and the higher officials, so that after a suit of over ten years, carrying the case from the district magistrate to the capital, no conviction was obtained for the murder. Verily money is all-powerful.

癥 *Pie¹*. A suppurating ulcer; to hold in, to re- strain; to smother; tenesmus.
 嶗 *Lao²*. Certain mountains:—Note (18).
 解 *Chie⁴*. To send under guard. See *chie³*.
 地解 *Ti⁴ chie⁴*. To send under guard from one jurisdiction to another.
 掂算 *Tien¹ swan⁴*. To weigh, to estimate, to con- sider, to form an opinion.
 畫會 *Hwa⁴ hui⁴*. To picture in the mind, to conceive, to imagine.
 打稿 *Ta³ kao³*. To make a first draft; to plan, to project, to estimate.
 打嘴巴 *Ta³ tsui³ pa¹*. To beat on the face:— Note (19).
 掌嘴 *Chang³ tsui³*. To slap on the face, to beat on the face.

具結 *Chü⁴ chie²*. To draw up and sign a settle- ment.
 出結 *Ch'u¹ chie²*. To arrange and draw up a settlement.
 姦 *Chien¹*. Illicit intercourse of any kind; to d. bauch.
 姦夫 *Chien¹ fu¹*. A husband who is guilty of adultery, an adulterer.
 串同 *Ch'wan⁴ t'ung²*. To connect together, to band, to ally.
 毒藥 *Tu² yao⁴*. Poisonous drugs, poison.
 謀害 *Mou² hai⁴*. To harm seriously or fatally by a secret plot, to plot against.
 通神 *T'ung¹ shên²*. Moving the gods; all- powerful:—Note (20).

課四十八百一第

LESSON CLXXXIV.

大¹ 心 生 鬼 丈 夫 作 事 敢 作 敢 爲 當 這 個 學
 趣。 心 好 神 頭 頭 鬼 鬼 臉 腦 的 精 神 外 漏。 我 好
 就 打 人 呢。 你 這 個 孩 子 怎 麼 反 討 了 個 無
 絕 意 一 點 夫 妻 的 滋 味 也 沒 有。 情
 已 經 僱 給 人 家 還 能 自 由 自 在 的
 像 在 家 裏 一 樣 嗎。 只 用 合 家 無
 災 無 病 雖 就 是 窮 一 點 過 的 也 有
 心 腸 興 心 當 時 他 滿 滿 口 應 應 許 許 要 給 我

- 1 A resolute man dares to act and to bear the responsibility (to undertake).
- 2 There is something outlandish about this pupil. He looks a great deal brighter than he really is.
- 3 I told him with the best of intentions, and got snubbed for my pains.
- 4 You little rascal, you! what makes you strike people without any provocation?
- 5 They two have in fact lost all affection for each other; the proper conjugal feelings are all gone.
- 6 Having hired yourself to another, can you still be as independent as if you were at home?
- 7 Only let a family be free from trouble or sickness, and although they live frugally, they will still keep in good spirits.

NOTES.

1 哎呀, as here used, goes somewhat beyond the definition given in Les. 93. It is here an expression of mingled surprise and pain. 娘 is also often used instead of 媽, though never doubled. When a man is in trouble he calls on his mother, and when one man wishes to revile another he reviles his mother, thus indicating that in China, affection for the mother is ordinarily stronger than that for the father.

7 有臉有皮 is equivalent to 有臉皮, which is thus amplified for emphasis; see next lesson.

9 灌死, to strangle by pouring water into the mouth, or by holding the head or mouth and nose under water.

11 隆冬數九 In the nines of the ascendant winter, in mid-winter. It is customary to count time by nines from the 冬至, or winter solstice, until nine times nine days are counted, which includes the coldest weather and brings the spring.

16 麻黃湯, a draught made by the decoction of a variety of herbs, of which the principle one is the horsetail, and used as a domestic sudorific for the cure of colds. 給他吃了, not, ate it for him, but, gave him to eat,—給

being used as a principle verb. 把個孩子. This use of 個 is colloquial, but quite *t'ung-hsing*. It is a contraction for 那個. 硬癱死了, killed by sheer smothering.

18 嶗山, a range of hills or mountains in the district of 即墨, on the southern side of the Shantung promontory, noted as the site of many Taoist temples. 吐了實情, spit out the facts, or as we say, "let out the truth."

19 Beating on the face is considered a lighter and less shameful punishment than beating with a bamboo. The beating is done with a short heavy leather strap of two thicknesses sewed together, and resembling a Chinese leather shoe sole. 輕者...重者, a common and very neat form of expressing the limits of lightness and severity. The same form is used with other adjuncts, 大者...小者, etc.

20 本夫, the husband of the woman in question. The terms here used are those current in legal documents. 通神 means properly to connect with the gods, to affect or move the gods, and hence, to be possessed of, or endowed with, divine effect or power, all-powerful.

LESSON CLXXXIV.

QUADRUPLER PHRASES.

Both written and spoken Chinese shows a strong liking for four character phrases. They abound in all kinds of writing, as well as in colloquial Mandarin. Though extensively used in colloquial, they generally have their origin in books. I have arranged the most commonly used ones in four classes, and will give one lesson to each.

The present lesson illustrates such quadruplet phrases as have the first and third characters the same, the second and fourth being analogues; or vice versa, the second and fourth the same and the first and third analogues. In most cases the analogous words form a phrase, which, for rhetorical effect, is separated into parts by the

天、並沒有一定的界限，乃是無邊無岸的。○世間的
 是虛，那些風言風語的話，何足憑信呢。○這蒼蒼之
 卑，若是大模大樣的，就討人嫌了。○眼見是實，耳聽
 好辦，有頭有尾的話叫人愛聽。○舉一動總要謙
 癡頭癡腦的，心裏却是詭詐得很。○順情順理的事
 風的話，却能把人說得俯伏在地。○別看他外面
 手捏腳的，在後窗底下聽了多時。○雖是些個八面
 生最端排沉，不過，狂言狂語一點沒有。○我看看他捏
 無仇，你這樣無緣無故的來找我做什麼呢。○我和你先
 還這筆賬，怎麼一個大錢沒還你呢。○我無

- 8 He promised at the time, most positively, to pay this account for me. How is it that he has never given you a cash?
- 9 There is no enmity between you and me. Why then do you come without any apparent reason to throw the blame on me?
- 10 Mr. Pu is very sedate; he never speaks extravagantly.
- 11 I saw him stealing on tip-toe to the back window, and listening a long time.
- 12 Although what he says is nothing but rattling declamation, yet he has the knack of gaining people's complete confidence.
- 13 Don't be misled by his simple appearance, his heart is very deceitful.
- 14 Well-regulated business is easy to manage; methodical speech is pleasant to listen to.
- 15 Take care to be unpretending in all your deportment. If you are ostentatious, you will provoke the aversion of others.
- 16 What is seen is real; what is heard is uncertain. What is there that is worthy of credence in these floating rumors?

repeated word. Dialectic differences have caused the introduction of several phrases belonging to the subsequent classes.
 敢作敢當 Ready to assume responsibility, decision of character, self-reliant.
 敢作敢為 Ready to undertake, resolute,
 鬼頭鬼腦 Outlandish, ludicrous, comic; lackadaisical.
 神頭鬼臉 The same.
 好心好意 With the best intentions, in the kindness of one's heart, well meant.
 無是無非 Without cause, unprovoked.
 無涉無干 Without cause, unprovoked; extraneous, irrelevant.
 絕情絕意 Affection lost, estranged.
 自由自在 At liberty, free, unconstrained.
 無災無病 Free from trouble and sickness, well and happy.
 滿應滿許 To promise positively, an unreserved promise.
 無冤無仇 Without enmity, on good terms.

無緣無故 Causeless, unprovoked, without a reason.
 狂言狂語 Extravagant language, brag-gadocio; rudeness, incivility.
 捏手捏腳 To walk lightly, to walk stealthily on tip-toe, to tread gingerly. [approval.
 心服口服 Full or hearty assent, cordial
 癡頭癡腦 Lumpish, lubberly; gawky.
 癡頭癡腦 Simple, silly, vacant, maudlin.
 順絲順絡 In a regular and orderly way.
 順情順理 Proper, reasonable, regular.
 有頭有尾 Methodical, systematic.
 一舉一動 In everything, in the whole deportment. [pous.
 大模大樣 Ostentatious, pretentious, pom-pous.
 風言風語 Floating rumors, hearsay.
 無邊無岸 Boundless, illimitable.
 糊裏糊塗 Foolish, inconsiderate, hap-hazard, topsy-turvy.

其中有一多半是纔開蒙的。○這個說話有條有
 今年攬了十八個學生，都是般般小，十來多歲，
 有影兒的事情，他能諷得有頭有尾的。○孫國瑞
 能值四十五吊。○這等唆事的人，真真可惡，並沒
 四五六的楸木棺材，他要五十吊錢，公理公道的，
 假仁假義，臨時就靠急急就不行了。○柳同安有一口
 無法無天。○實心實意的朋友有多少，大概都是
 吵，就是和那個鬧，而且勸不聽，打不怕，打真是
 糊塗的混兩天就是了。○他整成天打不
 事，何必認真，只是睜着一個眼，閉着一個眼，
 糊塗的混兩天就是了。○他整成天打不

- 17 This azure sky has no definite boundary, but is illimitable.
- 18 Why should one be over-conscientious in the affairs of this life? It is better with half-shut eyes to flounder hap-hazard across its narrow span.
- 19 He is all the time getting into a rumpus with somebody; moreover he will not listen to advice, nor is he afraid of a whipping. He is simply incorrigible.
- 20 How few true and faithful friends there are. The great majority are hollow-hearted. When the time of trial comes, they are found wanting.
- 21 Liu T'ung An has a four five six calpa coffin, for which he wants fifty thousand cash. A fair price would be forty-five thousand.
- 22 This class of busy-bodies is truly detestable. They will fabricate a story in all its details, when there is not a shadow of foundation for it.
- 23 Sun Kwoǎ Sui has this year secured a school of eighteen pupils, all good sized boys in their teens, the most of them being beginners.
- 24 This one speaks in good logical order,

糊塗 The same. (s.)
 糊塗 Indistinct, confused, vague.
 無法無天 Lawless, insubordinate, reckless, incorrigible.
 實心實意 Sincere, true and faithful.
 假仁假意 Hypocritical, false, hollow.
 臨時就急 When the trial or test comes, the hour of trial:—Les. 195.
 公理公道 The same:—Les. 195.
 有根有稍 With all its parts, in detail.
 有頭有尾 The same.
 般般小 Half-grown, medium sized.

有條有理 In logical order, systematic.
 有滋有味 Interesting, fascinating, spicy.
 有情有趣 The same. [lous.
 閒坐閒耍 Idle, unemployed, indolent, frivolous.
 閒坐閒玩 The same.
 無理無法 Foolish; unlawful, criminal.
 天街地街 Exaggerated, extravagant, preposterous, bombastic. [respectful.
 不三不四 Insolent, saucy, abusive, disrespectful.
 不得過且過 To evade, to shirk, to slight.
 怯頭怯腦 Faint-hearted, fidgety; green.
 縮頭縮腦 The same.

VOCABULARY.

無趣 Wu² Ch'ü⁴. Out of countenance, mortified, snubbed; no fun in it.
 無干 Wu² kan¹. Unconnected, no part in.
 無涉 She⁴. To ford a stream; to implicate, to concern.

情腸 Ch'ing² ch'ang². Affection, sympathy; feeling.
 自由 Tsü⁴ yu². At liberty, one's own master.
 卜 Pu³. To divine, to guess; a surname.

大城裏頭的人，出去還得留神呢。
 叫你不小心，別說你這縮頭縮腦的樣子，就是久在
 化門外頭，叫扒起小手把口袋裏的錢，扒起吃了去喇，答誰
 這樣的人，我實在不願意和他共事。○今天我在齊
 混事的人，無論做什麼，是得過且過，一點不肯認真，
 不但不肯認錯，而且嘴裏還不三不四的。○有一等
 也是衙天衙地的樣子，叫人不敢實信他。○刀²⁷鳴春
 出許多無理無法的事來。○王老三就是說句實話，
 個不安分守己，愛吃好的，愛穿好的，閒坐閒玩耍，
 理，那個說話有滋有味，兩個人真是棋逢對手。○
 25

and that one is very interesting. The two are really very well matched.

25 Whenever a man departs from the line of duty and learns to love fast living, spending his time in idleness and frivolity, he will presently be guilty of many foolish and unlawful things.

26 Even when Wang the third does speak the truth, he does it in such a bombastic way that one does not venture to believe him.

27 Tiao Wu Ts'un not only will not admit his fault, but he even talks insolently.

28 There is a class of easy-going people who slight everything they do, having no idea of ever doing their best. I dislike exceedingly to work with such people.

29 To-day outside the Ch'i-hwa gate, the money I had in my bag was stolen by a pick-pocket. Ans. That was your own carelessness. Even old residents in the city need to have their wits about them, much more such a clodhopper as you.

沉重 *Ch'en² chung⁴*. Weight; weighty, important, serious, grave, *sedate*.

俯伏 *Fu³ fu²*. To fall on the face, to bow in submission.

謙卑 *Ch'ien¹ pei²*. Meek, humble, modest, *unpretending*.

界限 *Chie⁴ hsien⁴*. Boundary, limit.

岸 *An⁴*. Shore, bank, beach; goal.

棺材 *Kwan¹*. A coffin.

棺材 *Kwan¹ ts'ai²*. A coffin.

唆事 *Soa¹ shi⁴*. To set at variance, to *intermeddle*, to incite a quarrel.

開蒙 *K'ai¹ mêng²*. To enter school for the first time, to give the first lesson.

世間 *Shi⁴ chien¹*. . . . The world, human affairs.

對手 *Tui⁴ shou³*. To encounter an opponent; an opponent, a match, a rival.

衙 *Hsüan⁴*. To brag, to boast; vainglorious, puffed up.

實信 *Shi² hsin⁴*. To believe implicitly, to confide in, to really believe.

掠 *Lüe³*. To rob, to plunder, to raid.

扒 *P'a²*. To lie down flat, to crawl, to sneak:— see *pa¹*.

小掠兒 *Hsiao³ lüe³ ér²*. A petty thief, a pick-pocket. (N.)

起手 *Ch'i³ shou³*. The same. (C.)

扒兒手 *P'a² ér² shou³*. The same. (S.)

NOTES.

2 精神外漏, intelligence developed externally; that is, a precociously intelligent look or expression but with no mind or talent corresponding.

7 有心 或 有心腸, have heart; that is, hopeful and contented, thrifty. The more common meaning of 有心

is, intentional. 有興, have joy; that is, hopeful, cheerful, in good spirits.

12 八面風的話, speech that turns about to the eight points from which the winds blow, specious declamation.

13 整頭整腦 and 癡頭癡腦 are not quite

課五十八百一第

LESSON CLXXXV.

凡¹官場中的事情，本當公事公辦，但如今沒
 有一樣不是有名無實的。○他²們沒說別的，
 淨說了一些家長里短的話。○各³國的政事
 雖不一樣，而究其實，却是大同小異。○這⁴部
 三國志，少頭缺尾的，叫人沒法子看。○莊⁵稼
 人總得起早連睡晚的做，光愛睡懶^早覺，那還
 行嗎。○看⁶不得他說的好，他却^是嘴甜心苦。
 ○老⁷兄這兩天長吁短嘆，心中有什麼難事
 呢。○諸⁸葛亮用兵，真是神出鬼沒的，叫人一
 點也測度不到。○自⁹己專好損人利己，却想

- 1 All legal matters ought to be transacted in accordance with justice, but, at the present time, there is nothing connected with them that is not a sham.
- 2 Their talk was nothing but a lot of scandal.
- 3 Although the governments of different countries are not the same, yet when carefully examined they are found to be alike in the main.
- 4 This copy of the History of the Three Kingdoms is so imperfect that one cannot read it.
- 5 Farmers must work early and late; it will never do to lie abed long in the mornings (like a sluggard).
- 6 Do not be misled by his plausible talk. He has a honeyed tongue but a cruel heart.
- 7 What is troubling you, my friend, that you go sighing around these last few days?
- 8 Chu Kwōā Liang's military strategy was truly marvelous. No one could possibly anticipate his movements.
- 9 Though caring for nothing but to benefit

equivalent. The former gives the idea of a full, fat, expressionless face, the latter that of a doltish, half-witted look.

17 蒼蒼之天, *the heaven which is the blue sky*, as distinguished from Heaven as used for the presiding deity. 之 is not, as commonly, a possessive, but serves rather as a relative or appositional particle.

20 臨事豫急, *approaching the affair and drawing near to the [time of] anxiety*; that is, *when the time of need or trial comes*. The connection shows that 事 is used in the sense of *trouble*.

21 四五六 is used to designate a coffin with bottom four inches thick, sides five inches thick, and top six inches thick. Coffins are made heavy in order to resist decay.

24 棋逢對手, *the chess-player meeting his match*,—said of competitors or opponents who are well matched.

27 不三不四. It is not easy to see how this phrase comes to mean what it does.

29 齊化門 is the more northerly of the two gates in the east wall of Peking. The stone road leading to T'ungchow proceeds from it.

LESSON CLXXXV.

QUADRUPLET PHRASES.

The phrases illustrated in this lesson are such as have the first and third characters either analogues or opposites, the second and fourth being usually related in the same way.

- 有名無實 Illusory, deceptive, unreal, sham.
- 家長里短 Neighborhood gossip, scandal.
- 大同小異 Nearly alike, essentially alike, only slightly different.
- 少頭缺尾 Imperfect, incomplete, defective.
- 起早睡晚 Early and late.

- 起早連晚 The same.
- 嘴甜心苦 Honeyed words but a cruel heart, hypocritical, double-faced, false.
- 長吁短嘆 To sigh, to groan, to lament.
- 神出鬼沒 Marvelous, astonishing, unaccountable.
- 損人利己 To benefit self at the expense of others, to overreach, to defraud.
- 求福免禍 To attain happiness and escape misfortune.

家吵吵鬧鬧的，不成體統。○我們都是一樣的
 跳了槽喇。○夫妻們應當你敬我愛，不可整天
 右想，就是沒有投路奔，但凡有一點投路奔，我早就
 年吃的，全仗着東扯西拉的過日子。○我左思
 敢諫諍之理呢。○他地裏打的糧食，並不穀半
 恒心沒有。○既然是個忠臣，那有貪生怕死，不
 常性。○既然大事，無論做甚麼有始無終，一點
 人不能成全大事，無論做甚麼有始無終，一點
 鳳雛作一個縣官，豈不是大材小用嗎。○那個
 這幾個錢，你可以這樣浪費嗎。○劉玄德使
 着求福免禍。○你父親東跑西顛，豈是容易掙

yourself at the expense of others, you yet hope to be happy and escape misfortune.
 10 Has it been an easy thing for your father to earn by incessant toil these few cash, that you should squander them in this way?
 11 When Liu Hsien Tê sent P'ang Fêng Ch'ü to be a district magistrate, was it not a case of putting great abilities to an unworthy use?
 12 That man will never accomplish anything great. Everything he does is left unfinished. He hasn't a particle of perseverance.
 13 If you are a faithful minister, how can you decline to reprove [the Emperor] simply because you are afraid of losing your life?
 14 The grain he gets from his land is not enough for half a year's consumption; his chief dependence for a living is in borrowing this to pay that.
 15 In spite of all my planning I find no opening. If there had been the least chance, I would have thrown up my position long ago.
 16 Husband and wife should love and

東跑西顛 To run hither and thither, to bustle, to toil, to be at great pains.

東奔西跑 The same. [talent.
 大有材小用 Waste or misuse of materials or
 貪生怕死 Unfinished, abortive. [to duty.
 東扯西拉 Clinging to life, preferring life
 左思右想 Borrowing this to pay that,
 by hook and crook.

左思右想 To cast about in every direction, in a quandary, at one's wits' end.

你敬我愛 Mutual respect and affection.
 厚此薄彼 To treat one better than another, to be partial.

翻來覆去 This way and that, over and over, again and again.

打爹罵娘 To maltreat father and mother.
 隱惡揚善 To conceal the evil and proclaim the good.

口是心非 Deceitful, double-faced, false, hypocritical.

推前擦後 To evade, to shirk, to wriggle

辭前挨後 The same. [ger, safe.
 有益無損 Beneficial and involving no dan-
 有言差語 Misunderstanding, sharp or unpleasant words.

嫌貧愛富 To slight the poor and pay court to the rich.

大公無私 Just and equal, equitable, even-handed.
 大賞善罰惡 To reward the good and punish the evil, to judge and administer justice.

改惡從善 To reform, to turn over a new leaf.

轉禍為福 To turn misfortune into happiness. [piness.
 改頭換面 To change, to transform, to metamorphose.

改頭換面 The same.
 似是而非 Specious pretence, fallacious.

公事公辦 In accordance with justice :—
 Note (1).

現世現報 Present or manifest retribution.
 有憑有據 Certain, veritable, incontestable, well established.

人、在你跟前也都沒有錯處，你怎麼該厚此薄彼呢？○你們翻來覆去，是要把這個不是推在我身上，我還就是覺着一點不是沒有。○都說沒有靈神，你看李滋源常常打爹罵娘，給雷一下打死了，這不是現世報嗎？○天下揚善而又揚惡的人很多，真真能以隱惡揚善的，却很稀少。○這等口是心非的人，實在討人厭惡。○說不出他有別的好藥。○鐵鏽的功用，能以補血，乃是一種有益無損的好藥。○一年三百六十天常在一塊兒，那能一

- respect each other, and not violate propriety by continually scolding and quarrelling.
- 17 We are all on the same footing, and no one of us has been guilty of any offence against you. Why then should you treat some better than others?
 - 18 You are twisting this way and that way in order to throw the blame on me, and yet I cannot feel that I have done anything wrong.
 - 19 Everybody says there are no [puissant] gods; but just look how Li Tsi Yūan, who was constantly abusing his father and mother, was struck dead by lightning. Was not this a manifest retribution?
 - 20 There are plenty of people in the world who will spread abroad both good and evil reports, but very few who will really conceal the evil and tell the good.
 - 21 This class of deceitful people is very detestable.
 - 22 I cannot say that he has any other fault, save that he is always disposed to shirk, and hasn't a particle of energy.
 - 23 The effect of iron rust is to invigorate the blood. It is an excellent tonic, and free from all danger.
 - 24 How can those who are constantly

VOCABULARY.

官場 *Kwan¹ ch'ang³*. Governmental offices and business; legal, official.

政事 *Cheng⁴ shi⁴*. Government, administration of law, civil affairs.

懶漢 *Lan³ han⁴*. A lazy fellow, a sluggard.

吁 *Hsü¹*. Ugh! humph; to sigh, to groan.

難事 *Nan² shi⁴*. Difficulty, trouble, embarrassment.

玄 *Hsüan²*. Dark, abstruse, profound.

龐 *P'ang²*. A lofty house; a surname.

雛 *Ch'u²*. A chick, a young bird, a fledgeling.

常性 *Ch'ang² hsing⁴*. "The gift of continuance," perseverance, grit.

諫 *Chien⁴*. To reprove, to urge to reform.

諍 *Cheng⁴*. To remonstrate with a superior.

諫諍. To reprove and advise a ruler or superior, to remonstrate.

投路 *T'ou² lu⁴*. Opening, resort, resource, chance, opportunity.

跳槽 *T'iao⁴ ts'ao²*. To seek a better situation, to throw up a position, to strike:—Note (15).

神靈 *Shên² ling²*. Divine intelligences, the gods; divinity.

稀少 *Hsi¹ shao²*. Very few, rare.

希緊趁 *Chin³ ch'ên⁴*. Diligent, industrious, energetic.

着緊 *Choa² chin³*. The same.

功用 *Kung¹ yung⁴*. Effect, result, operation.

退親 *T'ui⁴ ch'in¹*. To break a marriage contract. tract.

賴婚 *Lai⁴ hun¹*. To seek to evade the fulfilment of a marriage contract.

訟師 *Sung⁴ shi¹*. A pettifogger:—Note (27).

轉動 *Chwan³ tung⁴*. To revolve, to turn, to turn over.

二二忽忽 *Er⁴ hu¹*. Hesitating, wavering, distinct, confused.

非的事情轉怪若是大是婚親如興點
 的理他動不能大公這不今旺言
 來竟乾坤得改惡公不是楊家就
 把人頭坤沙惡從無私明是家託
 弄的換手景善從自明嫌三兩
 的影面段雲當這就必貧愛落起
 疑二說明明認師哪這就賞富喇
 疑二說明明認師哪這就賞富喇
 惑忽一些是有憑有據的
 惑忽一些是有憑有據的
 了。是而的

associated together, avoid having some little misunderstandings?
 25 Some time ago, when he saw that the Yang family were prospering, he made several proposals and eventually betrothed his daughter to them; and now that the Yang family are in adversity, he wants to break the engagement. Is not this a clear case of despising the poor and paying court to the rich?
 26 Since the ways of Heaven are perfectly just, the good will certainly be rewarded and the evil punished. If, therefore, you will reform and practice virtue, blessings instead of calamities will be the result.
 27 No wonder that Sha Ching Yün follows the profession of law. He is a man of really transcendent ability. The most clearly established facts are so entirely transformed by his specious arguments that one's mind is all in confusion.

NOTES.

1 公事公辦, *public business should be characterized by justice*. It is worthy of note that 公, which properly means *public*, comes also to mean *just*, implying perhaps that that only which is public, is supposed to be just. 公事公辦 is also used with the meaning,—*That which pertains to all should be managed in common, or with the concurrence of all*.

2 家長里短, *family long, alley short*; that is, the criticisms of each other's shortcomings made by those living in the same family or in the same alley.

4 三國志, a historical novel written during the Yüan dynasty by 羅貫中. The narrative includes the chief characters and events of the period during which the rival houses of 魏, 蜀 and 吳 were struggling for the mastery,—the heroic epoch of Chinese history. It is regarded by the Chinese as their best novel. It is written in easy *wén-li*, with an occasional flavor of Mandarin.

8 神出鬼沒, *as gods and demons appear and disappear*; that is, in the surprising and unaccountable manner in which gods and demons appear and act and then as suddenly vanish.

9 求福免禍, *seek blessings and avoid misfortunes*; that is, attain the blessings conferred by the gods on the virtuous and escape the misfortunes sent on the vicious. Both 禍 and 福 refer primarily to the awards of the gods, as is indicated in the common radical with which they are written,—the radical under which are classed all the characters denoting divine beings, acts, offices and worship.

11 劉玄德, better known as 劉備, began life as a seller of straw shoes, but rose to be a fellow soldier with the famous Chang Fei and Kwan Yü, in the period of the "Three Kingdoms." He was known as 漢中王 until he proclaimed himself Emperor in A. D. 220. He is known in history by his imperial title 昭烈帝, of the 蜀漢

dynasty. 龐鳳雛 was an officer of remarkable ability under him, whom he at first appointed as a local magistrate, before he had learned his commanding talents.

13 忠臣 The Chinese theory of the duty of a faithful minister is, that in the case of dangerous imperial errors or vices, he ought to reprove his sovereign even at the risk of his life.

15 跳了槽, *jumped the trough*, a figure taken from animals' feeding, when they leave an empty trough and strive for a full one.

18 我還就是覺着. The translation scarcely conveys the full force of this expression. *But you see, I think*, if spoken with proper emphasis, will approximate it.

19 神靈, *divine intelligences*,—a term commonly used to designate the whole class of (supposed) divine beings. 靈神, *a live or efficient god*; that is, one who has the knowledge, power and will to execute judgment on those who offend him, and to hear the prayers of those who pray to him.

23 補血, *to supply the deficiencies of the blood, to invigorate the blood*.

25 退親 differs from 賴婚, in that the former may be justifiable, but the latter never is.

26 天道 sometimes means *the weather*, but here it means *the way of Heaven*; that is, *the providential government of Heaven*. The four phrases here used are stock phrases in Chinese moral teaching, and well illustrate the terseness and vivacity which such ready made phrases impart to the style.

27 訟師 is one who hangs about yaméns and fattens on the fees he gets for giving advice to anxious litigants, as well as for assisting them in various illicit ways by collusion with the underlings. Such business is illegal, and such men are held in detestation by magistrates. Lawyers or counsellors in the Western sense are not known in Chinese courts.

他打○不九了。事我思他¹³○
 再不每¹⁹漏成。○情三萬的倚¹²
 三過月○他¹⁷好拳想、年若
 再點掙別¹⁸一辦、兩那紀有
 四兒不大大家若脚、知太個
 的來。上大意人、是打老太、一三
 央○三意過都七七七了天說差差
 求、我²⁰千了、一頭叔股個爺話二兩
 也本兩依點八八八不有顛錯錯、
 只得愛錢、看務的、樂一定倒我
 給管君君十沒就乎。的○安四的。來
 他他七三有有、叫○排。○找
 調調的民八真人一¹⁶條○任¹⁴你
 處說閒八七九是難條○你
 調調事、的、不感十插線他¹⁵你
 處說。但還行。水子手的叫千○

- 12 If it turns out that there are any mistakes, I will hold you responsible.
- 13 He is too old ; his speech is rambling.
- 14 Prepare and plan as you will, you will find that the purposes of God will still come to pass.
- 15 I administered a few kicks and blows, which gave me a sense of supreme satisfaction.
- 16 A systematic piece of business is easy to manage, but in a complicated affair it is hard to know where to take hold.
- 17 There is not an immoral member in the whole family. It is a clear case of nine parts in ten (no leakage).
- 18 Don't be overconfident. In my opinion there are eight or nine chances in ten that it will not work.
- 19 Hardly earning as much as two or three thousand cash per month, when divided up I find it insufficient to make the ends meet.
- 20 I am loth to have anything to do with his affairs, but he has importuned me over and over again, so that I cannot but speak a word for him.
- 21 This collector was most unrelenting, and he came, too, just when I had no

顛三倒四 Inverted, disordered, confused, rambling, incoherent.
千思萬想 To devise various plans, to think anxiously, to scheme.
三拳兩脚 A few blows and kicks, a belaboring, a drubbing.
七股八杈 At loose ends, heterogeneous, complicated, tangled.
七杈八股 The same.
七頭八杈 The same.
十子九成 Nine out of ten grow and mature.
十有八九 Eight or nine chances in ten, "ten to one."
三千兩吊 Two or three thousand cash.
君三民七 To divide up, to distribute :—
 Note (19).
君七民八 The same.
再三再四 Again and again, over and over again, time and again.

七拚八湊 To scrape or get together, to collect, to gather up.
吆三喝二 To cry out again and again ; clamor, hue and cry.
吆二喝三 The same.
千辛萬苦 Toils, privations, hardships, inconveniences.
連三疊四 One thing upon another, piled up, in close succession.
連三帶四 The same.
三言兩語 A few words or sentences, in short, summary.
七折八扣 Seven or eight parts in ten :—
 Note (26).
七顛八倒 In confusion, topsy-turvy.
七嘴八舌 Conflicting opinions, miscellaneous criticisms.
三日打魚兩日曬網 Unprofitable, unproductive.

有錢討賬的實在利害，又趕上家裏沒
 五百錢，好歹撮弄他走了。快給他的對付了
 飯打發他走罷，叫他儘自快給他的對付了
 甚麼呢。○買賣人南東北西幾年的生意不
 巴結，無非爲利起見。○跑跑這幾年，不
 好，又加上男婚女嫁，連三帶四的辦事，實
 在殼我架弄的。○可惜昨夜我在家，若
 是我在家裏，三言兩語盤倒那先生，管保
 有場好笑。○放賬的買賣，到還錢的時候，

money in the house; by borrowing of one and another and putting odds and ends together I made up five hundred cash, and managed to send him off the best way I could.
 22 Quickly give him a little cold victuals and send him away. Why keep him here crying after us without ceasing?
 23 The merchant travels hither and thither, subjecting himself to all sorts of inconvenience, solely for the sake of gain.
 24 Business has been poor these few years, and besides all this, my sons and daughters have been getting married, piling up matters on me until it is about all I can stand.
 25 I am sorry I was not at home last night. If I had been there, I could have wound up the gentleman in a few words, and there would have been a good laugh, I'll warrant you.
 26 In doing a credit business, when pay-day comes, what with small cash

VOCABULARY.

陳 *Ch'én²*. To spread out in order, to state; stale, used up; a *surname*.
 執拗 *Chì² miu⁴*. Obstinate, self-opinionated, pig-headed.
 拘板 *Chū¹ pan³*. Stiff, set, pig-headed.
 櫻 *Ying¹*. The cherry.
 櫻桃 *Ying¹ t'ao²*. The cherry, cherries.
 蒂 *Ti³*. The peduncle or stem of a flower or fruit.
 把 *Pa⁴*. A handle, anything to hold by:—see 蒂把.
 蒂把. A stem of flower or fruit.
 亦 *I⁴*. And, also, moreover, likewise. (w.)
 插手 *Ch'a¹ shou³*. To take or catch hold; to meddle, to interfere.

外務 *Wai⁴ wu⁴*. That which is outside one's calling or duty, misdoing, immorality.
 大意 *Ta⁴ i⁴*. Chief idea; sanguine, elated, confident.
 要賬 *Yao⁴ chang⁴*. To collect debts or accounts.
 起見 *Ch'i³ chien⁴*. With the object in view, for the sake of,—always stands at the end of a clause.
 架弄 *Chia⁴ lung⁴*. To endure, to stand; to pretend, to brag.
 放賬 *Fang⁴ chang⁴*. To sell on credit.
 扣 *K'ou⁴*. To deduct, to discount; to hook, to buckle, to button.
 主事 *Chu³ shi⁴*. To control, to superintend, to be the head.

NOTES.

4 不成材料, *not fit for material, not fit for use.*
 6 七抓八拏 sometimes means, *to snatch or meddle with things in an uncivil or disorderly way; sometimes it means, to take in a surreptitious or underhand way.*
 8 The dog is dissatisfied, because the master of the house is so economical that nothing is left for him to eat.
 15 不亦樂乎, *is it not a pleasure?* an expression quoted from the Analects, and there used of the pleasure experienced in meeting a friend from a distance, but here

applied in a humorous way to the satisfaction felt when an enemy or an opponent is put to the worse.
 16 一條線的事情, *an affair on one thread; that is, following one chalk line,—that which is connected in a regular order, "one line of things."*
 17 十子九成, *Of the seeds sown, nine out of ten grow and yield grain. 盛水不漏, the vessel does not leak; that is, all profit and no loss.*

進若要有能行一人眉一錢又又有
 益三日恒常嗎。人眼辦○扣底毛小
 必有打心性○是沒有。就弄的好好的七錢
 其魚能○人七○家²⁸顛八折八扣的並
 限兩以長忍久耐、將來、倘總還事主事一點人賺

and short count, cutting off fractions and deducting discounts, you realize only seven or eight parts in ten, so that finally there is no profit left.

27 A straightforward matter in the hands of an incompetent man, soon gets so involved that there is no head or tail to it.

28 Though the family be numerous yet it has but one head. If each one wants to have things his own way, it will be impossible to get along.

29 In whatever he undertakes, a man should be persevering and exercise patience. If he spends three days fishing and two days drying his nets, he will make but little progress.

19 君三民七, *the king three parts and the subject seven*,—referring originally to the proportion paid in taxes, but commonly used of apportioning anything according to the requirements of the case. In the Southern form, the numbers seven and eight seem to be used at random. 點, besides its many other meanings, means also to *count out in order, to check over*. This is its meaning in the expression 打不過點來; that is, *insufficient to meet all of the various uses for which it is required*.

23 Different dialects give us nearly all the changes that can be rung on 東西南北, with 跑 and 奔,—all meaning the same thing.

24 男婚女嫁, *the male taking a wife and the female marrying a husband*; that is, the marriage of sons and daughters.

26 小錢 Thin, imperfect cash are in the South called

毛錢. In paying cash in quantity, especially when paying accounts at the end of the year, it is a common thing to pass off strings of cash that are 短數, *short in count*. 抹零 The debtor pays the round numbers, neglecting the odd numbers and expects, indeed in a sort compels, the creditor to accept that much less. 扣底 The sales having been in each case for small amounts, really represent 滿錢, *full count*, but the payment being in the round sum and consequently subject to 底子, the 底子 becomes in fact a discount. 七折八扣, *cut down to seven or eight parts in ten*, is here used to summarize the losses, and may include, besides those here mentioned, unsaleable goods taken in exchange, partial payments, insolvent debtors, etc., by all of which the gross amount is discounted.

29 長忍久耐 is a transposition of 長久忍耐, after the model of the phrases in Les. 185.

LESSON CLXXXVII.

INFERENCEAL PHRASES.

總而言之 In a word, in conclusion, to sum up.

總之 In general, to sum up. [evident.]

如此看來 Thus we see, from which it is

從此看來 From which we see, from which it appears or is evident.

由此觀之 From which it appears, thus it is evident.

由是觀之 The same,—是 being used for 此, which is its original book sense.

這樣看起來 or 這麼看起來 From which it is evident, thus it appears, from which it would seem.

這麼說起來 From which statement we see, in such a case.

這等說起來 The same.

VOCABULARY.

誠命 *Chie⁴ ming⁴*.....Commandments.

噲 *Ch'iang⁴*. To cough, to irritate the throat, to choke, to suffocate, to smoke out.

蚊帳 *Wen² chang⁴*.....A mosquito net.

波斯 *Pot¹ si¹*.....Persia.

攻打 *Kung¹ ta³*.....To attack, to fight.

尼 *Ni²*.....To follow, to accord with; a nun.

希利尼 *Hsi¹ li⁴ ni²*.....Greece.

課七十八百一第

LESSON CLXXXVII.

上¹ 帝¹ 的¹ 誠¹ 命¹ 雖¹ 有¹ 十¹ 條¹ 總¹ 而¹ 言¹ 之¹ 却¹ 都¹ 包¹ 在¹ 一¹ 個¹ 愛¹ 字¹ 裏¹ 面¹ ○ 蚊¹ 子¹ 雖¹ 便¹ 意¹ 却¹ 是¹ 年¹ 年¹ 費¹ 草¹ 用¹ 蚊¹ 帳¹ 雖¹ 貴¹ 却¹ 只¹ 一¹ 年¹ 花¹ 錢¹ 從¹ 此¹ 看¹ 來¹ 還¹ 是¹ 掛¹ 蚊¹ 帳¹ 上¹ 算¹ ○ 當³ 初³ 波³ 斯³ 王³ 用³ 一³ 百³ 萬³ 兵³ 攻³ 打³ 希³ 利³ 尼³ 國³ 倒³ 被³ 希³ 利³ 尼³ 的³ 二³ 萬³ 兵³ 打³ 敗³ 了³ 如³ 此³ 看³ 來³ 兵³ 是³ 貴³ 乎³ 精³ 不³ 貴³ 乎³ 多³ ○ 常⁴ 見⁴ 弟⁴ 兄⁴ 們⁴ 爭⁴ 鬧⁴ 彼⁴ 此⁴ 連⁴ 話⁴ 都⁴ 不⁴ 說⁴ 一⁴ 到⁴ 和⁴ 外⁴ 人⁴ 打⁴ 起⁴ 架⁴ 來⁴ 也⁴ 不⁴ 論⁴ 誰⁴ 惹⁴ 的⁴ 事⁴ 就⁴ 都⁴ 一⁴ 齊⁴ 動⁴ 手⁴ 由⁴ 此⁴ 看⁴ 來⁴ 弟⁴ 兄⁴ 總⁴ 比⁴ 外⁴ 人⁴ 更⁴ 親⁴ ○ 王⁵ 元⁵ 吉⁵ 那⁵ 個⁵ 人⁵ 太⁵ 靠⁵ 不⁵ 住⁵ 喇⁵ 前⁵ 幾⁵ 天⁵ 我⁵ 託⁵ 他⁵ 一⁵ 件⁵ 頂⁵ 要⁵ 緊⁵ 的⁵ 事⁵ 情⁵ 他⁵ 也⁵ 滿⁵ 口⁵ 應⁵ 承⁵ 了⁵ 歸⁵ 根⁵ 他⁵ 却⁵ 一⁵ 點⁵ 沒⁵ 辦⁵ 把⁵ 我⁵ 的⁵ 事⁵ 情⁵ 耽⁵ 誤⁵ 了⁵ 答⁵ 這⁵ 麼⁵ 樣⁵ 看⁵ 起⁵ 來⁵ 他⁵ 原⁵ 不⁵ 是⁵ 你⁵ 的⁵ 心⁵ 腹⁵ 人⁵ 你⁵ 怎⁵ 麼⁵ 敢⁵ 重⁵ 託⁵ 他⁵ 呢⁵ ○ 那⁶ 些⁶ 好⁶ 酒⁶ 的⁶ 人⁶ 時⁶ 刻⁶ 手⁶ 不⁶ 離⁶ 盅⁶ 盅⁶ 不⁶ 離⁶ 嘴⁶ 一⁶ 到⁶ 喝⁶ 醉⁶ 了⁶ 輕⁶ 者⁶ 耽⁶ 誤⁶ 事⁶ 情⁶ 重⁶

- 1 Although the commandments of God are ten, yet they are all summarily comprehended in the one word love.
- 2 Although smoking out mosquitoes is cheaper, yet grass has to be bought every year; although using a net involves a greater outlay, the expense is once for all; from which it appears that using a net is, after all, the more economical.
- 3 Once upon a time the King of Persia attacked Greece with a million of soldiers, and yet they were defeated by twenty thousand Greeks; from which it is evident that the great desideratum with soldiers is skill and valor, not numbers.
- 4 You often see brothers quarreling until they will not even speak to each other, but as soon as a quarrel arises with an outsider, no matter who is in the fault, they all pitch in together; from which it appears that, after all, brothers are nearer than strangers.
- 5 That man Wang Yüan Chi is too unreliable. A few days since I entrusted some very important business to him, he also promised most positively, and yet after all he did not attend to it, and my business went by default. Ans. From this it would seem that he was not your sincere friend. What possessed you to put such confidence in him?
- 6 These wine-bibbers who never know when to leave off their cups, when once they get drunk, at the very least, neglect their business, and in more serious cases, involve themselves

貴乎 *Kwei⁴ hu¹*. To value, to estimate highly, to regard as valuable.
 甘美 *Kan¹ mei³*. Delicious, luscious.
 亂性 *Lan⁴ hsing⁴*. To confuse the mind, to disorder the faculties.
 傷身 *Shang¹ shên¹*. To wound the body; to injure the health, to undermine the constitution.
 要虛子 *Shwa³ hsü¹ tsi³*. To fall into dissipated habits, to sow one's wild oats. (N.)

要匪類 *Shwa³ fei³ lei⁴*. The same. (C.)
 不成常 *Pu⁴ ch'êng² ch'ang²*. To leave the path of virtue, to become dissipated. (S.)
 折騰 *Chê² t'êng²*. To spoil, to ruin; to use up, to squander. (N.)
 踢弄 *T'ü¹ lung⁴*. To spoil, to ruin; to squander, to sell at a sacrifice. (C.)
 步行 *Pu⁴ hsing²*. To walk, to go on foot.
 擎 *Tun¹*. To strike, to thump, to jolt.

者還要惹下大禍。從此看來，酒味雖然甘美，却是亂性傷身子的毒藥。○于小喜不要虛子，把房產田地都弄弄淨了，他媽說他，他說還有老婆孩子沒弄掉，喇，這樣看來，連他的老婆孩子將來也是要弄掉的。○要僱轎他嫌太貴，坐小車他嫌笨的慌，東洋車又去不了，他自己也不能步行，你說怎麼樣呢。答：這等說起來，他只能以不去就是了。○要想叫兒子孝順，就不該打罵妻子，因為兒子見母親挨打受罵，就必埋怨父親，既然埋怨父親，還能孝敬父親嗎？而且人這樣輕看妻子，久而久之，兒子也必輕看母親，既然輕看母親，還能孝敬母親嗎？由此觀之，凡苦待妻子的人，就是教導兒子不孝順了。○若中國只安幾個砲局子，開幾個船廠，却不重西國學問，使民間設

in very great misfortunes; from which we see that although the taste of wine is luscious, yet it is a poison that disorders the faculties of the mind and undermines the health.

7 Yü Hsiao Hsi, becoming dissipated, squandered all his houses and lands. When his mother scolded him, he replied, "I have not yet disposed of my wife and children." From this it looks as if he probably would finally sell even his wife and children and squander the money.

8 He is not willing to spend the money to hire a chair; the jolting of a wheelbarrow he will not put up with; a jinricksha cannot go, and he is himself unable to walk. What do you think can be done? Ans. In these circumstances there is no way but for him to give up going.

9 If you wish your son to be dutiful, you must not maltreat your wife; for if a son sees his mother ill-treated, he will reproach his father; and reproaching his father, how can he honor him? Moreover if a man thus dishonors his wife, by and by the son will disregard his mother; and when he disregards her, how can he honor her? Thus it is evident that whoever maltreats his wife, teaches his son to be undutiful.

10 If China merely establishes a few arsenals and builds a few navy yards, but does not lay stress on Western science, and have the people establish scientific schools, she can never make her army efficient; for without Western learning, although the people

苦待 *K'u³ tai⁴*. To treat with severity, to maltreat.

船廠 *Ch'wan² ch'ang³*. A ship yard, a navy yard.

設立 *Shé⁴ lí⁴*. To set up, to establish.

強兵 *Ch'iang² ping¹*. To secure an efficient soldiery, to strengthen the army.

製 *Chì⁴*. To cut out, to fabricate, to make.

製造 *Chì⁴ tsao⁴*. To manufacture.

軍器 *Chün¹ ch'í⁴*. Implements of war, arms.

精妙 *Ching¹ miao⁴*. The highest excellence, exquisite, ingenious.

運用 *Yün⁴ yung⁴*. To make use of, to apply, to adopt.

能人 *Néng² jén²*. A man of ability.

武備 *Wu³ pei⁴*. Military force or strength; to recruit and organise troops.

臥房 *Woi⁴ fang²*. A bedroom.

新郎 *Hsin¹ lang²*. A bridegroom.

新官 *Hsin¹ lang² kwan¹*. The same. (s.)

新婦 *Hsin¹ fu⁴*. A bride.

洞房 *Tung⁴ fang²*. A bridal chamber.

嚴密 *Yen² mi⁴*. Private, retired; secret, close, non-committal.

立格物學房，斷乎不能強兵，因為若沒有西國學問，雖能製造軍器，也不能精妙，雖有汽機，也不能運用，雖有大砲，也不能拿準頭，雖是兵多將廣，也沒有多少能人，總而言之，學問乃是武備的根本，倘若學問興起，國家自然就強盛了。○人睡覺的房子，名謂臥房，新新郎和新娘子，的臥房，名謂洞房，這麼說起來，洞房比臥房，格外有個嚴密肅靜的意思，又格外有個仙境的滋味。○到了親友家，就是見了底下人，也有個稱呼，比方看門的稱門公，買東西的稱買辦，管賬的稱先生，料理家務的稱管家，廚子稱廚師，伺候書房的稱書僮，其餘做零碎事的，稱打雜的，或稱帮忙的，就是叫一聲老張老李，也無不可，總之，見人應當和氣謙恭，不可一味的高傲自大，反倒叫人瞧不起了。

may manufacture arms, they cannot make really good ones; although they have engines, they will not be able to use them; although they have great guns, they will not know how to fire them accurately; although they have a multitude of soldiers and numerous generals, yet there will be few men of ability. In a word, learning is the foundation of military strength. If learning flourishes, the nation, as a natural consequence, will become powerful.

11 The room where one sleeps is called a bed-chamber, the bedroom of the bridegroom and bride is called the bridal chamber; from which we see that a nuptial chamber, as compared with a bed-chamber, suggests the idea of privacy and quiet, and has also a specially romantic flavor.

12 When you visit the family of a relative or friend, even those of inferior station whom you meet, should be addressed in a becoming manner. For example, the man who watches the door should be addressed as porter; the man who makes purchases, as butler; the man who keeps the accounts, as clerk; the man who oversees the affairs of the household, as steward; the cook, as professor of the culinary art; the school-room waiter, as footman; and others who are men-of-all-work, as waiters or attendants. Even to address as old Chang, or old Li, is quite admissible. In general, you should treat all you meet with courtesy and deference, and not exhibit a haughty and self-important spirit, thereby incurring people's contempt.

肅 Su⁴.....Reverence, awe, dread; courteous.
 肅靜 Su⁴ ching⁴..... Quiet, undisturbed.
 境 Ching⁴. Boundary; abode; neighborhood, district, place; state, condition.
 仙境 Hsien¹ ching⁴. Fairy-land; romantic, unreal.
 親友 Ch'in¹ yu³.....Relatives and friends.
 門公 Mên² kung¹..... A doorkeeper, a porter.
 佬 Lao³..... A burly old man.
 門佬 Mên² lao³..... A doorkeeper. (s.)

買辦 Mai³ pan⁴.....A butler, a purveyor.
 僮 T'ung²..... A slave boy; a slave girl.
 書僮 Shu¹ t'ung². A school-room servitor or attendant.
 打雜 Ta³ tsa². To serve as man-of-all-work, to act as coolie or waiter.
 謙恭 Ch'ien¹ kung¹. Respectful, deferential, unassuming.
 高傲 Kao¹ ao⁴..... Proud, haughty, imperious.
 自大 Tsi⁴ ta⁴.....Self-important.

課八十八百一第

LESSON CLXXXVIII.

紳⁶路、怎人兒尙有。父爺得、難倘¹
 衿焉麼家們且○子兒嫉以若
 富能樣呢。扎他⁴們、妒分的。妯
 戶消解的○掙做連比。的。媪
 們、了喫作⁵不男爺一誰○們
 常、他齋惡住、子兒個都夫²不生
 有的念的何漢們、修大。妻生
 仗罪經、人况碰德的○們外
 着惡修們、你見的丁³若心、
 勢呢。橋任是這也學不家
 力○補憑婦娘個沒祿相是

- 1 If sisters-in-law do not become estranged, the family is not easily divided.
- 2 If husband and wife lose confidence in each other, no jealousy can compare with theirs.
- 3 Ting Hsue Lu, father and sons—there is not one well-behaved man amongst them.
- 4 If he, a man, when placed in these circumstances could not endure it, how much less could you who are a woman!
- 5 How impossible it is for evil doers to escape the consequences of their sins, how much soever they may abstain from meats and repeat prayers, build bridges and repair roads!
- 6 The literati and the wealthy frequent-

NOTES.

1 總而言之 is a book phrase, but is in constant use in Mandarin. It usually stands after, and sums up several particulars, but is so used in this sentence that it may be fairly rendered, *summarily*.

2 Mosquitoes are smoked out by burning a coarse rope made of fragrant weeds, which will smoulder a long time, giving out a plentiful smoke, that drives out the mosquitoes, but does not seriously inconvenience the sleepers.

3 精 is here used to express that which is held to constitute the highest excellence in a soldier, viz., perfection in discipline and skill in the art of war. 貴乎 is slightly bookish.

5 心腹人, *heart-belly man*; that is, one whose friendship enters into his innermost feelings, and hence is real and sincere.

6 手不離盞盞不離嘴, a ready made couplet, vividly describing one who is excessively given to drink.

7 It is not an uncommon thing for gamblers and opium smokers to sell their wives and children in order to get the

means of gratifying their evil propensities.

9 This sentence was written by a Christian. It is doubtful whether any heathen Chinese ever constructed such an argument.

10 兵多將廣 *soldiers many and generals abundant*,—a ready-made phrase expressing the idea of an extensive military organization.

11 新郎 and 新婦 are both decidedly bookish, being rarely if ever used in colloquial. 新郎官 is, however, used colloquially in the South.

12 底下人, a general term signifying inferiors, and including subordinates of all classes. 先生 is used in this case, because the service involves writing. 書僮 is a book term and characterizes an office only known in the houses of the very wealthy. 帮忙的 applies to a servant or helper hired for the special occasion. Such a mode of address as 老張, would only be allowable in case the parties were acquainted with each other.

LESSON CLXXXVIII.

SPECIAL USES OF CERTAIN WORDS.

們 Though usually found only with the personal pronouns, 們 is sometimes used, as noted in Les. 3, with other words denoting persons. In this lesson are illustrated some of its more unusual, but perfectly legitimate uses.

甚 In Mandarin books, 甚 is not unfrequently found used alone in the sense of 甚麼. It is simply an attempt to write the colloquial *sha*²,

which, as noted in Les. 17, is a widely used colloquial contraction of 甚麼. Thus used 甚 should be read *sha*², as it is spoken.

嘛 This character is occasionally found in books, as a colloquial contraction for 什麼. More commonly this contracted form is written simply 麼, which in this case is read *ma* in the North and *mé* in the South.

伯們的、外無泡。那的的欺
 的、姪、真、這、不、○、小、响、的、官、壓
 往、兒、是、些、家、每⁸、童、了、員、民
 上、們、熱、人、家、年、們、一、們、人、的、
 推、孫、鬧、們、懸、燈、臉、聲、也、的、若
 論、子、無、沒、燈、節、上、潰、濺、是、若
 就、們、比、○、一、彩、幾、了、好、樣、着
 是、爺、分、弟⁹、個、惹、天、幾、些、的、那
 爺、親、兄、不、得、買、個、油、治、種
 們、的、們、要、城、賣、燻、點、罪、不
 外、老、和、姊、看、廂、人、漿、子、○、狗
 公、爺、叔、妹、看、內、們、大、把、勺、烹⁷、情

ly take advantage of their position to oppress the common people. If, however, they happen on an official who is no respecter of persons, he punishes them just the same as he would any one else.

7 With a sudden report there spurted up several drops of boiling oil and scalded the faces of the young acolytes, raising a number of large serous blisters.

8 Every year during the several days of the feast of lanterns, the business houses all hang up lanterns and transparencies, exciting everybody in the whole city and suburbs with a desire to see, and making a season of unequaled interest.

9 Brothers and sisters, and nephews and grandchildren, are all divided into those of the first degree of consanguinity and those more distant. Ascending to elders, the same principle

怎 Normally, 怎 always takes either 麼 or 樣 after it (and 怎樣 is really a contraction for 怎麼樣), but in books it is sometimes used alone, rarely in colloquial, and is then generally followed either by 能, 好 or 敢.

咋 A colloquial contraction of 作什麼, chiefly, though not exclusively, used as a reply when another calls, as "What is it?" is often used in English. It is extensively used in Northern and Central Mandarin, but not in Southern. It must

be distinguished from 喳 cha, which is Pekingese, and is simply an affirmative reply.

等 When 等 stands at the end of a clause, either alone or joined with 類 or other similar word, it means, and such, and the like, and so on, including all of the class of persons or things referred to. When 等 is doubled at the end of an enumeration of particulars, it is equivalent to etc. When joined to a pronoun, as in 伊等, it is practically equivalent to a plural.

VOCABULARY.

嚇 Ma². A colloquial character used as a contraction for 什麼:—see Sub.
 咋 Cha⁴. A hoarse noise; a contraction for 作什麼:—see Sub.
 外心 Wai⁴ hsin¹. Disaffection, alienation, estrangement.
 修德 Hsiu¹ tē². To maintain a good character, to be virtuous, to be well-behaved.
 齋 Chai¹. To abstain from; fasting, penance; dignified.
 喫齋 Ch'ī¹ chai¹. To abstain from meat.
 念經 Nien⁴ ching¹. To repeat prayers.
 衿 Chin¹. The same as 襟.
 紳衿 Shēn¹ chin¹. The literary class, the gentry.

富戶 Fu⁴ hu⁴. The wealthy.
 民人 Min² jēn². Common men, the people.
 治罪 Chi¹ tsui⁴. To condemn, to punish.
 烹 P'êng¹. To boil, to decoct, to scald.
 勺 P'êng¹. A report, an explosion.
 濺 Chien⁴. To dash up, to sputter, to spurt; to tinge, to soil.
 潰濺 Tsan⁴. To splash, to spurt, to sputter.
 燻 Liao². To scorch, to burn; to illuminate; a signal light.
 燻漿泡 Liao² chiang¹ p'ao⁴. A blister raised by fire.
 燈節 Tēng¹ chie². The feast of lanterns on the 15th of the first month:—Note (8).

裏人、怎甚甚當自○ ○也們、
 話、我、倒麼是然你¹²賢¹¹是叔
 我、怎、叫、事、他、必、可、姪、如、叔
 兩、能、我、都、真、賞、以、如、此、們、
 個、白、去、不、果、他、打、何、○、舅
 從、饒、跪、懂、是、銀、聽、來、請¹⁰舅
 小、了、他、得、個、兩、打、聽、得、你、去、
 兒、你、呢。○百明却聽、這、看、以、及
 的、呢。○他¹⁶曉公、干、他、姓、早、看、姑
 結、○、你¹⁶不、仔、你、甚、有、他、來、姑
 髮、玉¹⁷給、跪、我、細、甚、甚、甚、甚、
 夫、英、我、也、問、事。誰、麼、作、姨、姨
 妻、道、這、罷、起、○ ○、話、甚、甚、
 與、說、樣、罷、來、我¹⁴我¹³說、麼、。們、
 他、那、丟、了、來、我¹⁴我¹³說、麼、。

applies to paternal and maternal grandfathers, paternal and maternal uncles, as also to paternal and maternal aunts.
 10 Please go and see what he has come for.
 11 Well my esteemed nephew, what have you to talk about that you have come so early?
 12 I wish you would inquire and ascertain his surname and name.
 13 I will of course present him with some silver, but what business is it of yours?
 14 I supposed that he was really a master in his profession, but upon careful questioning I found he was a complete ignoramus.
 15 That he does not kneel to me is enough, how can you possibly ask me to go and kneel to him.
 16 How can I excuse you for causing me such mortification?
 17 Yü Ying replied, "What are you talking about? We two were affianced in our youth, and I have borne

懸 *Hsüan*². To suspend; to be anxious; in suspense, undecided.
 結彩 *Chie*² *ts'ai*⁴. To ornament by festooning with cloth or paper hangings.
 城廂 *Ch'êng*² *hsiang*¹. City and suburbs.
 叔伯 *Shu*² *pod*². Family relationships which come through 叔 and 伯:—Note (9).
 外公 *Wai*⁴ *kung*¹. A maternal grandfather. (s.)
 推論 *T'ui*¹ *lun*⁴. To carry out an argument or train of reasoning, to infer, to proceed in the application of a principle.
 銀兩 *Yin*² *liang*³. A few taels. (w.)
 明公 *Ming*² *kung*¹. A master of any art or science.
 百曉 *Pai*³ *hsiao*³. Master of any art or science, one who knows it all. (s.)
 盤問 *P'an*² *wên*⁴. To question, to interrogate, to pump.
 屬員 *Shu*³ *yüan*². Subordinate officers.
 忙活活 *Mang*² *hwoá*² *hwoá*² *tí*¹. Quite busy, pressed with work.
 水菸 *Shui*³ *yen*¹. Tobacco prepared for smoking in a water pipe:—Note (22).

說事人 *Shwoá*¹ *shí*⁴ *jén*². A mediator, a middleman.
 查明 *Ch'a*² *ming*². To make careful examination, to search into.
 稟覆 *Ping*³ *fu*². To report to a superior.
 叔弟 *Shu*² *tí*⁴. A cousin, a contraction of 叔伯兄弟.
 貿易 *Mao*⁴. To barter, to trade, to deal.
 貿易 *Mao*⁴ *i*⁴. To do business, to trade, to exchange commodities.
 竹 *Chu*². The bamboo.
 籃 *Lan*². A basket with a bale or handle.
 六畜 *Liu*⁴ *ch'u*⁴. Domestic animals,—the horse, cow, sheep, chicken, dog and hog.
 百獸 *Pai*³ *shou*⁴. Wild animals, beasts.
 昆蟲 *K'un*¹ *ch'ung*². Insects, including also reptiles.
 串珠 *Ch'wan*⁴ *chu*¹. A reference book, a marginal reference:—Note (26).
 即如 *Chi*⁴ *ju*². Such as, for instance. (w.)
 地理 *Tí*⁴ *lí*³. Geomancy; geography.
 聖賢 *Shéng*⁴ *hsien*². Sages and worthies.
 草木 *Ts'ao*³ *mu*⁴. Vegetation.

生男育女，怎麼的不認得。○你既是大的，來了，又是頭一回向我開口，怎好叫你空手回去。○他如今已經吃了俸祿，却不能管理員，這樣無用的官，還要他幹甚麼。○現在莊稼地裏忙活的，你要進城去做甚麼。○他也没傷你，也没惹你，你要打點閒事兒。○他也没傷你，也没惹你，你要打他做甚麼。○洪喜在這裏沒有，問做甚麼。○官批的，是叫族長你給我買四兩水菸去。○官批的，是叫族長與說事人等，查明稟覆。○今有我叔弟來此貿易，請將所寄下之皮箱，與竹籃等物，託他

him sons and daughters. How should I not know him?"

18 Having come a long distance, and this being the first favor you have asked of me, how could I send you back empty-handed?

19 He has already drawn his salary, but is unable to control his subordinates. What advantage is there in retaining such an incompetent officer?

20 Why must you go into the city just now, when farm work is so pressing? Ans. I have a little special business.

21 He neither wounded you nor irritated you; what are you striking him for?

22 Hung Hsi, are you there? Ans. Yes. Well, go and buy four ounces of water-pipe tobacco for me.

23 The officer gave judgment that the head of the clan, with the middlemen, etc., should make examination and report.

24 My cousin is going to your place to trade. Will you please have the leather trunk, bamboo basket, etc., left with you, put in his care to bring back.

貸 *Tai⁴*..... To lend, to loan.
 借貸 *Chie⁴ tai⁴*..... To loan money.
 遂 *Sui²*..... To accord, to follow; then; finally.
 結連 *Ohie¹ lien²*. To gather together, to band together, to confederate.
 理論 *Li³ lun⁴*. To reason, to argue, to remonstrate.

棍徒 *Kun⁴ t'u²*..... A base fellow, a ruffian.
 毆傷 *Ou¹ shang¹*..... To wound in a fight.
 殞命 *Yün³ ming⁴*. To lose life, to perish, to die.
 痕傷 *Hên² Shang¹ hên²*..... A scar, a mark; a trace; a flaw.

NOTES.

3 爺兒們, *father and son or sons*. It is uncertain from this term whether one or more sons is meant, though the subsequent part of the sentence implies several.

4 爺兒們, as here used, is a Pekingese term, and means a man as distinguished from a woman. The term is not heard in Eastern Shantung nor anywhere in Southern Mandarin. The term 娘兒們 is formed in the same way, and means a woman as distinguished from a man. 兒 is to be regarded as an enclitic. This use of 們 is anomalous.

5 喫齋, to eat abstinence; that is, to abstain from meat and eat only vegetables. 修橋補路, to build bridges and repair roads,—done in order to acquire merit with the gods.

7 This sentence is from the *History of Robbers*. The character 烹 is incorrectly used, as it means to boil, but not to burst or resound. The proper character is 勻. 點子 is rather a particle than a drop. A 滴 is a drop as it drips or falls from its attachment; a 點 is a drop in its detached or isolated state.

8 燈節, *the feast of lanterns*, which is held on the 14th, 15th and 16th of the first month, when the business streets of towns and cities are illuminated, and frequently covered with matting. 懸燈結彩, to hang out lanterns and transparencies, and to festoon doors and gateways with cloth or paper hangings.

9 叔伯 The children of one's 叔 and 伯, that is, cousins of the same family name, are called *shu-po⁴* brothers and sisters; and starting from this point the term *shu-po⁴* is extended through father and mother, until it eventually comes to be applied to all terms expressive of family relationship, except that of father and mother, son and daughter. The extension is made by assuming the heirship of all who are *shu-po⁴* to father or mother, as well as all to whom they have become heir through their fathers and mothers, and so on, the special term expressing the relationship being in each case changed to suit the difference of generation. Thus your father's *shu-po⁴* 哥哥 are your *shu-po⁴* 大爺, your father's *shu-po⁴* 姐妹 are your *shu-po⁴* 姑姑, your mother's *shu-po⁴* 弟兄 are your *shu-po⁴* 舅舅, your

帶回。○空²⁵中的鳥和海裏的魚，是天主第五天造的，至於六畜百獸，以及昆蟲等類，都是第六天造的。○串珠²⁶上所記的典故，乃是一類一類的，即如天文類、地理類、聖賢類、草木類、等等。○你看²⁷世上這些人，雖然貴賤貧富等等不一，而要發財之心，沒有不一樣的。○孫文洲²⁸因借貸不遂，即結連棍徒王連城，與崔鎮山等，齊至門前大罵，身之長子出與理論，竟被伊等毆傷，幾乎殞命，現有傷痕，與李德茂、李德盛、李德潤等，俱可為証。

- 25 The birds of the air and the fish of the sea were created by God on the fifth day, while the various kinds of beasts, with the insects, etc., were all created on the sixth day.
- 26 The parallel passages given in the reference book are all arranged by subjects, such as astronomy, geomancy, biography, botany, etc.
- 27 Look at the people in the world, will you; although they all differ greatly in rank, wealth, etc., yet they are all alike in possessing a desire for riches.
- 28 Sun Wên Chou, because I would not lend him the money he wanted, gathered a set of ruffians, consisting of Wang Lien Ch'ing, Ts'ui Chên Shan and others, and came in a company to my door and reviled me outrageously. My eldest son going out to reason with them, was set on by them and beaten almost to death; in proof of which there are his wounds and the testimony of Li Tê Mao, Li Tê Shing, Li Tê Yün and others.

father's *shu-poä* 孫子 are your *shu-poä* 姪兒, your son's *shu-poä* 姪兒 are your *shu-poä* 孫子, &c., &c. These relationships are carried out to the fifth generation, and the intricacies involved in them are not inferior to those involved in the handling of an irreducible equation of the third degree, notwithstanding which, every old woman in China can trace them out and rattle them off as glibly as a smart boy can say the multiplication table. A working knowledge of these relationships is well worth acquiring, for the sake of the great advantage it affords in social intercourse, especially with the women.

17 結髮夫妻, *betrothed from the time when the hair was tied up in little knots or fillets.* 怎的 is an obsolete form found only in books.

18 向我開口, *open your mouth to me;* that is, ask of me a favor, especially a loan of money.

22 The tobacco smoked in water-pipes is prepared from inferior or refuse tobacco by softening with oil, coloring yellow

with sulphide of arsenic, or green with sulphate of iron and copper, then compacting in a press and shaving into shreds.

26 串珠, *strung beads*, a term applied to books of classified extracts from celebrated authors. Sometimes the 串珠 is confined to the classics or to certain classical books. The term has been adopted by foreigners to signify *marginal references*.

27 等等不一, *kind kind not alike;* that is, various kinds, many classes.

28 This sentence gives the principal part of a short indiotment (呈子), and the style is of course somewhat *wên*. 借貸不遂, *in lending not accordant;* that is, not accommodating him when he wanted to borrow. 身 is commonly used in writing for the pronoun I, and is generally written a little to the one side. 與 takes 他 understood after it. 理論 is a little more bookish than 論理, and is used in a somewhat different way.

LESSON CLXXXIX.

MALE AND FEMALE.

Special terms for designating the male and female of various animals prevail in Chinese, very much as in English. A few have already occurred. Others are brought together in this lesson. Foreigners often make themselves ridiculous from not knowing these terms and their proper use. [(7).

男女 are confined almost entirely to persons.

公母 are the most general terms for designating and distinguishing the male and female of birds and animals.

雌雄 are used in *wên-li* to designate the male and female of birds of all kinds. In colloquial 公 and 母 are used.

能替男人辦理事情，正彷彿騾馬不能替兒馬上陣打仗一樣。○叫驢和兒騾，雖然筋力更大，但是論到拉車，或是莊稼地裏用，還是養驢和騾好，因為他更聽調度，沒有反性的時候。○你別嫌女孩兒多，俗語說，少一般不成世界，倘若人都養男孩兒，沒有養女孩兒，天下豈不都絕了後代了嗎。○凡天地間的活物，無論飛禽走獸，昆蟲鱗介，一概都分公的母的，並且都按公母之理相傳。○這四個山羊，都是公的，那八個綿羊，有三個公的，五個母的。○有一家財主，夜裏做了一夢，夢見一個欠錢的人來說，我來還你老人家的賬，我說完這話，就進牛欄去了，這財主醒來，聽見外面有人說，我

figure to indicate that a woman cannot do the business of a man, just as a mare cannot take the place of a stallion in war.
 10 Although jackasses and jack mules are stronger, yet for draught or for farm work it is better to keep she asses and mules, for the reason that she asses and she mules are more docile and do not become unruly.
 11 Do not be dissatisfied that you have so many daughters. The saying runs, "Minus one half, the world could not subsist." If all reared sons and none daughters, would not mankind find themselves without descendants?
 12 All living things on the face of the earth,—birds, beasts, insects and fishes,—are divided into male and female, and all are propagated by the union of the sexes.
 13 These four goats are all billy-goats; but of those eight sheep, three are rams and five are ewes.
 14 A certain rich man had a dream one night. He dreamed that one of his debtors came and said to him, "I have come, good sir, to pay you your account;" and when he had said this, he disappeared into the cow-stable. When the rich man awoke he heard some one outside saying, "Our cow has given birth to a calf." He afterwards made inquiry and found that this same debtor had in fact died that

- 兒騾 *Er² lod²*..... A male or jack mule.
- 騾 *K'oa⁴*..... A mare.
- 騾騾 *K'oa⁴ lod²*..... A she mule.
- 打鳴 *Ta³ ming²*. To announce the morning as cocks do by crowing.
- 啼鳴 *T'i² ming²*..... The same. (s.)
- 嗚郎 *Lang² mao¹*..... A he cat, a tom cat. (n.)
- 牙貓 *Ya² mao¹*..... The same. (c.)
- 女貓 *Nü³ mao¹*..... A she cat.
- 騾馬 *K'oa⁴ ma³*..... A mare.
- 兒馬 *Er² ma³*..... A stallion.
- 叫驢 *Chiao⁴ lü²*..... A jackass.
- 筋力 *Chin¹ li⁴*..... Strength, muscle.
- 驢 *Ts'ao³ lü²*..... A she ass, a jenny.

- 調度 *Tiao⁴ to⁴*. To transpose and arrange, to manage, to manipulate.
- 反性 *Fan³ hsing⁴*. To become unruly or violent; to grow cantankerous.
- 鱗介 *Lin²*..... Scales of fish; overlapping like scales.
- 鱗介 *Chie⁴*..... To aid; to involve; mail, armor.
- 鱗介 *Chie⁴*. The scaly tribe,—fishes, turtles, etc.
- 牯 *Tsi⁴*. A cow,—sometimes used in books for the female of other domestic animals.
- 牯牛 *Tsi⁴ niu²*..... A cow.
- 犍 *Chien¹*..... A bull, an ox.
- 投生 *T'ou² sheng¹*. To come into the world, to be born from another state of existence into this.
- 綏 *Sui¹*..... Quiet, modest; coy, amorous. (w.)

課十九百一第

LESSON CXC.

一 凡¹¹是 攆 你 不 假 枝 怪 食¹
 遣 得 德。 着 是 出 了。 下 着 言
 鄉 無 義。 我 那 門。 來。 我 那
 里 無 義。 他¹⁰們 裏 能 便 人⁵ 便 們 便
 便 之 財 的。 仗 走 來 的。 天 往 往 為 族。 們 橫 大 丈 夫。
 都 來 欺 負 我。 了 幾 句 書。 是 才。 罷 了。 一 會。 便 倒
 ○ 你¹³ 偷 竊。 ○ 我¹² 若 讓 過 這
 你 若 是 薄 待 了 兄 弟

- 1 He is not an honorable man who goes back on his word.
- 2 It is enough for you to escape begging our pardon; why do you turn about and show us your bad temper by turning up your nose and leering at us?
- 3 The several lines of descent from an ancestor are called the nine clans.
- 4 I ask you to make careful inquiry, and you will find out whether it is true or not.
- 5 It frequently happens that persons are estranged from each other by a mere trifle.
- 6 A shiu-ts'ai, without crossing his threshold, knows the affairs of all the world.
- 7 They all regarded him doubtfully for a little and then asked, "Where do you hail from?"
- 8 Is it not enough that you do not invite us to lodge, without turning about and driving us away?
- 9 A man's virtue is regarded as an endowment; a woman's want of endowment is regarded as a virtue.
- 10 Because he knows a few passages of the classics, he imagines himself a profound scholar.
- 11 Whoever takes unjust gain, is guilty of theft.
- 12 If I yield this one time, the whole neighborhood will be ready to impose upon me.

LESSON CXC.

便

便 (pien), is the higher Mandarin equivalent of certain uses of the more colloquial 就. It marks the logical dependence of two clauses. It may sometimes be rendered, *thus* or *in that case*,

but is generally not translateable by any special word. It is much used in book Mandarin and occasionally in conversation.

VOCABULARY.

- 賠錯 P'ei² ts'oa⁴. To apologize, to make amends.
 橫鼻 Hêng² pi². To turn up the nose as an expression of contempt.
 瞪眼 Shu⁴ yen³. To stare in anger or contempt, to leer, to glare.

- 分枝 Fên¹ chî¹. To divide into branches:—Note (3).
 九族 Chiú³ tsu². Nine generations of a family connexion:—Note (3).
 估猜 Ku¹ ts'ai¹. To conjecture, to wonder; to regard doubtfully or inquiringly.

兒再住上一年半載，將外邊的賬目收齊，便就回家。
 十天，就為月大，若只二十九天，便為月小。○請父親放心，
 若把人家的事情唆挑起來，便是壞蛋了。○那個月有三
 心裏也不舒服。○會說話的兩頭嘴，不會說話的兩頭傳，
 受。○平安便是福，若今日吵，明日鬧，就是手中有幾個錢，
 緊打發人去安慰他，勸他心裏要寬闊一點，不要過於難
 了大事。○我們聽說瑞蓮遭了口舌，有尋死的心腸，便趕
 有幾個性如烈火的漢子，倘或一言半語衝撞了他，便壞
 便把狗都感化的好了，難道人倒不如狗嗎。○他們裏頭，
 病，管管許醫得他好了。○你們看陳褒家，因為人和睦美，
 管保給他治得好。

- 23 Look at the family of Chên Pao; by their harmony they have moved the very dogs to be at peace. Do you mean to say that men are inferior to dogs?
- 24 There are amongst the number several men of the most fiery temper. If by speaking a few words we should offend them, it might ruin important interests.
- 25 When we heard that Sui Lien's reputation had been assailed, and that she was meditating suicide, we at once sent some one to comfort her, and to exhort her to exercise a little more fortitude and not be too much depressed.
- 26 Peace of mind is what constitutes happiness. If you are scolding and quarreling every day, even with your hands full of money, your mind will be ill at ease.
- 27 "A discreet man will not tell everything to either party, but an inconsiderate man carries tales for both parties." He who incites others to quarrel, is a mean villain.
- 28 When a month has thirty days, it is said to be great; and if it has only twenty-nine days, it is said to be small.
- 29 Please do not worry, father. After remaining a year, more or less, in order to collect outstanding accounts, I will return home.

remembered that each generation includes the collateral descendants from previous generations.

6 A very common saying, intended as a compliment to the general information possessed by the educated man, yet in point of fact the average graduate knows absurdly little about anything beyond his own neighborhood.

8 宿 is more freely used in Shantung than it is either North or South.

9 This sentence is a play on the words 才 and 德. The meaning is that a virtuous character is a man's best endowment, while a woman's want of special endowments is the best assurance of her virtuous character. In China smart women do not have the best reputation.

11 無義之財, gain gotten by unrighteousness, unjust gain. 行了偷竊, has done theft; that is, is guilty of theft. 行 is commonly used where we say "guilty of."

14 The principle here enunciated is well recognized in Chinese law, viz., that the money aspect of a crime is of prime importance. A murder for money is held to be a greater crime than a murder from malice.

20 情常, affection principle; that is, that affection which accords with the 五常, or five relations.

21 This sentence, which is taken from the Sacred Edict, is intended to combat the idea that there is any veritable heaven or hell. 心裡光光明明, a mind which has nothing to conceal, either from human law or from the ears of society, and so does not fear the light. Moral feelings as in the sight of God, are not intended.

22 草頭方兒, a recipe of herbs; that is, a domestic recipe made up of common herbs, which can be procured without buying. 便了 is here the more stately equivalent of 就是了.

24 一言半語, one word and half a clause, a few words, a word here and there.

25 遭口舌, in the case of a woman, generally means reports impugning her virtue.

28 In China all months consist of either twenty-nine or thirty days, and are called 小 or 大 accordingly. The respective months are not the same, however, from year to year, but are varied in accordance with the time of new moon. If the change to new moon occurs before midnight, that day belongs to the old month, and if after midnight, it belongs to the new month.

29 一年半載, one year and a half revolution of the seasons; that is, a year or thereabouts, a year more or less.

課一十九百一第

LESSON CXCI.

我雖然很窮，却不至於偷人家的。○只三十里路，我一個空身人，還要二百錢嗎？甚不然，我還能以步行。○他本來醜是不錯的，却不至於像你所說的。○耶穌降世一千八百七十年，法國被德國打败了，甚至京城被破，皇上也被擄去。○念書固然是當勤苦，然而也不可勤苦過度，以致累壞了身體。○我父親纔死的那幾天，我實在想的很慌，甚至一閉眼，就見他在我跟前。○那些好賭錢的，逢有岔路，就有指路牌，使人不至錯走了道路。○那些賭錢的，逢賭起錢來，就沒有厭，甚至於三天三夜不騰窩的也有。○林師母生了一個奶癱，折磨的不像人樣兒了，甚至於吃飯還必須餓他。○你目下吃一點虧，還不至悞了你女兒終身。○炕上若

- 1 Although I am extremely poor, I have not come to the point of stealing.
- 2 Only thirty li, and I a man without luggage, yet you want two hundred cash! If there is no other way, I can walk.
- 3 She is naturally homely, it is true, but not to the degree you speak of.
- 4 In the year of our Lord 1870, France was so effectually defeated by Germany that even the capital was taken and the Emperor made a prisoner.
- 5 Study should of course be prosecuted with untiring diligence, and yet this diligence should not be carried to such an extreme as to destroy the health.
- 6 The first few days after my father's death, my thoughts were constantly reverting to him, insomuch that whenever I shut my eyes, I seemed to see him before me.
- 7 At every fork in the road on the way to these Cities of Refuge, there were sign-boards, so that men might not mistake the road.
- 8 Those who are addicted to gambling, when they begin to play, never know when to stop, insomuch that there have been cases in which they did not stir from their places for three days and three nights.
- 9 Mrs. Lin has had an abscess in her breast, which has completely prostrated her, so that she cannot even eat without some one feeding her.
- 10 By suffering a little present loss you will avoid blighting your daughter's whole life.
- 11 If we can all crowd upon the k'ang, we will all sleep there; and if not,

LESSON CXCI.

SEQUENTIAL PHRASES.

The following phrases are all derived from books, but the most of them are in common use, and are very convenient and expressive.

甚至 So that, so that even, inasmuch as, even if, insomuch that.

甚至於 The same, 一於 being added for the sake of rhythm.

甚至不然 If no other way, if not then, otherwise.

至於 To the point or degree of, so that. Note that, as here used, 至於 differs from its use in Les. 144.

不至 or **不至於** So as not, so that not, not to the degree or extent of.

不致 or **不致於** Same as 不至 but more bookish.

以致 or **以致於** So as to, so that, insomuch that.

能擠得下，我們都在炕上睡，甚至不然，我就打個地鋪。○神憐
 愛世人，甚至將獨生子賜給他們，叫凡信他的，不至滅亡，必得
 永生。○慕¹³成愛他的主人，至於替他一死。○當¹⁴初他們是為孩
 子打架起釁，因此漸漸疎遠，以致兩家成了讐。○長¹⁵毛反的
 時候，我的房子和東西，都叫賊放火燒了，甚至連宗譜牌位，都
 失落了。○藥¹⁶是不可多吃的，我的家兄，小時吃藥太多，以致於
 傷了元氣，因此一輩子常筋骨疼。○這¹⁷良心責備人，真是利害，
 要安慰也安慰不了，要壓制也壓制不下，甚至教他難為的，如
 同癡了一樣。○患¹⁸難生忍耐，忍耐生老練，老練生盼望，盼望不
 至於羞恥。○這¹⁹一回裝載，本來太多，但是早上晨開船的時候，是

then I will make a bed on the floor.
 12 God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth on Him, should not perish but have everlasting life.
 13 Mu Ch'êng loved his master so much that he gave his life for him.
 14 The first occasion of misunderstanding was a quarrel of the children's, and from this they gradually became estranged, until at last the two families became enemies.
 15 At the time of the long-hair rebellion, my house and effects were all burned by the rebels, so that even my family register and ancestral tablets were lost.
 16 Medicine should not be taken to excess. When my elder brother was young, he took so much medicine that he injured his constitution, and in consequence of it he has all his life suffered from rheumatism.
 17 These upbraidings of conscience are truly terrible. You try to quiet them, but they will not be quieted; you try to suppress them, but they will not be suppressed; insomuch that you are worried by them to the verge of madness.
 18 Tribulation worketh patience; and patience, experience; and experience, hope; and hope maketh not ashamed.
 19 We were in fact too heavily loaded on this voyage. In the morning, however, when we set sail, we had a fair wind and sped along quite briskly, but in the afternoon, quite unexpectedly the wind turned suddenly about to the north and began to blow

VOCABULARY.

降世 *Chiang⁴ shì⁴*. To be born from a previous state, to descend to the world.
 勤苦 *Oh'in³ k'u³*. Unwearied effort, untiring diligence.
 過度 *Kwo⁴ tu⁴*. Entreme, excessive.
 岔路 *Ch'a⁴ lu⁴*. A fork in the road, a diverging road.
 挪窩 *Nod² wod¹*. To change the place or residence, to move, to stir.
 騰窩 *T'êng² wod¹*. The same. (s.)
 癰 *Yung¹*. An abscess, a carbuncle.
 奶癰 *Nai³ yung¹*. A mammary abscess.

折磨 *Chê² mē²*. To wear out, to use up, to harass, to jade.
 餵 *Wei⁴*. To feed,—animals or children or the sick.
 憐愛 *Lien² ai⁴*. To compassionate, to love; kind-hearted.
 滅亡 *Mis⁴ wang²*. To suffer destruction, to perish, to be lost utterly.
 起釁 *Ch'i³ hsin⁴*. Origin of a quarrel, occasion of trouble or misunderstanding.
 疎遠 *Su¹ yüan³*. Distant, cool, estranged, disaffected.
 讐 *Ch'ou²*. Enmity,—same as 讐.

個順風跑的倒還不慢，誰知到下半年，忽然轉了北風，越
 颶越大，浪如山倒，船彷彿要沉的樣子，甚至船面上，都上
 了水咯，老大看看不好，便招嚷呼載，一直扒去一半，還是
 不行，後來砍了大桅，好歹纔保住了。○夫妻不和的根由，是
 多半是從男人糊塗起的，或是嫌妻子出身貧賤，或是嫌
 妻子容貌醜陋，或是嫌妻子性情蠢笨，因此與他不和，甚
 至動不動就吆喝打罵，如同奴婢一般，何不想你這些不
 如意處，豈是你妻子願意如此的嗎，而且定親一事，原是
 憑着父母之命，媒妁之言，若有不如意處，就不該定他，既
 然定了他，又娶了他，就不該嫌他，你想想是不是呢。

stronger and stronger; the waves ran mountain high and the vessel seemed ready to founder, insomuch that the whole deck was flooded with water. The captain, seeing that the danger was imminent, called out to lighten the ship, which was done until half the cargo was thrown overboard. This proving still insufficient, the main mast was next cut away, after which we managed to outride the storm.

20 The occasion of disaffection between husband and wife generally springs from the folly of the husband. He is dissatisfied with his wife because she came of a poor family, or because she is homely in appearance, or because she is naturally dull, and hence does not try to live peaceably with her, insomuch that on every occasion he is ready to scold or to strike or to revile her, as if she were a slave. Why do you not consider? Do you suppose it pleases your wife that she gives you all this dissatisfaction? Moreover, the betrothal was originally made in accordance with your parents wishes and upon the representations of the go-betweens; and if you had cause of dissatisfaction, you should not have made the betrothal. Having betrothed her and married her, you should not now be dissatisfied with her. Consider now, if this is not the proper view of the case.

放火 *Fang⁴ hwo³*..... To set on fire.
 放譜宗譜 *P⁴u³*..... A list, a register, a record.
 宗譜 *Tsung¹ p¹u³*. A family or genealogical register.
 牌位 *P⁴ai² wei⁴*..... The ancestral tablet.
 元氣 *Yüan² ch⁴i⁴*. That strength and vigor of
 vital principle which belongs to the individual by birth, the constitution.
 責備 *Tsè² pei⁴*. To reprove, to admonish, to scold, to upbraid.
 患難 *Hwan⁴ nan⁴*. Trouble, misfortune, tribulation.
 老練 *Lao³ lien⁴*..... Experience, wisdom.
 老開船 *K'ai¹ ch⁴wan²*..... To set sail.
 順風 *Shun⁴ feng¹*..... A fair wind.
 老大 *Lao³ ta⁴*..... The captain of a boat.

嚷叫 *Jang³ chiao⁴*..... To call out, to shout.
 扒載 *Pa¹ tsai⁴*. To lighten a ship by casting cargo overboard.
 桅 *Wei²*..... The mast of a ship.
 根源 *Kên¹ yüan²*. Root, origin, source, rise, occasion.
 根由 *Kên¹ yü²*. Origin, source, ground, cause, occasion.
 容貌 *Jung² mao⁴*..... Appearance, looks.
 奴婢 *Nu²*..... A slave.
 婢 *Pei⁴*..... A slave girl, a maid-servant.
 奴婢. Male and female slaves; a female slave.
 妁 *Shwo²ts⁴*. A go-between in arranging marriages. (w.)
 媒妁 *Mei² shwo²ts⁴*..... The same. (w.)

課二十九百一第

LESSON CXCII.

見了, 却假粧未曾聽見。○這¹⁹麼一點事情
 會說你, 你倒睡¹²在地下。○放¹¹這¹²麼一點事情
 人曾受過大苦, 也曾享過大福。○我¹¹還未
 防備, 被他一尾巴打了一個跟頭。○那¹⁰個
 上住了幾天, 曾見過我父親沒有。○你⁸在我莊
 會發過大財, 却沒置下產業。○你⁸在我莊
 是他不願意, 我何嘗不願意呢。○周⁷襲鴻
 一人。○你⁵勸我吃藥, 何嘗不是好話。○那⁶
 我³頭前曾吃過這樣的虧。○他⁴不曾妄殺
 那¹裏何曾有好人。○未²曾舉意⁴老⁴天先⁴知⁴知⁴。○

- 1 When was there ever a good man there?
- 2 Before the thought has arisen the gods know (God knows) it.
- 3 I once suffered a similar loss.
- 4 He never wrongfully put a single man to death.
- 5 It was really very kind of you to exhort me to take the medicine.
- 6 It was he that was unwilling; when was I ever unwilling?
- 7 Chou I Hung has, from time to time, made a great deal of money, but he has accumulated no property.
- 8 You remained several days in my village; did you see my father?
- 9 Not being on my guard, I was knocked heels over head by one flop of his tail.
- 10 That man has endured great suffering, and has also enjoyed great prosperity.
- 11 Even before I have begun to scold you, you throw yourself down and begin to play off.
- 12 He pretends that he did not hear, though he heard well enough.

NOTES.

7 In Peking, the two forms 致 and 至 differ only in tone, but in Shantung, the two characters belong to different syllables, and the use of 致, as here, would not be intelligible as spoken, and as written, is regarded as *wên*. Sign-boards at cross-roads or forks in the road, are unknown in China; hence the term 指路牌 is a made-up term.

10 Said by a magistrate to a man who was engaged in a lawsuit concerning the marriage engagement of his daughter.

13 慕成 was a bondservant of 慕懷古, a noted minister of the Ming dynasty. The servant was so much attached to his master that when, through the machinations of 唐欽 *T'ang Ch'in*, an unscrupulous imperial favorite, the

latter was ordered to be put to death, the servant freely gave himself to suffer death in his master's stead.

15 The 牌位, or *ancestral tablet*, is a small painted board about five inches wide and from twelve to fifteen inches long. It is usually surrounded by a flaring carved frame and is fastened upright on a small oblong wooden base. On this board is written the surname and title of the deceased.

17 The 道 is to be regarded as applying to the whole expression 良心責備, rather than to 良心 alone.

19 浪如山倒, *waves like mountains falling over*, in allusion to the falling over of the crest of the waves.

20 媒妁之言, *the words of the middle-men*; that is, the bargaining and arranging which took place through them. 妁 is only used in Mandarin in this particular book phrase.

LESSON CXCII.
SPECIAL FORMS FOR PAST TIME.

曾 Sign of indefinite past time, used in book Mandarin and occasionally in colloquial. It always precedes the verb.

不會 Never, never did, not in any case.

未曾 Not yet, before, never before.

何曾 When? when ever? why? on what occasion?

嘗 Formerly, usually,—used as a sign of the past in *wên-li* and occasionally in Mandarin. Its use in Mandarin is confined to the following phrases:—

未嘗 Not in any case, never.

何嘗 Why? when? for what reason?

聖書說，沒有義人，連一個也沒有，細看起來，何嘗不
 嗎。○我的哥哥，從來不曾有這病，如何心疼就死了。○
 的。○未必恰照原文繙，就是畧改一點，也未嘗不可。
 往常來的家信，却不曾有這個圖書，只是隨手寫
 他曾在衙門當過差，所以官場中的事，他全明白。
 見過。○不知爲什麼，門戶都開了，却不曾失了東西。
 的虧呢。○你會聽過這個故事沒有，答我小時候聽
 不能成名，弄的半途而廢的，何嘗不是吃了他躡等
 會經過多少人說和，也沒說開。○你看劉德佩，所以

- 13 Ever so many men have tried to settle this trifling affair, but without success.
 14 Look at Liu Tê P'ei; the reason he has made a failure and cannot get his degree, is simply because he is suffering the consequences of his irregular preparation.
 15 Have you ever heard this story? Ans. I heard it when I was a child.
 16 I do not know how it is; the doors were all open, but nothing was missing.
 17 He once filled a position in the yamên, hence he is thoroughly posted in official matters.
 18 Heretofore home letters have not usually had this stamp on them, but were simply addressed in the ordinary way.
 19 Is it consistent with reason to condemn a man before his testimony has been heard?
 20 You need not translate with slavish literality. There is no reason why slight alterations may not be made.
 21 My brother has never been subject to this disease. How is it that he has taken cramp in the stomach and died?
 22 The Bible says there is not one righteous man; no, not one, and care-

VOCABULARY.

曾 *Ts'êng²*. Past, already, finished, once:—see
 Sub. Also *tsêng¹*.
 妄殺 *Wang² sha¹*..... To put to death unjustly.
 產業 *Ch'an³ yie⁴*. Inheritance, property, estate.
 tate.
 放賴 *Fang⁴ lai⁴*. To become obstreperous; to
 demand satisfaction for a
 trumped-up offence, to play off.
 佩 *P'ei⁴*. To wear on the girdle, to wear on the
 person; pendants.
 途 *T'u²*..... A road, a path; a pursuit.
 躡等 *Lie⁴ têng³*..... To leap over, to overstep, to omit.
 skip, to pass by; irregular.
 原文 *Yüan³ wên²*..... The original text.
 炮烙 *P'ao², pao¹*..... To roast, to bake.
 嚴刑 *Yen² hsing²*. Cruel punishments, tortures.

無故 *Wu² ku⁴*. Without cause, unjust, unprovoked; fortuitous.
 殺害 *Sha¹ hai⁴*. To kill, to put to death, to slaughter.
 忠良 *Chung¹ liang³*. The faithful and good:—
 Note (24).
 邦 *Pang¹*..... A region, a country.
 邦國 *Pang¹ kwò²*. States and kingdoms, nations.
 tions.
 至理 *Chi⁴ li³*. Self-evident, truths, axioms, ultimate truth or reason.
 傀儡 *K'wei³*..... Gigantic; a monster.
 傀儡頭 *Lei³*..... To contend fiercely.
 *K'wei³ lei³ t'ou²*. A puppet show, Punch and Judy.
 木人戲 *Mu⁴ jên² hsi⁴*..... The same. (s.)
 提點 *T'i² hsi⁴*..... The same.
 主 *Tien³ chu³*. To consecrate an ancestral tablet:—Note (27).

是呢。○賊到受刑的時候，也未嘗不後悔，無
 奈已經落在法網，後悔也悔不及了。○商紂
 乃是一個無道的昏君，最暴虐不過，他曾
 過炮烙嚴刑，無故殺害忠良。○好班子我們
 寫不起，不好濟的，眼前又沒有，甚至不然，我們
 寫一臺木傀儡人戲頭戲唱一唱，也未嘗不可。○嘗思
 大道不限於邦國，至理可通於中外，既是大
 道至理，何用論及出於那一國呢。○點主是
 不能不點的，就是沒打算出來，請誰作個點
 主官好，我們本家，也有康生，也有拔貢，現在

- ful observation shows that this is actually the case.
- 23 Robbers never fail to repent when the time of punishment comes, but having once fallen into the toils of the law, repentance is of no avail.
- 24 Chou of the Shang dynasty, was an unprincipled and reckless prince, and cruel to the last degree. He used the inhuman torture of the red hot pillar, and without any cause put faithful and virtuous men to death.
- 25 A good company [of actors] is beyond our means, and no inferior company is at present available. If there is no other way, we might engage a puppet show to come and perform.
- 26 I have always considered that fundamental principles are not confined by national boundaries, and that ultimate truth is common to all. Since truth is fundamental and ultimate, why speak of the country from which it comes?
- 27 The tablet must of course be consecrated, but I have not thought of any

點主官 *Tien³ chu³ kwan¹*. The officiating minister in the ceremony of consecrating an ancestral tablet.

貢 *Kung⁴*. Presents offered as homage or tribute; superior, the best of its kind.

拔貢 *Pa² kung⁴*. A selected or first honor graduate:—Note (27).

饗 *Hung²*. Name of a famous college built in the Han dynasty by the Emperor Shun-ti.

饗門 *Hung² mén²*. Literary, academic, in virtue of scholarship.

敬惜 *Ching⁴ hsi¹*. To gather up carefully or reverentially,—as paper.

字紙 *Tsi⁴ chi³*. Paper with characters written or printed on it.

裱 *Pei⁴*. Paper or cloth pasted together into pasteboard.

紙裱子 *Chi³ pei⁴ tsi³*. Pasteboard.

NOTES.

- 2 This sentence is a common and very useful saying, not however derived from classical sources, but frequently found in Taoist and Buddhist tracts. It is often said 未從舉意神先知. The term 神 will of course be taken as singular or plural according as the speaker is a monotheist or a polytheist. 老天 is sometimes used instead of 神, especially in the South, and, in this connection, is as near an approach to the idea of the true God as is often made by the Chinese.
- 5 Why was it not kind of you to exhort me to take the medicine? that is, It was really very kind, etc.
- 8 Or, How many days were you in my village? Did you see my father? As written, the Chinese expresses either meaning equally well; as spoken, the stress thrown on 幾 is very different in the two cases.
- 9 一尾巴, One tail; that is, one stroke or flop of the tail.

- 11 The use of 睡, as here, seems somewhat ridiculous, but it is vouched for by an experienced teacher as good Southern Mandarin.
- 14 所以, the therefore; that is, the reason. 半途而廢, to fail half way, to make a failure, to come to nothing,—a book phrase in common use.
- 18 When a stamp is used it is struck twice across the seam on the back which seals the letter; otherwise the date is written along the seam, so as to be partly on one side and partly on the other.
- 20 未嘗不可, not in any case may not; that is, it is allowable, no objection to, may,—a common and very expressive phrase.
- 24 商紂, the common title by which 紂王, the last prince of the Shang dynasty, is commonly known. 炮烙嚴刑, an inhuman mode of torture, consisting in compelling the victim to embrace or climb a red hot hollow copper pillar.

都 不 在 家 下 王 家 王 培 基 是 個 舉 人 他 和 我
 們 老 人 家 又 不 對 勁 兒 再 打 算 只 可 以 請 秀
 才 了 答 既 然 沒 有 廩 貢 舉 人 可 請 我 看 請 個
 鬻 門 秀 才 也 未 嘗 不 可 現 在 中 國 最 講 究
 敬 惜 字 紙 以 為 碎 紙 上 若 是 有 字 就 當 恭 恭
 敬 敬 的 收 拾 起 來 收 拾 的 多 了 可 以 用 火 燒
 了 若 是 用 脚 踏 了 或 是 堆 在 灰 塵 裏 或 是 用
 他 打 紙 褙 子 都 是 污 穢 聖 人 的 字 是 有 大 罪
 過 的 其 實 經 書 上 却 未 曾 有 這 教 訓 我 看 現
 在 的 人 講 的 也 太 過 了

suitable person whom we can invite to officiate. We have in our family both advanced and first honor graduates, but at the present time none of them are at home. Wang P'ei Chi, of lower Wang-chia, is a chü-jên, but he was not on good terms with the old gentleman. I cannot think of any one else we can ask, except simply a shiu-ts'ai. Ans. Seeing there is no available graduate of a higher degree, whom we can invite, I see no reason why we should not invite an academic graduate.

28 In these times in China, there is much stress laid on the careful gathering up of paper with characters on it. It is considered that all odds and ends of such paper should be reverentially gathered up, and, when a quantity is accumulated, burned with fire. To tread it under foot, or scrape it up with the sweepings, or use it to make pasteboard, is to dishonor the characters used by the sages, and is a very great sin. Yet no such teaching is found in the classical books, and in my opinion people at the present day lay quite too much stress on it.

It was devised by 紂王 and only used by him. 忠良 sometimes means, *faithful and good men in general*, and sometimes it is used as a contraction for 忠臣良民, *faithful ministers and virtuous people*.

25 寫 here means to hire or engage. It is only so used in connection with engaging theatrical companies.

26 嘗思大道不限於邦國至理可通於中外. This is the first sentence of the introduction to Dr. Martin's Evidences of Christianity,—not Mandarin, but elegant wên-li.

27 點主 designates the ceremony of consecration by which the ancestral tablet is invested with its special and sacred character. The last letters of the inscription on the tablet are either 神主, *divine lord*, or 神主之位, *seat or throne of the divine lord*. The full inscription is first written on the tablet with black ink, save that 神主 is written 神王. A literary graduate (the higher the better) is then invited to come to the house of the deceased and 點主. This personage is called 點主官, and performs the ceremony in full official dress. Several friends serve as attendants, one of whom acts as master of ceremonies. When all things are ready, the 點主官 is invited to a raised seat behind a table, in imitation of official form. The master of ceremonies then calls out to the son or sons, 跪, *kneel*, which they do in front of the table. Next, addressing himself to the

coffin, he calls out 請主詣公案前, *will your lordship please advance to the front of the official desk*. An attendant then uncovers the tablet and places it before the 點主官, who takes up a vermilion pen and affixes the dot to the 王, making it a 主; at the same time the master of ceremonies calls out, 請主歸靈位, *will your lordship please proceed to your spirit seat*. The tablet is then removed to its proper place, and the sons light incense, present offerings and make prostrations before it. No tablet is worshiped until after this ceremony of investiture, which is in fact a sort of canonization or deification of the deceased. 拔貢. At each 科考 or triennial examination of the shiu-ts'ai graduates, this special degree of 拔貢 is conferred on the one who stands first. Besides the honor, it entitles its possessor to the privilege of competing at the Capital for the degree of chin-shi, without first obtaining the degree of chü-jên.

28 In nothing does Confucian Phariseism come out more conspicuously than in the care taken to avoid desecrating printed or written paper. Chinese school-rooms are always provided with a box or basket in which all scraps of writing are carefully put. At city gates, and in other public places, baskets inscribed with 敬惜字紙 are often hung up for the reception of stray bits of printed paper. If a scrap of such paper meets a Chinaman's eye on the ground he will generally pick it up and tuck it away in some safe place. To gather up such paper and so prevent its desecration is considered a work of merit.

人。一忙在出勤寧¹⁷打打打叫他可害
 ○能²³體、還、在、上、選¹⁷打打打他同、待
 叫²³免、強、渭、身、高、單、光、他、人、你
 家、得、似、水、水、上、身、高、單、光、他、人、你
 寬、全、僱、釣、魚、也、不、選¹⁷打打打他同、待
 不、身、一、個、不、肯、也、不、選¹⁷打打打他同、待
 叫、丟、個、不、聽、說、的、人、○寧²²○寧²¹○寧²⁰○寧¹⁹
 屋、在、地、獄、裏、○寧²²○寧²¹○寧²⁰○寧¹⁹
 寬、所、以、房、子、窄、窄、狹、狹、一、點、那、是、小
 所、以、房、子、窄、窄、狹、狹、一、點、那、是、小
 房、子、窄、窄、狹、狹、一、點、那、是、小
 子、窄、窄、狹、狹、一、點、那、是、小
 窄、窄、狹、狹、一、點、那、是、小
 狹、狹、一、點、那、是、小
 一、點、那、是、小
 點、那、是、小
 那、是、小
 是、小
 小

than to have you injured. His treatment of you is exceedingly generous indeed.
 13 In all circumstances it is better to suffer a little wrong than to get into a fight.
 14 I would rather give him a little something for traveling expenses and send him off at once than have him remain here indefinitely.
 15 Such a termagant of a woman as this! I would rather go without any wife than submit to her hectoring.
 16 Better be unassuming and not affect vain display. [fine house.
 17 Better chose a good husband than a
 18 He is a man who would part with his life rather than with his money. He would subject his body to hardship rather than spend a cash.
 19 Chiang T'ai Kung preferred to go into retirement and fish in the Wei rather than support King Chou.
 20 In my opinion one would better worry through the work himself than hire one who will not obey.
 21 It is better to lose one of the members than that the whole body should be cast into hell.
 22 "Better be a dog in time of peace than a man in time of anarchy."
 23 "To have a rich patrimony is better than to have a big house." A somewhat

VOCABULARY.

寧 *Ning²⁴*. Rest, quiet, to soothe; to prefer, rather:—see Sub.
 寧可 *Ning⁴ k'oa³*. Would rather, would be better:—see Sub.
 寧肯 *Ning⁴ k'en³*. Would rather, would prefer:—see Sub.
 寧自 *Ning⁴ tsi⁴*..... The same.
 寧肯 *Neng² k'en³*..... Same as 寧肯.
 寧可 *Neng² k'oa³*..... Same as 寧可.
 拒絕 *Chü⁴*..... To reject, to repel, to cast off.
 拒絕 *Chü⁴ chüe²*. To reject, to cast off, to disown.
 行止 *Hsing² chi³*..... Actions, conduct.
 忠臣 *Chung¹ ch'ên²*. A faithful or devoted minister or public officer.
 捨財 *Shê³ ts'ai²*. To contribute in charity; liberal, large-hearted, generous.

圖財 *T'u² ts'ai²*. To be covetous; mercenary, venal.
 勿 *Wên³*..... To cut cross-wise, to divide.
 自勿 *Tsi⁴ wên³*. To cut one's throat, to kill oneself.
 受屈 *Shou⁴ ch'ü¹*. To suffer wrong, to suffer unjustly, to be worsted.
 憊 *P'ai⁴*. Exhausted, debilitated, feeble; rude, uncivil:—Note (15).
 億賴 *P'ai⁴ lai⁴*. Slatternly, filthy; ill-tempered, vizenish.
 單身 *Tan¹ shên¹*..... Alone, unmarried. (s.)
 躋 *Chi¹*..... To ascend, to rise; to fall, to ruin.
 躋 *Chi¹ tsao¹*. To worry, to annoy, to badger, to harass, to hector.
 捨命 *Shê³ ming⁴*. To give one's life, to part with or lose the life.

說、寧肯在一塊餓死，也不肯彼此離散。
 肯父子離散，各自逃命，還強似都在一塊餓死，又有人
 偷盜。○人心大不相同，就像在荒年的時候，有人說，寧
 女，也不得自主，如此看來，寧可甘心受窮，也不可起意
 不但自己的皮肉家產，不得自主，就是自己的妻子兒
 還強似死隔一口棺材。○請看那些作賊的，一犯了案，
 隔一層板，就是說人的骨肉至親，雖是活隔千山萬水，
 公，若一定要個公平，永遠也了不成。○寧隔千層山，不
 再差他，不可改差別人。○說事人，是寧叫事中，不叫事
 事。○張聚去年一年，只承攤了一張票，今年開徵後，寧可

contracted house is a small matter.
 24 During the whole of last year only one warrant fell to Chang Chü. This year, after business is resumed, it will be better to send him again than to pass him by and send others.
 25 A mediator seeks to bring about an agreement, rather than to secure justice. If he made justice a *sine qua non*, he could never effect a settlement.
 26 "It is better to be separated by a thousand ranges of hills than by the thickness of one board;" that is to say, a living relative separated by half the globe, is better than a dead one separated by [the boards of] a coffin.
 27 Just look at the case of robbers. When they are arrested, not only are their own persons and property beyond their control, but also their wives and children; from which you see that it is better cheerfully to bear poverty than to harbor the thought of robbery.
 28 Men's ideas are very different. For instance, during the famine year some said, "It is better for the family to separate and each one flee for his life than for all to remain together and starve;" while others said, "It is better to starve together than to separate."

遁 Tun⁴..... To hide, to abscond; to retire.
 隱遁 Yin³ tun⁴. To disguise oneself, to go into retirement, to hide.
 渭 Wei⁴..... A river in Shensi.
 輔保 Fu³ pao³..... To support, to uphold. (w.)
 百體 Po² t'ei³. All the members of the body, the whole body.
 窄巴 Chai³ pa¹. Narrow, contracted; straightened in circumstances.
 亂世 Lan⁴ shi⁴..... Anarchy.
 窄狹 Chai³ hsia²..... Narrow, contracted.

徵 Cheng¹. To levy; to collect; to summon; evidence, proof:—Also tsi³.
 開徵 K'ai¹ cheng¹. To open official business—especially the collection of taxes.
 至親 Chi⁴ ch'in¹. Nearly related; a very near relative.
 自主 Tsi⁴ chu³. One's own master, at liberty, free.
 起意 Ch'i³ i⁴. To take up an idea, to get a notion, to harbor a thought.
 偷盜 T'ou¹ tao⁴..... To steal, to rob.

NOTES.

3 A 鬼 is a servant or waiter; that is, in a temple he occupies a subordinate position, attending on the commands of the god. A 神 is a master or lord; that is, in a temple he sits in the seat of authority and commands his subordinates. This is one of the characteristic distinctions between a 鬼 and a 神. The sentence gives the Chinese view of the

comparative desirability of "reigning in hell" or "serving in heaven." Milton probably expressed the characteristic spirit of his race when he attributed to Satan the opposite sentiment.
 6 The Chinese hold to an exceedingly high standard of devotion in a public servant of the Emperor.
 12 思重如山, favor as weighty as the hills, very great favor,—a book phrase.

第一九四課

LESSON CXCIV.

寧可多用幾兩銀子，也要買頂好的。○與其打死人，不如被人打死。○事到頭，不自由，這一遭我寧肯傾了家，也要和他碰一碰。○與其落一個整人情。○我這回上濟南府，寧肯多走幾里，也要到曲阜去看看孔廟。○與其事情壞了後悔，那趕上在事前多加斟酌呢。○如今有客來，都是這鳳姑娘周旋接待，今日寧可不見太太，倒要見他一面，纔不枉走這一遭兒。○我已經試驗過了，寧肯少貪點利，

- 1 I would rather buy the best even if it does cost a few more taels.
- 2 It would be better to be murdered than to commit murder.
- 3 "When things become desperate, responsibility ceases." I'll have it out with him this time, even if it costs me everything I have.
- 4 Rather than lend it to him never to be returned, I would prefer to give it to him outright and have the credit of the gift.
- 5 During this trip to Chinanfu I intend to visit Ch'iu-fu and see the temple of Confucius, even if I have to go a few li out of my way.
- 6 How much better to consider the matter well beforehand than to let it go wrong and have to repent of it.
- 7 At present when guests come, this Miss Fêng always does the honors in receiving them. I must see her today, even if I miss seeing the lady of the house; otherwise my trip will be all for nothing.
- 8 I have already made the experiment.

15 憑 is read *pei*⁴ by the dictionaries, but in colloquial practice everywhere, North and South, it is *p'ai*⁴. 光棍漢 is a Southern expression. In the South 光棍 does not mean *single* or *unmarried*, save as joined with 漢. Kiukiang, however, rejects both expressions and substitutes 打單身.

17 The first 高 is figurative, the second literal. 郎 here means a *husband*. The couplet is a common saying in book style.

22 犬 is *wên*, 狗 colloquial.
 23 家 is here put for *patrimony, circumstances, living*.
 24 改差, to *change the service or sending*; that is, to pass by one in favor of others.
 25 The fear of going to law makes the Chinese willing to submit to a wonderful amount of wrong. Arbitrators and mediators presume on this fact and often propose the most unjust terms of settlement, thus giving the strongest and the most quarrelsome all the advantage.

LESSON CXCIV.

CORRELATIVE PARTICLES.

寧肯 } ... { 也是 } Better, rather...
 寧可 } ... { 還要 } than.
 } ... { 還倒 } Or reversing the
 } ... { 要 } Chinese order,—
 } ... { } Rather, will...

even if. The varying shades of meaning expressed by these several forms, it is difficult, if not impossible, to preserve in English.

與其...不如 } As compared with...
 與其...不及 } would be better.

Or reversing the Chinese order,—Rather than ... it is better, it would be better.

與其...寧肯 } As compared with...
 與其...不如 } rather. Or—Rather than... would be better,
 與其...不及 } would prefer.

與其...何如 } Rather than... how
 與其...那赶上 } much better? or
 ... than? How much better

與其...寧 Better... than. (w.)

These forms with 與其 are favorite book Mandarin forms, but are not often used in conversation, unless by literary men.

念¹⁵上趁著父母活的時候，不虧他的口腹，依隨他的心願呢。○
 似茶毒生靈。○與其¹⁴等父母死了，去殺豬宰羊的祭祀，那趕
 力而行，不可輕戰，與其到底勝他不過，不如早求和，還強
 逢過節的日子，寧肯把鞋押了，還要吃一頓好飯。○應¹³當量
 生的脾氣，真是古古怪怪，你看他雖然窮的有上頓無下頓，但每
 一個抗糧的頑戶，何如做一個守法度的良民好呢。○馬¹²貴
 後寧可僱人做生活，也要替出孩子來，念幾年書。○與其¹¹做
 靜兒的養着倒好。○嗜¹⁰這不識字的人，真是個睜眼瞎子，往
 還是賣現錢上算。○與其吃各樣的藥不見效，不如自己靜

It is better to be content with a little less profit and sell for ready money.
 9 It is better to wait on nature, with good nursing, than to keep taking all sorts of medicine to no purpose.
 10 Och! but a man who can't read is no better than a blind man. Hereafter I will hire help to do the work rather than not give the children the opportunity to go to school for a few years.
 11 How much better to be a good citizen who keeps the laws, than to be a slippery fellow who tries to evade paying his taxes.
 12 Ma Kwei Shêng is certainly a queer fellow. Although, as you see, he is so poor that when he eats his breakfast he don't know where his supper is to come from, yet whenever a feast day comes round, he will pawn the shoes on his feet rather than fail to have a good meal.
 13 You should measure your action by your strength, and not lightly go to war. Rather than waste life in vain by failing to conquer, it would be much better to sue at once for peace.
 14 How much better while your parents are still alive to supply their need and follow their wishes, than to wait till they are dead and then sacrifice hogs and sheep to them.
 15 Although education is a good thing, yet it depends on what the person's abilities are. Rather than make a failure, and be unfitted for anything,

VOCABULARY.

與其 *Yü³ ch'ü²*. As compared with, rather.
 傾 *Ch'ing¹*. To overturn, to subvert; to *squander*; to pour out.
 傾家 *Ch'ing¹ chia¹*. To lose everything, to become bankrupt.
 斟 *Chên¹*. To pour out; to deliberate, to consider.
 酌 *Choa²⁴, Chao¹⁴*. To pour out; to deliberate; to choose.
 斟酌. To deliberate, to consider, to reflect.
 抗 *K'ang⁴*. To resist, to oppose, to rebel.
 抗糧 *K'ang⁴ liang²*. To resist or evade the payment of taxes.
 頑戶 *Wan² hu⁴*. An obstinate or *slippery fellow*, a hard case.

滑戶 *Hwa² hu⁴*. A *slippery fellow*, a hard case, a knave.
 古董 *Ku³ tung³*. Antiquities, curios; curious, odd, singular, *queer*.
 茶 *T'ü²*. A bitter herb; to harm.
 茶毒 *T'ü² tu²*. Poisonous weeds; to destroy wantonly, to slaughter.
 生靈 *Shêng¹ ling²*. Animate beings, all living things, *life*.
 祭祀 *Chi⁴ si⁴*. To offer sacrifices; a sacrifice.
 口腹 *K'ou³ fu⁴*. Food; necessities.
 依隨 *I sui²*. To follow, to agree with, to acquiesce.
 心願 *Hsin¹ yüan⁴*. Wish, desire.

成任什麼不會做，還不及早的出學做莊稼。○若照我們的賬算，他還欠我們三百餘吊，照他的賬算，我們倒欠他五百餘吊，他那裏要呈要告的，我們還是求人說和為妙，與其和他打官司，把錢花在衙門裏，寧肯找個一百八十吊的給他，免得去跪官跪府的。○王孫賈以為孔子有求作官的心，又覺着自己是衛國的權臣，凡要求用於衛君的，莫妙如求他作個引進，因此借俗語問孔子說，與其媚於奧，寧媚於竈，何謂也？孔子參透他的心思，就回答說，不然，獲罪於天，無所禱也，這就是說，媚奧媚竈都不可以，惟獨當以天為主，倘若得罪了天，就沒有別處可禱告了。

it would be better to quit school in good season and go to farming.
 16 According to our account he still owes us over three hundred thousand cash, but according to his account we owe him five hundred thousand, and he declares he will bring suit. It will be better for us, however, to arrange a compromise. Rather than go to law and spend the money in the yamên, it would be better for us to give him one hundred thousand or eighty thousand and so avoid the humiliation of the court room.
 17 Wang Sun Chia, supposing that Confucius had thoughts of seeking office, and considering himself an influential officer of the kingdom of Wei, and that those who sought office of the king of Wei could not do better than seek his good offices, came therefore to Confucius, and availing himself of a common saying asked, "What is meant, by, 'It is better to pay court to the furnace than to pay court to the south-west corner?'" Confucius, seeing through his purpose, answered him saying, "Not so, he who offends against Heaven, has no one to whom he can pray;" that is to say, you should pay court neither to the god of the furnace nor to that of the south-west corner, but should appeal to Heaven alone; for if one has sinned against Heaven, there is no one else to whom he can pray.

下學 Hsia⁴ hsüe².....To quit going to school.
 出學 Ch'u¹ hsüe². To leave school; to finish an education. [officer.
 跪官 Kwei⁴ kwan¹.....To kneel before an
 跪廳 Kwei⁴ t'ing¹.....To kneel in court.
 跪府 Kwei⁴ fu³.....The same,

權臣 Ch'üan² ch'ên². An influential minister, an imperial favorite.
 引進 Yin³ chin⁴. To introduce and recommend.
 獲 Hwo⁴.....To catch; to get, to obtain.
 獲罪 Hwo⁴ tsui⁴.....To sin against, to sin.

NOTES.

3 事到頭不自由 very closely approximates, "Necessity knows no law."
 5 曲阜, a hsien city in south-western Shantung, near which Confucius is buried. The grave is about a mile from the city wall in the midst of a large and beautiful walled cemetery in which are also buried the seventy-six generations of Confucius' lineal descendants, in all many hundreds of graves. There is also within the city a magnificent temple in his honor.
 10 No "authorized" word of the English language will fully express the force of 禱, as here used. The rather ques-

tionable expression *By George!* comes very near the meaning.
 睜眼瞎子 an open-eyed blind man; that is, one who has eyes and seems to see but does not see.
 11 頑戶 is a book term, which in common parlance becomes 滑戶, a slippery fellow.
 10 跪官跪廳 is 跪官廳 expanded, and 跪官跪府 is 跪官府 expanded:—Les. 184 All the parties in a lawsuit are required to kneel in the presence of the magistrate.

到好處。○你昨天指雞罵狗，直罵了一天，難道我還聽不出來嗎？○那等心驕氣傲的人，真是難以和他共事。○他叫反賊，踢怕了，所以一聽見反的信息，就嚇得魂飛魄散的。○諸位都受屈喇，好說得，今天真是酒醉飯飽，不說糟擾喇。○他無論做甚麼，總是拖泥帶水的，沒有個時候。○我不能為這幾吊錢，虛心下氣的去，看他的臉。○城裏的女人，光會搽胭脂粉，粗重活一點也不能做。○和外鄉人打

cing), one must have a sharp eye and a quick hand in order to attain proficiency.

- 10 Yesterday you kept on the whole day reviling the dog over the heads of the chickens. Do you suppose I did not know what you meant?
- 11 It is very hard indeed to work with that class of haughty, self-conceited people.
- 12 The ruthless violence of the rebels has made her so nervous that as soon as she heard the rumor of rebellion she was frightened out of her senses.
- 13 I am sorry you have all fared so poorly. Ans. Far from it I assure you. We have to-day eaten and drunken our fill. Excuse us for the trouble we have given you.
- 14 No matter what he does, he does it in a slovenly manner. He never gets anything properly done.
- 15 I'll not, for the sake of these few thousand cash, go meekly and subject myself to his disdainful looks.

眼精手快 A keen eye and a quick hand.
 眼尖手快 A sharp eye and a quick hand.
 指雞罵狗 To revile one over the shoulders of another.
 心驕氣傲 Self-conceited, haughty.
 魂飛魄散 Frightened out of one's senses, scared to death, bereft of one's wits.
 酒醉飯飽 To eat and drink to the full, to partake heartily. [podge.
 拖泥帶水 Slovenly, negligent, hodge-
 虛心下氣 Meek and submissive, with bated breath. [out gaudily.
 搽胭脂抹粉 To powder and paint, to trick
 坐家欺客 To take advantage of being amongst friends and so insult strangers.
 蓋廟築塔 To build temples and rear pagodas. [roads.
 修橋補路 To repair bridges and mend
 捨飯放生 To dispense food and release those condemned to die.
 望風撲影 To look at the wind and pounce on a shadow, to speak or act at random.
 溝滿壕平 Gullies and gutters all full, abundant rain.

循規蹈矩 To conform to the rules, to follow the routine, punctilious. [Note (21).
 生枝雕葉 To draw out in detail:—
 按部就班 To follow the prescribed order, orderly, well-behaved.
 遠走高飛 To go far and fly high, an extravagant idea, a wild adventure.
 設身處地 To imagine oneself in the place of another:—Note (24).
 順水推舟 To row with the stream, to drift with the current, to go with the crowd.
 擔驚受怕 To endure fright and suffer fear, in a state of fear and alarm.
 提心弔胆 A state of trepidation, breathless anxiety:—Note (26).
 家破人亡 Property lost and life gone, ruined in person and estate.
 忘恩負義 Forgetting favor and abusing grace, ungrateful.
 平平無奇 The same.
 平平無奇 Nothing uncommon, ordinary.
 超羣出眾 Extraordinary, exceptional, above the average.
 招尖出色 Excelling others, capping the climax, first class, exceptional.

有就一見,你²¹個底放坐架,便不是
 什麼的,好想到他地方也是大風積蓋¹⁸坐家欺客,不是
 妙一點生,他枝雕葉的,下的溝滿濠平的。我²⁰摸¹⁹捨飯
 見錯亂沒有。○循○趙²²說的活活眼兒○
 情願捨了。○請²³規蹈矩,按部
 好的街坊

- 16 City women only know how to paint and powder; heavy (coarse) work they cannot do at all.
 17 If you have a fight with a stranger, even though it is not the native insulting the stranger, yet people will surely say it is.
 18 Building temples and pagodas, repairing roads and bridges, dispensing food and saving life;—these all are ways of making merit.
 19 Is it right for you to speak at random, when you are not acquainted with the facts?
 20 We also had a great rain at our place which filled all the gutters and gullies.
 21 Just think how vividly he pictured it all out in order. Who would have thought he was telling a pack of lies?
 22 Chao Ch'ang Ts'un is an exceedingly good pupil. He observes the rules in everything, being most regular in his habits and without the least misconduct.
 23 Please tell me what wonderful idea you have got of late, that you are willing to leave good neighbors and go on this wild adventure.

VOCABULARY.

筐 *P'ao³*..... A flat open basket without handle.
 籬 *Lo²*..... A wide open basket; a sieve.
 筐 *Lo²*..... A flat open basket without handle.
 筭 *K'ao³*..... An open basket without handle. (s.)
 拳棒 *Ch'üan² pang⁴*..... Boxing and fencing.
 信息 *Hsin⁴ hsi²*..... News, report.
 魄 *P'ao⁴*. The animal soul; the senses,—as distinguished from the reason.
 糟擾 *Tsao¹ jao³*. To make an ado, to create a disturbance; to annoy, to trouble.
 揀例 *Lo² li⁴*..... In order,—same as 例揀.
 咽喉 *Yen¹*..... The throat; rouge.
 築 *Chu²*. To beat or ram down hard; to raise up, to erect, to build.
 陰功 *Yin¹ kung¹*. Merit in the eyes of the gods and available in the next life as an offset to sins.
 濠 *Hao²*..... A moat, a ditch, a gutter.
 雕 *Tiao¹*..... To engrave, to carve, to adorn.
 活眼兒見 *Hwo² yen³ er² chien⁴*. Life-like, vivid, realistic.

活現 *Hwo² hsien⁴*..... The same.
 循 *Hsin²*. To follow; to comply with, to accord; docile.
 蹈 *Tao⁴*. To tread on, to disregard; to tread in the footsteps of, to conform to.
 錯亂 *Ts'ao⁴ lan⁴*. Confused, disordered, irregular.
 狀師 *Chwang⁴ shi¹*. A lawyer, an attorney, an advocate.
 辯理 *Pien⁴ li³*. To contest or argue the right or wrong of a thing.
 干己 *Kan¹ chi³*..... To concern oneself.
 舟 *Chou¹*..... A ship, a vessel of any kind.
 槍 *Ch'iang¹*..... A spear, a lance.
 赫 *Ho⁴*..... Bright, gleaming; elegant; majestic.
 赫赫有名 *Ho⁴ ho⁴ yu³ ming²*. Illustrious; reputation; prestige.
 超 *Ch'ao¹*. To leap over, to excel, to surpass; to release.

獨自遠走高飛呢。○狀師替人辯理，必得設
 身處地，纔能辯到好處。○事不干己，誰肯得
 罪仇人呢，也不過順水推舟，好歹了結就是
 了。○你常這樣動刀動槍的，不但老妻兒女
 擔驚受怕，就是爹媽也常為你提心吊膽的。
 ○你看唐欽受了慕懷古的提拔，反將慕懷
 古害了個家破人亡，誰不說他是忘恩負義
 的東西呢。○起初聽說的時候，真是赫赫有
 名，誰料見了面，竟是一把平平無奇的手，並
 沒有甚麼超羣出眾的地方。

- 24 When an advocate pleads a man's cause, he must conceive himself in the place of his client in order to manage the case well.
- 25 Who is going to make an enemy on account of business that does not concern himself? Simply drift with the current and, in some way or other, bring the matter to an end.
- 26 By constantly flourishing your weapons in this way, not only are your wife and children kept in a state of apprehension, but your parents also are in a constant state of trepidation.
- 27 Just look how T'ang Ch'iu, after being helped by Mu Hwa Ku, turned about and procured the destruction of Mu Hwa Ku and his estate. Who does not pronounce him an ungrateful wretch?
- 28 When I first heard of him, he had a great reputation; but when I saw him, he turned out to be a man of but very ordinary attainments,—in no respect excelling the generality of men.

NOTES.

- 4 打發 here means, to send away satisfied one who is demanding something, hence to satisfy, to please.
- 6 的 at the end of 針頭線腦, gives practically the force of, sort, or, and the like.
- 9 拳 refers to boxing proper, and 棒 to fencing with a club or shillalah.
- 12 魂飛魄散, soul flown and senses scattered. 魂 is the rational soul, 魄 the animal soul or breath. According to Chinese psychological ideas a man has 三魂 and 七魄.
- 13 不說體擾, we will omit the usual polite apologies for the trouble we have given you.
- 15 看他的臉, see his face,—to beg for a favor of one who is not willing to grant it, and so be compelled to submit to whatever ungracious words or looks may accompany either the refusal, or the unwilling granting of the request.
- 18 The three phrases here used are stock phrases for expressing the various ways of making merit. 放生, is to

- save life by releasing birds or animals held in captivity, or prepared for slaughter. This is a distinctively Buddhist idea.
- 21 生枝雕葉, to produce branches and strike out leaves, as a picture grows under the hand of the artist or engraver; that is, to draw out and describe in detail, to portray, to picture.
- 24 狀師 is a term coined to fit the idea of the word "lawyer" or "attorney." No such profession is known or allowed in Chinese courts. 設身處地 suppose [one's own] body to occupy the place [of another]; that is, to regard oneself as standing in another's shoes and so be able to give vivid and faithful expression to the feelings of the party represented.
- 25 得罪仇人, to offend an enemy; that is, to offend one so as to make him an enemy.
- 26 提心吊膽, the heart rising [into the throat] and the gall suspended; that is, in a state of breathless anxiety and alarm.

LESSON CXCVI.

QUADRUPLET PHRASES.

The phrases illustrated in this lesson consist of analogous nouns, which serve as the summary of a subject. A few common phrases of five nouns each are also added.

東西南北 The four cardinal points, all

起承轉合 The four steps in writing an essay:—Note (2).

仁義禮智 The four cardinal virtues.

春夏秋冬 The four seasons.

第一百九十六課

LESSON CXCVI.

但是不用木匠的傢伙，就是詩詞歌賦，也不在衆人以下。
 看王魁五，他明白甚麼呢？那纔是個酒囊飯袋喇。
 備好。呢。請誰看春夏秋冬四季循環不已，誰能使他如此。
 北來。要作文，必得先明白起承轉合四個字。
 船在大洋之中，若沒有個羅盤，就分不出東西南北。

- 1 When a ship is in the midst of the ocean without a compass, it is impossible to distinguish the four cardinal points.
- 2 In order to write an essay, one must first understand the four words ; state, expand, illustrate, combine.
- 3 Who has not the natural instincts of benevolence, justice, propriety and reason? Who is there who should not value education?
- 4 Look, if you please, at the ceaseless revolution of the four seasons; spring, summer, autumn and winter. Who is able to produce these changes?
- 5 The meat and flour are all ready, but the oil, salt, sauce and vinegar are not yet prepared.
- 6 He who would be a magistrate, must be able to judge between right and wrong, falsehood and truth. Look at that man Wang Kwei Wu. What does he know? He is really nothing more than a receptacle for wine and bread.
- 7 That book called Liao-tsai is made up almost entirely of stories of elves, fiends, demons and ghouls.
- 8 There is no need of carpenters' tools. I have in the house adze, chisel, hatchet and saw.
- 9 Not only are his essays improved, but in writing odes, chants, songs and poems, he is not inferior to others.
- 10 The great turtle, gavial, serpent and

油鹽醬醋 Condiments, trimmings.
 是非曲直 Right and wrong, truth and falsehood; justice and truth.
 妖魔鬼怪 Evil spirits, hobgoblins.
 鑿斧鋸 Carpenters' tools.
 詩詞歌賦 Poetry of all kinds.
 龍蛟蛟龍 Mythological monsters.
 魚龍蝦蟹 Marine animals.
 娼優隸卒 The disqualified classes.
 飛潛動植 The four kingdoms of living things.
 生死禍福 The four springs of human action. [feelings].
 喜怒哀樂 The four common passions or

禮儀廉恥 The four principles of morals.
 雞狗鴨鵝 The lesser domestic animals.
 牛驢馬 The greater domestic animals.
 槍刀劍戟 Weapons of war.
 之乎者也 Euphonic particles.
 酒色財氣 Vicious appetites or passions.
 耳目口鼻心 The five senses:—Note (20).
 肝脾肺腎 The five viscera.
 金木水火土 The five elements.
 青黃赤白黑 The five colors.
 仁義禮智信 The five virtues.
 酸甜苦辣鹹 The five tastes.
 宮商角徵羽 The five musical notes.
 東西南北中 The five quarters.

西。○ 龜¹⁰ 鼉¹¹ 蛟龍、魚鼈、蝦蟇，這都是屬乎鱗介的東
 概不准進考場。○ 天¹² 地間有生氣的東西，固然
 多得不可勝數，但要分類言之，也不過是飛潛
 動植而已。○ 禮¹³ 義廉恥他全然不知，還冒充的
 什麼斯文呢。○ 人¹⁴ 的生死禍福，都是天命所定，
 絲毫由不得人，所以孔夫子說，死生有命，富貴
 在天。○ 葛¹⁵ 長松就和一個土牛木馬一樣，喜怒哀
 樂好像一點沒有。○ 由¹⁶ 百川頭十年還當糧食
 販子，如今家裏雞狗鵝鴨，牛驢騾馬，都成了羣

dragon; the fish, tortoise, lobster and crab; all belong to that class of animals which have scales.
 11 According to Chinese law, the children of prostitutes, actors, victors and jailers, are all excluded from the competitive examinations.
 12 Although the living things in the world are indeed numerous beyond computation, yet when they are classified, they are all comprehended under birds, fishes, beasts and vegetables.
 13 What literary culture is he pretending to, when he is wholly ignorant of propriety, uprightness, purity and modesty?
 14 A man's life, death, misery and happiness, are all determined by the decree of Heaven; not a jot or a tittle lies within human control. Hence Confucius says, "Life and death are determined by fate; wealth and honor rest with Heaven."
 15 Koā Ch'ang Sung is like a wooden man; he seems quite insensible to pleasure, anger, sorrow or joy.
 16 Ten years ago Yu Pai Ch'wan was only a grain dealer; now he has at his home droves of chickens, dogs, geese, ducks; cows, asses, mules and horses; from which we see that after all, making a fortune is no great matter.

VOCABULARY.

羅經 *Loá² ching⁴*..... A mariner's compass.
 羅盤 *Loá² p'an²*..... The same.
 天性 *T'ien¹ hsing⁴*. The nature conferred by
 Heaven, natural disposi-
 tion, qualities or *instincts*.
 鄭重 *Chêng⁴ chung⁴*. To value, to regard as im-
 portant; earnest; weighty.
 循環 *Hsün² hwan²*. To come round in order,
 to revolve, to rotate.
 不已 *Pu⁴ i³*. Without ceasing, endless, inter-
 minable.
 囊 *Nang²*..... A bag, a sack, a purse; perquisites.
 酒囊 *Chiu³ nang²*. A wine-sack, a wine-bibber,
 a sot. [gormand.
 飯袋 *Fan⁴ tai⁴*..... A rice-bag, a glutton, a
 聊 *Liao²*..... To depend on; then; perhaps.
 鏢 *Pên¹*. An adze,—usually a wooden head
 armed with a steel-edged cap.

歌 *Ko¹*..... To chant; an ode, a poem, a song.
 以下 *I³ hsia⁴*..... Beneath, inferior to.
 龜 *Yüan²*..... The great sea-turtle.
 鼉 *T'oa²*..... A large water-lizard, the gavial.
 例條 *Li⁴ t'iao²*..... Laws, administrative rules.
 優 *Yu¹*. Excessive; tranquil; to excel; to play
 with; an actor.
 隸 *Li⁴*..... Attached to; underlings, *victors*.
 卒 *Tsu^{2,4}*. Underlings, menials; a jailer; a sol-
 dier, a private.
 考場 *K'ao³ ch'ang³*. The examination hall, the
 literary examinations.
 勝數 *Shêng⁴ shu³*. Capable of being counted,
 a limited number,—generally with a negative.
 潛 *Ch'ien²*. Hid in the water; retired, private;
 fish—as a species.

酒、氣、娘、你、這、○、個、劍、皇、喇、
 是、呢、也、來、種、呂¹⁹、莊、上、可、
 從、洞、未、洞、神、洞、賓、戶、真、出、見、
 那、賓、嘗、洞、仙、賓、話、是、來、日、
 裏、說、不、寶、說、酒、色、去、你、耀、的、子、
 來、的、王、好、王、酒、色、赴、這、眼、時、
 的、母、娘、王、母、財、蟠、樣、爭、候、
 王、娘、娘、娘、財、氣、桃、之、乎、○、
 母、娘、娘、娘、氣、無、一、王、者、對¹⁸、
 娘、娘、娘、娘、別、說、我、好、蟠、桃、會、上、不、
 說、好、酒、怎、麼、好、就、是、王、母、娘、
 我、縱、然、好、酒、却、的、財、娘、用、你、
 呢、說、得、槍、刀、到

17 Whenever the Emperor goes out, his attendants and body-guard all carry spears, knives, swords and halberds. It is truly a glittering pageant.
 18 In talking to farmers you should use common language. How can they understand this grandiose talk of yours?
 19 When Lü Tung Pin went to attend the P'an-t'ao Festival, the Royal Mother [seeing him about to enter], objected, saying, "Such a genius as you, who are given alike to wine, lust, avarice and anger, cannot be allowed at the P'an-t'ao Festival." Lü Tung Pin replied, "It is not I alone who am given to wine, lust, avarice and anger, but the Royal Mother is also given to them." The Royal Mother answered, "How do you make it out that I am given to wine, lust, money and anger?" Lü Tung Pin replied, "If the Royal Mother were not given to wine, whence the wine used at the P'an-t'ao Feast?" The Royal Mother answered, "If I am given to wine, I am not given to lust." Lü Tung Pin replied, "If the Royal Mother is not given to lust, then who gave birth to the Five Celestial Fairies?" The Royal Mother replied, "If I am given to wine and lust, I am not given to avarice." Tung Pin replied, "If the Royal

植 *Chi²4*. To plant, to set up; erect; *vegetation*, plants.
 廉 *Lien²*..... Economical, frugal; *pure*, virtuous.
 冒充 *Mao⁴ ch'ung¹*. To pretend, to sham, to play off, to personate.
 絲毫 *Sī hao²*..... A jot or tittle, an iota.
 販子 *Fan⁴ tsi³*..... A dealer in any commodity.
 發旺 *Fa¹ wang⁴*. To prosper, to flourish, to get on in the world, to make a fortune.
 御 *Yü⁴*. To drive a chariot; to superintend; *imperial*, royal.
 御前 *Yü⁴ ch'ien²*. The imperial presence; *chamberlains*, *imperial attendants*.
 侍 *Shi⁴*..... Near to; *an attendant*, a waiter.
 侍衛 *Shi⁴ wei⁴*..... Imperial body-guard.
 劍 *Chien⁴*..... A two-edged sword, a rapier.
 戟 *Chi³*..... A two-pointed lance, a halberd.
 爭光 *Chêng¹ kwang¹*. Very bright, brilliant, splendid.

耀眼 *Yao⁴ yen³*..... Dazzling, *glittering*.
 呂 *Lü³*..... The backbone; tones; a *surname*.
 蟠 *P'an²*..... To curl up, to coil; squirming.
 蟠桃 *P'an² t'ao²*. The flat whorled peach; the fabled tree of life.
 阻擋 *Tsu³ tang³*. To hinder, to prevent, to object to. [to drink].
 好酒 *Hao⁴ chiu³*..... To love wine, given
 好色 *Hao⁴ se⁴*..... Given to lust, lascivious.
 好財 *Hao⁴ ts'ai²*..... To love money, covetous.
 好氣 *Hao⁴ ch'i⁴*. Given to getting angry, act- ing from the impulse of anger; spirited, touchy. [per money].
 香火 *Hsiang¹ hwoa³*..... Incense and pa-
 膚 *Fu¹*..... The skin; superficial.
 肝 *Kan¹*..... The liver; irritable.
 腎 *Shên⁴*..... The kidneys; to harden.
 徵 *Chi³*. One of the five musical notes. See *chéng¹*.

不好色，洞賓說，王母娘娘若不好色，九天仙女是誰生的，王母娘娘說，就算我是好酒色，我却不好財，洞賓說，王母娘娘若不好財，蟠桃會上的香火，都是叫誰收了，王母娘娘說，依你說來，我算好酒色財，却斷不好氣，洞賓說，王母娘娘既不好氣，就該叫我來。○耳目口鼻心爲五官，心肝脾肺腎爲五臟，金木水火土爲五行，青黃赤白黑爲五色，仁義禮智信爲五常，酸甜苦辣鹹爲五味，宮商角徵羽爲五音，東南西北中爲五方，君臣父子夫婦昆弟朋友爲五倫，年高富足康寧有德壽終爲五福，詩經書經易經禮記春秋爲五經。

Mother is not given to avarice, who gets the incense and paper money at the P'an-t'ao Festival?" The Royal Mother replied again, "Well, suppose that I am, as you put it, given to wine, lust and avarice, I am not, however, given to anger." Tung Pin replied, "If the Royal Mother is not given to anger, you ought to allow me to enter."

20 The ears, eyes, mouth, nose and heart (skin), are the five senses; the heart, liver, spleen, lungs and kidneys, are the five viscera; metal, wood (air), water, fire and earth, are the five elements; blue, yellow, red, white and black, are the five colors; benevolence, uprightness, propriety, wisdom and fidelity, are the five virtues; sour, bitter, sweet, pungent and salt, are the five tastes; kung, shang, chiao, tsī and yū, are the five notes; east, west, south, north and middle, are the five quarters; prince and minister, father and son, husband and wife, elder and younger brother, friend and friend, are the five relations; old age, riches, peace, virtue, and death from the weight of years, are the five blessings; the Book of Poetry, the Book of History, the Book of Changes, the Book of Rites and the Book of Annals, are the five Classics.

NOTES.

2 The Chinese have an elaborate system of rules for the writing of a standard literary essay, which are explained and illustrated with great painstaking by school teachers. The translations of the four terms here given are only approximate, as no single words of ours will adequately render them.

7 聊齋, a book of legends and fabulous exploits, the full title of which is 聊齋誌異. It was written by 蒲松齡, a Shantung scholar, and published in A.D. 1710. The book is valued for its vigorous and elegant style.

9 In China every literary man is supposed to write poetry.

12 生氣, living breath; that is, the breath of life,—which is very different from the ordinary meaning, to become angry. The difference arises from the double sense of 生, which means both to produce and living. 分類言之, to speak of by classes, to classify.

18 之乎者也, four of the most common wên-li euphonic particles,—used to describe a pedantic style interlarded with wên-li words and phrases.

19 呂洞賓, a noted Taoist of the T'ang dynasty versed in all the arts of magic, and who it is said finally

attained immortality. In the 12th century temples were erected to him under the title of 純陽子. 王母娘娘, also called 西王母, the goddess of the "Western Heaven," and a prominent character in the exploits of 孫悟空, as related in the 西遊記. Her birthday comes on the third of the third month, and is largely observed in some parts of China. The 蟠桃會 is a festival in honor of 王母娘娘, supposed to be held in the Western Paradise, and to be attended by large numbers of gods and genii. It is so called because of the 蟠桃, or flat spiral peach, which is to be had at this festival, and the eating of which confers immortality. The story of 呂洞賓 going to this feast and his presence being challenged by the goddess, is not in the 西遊記, but is a popular tradition.

20 The original classification of the senses has the heart as the fifth, it being put for reflection. In his Evidences of Christianity, Dr. Martin pointed out this error and the omission of touch, and substituted 膚 for 心, which change is generally approved. 官 is used for sense, because each organ controls its particular sensation. The mistaken use of 木 as one of the elements, was also pointed out by Dr. Martin, and 風 suggested as a substitute. The Chinese musical

第一百九十七課

LESSON CXCVII.

李¹光¹大¹就¹是¹喜¹歡¹戴¹高¹帽¹子¹兒¹。這²一²回²，我²和²他²不²是²魚²死²，就²是²網²破²。○事³情³既³然³做³了³，還³有³不³透³風³的³牆³嗎³。○說⁴話⁴不⁴可⁴單⁴打⁴瘡⁴疤⁴，叫⁴人⁴落⁴不⁴下⁴臺⁴來⁴。○他⁵正⁵是⁵雨⁵後⁵送⁵傘⁵，我⁵不⁵領⁵他⁵那⁵個⁵空⁵頭⁵情⁵。○單⁶巴⁶掌⁶拍⁶不⁶响⁶，若⁶只⁶一⁶個⁶人⁶的⁶不⁶是⁶，那⁶能⁶打⁶起⁶架⁶來⁶呢⁶。○死⁷了⁷李⁷存⁷孝⁷，顯⁷出⁷王⁷彥⁷章⁷來⁷喇⁷。○總⁸要⁸因⁸才⁸施⁸教⁸，光⁸這⁸樣⁸恨⁸鐵⁸不⁸成⁸鋼⁸的⁸催⁸逼⁸，倒⁸越⁸發⁸把⁸他⁸催⁸糊⁸塗⁸了⁸。○畢⁹先⁹生⁹就⁹是⁹能⁹以⁹吹⁹毛⁹求⁹疵⁹，挑⁹人⁹家⁹的⁹錯⁹，自⁹己⁹脖子⁹後⁹的⁹灰⁹，一⁹點⁹也⁹看⁹不⁹見⁹。○你¹⁰以¹⁰這¹⁰樣¹⁰關¹⁰着¹⁰門¹⁰起¹⁰國¹⁰號¹⁰，就¹⁰是¹⁰不¹⁰行¹⁰，必¹⁰得¹⁰和¹⁰我¹⁰到¹⁰大¹⁰街¹⁰上¹⁰去¹⁰講¹⁰說¹⁰。○已¹¹經¹¹有¹¹現¹¹成¹¹的¹¹樣¹¹子¹¹，依¹¹着¹¹葫¹¹蘆¹¹畫¹¹影¹¹，還¹¹有¹¹畫¹¹不¹¹出¹¹來¹¹的¹¹嗎¹¹。○講¹¹說¹¹。○仗¹¹着¹¹能¹¹說¹¹不¹¹行¹¹，鸚¹¹鵡¹¹嘴¹¹巧¹¹，却¹¹說¹¹不¹¹過¹¹撞¹¹關¹¹去¹¹。○水¹³淺¹³養¹³不¹³過¹³魚¹³。

- 1 What Li Kwang Ta delights in is to wear a high hat.
- 2 I'll have it out with him this time. Either the net will break or the fish will have to die.
- 3 When a thing is once done, is there any wall that will not let the wind through?
- 4 In your conversation you should not be always hitting the tender spot and putting people to shame.
- 5 He is simply bringing me an umbrella when the rain is over. I will not accept his pseudo friendship.
- 6 A single palm will not clap. If but one is in the wrong, how can you raise a fight?
- 7 When Li Ts'un Hsiao died, it brought Wang Yen Chang to the front.
- 8 Instruction should always be proportioned to the ability of the student. To urge him forward beyond his powers of acquirement, is sure to result in all the greater confusion of mind.
- 9 Mr. Pi is an adept at pointing out other people's peccadillos, but he is quite unaware of the dirt on the back of his own neck.
- 10 I won't submit to this style of under-hand assumption. You must come out on the street and discuss it with me.
- 11 You had a ready-made pattern. Who could not sketch a dipper (a shadow) with the gourd before him?
- 12 Trusting merely in your ability to

scale consisted originally of the five notes here given, which correspond respectively to C, D, E, G, A, of the Western diatonic scale. In the Han dynasty two additional notes were added, viz., 變徵 or 徵 flat; that is, F, and 變宮

or 宮 flat; that is, B, thus completing the scale, with 徵 or G as key-note. The seven syllables 凡工尺上一四合, given in lesson 103, are used in singing, and correspond to do, re, mi, fa, etc. of Western musical notation.

LESSON CXCVII.

PITHY METAPHORS.

The Chinese have in current use a large number of common, but expressive, figures and allusions by means of which they add both force and spice to their ideas. A few such have been introduced in previous lessons. A number of the most common and pithy ones are collected in this

lesson, as specimens of many others. The meaning in many cases is evident. In the case of a number, hints are given in the notes. When not understood, a Chinese teacher will take pleasure in explaining them.

有牙啊，那知道騎驢的不中濟，還有趕腳的呢。○這是他的正
 的時候，叫衆人一口唾沫就淹死了。○他是欺負我老虎沒
 打嗎。○這是會上的捐錢，我若是於中取利，到了水落石出
 叫的好，我們就山下應的好，他若沒有好吹，我們還能有好
 早早告訴他，這樣雪裏埋死屍，還能埋得住嗎。○他若山上
 不吃回頭食，我既然和他算了賬，就不能再回去了。○不如
 着那山高，其實另找個地方，也不一定就能多弄錢。○老虎
 人家點火呢，你當是看殯的，還怕殯大嗎。○人都是這山望
 總是死人底下有活鬼，把他撮弄的。○你的爆燗，爲甚麼叫
 來，他光留我，不添錢還行嗎。○張日新並不是個咬牙的人，

talk will not answer. A parrot's lips are clever, but they will not serve beyond T'ung-kwan.
 13 Water that is too shallow will not support fish. For him simply to invite me to stay, without raising my wages, will not answer.
 14 Chang I Hsin is not a factious man. It must be that there is a live demon under the dead man stirring him up.
 15 Why do you allow other people to set off your fire-crackers? Do you suppose the spectators are afraid that the funeral will be too grand?
 16 When one is on this hill, he always thinks the other hill the higher. The fact is, when you find another situation, it is not at all certain that you will better yourself.
 17 "A tiger does not eat stale meat." Having settled the account with him, I'll not go back to him again.
 18 You would better tell him at once. Can you conceal a dead body by burying it in the snow?
 19 If he calls well on the hill, we will respond well from the valley. If he does not blow well, how can we beat a good accompaniment?
 20 This money is the contribution of the Church. If I should make a profit out of it, when the water falls and the rock crops out, a few mouthfuls of spittle would drown me.
 21 He insults me as being a tiger without teeth, does he? but let him

VOCABULARY.

彥 Yen⁴.....Elegant; excellent. (w.)
 催逼 Ts'ui¹ pi¹.....To urge, to press, to drive.
 國號 Kwod² hao⁴. National name or style, dynastic title.
 鸚 Ying¹.....A parrot; a cockatoo.
 鸚 Koa¹.....A wild goose; a parrot.
 鸚 A parrot.
 潼 T'ung².....A tributary of the Yellow River.
 潼關 T'ung² kwan¹. A noted pass on the Yellow River in Shansi, where it is joined by the T'ung river.
 瞧 Chiao¹.....To eat, to chew, to bite.
 瞧牙 Chiao¹ ya². Disputatious, captious, touchy, querulous.

咬牙 Yao³ ya². To gnash the teeth; petulant, snappish, captious.
 捐錢 Chüan¹ ch'ien². To contribute money; the money contributed.
 取利 Ch'ü³ li⁴. To take interest, to make a profit.
 唾 T'oa⁴, T'u⁴.....To spit; saliva.
 唾沫 T'u⁴ mo⁴.....Saliva, spittle.
 早遲 Tsao³ ch'ü².....Sooner or later. (s.)
 魁星 K'wei² hsing¹. The chief star of the great dipper:—Note (26).
 點狀元 Tien³ chwang⁴ yüan². To attain the degree of 狀元 or first graduate of the Hanlin.

做這樣半吊子事情，^答你筐裏那有爛杏兒，你的麥
 路投不到呢。○這²⁸可不是誇嘴，咱們的孩子，從來不
 家的。○你看²⁷如今這些候補官，鑽頭覓縫的，甚麼門
 短，凡是魁星點狀元，都是他的，武大郎顯魂，都是人
 殞的理在墳裏嗎。○鹿²⁶桂枝，最好以己之長顯人之
 還，能叫你墊錢嗎，總是汗從打病人身上出，還能把送
 說話怪氣昂昂的，其實那也不是個咬狼的狗。○我²⁵以
 嗎。○孫文慶²⁴不過是騎着人的馬，架着人的鷹，所以
 免不了見公婆，你光覺着沒有臉去，早晚還脫得了
 管，必得先商議他，水大還能漫過橋去嗎。○醜²³媳婦

remember that although the rider of the donkey is not of much account, there is still the man with the whip.
 22 This belongs to his jurisdiction; you must first consult him. Even high water is not higher than the bridge.
 23 "The homely daughter-in-law cannot avoid being seen by her husband's parents." You feel ashamed to go, but sooner or later you cannot help going.
 24 The reason Sun Wên Ch'ing talks so loftily, is simply because he is riding another man's horse, and carrying another man's falcon. The fact is, however, that he is not the kind of a dog that will take hold of a wolf.
 25 I cannot ask you to pay the money. "It is the sick man who must sweat." Who thinks of burying in the grave the friends who go to the funeral?
 26 Lu Kwei Tsi is very much given to using his own strong points to expose the weak points of others. Every first degree the reigning star foretells, is his; and every ghost of misfortune that appears, belongs to some one else.
 27 Look at these expectant officials; there is not a crack they don't worm into, nor a door they don't try.
 28 I can say without boasting that our son has never been guilty of such a

縫 *Fêng⁴*. A seam; a crack; a chance, an opportunity. See *fêng²*.
 半吊子 *Pan⁴ tiao⁴ tsi³*. A lackwit, a simpleton; half-witted, silly.
 筐 *K'wang¹*. An open basket without handle.
 太歲 *T'ai⁴ sui⁴*. A great year,—that is, every 12th year from the beginning of a cycle; a year god:—Note (30).
 叢 *Ts'ung¹*. A copse; crowded together, abounding. (w.)

芝 *Chi¹*. The plant of immortality.
 蔴 *Ma²*. The hemp plant; sesame.
 芝麻 *Sesame*—from which 香油 is made.
 船行 *Ch'wan² hang²*. A shipping office.
 彌 *Mi²*. To close up; to complete; more. (w.)
 陀 *T'oi²*. A steep and rugged path. (w.)
 阿彌陀 *Oa¹ mi² t'oi²*. Amitâbha.
 龍王 *Lung² wang²*. The Dragon-king, the Rain-god, Neptune.

NOTES.

4 落不下臺來 *not able to let down (or come down from) the stage; that is, out of countenance, put to shame.*
 7 李存孝 and 王彥章, two famous athletes of the after Han dynasty, of whom the former excelled the latter in strength and eclipsed his fame. When the former died, the latter had the field. The exploits of the two men are constantly introduced in theatrical plays, hence the currency of the saying.
 8 恨鐵不成鋼; that is, 恨不能鐵要成鋼. Iron becomes steel by fierce heat and much labor, which is here compared to the pressure used to urge a student forward in his studies.

10 關着門起國號, to close the doors and lay claim to the empire; that is, to make extravagant pretensions which will not bear the light of publicity.
 12 潼關, a famous pass on the Yellow River in Shansi. There is a popular tradition that parrots South of this pass can talk, while those North of it cannot, and that those from the South, brought North through the pass, always lose the power of speaking.
 15 Why do you let another man manage your affairs? Do you suppose he cares how much trouble he gets you into.
 18 It is vain to bury the body of a murdered man in the snow, in hope of concealing the murder.

子那裏有黑麪呢。○²⁹如今的世界，是牆倒眾人推，所以人到倒運的時候，是鬼也。○³⁰望着颯颯風。○俗語說，好漢不吃眼前虧，你怎麼單上太歲頭上去動土呢。○³¹我劉上拿着雞蛋碰石柱，也要碰他一下。○³²天柱那個人，成天家陳穀子爛芝麻的，也不知那裏來的那麼些話，還帶着說的驢唇不對馬嘴，叫人聽着真不入耳。○³³若看他說話的樣子，真是滿臉的天官賜福，但看他所作的事情，却是一肚子男盜女娼。○²⁸我已經上船行去打聽明白了，前日壞的那號船，名叫大孝子，咱們的孩子坐的船，名叫水鬼子，所以只管放心罷。○²⁷阿彌陀佛，別管怎麼樣，咱們的孩子沒跟了龍王爺去就好。

- silly piece of business as this. Ans. Oh no! *Your* basket has no rotten apricots in it; *your* wheat never makes dark flour.
- 29 In these times everybody pushes at a crumbling wall; hence when fortune fails a man, every demon blows a whirlwind at him.
- 30 The saying is, "A valiant man does not invite defeat with his eyes open." How is it that you persist in flying in the face of T'at-sui? Ans. I'll risk it. I will have a round with him, even if it is smashing an egg against a stone pillar.
- 31 Ts'ung T'ien Chu is constantly spinning out old wives' stories; the wonder is where all his talk comes from; and moreover, he rattles on in a hap-hazzard way that is most unpleasant to hear.
- 32 If you regard his manner of speaking, his face beams with a celestial benediction; but if you look at his conduct, his heart is filled with violence and uncleanness.
- 33 I have already been to the shipping office and made inquiry. The ship that was wrecked day before yesterday, was called the Most Filial Son, the ship that our boy sailed in was called the Water Rabbit; so that you may set your heart at rest. Ans. Amitābha Buddha! Only so that our boy hasn't fallen into the hands of Neptune it is all right.

20 於中取利, a *wen-li* expression, but frequently used in colloquial.

22 The bridge is above the water, otherwise it would not be a bridge. You cannot avoid consulting the man to whom it legitimately belongs to control the business in question.

23 公婆, a contracted combination of 公公 and 婆婆.

26 魁星. This star is regarded as the palace of the God of Literature, and is put by metonymy for the god himself. He is the patron divinity who presides over literary examinations and directs the conferring of degrees on worthy candidates. 武大郎, having been murdered is supposed to appear as a vengeful ghost, and his apparition is a sure sign of ill-luck, (See Les. 83, Note 19).

27 鑽頭覓縫. *the drill seeks the crack*; that is, the drill is bound to get in, and is sure to find a crack if there is one.

29 倒 refers to the wall being weak, and down in places.

是鬼 is equal to 逢是鬼, *every demon—even the least one*. 望 is here equivalent to 向. Whirlwinds are attributed to demons, and, especially in certain circumstances, are regarded as ominous of evil.

30 好漢 He is not considered a *valiant man* who exposes himself to certain defeat. He should be *shrewd* enough to submit temporarily, if necessary, and await a better opportunity to exhibit his prowess. 太歲 is a star god who presides over the year. He moves or turns about each year to a different quarter North, South, East or West. In breaking ground for a grave or a house it is important to avoid offending him by digging in the wrong place. The interpretation of his movements and his preferences forms a part of the art of Feng-shui. He is very irascible, and when angered visits with calamities.

31 不入耳, *not entering the ear*; that is, *such as the ear dislikes to hear*.

32 天官賜福 The president of the 吏部, now called a 尚書, was in former times called 天官, and as he was the head of the bureau of civil office, all the emoluments of office came through him, and to enjoy his favoring smile was to be in luck. Others say that 天官, as here used, refers to a guardian spirit or patron divinity of each family, through whose agency and by whose favor blessings are obtained.

33 阿彌陀佛 *Amitabha Buddha*, here used as a devout expression of thankfulness, similar to, Thank God!

第一百九十八課

LESSON CXCVIII.

單論心術，不論貧富，他却不然，他是單上老虎頭上抓抓
 老嗎，依我說，那是雞抱鴨子，枉費了心。○我們交人是
 張紙畫了個鼻子，好大臉哪。○那樣的兒子，還能養他
 個人情，非陶先生講不下來。答 你把，我誇獎的，真是一
 糟蹋的太苦咯，真是王胖子跳井，下不去的事情。○這
 咯，這可是大姑娘做新媳婦，頭一遭啊。○他把李成美
 多管閒事嗎。○哎呀李苟儉大哥，今天穿上新衣裳去
 的買賣。○他³不好，有他老的教訓，你這不是狗拿耗子，
 當是我還和他望長久遠嗎，不過是沙鍋裏直打直。○你²
 人家都會彎彎曲曲，咱們是巷裏趕驢，直打直。○你²

- 1 Others can make shifts and turns ; with us it is driving a donkey through an alley—straight ahead.
- 2 Did you suppose I intended to continue permanently in his company ? It was nothing more than pounding garlic in an earthen stew-pan—a matter of one stroke.
- 3 If he is bad, let his parents correct him : are not you just a dog catching rats—meddling in other people's business ?
- 4 Hurrah ! brother Li Chū Lien has his new clothes on to-day. This is the young lady become a bride—for the first time.
- 5 He abused Li Ching Mei too outrageously. It's a veritable case of fat Wang jumping into the well—won't go down.
- 6 This favor none but you, Mr. Tao, could have procured. Ans. You praise me as though you took a whole sheet of paper to sketch a nose—give me an enormous face.
- 7 Will a son like that support him in his old age ? In my opinion it is a hen hatching ducks—a waste of care.
- 8 In making friends we regard character, not position. Not so with him ; he seeks to catch his lice on (to scratch) a tiger's head—wants to curry favor with the great.

LESSON CXCVIII.

WITTICISMS.

The Chinese term here translated witticism is 坎, which means literally a pit, a trap, a turning point, and figuratively, a witticism, including innuendos, double-entendre, witty allusions, etc. These witticisms are generally spoken of as 調坎; read by some t'iao³ k'an³, an adjusted device or turn, a play upon words; by others tiao⁴ k'an³, a

moveable trick or turn, an ingenious transposition of words or figures. Colloquial Chinese abounds in such witticisms, but the majority of them are local in their use, and very many of them involve vulgar allusions. I have taken pains to collect a number of such as have the widest currency, and are presentable in print.

VOCABULARY.

- 撲 Tien¹. To pound as in a mortar, to bruise, to thump.
- 槌 Ch'ui²..... A mallet, a maul, a bat.
- 陶 Tao²..... A kiln; to please; correct.
- 虱 Shi¹..... A louse.

- 抓癢 Chwa¹ yang³. To scratch oneself, to scratch an itchy place. (s.)
- 揆 Pên¹. To fumble; to reach after, to pull down; to push apart, to bend aside.
- 堂口 T'ang³ k'ou³. Ability to plead or state a case in court.

他就鬧這些架子，看起來總是小廟的菩薩，怎麼講，

了官司，真是大姑娘下館子，人錢兩丟。○纔有了幾個錢，

○他¹³指望花幾吊錢，打官司能轉臉，究竟花了錢，還輸

呢，但蠢笨也得不大離格，這個是擰麪杖吹火，一竅不通。

爪，能吃不能拿的東西。○人¹²那能都是伶俐，沒有蠢笨的

穿，你說將來怎麼過日子呢，答可不是，那纔是鷹嘴鴨子

還埋怨誰呢。○他¹¹任甚麼不會做倒罷了，還又好吃，又好

頭兒害怕。○人家待他不好，那是他腳上的疤，自己走的，

家子就怕這家子有門路，所以他們是麻稽棍兒打狼，兩

瘋子，最好擰大頭子。○這家子是怕那家子的堂口好，那

- 9 This party fears that party's ability to plead; and that party fears this party has a friend at court; hence they are [like a man] attacking a wolf with a hemp stalk—both parties afraid.
- 10 If others treat him badly; that is a blister on his foot, raised by his own walking. He has none to blame but himself.
- 11 I could put up with her utter inefficiency, but, in addition, she wants the best of food and clothes. How do you think I can make a living? Ans. Sure enough. It is a case of hawk's beak and duck's claws—able to eat but not to catch.
- 12 Of course all cannot be bright and none stupid, and yet stupidity must be within reasonable bounds. With this fellow it is like using the rolling-pin to blow the fire—entirely impenetrable.
- 13 He hoped that by spending a few thousand cash in a lawsuit, he could put a fair face on the business, but in the end he spent his money and lost his suit. In fact it was the young lady visiting the saloon—girl and money both lost.
- 14 As soon as he gets a little money, he begins to make all this spread. Evidently he is, after all, only the god of a small temple. Ques. What does

癩 *Ch'ing³*. A species of hemp growing five or six feet high.

泡 *P'ao⁴*. A pustule; a blister.

蠢笨 *Ch'un³ pên⁴*. Obtuse, stupid, dull, thick-headed. [pin.]

擰麪杖 *Kan³ mien⁴ chang⁴*. A rolling-pin.

轉臉 *Chwan³ lien³*. To come off with a good face, to get well out of a difficulty.

培 *P'ei²*. To heap up earth; to cultivate; to assist.

癩 *Lai⁴*. Any pustular eruption of the skin; mange, leprosy, scabies. (s.) See *lai¹*.

蝦蟆 *Ha², Hê²*. A frog, a toad. Also *hsia¹*.

蟆 *Ma¹, Ma¹*. A frog, a toad.

蝦蟆. A frog, a toad.

天鵝 *T'ien¹ od²*. A crane.

坐堂 *Tsod⁴ t'ang²*. To sit on the judgment seat, to hold court, to try a case.

跪鎖 *Kwei⁴ sod³*. To kneel on chains:—Note (16).

跪鍊子 *Kwei⁴ lien⁴ tsi³*. The same.

壓杠子 *Ya¹ kang⁴ tsi³*. A mode of torture:—Note (16).

晒杠子 *Ts'ai³ kang⁴ tsi³*. The same.

扛柳和而流 *K'ang² chia¹*. To wear a cangue, following the current, compliant, pliable.

冒失鬼 *Mao⁴ shi¹ kwei³*. A rash fellow, a reckless genius.

刀筆 *Tao¹ pi³*. A pen like a knife, a pungent writer, a specialist in writing indictments.

覷 *Ti²*. To see face to face, to have audience.

從來沒見過大香火。○李培基那個樣子，還想着說陳宅的姑娘，那不是癩蝦蟆想吃天鵝肉，枉費了心思嗎。○昨天我上衙門，遇見官坐堂，逼問連子的口供，又跪鍊子，又壓杠子，晒壓的兩回沒有氣兒，看着真可憐人。○到他那是木匠扛枷，自作自受，誰叫他偷人家的呢。○到對詞的時候，我也不能格外厚着你，也不能格外厚着他，我是竈王爺上天，有一句說一句。○雖然不可和而流，但是當今的時勢，也不可太板滯了，總得八仙桌子蓋井口，隨的方就的圓纔行。○增福真是冒失鬼一個，不管做甚麼，是老虎入山洞，顧前不顧後的。○這張呈

that mean? Ans. He has never enjoyed any large sticks of incense.
 15 A man like Li P'ei Chi thinking to marry a daughter of the Ch'in family! Isn't that a leprous toad wanting a crane for a roast—a vain wish?
 16 I went to the court-room yesterday, and happened in when the officer was on the bench extorting a confession from Lien-tsi. They made him kneel on a chain and then pressed him with a pole until he fainted twice. It was indeed a pitiful sight. Ans. That was the carpenter wearing the cangue—suffering the result of his own doings. Who required him to steal?
 17 When the trial comes on I will neither be partial to you, nor will I be partial to him. Like Tsao Wang when he goes up to heaven, I will speak according to the facts.
 18 Although one should not simply float with the current, yet in these times it will not do to be too unyielding. When it is a case of covering the well with a square table, you must accommodate the square to the round.
 19 Tsêng Fu is one reckless genius. He goes at everything like a tiger entering into a cave—cares for the front, not for the rear.

靚面 *Ti² mien⁴*..... Face to face.
 奉承 *Fêng⁴ ch'êng²*. To compliment, to flatter, to pay court to.
 後媽 *Hou⁴ ma¹*..... A step-mother.
 後老婆 *Hou⁴ lao³ p'oa²*..... A second wife.

生生 *Shêng¹ shêng¹*. Simply, just, sheerly, literally.
 活活 *Hwo² hwo²*..... The same.
 忠厚 *Chung¹ hou⁴*. Large-hearted, generous, kindly.

NOTES.

1 直打直 *straight strike straight*, or, *straight and still more straight*; that is, *straightforward without turning to the right hand or to the left*.
 2 望長久遠, *looking towards a long drawn out continuance*; that is, *expecting or desiring a permanent continuance*,—a redundant colloquial quadruplet phrase.
 賈賈 is frequently used colloquially in the sense of *affair*.
 5 It is not known why the ideal fat man is called Wang.
 6 How big must that face be which requires a whole sheet of paper to draw a nose!—even such a face would it require to receive without blushing your extravagant praise.
 8 貧富, *poverty or wealth*; that is, *position in society*.
 大頭子, *a prominent or influential man whose favor is worth courting*. In China the tiger is the king of beasts.

12 A bamboo tube is often used to blow the fire when kindling it. There is a pun on the word 竅, it being used literally for a hole or opening through which to blow, and figuratively for the seven supposed avenues of knowledge to the mind.
 13 A respectable girl would compromise her reputation by going into a wine-shop.
 14 小廟的神. A god in a small temple is not supposed to be accustomed to the enjoyment of large sticks of incense. 菩薩 is much more used in the South than in the North, largely taking the place of 神 in popular usage.
 15 Notice how 癩 and 天 are balanced against each other in the structure of the sentence.
 16 跪鎖, *to kneel with bare knees on a pile of coiled*

不能成家立業，他還回來作什麼呢。

而且那個小子，長的多麼伶俐，爲人多麼忠厚，那裏的主兒，所以他這一走走，活活是叫他後媽逼出去了，動不動還要打打罵罵，王化南也作不了後老婆子，手裏受了多少氣呢，要吃沒有吃的，要穿沒有穿的，怎麼說呢，怎麼說，你知道他這個兒子，在他後媽

子，雖是刀筆先生寫的，却是王胖子的褲帶，希鬆平常。○我這不是當面奉承你，我看老兄現在如同囊中之錐，不久就要出頭喇。○王化南要打發他大兒子上關東，我看這可是牛肉包子打狗，有去無回，問

20 Although this indictment was written by a specialist, yet it is like the girdle of fat Wang—loose and ordinary.

21 In speaking thus I am not simply flattering you. As I see it, my brother, you are like an awl in a sack. You'll show your head before long.

22 Wang Hwa Nan is sending his eldest son to Manchuria. In my opinion this is throwing a mutton dumpling at a dog—all outlay and no income. Ques. How is that? Ans. How is it! Don't you know that this son has suffered a deal of abuse at the hands of his step-mother? He could neither get anything to eat nor anything to wear, and was frequently beaten and reviled. Wang Hwa Nan also is quite unable to control this second wife, so that his son has been literally driven away by his step-mother. Moreover, the boy is naturally very bright, and he has a very kindly way with him; he can succeed in the world anywhere; why should he return?

chains. 鎖 appears to be used for 鎖鍊. The Southern form is the more correct. 壓杠子, a mode of torture in which the prisoner is made to kneel, while a carrying-pole is laid across the legs behind the knees and another placed under the arms, which are tied together and forced backward for the purpose. One licitor then stands on each end of the lower pole and lifts on the upper one. These modes of torture are frequently combined. They are extra-legal, but are very frequently resorted to by magistrates.

17 In making his report to 玉皇上帝, *Tsao Wang* is generally credited with telling the strict truth.

19 冒失鬼一個, *one reckless devil*; 一個, as here used after the descriptive term, is quite like the English use of *one* before it.

20 刀筆先生, a writer who, figuratively speaking, uses a knife for a pen. Commonly applied to the 訟師 who hang about yaméns and manage lawsuits.

22 When you throw a dumpling at a dog, instead of hurting the dog, he eats the dumpling and you lose it and get no return for it. 沒有吃的 is an inversion of 沒有吃的. Similar inversions are frequently heard in the North.

LESSON CXCIX.

PUNS.

The Chinese word for a pun is 雙關, a double relation. The fact that nearly all the syllables in the Chinese language are repeated in a large number of words, greatly facilitates punning. Notwithstanding this fact, however, punning is not more frequent in Chinese than in English. Perhaps the very facility offered detracts from the spice of the pun. A Chinese pun is spoken but cannot ordinarily be written, save by doubling

the line as I have done, which, however, is like explaining a joke. Occasionally the pun turns on the double use of a single character, in which case the pun becomes like a pun in English. (4), (10), (16), (18). The translation of these puns, as such, is of course impossible; even to indicate their existence in a suitable manner, has been found a matter of no small difficulty.

課九十九百一第

LESSON CXCIX.

○ 若 告 扁 捧 手 眼 掉 能 那¹
 那¹¹ 是 訴 担 壽 就 抹 在 少 個
 個 我 你 長 長 桃 是 石 確 花 人
 孩 們 罷 遠 軟 有 錯 鏗 灰 白 還 是
 子 說 老 不 理 禮。○ 你⁶ 瞎 實 石 裏 是 牆
 實 在 豈 拉 ○ 看⁸ 是 ○ 打 打 甥 上
 不 成 不 車 你⁹ 不 二 我⁵ 實 石 打 種
 孩 子 說 敢 趕 要 小 的 閒 賢 直 生 ○ ○
 答 我 的。○ 心 的 候 香 你⁷ 了 出 說 話 辦 事 都 是 杵 頭
 送 送 子 們 ○ 他¹⁰ 一 點 候 甜 歸 歸 這 話 真 是 兩 手
 子 神 孫 是 他 的 尊 別 叫 他 們 實 期 是 蘿 頭 的
 娘 娘 一 根 篾 子 吃 藕 挑 倒 罷 了 我 的
 娘 破 了 褶 子 纔 不 成 威 嗎 了 我 的
 手 動

- 1 That man is like cabbage planted on the top of a wall,—very hard to {water. {keep on good terms with.
- 2 I cannot give more than common, nor will I offer less. It is still the nephew carrying the lantern,— {lighting his uncle. {as before.
- 3 All we say and do is like the pestle falling into the mortar,— {stones upon stone. {truth upon truth.
- 4 There is no outcome to this pupil; finally it will be a case of rubbing lime in both eyes,— {clear blind. {a total loss.
- 5 In his employ, I find myself like the tool-chest of a traveling tinker,—every movement is {a stroke of the file. {a mistake.
- 6 You are an embodiment of filial piety, —a great {saint. {idler.
- 7 What you say is like presenting longevity cakes with both hands,— {very polite. {very reasonable.
- 8 Don't be misled by his affability at first. After all he will be like a barber's carrying stick,—wanting in {length and flexibility. {continuance.
- 9 If you go, you must be a little careful and not let them use you up. Ans. Let me tell you; when a tiger pulls the wagon, nobody {drives. {dares.
- 10 For the older members of the family to reprove him is all right; but if we do it, he will be sure to say we are eating water-lily root with one chopstick,— {lifting by a hole. {hard to please.
- 11 Really that child is not going to come to anything. Ans. It is only when the Goddess of Maternity tears her satchel that the child {leaks out. {comes to nothing.

VOCABULARY.

常年 Ch'ang² nien². In ordinary years, commonly.
 石灰 Shih² hui¹..... Lime.
 香甜 Hsiang¹ t'ien². Affable, agreeable, sweet.
 捧 P'eng³. To hold in both hands; to present respectfully in both hands, to offer.
 長遠 Ch'ang² yüan³. Continuous, lasting, permanent.

送神娘娘 Sung⁴ shén² niang². The goddess who bestows children:—Note (11).
 子孫娘娘 Tsi³ sun¹ niang²..... The same.
 送子娘娘 Sung⁴ tsi³ niang²..... The same.
 呱 Wa¹. To cry, to bawl; to groan, to sob:—Note (13).
 成功 Ch'eng² kung¹. Accomplished, finished, consummated.

孩子咯。○有三個匠人，一塊兒給人說事，木匠說，我們給他一
 開鐵匠說，給他一合成功，石匠說，不然還是一起一起的來。○做什
 麼這麼唧唧呀喇呀喇的，真是蠟子蓋量棗，什麼聲兒。○這一連多少日
 子，不是下就是陰，總沒有露太陽的時候，今日却是新媳婦哭男人，
 好號天。○從¹⁵來說，大人不見小人過，若和他鬪，不丟人嗎，對我也不是
 個大人，答：你不是大人，難道是個小人不成。○有¹⁶個窮人，過年沒有
 錢買香，就將一個枯樹不予燒起來，供養財神，財神格外歡喜，就叫
 他發了大財，所以到第二個年節，那人特為買了頂高的線香，供養
 財神，財神見今年的香，大不如上年的那麼粗，就嘆了一口氣，底下
 的人說，老爺不要動怒，如今的人，都是越有越細。○孫¹⁷保安在年輕

- 12 Three artizans once joined together as mediators in a certain case. The carpenter said, "Let us cut the knot in two with ^{one saw-cut.} ^{one word.} The blacksmith said, "Let us settle the business up ^{at one heat.} ^{by a compromise.} The stone-cutter said, "Not so; let us rather proceed ^{a stone at a time.} ^{step by step.}"
- 13 What are you making such a hubbub about? It is a veritable measuring of dates with a lobster shell—what a ^{peck!} ^{noise!}
- 14 For these ever so many days it has been either raining or cloudy, with no sunshine at all, but to-day it is the bride wailing for her husband,—^{calling on Heaven.} ^{a clear day.}
- 15 It has been said that the man of high degree does not take offence at the man of low degree. Will we not be disgracing ourselves to quarrel with him? Rep. But I am not a man of high degree. Ans. Well, supposing you are not, you hardly count yourself a mean man do you?
- 16 A poor man had no money to buy incense at the new year, so he took a half rotten stump and burned it as an offering to the God of Wealth. The God of Wealth was especially pleased and made him rich. Therefore at the next new year, the man took pains to buy the best quality of fine incense and offer to him. He, seeing that the sticks of incense were ever so much less than that offered the year before, drew a long sigh. His servants said to him, "Don't be angry, your worship. In these times the more a man has the ^{smaller} ^{closer} he becomes."

號天 *Hao³ t'ien¹*. To call to Heaven for help in distress, to wail.
 好天 *Hao³ t'ien¹*. A clear day, a fair day, fair weather. [Note (16).
 不樹 *Tun¹*. A stump, a stub; a blo³ of wood:—
 不樹 *Shu⁴ tun¹*. A stump.
 供養 *Kung⁴ yang³*. To present offerings to the dead; to worship with offerings of food and incense.
 財神 *Ts'ai² shen²*. The God of Wealth:—Note (16).

年節 *Nien² chie²*. New year's festival.
 動怒 *Tung⁴ nu⁴*. To grow angry, to lose the temper. [vaunt.
 自誇 *Tsi⁴ k'wa¹*. To boast, to brag, to
 答道 *Ta¹ tao⁴*. To speak in reply, to reply, to respond. [farrier.
 獸醫 *Shou⁴ i¹*. A veterinary surgeon, a
 問道 *Wen⁴ tao⁴*. To ask, to question.
 連忙 *Lien² mang²*. Hurriedly, excitedly, quickly.

的時候，花錢就和花泥錢的一樣，現在忽然回了頭，不但捨不得花錢，又殷勤勤的過日子，那真是船板做棺材，飄流了半輩子，到後來纔成人。○依我說，他不自誇，還少丟點人兒，誰不知他母親是個巫婆，和一個衙役搭夥計，纔有了他呢。¹⁸這名謂抱着孩子進當舖，自己當人，人家却不當人。○有一隻病虎，被孫真人治好了，從此這虎就在孫真人門下聽用，這一天，孫真人打發虎去下帖請客，客一位也沒來，孫真人就問虎說，某先生怎麼沒來呢，虎回答說，叫我吃了，又問某先生呢，虎說也叫我吃了，孫真人大怒，罵那虎說，你這畜牲，既不會請客，怎麼又去吃人。○王二稜的父親和爺爺，都是當獸醫出身，有一天他問一個行路的人說，客作什麼生意發財，那客答

- 17 When Sun Pao An was a young man, he spent cash as if they were made of common clay; but he has now suddenly reformed, and not only is sparing in the use of money but is diligently making a living. That's a veritable case of making a ship's side into a coffin,—{floating }half a life-time and in old age {dissipating } {containing } a man. {becoming }
- 18 In my opinion he would disgrace himself less if he boasted less. Who does not know that his mother was a sorceress, who took up with a yamen runner and gave birth to him? Ans. His case is what is called carrying a child to the pawn shop,—he {wished to pawn a man }but {pawnbrokers } {considers himself a man } {others } do not {take men on pawn. } {consider him a man. }
- 19 A sick tiger was once cured by Sun Chên Jên, and ever afterwards the tiger served in his family. One day Sun Chên Jên sent the tiger to carry round his card inviting some guests to a feast. But not a single one of the guests came. Sun Chên Jên asked the tiger, saying, "Why has not so and so come?" The tiger replied, "I ate him." He then asked for so and so. The tiger said, "I ate him also." Upon this Sun Chên Jên got angry and reviled the tiger, saying, "You beast you! Since you do not know how to invite {guests }why do you go and eat {them? } {others } {theirs? }
- 20 Wang Êr Lêng's father and grandfather were farriers by profession. Meeting a traveler one day, he asked him what line of business he was in. The stranger replied, "I am

NOTES.

3 實打實 is a colloquial intensive, equivalent to 實實在在.

4 There is here a double pun—one in the use of 白 and one in the use of 瞎. To gratify spite on an enemy lime is sometimes thrown or rubbed in the eyes, producing blindness.

5 When a tinker files an article, he supports it on the top of his tool-chest, and also steadies his file by having a handle on its outer end, which works back and forth through a ring on the top of the same tool-chest.

6 The 二十四孝 is a small book or tract containing twenty-four stories of notable instances of filial piety. It is sometimes distributed by zealous religionists as a work of merit.

7 壽桃 are cakes made in the shape of peaches, with the character 壽 imprinted on them in red. A plate of them is sent as a complimentary present on the occasion of a birth-day.

8 The regulation *pien-tan* used by barbers to carry their kit is both *short* and *stiff*.

11 子孫娘娘, the goddess by whose favor parents beget children, and to whom women pray for the coveted blessing of bearing children. She is sometimes confounded with 觀音, though not by any means the same as the well known Goddess of Mercy. The term most commonly used in Shantung is 送神娘娘, the goddess who presents or brings the children to the mother. She is popularly represented as carrying the children in a bag or satchel thrown across her shoulder. In the South 送子娘娘 is also used.

12 一鏢兩開, *divide into two at one cut of the saw*. A single millstone, either upper or lower, is called 一起 *one list*,—the 起 being used as a classifier.

道，沒有生意，我是個耍手藝的。王二稜只當他說是耍獸醫的，就跳上前去，把那客打了一個跟頭。那客連忙爬起來問道：你爲什麼打我呢？我說耍手藝，還說耍你來嗎？王二稜說：你若耍我倒還罷了，你要我爹爹和我爺爺，我還能讓你白耍了嗎？○²¹有一個花子粧啞吧，在街上要錢，常用手指碗，又指口，呀呀的叫，有一天他拿着兩個錢，去買酒吃，吃完了說，再添些給我，賣酒的說，你向來不會說話，今天怎麼說起話來咯？花子說，向來我沒有錢，怎麼能說話呢？今天有了兩個錢，自然就會說話了。○²²姓孫的僱了一個夥計，因爲多日未曾吃麪，臉上很不歡喜，東家問他說，你這幾天怎麼不歡喜呢？他回答說，我們離家在外的人，多日沒有見面，那裏那些歡喜呢。

not in business; I am a mechanic." Wang Er Lêng supposing he said, "I make game of farriers," rushed at the stranger and knocked him headlong. The stranger, picking himself up, asked excitedly, "What did you strike me for? Was my saying I was a mechanic any insult to you?" Wang Er Lêng replied, "If you made game of me, I could put up with it, but do you suppose I will let you go free when you make game of my father and grandfather?"

21 A certain beggar was accustomed to go along the street pretending that he was dumb, pointing to his rice-bowl and then to his mouth and uttering inarticulate sounds. One day he took two cash and went and bought a drink of wine. When he had drunk it all up, he said, "Give me a little more." The wine-seller said, "Heretofore you were unable to speak; how is it that you can speak to-day?" He said, "Heretofore I had no cash, how could I speak? To-day I have ^{two} _{a few} cash and as a matter of course I can speak."

22 A man named Sun hired a workman, and because for a long while he got no vermicelli to eat, the workman's face had an unhappy expression. His employer asked, "How is it that you look so sad these days?" to which he replied, "How should we, who are away from our friends, keep all the while smiling, when we do not see ^{their faces} _{vermicelli} for so long?"

13 唧唧呱呱，or 唧呀呱呀，*fussing and crying, the confused noise of children talking and shouting and crying, hubbub, uproar.* The 唧 and 呀 are added in each case in order to separate and emphasize the other words.

15 "Mean" here makes the same pun in English that 小 does in Chinese.

16 不 is a colloquial character made by cutting off the top of 木 which makes a *wooden stump*. 財神 is the most popular and universally worshiped god in China. He is regarded as being the deified spirit of 比干 Pi-kan, a relative of the famous tyrant 紂辛. Pi-kan reproved the tyrant for his vices, upon which the tyrant ordered him to be put to death and his heart taken out, to see if there were really seven orifices (竅) in it, as was popularly reported. He was subsequently canonized as the God of Wealth.

17 There is here a double pun—one in 鬻洗 and one in 盛(成)人.

18 搭夥計, *to become companions*—as applied to a man and a woman—to live together temporarily as husband and wife, without any recognized marriage.

19 孫真人, a famous physician of the Tang dynasty, whose real name was 孫思邈. There is a pun in both 請客 and 吃人.

20 耍手藝, *to play at a trade; that is, to work at or follow a trade.* This derived use of 耍 came probably from the effort of the artizan to polish and ornament his work so as to please and gratify the taste of the purchaser.

21 The pun here turns on the double use of 兩個 and involves a sting at the egotism of those who have a little money.

課百二第

LESSON CC.

蜘蛛。○手⁸掌大小一隻船紅娘子在裏邊一
 中軍帳擺下八卦陣捉拿飛虎將打活物
 耳朶反安着打姓郭○小諸葛亮坐在
 三打一字非○高⁶家的頭李家的脚陳家的
 三十一右看一十三左右一齊看三百二十
 越⁴洗越飢餓不洗倒乾淨打物水○左⁵看
 爲³你喫纔做做了你又喫打物○
 花。○看²不見擋上一層是甚麼呢。答答
 拉開花結實又開花你猜是甚麼。答
 你別鬧我打破個謎兒給你猜一棵樹刺鋪

- 1 Don't be naughty and I'll make a riddle for you to guess. A little tree with spreading branches. It blooms, and when the fruit is ripe, it blooms again. Guess what it is. Ans. A stalk of cotton.
- 2 When you can't see, you put a screen between. What is it? Ans. Spectacles.
- 3 It was made {because you for you to} eat, and now that it is made you do not eat. Fits an article. A muzzle.
- 4 Washing makes it more and more dirty; it is cleaner without washing. Fits a thing. Water.
- 5 Looking at the left it counts 31, at the right 13, and at both sides together 323. Fits a character. 非.
- 6 Mr. Kao's head, Mr. Li's foot, and Mr. Ch'ên's ear set on the wrong side. Fits a surname. 郭.
- 7 A wee wee Chu Koñ Liang, sitting in an adjutant's tent, spreads out his radial array, to take prisoner the swift tiger braves. Fits a living thing. A spider.
- 8 A boat as large as your palm, containing a lady dressed in red. Down comes a shower of misty rain, but the boat comes along and all is dry. Fits a utensil. A charcoal iron.

LESSON CC.

RIDDLES AND EPIGRAMMATIC DISTICHS.

The Chinese term for a riddle, puzzle, or enigma is 謎語, or oftener in colloquial, simply 謎兒, which is pronounced mēr—as if written 悶兒. A considerable number of riddles and puzzles may be turned up, if one gets hold of a man who has a taste for such things and knows where to go to find them. I have not, however, heard of any published book specially devoted to riddles and enigmas. Some Chinese riddles evince considerable ingenuity, while others are but indifferent efforts. Many of their riddles contain puns, and some are based on puns. Nearly all have at least one rhyme. Many of them are based on the dissection of characters. Puzzles are often made by a ridiculous transformation of some passage from the classics, as (17), (19).

A much more popular and widely cultivated playing upon words is the 對兒 or 對子, an epigrammatic distich, which consists of two lines of

equal length and corresponding structure, but of different though correlated sentiment. Nouns are mated with nouns, verbs with verbs, particles with particles; also numbers with numbers, places with places, virtues with virtues, etc. The last words do not usually rhyme, and the tones should be opposite. The 對子 is a favorite style of embodying and exhibiting weighty or complimentary sentiments, as in the common 對聯, or wall scroll, and in 門對子, or door mottoes. Some of these 對子 are the product of much thought and skill, and exhibit the capabilities of Chinese writing to its best advantage. A number of collections of them are published. 對子 become a means of amusement and a test of literary skill, when one person proposes the first line and challenges another to match it. The proposer is of course supposed to be able to furnish the required line if the other party fails.

陣霧露雨，船到水就乾。打一用物 熨斗。○小小明光棍，常在綉房裏混，穿過一些綾羅綢緞，陪伴一些美色佳人。打一物 針。○打一物 家分兩院，兩院子孫多，多的倒比少的少，少的倒比多的多。打一物 算盤。○弟兄兩個一樣高，腰裏綑着黑絲綉，大哥大哥等等我，我上陰間走一遭。打一物 水筒。○荒郊野外一塊材，能工巧匠作出來，讀書的公子拉一把，他把公子抱在懷。打一物 圈椅子。○自幼兒紅顏美俊，被他人纏繞得黑瘦三分，不料他心不良棄舊換新，倒忘了原當初結髮之親。打一物 舊紅頭繩。○二人重疊高過天，十女共耕半畝田，我不騎羊羊騎我，千里姻緣一線牽。打四字 夫妻義重。○目字加兩點，莫作貝字猜，貝字欠兩點，莫作目字猜。打

- 9 A bright little slip of a fellow, constantly lounging in the ladies' boudoir; used to ^{{wearing} _{running through} silk and satin, and to being the companion of blooming beauties. *Fits an implement.* A needle.
- 10 A certain family lived in two courts with many children in each, and, strange to say, the greater were less than the lesser and the less were more than the greater. *Fits an article.* An abacus.
- 11 Two brothers just the same height; around each waist a sash of black; wait, brother, wait for me, while I take a trip to hades and back. *Fits an article.* A pair of water-buckets.
- 12 A stick of timber in the wild woodland, wrought by the artificer's skillful hand. A gentleman student ^{{gives it a pull} _{takes hold of one} and it folds him to its breast. *Fits an article.* A bow-backed chair.
- 13 From youth I was ruddy and beautiful, but a fellow wound me around him and made me one-third black and thin, and then—would you think it—ungratefully cast me aside for a new one, forgetting the original affiance of youth. *Fits an article.* An old red hair-string.
- 14 Two men piled up higher than heaven. Ten women together farming a half acre of land. I don't ride on a sheep, but a sheep rides on me. Mates distant a thousand miles still drawn by one line. *Fits four characters.* With husband and wife kindness is all-important.
- 15 An eye adding two dots, but don't guess a treasure; a treasure wanting two dots, but don't guess an eye. *Fits two characters.* 賀, 資.

VOCABULARY.

鋪拉 P'u¹ la¹. To spread out with the hands; scattered about, wide-spread.
 開花 K'ai¹ hwa¹. To bloom, to blossom.
 箍 Ku¹. A hoop; a fillet; to hoop.
 箍嘴 Ku¹ tsui³. A muzzle. (N.)
 籠嘴 Lung³ tsui³. A muzzle. (C.)
 笊 Chao⁴. A bamboo skimmer; a ladle.
 籬 Li². A skimmer.
 籬籬 A perforated skimmer made of wire or bamboo. A muzzle, a blind. (S.)

中軍 Chung¹ chün¹. The adjutant commanding the forces under a governor-general or governor.
 八卦 Pa¹ kwa⁴. The eight divining diagrams invented by Fu-hi and which form the ground work of the Book of Changes.
 捉拿 Chod¹ na². To catch, to seize.
 飛虎 Fei¹ hu³. A flying tiger; a fabulous animal.
 蜘蛛 Chi¹. An insect; a spider.
 蛛 Chu¹. The spider.

牛有疾。○瞎子打雨傘。蓋有之矣，我未之見

一三國人名孔明。○大爺的牛不喫草。打四書一句伯

象憂亦憂，象喜亦喜。○大爺的牛不喫草。打四書一句伯

明似鏡，只爲路一條。○大爺的牛不喫草。打四書一句伯

婦人打了一頓，這婦人說，你打我知曉，必然有人挑心裏

就疑惑他們有了私約，回家告訴他的兒子，他兒子就把

恰巧從家裏出來，他見媳婦向人擺手，那人也走得很慌，

擺，那人就隨着去了，誰知無巧不成故事，這婦人的婆婆，

一個人問路，婦人因爲不便答話，就向旁邊路上，把手一

二字賀資。○一個年輕的婦人，在碾子上碾米，忽然來了

- 16 A young woman was at the mill hulling rice, when suddenly there came by a stranger asking the way. Because it was not appropriate for the woman to speak, she pointed out the road by a motion of her hand, and the stranger passed on. But, "every freak of fortune gives rise to a story," and so sure enough the woman's mother-in-law came out just in time to see the motion of her daughter-in-law's hand and the man hastening on his way. She at once suspected they had some secret intrigue and went back into the house and told her son, and he in turn gave his wife a beating. The woman remarked: Your ^{carrying} _{beating} me, I know quite well is the work of somebody's ^{lifting} _{instigating}; but my heart is clear as a mirror, it was simply on account of the road. *Fits an article.* A lantern.
- 17 It sits on the south side but faces towards the north. When ^{Shang} _{the form} is sad, ^{Shun} _{the image} also is sad. When ^{Shang} _{the form} is pleased, ^{Shun} _{the image} also is pleased. *Fits an article.* A mirror.
- 18 He bored a hole in the wall to get light to study by at night. *Fits a character in the Three Kingdoms.* ^{K'ung Ming} _{a light-hole}.
- 19 My uncle's cow won't eat grass. *Fits a sentence in the Four Books.* ^{Pè-nu} _{uncle's cow} is sick.
- 20 A blind man carrying an umbrella. *Fits two clauses in the Four Books.* ^{Perhaps there are, but I have not seen any.} _{I have a cover, but I have never seen it.}

蜘蛛 The spider:—Note (7).
 霧露 Wu⁴ lu⁴..... Fog, mist, spray.
 綉 Hsiu⁴..... Same as 繡.
 綉房 Hsiu⁴ fang². A young ladies' chamber, a lady's boudoir.
 佳人 Chia¹ jên²..... A beautiful woman.
 綉 T'ao¹..... A sash, a band, a fringe, an edging.
 陰間 Yin¹ chien¹..... The unseen world, hades.
 郊 Chiao¹. Waste land, common; a sacrifice to heaven and earth. [fields.]
 野外 Yie³ wai⁴..... A wilderness, barren

荒郊 Hwang¹ chiao¹. A waste common or wilderness. [chair.]
 圈椅子 Ch'üan¹ i³ tsi²..... A bow-backed chair.
 繞 Yao³..... To wind around, to compass.
 纏繞 Ch'ien² jao⁴. To wind around, to wrap; to coil.
 重疊 Ch'ung² tie². In layers, in folds; piled up, doubled.
 擺手 Pai³ shou³. To wave the hand, to beckon on.
 私約 Si¹ yot¹. A secret agreement, an illicit intrigue.

也。○²¹ 死也不管，三杯入肚，天不怕，地不怕，即老婆亦不怕。○²² 讀書、秋讀書、春讀書，讀春秋，東當鋪、西當鋪、東當鋪、西當鋪。○²³ 各別心腸。○²⁴ 琴瑟琵琶，八大王一樣頭腦，魑魅魍魎，四小鬼。○²⁵ 頭野外黃花，好似金釘釵地，都中白塔，猶如玉鑽鑽天。○²⁶ 乾隆皇上出了一個對子兒，說：「一大天上日月明，良月爲期，何申對的說，長巾帳中子女好，少女爲妙。」○²⁷ 重的時候，知道他兒子說，憐蓮子心，中苦，他兒子說，離兒腹內酸。

- 21 A distich for a wine-bibber ran thus:— with a bottle in his hand he don't care for the east, he don't care for the west, he don't care even for death itself; with three cups in his belly he's not afraid of heaven, he's not afraid of earth, he's not even afraid of his wife.
- 22 Study in the spring, study in the autumn, spring and autumn keep up study, studying {Spring and Autumn}; a pawn shop on the east, a pawn shop on the west, east and west a pawnshop, pawning {east and west} things.
- 23 Lute, harpsichord and guitar; eight great kings, heads all alike; a brownie, an ogre, a nyx and a naiad; four little imps, each with different viscera.
- 24 Ice, cold, wine; one dot, two dots, three dots: a clove's fragrant blossom; the head of a hundred, the head of a thousand, the head of ten thousand.
- 25 The daisy growing on the common like a golden nail stuck in the earth: a white pagoda in the city like a pearly drill piercing heaven.
- 26 The Emperor K'ien-lung once proposed [one line of] a distich—One great heaven above, sun and moon [make] bright, the fair moon gives radiance. Hoā-shên matched it saying, In the long curtained tent sons and daughters are good, but the little maiden is the fairest.
- 27 When Mr. Wang was very ill, knowing that father and son must soon separate, and both being filled with

知曉 *Chi¹ hsiào³*. To know, to be aware:—
 Note (16).
 琵琶 *Pⁱ2 p^a2*. A guitar or viol.
 魑 *Chiⁱ2*. A mountain elf, a brownie.
 魅 *Mei⁴*. An ogre, a demon.
 魍 *Wang³*. A water-demon, a nyx.
 魎 *Liang³*. A naiad.
 丁香 *Ting¹ hsiang¹*. A clove.
 丁香花 *Ting¹ hsiang¹ hwa¹*. A clove blossom; the lilac. [lion].
 黃花 *Hwang² hwa¹*. The daisy, the dande-

申 *Shên¹*. To extend, to expand; the 9th Chinese hour—3 to 5 p.m.
 分離 *Fên¹ li²*. To diverge, to scatter, to separate.
 燈 *Têng¹*. A contracted form of 燈.
 夕 *Hsiⁱ2*. Evening, dusk; late.
 湖 *Hu²*. A lake.
 江湖 *Chiang¹ hu²*. Rivers and lakes; wandering, far-traveled, peripatetic.
 本身 *Pên³ shên¹*. Oneself, own, self.
 事業 *Shi⁴ yie⁴*. Calling, pursuit, occupation, profession.

豆 一 木 着 江 宦 字 香 潮 ○
 頁 品 木 本 海 家 同 人 朝 此
 爲 三 木 本 湖 第 邊 第 落 木
 頭 口 木 身 纔 二 網 二 山 是
 一 口 不 的 是 個 綢 個 山 柴
 犇 口 知 事 是 說 綵 是 長 山
 三 口 蓋 業 個 紗 是 常 山 出
 牛 不 了 作 大 三 字 江 常 出
 牛 知 多 對 丈 字 湖 長 常
 牛 喫 少 兒 夫 同 客 常 長
 不 了 屋 頭 夫 邊 講 長 常
 知 多 一 個 有 江 明 長 常
 點 少 個 是 三 海 各 就 青
 了 酒 是 木 人 湖 就 本 業
 多 第 是 匠 定 三 穿 遍 作
 少 三 賣 說 規 字 遍 了 對
 頭 個 酒 的 尸 至 大 綢 一 聯
 ○ 種 莊 水 西 爲 屋 一 森 三
 蘇³² 小 妹 的 說 酒 三 貼 了 官 三
 把 說 酒 三 貼 了 官 三

grief, he gave a distich to his son, saying,
 { I am sorry my son that your heart is grieved.
 { The water-lily seed is bitter within.
 The son replied { Leaving your son fills your
 breast with sadness. { The pear is sour at the core.
 28 This wood makes firewood, and every
 hill yields it: a stick on fire makes
 a lamp, and night by night there are
 many.
 29 The tide in the sea-water flows,
 morning by morning a tide; one
 morning it rises, another it falls. The
 pine on the mountain grows, day by
 day it grows, and it grows ever green.
 30 Two brothers-in-law, the elder a
 literary man and the other a merchant
 traveler, agreed together to make each
 a line of a distich, each adhering to
 his own profession. The elder said,
 Three characters with the same side,
 silk, satin and gauze; and three
 others with the same top, officer,
 statesman and family; when they're
 all clothed with the silk, satin and
 gauze, then they become the family
 of a statesman. The younger matched
 it thus, Three characters with the
 same side, river, sea and lake;
 three characters with the same top,
 great, rod and man; when you've
 traveled over all the rivers, seas and
 lakes, then you become a valiant man.
 31 Three men agreed to make distich
 lines, each adhering to his own pro-
 fession and basing his line on two
 characters. The first, who was a
 carpenter, said, Corpse arrive makes
 a house; one forest of three trees,
 trees upon trees, it's hard to tell how
 many houses they'll build. The sec-
 ond, who was a liquor merchant,

尸 *Shi*¹..... A corpse; an effigy; useless.
 犇 *Pên*¹..... An unusual writing of 奔.
 游 *Yu*²..... To float, to drift, to rove.
 言道 *Yen² tao⁴*..... To speak, to declare, to say.
 恍然 *Hwang³ jan²*. Fluttered, startled; with a
 start, in a flash, suddenly.
 酒令 *Chiu³ ling⁴*. The key of the drink:—
 Note (33).
 當場 *Tang⁴ ch'ang³*. During trial or examination;
 at the time, then and there.

交 *Yao*²..... To lay crosswise; to mix.
 义 *Ch'a*¹..... To cross the arms; a crotch; a fork.
 扱 *Ch'a*¹..... To prod, to stick; to nip.
 檜 *Kwei*⁴..... The cypress tree.
 唉 *Ai*¹. An exclamation or sigh of sorrow; an
 expression of deprecation. See *ai*².
 喪心 *Sang⁴ hsin¹*. To do wrong knowingly, to
 violate conscience.
 啐 *Ts'ui*⁴. To smack the lips; to spit; pish!
 *pugh!* bosh!

洞房的多會對上，多會纔能開門，他丈夫拆開一看，寫的是閉
 門推出窗前月，把他丈夫悶了半夜，也沒能對上，後來
 蘇東坡願意觸動他的靈機，就找了一塊顛頭，向花缸
 裏一丟，水中的月影紛紛亂動，他丈夫恍然大悟，立時
 提筆對上說，投石冲開水底天。○有³³三個人一同吃酒，
 定規以對對兒爲酒令，當場對不上的，罰酒三杯，頭一
 個說，一個朋字兩個月，二物一色霜和雪，一月下霜，一
 山下雪，第二個說，一個出字兩座山，二物一色錫和鉛，
 一山出錫，一山出鉛，來到第三個，他却故意的不說，那

said, Water and grain make liquor; one series with three mouths, mouth after mouth, it's hard to tell how much liquor they'll drink. The third, who was a farmer, said, A bean and a leaf make a head; one scurry of three cows, cows upon cows, it's hard to say how many bobs of their heads there were.

32 Miss Su shut the door of the bride-chamber and put forth one line of a distich to her husband Ch'in Shao Yu, saying, When you've matched it, I'll open the door, and not till then. Opening the paper her husband found written, I close the door and shut out the moonlight in front of the window, which put him at his wits' end for half the night to no purpose. At last Su Tung P'ōā, in order to suggest an idea to his mind, took a piece of a tile and, holding it over a flower pot filled with water, dropped it in, causing the image of the moon in the water to shimmer and shake. Upon this a bright thought flashed upon the bridegroom, and he at once took up his pen and wrote, I throw a stone and split open the sky beneath the water.

33 Three men were drinking wine together, and agreed to match distichs as a forfeit. Whoever failed to respond then and there, was to drink three cups. The first one said, A shed composed of two months; two things of one color,—frost and snow;

NOTES.

1 破, means properly to *split or tear open*, and seems to apply more naturally to solving a riddle than, as here used, to making or propounding one. It is in fact used in both senses, and Chinese scholars differ as to which is the original and more appropriate sense.

2 刺鋪拉, *thrusting out a spread*,—a peculiar phrase, coined apparently for this special case. In reading the accent is thrown on 拉.

3 打一物, *strikes, or refers to an article*; that is, *fits an article*. Such a phrase is generally added to riddles as a guide to the solution.

5 This riddle is based on the short hand method of writing numbers. The numbers one, two and three, which consist of parallel strokes, are distinguished by being written alternately, horizontal and perpendicular.

7 諸葛亮, being one of the most renowned of Chinese generals, is made to represent the spider. With the Chinese, strategy is the fundamental idea of generalship and of the art of war. 蜘蛛 is the book term for a spider. The collo-

quial name, both in Northern and in Central Mandarin, is 蛛蛛. The eight, or rather the eight times eight, diagrams are generally arranged by geomancers in radial lines in concentric circles, making a figure not unlike a spider's web.

10 The understanding of this riddle depends on distinguishing between *value* and *number*, both of which are expressed by 多 and 少.

13 There is throughout this riddle an underlying reference to a marriage alliance, as if between the hair-string and the wearer.

16 知曉 is a facetious combination of 知道 and 曉得, only found in light literature, or in witty sayings. Why under the circumstances the woman made the riddle she did, is far from evident.

17 象憂亦憂 is from the Analects, and was said of Shun's noble treatment of his unworthy brother Shang. It is necessary to take 象 for the person standing before the mirror, not for the image in it, as the meaning of the word would more naturally suggest.

SUPPLEMENTAL VOCABULARY

OF

SECOND READINGS.

A number of the second readings noted in the vocabularies, it was not found convenient to introduce in subsequent lessons. Such readings of course remain undefined. They are here brought together and defined for the information of the student, and are included in the general index.

- 說** *Shui⁴*. To persuade, to urge; to solicit patronage, to drum. See *shwoá¹*.
- 藏** *Tsang⁴*. A storehouse; a retreat; a safe. See *ts'ang²*.
- 王** *Wang⁴*. . . . To rule as a king. (w.) See *wang²*.
- 塗** *Tu²*. Mud; to daub; to fill up a crack; to dirty; to blot out. See *tu¹*.
- 肉** *Ju⁴*. . . . Cinuamon. See *jou⁴*.
- 溜** *Liu⁴*. . . . A current, a stream. See *liu¹*.
- 咽** *Yen¹*. . . . The throat, the gullet. See *yen⁴*.
- 塞** *Sé¹, or sai¹*. To stop up, to obstruct, to hinder; dull, stupid. See *sé¹*.
- 訂** *Ting⁴*. To settle; to criticize; to collate; to adjust. See *ting¹*.
- 舍** *Shé³*. To put away, to neglect, to set aside. See *shé⁴*.
- 拽** *Yie⁴*. To trail, to drag after, to pull. See *chwai⁴*.
- 嘔** *Ou³*. . . . To quiet, to pacify. See *ou¹*.
- 讀** *Tou⁴*. . . . A clause; a stop. See *tu²*.
- 奇** *Chi¹*. . . . Odd, single; a remainder. See *ch'i²*.
- 操** *Ts'ao⁴*. . . . A principle, a purpose. See *ts'ao¹*.
- 累** *Lei¹*. To tie together; to accumulate, to heap up; often. See *lei⁴*. The meanings pertaining to the two tones are differently distributed in different places.
- 索** *Sod³*. A rope, a cord. See *sod¹* and *sod²*. The tones are not distinguished in Les. 53, as should have been done; the distribution however differs in different places.
- 摩** *Mod²*. To polish, to smooth; to feel of. See *mod¹*.
- 估** *Ku⁴*. . . . Second hand, no fixed price. See *ku¹*.
- 符** *Fu²*. . . . A charm, a spell. See *fu³*.
- 妻** *Ch'i⁴*. . . . To give to wife. (w.) See *ch'i¹*.
- 勁** *Ching⁴*. . . . Strong, powerful, sturdy. See *chin⁴*.
- 淋** *Lin⁴*. . . . To filter, to dribble, to slaver. See *lin²*.
- 鮮** *Hsien³*. . . . Rare, scarce. (w.) See *hsien¹*.
- 汨** *Ku³*. . . . To mix; to rise. (w.) See *mi⁴*.
- 蒙** *Méng³*. . . . 蒙古, Mongolia. See *méng²*.
- 披** *P'i¹*. To open, to uncover; to rive apart. See *p'ei¹*. [*chia³*.
- 賈** *Ku³*. . . . To sell, to traffic; a shopman. See *hun²*.
- 渾** *Hun⁴*. . . . Confused, chaotic. See *hun²*.
- 彈** *Tan⁴*. . . . A bullet, a ball; a pill. See *t'an²*.
- 卷** *Chüan³*. . . . To roll up, to curl. See *chüan⁴*.
- 噙** *An¹*. To gobble up with the mouth. (w.) See *od²*.
- 摟** *Lou¹*. . . . To rake together. See *lou³*.
- 卡** *Ch'ia²*. . . . To pinch, to clamp. See *ch'ia³*.
- 蔓** *Wan⁴*. . . . A vine, a tendril. (w.) See *man²*.
- 熨** *Yün⁴*. To iron clothes; a charcoal smoothing-iron. See *yü⁴*.
- 契** *Hsie⁴*. Name of a statesman in the reign of Shun. See *ch'i⁴*.
- 罅** *Ch'a²*. . . . A crack, a flaw, a joint. See *ch'a¹*.
- 叨** *T'ao¹*. To desire, to seek for earnestly, to covet. See *tao¹*.
- 蹶** *Chüe²*. To stumble, to slip; to leap. See *chüe³*.
- 校** *Chiao⁴*. To collate, to revise; to judge of; stocks for the feet. See *hsiao⁴*.

螞 *Ma*⁴..... A locust. See *ma*³.
音 *Hsi*⁴. To feed, to rear; to lay up, to hoard.
 (w.) See *ch'u*⁴.
挾 *Chia*¹. To clasp under the arm, to pinch; to
 hide away, to appropriate. See *hsie*².
豈 *K'ai*³. Delighted, joyous,—used for 愜. (w.)
 See *ch'i*³.
陸 *Liu*⁴. Used in official documents for 六.
 See *lu*⁴.

旋 *Hsüan*⁴. To revolve, to whirl round; dizzy.
 See *hsüan*².
臥 *P'a*¹..... To fall or lie full length. See *p'a*².
繫 *Chi*⁴..... To tie, to fasten on, to bind. See *hsi*⁴.
踫 *Tie*¹..... To fall, to dart down. (w.) See *tien*³.
觀 *Kwan*⁴..... A temple, a hermitage. See *kwan*¹.
會 *Tseng*¹. Great—said of generations as great—
 grandson, etc. See *ts'eng*².
蝦 *Hsia*¹..... A shrimp, a prawn. See *ha*².

CHARACTERS AND PHRASES OVERLOOKED.

In spite of every care and pains, a few new characters and phrases were overlooked, and so failed to be defined in their proper places. Some of them turned up again and were defined in subsequent lessons. The remainder of those discovered

up to this date are defined below. If the student meets a new character or phrase not defined in the given lesson he should turn to the index, and he will probably find it either in some subsequent lesson or in this place.

唬 *Hu*¹. To affright, to startle by a sudden noise.
 Also read *hsiao*¹ in *wên-li*.
冊 *Ts'ê*⁴ or *ch'ai*⁴. A register, a list; a volume;
 records; a census.
臥 *Woa*⁴. To rest; to lie down, to repose, to
 doze.
戴 *Tai*⁴..... To wear on the head or face; crested.
作 *Tsu*³..... To tell, to let out. See *tsod*⁴.
丟人 *Tiu*¹ *jên*². To disgrace oneself, to be put
 to shame.
生火 *Sheng*¹ *hwoa*³. To kindle a fire, to make
 a fire.

廚子 *Ch'u*² *tsi*³..... A cook.
江 *Chiang*¹. A river; the great river or Yang-
 tse.
怯 *Chie*⁴..... Timorous, cowardly; dreading.
夢 *Meng*⁴. To dream, to see visions; vanity; ob-
 scure.
胡 *Hu*². What, how; the Mongols; confused,
 careless; reckless—used for 糊.
僕 *P'u*²⁴. A vassal; a servant; "your servant."
賞 *Shang*³. To give a reward, to bestow, to
 confer.

依 296.12
 係 tsan² 3 sign of plural
 係 169 pi² hui ng² 219 sent 9 in P. 7 mên⁴ 76



SUPPLEMENT.

I.

LISTS OF SUPPLEMENTARY WORDS AND PHRASES.

It was originally intended to print the following lists in connection with the several lessons to which they belong. Inasmuch, however, as they are intended chiefly for reference, or as exercises for advanced students, it has been deemed more suitable to put them in a supplement. They represent a variety of dialects. The student can ascertain from his teacher which words or phrases are current in his own dialect. Even a cursory

examination of these lists will give the student a useful, general idea of the range of the several idioms involved. It will also give useful employment to a teacher in off hours to have him construct short sentences illustrating these examples, which can then be read as exercises. The lists are not exhaustive, but are sufficient for all practical purposes.

LESSON XXVII.

<p>把 鎚 鉗 鑷 刷 掃 條 鑰 笊 鞭 撓 劍 子 子 子 子 帚 帚 匙 篋 子 子</p>	<p>件 衣 褂 小 大 小 大 綿 裕 袍 褲 汗 裳 子 褂 褂 襖 襖 襖 襖 子 子 衫</p>
<p>鋼 鏡 鑿 銼 傘 梳 篋 火 火 鞋 蠅 子 剪 鉗 拔 甩 子 子 子</p>	<p>背 馬 單 外 公 褻 褂 褂 套 事</p>
<p>塊 石 木 洋 玻 玉 磨 水 饅 豆 綢 緞 頭 頭 鐵 璃 石 石 牌 頭 腐 子 子</p>	<p>位 神 皇 宰 大 公 娘 太 公 相 少 師 上 相 人 主 娘 子 子 公 爺 娘</p>
<p>布 補 果 甜 王 餠 梨 紙 板 銅 鉛 錫 煤 襖 子 瓜 瓜 餠</p>	<p>師 奶 姑 小 將 副 總 老 師 紳 董 客 親 母 奶 娘 姐 軍 爺 爺 太 傅 士 事 戚 爺</p>
<p>炭 甄 糖 餅 油 繩 銀 粉 硯 劈 皮 墨 土 炸 子 子 子 台 柴 子 壑 鬼</p>	<p>表 師 令 令 老 學 朋 教 牧 長 執 會 醫 兄 兄 郎 愛 翁 生 友 師 師 老 事 友 生</p>

LESSON XLI.

過來	丟過 提過 擲過 正過 槍過 奪過 牽過 拉過 掀過 抬過 梢過	遞過 鑽過 臥過
回來	拖過 跑過 漫過 蹒過 換過 兌過 跳過 跟過 張過 撥過 送過 拽過 扔過	回來 交回 梢回 轉回 退回 贏回 贖回 頂回 牽回 跑回 原回 槍回
過去	領過 帶過 蹒過 推過 鑽過 臥過 挽回 過來	買回 叫回 抱回 圈回 敗回 趕回 追回 打回
過去	跳過 蹒過 漫過 蹒過 兌過 推過 撥過 糊弄 跟過 飛過 拽過 扔過 拿過	回去 退回 梢回 贏回 帶回 拉回 牽回 贖回 跑回 槍回 趕回 追回
		打勝 回回 去去

LESSON XLII.

本	詩文 冊子 卷子 新報 皇曆 曲曆 聖子 新約 舊約 聖諭	張 弓告 示黃 票子 發子 鏃子 杖子 鋸子 鐮子 鋤子 把子
部	數學 代數 四書 詩經 書經 易經 左傳 禮記 春秋 周禮 字彙	梳約 契子 呈子 杖子 文書 路票 功牌 匯票 案子 嘴子 膏藥
串珠	綱鑑 史記 字帖	管 笛子 簫子
行	樹稼 莊稼 花稼 淚章 文章 鴈手 手藝 生意	錠 銀子 金子 硃墨

套 傢書話拳曲故戲把首衣箱 伙 子事法戲飾裳櫃	句 詩文笑淡俗文閒官土古言 章話話話話話話話話語語
盤碟盃口謊木盆花 子子 供話梳 盆	賦詞古 文

LESSON XLVII.

頭 眉椿替頂當源肩寫節襖青 頭頭頭頭頭頭頭頭頭頭	兆彩年錢行斧伙駕墊紉 頭頭頭頭頭頭頭頭頭頭
--------------------------------	--------------------------

LESSON LI.

網釋婦君房斷迷引分門放懊勞 鄉放女王屋絕惑誘別戶肆悔苦	尊下零整驕謙羨喜憂喜飢寒法 貴賤碎焚傲虛慕悅愁樂餓冷則
担粗英豪挽引懇慈仁公潔污誠 當魯雄傑回導切悲愛義淨穢實	醜俊榮羞决疑深淺簡拖差過偏 陋俏耀辱斷惑厚薄捷累錯失彊
約管光黑勸警盼羞通端邪兇良 束轄明暗勉戒望恥達正僻惡善	活直彎改回原誇聞觀稟曉憑界 潑率曲變轉本獎聽看報諭據限
順連經刑賞偷健疾恩激嫉怨惱 從絡歷罰賜竊壯病患發妒恨怒	修生緣因意教身靈樹性律法較 理活故由思化體魂木情例度比
親冷保暴伺治隱顯表攬推辭驅 近淡佑虐候理藏露明承諉別逐	剛柔均成敗寬窄度斟算原吉悲 硬軟勻全壞綽狹量酌計諒慶哀
逼忍興衰茂謹疎懈懶殷傲靈蠢 迫耐旺敗盛慎忽怠惰勤醒巧笨	行逃欺瞞錢拆滿缺虧稱稱詔官 走走騙哄財散足少欠呼讚謂宦

要飯 討罪 犯水 喝全 完驗 效駁 辯睦 和競 爭備 預鈍 遲促 急祿 爵祿

燒火 曠工

LESSON LII.

託人 着人 差人 屈人 惱人 笑人 喜人 惡人 賺人 害人 愛人

轉制 賣弄 連合 挖苦 衝撞 度量 感動 安慰 逆料 疑惑 坑害 麻繁 譏諷

臊人 招人 戀人 服人 混人 辱人 坑人 賴人 嘆人 勒人 讓求 煩人

餽人 唐突 堵喪 招呼 喝醜 試探 指使 朦弄 瞞哄 催促 挾制

派人 欺人 擄人 饒人 疼人 嚇人 驚人 貼人 告人 添人 用人 尋人 僱人

窺探 稱呼 謀害 隨派 分派 倭儂 咒詛 輕慢 寬恕 刁賴 誣告 羅唆 勞動

嫉人 詔人 奉人 引誘 教導 嚇唬 勸化 啟發 幫助 憐恤 鬥弄 難人

使喚 拒絕 圈磨 折磨 交往 訓誨 扶持 周旋 接待 激發 應酬 安排 率領

勤人 勤人 勒人 刻薄 刻苦 抬舉 小看 褒貶 誇獎 糟蹋 欺壓 原諒 提拔 讒謔

伺候 稱讚 將就 調戲 誘惑 迷惑 引導 鼓舞 藐視 調弄 成全 唆挑 託賴

議人 親熱 急煞 啣嚙 責備 督責 教訓 附就 差遣 耍弄 壓勢 壓量 訛詐

開導 警戒 勉勵 勸勉 離齷 凌辱

LESSON LXVIII.

樹科 松樹 梧桐 核桃 柿樹 花紅 李子 杏樹 桃樹 秣稭 竹子 草子

稻子 麥子 豆子 秣稭 芋頭 山藥 蔓菁 生菜 芹菜 韭菜 蒜花 水仙 百合 百子

迎春 荷花 梅花 菊花 芍藥 芭蕉 柑子 橘子 桑樹 楸樹 榆樹 楊柳 樹

葫蘆 茄子 王瓜 甜瓜 西瓜

乘 車水牛磨礮碓機櫃廚架籬 子車車子子子子子子子子子子	口 缸甕刀劍鐘鏽井棺好屋鉞 材話
砵	釘箱螺味 子絲兒 釘
根 繩柱汗鬚洋絲條帶皮篋旗 子子毛子線線子子條子子杆	疋 布緞哈綾洋山綿篋槳櫓 子喇子縐紬紬
棒香竹杆棍鞭菸 子子子子袋	輛 馬東 車洋 車
堆 甄瓦石木木鈹粃草柴煤雪 頭罈灰頭花食	間 屋客飯廚廳客樓舖空廁 子屋屋屋屋廳房子屋屋
糞土人齷 齷	副 鈴帶蹄肝眼襖紙骨骰手牌 鏹子子腸鏡袖牌牌子飾釘
雙 靴套眼手脚父鞋鞋 子褲睛母傍子	棺心腸對對瓣屏套 材腸子子聯頭子褲 板線

LESSON LXXII.

家 釋媽文武店卿咱奴孤佛通 家家家家家家家家家家家家	喜喪翁皇便船舖上下仙說喝好 主主翁上家家家家家家家家 家家家家
會名酒創姨女老娘娼婁鄰東西 家家家家家人婆們婦子舍鄰鄰 家家家家家家家家家家家家	男女苦寒名 家家家家 家家
老老舅姑姐妹女叔大妯姑婆買 爺娘舅姑姐妹婿叔爺嬸嫂娘賣 家家家家家家家家家家家家	

LESSON LXXIII.

發	發發發發發發發發發發發	發發發發發發發發發發發																						
懶	狠	抖	木	喘	白	綠	青	黑	烏	藍	大	邁	福	沉	狠	燒	驚	迷	顛	病	渴	筋	頭	
發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發	發
明	光	暗	怵	達	科	芽	苗	旺	活	兵	火	氣	夢	咆	哮									

LESSON LXXIV.

開	擘	破	搬	推	挪	攤	派	均	勻	排	解	割	劃	剝	沖	剝	夾	量	伸	弄	安	傳	行	撥	
開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開
化	撐	掙	裂	撬	撥	扒	撒	披	泡	勻	鑿	砍	崩	看	攻										
開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開	開									

LESSON LXXV.

住	保	拴	欺	釘	粘	黏	按	踮	摺	握	搗	穩	攔	瞞	牽	掩	留	躺	護	耐	抓	吃	板	擋
住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住
綁	騎	攔	坐	站	塞	捉	擒	停	把	頂	混	扯	墊	捆	降	吸	証	圈	圍	慫	撥			
住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住	住

LESSON LXXVI.

到	論	看	聽	請	唱	念	點	推	擠	解	拉	等	問	講	寫	印	話	禮	冤	惡	醜	賤	貴	跟
到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到	到

LESSON XCI.

動 行走撥招扞撥擁夾銼盪扯 動動動動動動動動動動動動 動	說問盤沖震傾頓搬揀掀壓閃慌 倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒
感勞打鼓揜頓激引活推掘扛轉 動動動動動動動動動動動動	帶按張泡淋顛擠噴拿酸醉磕做 倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒
搬掀抱請搖背拿擇弄扎切割砍 動動動動動動動不不動動動動 動動	犯 背駝挑扛架打制說做走坐 犯犯犯犯犯犯犯不不不不不 犯犯犯犯犯犯
求指提叫輓牽拖撐喚 動使不不不不不不 動動動動動動動動	弄耐 不不 犯犯
倒 摔碰撞撲滑揪跪擁打昏拉 倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒倒	

LESSON XCII.

及 打寫做等想跑忍 算不不不不不不 不不不不不不不 及及及及及及及	掉 喪棄刷槎抹去起弄勾丟打 掉掉掉掉掉掉掉掉掉掉掉
迭 逃擋打收拾拾 不不不不不不 迭迭迭迭迭迭 迭迭迭迭迭迭	賣磕扭走 掉掉掉掉

LESSON XCVIII.

處 妙強喜笑貴賤美好看興衰不 處處處處處處處處處處 處處處處處處處處處處	驕軟熱糊不不不 傲弱鬧塗服濟及 處處處處處處處處
---	--------------------------------

LESSON C.

<p>牀 鋪涼蚊帳地馬炕 蓋席帳子毯褥席 子</p>	<p>桿 長鳥火大大左旂矛棍竹 槍鎗鎗燾旂督子子棍 旂</p>
<p>枝 筆箭令令鉛梳烟耳簪旂鞭 箭箭箭筆筆桿鎗挖子子</p>	<p>盞 茶油飯</p>
<p>矛竹藕 子</p>	<p>穗 黍稷稔胡玉辮帽粟 子子子秫秫穗穗</p>
<p>座 門油大官當牌鹽客酒鐘鼓 樓房廳廳舖坊店店樓樓</p>	<p>層 意浮玻親大房紙臺插 思雲璃威殿子階板</p>
<p>大亭管墳碑墻神香講壇舖 殿子盤 龕亭書子</p>	<p>顆 黍秈大稔粳包棒黃綠缸黑 子米米子米米子豆豆豆</p>
<p>陣 雪雹霧笑哭鬧雷怒冷烟魚 子</p>	<p>小碗菽沙人丸珍 豆豆頭藥珠</p>
<p>雁人心鬼陰仙庭打瘋忙亂 疼哭風風風罵癲</p>	<p>粒 黍稔秈大粳包棒黃綠缸黑 子子米米米米子豆豆豆</p>
<p>場 戰飢電露霜病空辛哭笑打 荒子 夢苦</p>	<p>小碗菽沙 豆豆</p>
<p>馬是人熱笑 非命鬧話</p>	<p>掛 鐘表錢門窗竹數朝鍊鬚鬚 簾簾簾子子子子</p>
<p>鋪 楊青 菲</p>	

LESSON CI.

盡 得盡 耗盡 殺盡 窮盡 自盡 月盡 水盡 寒盡 受盡	定 料定 持定 拘定 立定 約定 安定 派定 判定 擬定 平定 保定
完 用完 使完 講完 學完 寫完 批完 印完 分完 賣完 搬完 挑完	算 算定 注定
拍完 推完 算完 種完 耕完 構完 糊完 切完 做完 刷完 收完 拾完 看完	成 變成 學成 做成 說成 煉成 慣成 湊成 研成 收成 軋成 繙成
聽完 唱完 禱完 紡完 織完 編完 打完 洗完 擇完 割完 栽完 抹完 澆完	燒成 編成 紡成 織成 綳成
拔完 包完 發完 點完 薙完 梳完 燙完 蒸完	

LESSON CII.

見 尋見 撞見	戳 戳破 碰破 跌破 掛破 挖破 割破 搓破 洗破 畫破 猜破 氣破 鼓破 想破
透 刺透 熟透 看透 磨透 泡透 浸透 潤透 凍透 涼透 冷透 熱透	敲 敲破 擊破 嚇破 搓破 剝破 粘破 揭破
猜透 壞透 鼓透 估透	壞 學壞 慣壞 窮壞 教壞 管壞 氣壞 病壞 治壞 做壞 寫壞 凍壞
破 打破 攻破 拆破 刺破 扎破 擠破 砸破 磨破 弄破 捏破 跣破	說壞 乾壞 旱壞 澇壞 醃壞 穿壞 累壞 碰壞 撮壞 糟壞 弄壞 踢壞

LESSON CIII.

法	用官鉞治量告弄急熱冷走	毒狠分變改殺槍糊刻殘整量航
法	法法法法法法法法法法	法法法法法法法法法法
吃	喝創勸句行理歸留化聚革書	慙穢炮
法	法法法法法法法法法法	氣掩製
		法法法

LESSON CVII.

商	巴	小	俐	旺	正	四	悲	體	精	圓	停	均	掄	破	世	子	嚴	拘	怕	咕	唧	婆	揪	試	磨
商	巴	小	俐	旺	正	四	悲	體	精	圓	停	均	掄	破	世	子	嚴	拘	怕	咕	唧	婆	揪	試	磨
量	結	器	束	盛	當	方	慘	面	細	全	當	勻	打	爛	代	孫	實	束	恥	嚙	咕	媽	扯	呼	躑
量	結	器	束	盛	當	方	慘	面	細	全	當	勻	打	爛	代	孫	實	束	恥	嚙	咕	媽	扯	呼	躑
勻	冷	親	顯	瞭	輕	脆	砍	嘻	滑	永	滋	規	整	公	熨	鬼	猴	轟	靜	疤	多	擁	昏	慌	唧
勻	冷	親	顯	瞭	輕	脆	砍	嘻	滑	永	滋	規	整	公	熨	鬼	猴	轟	靜	疤	多	擁	昏	慌	唧
和	淡	熱	亮	亮	省	快	快	哈	錫	遠	潤	矩	齊	道	貼	氣	氣	烈	板	拉	少	擠	沉	張	噉
和	淡	熱	亮	亮	省	快	快	哈	錫	遠	潤	矩	齊	道	貼	氣	氣	烈	板	拉	少	擠	沉	張	噉
般	淒	大	斯	富	寬	穩	準	飄	謹	糊	竊	懇	哼	瑣	臥	爭	口	叮	仔	鼓	思	羅	精	奇	疑
般	淒	大	斯	富	寬	穩	準	飄	謹	糊	竊	懇	哼	瑣	臥	爭	口	叮	仔	鼓	思	羅	精	奇	疑
勤	涼	樣	文	裕	綽	當	成	流	慎	弄	窈	切	唧	氣	又	兢	舌	鏟	細	漲	拉	唆	爽	怪	惑
勤	涼	樣	文	裕	綽	當	成	流	慎	弄	窈	切	唧	氣	又	兢	舌	鏟	細	漲	拉	唆	爽	怪	惑
悠	孤	親	迷	徠	冒	緊	分	橫	潑	風	周	囫	說	坦	威	魁	跳	蹣	瞞	遮	伺	摔	說	言	軟
悠	孤	親	迷	徠	冒	緊	分	橫	潑	風	周	囫	說	坦	威	魁	跳	蹣	瞞	遮	伺	摔	說	言	軟
忽	單	確	伴	狀	失	巴	明	實	實	流	正	圖	笑	然	武	偉	打	打	藏	掩	候	打	道	語	和
忽	單	確	伴	狀	失	巴	明	實	實	流	正	圖	笑	然	武	偉	打	打	藏	掩	候	打	道	語	和
諂	蹀	本	雅	恭	實	堅	清	清	反	恍	渺	兩	烈	柔	客	見	磨	影	跟	密	勞	輝	亂	咯	結
諂	蹀	本	雅	恭	實	堅	清	清	反	恍	渺	兩	烈	柔	客	見	磨	影	跟	密	勞	輝	亂	咯	結
謂	躑	分	道	敬	落	固	閒	靜	復	惚	冥	三	決	和	氣	蕩	習	綽	蹌	雜	碌	煌	道	吧	吧
謂	躑	分	道	敬	落	固	閒	靜	復	惚	冥	三	決	和	氣	蕩	習	綽	蹌	雜	碌	煌	道	吧	吧
三	浪	搖	舒	平	花	熱	搖	挺	哭	委	現	措	爽	吞											
三	浪	搖	舒	平	花	熱	搖	挺	哭	委	現	措	爽	吞											
兩	蕩	擺	坦	和	搭	鬧	晃	安	啼	屈	成	當	吞	吐											
兩	蕩	擺	坦	和	搭	鬧	晃	安	啼	屈	成	當	吞	吐											

LESSON CXIV.

安	安	學	說	和	查	量	比	活	表	伸	消	紮	解	打	請	通	搖	見	擦	撕	擠	拿	糊	遮	招
置	排	習	和	睦	考	比	量	動	明	明	停	裏	說	聽	示	報	晃	識	磨	巴	巴	巴	弄	擋	呼
安	排	學	說	和	考	比	量	動	明	明	停	裏	說	聽	示	報	晃	識	磨	巴	巴	巴	弄	擋	呼
提	訴	瞞	原	摩	均	調	演	粉	刷	漿	辭	幫	檢	約	道	叙	鬆	清	鬥	開	算	盤	療	揮	撥
說	說	瞞	原	摩	均	調	演	粉	洗	洗	別	助	點	模	謝	叙	散	閒	弄	導	計	算	治	擲	擲
提	訴	瞞	原	摩	均	調	演	粉	洗	洗	別	助	點	模	謝	叙	散	閒	弄	導	計	算	治	擲	擲
說	說	瞞	原	摩	均	調	演	粉	洗	洗	別	助	點	模	謝	叙	散	閒	弄	導	計	算	治	擲	擲
顧	照	畫	斟	思	打	比	校	對	質	踏	拷	盤	順	理	發	添	勸	打	熱	樂	評	整	鎮	透	穿
照	應	拉	酌	量	量	較	對	對	証	踏	問	問	理	正	明	補	戒	撲	鬧	活	論	治	壓	說	通
照	應	拉	酌	量	量	較	對	對	証	踏	問	問	理	正	明	補	戒	撲	鬧	活	論	治	壓	說	通
顧	照	畫	斟	思	打	比	校	對	質	踏	拷	盤	順	理	發	添	勸	打	熱	樂	評	整	鎮	透	穿
訪	問	儘	查	翻	嚇	逼	套	安	安	安	順	說	會	養	保	料	遷	遼	圍	助	分	停	回	彎	改
問	問	儘	查	翻	嚇	逼	套	安	安	安	順	說	會	養	保	料	遷	遼	圍	助	分	停	回	彎	改
訪	問	儘	查	翻	嚇	逼	套	安	安	安	順	說	會	養	保	料	遷	遼	圍	助	分	停	回	彎	改
問	問	儘	查	翻	嚇	逼	套	安	安	安	順	說	會	養	保	料	遷	遼	圍	助	分	停	回	彎	改
美	擠	誇	可	央	哀	騰	吹	打	修	教	溫	派	審	殺	自	滋									
言	鼓	獎	憐	告	告	騰	打	算	理	訓	習	解	量	浮	在	潤									
美	擠	誇	可	央	哀	騰	打	算	理	訓	習	解	量	浮	在	潤									
言	鼓	獎	憐	告	告	騰	打	算	理	訓	習	解	量	浮	在	潤									

LESSON CXXII.

見 見見見見見見見見
大 小長短多少歹欺

經 經經經經
用老胖瘦

LESSON CXXIV.

打 打打打打打打打打打
傘 食雷霹光軒呼九旋交交
 . 塵 棍睡嚙天兒易待
打打打打打打打打打打
結地嘴鎗戲旂執挺場墻
交鋪巴 事子

串 魚珠山 子 榧	頂 帽草涼緯秋暖風帳轎篋 子帽帽帽帽帽帽子子子
處 樓瓦草宅宅官祠古講洋地 房房房子院宅堂廟堂樓	幅 被被帖册簾行珠紅 單頁子樂子彩 子
坐 墓廟官差買傷草場園寺 地田地地地賣場園地院	箕 油糖 緞書紙菸糕 醬 葉餅
架 葡天帳蚊食眼鷹 萄平子帳盒鏡	貫 錢
味 藥 引子	扇 窗牌榻屏磨牆 子風子
丸 月 亮	椿 東營物故新奇生 西生 事聞事意

LESSON CXL.

尊 神 菩 薩	幫 學先船饑羊夥吹轎 生 生 民 手夫
班 衙鳩强賊流夥匠三女行 役子盜教計人小旦人 子子	排 兵人
眼 針 鎗	股 水賊烟氣霧勁辦賬本利恣 氣兒子份錢錢氣 子
爐 火炭灰燒燒燒 餅雞鴨	毒 鯨人味惡 氣吞馬兒味

<p>包 衣糖菸烟茶菓肉水湯鹽膿 裳 土食子</p>	<p>哨 勇人馬</p>
<p>血首金痰蛆 飾銀</p>	<p>統 江山下</p>
<p>筆 字好飢生 字荒意</p>	<p>合 草米硯墨 池鏡</p>
<p>刀 紙火草花上中下川建毛毛 紙紙紙箋箋箋箋連連六太 紙紙紙紙紙紙紙紙紙紙</p>	<p>捲 布紙綢衣鋪 子裳蓋</p>
<p>杠連海沙燈毛古刷冥綴高阡榜 連史箋碌花八連印衣摺麗紙紙 紙紙紙紙紙紙紙紙紙紙</p>	<p>對 粉布匣鐳環熾燈燈紗高茶 盒 子子子台台籠燈照杯</p>
<p>蠟長軟甲桑南木青西五西毛假 箋行連紙皮紅紅紅青色紙頭面 紙紙紙紙紙紙紙紙紙紙紙紙</p>	<p>蓋金鉞朝拳拳象三鬼獸甘御頭 碗瓜斧天鑽蛇鼻尖頭刀蔗棍棍 凳 刀刀刀 棍</p>
<p>烏赤包灰油曹白石巨表 金金裏平紅黃露丹紅心 紙紙紙紙紙紙紙紙紙紙</p>	<p>過旂牌令耳串鞭板鎖棍夫鴛書 路 箭箭籬子子鍊子 妻鴛僮</p>
<p>盤 棋機爐鞍架買生 子子子賣意</p>	<p>童了雞鴨鴿猪羊牛喜班野 男囊 子子 鵲鳩雞 女</p>
<p>營 勇官官兵 兵 軍馬</p>	

LESSON CXLI.

<p>希 髒黓滑冷醜 清</p>	<p>精 淡光薄細混輕肥拙</p>
----------------------	-------------------

透 肥歡	迸 硬緊歡
粉 白細	漫 行好可以過殼熱怕亮 以得用的 醜

LESSON CXLII.

老 時一歇深寬 節會子	怪 氣好急難暈咬癢懶臊臭窳
通 黃透	悶笨巧快慢腮餓乏緊疑暖難淒 感和受涼
爭 清新楞綠明	惡不煩 心濟躁
溜 長窄尖彎	焦 熱乾燥急黃酥黏綠悶黑酸

LESSON CXLIII.

頭 典開閃衝過喫喝守幹題要 頭頭頭頭頭頭頭頭頭頭	問喚打挨折扣長賂穿巴咬贅 頭頭頭頭頭頭頭頭頭頭 頭
-----------------------------	---------------------------------

LESSON CXLVII.

頓 打罵責要要 備笑戲	稜 草柴木劈棒蘆松麥麥秫穀 頭柴子柴柴稽穠稽草
----------------	----------------------------

豆條甄洋洋火碗書
稽子貨布油
網箱

揸長寬厚深
捕

細葱韭草芥芹麥秫穀條莊海
茶茶茶子稽草子稼帶

節竹子書長高話情烟
理衝

松柴洋繩
柴伙布子

擡轎

道河光虹山堤文本摺縫
潤書章奏

滴油酒淚墨

壘醋油蝦鹹腐
醬茶乳

馱柴劈貨
伙柴

壺茶水漿

擔草柴行馱水笱水菜
伙李子菓子

身衣袍馬
裳子褂

箱書藥洋火洋
火藥鎗

紮繩頭
子繩

盒肥皂官奶糖蜜
粉油漿饊菓子

團爛艾邪絨雪火九彈
泥子氣子子

桶柚子說油漆水糖麪糞針

帖藥告
方示

卷書經子史綱閒小經
書書書記鑑書說

方甄牆板豆
腐

回書閒小
書說

章 書算法

號 船簿呈卷牌房買貨
子子子子子子賣

篇 書賦話論古文

桌 酒飯客祭

LESSON CXLVIII.

絕 瘦

生 酸

膠 滋

喬 黃白臭苦酸澀醜

惡 熱戰槍馬霸

皎 白

四 直

勦 臭苦辣酸澀

活 醜現討辣臭澀
厭

天 青

LESSON CXLIX.

雪 亮

漂 亮

血 紅

蜜 甜

滾 開燙

罄 乾光空
淨

顯 綠

鮮 紅亮

啊 煖

澈 清亮

死 緊懶蠻慢兇橫沉冷利混
害帳

LESSON CLIV.

細	勻	酸	滑	急	長	輕	順	扁	賤	淺	喜	禿	穩	窄	澀	勝	毒	俏	藍	黃	綠	濃	黏	黑	密
溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	巴巴	巴巴	巴巴	巴巴	巴巴	生生	生生	生生	糊糊	糊糊	糊糊	糊糊
溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	溜	巴巴	巴巴	巴巴	巴巴	巴巴	生生	生生	生生	糊糊	糊糊	糊糊	糊糊	糊糊
的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的

LESSON CLV.

昏	暈	鼓	滑	膿	露	柔	順	嫩	美	疼	仙	酸	疲	低	笨	饞	礮	腥	熱	氣	慢	艮		
張	張	張	漬	漬	漬	和	和	和	攷	攷	拉	拉	拉拉	拉拉	拉拉	刺	刺	刺	騰	騰	騰	騰		
張	張	張	漬	漬	漬	和	和	和	攷	攷	拉	拉	拉拉	拉拉	拉拉	刺	刺	刺	騰	騰	騰	騰		
的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的

LESSON CLXVI.

臊	羶	硬	扎	煞	嚴	跑	忙	亂	涼	清	風	亮	俏
蟲	蟲	實	實	實	實	搗	搗	搗	颯	颯	颯	爭	爭
蟲	蟲	實	實	實	實	搗	搗	搗	颯	颯	颯	爭	爭
的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的

LESSON CLXVII.

響	直	吵	亂	怒	忙	麻	綠	黑	俊	粗	較	高	腫	溜	樂	喘	狠	淺	潤	水	豎	亂	實	獨	黃
亮	挺	嚷	嚷	恨	活	辣	微	烏	俏	輪	輪	量	胖	舒	顛	呼	整	薄	滋	汪	椿	杈	落	伶	乾
亮	挺	嚷	嚷	恨	活	辣	微	烏	俏	輪	輪	量	胖	舒	顛	呼	整	薄	滋	汪	椿	杈	落	伶	乾
的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的
矮	毛	光	活	窮	稀	惡	花	直	軟	死	輕	懶													
趴	毫	滑	現	恹	耶	猴	斑	苗	管	板	妙	場													
趴	毫	滑	現	恹	耶	猴	斑	苗	管	板	妙	場													
的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的	的													

LESSON CLXVIII.

的	鐸	矚	閒	勒									得	臊	烤	擠	磨	燙	癩	撐	暈	熏
慌	的	的	的	的									慌	得	得	得	得	得	得	得	得	得
慌	慌	慌	慌	慌									慌	慌	慌	慌	慌	慌	慌	慌	慌	慌

布刺的	彪布刺的	傻布刺的	拗布刺的	刁布刺的	黑布刺的	衙布刺的	冤布刺的	蠢布刺的	笨布刺的	仇布刺的	滑布刺的	混布刺的	烏布刺的	佯布刺的
-----	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------

LESSON CLXXXIII.

死	氣死死	嚇死死	碰死死	餓死死	乾死死	旱死死	澇死死	燒死死	壓死死	刺死死	釘死死	煞	氣煞	嚇煞	悶煞	熏煞	餓煞	乾煞	燙煞	勒煞	恨煞	吹煞	笑煞		
勤死死	絞死死	殺死死	病死死	熏死死	吹死死	砍死死	砸死死	哭死死	笑死死	洒死死	擠死死	夾死死	哭煞	洒煞	擠煞	糊煞	堵煞	喜煞	樂煞	窮煞	累煞	咬煞	腫煞	糊塗煞	無用煞
捏死死	撚死死	喜死死	樂死死	窮死死	累死死	咬死死	腫死死	糊塗死死	無用死死																

LESSON CLXXXIV.

半含半吐	半信半疑	半真半假	半陰半陽	半人半鬼	半公半私	不言不語	不大不小	不高不矮	不硬不軟	不冷不熱	不卑不亢	閒言閒語	貼心貼意	脚躑躅	甕聲甕氣	細吹細打	直打直飛	公事公辦	脚前脚後	年年前後	偷買偷賣	明爭明講	百戰百勝	百發百中	百巧百能
嫌好嫌歹	陵頭腦	衙頭腦	講長短	講打鬧	人山人海	離心離德	盡心盡力	滿打滿算	滿收滿出	一生一世	能說能道	能文能武	口沒大	沒反口	沒大沒小	沒上沒下	揚武揚威	作福作威	不忠不孝	不仁不義	猴頭猴腦	同心同德	二心二意	像模像樣	現世現報
大手大脚	大吃大喝	大哭大叫	大鑲大緣	大包大攬	大出大賣	能硬能軟	走來走去	算來算去	橫算豎算	身大力大	頭緊脚緊	知人知己	隨得有失	有哭有笑	有好有歹	聲答聲應	上看下下	聽說聽道	苦巴巴	獨門獨院	年吃年用	知進知退	多才多藝	直哭直罵	直絲直絡
話到禮到	志大言大	自言自語	自說自道	自思自嘆	自怨自恨	自消自滅	自作自受	硬搶硬奪	眼巴巴	心如眼望	順心如意	無始無終	無窮無盡	無形無像	無生無死	全權全能	全聖全善	大慈大悲	救苦救難	現覺現賣					

LESSON CLXXXV.

有頭無尾	好善無惡	棄假崇真	棄邪歸正	改邪歸正	去舊換新	朝出夜歸	苦盡甜來	好生惡殺	同父異母	男婚女嫁	男左女右	夫倡婦隨	前思後慮	承上起下	超前越後	明升暗降	明擒暗縱	陽奉陰違	頭上腳下	生前死後	男盜女娼	喜新厭舊	指東說西	寒來暑往	積少成多
折長補短	厭故喜新	去惡向善	天父地母	福善禍淫	城裏關外	裏應外合	大街小巷	大事小情	東擋西殺	南爭北戰	眉來眼去	老有少心	文東武西	有爵無祿	有眼無珠	左歪右扭	長話短說	父慈子孝	男扮女裝	上和下睦	內憂外患	裏鈎外連	窮家富路	裏奸外曹	生離死別
胎前產後	閃輕躲重	輕說重報	假公濟私	虛告實審	屈打成招	倚強壓弱	倚官嚇民	大官小民	大哭小叫	大驚小怪	絲來尋去	天狼地狗	上行下效	有嘴無心	捨己爲人	凶多吉少	夜聚晝散	東跑西奔	南跑北奔	舍近圖遠	天高地厚	天昏地暗	出死入生		

LESSON CLXXXVI

七損八傷	七上八下	七長八短	七高八低	七高八矮	七疼八癢	七死八活	七青八黃	七零八落	七個八個	歪七扭八	歪七裂八	緊七慢八	十米九糠	千山人馬	千言萬語	千說萬道	說千道萬	萬無一失	一了百斷	一順百順	一倡百和	一呼百諾	一官半職	三頭六臂
重三三四	結二連三	馬二騙三	三賢四德	三從四德	三教九流	三起兩落	三恍兩恍	五花六花	五零七散	五零七散	五零七散	三分五落	三敦四錯	一舉兩錯	千錯萬錯	三節兩壽	三兄四弟	一魂七魄	一車兩馬	一刀兩斷	一句兩開	一子兩業		
四分五落	四蓬五亂	三言五語	三親五六	三親五六	三親五六	前三後四	左五右六	四平八穩	四通八達	五湖四海	九江八河	十有九成												

LESSON CXCIV.

順風打旗	風吹草動	耳聾眼花	指手畫腳	心滿意足	家成業就	身小力薄	嬌生慣養	巧言花語	甜言蜜語	爭名奪利	蹀脚捶胸	起咒發誓	起誓發願	天昏地暗	福輕命薄	替手換腳	咬牙切齒	咬鋼嚼鐵	斬鋼截鐵	同心合意	合口同聲	一口同聲	一口同音	老頭舒腦
------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------	------

改頭換腦	飄江過海	急手忙脚	少吃儉用	胡思亂想	胡言亂語	指山賣磨	打草驚蛇	敲山震虎	指桑罵槐	虎背熊腰	膀大腰粗	龍睛虎眼	眉清目秀	頂盔貫甲	忠臣義士	沽名邀譽	嘴拙心笨	神清氣爽	神清夢穩	神差鬼使	鬼哭神號	奇思妙想	觸目警心	鳴鑼擊鼓	油頭粉面
龍睛虎目	耀眼爭光	聚精會神	驚魂失色	昏頭腦脹	奇頭怪腦	雲山霧罩	分門別戶	旁門左道	絕子斷孫	見景生情	看風駛船	弄神搗鬼	花街柳巷	風花雪月	碰頭撒野	捨死拼命	邪情惡欲	清心寡欲	克己復禮	修身養性	青山綠水	海濶天空	深溝陡澗	開門見山	讀書念卷
伶牙俐齒	拙嘴笨舌	無風不起浪	上樹跳井	死心塌地	和顏悅色	正顏厲色	驚天動地	撒謊調疲	死皮賴臉	張牙舞爪	腳大臉醜	幸災樂禍	光宗耀祖	作官爲宦	致君澤民	貪贓賣法	興利除害	仗義疎財	水長船高	夏藥苦口	忠言逆耳	藥石成仇	呼天號地	傾家敗產	灰心失志
順情達理	高樓大廈	門當戶對	戶大人多	人多勢衆	紅口白牙	細皮白肉	綢袍緞褂	安居樂業	平心靜氣	借事爲由	觸類旁通	沾親帶故	喪胆失志	回心轉意	轉彎抹角	賊眼流星	揚眉吐氣	宿娼嫖妓	悔罪改過	冬溫夏涼	飽食暖衣	手到病除	助紂爲虐	人困馬乏	牙清口白
坐井觀天	惜皮愛肉	披頭散髮	心驚肉跳	樞心挖膽	舌乾唇焦	積怨作仇	培門塞戶	登山爬陵	無功食祿	打公罵婆	欺孤滅寡	胡打亂敲	堵漸防微	謹言慎行	關門閉戶	頭昏腦悶	畫符念咒	招訣念咒	烟熏火燎	水閣涼亭	冰消瓦解	油滑舌解	倚官仗勢	銅傍鐵底	年頭月盡
赤手空拳	兵荒馬亂	人強馬壯	狼心狗肺	筋出力盡	妻離子散	鼻青臉腫	頭破血流	皮開肉綻	誣良爲盜	泥塑木雕	銅打鐵鑄	貨真價實	日久年遠	傾心吐胆	稱孤道寡	皇親國舅	登高自邇	行遠自邇	出類拔萃	瞞心昧己	搖頭擺尾	酒池肉林	如膠似漆	探囊取物	騰滿肉肥

LESSON CXCVI.

前後左右	農工商賈	孝廉方正	福祿壽禧	天地人物	綾羅綢緞	雨雪風霜	加減乘除	鰥寡孤獨	吹彈歌舞	方圓平直	男女老幼	金銀銅鐵	元亨利貞	喉舌唇齒牙	覺悟記思像	公侯伯子男	天地君親師
樓臺殿閣	行動坐臥	烟茶酒飯	抑揚頓錯	筆墨紙硯	切磋琢磨	旂鑼傘扇	盃盤碗盞	父母妻子	日月星宿	衣衾棺槨	貧富貴賤	花草樹木					

II.

DIALOGUES AND ORATIONS.

It was originally intended to follow the lessons by some ten or twelve dialogues on practical subjects, giving translations, vocabularies and notes. Want of time has prevented the full accomplishment of this purpose. The Chinese text of three of these dialogues is here given. They will

serve as interesting and profitable reading to the student, as they contain many useful terms. Two or three orations, prepared in the Têngchow College, are also added as ideal specimens of Chinese oratory.

DIALOGUES.

- 1 盤問西事 Inquiry into Western Affairs.
- 2 備造樓房 Preparations for Building a Foreign House. 656
- 3 家務常言 Domestic Conversation. 664

ORATIONS.

- 1 太武甲悔過 T'ai Chia's Repentance. 671
- 2 武王誓師 King Wu Charging his Generals.
- 3 孟王子 Eulogy on Mencius. 676

盤問西事

在光緒十年八月間，有美國的范牧師，和福山的丁先生，一同上青州府去傳道，走到朱橋，天色已晚，就上利興店住宿，剛喫過晚飯，來了一位趙先生，問起西國的許多事來，先是問丁先生，後又親自問范先生，今將他們所談的話，記在下面。○趙說○你這位客，是那裏呀，○丁說○好說，我是從烟台來的。○趙說○是什麼生意發財。○丁說○沒有生意，我是一個傳道的人，和一位外國先生，要往青州府去。○趙說○哦，你是跟着鬼子下來的嗎。○丁說○我看你老先生，本是一個知禮的人，怎麼張口叫人鬼子。○趙說○不叫他鬼子，叫什麼呢。○丁說○該稱他是外國先生。○趙說○失言失言，請問你給他當通事，一個月掙多少銀子呢。○丁說○我和他出來，原不是為多掙錢，乃是情願幫助傳道，所以一個月，也不過是五六吊錢。○趙說○他們也是越來越精細喇，初過來的時候，給他當通事的，一個月總掉不了十拉多兩銀子，如今連一半也掙不出來了。

○丁說○天下的人，都是如此，但凡能省，還有不省的嗎？○趙說○這也是理，但一個月掙五六吊錢，却也不犯着去隨他們了。○丁說○據閣下這樣說來，難道人就是錢要緊嗎？世上的好事，就是賠錢，還有做的喇？○趙說○喫誰向誰，你既隨了他們，也只得順着他們說就是了。○丁說○我原來是咱們天朝的人，現在還是天朝的人，怎麼說是隨了他們呢？○趙說○你隨了他們的教，豈不是隨了他們嗎？○丁說○隨教，那不算，是隨了他們，因為耶穌教的道理，就是天老爺的道理，這天老爺，乃是天下萬國的天老爺，他們當敬拜，我們也當敬拜，所以我們隨教，並不是隨了他們，若說是要隨他們，只怕他們還不要呢。○趙說○他們若不圖人隨他，也必別有所圖，不然，他們為什麼來到我們國裡呢？○丁說○你說他們別有所圖，在你看，他是圖什麼呢？○趙說○那個我可不知道喇，誰知道他是圖什麼呢？○丁說○先生你不知道，還不能尋思尋思嗎？大概人以外國人所圖的，無非是圖名圖利，或是圖謀天下，這

麼着，先生仔細想一想，若說他圖名罷，到處人都叫他鬼子，這還算個好名嗎？若說是圖利罷，他們下來傳道，花許多盤費，送人無數的書，又開學房，又設醫院，都是花錢的道兒，這豈是圖利嗎？若說是圖天下罷，誰不曉得外國人的鎗砲利害，他們就必發大兵來，硬強爭奪，那能差這麼幾個傳道的先生，規規矩矩的勸化人呢？別的不講，只看咸豐年間，英國和法國打破了北京，他們若要奪中國的江山，豈不是容易嗎？從這些地方看起來，鑿鑿可據，他們不是圖名利，也不是圖天下的。○趙說○這樣，他們到底是為什麼來的呢？○丁說○就是因為他們先得了耶穌道理，知道人都有罪，非悔改信耶穌，死後難免罪報，不能得天堂的永生，所以纔來到中國，告訴我們免罪報，得永生的法子，至於別的心思，是一點兒沒有的。○趙說○我聽說跟着他們念書的，都被他們裝到外國去了。○丁說○那都是瞎話，我就是跟着他們念書的，出學堂門已經有八九年了，怎麼他們沒裝了我去呢？就是我的同窗，共有七八

十號人，也沒裝去一個，所以你別聽那些瞎話，你想他要我們幹什麼呢？○趙說○那些上女學的，可有叫他裝了去的。○丁說○這個先生親眼見過嗎？○趙說○見倒沒有見過，人家却都這樣說呢。○丁說○我知道你必是聽人說的，這都是混造謠言，沒有影兒的事。情，因為我的家裡，就是一個女學生，和他一同上學的姑娘們，現在已經都出了閣，那裏有被他們裝了去的呢。○趙說○你跟的這位外國先生，有家眷沒有？○丁說○有家眷，連孩子都一大羣。○趙說○人家都說他們的女人，比男的大，這個是真是假呢？○丁說○那兒來的話，他們拿着女人，不像我們這樣輕賤就是了。若說女人大似男人，天下並沒有這樣的地方。○趙說○怎麼聽我們莊上創烟台的說，他們的女人，說甚麼就是甚麼呢？○丁說○那也不怪，因為外國女人，都念過書，論他們的聰明本事，差不多和男人一樣，所以男人作事，必商議他，就是男人不在家的時候，或是事多忙不過來，女人也能代辦，其實女人仍舊是順從男人。

○趙說○這樣，他們開女學堂，是男先生教呢，還是女先生教呢？○丁說○大概女學堂的事，都是外國師娘經營的，教書却是我們本地的男先生，或是女先生都有教的。○趙說○在他們學堂裏，都念什麼書呢？○丁說○也就是念四書五經，另外還學天下通行的學問書，就是天文地理格物算法等類。○趙說○如今去念書的，還是隨任什麼都管嗎？○丁說○不能隨任什麼都管，如今不管衣裳，不管鋪蓋，却還管飯，管筆墨書紙，和先生的束脩。○趙說○這也是他們行的一件好事，一年得要花一宗好錢呢。○丁說○趕自花一宗好錢，○趙說○他們花這些錢，是自己掏腰呢，還是他們的王子發給呢？○丁說○又不是他們自己掏腰，又不是他們的王子發給，是他們本國信道的人，所捐出來的。○趙說○他們一年有多少出息？○丁說○一個人有一千多塊洋錢的進項，因為外國人的身工比我們貴，就是當苦力的，一天至少還掙一塊洋錢身價。○趙說○他們的銀錢，總是比天朝的更厚，可惜我現在老了，若在

年輕的時候，我也願意入這一教。○丁說○我怕先生看錯了，這耶穌教，並不是爲那些求財的人預備的，乃是爲那些求永生的人預備的，若爲在今世發財入教，入也入不進去，若爲死後得永生入教，越老纔越要緊喇。○趙說○若不嫌老，我有心見見這位外國先生，他叫見不叫見呢。○丁說○怎麼不叫見，只怕我們不肯見啊，我們若肯見他，就沒有個不叫見的理。○趙說○他懂得我們的話嗎。○丁說○懂得，學的很好的官話喇。○趙說○我們見他們，當行什麼禮呢。○丁說○沒有什麼格外的禮，也就是作揖請安，和我們本地人一樣。○趙說○他現在沒睡覺啊。○丁說○睡覺還早喇，我領你進去見他罷。○趙說○怎麼好勞動你呢。○丁說○那不要緊。○趙說○還要請教先生，這位外國先生姓什麼呢。○丁說○姓范，就是奚范彭郎的范字。○兩個人到了上房門口，丁先生先進去見范先生說，有一位趙先生，願意進來談談。○范說○很好，請他進來罷。○丁先生遂即請趙先生進去，一見了面，趙先生

就作揖問安，范先生也回禮讓坐。○趙說○先生喫了晚飯嗎。○范說○已經吃過多時了，趙先生也喫了嗎。○趙說○也喫過了，先生今年高壽啊。○范說○不敢當，我今年四十八歲。○趙說○先生的口音，倒很清楚喇。○范說○我已經學了多年，說的也不算很好。○趙說○貴國是那一個呀。○范說○敝國是美國。○趙說○美國的大小，比中國怎麼樣呢。○范說○有中國十八省，帶上滿洲、蒙古、伊犁、西藏、青海，攏總合起來那麼大。○趙說○哎呀，這不是很大嗎，大約地土也比這裡肥。○范說○實在比這裡肥，因爲那裡都是新開的地，所以土肥得很。○趙說○那邊都是種甚麼莊稼。○范說○常種的莊稼，就是麥子、稻子、包米。山藥、豆、白薯、地蛋、地瓜、洋山芋、山芋○四五樣。○趙說○哦，那裡還有包米和白薯、地瓜、山芋嗎。○范說○怎麼說是還有呢，連中國的包米和山芋、地瓜、原起都是從美國來的。○趙說○是嗎，這個我今天纔聽見說，從前的時候，只知道鴉片烟，是從那邊來的。○范說○論到那種東西，却不是從美國來的，多半是從印度國來

的，其實這幾年，就是從印度來的，也很有有限，因為你們本國已經種開了，現在有好幾省，差不多淨種罌粟。○趙說○可不是啊，我們中國，真是被大烟害的苦喇，在美國也有喫的沒有。○范說○聽說這幾年，也有一半個喫的，但是民間急急的要斷，所以大烟在美國害人，不能像中國這樣的利害。○趙說○這裡看美國，是看東呢，是看西呢。○范說○也可說是看東，也可說是看西。○趙說○怎麼又看東又看西呢。○范說○因為地是圓的，好像大球一般，中國在這一面，美國在那一面，所以從中國往美國去，向東向西，都能到得了。○趙說○美國若在地那一面，那裏的人，豈不是頭朝下了嗎。○范說○我恐怕越說，先生越不明白，這是關乎天文的講究，按天文的理，是日頭日頭吸着地球，地球就圍繞太陽太陽運行在太虛之間，地球以外，任那裏都是無邊的虛空，因此地球這面的人，就以這面的虛空為天，地球那面的人，就以那面的虛空為天，總而言之，人無論在地球那一方，都是腳踏地，頭頂天，所以如今我在中國，固

然覺着頭朝上，從前我在美國，也是覺着頭朝上。○趙說○請問先生，剛纔講到地球在空中運轉，是怎樣轉法呢。○范說○地球原有兩個轉法，一是自己滾着轉，每轉一次，就是一天，一是繞着日頭日頭轉，每轉一個大圈，就是一年。○趙說○明明天往西轉，怎麼說是地轉呢。○范說○你看天上的日月星辰，都是東出西落，好像是天往西轉，那知道所以看着天往西轉，正是因為地往東轉，好比船在海上，明明是船往前走，但人在船上看着，竟是水往後走，又比方對月亮看雲彩，明明是雲彩往南跑，看着却是月亮往北跑，論到地向東轉，看着天像西轉，也是如此。○趙說○若果真是地轉，我們轉到底下的時候，豈不掉下去了嗎。○范說○不能掉下去，因為地球有極大的吸力，凡在上面的山海人物，都吸住了，所以人在地球上，無論轉到那面，只覺得頭上有天，脚下有地，永遠沒有掉下去的時候。○趙說○聽先生講這個地，也像該是圓的，然而我心裏，總是含含糊糊的。○范說○圓的一定是圓的，若不然的時候，往

東往西，還能都上美國去嗎？○趙說○上美國的這兩條道，是那一條更近呢？○范說○東道更近。○趙說○走東道有多遠呢？○范說○若筆直的走，有二萬多里，但火輪船不能筆直的走，所以大約有三萬里路。○趙說○先生來的時候，在船上走了幾天呢？○范說○走了二十八天。○趙說○哎，這個火輪船，怎麼跑的這樣快呢，這不是一天能跑一千多里路嗎？○范說○是一天總能跑一千多路。○趙說○先生在我們中國，有多少年哪？○范說○今年來了二十年整。○趙說○府上在那裡呢？○范說○敝處在烟台東山上。○趙說○先生在那裡是開學房呢，是在講書堂裡呢？○范說○我的正事，是開學房，但是每年在春秋兩季，總必騰出幾個月來，下來傳道。○趙說○先生共有多少學生？○范說○現在有六十多個。○趙說○哎呀，這也儘够先生忙的路，那裡還有出來的工夫呢？○范說○論到有工夫，可實在是沒有工夫，但是我心裡有兩樣頂要緊的事，不得不出來告訴人。○趙說○什麼要緊的事？○

范說○頭一樣，就是說人死了，不能拉倒，因為人在天老爺跟前，通統有罪，死後必受罪報，就是下地獄，永遠的受苦，所以人當早早醒悟，快快求一個免罪的法子。○趙說○有什麼免罪的法子？○范說○那就是第二樣，我要告訴人的，人要想着免罪，自己的法子全不行，惟獨天老爺所設的法子纔行呢，因為天老爺會打發他的兒子降世為人，名叫耶穌，特為來作救主，死在十字架上，因此我們雖然有罪，只用悔罪改過，信靠耶穌，耶穌就肯擔當我們的罪。天老爺看耶穌的情面，也肯饒赦我們的罪。這是天老爺特為給人預備免罪的法子，所以先生若要脫離地獄的永刑，得着天堂的永福，非信靠這位救主不可。○趙說○總是敬天敬地，行好，好啊？○范說○敬天敬地，這是先生自己的話，耶穌道理，却不是叫人敬天敬地，是教人敬天地的主宰，因為天地，原是有形的死物，敬他不但沒有好處，而且還是得罪我們所當敬拜的天老爺。○趙說○先生從來回家幾邊呢？○范說○只回去了一邊。○趙說○家

裡都有什麼人哪。○范說○我的父母雙全，還有一個兄弟，一個妹妹。○趙說○先生跟前有幾位令郎。○范說○我沒有兒子，只有四個女兒。○趙說○你們貴國的人，若老了無子，也行討小嗎。○范說○沒有爲生子說小的，必得喪了妻，纔可以另續一個呢。○趙說○行過繼不行呢。○范說○也沒有過繼的。○趙說○那邊沒有上墳拜墓的禮嗎。○范說○這上墳拜墓，原是一個糊塗風俗，凡耶穌教行開的地方，總沒有上墳拜墓的，因爲按真理說，應當獨獨拜老天爺，至於在我們上人的身上，雖然應當生養死葬，死後常追念他，却斷不可拜他的墳墓，也不可以他爲神，去拜他的牌位，若是拜了，就是大大的得罪老天爺，所以先生不要看上墳拜墓，是一件好事啊。○趙說○先生曉得如今栽這些線杆子，到底是什麼意思呢。○范說○沒有別的意思，就是用他傳信。○趙說○傳信怎麼看不見呢。○范說○因爲是用電氣傳，電氣順着鐵絲走，人是看不見的。○趙說○有時聽見一欵欵的響，那就是傳信嗎。○范說

○那是風颳的，不是傳信，傳信的時候，又不能看見，又不能聽見。○趙說○既然又不能看見，又不能聽見，傳到頭怎麼就曉得了呢。○范說○在頭上當頭有一個機器，能寫出來。○趙說○罷了罷了，人家當初怎麼做得出來呢。○范說○那也不是一日之工想的。○趙說○從發信到見信，得用多少工夫呢。○范說○並不用多少工夫，無論是幾千里，或幾萬里，這頭一發，那頭立時就曉得了，正好像我當面對你說話一樣。○趙說○這電氣到底是個什麼東西，能這樣快呢。○范說○電氣就是空中所打的雷啊。○趙說○哎呀，那個東西還好傳信嗎。○范說○中國只知道雷能擊人，但按格物的理，不但能用他傳信，還能用他點燈，用他鍍金，又能用他治病。○趙說○人有癆病，好不好用電氣治呢。○范說○治癆病不好用電氣，是先生有癆病嗎。○趙說○可不是啊，我原來就是一個癆病底子，但這幾年，犯的更重，每逢到冬天的時候，常常咳嗽吐痰，痰裡也常帶血。○范說○像這樣的病，很不容易治，先生不如到烟台

施醫院去，在那裡有一位出名的外國醫生，請他給你
 看一看。○趙說○烟台那位醫生，是真果的捨藥呢，還
 是要謝儀呢。○范說○不要謝儀，都是白白捨給人家，
 還不但是白捨藥喇，而且又預備現成的房子，現成的
 牀鋪，就是病的利害的，也有人上心伺候。○趙說○那
 倒好極喇，可惜今年天冷了，我不能去，趕來年暖和的
 時候，我可必去求求醫。○范說○我也看先生該去纔
 是，但先生要緊要禱告。老天爺，天老爺求他叫你的病能殼好
 了，更求他饒赦你的罪，叫你死後上天堂，在天堂那裡，
 就永遠沒有這樣的病了。○趙說○今天晚上，多多討領
 教喇，先生可以欵歪着歇息歇息罷。○范說○怎麼先生
 不坐了嗎。○趙說○外頭已經打三更咯，等以後到烟
 台再會見罷。○范說○等到烟台再會見請罷。

備造樓房

有英國一位雅素先生，要修一座樓，就對王有容先生
 說，我打算蓋一座兩層樓，不知得多少材料，用多少工，
 我預備了二千兩銀子，也不知殼不殼。○王先生說，那

但看雅先生要怎樣蓋法，是蓋多高多大，總得先畫出
 一個樣子來，叫木瓦匠看看，樣樣盤算盤算，然後纔能
 知其大畧。○雅說○我已經畫了箇圖樣，將地基和各
 牆的尺寸，連門窗的大小，以及屋內的長短寬窄，都開
 的明明白白，但不知瓦匠是那箇好，木匠是那箇靠得
 住。○王說○論瓦匠的手藝，是劉瓦匠好，但他所用
 的人，三饒十懶的，不正經給人家做，至於孫瓦匠，手藝雖
 然不見好，他所用的，却有些好手，做營生生活也勤苦。○
 雅說○這麼着的，我們就用孫瓦匠就是喇，木匠是那箇
 好呢。○王說○我看素常用的李木匠就好，先生也知
 道他的手藝。○雅說○好，這幾天你可以把他們叫來，
 商議商議。○王先生說完了話，就出來了，到第二天，雅
 先生又請他進去，問他說，這地方買磚瓦是怎麼講究
 的呢。○王說○論磚有好幾路講究，有青磚，二色子，黑
 磚，共分三路，價錢也不一樣。○雅說○怎麼叫作青磚，
 ○王說○這樣磚燒出來的時候，是箇灰色，磚的聲音
 也响亮。○雅說○怎麼叫作二色子和黑磚呢。○王說

○這二色子磚，燒出來的時候，是兩樣色，有灰色，有黑色，所以叫他二色子。至於黑磚，燒的時候，並沒燒熟，顏色又是黑的，所以叫黑磚。○雅說○磚的成色，既不一樣，行市怎麼樣呢？○王說○是按着成色扣錢的。○雅說○這麼着，我們就買點黑磚，和二色子，預備房子裏面用。○王說○很可用得，因為裏面的牆壁子，雨淋不着，水也濕不着，就是砌上土坯，也沒有壞。○雅說○先生去叫木瓦匠來沒有？○王說○叫過他們來，他們說，下半年必來。○雅說○好，等他們來再說罷。○到了下半年，木匠先來了，見了王先生說，聽說雅先生要蓋座樓房，打算預備點木料。○王說○得多少木料？○木匠說，○不知道是怎麼箇蓋法。○王說○雅先生畫了箇圖樣在這裏，上頭都開的明白，你看看就知道喇。○木匠看了一遍，又仔細算計了一回，就說，總得五百料木頭。○王說○做甚麼用那麼些木頭？○木匠說○蓋造樓房，全是一樑木頭，少了就不敷用的。○王說○我們先見見雅先生再說罷。○二人既見了雅先生，木匠就

說，方纔聽見王先生說，先生打算蓋座樓，要先預備點材料。○雅說○得多少材料呢？○木匠說○我剛纔和王先生說來，總得五百料木頭。○雅說○做甚麼用這麼些木頭？○木匠說○照着先生開的圖樣，說給先生聽聽，客廳、書房的地板，廚房和飯廳的地板，過道的地板，二層樓上的地板，和地板底下的托樑，樓下的貼牆板，二層樓上的貼牆板，再是這些門框、門填心、門旁的貼板、門上的擱木、下頭的門礮，這些窗的窗框、窗旁的貼板、窗上的擱木、連窗台，還有支厦子的六根柱子，八架大樑，三根頂樑柱，四副叉手，四根擎天柱，二十二枝檁，一枝脊杓，再還有托簷板、天花板、椽子，以及樓梯、扶手、欄杆，這一切的東西，還不得五百料木頭嗎？若要用望板，就是五百料也不敷。○雅說○這麼着，你就先去買木頭罷，却不知道現在的木頭，甚麼價錢？○木匠說○今年的青楊白楊，都是貴的，楸木、桐木，更不用說，就是口北松的價碼不大，算上車價，也不過一吊四五百錢一料。○雅先生問王先生說，咱們前頭買的，甚

麼行市呢。○王說○前頭買的口北松，是一吊三百五
一料，今年較比起來，也不算貴。○雅說○若本地木頭，
有好成色的，隨現在的行市，看着買就是喇。至於大料，
我要着人到海口上去買。○木匠說完了話，出來和王
先生說，今年的木頭，也就是難買。○王說○雅先生叫
你去買，你先去買買看，可有一件，千萬要留神，不要買
輸了眼力。○木匠說○那是自然的，還能不算計着買
嗎。○到第二天，孫瓦匠也來見王先生，王先生說，昨天
打發人叫你，你怎麼不來呢。○瓦匠說○昨天回家晚
了，所以今天早早的來咯。聽說雅先生要蓋座樓房，是
真的嗎。○王說○是，在這裏有箇圖樣，你仔細看看，就
知道喇。○瓦匠看了一回就說，勞王先生的駕，進去通
報通報，我們見了雅先生，再作商議罷。王先生隨即見
了雅先生說，瓦匠來了，要見見先生。○雅說○叫他進
來罷。○瓦匠進去，雅先生說，我要蓋座樓房，不知瓦作
的材料，得用多少。○瓦匠說○請先生先說說，要蓋甚
麼樣的。○雅說○要蓋一座坐北向南的二層樓，磚砌

山牆，石打地基，瓦作房蓋，四角歸圓的，至於房間的寬
窄大小，我畫了個圖樣，在王先生手裏，你看看就知道
喇。○王說○先生畫的圖樣，司師傳孫務已經見過了，現在
請他打算打算，都用甚麼材料，各樣材料預備多少。○
瓦匠說○瓦作用的材料，就是磚瓦，石頭，石灰，這是幾
樣頂要緊的，可先定規他二萬青磚，其餘二色子和黑
磚，可照五千定規，不殼的時候再添，定規磚的時候，總
要和窰上講明白，磚出了窰，准我們去驗看驗看，看中
了纔許他送，瓦窰上的瓦，也叫他送二萬來，不殼用的
再添，而且也要和他講明白，准我們驗看，若沒有痞瘻
破碎，纔許他送來，至於石灰石頭等項，那些都好說。○
雅說○你可以和王先生商議，看着定規就是喇。○瓦
匠遂同王先生出來，到外書房說，窰上的磚，買的時候，
得長眼力。○王說○怎麼說。○瓦匠說○先生不知道
嗎，現在我們這個地方，開了兩座窰，南窰上的磚，燒的
成色很好，價錢也不大，就是做磚的泥鬆，不扛年數，北
窰上的磚，燒的和南窰上一樣，價錢大，難講，但是他做

磚的泥，又細又有筋，能多耐年數。○王說○等他們審

上來的時候，再和他定規罷。○瓦匠說完了話，就走了。

○雅先生一日叫了王先生進去說，我聽見說，這裏蓋

房子的木瓦匠，有僱工的，有包工的，到底包工好，是

卯子工好呢。○王說○若論修蓋的結實，是僱工好，

論省事，却是包工好，但只一件，如今的人，奸滑的多，若

是和他們包工，待他有不合式的地方，他就給你淨使壞，

若是僱工，就不能有這些弊病，但做一天，是一天的

工錢，他就挨延些日子，到房子蓋起來，總比包工多耐

年數。○雅說○這麼着，咱們就商議着，僱工就是了。

○王先生出來，恰巧碰見南審主，來攬買賣，王先生讓

在書房內坐下，南審主說，雅先生修蓋樓房，用多少磚

呢。○王說○用多用少，你得說箇價錢。○審主就將青

磚，並二色子，和黑磚，各樣價錢，說了一遍。○王說○這

是實落價錢嗎。○審主說○這都是賣開的行市。○王

說○好，等我商議商議雅先生，明天再來見話罷。○到

第二天，北審主也來了，王先生問了問各樣磚的價錢，

兩家較比起來，差不多。王先生說，你們都要說少了

不賣的價錢，我好給你們商議，若行市太大了，恐怕生

意做不成，淨白跑腿。○兩家審主一齊答應說，這就是

最少的價錢，你只管去商議罷，管保能成。○王說○好，

你們有事先去做罷，等下半年再來定規。○他們去後，

王先生見了雅先生說，南北兩家審主都來過了，他們

說的磚價相仿。○雅說○甚麼行市呢。○王說○他們

說，每萬青磚，一百吊錢，其餘的二色子，和黑磚，按着扣

錢。○雅說○比前年買的磚，價錢一樣不一樣呢。○王

說○比前年多着十幾吊錢。○雅說○今年怎麼這樣

貴。○王說○他們說，今年柴草貴，較比前年的行市，總

得一百吊錢，纔賣得着。○雅說○柴草雖貴，也差不了

那麼些錢，你總得用點經紀，和他們講，不可由着他們

的斗量。○王說○這麼着，可以給他多少錢呢。○雅說

○你看着和他們講，他們實在說是今年柴草貴，只可

給他加上五吊錢，行就行，不行也就不要了。○王先生

出來的時候，兩家審主早已來了，王先生問北審主說，

你的磚，到底甚麼價錢賣。○北審主說，我並沒多說錢，再少了就不够本喇，兩個爭論了一回，到底沒能說定。○南審主說，你老人家不是不知道，今年各樣的燒草，都比去年貴，就是一百吊錢賣磚，也沒有甚麼賺頭，若再少了，更不用說喇。○王說，○我纔和雅先生商議來，雅先生說，去年買的磚，是八十五吊錢，今年怎麼就得一百吊錢呢，若實在是少了不賣，不一定必得今年修蓋，明年也可以修蓋，後來好夕圓全到九十吊錢，再多一文也不要，若是這個價錢賣，就立合同，若是這個價錢不賣，也就可以不要了。○南審主說，先生既說到這裏，我們實在不好意思再爭了，只是求求先生的面子，多支幾吊錢做個本，好去買草。○王說，○好，我上去給你們說說。○這時候南審主，將北審主叫到背地裏說，夥計呀，怎麼樣呢，我看價錢爭到盡處喇，再要爭，買賣恐怕散了，他若多開幾吊錢給我們，就答應了罷。○北審主說，我看也是，我們隨着辦罷。○兩個審主，又進來說，二色子和黑磚，怎麼講呢。○王說，○還是按常規下扣

錢就是喇。○兩個審主說，好，就是罷，我們拜託你老人家，要緊費心給說說，多支幾吊錢纔好咯。○王說，○忘不了你們的錢哪，遂即進去見了雅先生說，審上的磚，照九十吊錢定規了，他們要想多支幾吊錢壓合同，可以給他多少呢。○雅說，○他們可以靠得住，你打算去罷。○王說，○他們也是多年的老買賣，準可以靠得住，我打算每人先給他四十吊錢，好不好呢。○雅先生說，好，王先生就出來，對審主說，我們寫合同罷，無論用多少，都是你兩家均着分做。○審主說，○就是那麼的罷，我們的合同，也請先生代筆寫寫就完了。○王先生應允，先替南審寫了一張，上面寫的，是立合同南審許全忠，攬到英國雅先生，青磚二萬，二色磚五千，黑磚五千，言明價錢，青磚九十吊，二色磚八十吊，黑磚七十吊，車脚在內，定於三月初八日送到，不許有悞，恐後無憑，立合同存證，當收錢四十吊，保人孔中樓，光緒十二年正月十八日立，替北審寫的合同，也是一樣，後來又替雅先生寫了一張，給南審，上言立合同英國雅素，買到

南審許全忠青磚二萬，二色磚五千，黑磚五千，言明價錢，青磚九十吊，二色磚八十吊，黑磚七十吊，定於三月初八日送到，不許有悞，恐後無憑，立合同存證，當支錢四十吊，保人孔中樓，光緒十二年正月十八日立，寫給北審的合同，也是如此，兩家既將合同收好，王先生就對審匠說，你們的磚，算定規妥當了，往後送磚的時候，總得我們先驗看，驗看好了，纔許送來，○審主說，那是自然的，說完了話，他們就走了，○接着瓦審主，又來賣瓦，對王先生說，聽說雅先生蓋樓，要蓋瓦的，這幾年我們的瓦，都是加工細作的，可以照顧照顧，○王說，你來賣瓦，先把價錢說說，○瓦戶說，聽說你們用的磚，已經定妥了，價錢比去年高，我們的瓦，不是好說的嗎，先生看着罷，○王說，我怎麼看法，總得你自己說說，○瓦戶說，前頭有車，後頭有轍，磚既長了錢，瓦也難落價，都是因為今年的柴草貴，所有的審貨，沒有一樣不貴的，○王說，不用說廢話，快說價錢就是喇，○瓦戶說，去年的青瓦，每萬三十二吊，今年柴草這一貴，

就可以照四十二吊開了，○王說，○你們的瓦，比不得他們的磚，磚的價錢貴，因為送磚的道路遠，是貴在腳錢上，不是貴在磚上，至於你們的審，離城最近，送瓦很覺方便，價錢若太大了，那還行得嗎，我經手多少年，也沒想着四十多吊錢買瓦，○瓦戶說，我算沒說，你老人家看着怎麼講，就怎麼講，○王說，○去年的瓦，原是三十二吊錢，今年柴草貴，我給你商議商議，照三十五吊錢開，也就滿可以了，你賣就賣，你若不賣，這個價錢，到別個審上，也能買得出來，○瓦戶聽見到別個審上去買，就急忙對王先生說，多年都是買我的瓦，這回要買了別人的，叫人家看着也不像件事，你說三十五吊，就是三十五吊，賠着本我也要賣，不圖這次，還圖下次喇，○王說，○這麼的，我去見見雅先生，對他說明白了，我們就寫合同，○王先生見了雅先生說，瓦審上纔來賣瓦，他說了四十二吊錢一萬，我嫌他的價錢太貴，他說今年柴草貴，所有審中燒出來的東西，通都長錢，他又說，磚既長了錢，瓦就難落價，我和他講到三十五吊，他

心裏還是猶豫不定的。○雅說○上年買的瓦，多少錢呢。○王說○上年買的是三十二吊，今年多加三吊錢。○雅說○他少了不賣嗎。○王說○他說這是最少的價錢，若再少了，就不够本咯。○雅說○若實在是少了不賣，和他定規就是了。○王先生出來，照雅先生的話，說了一回，就定規先要四萬，彼此寫的合同，也和買磚的合同相仿，言明瘡痍破碎，瓦戶照章賠補，富交壓合同錢十吊，各人收執一張，就散開了。○此後賣石灰的，賣石頭的，也都講明了價錢，立了合同，再有推細沙子的，以及打土坯的，也都定規日期來做活。○有一天，青石坑的主人，來見王先生說，石板買了沒有，若沒買，咱們是老主顧。○王說○自然是買你的，現在要用坐窗四塊，連枕石二塊，盤臺子的石板六丈，通用出山淨，得多少錢一尺呢。○坑主說○坐窗連枕，淨出來得八百錢一尺，盤臺石只淨一面，也得六百錢一尺。○王說○還得說說不。○坑主說○說說就說說，怎麼說罷。○王說，咱們兩個一口價，也不用囉囉唆唆，坐窗連枕，照七

百五給你開，盤臺子石板，照五百五開，行不行呢。○坑主說○我說的價，都是賣開的價，你老先生要落錢，我恐怕對不起別處呀。○王說○價錢是在各人講，還有生熟不一樣，若是來個生客，十年九不遇的買一回，你們沒有下次的盼望，價錢也許大一些，頭一件，這裏的修造，差不多每年一次，第二件，我們這裏用石板，都是用你的，不圖這次，還圖下次，常言說，淡薄一分利錢吃飽飯，十分利錢饑死人，若是要的價錢狠了，不一定就買你的呀。○坑主說○到底你們念書的人，就是能說，死人也叫你說活了，有你老人家這張嘴，還有成不上來的買賣嗎，就照你老人家還的價錢，去商議罷。○王先生遂即去見雅先生說，我們應該用的石板，現在同坑主講妥了。○雅說○甚麼價錢呢。○王說○坐窗連枕，七百五一尺，盤臺子石板，五百五一尺。○雅說○這個價錢開的怎麼樣呢，也沒打聽打聽人家，是怎麼開的。○王說○連年就是這個價錢。○雅說○既是常行的價錢，就和他定規罷。○王先生遂跟身出來，立了合同，彼

此交收了。○雅先生又把王先生請進書房問他說房
子的材料齊了不齊。○王說○材料都齊了，就是下脚

子還不齊。○雅說○都是少甚麼東西。○王說○就是

脚手，繫腳的杆子，繩子，抬石頭的繫法繩，和托子，盛石灰

的斗子，和灰塊子，還有抬筐，擔筐，麻索子，抬扁担，這些東

西。○雅說○咱們當不了用，早早預備好動工。○王說

○還有件事，商議先生，這房子上的箔，不知用甚麼的，

○雅說○本地都是用甚麼的。○王說○本地有用荆

條編的，有用秫秸勒的，也有用葦箔的，也有用望板的，

○雅說○我看不如用望板好。○王說○要用望板，還

得再添木頭。○雅說○這麼的，你告訴木匠去買罷，再

是瓦匠來了，可以告訴他，牆根脚，要打得結結實實的，

不許糊弄，若有糊弄的地方，叫我看出來，我却不能讓

他。○王說○大約他們可不敢混我們，再還有一件事，

就是這些木瓦匠，到底是卯子工呢，是包工呢。○雅說

○花錢蓋房子，總要蓋的結實，我看看包工，總不如卯

子工做的好，我聽說人家包工蓋的房子，不是今日脊

漏，就是明日瓦壞，那不是白花了錢嗎。○王說○卯子

工就是羅唆一點，不但得時刻經心，到第五天上，還得

酒飯犒勞他們。○雅說○你告訴他們說罷，總要用幾

把好手藝的，殷殷勤勤的做營生，那一個不正經做，立

時就不要他，到蓋起房子的時候，必要格外多給他酒

錢。至於犒勞，我這裏不能預備他們，只可每天照工錢

外，每名給他加上五十個錢，總比他吃犒勞，上算得多。

○王說○這麼的，他們那一個敢不正經做呢。○王先

生從書房出來，着人叫了木瓦匠來，將雅先生安排的

章程說了一遍。○木瓦匠都說，雅先生既是卯子工，又

給他們加錢，再不正經給先生做，那真是沒有良心了，

我們再求先生，問問雅先生，幾時開工，我們好安排人。

○王先生隨時進去，商議明白了，出來對他們說，雅先

生已經定規，到三月初六開工，今天是二月二十八，還

有八天。○木瓦匠答應說，好，到那天我們都一早來。

家務常言

婆婆 孫李氏

長子國寶 長媳趙氏 長子之子天來子

次子國棟 次媳張氏 次子長女桂齡 次女喜齡

三子國華 三媳劉氏

婆婆○我今天要到東街，你二嬸娘家去瞧瞧，你三個

人在家裏，趕緊的把活兒做做，若有不知道的，或是不

會的，就問問你大嫂子，叫他告訴怎麼做。○大媳○我

也有不會的，恐告訴錯了。○婆婆○不要緊，你比他

們來的年數多，又做慣了，大概不能錯，我要去喇。○眾

媳○媽媽早些回來呀，省得黑天沒日的，叫人放不下心，

○婆婆答應一聲，就走了，不多時走到東街，問道二嫂

子在家裏嗎。○二嫂○在家裏呀，進來罷，哎，我的老

妯，你好啊。○孫李氏○我好啊，二嫂子你好啊。○二

嫂○我倒好喇，他們小妯，都好啊。○孫李氏○都好

啊，他們都叫我問二嫂子好。○二嫂○叫他們惦記着，

快坐下歇歇兒罷。○孫李氏○你的年忙完喇。○二嫂

○我們沒有甚麼忙，不過多少做點子就是喇，你家的

人多，過年的東西，諒來都忙完喇罷。○孫李氏○罷罷，

罷罷，人倒不少，整天家不知忙些甚麼，俗語說，人多亂，龍

罷罷，多早，母雞多了不下蛋，一點兒不錯。○二嫂○到底還

是人多好，自古道，人齊山也倒，有人有世界，看看你現

在熬的，兒子媳婦，都雙雙對對的，就是受點累也願意，

○孫李氏○二嫂子你不知曉得，今天我特意要到你家

裏來清閒清閒，在家忒鬧的過不得喇。○二嫂○我看

你的三個媳婦，順情順理的都好，小孩子們又聽說，這

都是因為你平日教導的好啊。○孫李氏○題起他們

順情順理來，我告訴給二嫂你聽聽，大媳婦來了多年，

家裏的事情，都摸着門兒了，也學的會做，就是不願做，

只顧做他男人和四個孩子的東西，這二媳婦，三個孩

子的鞋脚衣裳，也顧不了，連自己整天家頭不像頭，脚

不像脚，不但沒本事做，又懶又滑，還常說扭話，氣人，第

三個的，三個孩子穿的都整整齊齊的，也能做，就是嘴

不成嘴，動不動就罵人，愛說閒話，愛挑眼，大家受不了

他的氣，你想家口大了，孩子們多了，那能都管着穿呢。

○二嫂○可不是嗎，那待是可啊。○孫李氏○所以從去年，我立個

規矩，一年每個房頭，給他一吊五百錢，或買花紡，或買

布穿，小小子會上學，就穿公公衆的，各人管各人自己的男

人孩子，這老大家，小小子們都大了，只有一個女兒穿的

還不巴結，老二家，小小子纔兩歲，還有兩個無用的丫頭

子，自己又不願紡花，怎麼會不襤褸呢，老三，孩子們

也還都小，不能穿公公衆的，所以老二和老三，常嘟囔我

不公平，指使他們做點甚麼，這個就懶得動動身，那個就

掉嘴滑舌的，俗語說，耳不聽，心不煩，聽了心裏不自然，

成天家生不了的閒氣，所以我到你家來告訴告訴，解

解我的愁，二嫂子你可別見笑啊，○二嫂○噫，我的老

妯娌，你怎麼說來，我那得你這麼個人來說說話，還敢

見笑嗎，家務事誰家能沒有，只要你做老的，能拿得起，

放得下，該說的說，該指使的指使，公公道道的，他們就

不敢說別的，不知我說的對不對，○孫李氏○二嫂子

說的真不錯，我就是這個主意，○二嫂○今天也不知

道老妯娌你來，也沒預備點好飯，我做點便飯你吃，你

可別嫌哪，○孫李氏○千萬的別費事，○二嫂○沒有

事費啊，○話分兩頭，再說三媳婦，因為婆婆出門，交付

大媳婦，心中不服，就對大媳說，他奶奶婆今天不在家，這

說不了，羊羣裏跑出駱駝來，顯着你是個大牲口喇，中

午做甚麼吃呢，○大媳○昨天中吃甚麼，今天還做

甚麼吃，○三媳○去年的皇曆，今年可不好使喇，○大

媳○依着你要怎樣做呢，○三媳○他奶奶婆臨走囑咐

叫問你，就沒有錯，○大媳○這麼着的，你願做甚麼吃，再

問問他二孀子願做甚麼，就做甚麼好不好，○三媳○

怎麼單問那鷹嘴鴨子爪的人，能吃不能拿的東西，○

大媳○您二孀子，今日他奶奶婆不在家，我們商議着做

甚麼飯吃，○二媳○我不管，家裏甚麼東西不都在您

手裏，問我不及問您的波稜蓋，正沒味，○三媳○這不

是，我先說不用問他，你偏問他，天不早喇，咱們擀麩吃

好不好，○大媳○他奶奶婆回來不依，怎麼樣吃，○三媳

○他不依有我，○大媳○好啊，這麼着的你快去擀，我就

添火坐鍋。○只有二媳，仍舊坐在炕上紡花，不但不動，添鍋燒火。○只有二媳，仍舊坐在炕上紡花，不但不動，彈嘴裏還唧唧咕咕的說，人家的孩子穿大家的，俺的孩子淨穿自己的，使殺怎麼樣紡也賺不了穿，這兩個小劈材子，死一個也好，我也輕省輕省。○三媳○二嫂子別鼓氣喇，你每年不是也領吊半錢嗎，誰還比你多嗎，是你比別人還無能呢。○正說話之間，二媳的大女兒桂齡，哭着來見他媽，他媽問他說，你這該死的哭甚麼。○桂齡○大娘打我。○二媳○打你，你不會不哭，沒廉恥，不害羞，我看你頭頂火炭不覺熱。○大媳○您二嫂子，你怎麼說話不清不混的，桂齡在那裏把鍋臺，我擲他一指頭，叫他閃開，還犯着你說這樣的話嗎。○二媽○饒除是打了我的孩子，俺罵孩子，倒罵出不是來了嗎，我知道又出來個二行婆婆。○大媳○你放屁，現在還有老的老，誰管你，常言道，好狗看住自己的家，你這不識好歹的東西，我沒那麼大工夫和你打腔。○此時三媳已經將飯擺好，長子國寶和他兩個兒子，連作活的老王，都來家吃飯，老王說，今天吃麪，是誰過生日。○三媳○

今天是特為犒勞夥計，就算給你過生日罷。○及至男的吃飽走了，大媳說，他們已經吃飽喇，我們也都吃罷，二媳的兩個女兒，剛纔拿起碗麪來，二媳就指着他女兒罵起來了，說，你們這些不要臉的東西，就是得了饑瘠喇，怎麼這樣嘴急急食呢。○三媳○你這個不害羞的，浪槎架子，是有娘養，沒娘教，大嫂子說一聲都吃飯，就該快來饑還，還要說長道短的罵人，我問你，這些不要臉的東西，都是誰，你指給我看看，我要撕你，扯你，你纔得了饑瘠，又有懶瘠，懶瘠喇。○兩個爭吵了半天，還是他大嫂子說，快拉倒罷，不要鬧那些沒味的嘴，他奶不久就回來了，叫他聽見，不知道我們又怎麼鬧來，再是叫街坊鄰舍家聽見笑話，二人這纔不言語了。○既刷完了鍋，大媳和三媳，各人忙各人的鍼線，只有二媳，氣的上炕睡覺去了。○到了半過晌，孩子跑來家說，我奶回來喇。○大媳婦為吃麪的緣故，沒有話說，不敢來見。○三媳婦一聽見婆婆回來了，就急忙出來迎接說，媽媽回來了嗎。○婆婆○回來喇。○三媳○媽媽今天

不在家，俺還照你的規矩，晌午吃的麪啊。○婆婆○今天沒有過生日的啊。○三媳○做活的老王，是今天生日。○婆婆○哦，老王的生活做的不錯，他過生日，也該吃頓麪條子，好拴着他的腿。○大媳○媽媽怎麼回來這麼早呢。○婆婆○我有心同你二大娘，再說會話，一陣一陣的耳朵熱，我惦記着家裏，恐怕有甚麼事情，就早早回來了，正說話的時候，老王挑了一擔水來，倒在甕裏。○婆婆○老王啊，你的記性很好，還想着你的生日。○老王○老太太啊，我小時候，常忘記自己的生日，自從我的娘告訴了我，這纔記住喇，他說吃麪那天，就是你的生日，今天我又過生日喇，說着大家笑了一頓，都也沒有言語的，因為各人心裏都明白，却沒受老人家的氣。○次日婆婆向三個媳婦說，今天是臘月二十喇，你們各人給男人孩子，把穿的戴的，都做齊全了沒有呢。○大媳○他爺們有去年過年的衣裳，只有兩雙襪子沒成就，就誤不了他們過年。○婆婆問二媳婦說，你呢。○二媳○別說沒有東西，就是有也做不起來了。

○婆婆又問三媳婦說，你呢。○三媳○我從來不怕做活計，就是巧媳婦作不出沒米的粥來。○婆婆○你織的那些布，都那裏去了。○三媳○我自從娶過將進門來，頭一年給我吊半錢的棉花，還管着男人穿戴，若是遇着一個做莊稼的男人，衣裳還好將就些，就是遇着個做買賣的男人也好，因為錢頭是便宜的，腰裏胯裏的，不過是左眼的眇，抹在右眼裏，這個偏偏攤遇着個書獃子，連箱子帶櫃裏，不是書就是字紙，並沒有那樣的家當，偏要上城裏去念，跟着城裡學的那路窮排場，捺底子鞋不穿，布帽子不戴，學了個大尾巴狼的樣子，就打着人家請他十回，他請人一回，也得若干錢花，都不是從我手頭擰出來的嗎，那還有存下的，倒是每年合裏給一吊五百錢，又有這三個孩子穿，我又不曾偷，還有個甚麼法掙得呢。○婆婆○怎麼逢說起話來，你就不三不四的，嘴裏罵不絕聲的，一點規矩沒有，往後你就不使喚媳婦嗎，你沒有別的東西，連兩疋粗布也沒有嗎。○三媳○若是不嫌，粗布還有啊。○婆婆○咱們這個

日月能和有錢的人家一樣穿戴嗎，叫他大爺買上幾十個錢的品色，把粗布染染，舊的湊補上裏子，只要整齊齊，新新鮮鮮的，也可以見得高人貴客。○二媳○人家有粗布的就嫌，我這個不嫌的又沒有。○三媳○那却不行，真的假不得，假的真不得，你織了多少布，做了多少衣裳，還算計不出來嗎。○婆婆○快把你的布拿出來，好叫他三嬸子替你做做。○三媳○這一分派，可就拉了倒喇。○國寶○您三嬸子，你不要生氣，我纔聽得明白，咱媽媽不是硬派你，是催他二嬸子的布。他二嬸子若做不起來，能不請你幫幫他嗎，就是不請，居家過日子，都是魚幫水，水幫魚，我已經遇着了，您是話不透機，您三嬸子看我的臉面，聽我的話，給他做做罷。○三媳○我並不是格外^咬打^牙，咱們家裏，誰的東西我沒做過呢，怎麼連妯娌的東西，也派起來了，不論甚麼事，就是天牌打地牌嗎，大哥哥既然說到這裏，臉面置千金，我就是抱十二分委屈，還好不做嗎，叫他拿了來罷。○國寶○好啊，原是能者多勞。○婆婆○桂齡啊，

你三嬸子幫着你媽做鉞綫，你可以給他哄着孩子。○桂齡○我不能。○二媳○你怎麼不能，你看你腳上，雙新鞋沒有，你不抱孩子，也不能給你做新鞋過年哪。我告訴你，你別把兩隻腳好好包之，看人家瑞香和你一天包的腳，現在人家包的溜轆輪的，你這個還挖抄在五下裏，大人給你包一包，你就哭阿叫阿的疼，自己又捨不得包，整天家拖着裏腳頭子，走起來又倒坐，又歪歪，像個甚麼東西，你現在不包，單等到你婆婆家纔包嗎，恨起來，我就給你兩客帚^{疙瘡}柄，天地間沒有你這樣的賤才東西，快去抱孩子去。○三媳○不用他抱，我給他嫻一嫻，他就睡喇。○二媳○你嬸子不用你抱孩子，你就去梳梳頭罷。○桂齡○我自己不會梳。○二媳○八九歲的東西，自己連頭也不會梳，過來我給你梳梳罷，了不得了，這些虱子都滾成^蛋喇，^莫動，我給你招招罷，你看看這些饑子，直到頭髮稍都是，就像那大米乾飯樣。○婆婆○多少日子也不知給孩子^刮頭，^篋還唧咕孩子長虱子喇。○二媳○天生這種沒出息的

東西，長了這麼幾根黃毛，早早叫虱子咬掉了纔好喇。

○婆婆○快給他梳梳紮起來，要做甚麼，好叫他三孀子幫着你做，你們妯娌兩個忙錢錢，我和你大嫂子就

忙吃的。○大媳○今年打算蒸多少乾糧媽啊。○婆婆

○蒸他五屈年糕，五屈絲糕，四屈肉包子，三屈

菜餚，兩屈饅頭，三十個大供，再蒸上屈秫秫

菜角子，好打發要飯的，就得喇。○從此合家大小，都忙

過年的東西，有一天國寶的兒子，對他爹爹說，過年這

幾天，人家都有新帽子，我這個帽子，又舊又不時興，等

趕集的時候，給我買個帽子，再給我買雙時樣的好鞋。

○他爹爹說，今年將就將就罷，過年再買。○他孩子見

父親不願意，就求他二孀子，和他三孀子的情面，他爹

爹却不過去，好歹纔買了個帽子給他孩子，又給那些

女孩子們買些花粉，連家裏女人們應用的東西，這一

天，年已經忙完了，二媳來和三媳說，若不是你幫着做，

我們娘兒們，只得披個圍布過年。○三媳○誰叫你

不會做，你比別人還少長那一樣嗎。○二媳一扭就走

喇，去拾自己雞下的蛋，却找不着，抓着雞摸一摸，精瘡

瘡的肚子，就生氣說，蛋也不知叫那個賊根子撿去了。

○三媳對大媳說，二孀子不知在外念哪什麼，還罵

雞罵狗的。○二媳○我說你來嗎，我的雞下的蛋，不知

叫誰拾去了，還能擋住人家說嗎。○三媳○算了罷，這

算你有理，我不敢惹你。○國寶○這是那個孩子屈的

這些屎，難道鼻子瞎了，聞不見，眼睛也瞎了，看不見嗎，

若是來了客，這是個甚麼樣子呢。○三媳○那定是桂

齡姊妹們屈的，自己沒空，也該指使個孩子收拾了。○

二媳○雞蛋叫人撿去，也找不出個主兒來，院子的尿

尿，就是我的孩子屈的，吃東西也找不着我們娘兒們，

有了不是，就都是我們的。○大媳○你說話要清楚一

點兒，這是他三孀子說是您孩子，我還說來嗎。○二媳

○我還說你說的來嗎，你出來逞的什麼頭，我說吃東

西找不着我們娘兒們，還不是嗎，那一天趕集的，買的

梨和落花生，您各人都拿了自已房裏去吃，就給我孩

子兩個落花生，若挪在別人身上，還能肯嗎。○三媳○

有出息的事情，偏偏不做，但學着爭嘴，真不要臉。○大

媳○各人都省兩句罷，您三孀子，您怎麼管多會兒不

會說句柔安話，○三媳○您子跳在墳頭上，要粧大的

喇，○大媳○您可了不得了，人家不論說甚麼話，你張

口就罵人，○三媳○說句笑話，是罵人嗎，我看你不

甚麼，○大媳○這都不是罵人嗎，○三媳○可真是，

○婆婆○聽見他們爭吵不止，就從屋裏出來說，您們

這些死東西，只坐了一塊兒，沒有好話說，不是他罵你，

就是你罵他，就是我這個老東西，當您們的害，幾時我

死了，你們就沒有管轄咯，說着氣的掉了兩滴眼淚，纔

要抽身往屋裏走，天來子跑進來說，奶奶啊，俺三叔回

來咯，○婆婆○是嗎，從這幾天我就盼望他，○國華○媽

媽好啊，○婆婆○好啊，不是從十五放了學嗎，怎麼到

今天纔回來呢，○國華○因為算書房一年的大賬，又

算了舖家的賬，又有同窗們請客，又加上先生收了若

干的對子，幫助他寫了些，好容易今天纔辭別了先生，

和眾位同窗，媽啊，你怎麼不舒坦嗎，○婆婆○沒不舒

坦，我纔睡了點覺，快叫他們收拾點飯你吃，去歇息罷，

○到了臘月二十九日傍晚，二子國棟，也回了家，先問

母親和哥嫂們好，孩子們也上前來問好，吃了晚飯，大

家叙談了一回，婆婆說，天不早喇，有話等明天再說罷，

又對國棟說，你走的很乏了，去倒下歇歇兒罷，○國棟

就往自己房裏來了，見了他妻張氏說，我來家看看，老

少都歡歡喜喜的，像過年的樣兒咯，○二媳○有歡喜

的，却臨不到我這裏，幸虧你今天來了家，不然，我二人

不見得就能見面了，○國棟○怎麼咯，○二媳○婆婆

嫂子的氣，都好受，就是這個三老婆，我題起他來，就氣

的渾身亂戰戰，他張口就罵人，凡事壓人三分，若是

不受他的，他還要動打，你看他長的，就是那母老虎，誰

能和他打，又加上他的孩子，學的和那個混帳媽媽

一樣，把咱的孩子欺負的，比小一輩子，還不如，叫我實

在沒法和他們一塊兒過，不如死了好，○國棟○聽你

的話頭，我知道你的心思了，你是願意自己過是不是，

你不想想，你自己能過嗎，我成年家在外邊，衣裳不用

你做、又不用洗梳，光三個孩子，你也拾掇不起來，你看

黎裏

看你自己，頭不像頭，腳不像腳，咱們共總一百多畝地，除去養老，長孫，不過分二十來畝地，莊稼我從小就沒做，是必得僱人，去了炭錢，還有火錢嗎？再說，你是能上場，你是能送飯，你是能裁，是能縫呢？打淨撈乾，好乾淨的我每年

不過掙那五六十吊的錢，這生意東家還不定做不做，你看他三叔三叔雖然在外念書，舉手不動，分開他能過

他三叔三叔

好了，我們却過不住，你若不信，就看看他今年的事，他三孀子，也是領了合的一吊五百錢，他全買了棉花，不

公衆

到三月的工夫，紡做綫織成兩個大布，就賣四吊大錢，遂跟着又買上三吊大錢的花，不到半年，織了四個大布，只賣了兩疋，又是四吊來錢，還留了兩疋，盡數他和孩子穿的，你算算他這一年，甚麼事情也沒就誤做，淨得了五吊大錢，還剩下兩疋大布，你也是領了一吊五百錢，又加上我私下給你稱了兩三回花，你紡的也不過僅數您娘兒們穿的，你想想若是分開，咱們這個日子，還有個過嗎？你說你要尋死，你不惦記着大人，難道

你就不惦記着這三個孩子了嗎？我勸你帶着孩子好好過罷，不必有別的心思喇。○二媳○我盼望你來家，

聖着

好作個主，給我出出氣，該有個活路纔是，不料想不但

不給我出氣，反倒隨附人家，現在可沒有別的法子了，死了就是喇。○國棟見妻子這樣糊塗，想了多時，想出一個妙法來說，你不聽我勸，是一定要尋死嗎？○二媳○

我沒法子和他們過了，一定要死喇。○國棟○這麼着你就死罷，俗語說，老婆是穿的衣，去了舊的換新的，不過這三個孩子，要得安排，這個也難為不着，我把桂齡給

要得

他大娘，把喜齡交給他三孀子，管保學些好針線，久後到他婆家，再不會受氣，天與子過年十歲，也上好學喇，就穿合的，交給他奶奶，照着，或者我另尋個好的，

公衆

奶奶

也不叫他管別人的衣裳，只叫他收拾頭脚，修理自己

收頭收脚

體體面面的就好，不到三年五載，女兒都出了閣，兒子娶了媳婦，我們兩口子清清閒閒，歡歡樂樂的過到老，這就應了俗語說，有福的逼死無福的。○二媳聽說把女兒交在他三孀子手裏，嚇了個了不得，又聽他男人，

待後來的妻子這麼好，他是有福的，逼死我這無福的，心中大被感動，把淚一擦，就說我還不死喇，我活着，不是個釘，還是個刺喇。○國棟○你不如死就是了，這不是刀也有，繩子也有。○二媳○叫我死，我偏又不死喇，可不能把我的孩子們，落在別人手裏，你說有福的，逼死無福的，我要等着看看，這有福的到底是誰。○國棟○你若聽勸悔改，這些福眼望着就是你的了，你若不聽我的勸，你白白的死了，淨把些孩子撇給人家喇。○早晨起來，大媳和三媳說，夜裏他二叔叔和他二孀子，不知說些甚麼，嚶嚶嚶的，直說了半夜。○三媳○那個浪東西，見了他男人，說黃道黑的，不知編些甚麼瞎話喇。○二媳聽見了，就說我們在房裏說話，愛說什麼就說什麼，你當不住我們說，你爲什麼背後罵人，你纔是浪東西喇。○三媳擲了大媳一把，說了不得了，叫他聽見了，嚷嚷起來，怎麼對住俺二哥哥呢。○大媳就滿臉陪笑，對二媳說，您二孀子你別莫生氣，我和他三孀子，是因為他弟兄們都回了家，歡喜的特爲和你鬧趣啊。

想你別的日子能生氣，今天還能生氣嗎，你看過一年家，老的少的，大人孩子，都熱熱鬧鬧的，氣從那裏生呢，就是氣也是歡氣的，說着大家笑了一頓，就過去了。

太甲悔過

我真是苦啊，自從出了亳都，住在桐宮以裏，好像作了個落運的夢一般，當這時候，富貴榮華不能享受，公卿大夫不能指揮，九州牧伯也不能調動，四海的百姓更不能治理，單單住在這先王的陵寢一旁，整天家憂憂愁愁，永沒有個快樂的時候，這是因爲什麼緣故呢，莫非阿衡伊尹，他仗着是俺商家的大臣，有一些創業的功勞，因此起了一个支巧的念頭，把我放在這裏呀，雖然如此，他到底是爲臣的，我仍舊是爲君的，爲臣的這樣待君，既不是義所當然，又不是理所當然，更不是分所當然，他爲什麼如此待我呢，最可怪的就是伊尹作了這樣越理僭分的事，各路諸侯，還不快快與兵來討他的罪，到如今還是半點動靜沒有，是他們不肯與討嗎，未必然，是道路阻隔住了嗎，未必然，是他們和伊尹

通同作弊嗎，也未必然。哎，伊尹哪，伊尹哪，你爲什麼立這樣歹毒的心，作這樣奸詐的事，把我充發在這裏呢，我真是苦啊，我真是苦啊，沒有法兒，只得平心靜氣，再思再想，哎呀，明白了，明白了，這個緣故全在我自己身上，並不與別人相干哪，因此我就起了一個終身不解的怨恨，怨恨誰呢，怨恨百姓罷，百姓都安分守己，不反不亂，不能怨恨他們，怨恨牧伯罷，牧伯們都是下治理百姓，上服事王朝，各自盡他當盡的職分，又不能怨恨他們，怨恨在朝的公卿大夫罷，公卿大夫都是甘心樂意，事奉商朝，並沒有支離乖巧的心，更不能怨恨他們，究竟是怨恨誰呢，我就是怨恨我自己，我還要極力的治理，治理誰呢，治理百姓罷，百姓有有司治理，用不着我，治理國政罷，國政有大臣治理，也用不着我，治理朝綱罷，朝綱有冢宰治理，更用不着我，別人全不用我治理，還是得治理我自己，到了這分田地，我真是苦啊，憑心自問，哎，太甲啊，太甲啊，你本是先聖成湯的孫子，應當給他續職，繼續之廣行王道，大開商家的江山纔是，

爲什麼先王一崩，你就顛倒他的律法，擾亂他的典章呢，爲什麼竟把師保所說的一切話，看作無用，一點兒不肯遵守，一點兒不肯思想呢，爲什麼自作罪孽，無路逃脫，反失了那諒陰的大禮呢，抬頭一看，這新修的陵寢，豈不是我先祖成湯的故墓嗎，低頭一看，我身上穿的這齊衰，豈不是爲先祖成湯所帶的孝嗎，我的先祖啊，我的先祖啊，我真是苦啊，按家道說，我是一個不孝的孫子，按國政說，我是一個無道的昏君，按天理說，我是一個腥聞在上的罪魁，哎呀，我真是苦啊，我真是苦啊，怎麼對住了我的先祖成湯呢，怎麼對住了我的師保阿衡呢，怎麼對住了在朝的百官呢，怎麼對住了九州的諸侯呢，怎麼對住了四方的黎民呢，我真是苦啊，思想起來，真真是把我羞煞，把我臊煞，把我淡煞，無處遮飾了，但是回頭一想，聖賢不能無過，過而能改，善莫大焉，像我太甲，正當這幼冲之年，從此悔罪改過，處仁遷義，也不妨爲有道的明君，是是是，有了，且看我修道去也。

武王誓師

衆將士們哪，各人拿着刀，執着槍，站立得穩，靜聽我言。古人有句話說，育養我的，就是我的君后，暴虐我的，就是我的冤仇。當今的獨夫受，暴虐極了，殘害極了，拿着群臣的性命，如禽獸一般，看着百姓的生死，連雞狗不如。成日家荒淫無道，殺戮忠良，苦害生靈，動不動就說，天下是我的天下，誰能把我的怎麼樣呢？所以就遠君子，近小人，敗倫喪德，古今所未有之惡，他都做出，雖以夏桀的惡，來和他比量比量，也比不上去，差的還多，就如恩愛夫妻，誰忍的加害，但受將他的皇后，先挖去兩個眼，後炮烙了兩隻手，只見鮮血直流，油如水滴，皇后疼的滿地亂滾，疼哭不止，一直的疼死了，咳，恩愛夫妻，受向如此忍心，在別人身上，更不用說了，所以去諫諍他的，不是被殺戮，就是受炮烙，杜元銑因諫諍，叫受殺死，梅栢去諫諍，被受炮烙，商容膠隔黃貴妃因諫諍，叫受摔死，把丞相比干，活扒了心，把上大夫楊任，活剗了眼，又用油烹了東伯侯，使囚車囚了箕子，還有許多，不能

盡提，想這些忠心爲國的良臣，受這樣的慘毒，苦害殺戮，真令人言之痛心，更有無緣無故受刑的，就如我父親，有什麼不是來，竟被囚禁了七年，南伯侯有什麼罪來，竟身受大辟，又有我長兄伯夷考，有什麼罪來，竟被受活活的用刀一塊一塊的割死，剝成肉丸，包作包子，強逼着我父親，吃我長兄的肉，咳，傷心哉呀，傷心哉，更向百姓重重的要稅，誰若拿不上，沒有別話說，不是掛竿打板，就是跪鎖壓杠子，所以百姓雖筋出力盡，東借西取，求親告友，仍舊還有許多拿不上的，因此流離失所的，無處不有，甚至餓死父母，凍死妻子的，也是不少，真暴虐極了，且又捉了百姓去修鹿台，巨橋，酒池，肉林，叫崇侯虎督工，若有錢的，行上賄賂，家中有二人，就去一個，無錢的，就是家中只一人，也是得去，崇侯虎不分白黑，口罵鞭打，往前直催，所以累死的人，橫仰豎歛，這裏一個，那裏一個，千千萬萬，不可勝數，遂死遂埋在鹿台之中，家裏連屍骸也不能見，成日家工場中，是號哭連天，直如殺人場一般，且鹿台之下，又挖一條深溝，放

上大小無數的毒蛇、蝎子，名爲蠱盆，將女人剝去衣服，摔將下去，被毒蛇纏在身上，也有鑽在口裏的，蝎子螫的青一塊，腫一塊，但見已經死的，那麼直挺挺的躺着，叫毒蛇去吃，尙未死的，是反來復去，直降亂跳，疼的鬼哭狼號，誰見了誰不落淚，而受反以此取樂，其心何忍！但受之惡，還不只如此，又造一些銅柱，抹上脂油，下邊點着烈火，逼着人從上頭走，掉下去落在火中，燒的是咬牙切齒，油如汗滴，這裏去一塊皮，那裏去一塊肉，你哭我叫，要死不得死，要活不得活，真殘忍極了，受反以此和妲己取笑，真忍哉其心也！又看見冬天過河的人，遂吩咐與我捉來，用鎚子將腳脛敲碎，拿出骨髓來觀看，此人疼個賊死，就是醒過來，也成了廢人，父母不能再事奉，妻子不能再養活，你想害的這家苦不苦呢？受之暴虐，還有更甚的，就是將孕婦割開觀看，但見去拿婦人的時候，把那一家人，嚇的戰戰兢兢，齊哭亂號，夫不忍舍妻，妻不忍離夫，更有五尺之童，扯着他母親的衣裳，嗚嗚直哭，不肯鬆手，他母遂哭着說：我兒，你母親

不能再抱養你了，咱們娘們今日相別，再永不得相見了，說完淚如雨下，殘臣將小孩一脚踢倒，拉着婦人去，不多時拿了好幾個孕婦，都在受跟前用刀子割開，割開一個，就死兩個，哎，受的暴虐，十天十夜也說不完，想這些無知的百姓，無故受這些荼毒，暴虐，殘害，殺戮，如在烈火滾油之中，真是傷心悲哉，百姓們就都過責我，不快快與兵，我如今若再不與兵伐受，一不合天意，二不合民心，更不知受能暴虐到什麼分，就是與受同惡，所以奉天討受之舉，無容推辭，我不能不伐，不得不伐，更不敢不伐，今日定要與受決個雌雄，定個勝負，爲萬民除害，爲忠臣報仇，廢棄商受，使百姓同得平安，就是後世百姓，也得享安樂，並且流芳百世，青史垂勳，你們都抬起頭來，向正北望望，來了來了，人馬望不到邊，你看那前邊的紅旗，不是助受爲虐的惡來嗎？那左邊的青旗，不是助受害人的飛連嗎？那右邊的白旗，不是督工殘民的崇侯虎嗎？那中央的黃旗，豈不是荒淫無道，苦害生靈，滅絕紀綱，殺害忠良，炮烙蠱盆，敲骨剖胎，

神人共怒的獨夫受嗎，衆將士們，生死禍福，勝敗存亡，就在眼前，千夫長，百夫長，及各路諸侯，都大起膽子，盡上力量，勇往直前，不捉住獨夫受，不要回頭，走走走。

孟子

世人皆稱孟子爲大賢，其實稱他爲聖人，也是理當，論孟子生的時候，沒聽說有二龍繞室，五老降庭，孟子死的日子，也沒記有弟子爲他帶孝，國君來行喪禮，然而在他以前的聖人，如堯舜禹湯文武周公孔子所傳的道，若以後沒有孟子，必早已墜於地，在他以後的學者，如韓愈周子二程朱熹諸人所守的道，若其先沒有孟子，必早已失其傳，試思當戰國的時候，以異端迷惑人的有告子，以邪說引誘人的有許子，無父無君的有楊子，墨子，善陳善戰的有孫子，武子，人人都流於異端，誰還知道忠孝，國國皆貴尚爭戰，誰肯遵守王法，幸虧有孟子出來，闢邪說，放淫詞，黜五霸，貶桓文，唇槍舌劍，將一切旁門左道，殺了個望影而逃，使爲子的知道孝，爲臣的知道忠，爲國君的知道仁義，得聽王道，誰還能幫

助他呢，誰不當佩服他呢，想當日，孔子將堯舜的道理發明出來，宰子稱他的事功，賢於堯舜遠矣，這樣，孟子又將孔子的道，重新證明出來，豈不更賢於孔子許多嗎，那可不論到他的事功呢，若說孟子的事，從少就可稱道，但就他長大，周流列國的時候，更見出他是頭一個會引導人君的，如齊宣王以好勇推諉，孟子遂引出文王好勇來，宣王以好貨推諉，孟子便引出公劉好貨來，宣王以好色推諉，孟子又引出太王好色來，再如以羊易牛那塊事，連齊王自己也沒法解說了，孟子還爲他說，無傷也，是乃仁術也，王是光看見牛穀，沒看見羊穀，像齊王那樣的昏昧，都教孟子感動的說，夫子之言，於我心有戚戚焉，可見孟子，是盡力要救正一切的國君，到他年老的時候，因材施教，更能發揮聖賢的奧妙，就如養氣一事，乃是要緊的一步工夫，孔子還沒提到，孟子可和他的門徒詳細講明，再如知言一事，也是要緊的學問，別人都未提明，獨有孟子，向他的門人陳明，詳觀孟子七篇，實足推倒一世的辯士，開拓萬

古的心胸，所以當時滕文公，特爲越國去聽他的教訓，曹君的兄弟，九尺四寸以長，還想着到他門下受業，可見孟子在名教中，更可算爲巨擘，孟子生平吐辭爲經，稱爲文章の祖始，現在且不必讚美他的文章，孟子固然深懂得天時地利人和，現在也不必誇獎他的武畧，現就着他言必稱堯舜，可知他的言語，是何等的整重，以尙志爲事情，可知他的心思，是何等的高超，不受齊王的兼金，辭却萬鍾的俸祿，可想到他的行爲，何等的廉潔，不肯往見諸侯，又說說大人則藐之，可想到他的氣象，是何等的剛方，而且勸齊王賑饑，無愧於仁，格梁王之貪心，無愧於義，不肯踰了位和右師說話，無愧於禮，預先知道盆成括必見殺，無愧於智，無怪乎人說孟子之功，不在大禹以下，無怪乎說孟子之德，絕類離倫，無怪乎刑部尙書錢唐，情願爲孟子被射，且曰臣得爲孟子死，死有餘榮，正見得孟子是教人服氣的，是憂心世道的，是挽回人心的，鄰國雖然不大，有孟子也不算很小，戰國雖是不好，有孟子也不至大壞，這樣看

來，可以與山河並壽的，是孟子，可以與日月爭光的，也是孟子，可以媲美千古的，是孟子，可以流芳百世的，也是孟子，我中國直至今日，得稱爲文物之邦，中華天朝，有三綱五常，有君臣上下，有禮義廉恥，全賴孟夫子這一臂之力，總而言之，孟子從小到大，到老，言語當稱讚，心思當稱讚，行爲當稱讚，氣象當稱讚，並他的文武仁義禮智都當稱讚，所以稱他爲大賢，在孟子抱屈真抱屈，稱他爲聖人，在我看理當又理當。

笨 618	者 136	扯 20	鎮紙 81	証 71	城隍 197	卽如 575	棘 321	擗 343
笨 618	道 5	扯疲 476	証見 213	城隍 322	卽早 324	棘集 324	擗鼓 388	
着 See Choā	這一陣 334	扯謊 20	Ch'én	城廂 191	卽使 475	棘給 8	擗 625	
着 522	這一着 315	車 41	辰 74	秤 41	卽或 475	：	62	
朝 7	這早晚 334	車行 113	臣 429	逞 146	卽便 475	：	179	
朝飯 7	這往下 341	掣 321	沉 210	逞能 351	卽時 482	嫉 470	繼 553	
罩 65	這往前 341	徹 303	沉重 561	逞強 149	妓 307	嫉妒 470	躋 592	
趙 69	這些 5	撤 25	沉重重 456	乘 ¹ 602	奇 ¹ 624	戟 603	躋躋 592	
趙子龍 447	這兒 22	澈 439	沉顛顛 456	乘 ² 56	季 171	跡 511	籍 ² 361	
照 51	這面 76	澈白 437	陳晨 568	整天的 298	計 62	極 168	籍 ⁴ 304	
照面 493	這個 5	Chên	晨趁 60	整天家 183	計較 205	：	396	
照像 490	這個時 ...	枕 ⁴ 112	稱 ⁴ 149	整年 502	既 309	極其 309	396	
照壁 502	候 334	枕 ⁸ 112	座 389	整壯 167	既自 309	極處 266	饑荒 81	
照應 126	這個當 ...	枕 ⁸ 417	座 196	整治 56	既往不 ...	幾 ¹ 139	饑寒 471	
照舊 263	口 334	貞 466	座 505	整理 267	咎 395	幾 ² 138	饑饉 290	
燻 229	這個當 ...	貞潔 466	觀 86	整齊 291	既 309	幾 ³ 115	Ch'i	
Ch'ao	兒 334	針 43	Chêng	整諍 564	誠心 423	幾工 478	七 227	
吵 81	這嗒 334	針尖削 ...	正 ¹ 108	Ch'êng	誠心 472	幾多 227	七 231	
吵嘴 199	這嗒子 334	鐵 478	正 ⁴ 8	誠得 37	誠然 547	幾早 231	七大八 ...	
吵鬧 93	這嗒個 334	陣 77	正大 397	誠然 547	誠實 295	幾兒 231	小 566	
抄 72	這處 76	陣 272	正大光 ...	誠實 295	稱 ¹ 294	幾時 231	七杈八 ...	
抄持 216	這裡 22	針脚 436	明 297	稱 ¹ 48	稱呼 137	幾陪 231	股 567	
抄家 290	這等說 ...	針頭線 ...	明 297	稱讀 462	稱讚 462	積 111	七抓八 ...	
炒 416	起來 569	腦 597	正直 297	澄 See Têng	稱讚 462	積塊 369	七抓八 ...	
超 599	這會兒 334	針線 43	正派 313	撐 71	稱讚 462	積聚 369	七折八 ...	
超羣出 ...	這麼 85	珍 93	正道眼 ...	撐 126	唧 268	積攢 111	七折八 ...	
乘 598	這麼一 ...	珍珠 93	兒 246	撐打 354	唧 268	笑 See Ch'i	七折八 ...	
朝 76	來 207	珍寶 196	正頂 384	鏢 159	唧 268	演 439	扣 567	
朝廷 346	這麼的 207	疹 199	正間 224	成 22	唧 268	演 458	七折八 ...	
朝珠 398	這麼着 207	真 35	正經 118	：	唧 268	演酸 437	扣 569	
掉 See Ch'oa	這麼說 ...	真切 167	正經不 ...	成了壞 ...	唧 268	演濕 437	七言八 ...	
潮 102	起來 569	真切 303	錯 370	蛋 467	唧 268	緝 ¹ 300	語 566	
潮糊糊 ...	這麼樣 207	真果 393	正當 58	成丁 153	唧 268	濟 77	七拏八 ...	
的 455	這樣 85	真個 393	爭 43	成久 478	唧 268	劑 170	湊 567	
潮濕 102	這樣看 ...	真神 38	爭光 603	成文 359	唧 268	機 144	七股八 ...	
Ché	這頭 569	真實 372	爭吵 199	成家 193	唧 268	機會 231	杈 567	
宅 See Chai	這邊 76	真診 428	爭肥 415	成家立 ...	唧 268	機器 144	七歪八 ...	
折 71	浙 361	真診脈 428	爭亮 415	業 195	唧 268	機謀 277	扭 566	
折乾 314	摺 190	振 373	爭鬥 163	成就 304	唧 268	機關 339	七頭八 ...	
折証 71	摺 128	振興 373	爭輕 415	成樣 546	唧 268	擊 93	七嘴八 ...	
折福 401	遮 267	樹 595	爭鬧 43	成總 371	唧 268	擊 471	舌 567	
折算 264	遮掩 408	樹酌 595	爭競 71	成壘 371	唧 268	雞 25	七類八 ...	
折磨 207	遮擋 197	賑 205	政 205	呈 185	唧 268	雞片 432	倒 567	
折磨 585	整 519	震 233	政事 293	承 149	唧 268	雞狗 601	乞 229	
折蹬 147	Ch'é	鎮 81	症 81	承問 564	唧 268	雞鴨 366	汽 372	
折騰 570	鎮店 256	掙 58	症候 149	承認 149	唧 268	雞鴨 366	汽 372	

汽機	372	起初	270	齊各	277	家雀	543	講理	442	叫	13	傲	366	喬	434
妻 ¹	154	起初	360	齊截	402	家常	480	Chiang	100	： 179	傲	366	： 366	： 435	
妻 ⁴	624	起初頭	360	齊截	497	家產	206	江	625	叫白	430	醇	187	喬白	438
其	143	起身	41	齊整	174	家道	338	江 山	362	叫作	184	醇子	377	喬苦	436
：	427	起承	轉	齊整	456	家婆	546	江 湖	620	叫門	15	膠	131	喬氣	息434
其中	427	合	600	齊雙	497	家業	69	匠	23	叫喚	299	： 膠	435	喬腥	434
其外	427	起前	360	緝 ¹	453	家當	139	倖	49	叫喚	579	膠	435	喬燥	435
其間	427	起馬	163	器	144	家裡	13	降 ⁴	73	叫驢	579	焦	606	喬澀	441
其裏	427	起棍	361	器 具	246	家賊	300	降生	242	角 See	Chioä	焦	606	喬糶	434
其餘	427	起動	550	器 具	90	家慈	514	降世	585	角 See	Chioä	焦	286	喬幣	63
其實	427	起眼	460	器 具	540	家廟	228	降臨	389	角 See	Chioä	焦	324	喬燉	177
所	517	起意	593	器 具	540	家廟	230	姜	81	角 See	Chioä	焦	324	喬敲	15
奇 ³	110	起誓	264	器 具	540	家嚴	514	姜子牙	292	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
奇 怪	110	起頭	360	甲	79	挾	625	姜太公	292	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
奇 事	358	起講	585	加	79	拾	68	將 ¹	59	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
奇 處	267	起靈	585	加	79	假 ³	46	： 68	88	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
湖	60	砌	93	加	282	假 仁 假	...	： 133	133	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
豈 ³	445	啟	516	加	479	義	560	將 功 折	...	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
豈 有 此	...	悽	124	加	508	假 如	381	罪	555	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
理	445	悽	124	夾	388	假 使	381	將 迎 客	172	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
豈 知	484	淒	273	夾	388	假 若	381	將 軍	159	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
契	268	淒	273	住	401	假 粧	450	將 起 來	303	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
成	30	期	149	住 人	619	假 ⁴	200	將 將	535	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
氣	11	期 畢	364	迦	202	傢	23	將 就	105	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
：	186	棋	147	架	30	傢 什	43	將 就	107	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
氣 不 忍	255	欺	546	： 357	傢 伙	23	23	將 ⁴	209	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
氣 色	553	欺	54	架 式	540	傢 使	23	絳	439	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
氣 味	404	欺 生	369	架 弄	568	傢 具	306	絳 紫	438	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
氣 忍 忍	...	欺 哄	54	枷	358	嫁	55	獎	108	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
的	500	欺 負	85	家	13	買 ³	212	獎 賞	185	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
氣 派	338	欺 壓	486	： 183	價	106	106	漿	100	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
氣 恨 恨	...	欺 騙	450	： 514	價 錢	106	106	蔣	173	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
的	500	棄	157	家 下	213	穰	41	強 ¹	162	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
氣 息	436	噉	389	家 小	62	駕	174	彊 ¹	162	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
氣 象	140	噉 噉	...	家 口	62	頰	404	彊 ¹	162	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
氣 調	547	噉	389	家 法	283	： 283	...	彊 ⁴	162	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
氣 諱 諱	500	茸	258	家 私	139	Ch'ia	...	薑	470	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
起	25	茸 理	258	家 長 里	...	卡 ³	256	講 究	59	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
：	70	旗 人	255	短 家 長 里	...	卡 防	256	講 究 頭	419	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
起 手	561	旗 下	294	短 家 信	141	恰	58	講 法	283	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
起 先	339	旗 裝	511	家 破 人	...	恰 巧	209	講 明 說	...	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
起 先	360	笑 漆	149	家 務	152	招 尖 子	520	開 講 書	43	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
起 早 連	...	漆 黑	437	家 務	152	招 尖 出	...	講 書	159	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
晚	562	齊	55	家 務	152	招 尖 出	...	講 書	420	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
起 早 睡	...	齊 全	274	家 務	152	招 尖 出	...	講 書 堂	23	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
晚	562	齊 全	303	家 財	277	色	598	講 情	365	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
起 行	324	齊 全	303	家 財	277	色	598	講 情	365	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15
起 見	568	齊 全	303	家 財	277	色	598	講 情	365	： 142	狡	479	324	喬敲	15

接	25	節 ²	72	見天見	347	粟	431	千金	225	謙遜	547	筋	90	親 ¹	10	梗	191		
接手	413	節	目	304	見見血	531	漸	48	千思萬	...	謙讓	219	筋力	579	親口	483	梗米	191	
接待	134	節	孝	363	見神見	...	僧	449	千想	567	緯	331	筋骨疼	90	親友	127	晴	30	
接就	223	節	烈	462	鬼的面	350	借分	449	千萬	285	纏	339	值	48	:	:	572	經 ¹	18
借	21	節	3	112	見面	215	歡 ⁴	349	欠	110	纏	115	值	535	親自	54	經心	452	
借字	379	解	3	101	見笑	349	箭	310	欠安	200	纏	619	禁 ⁴	194	親近	388	經手	97	
借光	252	解	手	480	:	:	350	117	欠帖	310	Chin	禁 ¹	346	親身	452	經承	385		
借問	252	解	恨	286	見個高	...	儉	117	欠據	379	巾	27	禁 ¹	348	親兵	526	經紀	258	
借貸	576	解	4	557	低	531	儉省	283	前	40	斤	18	盡 ⁴	53	親房近	...	經書	479	
借貸不	...	截	稽	191	見做	347	監 ⁴	281	前天	40	斤	18	:	275	支	393	經歷	375	
逃	577	稽	誠	343	見景生	...	監 ¹ 生	466	前日	40	今	40	:	468	親事	140	經練	110	
捷	383	誠	命	168	情	350	監 ¹ 督	281	前世	443	今	334	盡力	220	親眼	21	經戲緣	...	
捷足先	...	誠	命	569	見証	111	監 ¹	243	前年	331	今天	40	盡心	286	親戚	30	簿	308	
登	384	潔	白	412	見影	550	監 ¹ 牢	243	前言不	...	今日	40	盡皆	468	親愛	523	經 ⁴	372	
捷便	508	潔	白	412	見闊	110	監 ¹ 斃	386	達後語	155	今早	330	盡情	468	親熱	255	經線	372	
街	16	癩	238	見識	83	劍	603	603	前兒	40	今年	330	盡絕	206	親確	303	就	296	
街市	115	Ch'ie	肩	56	賤	86	:	513	前兒個	40	今兒	40	盡頭	418	Ching	境	盡 ⁴	572	
街坊	102	且	51	肩	86	賤內	214	513	前面	273	今兒個	40	錦	321	井	83	精	60	
街道	93	:	400	肩	86	賤內	513	513	前進	188	今朝	330	錦	321	更 ¹	241	:	411	
隔 ²	77	切 ¹	66	姦	557	賤內	147	147	前街	399	筋	449	緊	359	更夫	243	精光光	474	
隔二	...	切 ¹	刀	436	建	460	檢	71	前程	163	筋	449	緊	458	京	21	精妙	571	
隔三	566	切 ⁴	81	東	105	諫	564	564	前頭	337	筋	449	緊	458	京城	83	精肥	416	
兩	566	:	285	東	107	諫	564	564	牽	177	近日	101	緊	564	京錢	10	精明	60	
隔壁	238	切 ¹	己	517	兼	442	錢	231	牽	363	近日	339	緊	120	京錢	65	勁 ⁴	624	
隔壁	告	切 ¹	洽	376	健	252	錢行	239	牽連	177	近來	336	儘	65	勁 ⁴	624	精神	201	
狀	534	怯	625	健壯	252	檢	184	184	乾 ²	115	金	90	:	396	矜	220	精神外	...	
傑	277	怯	449	剪	66	檢點	184	184	乾坤	446	金木水	...	儘	396	荆	321	漏	561	
揭	129	怯	560	剪	495	難	123	123	乾隆	115	火土	601	:	399	荆棘	321	精通	508	
揭告	129	腦	560	根	495	難	123	123	淺	120	金銀花	171	儘	399	耕	112	精氣神	...	
揭短	165	妾	336	間 ¹	112	澗	574	574	鉛	28	金雞納	436	儘	160	竟	364	兒	364	
結 ¹	41	起	86	:	169	簡	235	235	鉛粉	432	金雞納	...	襟	68	:	365	精混	416	
結吧	117	敲	395	間 ¹	478	簡	235	235	鉛筆	28	霜	436	謹	61	竟不知	484	精窄	411	
結冤	429	竊	294	間 ⁴	349	簡	235	235	遺	442	勁 ⁴	156	謹	397	淨	12	精細	60	
結連	576	竊	294	間 ⁴	349	簡	235	235	懲	168	津	119	Ch'in	淨	立立	497	精稀	411	
結實	41	竊	294	間 ⁴	349	薦	134	134	錯	171	衿	574	淨	淨	乾乾	497	精鈍	411	
結實實	496	Chien	堅	123	蕪	287	歎 ⁴	287	錯	332	晉	528	芹	404	淨落落	497	精矮	411	
結	234	件	66	堅定不	...	鑑	303	303	歎 ⁴	332	進	48	芹	408	青	262	精輕	416	
結交	536	奸	216	移	327	鑑	303	303	潛	602	進	48	芹	408	青	262	精瘦	411	
結果	391	奸	216	堅定着	...	鑑	303	303	錢	3	進	94	秦	108	景	78	精慢	411	
結彩	575	奸	399	一	327	Ch'ien	錢店	18	錢	18	進	191	欽	483	景州	275	精窮	411	
結親	184	尖	13	堅固	123	千	錢財	422	錢	18	進	94	欽	483	景緞	419	精濕	411	
結髮夫	...	尖	455	揀	95	千	錢舖	18	錢	18	進	121	琴	81	敬	44	精薄	416	
妻	577	見	21	減	282	千	錢	391	錢	391	進	512	禽	143	敬	301	精靈	361	
竭	286	:	279	減法	282	千	錢	383	錢	383	進	401	勤	117	敬	255	精灑	411	
竭力	286	見	347	煎 ¹	556	千	錢	567	錢	567	進	146	勤	585	敬	589	鏡	54	
嗟	498	見	104	煎 ⁴	507	千	謙	561	謙	561	進	48	勤	507	敬	166	警	310	
嗟嘆	498	人	104	捷	579	當	謙	548	謙	548	進	87	擒	467	敬	528	警戒	311	

鏡	71	輕省	382	久仰	515	舅舅	69	只怕	238	知過必	...	製造	571	癡說	267	妯娌	346
驚	177	輕氣	325	久久	341	奮奮	46	：	377	改	491	鐵 ³	603	癡默	499	周	205
驚眼	510	輕氣球	326	久遠	515	奮奮	554	只是	257	知曉	620	誌誌	339	癡頭	...	周公	340
驚動	229	輕視	578	白	113	奮奮	331	只是	...	知趣	83	誌石	339	腦	559	周到	219
驚慌	501	輕慢	382	究	59	奮奮	181	件	257	知縣	329	質	261	爐	620	周流	471
		輕薄	124	究其實	427			只	377	知識	508	緻	46			周流	471
		輕靈	578	究問	462	Ch'iu		只	177	指	51	擲	84	Choā		國	472
青	97	請	6	究竟	364	囚	293	：	218	指甲	79	贊	493	抽	61	周旋	452
青州	162	請回	6	究辦	286	囚犯	288	旨	168	指使	242	贊見	493	抽	314	周圍	539
青衣	208	請客	178	咎	393	：	293	旨	389	指派	391	織	507	捉	129	周瑜	207
青須	499	請教	453	非	416	求	73	至	37	指教	321	職	140	捉	618	淵	469
青黃赤	...	請問	177	非業	416	求告	297	至今	340	指望	140	尺	106	捉	12	紂	405
白黑	601	慶	238	救	54	求救	389	至不	402	指頭	83	吃	251	桌	190	紂王	406
聘	174	慶賀	238	救火	206	求救無	...	至於	421	指點	321	叱	5	桌單	595	：	589
頃	324	慶壽	549	救主	188	門	390	：	584	指雞	...	吃	204	酌	48	紂	406
頃刻	323	親	183	救急	314	求福免	...	至契	268	指戳	543	：	97	：	51	週	123
頃刻間	323	親家	183	救酒	46	禍	562	至終	588	指	96	吃	224	：	327	週年	177
情	8	親家母	481	酒令	621	秋	196	至理	593	短	224	吃	313	：	522	週歲	123
情分	546	親家婆	481	酒色財	...	秋天	196	至親	607	胆	607	吃	90	：	216	粥	119
情形	539	馨	306	酒氣	601	秋審	386	芝	607	致	313	賭	98	：	48	粥廠	372
情面	213	馨淨	306	酒徒	129	俸	505	芝蔴	607	隻	90	吃	27	：	326	軸	356
情理	23	：	437	酒病	165	球	213	志	146	紙	27	賭	487	：	327	：	358
情常	582	彙	610	酒席	106	毬	147	志向	312	紙	439	吃	54	：	327	：	28
情腸	560			酒席筵	...	楸	113	志氣	146	紙筋	208	吃	177	：	324	：	28
情誼	185	Chioā		酒前	541	楸樹	433	制	102	紙稍	589	吃	5	：	472	：	127
情趣	174	角	356	酒飯	307	鞦韆	339	制石	339	紙撚	146	吃	574	：	396	：	348
情願	145	脚力	115	酒樓	553	鞦韆	339	枝	270	紙錢	321	吃	115	：	564	：	348
清	23	脚下	334	酒醉	...	：	...	：	272	值	30	池	415	：	564	：	348
清心	...	脚子	197	酒飽	598	窮	6	直	61	值不	298	赤	416	：	87	：	501
清欲	186	脚手	485	酒錢	92	窮苦	507	直	455	值日	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
清白	264	覺	See Ch'ue	酒館	238	窮苦	507	直	611	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
清吉	306			酒囊	602			直	429	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
清官	491	Ch'ioā		揪	192	Chi		直	405	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
清亮	40	卻	212	揪	32	之	51	直	526	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
清雅	328	却	212	揪	104	之	...	直	325	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
清楚	58	却又	316	揪	106	之	601	直	429	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
：	302	却有一	...	揪	475	之	...	直	235	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
清靜	23	件	212	揪	604	之	604	直	497	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
清晴	485	殼	439	揪	377	之	518	直	511	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
傾	595	確	296	揪	441	之	341	直	44	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
傾家	595	確乎	327	揪	314	止	193	直	542	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
輕	48	確乎不	...	揪	377	止	193	直	574	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
輕生	455	移	327	揪	105	支	25	直	8	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
輕易	174			揪	107	支	125	直	53	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
：	478	Chiu		揪	320	支	192	直	478	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
輕佻	578	九	2	揪	475	支	467	直	115	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
輕重	120	九族	581	揪	69	支	117	直	131	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501
輕看	125	久	256	揪	372	支	366	直	8	值	462	赤	415	：	87	：	501

愁	106	諸	209	除非	390	捶	192	中	瘋不	...	寵	480	去	8	瘥	296	Ch'ue			
愁苦	258	:	468	畜 ⁴	382	捶布石	194	語	325		Chü		:	25	瘥愈	296				
愁腸	336	諸	高亮	畜性	413	捶板石	194	中	舉	233			去	世	356	圈 ¹	81	却	See Ch'ioä	
綢	191	築	599	畜類	382	鏈	123	中	鸚	243	句	94	去	年	239	圈套	95	缺	232	
綢緞	191	燭	143	厨	56			仲	尼	88	:	99	去	年	331	圈椅子	619	殼	See Chioä	
醜	46	鑄	246	厨子	625	Chun		仲	尼	340	局	280	去	處	266	圈籠	193	癩	446	
醜陋	121	屬	81	處 ⁴	62	准	157	忠	155	局外	281	去	頭	418	踏	505		Chün		
醜俊	121			:	265	准其	427	忠	心	259	局面	352	曲 ³	197	勸	30	君	259		
醜警	184	Ch'u		:	357	準	216	忠	真	405	局勢	540	曲 ¹	226	勸戒	243	君	七民	...	
	585	出	13	處所	267	準行	326	忠	:	590	居	121	曲	折	470	勸善	255	君	八	567
Chu		出	93	處 ³	147	準成	216	忠	厚	611	拒	121	曲	阜	226	權	243	君	子	259
主人	30	出	35	處心	472	準成	216	忠	厚	296	拒	592	曲	阜	596	權	596	君	三民	...
主考	51	出	205	處事	395	準頭	418	重	4	38	具	592	曲	屈	180	權柄	262	君	七	567
主事	291	出	95	處館	516	準頭	418	重	巴	455	具	246	取	27	權當	243		君	三民	...
主事	568	出	356	楚	58	諄	297	重	巴	321	拘	557	取	606	Chüe		君	七	569	
主事	38	出	188	倦	355	諄切	297	重	用	321	拘	61	取	427	決	276	均	均	181	
主意	30	出	258	錫	258	Ch'un		重	看	125	拘	568	取	420	決	327	均	均	181	
主謀	467	出	223	離	564			終	:	67	拘	397	取	27	決	327	俊	俊	46	
主顧	160	出	345	觸	180	春	115	終	久	365	拘	87	取	540	決	327	俊	俊	152	
竹	575	出	146	觸	180	春分	332	終	久	365	拘	519	娶	43	決	539	軍	軍	95	
朱	97	出	423	觸	375	春	196	終	身	67	拘	425	娶	171	決	277	軍	軍	165	
朱紅	273	出	94	觸	29	春	600	衆	衆	373	俱	61	趣	83	角	See Chioä	軍	軍	571	
助住	35	出	13	Chui		冬	112	衆	多	112	俱	468	趣	267	訣	526	軍	軍	571	
住	15	出	133	唇	394	唇	112	種	4	92	俱	469	Chüan		訣	526	軍	軍	571	
住口	192	出	133	唇	112	唇	112	種	花	161	俱	468	卷 ⁴	235	訣	526	軍	軍	571	
住手	299	出	171	純	401	純	401	種	洋	256	矩	11	卷 ³	430	脚	See Chioä	裙	裙	432	
住家	215	出	66	鷄	197	鷄	197	種	痘	256	菊	273	捐	624	個	162	羣	羣	174	
住宿	23	出	220	蠢	48	蠢	48	種	痘	108	聚	267	捐	131	個	162	羣	羣	174	
住處	517	出	220	蠢	610	蠢	610	鐘	鐘	229	聚	510	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
住嘴	267	出	266	Ch'ui		鐘	212	鐘	鐘	18	聚	266	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
住頭	300	出	55	Chung		鐘	18	鐘	鐘	358	據	202	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
柱	485	出	118	中 ¹	8	鐘	18	鐘	鐘	358	據	202	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
柱	473	出	176	中	人	498	中	人	人	498	遽	322	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
柱	407	出	67	中	上	67	中	上	上	67	遽	322	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
柱	408	出	338	中	古	338	中	古	古	338	遽	322	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
祝	393	出	484	中	伙	484	中	伙	伙	484	遽	322	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
珠	93	出	618	中	軍	618	中	軍	軍	618	遽	322	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
蛙	128	出	67	中	時	67	中	時	時	67	遽	322	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
煮	58	初	11	中	國	11	中	國	國	11	遽	322	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
註	161	初	537	中	道	345	中	道	道	345	遽	322	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
豬	171	初	67	中	堂	279	中	堂	堂	279	遽	322	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
豬	280	初	67	中	飯	8	中	飯	飯	8	遽	322	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
戒	283	初	202	中	間	112	中	間	間	112	遽	322	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
除	283	初	202	中	等	262	中	等	等	262	遽	322	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
除	283	初	204	中	用	46	中	用	用	46	遽	322	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	
除	283	初	609	中	用	46	中	用	用	46	遽	322	捐	606	絕	139	爪	See Chao	87	

專一	441	壯	167	二二忽...	發悚	355	罰	35	翻來覆...	Fei	分贓不...	風箱	294
專心	83	壯班	220	忽	發怯	186	罰棍	543	去	563	平	風調雨...	
專心致	...	壯實實	496	二十四...	發板	187	髮	65	翻臉	452	分 ⁴	順	390
志	478	妝	507	孝	發威	186			翻騰	77	分量	風調雨...	
專門	441	妝飾	507	二五不...	發洩	320	Fan				吩	順	597
傳 ⁴	432	狀	84	當	發亮	186	凡	83	Fang		吩附	風聲	383
販	71	狀元	452	二府	發紅	186	凡常	168	方	5	常	風騰	499
賺	18	狀師	599	而	發家	186	反	65	:	431	非離	風爐	131
賺頭	419	莊	41	:	發怒	186	:	312	方正	321	肥	俸	259
轉 ³	33	莊戶	532	而已	發乾	187	反坐	509	方向	356	肥皂	俸祿	259
轉年	331	莊稼	41	而且	發涼	187	反性	579	方法	359	肺	逢 ²	164
轉動	564	莊稼漢	226	耳	發財	186	反叛	504	方便	55	飛	馮	460
轉禍為...	...	莊	450	耳巴子	發條	507	反倒	312	方販	71	飛虎	蜂	123
福	563	裝	235	耳目口...	發笨	186	反腔	160	方纜	161	飛禽	蜂蜜	123
轉臉	610	裝老	467	鼻心	發軟	186	反復	106	仿	63	飛潛	鋒	439
轉彎	456	裝菸	356	耳瓜子	發麻	187	反問計	376	仿本	99	植	鋒快	438
轉 ⁴	177	撞	139	耳朶	發現	187	反賊	245	仿格	63	匪	瘋	140
轉向	370	撞倒	139	耳性	發達	383	犯	126	仿圈	81	匪類	風	144
轉背	494	撞騙	146	耳挖	發黃	186	:	244	防	111	啡	風冠	398
Ch'wan		椿	213	耳旁風	發硬	186	犯人	288	防備	165	費	風風	144
川	546	耳	357	耳咬	發悶	186	犯罪	382	彷彿	269	費力	縫 ²	130
申	300	兒	12	耳邊風	發虛	187	返	154	彷彿	269	費心	縫 ⁴	607
申	358	兒女	258	兒	發脹	187	返悔	154	妨	51	費事	豐	241
申同	557	兒孫	106	兒	發慌	186	番	159	妨事	51	費唇	豐收	314
申門子	300	兒馬	579	兒	發陵	363	販	290	坊	102	費	Foã	
申珠	575	兒騾	579	兒	發瘋	186	販子	603	坊芳	226	費	佛	165
申鈴	530	兒	324	兒	發飽	187	飯	5	坊房	3	費	佛	
舛	305	窗戶	71	兒	發暈	187	飯食	401	坊屋	93	費	Fou	
舛錯	305	窗臺	16	兒	發亂	186	飯袋	602	坊房	290	費	封	55
穿	46	創	210	兒	發誓	186	飯量	255	坊放	16	費	封	356
穿換	156	創底鋪	211	兒	發愿	264	飯湯	137	坊放	351	費	封	533
穿紫	474	撞	See Chwang	兒	發酵	187	飯館	362	坊放	53	費	封	398
穿戴	466	瘡	38	兒	發瘡	187	飯廳	97	坊放	359	費	風	33
船	84	闖	226	兒	發瘡疾	187	煩	60	坊放	586	費	風水	486
船行	607	闖門子	300	兒	發燒	404	煩絮	60	坊放	600	費	風毛	402
船面	526	闖禍	226	兒	發慈悲	187	煩數	159	坊放	164	費	風快	105
船塢	519	法	60	兒	發酸	187	煩瑣	520	坊放	493	費	風	438
船廠	571	法碼	294	兒	發熱	187	煩難	553	坊放	209	費	風言	...
喘	75	發	25	兒	發區	186	樊	489	坊放	324	費	風語	559
喘呵	496	發心口	187	兒	發潑	385	繁	242	坊放	261	費	風匣	293
喘噓	496	發市	478	兒	發糊塗	187	繁華	378	坊放	568	費	風雨	133
傳 ²	33	發利市	478	兒	發麪	377	蕃	578	坊放	366	費	風俗	200
傳言	139	發利害	186	兒	發憤	428	蕃生	578	坊放	588	費	風氣	143
傳說	168	發作	187	兒	發懶	416	播	508	坊放	258	費	風流	359
Chwang		發冷	187	兒	發壞	186	播譯	508	坊放	16	費	風涼	320
		發狂	186	兒	發壤	186	翻	77	坊放	208	費	風絲	351
		發旺	603	兒	發籍	470	翻供	386	坊放	328	費	風傘	420
		發花	186	兒	發驕傲	187	翻眼	498	坊放	328	費	伏	58

伏氣	376	復初	550	海參	433	行市	44	號 ¹	168	橫虎	500	核	293	厚臉	463	希賤	411	
伏羲	377	復活	213	海量	469	行秤	274	:	431	橫事	516	核	293	候	8	希醜	416	
扶	71	富	73	海潮	369	行貨	235	號脈	428	橫霸	500	盒	190	候補	232	希鬆	410	
扶持	476	富戶	574	海關	259	行家	183	號 ²	505	諄	502	:	430	喉	56	希爛	410	
附	304	富厚	369	嗜	251	巷	See Hsiang	號天	614			賀	238	喉嚨	56	酒	210	
附從	426	富裕	536	還	See Hwan	好 ¹	好 ²	濠	599	Hoā		賀喜	307	猴	197	洗	27	
附會	304	富貴	73		Han	:	:		173	Hei	合	10	荷	362	鮑	188	洗澡	228
甫	516	富態	459			:	:		176		:	228	荷包	376	:	435	係	317
附	71	傅	23	汗	188	好比	269	黑	38		:	407	喝 ¹	71	駒病	188	息	33
府	36	腹	69	汗巾	235	好天	614	黑下	38	合乎	345	喝醉	165	駒臭	438	息事	540	
府上	36	福	204	汗衫	460	好手	125	黑夜	51	合同	177	喝醉酒	302	駒氣	435	席	106	
拊	81	福分	511	汗津津	496	好歹	239	黑乾枯	...	合式	10	喝	457	駒腥	435	惜	61	
佛	See Hoā	福安	306	汗露	496	:	:	瘦	148	合算	140	喝喝咧	...	駒澀	438	惜皮愛	...	
佛	269	輔	477	罕	108	好不好	298	黑暗	270	合夥	53	咧	474	駒噪	435	肉	278	
斧	67	輔助	477	旱	120	好心好	...	黑碌碌	499	何	452	蝦 ²	See Ha	駒羶	435	習	58	
芙	494	輔保	593	旱魃	530	意	559	黑墨烏	...	何干	451	赫	599	駒鹹	435	習而不	...	
芙蓉	494	撫	165	含	296	好用	479	嘴	303	何必	451	赫赫有	...			察	426	
赴	108	魅	505	含糊	296	好使	6	黑墨糊	...	何用	451	名	599		Hsi	習慣	248	
赴席	108	腐	603	預	219	好事	33	眼	303	何至	451	嚇 ⁴	69	夕	620	習慣成	...	
服	56	賦	219	涵	193	:	:		119	何足	451	嚇唬	287	西	5	自然	249	
服水土	56	覆	394	涵養	220	好些	3		3	See Hoā	何如	451	閩	228	西王母	604	哇	408
服事	346			喊	25	好命	499		499	Hèn	何況	506		Hou	西瓜	67	悉	219
服毒	395	Ha		喊叫	206	好看	10	很	37	何妨	465	后	202	西國	238	細甜	438	
負	85	呵 ¹	See Hoā	喊冤	422	好處	125	:	266	何苦	451	後	33	西遊記	230	細密	75	
負義	205	哈 ¹	355	寒	232	:	:	狠巴巴	455	何苦來	451	:	341	:	433	細微	304	
浮	226	哈息	355	寒心	232	好燒	44	狠毒	124	何曾	587	:	40	吸	270	媳	43	
浮水	226	哈 ³	91	寒舍	514	好慎	51	恨	126	何等	451	後天	40	吸氣筒	520	媳婦	43	
釜	262	哈巴狗	91	寒疾	549	好漢子	41	恨不得	388	何嘗	587	後日	40	吸鐵石	270	喜	38	
釜臺	262	蝦 ²	610	寒縮	296	好說	23	恨不能	388	和	...	:	341	吸鐵石	270	喜	38	
俯	105	蝦蟆	601	漢	41	好像	269	恨鐵不	...	:	458	後生	276	希	108	喜好	270	
俯伏	561			漢人	255	:	374	成鋼	607	和平	105	後代	290	:	410	喜孜孜	459	
俯就	107	Hai		漢丈	213	好養	363	痕	576	和而流	610	後老婆	611	希少	564	喜事	238	
:	310	咳 ¹	505	漢中王	565	好 ⁴	134		134	和尚	184	後來	40	希罕	108	喜病	239	
副	170	孩	13	漢氣	449	好色	603	Hêng		和美	582	:	341	希利尼	569	喜怒哀	...	
婦	43	孩子	308	慙	242	好吃	343	恒	92	和氣	59	後兒	40	希冷	416	樂	601	
婦人	214	害	23	慙包	251	好吃懶	...	恒心	92	和息	422	後兒個	40	希奇	470	喜麪	524	
:	286	:	204	慙厚	338	做	135	恒勁	318	和息呈	...	:	330	希客	481	喜樂	194	
婦女	425	害怕	23	慙蛋	242	好事	473	哼	251	子	551	後街	390	希破	410	喜鴉	73	
婦道家	184	害病	205	慙頭慙	...	好酒	603	哼唧唧	497	和睦	295	後婚	162	希窄	410	喜歡	38	
祇	71	害羞	181	聘	559	好氣	603	橫 ²	88	河	76	後悔	123	希軟	410	稀	119	
符	155	害處	267	還	See Hwan	好財	603	橫三豎	...	河心	210	後媽	611	希鈍	410	稀稠	119	
符合	155	害臊	181	翰	115	好閒	196	四	566	河南	393	後頭	341	希碎	410	稀溜溜	455	
符前	446	海	97	翰林	159	好懶	206	橫豎	248	河道	209	厚	60	希矮	410	熙	99	
符	624	海市	159	韓	226	耗	115	:	374	河路	220	厚此薄	...	希滑	416	嘻	459	
幅	358	海防	282		Hang	耗費	115	橫鼻	581	河溝	432	彼	563	希嫩	411	:	460	
腑	423	海角	...			毫	352	橫 ¹	328	呵 ¹	261	厚費	212	希慢	410	嬉戲	241	
復	106	涯	158	行 ²	43	豪傑	277	橫行	386	呵欠	355	厚敦敦	459	希圖	137	嬉戲	241	
復元	286	海味	259	行子	420	豪傑	277	橫丟丟	500	呵奉	261	厚薄	121	希瘦	410	錫	346	

養戲子戲言戲法	339 136 443 394 197	瞎眼 蝦 轉 轉制 嚇	262 625 327 327	想 想 想 想	300 55 374 419	小 小 小 小	錢 點 器 爐	4 496 174 57	邪 邪 邪 些	279 283 453 2	先 先 先 些	248 337 337 162	賢 賢 賢 險	516 514 515 193	心 心 心 心	焦 腸 意 經	146 449 462 298	刑 形 形 形	罰 學 勢 像	95 100 100 168	
戲法	283	嚇	433	詳	181	孝	102	些	小	535	限	110	險	193	心	腹	69	形	像	124	
繫髮	477	蝦仁	433	像	61	孝	順	103	去	535	杻	130	險	266	心	腹	573	杏		13	
	163			像	269	孝	敬	320	些		杻	436	線	16	心	機	232	幸		35	
				像	269	宵		457	些		杻	436	憲	494	心	願	595	幸	虧	35	
				像	362	効		146	些		米	134	鮮	171	心	竅	96	性		123	
				像	201	効		508	卸		害	157	鮮	171	心	驕	氣	...	性	命	306
				像	25	効		146	卸		現	40	鮮	438	傲		598	性	情	154	
				像	431	削		477	洩		現	332	鮮	455	幸		123	性	體	449	
				像	159	禡		67	洩		現	320	鮮	624	辛		123	姓		81	
				像	397	枵		67	洩		現	325	縣	83	欣		231	省		311	
				像	376	枵		121	洩		報	563	縣	216	信		21	省	悟	311	
				像	356	契		79	洩		現	46	痲	300	信		口	胡	...	星	131
				像	286	挾		286	洩		現	500	鹹	79	言		342	倖		366	
				像	392	挾		392	洩		現	40	鹹	375	信		皮	177	惺		530
				像	597	斜		597	洩		現	416	鹹	501	信		封	55	惺	了	...
				像	320	綫		320	洩		現	500	鹹	500	信		息	599	子	...	531
				像	442	歇		442	洩		現	331	獻	446	信		徒	453	腥		436
				像	597	斜		597	洩		現	334	獻	480	尋		...	...	...	...	168
				像	320	綫		320	洩		現	163	獻	479	新		...	...	...	...	498
				像	187	歇		187	洩		現	118	顯	117	新		...	...	...	...	325
				像	442	歇		442	洩		現	398	顯	270	新		...	...	...	...	354
				像	382	歇		382	洩		現	289	顯	438	新		...	...	...	...	71
				像	442	歇		442	洩		現	22	顯	529	新		...	...	...	...	216
				像	65	歇		65	洩		現	126	顯	499	新		...	...	...	...
				像	501	楔		501	洩		現	560	顯	438	新		...	...	...	...
				像	215	寫		215	洩		現	6	顯	352	新		...	...	...	...
				像	467	寫		467	洩		現	560	顯	395	新		...	...	...	...
				像	459	鞋		459	洩		現	63	顯	290	新		...	...	...	...
				像	418	蝸		418	洩		現	196	顯	178	新		...	...	...	...
				像	181	懈		181	洩		現	507	顯	479	新		...	...	...	...
				像	425	謝		425	洩		現	79	顯	301	新		...	...	...	...
				像	205	瀉		205	洩		現	412	顯	22	新		...	...	...	...
				像	205	瀉		205	洩		現	412	顯	67	新		...	...	...	...
				像	373	懈		373	洩		現	433	顯	533	新		...	...	...	...
				像	235	懈		235	洩		現	433	顯	533	新		...	...	...	...
				像	235	懈		235	洩		現	534	顯	534	新		...	...	...	...
				像	8	仙		8	洩		現	46	顯	46	新		...	...	...	...
				像	8	仙		8	洩		現	173	顯	563	新		...	...	...	...
				像	224	仙		224	洩		現	572	顯	102	新		...	...	...	...
				像	513	學		513	洩		現	2	顯	235	新		...	...	...	...
				像	307	學		307	洩		現	2	顯	235	新		...	...	...	...
				像	421	學		421	洩		現	316	顯	235	新		...	...	...	...
				像	498	血		498	洩		現	338	顯	170	新		...	...	...	...
				像	498	邪		498	洩		現	337	顯	486	新		...	...	...	...

Na

袖	210	須要	285	血脈	154	戶部	223	糊閣	251	會首	215	轟	495	踝	329	荒郊	619	
袖口	224	虛	136	血淋淋	500	互	154	糊裏糊	...	會期	333	轟轟烈	...	懷	113	荒唐	58	
脩	146	虛心下	...	血紫	438	手	269	塗	559	會試	505	烈	452	懷恨	157	荒疎	362	
宿	41	氣	598	削	See Hsiao	虎	108	糊謫	216	毀	220	毀	589	懷頭	113	晃	456	
羞	81	虛度	306	吹	378	忽	310	蝴蝶	549	毀滅	405	毀門	589	壞	18	隍	197	
羞恥	81	虛浮	346	吹目	378	忽拉巴	323	餽	402	毀謗	220			壞處	267	黃	18	
羞辱	159	虛套	295	雪	130	忽然	322	餽口	402	彙	108	Hwa		壞蛋	196	黃瓜	413	
羞愧	507	虛張聲	...	雪白	437	囡	167	鬚	118	滙	432	化	100	:	:	黃生	501	
綉	619	勢	136	靴	177	囡圖	167	護	32	揮	450	化合	402			黃皮刮	...	
綉房	619	虛棚	436	學	3	狐	339	護己	389	穢	267	化緣	450	Hwan		瘦	148	
綉繡	510	虛假	543	學生	3	狐狸	339	護日	339	諱	87	化學	100	官	313	黃泥	171	
繡球	213	虛應故	...	學名	13	怙	352	護自己	104	槍	See K'wai	花	13	患	204	黃花	620	
	213	事	380	學而知	...	怙怙着	352	護庇	88			花子	196	患病	205	黃表	409	
		架	60	之	403	呼	126	護送	256	Hun		花牛	116	患難	586	黃芽菜	108	
Hsiung		架叨	295	學房	3	:	455	護短	473	昏	97	花戶	281	喚	53	黃泉路	277	
凶	229	架煩	349	學院	162	呼打	354	護領	68	昏沉沉	459	花用	343	喚	13	黃蓋	207	
兇	229	婿	77	學校	373	呼喚	164	護衛	392	混	69	花生	417	喚	280	黃嫩嫩	500	
兄	20	需	137	學差	233	胡	625			Hui		花名冊	307	煥然一	...	黃臙臙	500	
兄台	516	需用	394	學問	5	胡椒	470				混到頭	211	花言巧	...	新	280	慌	187
兄弟	20	緒	241	學堂	3	胡琴	398	回	30	混頭	419	語	450	煥然	...	慌張張	458	
兄長	286	噓	320	學習	508	胡說巴	...	:	96	混帳	174	花消	307	新	280	幌	146	
兇	108	續	286	學規	286	道	184	:	431	混雜	267	花費	48	還	8	蝗	314	
兇手	193	續	162	學資	239	胡說亂	...	回子	169	婚	162	花翎	425	:	263	蝗蟲	314	
兇猛	108			學臺	162	道	184	回回教	169	渾	228	花椒	470	還口	160	謊	20	
兇惡	216	Hsüan		學館	536	督	520	回信	180	渾身	386	花樣	232	還清	449	謊詐	297	
胸	335	玄	564			核	See Hoä	回教	168	渾厚	338	畫	58	還帶之	403			
胸膛	477	街	561	Hsün		唬	625	回換	120	渾	624	畫	58	還帶着	403	Hwoä		
胸膈	335	街天街	...	巡	165	惚	450	回答	129	渾	440	畫拉	386	還債	493	火	18	
雄	255	地	560	巡役	239	歎	423	回話	382	渾	440	畫押	498	還價	219	火夫	243	
雄壯	351	旋	452	巡撫	165	湖	620	回想	232	魂	290	畫眉	197	緩	483	火油	97	
熊	108	旋	625	徇	291	壺	62	回頭	97	魂飛魄	...	畫會	557	環	131	火炮	291	
		揸	112	徇情	291	:	430	回嘴	160	散	598	畫圖	359	歡	38	火盆	56	
		揸	412	訓	123	葫	118	回覆	394	魂靈	292	華	93	歡天喜	...	火盆嘴	301	
		選	376	尋	18	葫蘆	118	灰	25			華奢奢	500	地	597	火燒	115	
吁	564	誼	463	尋死	252	糊	502	灰心	343	Hung		華麗	397	歡喜	95	:	116	
序	123	誼弄	463	尋事	213	瑚	547	灰塵	196	宏	220	話	5	愛	307	火蜜	345	
叙	342	廳	483	尋思	320	懈	65	迴	328	紅	97	話不投	...			火輪車	41	
叙談	342	廳風	483	尋常	283	懈懈	65	悔	35	紅花	131	機	200	Hwang		火輪船	112	
恤	164	鏟	113	循	599	糊	46	悔改	35	紅鋪鋪	501	話音	536	皇	115	火爐	20	
蓄	625	懸	575	循規蹈	...	:	455	慧	160	紅鬍子	495	話匣子	301	皇上	115	火罐	188	
徐	283			矩	598	糊弄	119	慧星	160	洪	289	猾	399	皇帝	255	伙	23	
許	35	Hsüe		循環	602	糊來	318	晦	252	洪水	289	滑	77	皇親	553	和	See Hoä	
許多	374	穴	517	遜	547	糊來	319	晦氣	252	哄	27	滑戶	595	恍	450	或	136	
許得	234	穴眼	518	薰	177	糊泥糊	...	賄賂	162	哄頌	287	滑學	361	恍然	621	或者	135	
許願	374	血	144	勳	345	塗	560	賄賂	163	哄騙	268	滑錫	144	恍惚	450	:	374	
須	430	血心	313			糊倒	125	惠	174	橫	See Hêng	鐸	112	恍惚	450	:	374	
	285	血汗	163	Hu		糊塗	46	惠公	531	鴻	379			荒	58	活	18	
	286	血氣	350	戶	71	糊塗	548	會	5	轟	152	Hwai		荒年	212	:	434	

活血 471	一口兩 ...	一來 509	一掘一 ...	一與一 ...	亦 568	噫 251	熱騰騰 495	仍舊還
活板 101	舌 396	一來一 ...	掘 368	衰 368	伊 229	翼 429	是 263	
活 131	一反一 ...	往 368	一會 18	一臉橫 ...	伊及 226	Jên 152	是 95	
活活 611	正 368	一味的 441	一番 158	肉 329	役 129	翳毛 152	人 2	
活苦 434	一本 487	一門不 ...	一遍 158	一總 288	沂 226	醫 115	: 125	
活臭 438	一生 445	通 424	一邊 158	一聲 44	沂州 226	醫生 248	人口 293	
活現 599	一旦 323	一家 293	一意 292	: 72	矣 467	醫治 227	人才 373	
活眼兒 ...	一世 356	一流 292	一等 293	一點兒 23	色 439	醫院 406	人生在 ...	
活見 599	一半個 479	一派 460	一程子 158	一點不 ...	易 11	醫道 115	世 444	
活動 304	一同 288	一陣 158	一握一 ...	錯 176	易經 375	譯 508	人犯 287	
活辣 438	一向 158	一陣一 ...	握 368	一舉一 ...	依 86	藝 23	人命 229	
活腥 434	: 338	陣 369	一掣一 ...	動 559	依隨 595	蟻 376	人人物 397	
活亂子 384	一回 38	一面 149	掣 368	一應俱 ...	依舊 263	蟻 425	人家 183	
活澀 438	: 158	一面之 ...	一筆勾 ...	全 471	尾 See Wei 55	議 56	人倫 102	
活酸 434	一共 288	詞 119	消 184	一體 292	宜 183	論 215	人情 118	
活頭 418	: 288	一展眼 323	一路 30	一黨 292	姨 183	懿 209	仁 232	
活鮮 413	一色 288	一眨眼 323	: 293	一類 293	姨母 343	Jan 196	仁義禮 ...	
活羶 434	一早 180	一星半 ...	一塊 288	一瘡 326	疫 196	染 131	智 600	
貨 28	一合 158	點 535	一塊兒 46	一轉眼 323	倚 196	然 134	仁義禮 ...	
貨物 385	一次 158	一紅一 ...	一塊一 ...	一饒之 ...	倚勢欺 ... 555	而 257	智信 601	
惑 95	一年一 ...	白 368	塊 369	力 524	人 196	然 341	: 218	
惑弄 127	年 369	一紅一 ...	一遭 158	已 18	倚靠 66	Jang 81	任 44	
禍 88	一年半 ...	白 370	一頓 158	已久 379	胰 30	嚷 13	任口胡 ...	
禍根 533	載 583	一般 84	一發 158	已經 17	益 266	嚷 325	說 342	
禍害 504	一字不 ...	: 292	一號 175	以 8	益處 350	嚷 165	任什麼 218	
禍患 504	知 424	一連 140	一概 288	: 424	益發 13	嚷 586	任性甚麼 44	
夥 53	一身 75	: 288	一樣 292	以下 303	椅異 166	嚷 533	任管麼 218	
夥計 62	一例 292	一時 134	一羣 292	以及 248	異草奇 ... 166	Jao 533	任憑 218	
剷 33	一行一 ...	一時間 323	一夥 293	以外 518	花 338	弱 See Joá 327	忍 86	
剷上 35	行 368	一氣 158	一準 326	以先 338	異鄉 327	饒 356	忍耐 86	
獲 596	一男一 ...	一乾 288	一張一 ...	以先 361	移 356	饒 10	忍氣 219	
獲罪 596	女 368	一起 293	退 368	以後 40	揖 351	饒 154	忍氣 106	
癩 140	一妻一 ...	一起頭 361	一場 158	: 341	意 351	Jé 10	認 20	
癩亂病 140	妾 368	一起一 ...	一齊 227	以前 338	意見 154	惹 102	認 382	
I	一冷一 ...	落 368	: 288	以爲 424	意思 584	惹呼 533	認 462	
乙 332	一宗 293	一個一 ...	一種 293	以致 584	意會 428	惹氣 425	認 208	
一 2	一併 288	一個半 ...	一撇 326	以強壓 ... 506	義 426	熱 102	認 455	
: 288	一則 509	個 479	一對一 ...	以備 426	義氣 365	熱心 428	認 234	
: 368	一直 168	一拳一 ...	一層一 ...	以撤 365	義學 338	熱心 428	認 501	
一大些 3	一直的 482	脚 70	一層 369	以頭 338	疑 10	熱心 428	認 500	
一大一 ...	一些 3	一差二 ...	一輩 292	衣 10	疑感 185	熱心 428	認 500	
小 368	: 4	錯 566	一輩子 493	衣 199	誼 65	熱心 428	認 500	
一下 69	一定 147	一處 288	一模 292	衣食 199	遺 65	熱心 428	認 500	
: 158	: 326	一堂 551	一模一 ...	衣服 65	遺 384	熱心 428	認 500	
一下子 520	一定不 ...	一堆 288	樣 292	衣冠禽 ... 384	遺 10	熱心 428	認 500	
一上手 361	移 327	一族 293	一磨 158	獸 384	遺 10	熱心 428	認 500	
一心 292	一來 405	一開手 361	一霎時 323	衣裳 10	遺 10	熱心 428	認 500	

可惱	545	騾	579	古	127	故意	472	滾刀筋	366	功課	178	掛誤	523	纏	188
可惡	268			:	338	固	123	滾熱	437	共	289	掛齒	509	Kwan	
可惡處	546	Kou		古年	339	固然	258	棍	416	:	468	聒 ¹	301	官	5
可敬	267	勾	184	古來	359	辜	507			共事	469	聒	63	官司	128
可愛	545	勾引	366	古怪	273	辜負	507	K'un		共總	468	聒	65	官印	513
可疑	545	勾通	232	古板	469	買 ³	624	困	123	攻	422	聒	117	官府	372
可嘆	546	勾當	346	古時	338	捐	245	困苦	123	攻打	569	聒	523	官員	166
可憐	546	狗	25	古董	595	捐擁	245	昆	517	供 ¹	156	聒	479	官粉	432
可觀	126	苟	446	古語	127	鼓	100	昆仲	517	供 ⁴	446			官宦	313
可觀	546	苟且	446	凸	378	鼓	497	昆蟲	575	供養	614	K'wa		官場	564
可觀	212	苟儉	480	汨 ³	624	棉	413	坤	446	供獻	446	誇	106	官運	349
克	54	鈎	197	估 ¹	139	僱	13	捆	404	宮	470	誇海口	106	官話	5
克己	54	鈎搭連	...	估猜	581	籬	618	捆鎖	404	宮商角	...	誇富	428	官衙	486
刻 ¹	83	環	531	估量	140	籬嘴	618	崑	213	徵羽	601	誇獎	108	官樣	296
刻下	334	殼	10	估摸	476	穀	171	崑壯	213	恭	126	誇獎	398	官職	510
刻薄	83	殼數	79	估 ⁴	624	顧	102	睏	191	恭敬	126	跨	398	官爵	388
刻 ¹	408	擗	72	孤	318			睏覺	505	恭凳	540	跨拉	398	官鹽	239
科	131	溝	404	孤老	419	苦	48	琨	554	貢	589	跨兜子	119	冠 ¹	398
科甲	169	溝滿	598	孤身	442	苦水	409	細	431	躬	355	冠 ⁴		冠 ⁴	382
科考	131	平	598	孤伶伶	497	苦苦的	48	Kung		礦	136	Kwai	77	貫	358
咳 ²	165			孤門獨	...	苦待	571	工	18	礦師	539	怪	77	棺	561
咳嗽	165	口	3	孤苦	444	苦般般	456	工夫	18	K'ung		:	78	棺材	561
咳嗽喘	189	:	169	孤單	419	苦處	266	工程	383	孔	140	怪不得	102	管	128
客	18	口才	193	孤單單	496	苦惱	405	工錢	331	孔夫子	407	拐	54	:	99
客店	274	口子	556	孤寡	318	苦溜溜	455	弓	479	孔丘	341	拐角	470	:	218
客房	18	口舌	206	股	277	苦像	460	公	38	空 ¹	111	拐肘	329	管那麼	87
客屋	173	口供	156	:	407	苦澀澀	456	公子	486	空手	226	乖	205	管事	52
客氣	215	口是心	...	股分	394	苦難	134	公公	300	空行	457	乖巧	268	:	92
客旅	256	非	563	咕	268	苦鹹	438	公用	446	空身	457	乖處	267	管保	36
客堂	18	口信	404	咕啣	355	枯	148	公母	577	空頭人	...	拐棍	485	管家	184
客商	530	口音	370	姑姑	13	枯瘦	148	公平	394	情	390	拐棍	485	管甚麼	44
客棧	17	口氣	133	姑姑	507	哭	65	公冶長	534	空 ⁴	51			管理	309
客寓	17	口袋	174	姑娘	13	哭死	299	公門	287	恐	378	K'wai		管許	374
客廳	173	口話	549	姑爺	77	哭啼啼	459	公事	223	恐其	377	快	13	管賬	92
尅	467	口腹	595	姑媽	483	哭唧唧	458	公事公	...	恐怕	377	快些	225	館	178
渴	101	口齒	297	姑嫂	225	窟	129	辦	563	K'wa		快活	43	館	32
裸	170	口頭	418	骨	65	窟窿	129	公婆	608	瓜	67	刀	555	關事	51
磕	51	口頭語	224	骨力	283	酷	264	公理公	...	瓜葛	177	快當	386	關門	33
磕頭	392	扣	568	骨肉	324	酷好	354	道	560	刮	148	快當當	456	關東	25
磕絆	443	扣底	569	骨頭	65	據	75	公道	38	刮淨	436	快溜溜	455	關係	449
課	11	扣門	17	骨髓	369			公館	165	卦	206	快搗搗	496	關帝	136
課	75	扣門	69	故	63	Kun		功	54	掛 ¹	53	快樂	124	:	137
顆	273	擺	526	故	472	棍	129	功用	564	掛 ⁴	69	塊	46	灌	348
騾	579			故事	201	棍徒	576	功名	118	:	272	葵	170	灌死	558
馬	579	Ku		故事	63	滾	190	功效	181	掛心	160	槍	621	觀 ¹	547
				故事	519	滾刀肉	366	功勞	54	掛念	180	擱	352	觀 ⁴	625
				故事											61

46 always

狂言狂	...	跪	227	國號	606	拉落	216	Lan	老太	13	烙	79	理之當	...	
語	559	跪官	596	話	389	拉賬	167		老太爺	209	烙鐵	79	然	403	
狂風	324	跪府	596	話	213	拉碎	331	亂	See Lwan			80	冷	22	
框	369	跪香	543	話	213	拉饑荒	163	灑	440	老天爺	246	啤	295	冷不防	247
筐	607	跪接	227	過	13	喇	106	灑	429	老夫子	514	啤叨	295	：	323
詎	547	跪鍊子	610	：	96	喇	550	灑交	429	老兄	115	勞	54	冷打驚	323
詎騙	547	跪鎖	610	過人	483	喇叭	550	蓋	159	老母豬	578	勞力	118	冷地裏	323
墻	245	跪廳	596	過日	474	辣	439	懶	86	老先生	514	勞心	118	冷孤丁	323
曠	378	瑰	171	過日子	13	辣辣辣	501	懶怠	126	老老年	...	勞苦	405	冷淡	264
曠功	378	歸	165	過分	60	落	216	懶惰	86	間	338	勞動	241	冷淡淡	500
		歸究	365	過午	23	痢	317	懶漢	564	老成	152	勞駕	174	冷清	416
		歸真	365	過失	342	痢痢	317	籃	575	老長	414	落	73	冷眼	183
桂	157	歸根兒	365	過犯	376	遊	251	籃	494	老長兄	325	落不下	...	冷然	323
規	11	歸結	365	過年	331	遊	251	籃	494	老虎	108	臺來	607	冷熱	121
規矩	11	歸實	365	過於	60	攔	210	攔	314	老的兒	380	榜	557	冷酸	496
規過	255	櫃	38	過後	341	攔	210	攔阻	314	老兒的	380	榜	73	稜	112
鬼	95	龜	270	過法	283	攔	143	攔路	482	老板	21	撈本	351	陵	363
鬼子	396			過門	123	攔	476	攔輿	482	：	96	撈	325	陵	496
鬼火	370			過度	585	惹忽	476	攔橋	482	老厚	414	撈	477	陵	229
鬼神	102	套	529	過活	474	蠟	143	攔	273	老前日	330	撈病	477	陵	229
：	103	傀	588	過响	23	蠟	144	攔杆	273	老前天	330			Lei	Li
鬼哭狼	...	傀	588	過節	262	蠟	143	蘭	181	老後日	330				
號	506	傀	382	過費	213	蘭	408	蘭花	408	老後天	330	肋	556	力	11
鬼頭鬼	...	魁	213	過逾	60	爛	58	爛	455	老後年	331	累	125	力	11
腦	559	魁	226	過錯	157	爛糊糊	455	爛糊糊	455	老師	262	累巴巴	455	力	192
貴	38	魁	606	過繼	318	：	25	攬	235	老高	414	累的慌	506	立	33
：	512	魁	213	過癮	254	：	316			老翁	332	累贅	446	立即	482
貴乎	570	虧	35	菓	170	來不來	316	Lang		老娘	317	累	624	立刻	482
貴甲子	512	虧	489	菓木	276	來回	120	郎	111	老剝皮	316	淚	27	立時	33
貴姓	512	虧	510	裹	417	來年	331	郎中	248	老遠	414	淚汪汪	459	：	482
貴庚	512	虧	111	裹脚	511	來往	30	郎貓	579	老粗	414	勒	209	立業	193
貴府	512	虧	125	錫	56	來源	523	狠	280	老婆	13	雷	209	吏	520
貴科	513	虧	511	錫	67	來歷	157	狠	280	老爺	3	瘰	See Lo	李	3
貴重	38			來頭	418	來頭	418	浪	401	老媽	13	搗	359	李	607
貴席	513			徠	271	徠	271	浪	401	老鼠	375	搗	588	存孝	607
貴國	512	果	83	徠	271	徠	271	浪	401	老練	586	搗	588	利	37
貴處	240	：	393	徠	271	徠	271	浪	401	老輩	73	搗	588	利己	529
：	512	果	393	徠	271	徠	271	浪	401	老輩	73	搗	588	利害	37
貴富	512	果兒	389	賴	96	賴	96	Lao		老輩	73	搗	588	利路	523
貴幹	513	果真	393	賴	96	賴	96	Lao		老輩	73	搗	588	里	90
貴縣	512	果然	393	賴	96	賴	96	Lao		老實	6	搗	588	例	293
閩	13	郭	336	賴	96	賴	96	Lao		老實實	496	搗	588	例條	602
閩女	13	國	11	賴	96	賴	96	Lao		老頭	13	搗	588	例	46
詭	38	國丈	553	賴	96	賴	96	Lao		牢	69	搗	588	例	335
詭計	376	國法	283	賴	96	賴	96	Lao		牢	69	搗	588	例	335
詭計多	...	國家	185	賴	96	賴	96	Lao		牢	69	搗	588	例	335
端	377	國泰	...	賴	96	賴	96	Lao		牢	69	搗	588	例	335
詭詐	38	安	597	賴	96	賴	96	Lao		牢	69	搗	588	例	335

懸	556	料得	374	憐恤	164	令	514	柳	283	落地	5	漏底	325	圖	167	戀	79	
		料理	152	憐愛	585	令正	514	流 ²	160	落花生	417	漏空	399	論	38			
Lia		料想	86	憐憫	123	令郎	111	流水	261	落空	111	簞	225	論及	421	Lüe		
倆	35	聊	602	練	110	：	：	514	流言	547	落款	359	：	357	論到	421	畧	79
		聊齋	604	練武	343	令昆仲	514	流屍	366	擲	335	露 ⁴	94	輪	41	畧小	535	
Liang		畧	See Lüe	鍊	404	令堂	514	流淚	328	擲例	599	露面	425	輪迴	328	畧畧	535	
頁	35	遼	490	臉	38	令尊	514	流落	160	樂 ⁴	49	露面	藏	輪船	325	畧微	535	
頁心	35	遼遠	490	臉皮	362	令愛	514	流罪	582	樂 ⁴ 處	266	私	527	Lung		掠	561	
頁善	504	撩 ²	199	臉皮薄	362	另	68	流 ⁴	196	樂極	生	Lu	弄	38	Lün			
兩	2	撩治	246	臉色	219	另外	518	留	44	悲	399	陸 ⁴	449	弄不弄	298	掄 ¹	355	
兩口	170	撩 ¹	529	臉面	270	伶	46	留心	44	樂意	146	陸續	449	弄扭	140	掄打	354	
兩不	63	撩	574	臉盆	274	伶式伶	...	留神	299	樂嘻嘻	456	鹿	91	弄結	140			
兩相	...	撩漿泡	574	臉軟	362	行	376	留宿	385	樂廩	476	鹵	321	弄聳	180	Lwan		
願	155	瞭	235	臉嫩	362	伶便	405	留飯	554	癩	477	鹵莽	321	隆	115	亂	77	
兩姨	...	瞭亮	235	聯	191	伶俐	46	留歇	385	癩瘰	238	隊	297	隆冬	556	亂七八	...	
妹	303	瞭	270	簾	167	翎	79	留意	339	駱駝	238	隊	259	隆冬	...	亂	84	
亮	30			戀	79	鈴	87	留餘	278	駱駝	436	路	30	九	558	亂	593	
亮堂	455	Lie		戀不	...	鈴鐺	247	陸 ⁴	625	螺	93	路	479	隆	129	亂	570	
粮	92	列	271	戀不	...	拾	79	琉	3	螺絲	釘	392	路倒	383	龍	亂	77	
涼	46	：	468	拾	79	零	零買	371	琉璃	螺絲	391	路票	287	龍王	607	亂	495	
京快	149	列位	469	零	零碎	零	零碎	16	琉璃	螺絲	270	路截	290	龍性	379	亂	118	
涼陰	500	咧	152	零	：	零	：	51	溜	羅	112	路斃	383	龍性	379	亂	118	
涼森	500	烈	435	零	：	零	：	204	溜 ¹	羅	602	路斃	383	龍性	379	亂	118	
涼菜	439	烈苦	435	零	：	零	：	357	：	羅	411	賭	162	龍性	379	亂	118	
梁	299	烈醜	435	零	：	零	：	224	：	羅	455	插	133	龍性	379	亂	118	
量 ²	38	裂	140	零	：	零	：	442	溜打	羅	320	插	395	龍性	379	亂	118	
量 ⁴	126	翅	86	零	：	零	：	624	溜平	羅	415	插	396	龍性	379	亂	118	
晾	152	翅起	86	零	：	零	：	102	溜光	羅	415	插	501	龍性	379	亂	118	
梁	274	獵	355	零	：	零	：	102	溜柁	羅	415	插	184	龍性	379	亂	118	
涼	261	獵	588	零	：	零	：	147	溜滑	羅	415	插	234	龍性	379	亂	118	
涼必	261	獵	588	零	：	零	：	346	溜圓	羅	415	插	234	龍性	379	亂	118	
涼來	261	獵	588	零	：	零	：	346	溜滿	羅	415	插	245	龍性	379	亂	118	
涼想	261	Lien		零	：	零	：	464	溜豎	羅	526	插	306	龍性	379	亂	118	
輛	170	連	65	零	：	零	：	358	溜 ¹	羅	624	插	134	龍性	379	亂	118	
樑	358	：	305	零	：	零	：	44	溜	羅	273	插	134	龍性	379	亂	118	
糧	92	連三帶	...	零	：	零	：	291	溜	羅	164	插	100	龍性	379	亂	118	
糧食	111	連四	567	零	：	零	：	560	溜	羅	115	插	100	龍性	379	亂	118	
麵	628	連三疊	...	零	：	零	：	462	溜	羅	565	插	100	龍性	379	亂	118	
		連四	567	零	：	零	：	462	溜	羅	211	插	407	龍性	379	亂	118	
Liao		連忙	614	零	：	零	：	560	溜	羅	115	插	30	龍性	379	亂	118	
了	18	連朝	242	零	：	零	：	579	溜	羅	501	插	170	龍性	379	亂	118	
	234	連襟	382	零	：	零	：	579	溜	羅	181	插	170	龍性	379	亂	118	
了不得	103	廉	603	零	：	零	：	540	溜	羅	152	插	134	龍性	379	亂	118	
：	235	煉	79	零	：	零	：	540	溜	羅	152	插	134	龍性	379	亂	118	
了手	234	連	184	零	：	零	：	540	溜	羅	152	插	134	龍性	379	亂	118	
了亮	235	連子	433	零	：	零	：	540	溜	羅	152	插	134	龍性	379	亂	118	
了結	234	連	391	零	：	零	：	540	溜	羅	152	插	134	龍性	379	亂	118	
料	86	憐	123	零	：	零	：	540	溜	羅	152	插	134	龍性	379	亂	118	

麼 See Moā	滿應滿 ...	昌犯 216	門口 3	覓 469	新肥 375	末了 365	獸 134	那是已 ...
嘛 574	許 559	昌昌的 352	門公 572	密 75	新絲 223	末末了 365	獸會 428	就的 522
瑪璣 536	漫 210	茂 397	門戶 413	蜜 438	新醇 377	末尾 365	魔鬼 95	那是不 ...
麻 607	漫 214	茂堂 455	門市 498	蜜黃 438	Miu	末後 341	魔鬼 95	用說的 522
碼 112	漫 411	茂盛 397	門包 336	蜜蜂 425	民 283	沒 5	5	那是不 ...
碼頭 112	漫活 442	帽 16	門牙 413	蜜餞 433	民人 574	沒大沒 ...	Mou	用請的 522
馬 35	漫亮 416	帽瓣子 431	門佬 572	謎 95	憫 123	小 308	謀 199	那是不 ...
馬唧唧 458	漫窮 411	實 575	門軍 95	謎語 617	Ming	沒上沒 ...	謀合 280	錯 176
馬街 502	漫熱 416	實易 575	門第 533	彌 252	Miao	下有治 ...	謀害 557	那是自 ...
馬馬咧 ...	漫待 287	貌相 213	門路 252	Miao	名 13	兒 542	Mu	那是實 ...
咧 460	漫悠悠 496	貌相 213	門當戶 ...	妙 144	名人 408	奈何 541	木 23	話 522
媽 379	漫的 48	貓 91	對 395	苗 7	名子 343	沒家 152	木人戲 588	那個 5
媽蟻 379	漫騰騰 495	貓兒頭 480	們 483	插 573	名分 453	沒及 382	木匠 23	那面 76
媽 625	蔓 262	Mei	悶 49	渺 425	名字 425	抹 456	木板 101	那處 76
磨 520	蔓菁 262	每 164	悶氣 320	渺冥 425	名家 271	抹角 456	木目 115	那程 22
磨留 520	蔓瞞 102	每逢 164	悶不 ...	渺茫 425	名號 64	抹面無 ...	目下 334	那麼 85
磨裏磨 ...	蔓哄 346	沒 See Moā	樂悶 49	廟 437	名聲 105	抹情 487	目今 334	那麼的 207
磨留 560	蔓頭 41	玫瑰 171	悶熱 437	窺 105	明 416	抹零 569	目母 3	那麼着 207
蟆 See Moā	蔓頭 41	玫瑰花 171	Méng	窺視 105	明天 40	沫 75	目母 10	那還問 522
	蔓頭 219	眉 124	孟 339	Mie	明日 40	沫 154	目母 171	那還問 85
	蔓頭 219	眉毛 124	孟子 339	昨 580	明白 56	沫 139	目母 171	那還問 76
埋 209	Mang	眉眼 413	猛 108	滅 56	明白 7	沫 144	目母 269	那還問 81
麥 139	忙 55	妹 95	猛然 322	滅亡 585	明 302	沫 214	目母 269	那還問 107
麥秋 259	忙活 575	妹夫 194	猛過地 ...	滅門 290	明年 331	沫 374	目母 152	那還問 448
買 16	忙活 238	妹妹 55	裏 323	Mien	明知 475	莫不是 374	目母 51	那還問 87
買主 420	忙亂 425	美 215	蒙 204	免 101	問 40	莫非 180	目母 38	那還問 ...
買奉 385	忙莽 321	美口 416	蒙蔽 549	免得 387	明兒 40	莫非 43	目母 295	那還問 522
買賣 16	忙莽 398	美國 269	蒙頭蓋 ...	免面 30	明兒個 40	莫非 231	目母 296	那還問 ...
買辦 572	忙莽 398	美貌 215	蒙臉 502	免面 30	明兒個 40	莫非 54	目母 296	那還問 ...
賣 13	忙莽 398	味 446	蒙 624	免面 30	明亮 357	莫非 301	目母 44	那還問 484
賣主 485	Mao	梅 97	盟 465	免面 30	明悟 423	莫非 352	目母 238	那還問 87
賣弄 376	梅花 408	盟誓 261	盟誓 465	免面 30	明晃晃 456	莫非 301	目母 258	那還問 ...
賣唱的 399	媚 44	夢 261	夢 625	免面 30	明明 223	莫非 294	目母 258	那還問 522
賣富 428	媚煤 496	夢見 86	夢見 280	免面 30	明明 146	莫非 130	目母 335	那還問 87
賣狀 398	媚煤 44	夢見 586	夢見 262	免面 30	明明 386	莫非 140	目母 587	那還問 ...
賣過 251	媚煤 402	夢見 106	夢見 213	免面 30	明明 442	莫非 624	目母 587	那還問 522
賣過 251	媚煤 402	夢見 107	夢見 213	免面 30	明明 303	莫非 624	目母 587	那還問 522
曼	媚煤 569	夢見 97	夢見 213	免面 30	明明 303	莫非 624	目母 587	那還問 522
	媚煤 99	夢見 97	夢見 213	免面 30	明明 303	莫非 624	目母 587	那還問 522
埋 54	媚煤 307	夢見 620	夢見 332	免面 30	明明 16	莫非 425	目母 610	那還問 ...
埋怨 54	媚煤 307	夢見 620	夢見 332	免面 30	明明 16	莫非 425	目母 610	那還問 ...
滿 228	媚煤 307	夢見 620	夢見 332	免面 30	明明 16	莫非 425	目母 610	那還問 ...
滿口 462	媚煤 44	夢見 323	夢見 413	免面 30	明明 16	莫非 425	目母 610	那還問 ...
滿心 473	媚煤 105	夢見 610	夢見 603	免面 30	明明 16	莫非 425	目母 610	那還問 ...
滿心裡 472	媚煤 610	夢見 603	夢見 603	免面 30	明明 16	莫非 425	目母 610	那還問 ...
滿篇 531	媚煤 603	夢見 603	夢見 603	免面 30	明明 16	莫非 425	目母 610	那還問 ...
滿錢 569	媚煤 603	夢見 603	夢見 603	免面 30	明明 16	莫非 425	目母 610	那還問 ...

班	93	榜	425	保標	264	跑針	216	配	63	P'eng	畢	365	砒霜	395	別	215	
班	407	榜眼	454	保舉	252	跑顛	456	配合	191		畢	364	疲	365	別見	350	
班子	408	榜樣	425	保羅	32	跑磨	317	陪	171	旬	574	疲拉	495	別家	218		
般	83	榜	200	豹	317	爆	See Pao	陪伴	301	朋友	53	疲頑	365	別管	218		
般大般	...	榜	75	雹	382			陪送	404	朋友	53	琵琶	620	慙	335		
小	560			飽	21			培	610	捧	613	牌	126	慙氣	335		
絆	245	P'ang		飽食	...	北	21	賠	18	烹	574	牌氣	126	癢	557		
搬	25	胖	35	飽衣	390	北京	21	賠錯	581	彭	449	牌寒	372	癢	325		
搬不	245	胖敦	501	飽鼓	497	貝	533	賠禮	157	棚	102	僻	348	癢	580		
搬指	536	旁	65	飽暖	389	彼	156	轡	113	碰	51	劈	190				
搬家	184	旁人	289	飽學	582	彼此	156			碰	181	劈臉	355	P'ie			
辦	48	旁不	...	飽	130	：	515			碰	367	譬	269	撇	64		
辦貨	521	干	518	報	41	杯	27	本	32	蓬	136	譬如	269	瞥	378		
辦理	196	旁邊	65	報信	294	卑	120	：	99	蓬菜	136	霹	339	瞥	379		
辦置	310	達	174	報夷	203	倍	478	：	361	蓬	359	霹	296				
		磅	362	報應	242	背	54	本	472	膨	498	霹	373	P'ieu			
		龐	564	褒	471	背	64	本	330	鵬	174	霹	478				
叛	504	龐鳳	565	褒	471	背地	143	本	102			霹	478	Piao	便	10	
盼	103			褒	147	背後	118	本	330	Pi		表	216		便	581	
盼望	103	Pao		暴	229	背書	43	本	131	比	11	表	216	表	便	55	
盼頭	419	包	71	暴	147	：	117	本	620	：	269	表	415	表	便	267	
盤	72	：	407	暴	405	：	153	本	361	比	98	表	416	表	便	386	
盤古	407	包工	409	暴	202	背	351	本	44	：	616	表	415	表	便	149	
盤弄	339	包元	413	暴	84	背	128	本	127	比	58	表	415	表	便	238	
盤費	575	包用	...	實	533	被	129	本	361	：	269	表	281	表	便	134	
盤纏	178	包用	120	實	516	被	304	本	159	比	269	表	549	表	便	159	
潘	115	包米	498	實	516	被	274	本	165	比	270	表	87	表	便	134	
潘	532	包脚	512	實	233	被	171	本	418	比	289	表	87	表	便	471	
盤	304	包容	71	實	233	被	280	本	200	比	556	表	238	表	便	133	
盤	304	包容	157	實	233	被	586	本	609	比	270	表	383	表	便	228	
蟠	603	包涵	223	實	245	悲	124	本	621	比	32	P'i		票	118	編	23
蟠桃	603	包管	120	實	483	悲	124	本	602	：	326	正	170	票	97	編	389
蟠桃	604	包管	...	實	60	備	397	本	601	：	326	匹	90	票	97	編	284
攀	554	包回	122	實	90	備	88	本	601	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	64
攀	69	包攬	235	實	411	備	589	本	408	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	64
		抱	71	實	411	備	408	本	408	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	28
		抱怨	530	實	411	備	408	本	408	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	13
邦	588	抱蛋	335	實	476	備	408	本	408	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	108
邦	588	抱窩	335	實	476	備	408	本	408	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	108
邦	35	抱誌	340	實	476	備	408	本	408	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	108
：	407	抱	See P'ao	實	476	備	408	本	408	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	108
帮	55	抱	See P'ao	實	476	備	408	本	408	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	108
帮	35	保	32	實	476	備	408	本	408	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	108
帮	346	保人	56	實	476	備	408	本	408	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	108
帮	286	保全	376	實	476	備	408	本	408	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	108
帮	458	保佑	246	實	476	備	408	本	408	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	108
帮	355	保養	404	實	476	備	408	本	408	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	108
棒	543	保管	170	實	476	備	408	本	408	：	285	匹	446	票	439	編	108

傻說	267	上手	363	賞臉	523	捨飯放	...	甚至	584	生意	93	十字路	...	事奉	183	時運	162								
雲	324	上半	天	75		生	598	甚至	不	生鹹	435	口	141	事情	8	時勢	144								
雲	323	上司	320	Shao		生	463	然	584	生鐵	245	十殿	閻	...	事業	620	時樣	402							
濕	See Sa	上古	273	勻	67	奢	502	甚至	於	生靈	595	君	491	事緩	有	...	時興	335							
	Shai	:	338	少 ³	16	奢	533	參 ¹	433	性	25	士	252	變	484	師	2								
色	75	上任	343	少	不得	374	教	247	深	120	性	口	25	始	242	師母	3								
晒	78	上供	446	少	半	是	374	設	173	:	省 ³	83	氏	386	始	365	師娘	2							
殼	84	上門	199	少	教	訓	124	設	如	381	疑	不	...	43	風	609	師傅	23							
飾	317	上房	178	少	頭	缺	...	設	身	處	...	深	淺	232	使	5	師爺	289							
濕	See Sa	上板	377	尾	562	地	使	598	深	與	391	省	城	41	:	130	視	105							
曬	78	上陣	479	少 ¹	65	設	或	381	紳	362	盛	塲	372	史	304	使	的	506							
	Shan	上帝	137	少	子	315	設	若	381	紳	士	363	錫	187	示	466	使	勁	289						
	shan ^{fresh}	上海	97	少	年	人	324	設	若	381	紳	衿	574	勝	159	失	90	使	喚	53					
山	81	上馬	163	少	爺	65	話	18	森	501	勝	巴	497	勝	似	466	使	脾	氣	442					
山	293	上進	526	芍	494	話	斗	510	腎	603	勝	似	371	勝	似	371	失	手	差	...					
山	92	上等	508	芍	藥	494	話	本	327	慎	51	勝	數	602	脚	466	是	3	試	驗	300				
山	83	上朝	229	哨	407	話	秤	439	滲	483	利	190	失	火	280	:	176	誓	187						
山	480	上達	508	:	408	除	62	審	251	聖	129	失	和	328	是	非	119	詩	59						
山	352	上當	48	捎	25	瑟	See Sc	嬌	251	聖	人	339	失	事	479	是	非	曲	...	詩	文	486			
山	408	:	50	梢	525	澀	See Sc	...	Shèng	聖	旨	445	失	迷	90	直	601	詩	詞	歌	...				
山	408	上算	143	梢	502	麝	452	升	483	聖	徒	365	失	信	137	是	的	176	賦	601					
山	280	上緊	139	紹	289	...	Shèn	升	483	聖	教	406	失	時	144	是	是	176	詩	經	276				
山	546	上頭	65	紹	289	與	...	升	483	聖	書	129	失	陪	515	是	喇	176	蝕	539					
山	91	上禮拜	330	稍	536	申	620	生	2	聖	德	406	失	脚	245	拾	56	實	心	實	...				
山	...	上邊	65	稍	535	心	498	:	435	聖	廟	424	失	敬	515	拾	246	實	心	實	...				
叫	326	上 ³	18	筲	74	心	496	:	455	聖	賢	575	失	落	271	拾	漏	子	481	意	560				
衫	108	尙	184	浦	460	伸	75	生	13	聖	諱	463	石	93	屍	365	實	打	實	615					
苦	170	尙書	463	燒	18	身	38	生	火	625	聖	靈	270	石	灰	613	柿	440	實	在	5				
苦	170	晌	8	燒	321	:	430	生	生	611	聲	30	石	匠	409	施	209	實	信	561					
珊	547	晌午	67	燒	93	身	分	517	生	死	聲	音	203	石	榴	273	施	捨	209	實	係	317			
珊	547	晌午	5	燒	115	身	段	397	福	601	聲	氣	30	石	礁	324	施	教	486	實	情	95			
扇	277	晌尖	484	:	116	身	家	308	生	成	聲	張	69	世	46	食	25	實	話	6					
	357	晌飯	8	Shè	身	命	...	生	而	知	...	聲	勢	452	世	代	336	食	言	336	實	實	...		
善	30	商	56	身	量	38	之	403	聲	調	398	世	伯	517	食	盒	432	落	480						
善	528	商	589	舌	112	身	體	136	生	辰	517	脰	143	世	事	375	時	8	濕	270					
禪	444	商	224	色	See Sc	神	38	生	育	335	繩	90	世	面	191	時	下	334	濕	102					
羶	436	商	56	社	304	神	仙	191	生	事	213	Shì	世	俗	190	時	辰	74	濕	拉	459				
	Shang	傷	124	舍 ¹	102	神	出	鬼	...	生	枝	...	世	界	343	時	辰	表	74	濕	漬	458			
上 ¹	15	傷	570	舍	515	沒	562	葉	598	十	2	世	務	529	時	刻	298	讀	20						
上	349	傷	188	舍	515	神	禹	340	生	前	489	十	子	369	世	道	8	整	456						
上	180	傷	576	舍 ³	624	神	頭	鬼	...	生	活	299	成	567	世	間	561	時	家	183	釋	489			
上	180	傷	274	射	325	腦	559	生	氣	11	十	分	273	世	路	529	時	派	439	釋	489				
上	...	傷	375	涉	560	神	靈	564	:	:	604	:	:	396	世	襲	163	時	時	298					
拜	330	裳	10	蛇	90	甚 ²	43	生	財	115	十	有	八	...	式	10	時	症	338	Shou					
上	102	賞	625	捨	79	:	573	生	疹	435	九	567	侍	603	時	常	202	手	23						
上	330	賞	...	捨	592	甚	麼	43	生	書	101	十	字	架	54	侍	術	298	:	195					
上	219	惡	563	捨	592	甚	...	592	甚	397	生	產	445	十	來	多	268	事	8	時	節	183	手	巾	27

宜^{true}

手不老 ... 叔伯	575	熟悉	219	順便	225	雙 ¹	170	死	555	所	110	素淡淡	500	隨喜	487
實 244	叔弟	575	熟煩	452	順風	586	雙 ⁴	死法	384	:	357	素常	489	隨就	482
手不穩 244	述	123	熟練	219	順情順	...	雙生	死屍	490	所以	201	素業	440	隨跟之	482
手本 336	述說	123	樹	46	理	559	雙抱	死挺挺	499	所以然	428	訴	8	隨跟身	482
手足 554	秣	274	樹木	345	順從	277		死辣	438	所因	200	訴呈	482	隨機應	...
手法 283	秣稽	432	樹不	614	順絲順	...	Shwoi	死獸獸	499	唆	35	酥	413	變	216
手背 417	恕	59	樹林	307	絡	559	勻 See Shao	死鹹	438	唆事	561	:	415	穩	273
手段 293	倏	324	輸	120	順當	295	灼 586	寺	329	唆挑	582	酥脆	415	穩	254
手眼 327	倏然	324	輸贏	120	舜	63	芍 See Shao	似	143	唆訟	392	酥焦	415	穩就是	475
手銜 404	殊	485	薯	92	Shwa	409	說 ¹	:	269	索 ¹	129	粟	386	穩然	254
手頭 419	殊不知	484	薯	88	刷	67	說白話	137	269	索 ²	351	疏	203	髓	369
手鎗 419	書	13	豎	88	刷洗	526	說白道	...	269	索性	350	疏忽	310	Sun	
手藝 23	書札	516	豎	88	刷帚	67	黑	184	403	梭	624	疎淡	203	孫	87
手爐 152	書底	532	豎	581	耍	73	說白道	...	403	學 ¹	130	疎懈	507	孫悟空	604
守 51	書房	13	豎	289	耍手藝	616	緣	184	563	揀	300	疎醒	97	孫真人	619
守己 54	書信	550	屬	575	耍笑	126	說來說	...	321	數 ²	159	蔬	97	損	121
守備 163	書架	245	屬員	63	耍匪類	570	去	27	93	養	359	塑	467	損人利	...
守業 405	書香	532	贖	243	耍虛子	570	說到	421	111	養衣	359	簾	502	己	127
守節 166	書案	376	贖當	206	耍懶	206	說事人	575	129	環	242	蘇	63	損人利	...
收 33	書氣	517	Shui	27	Shwai	248	說和	77	425	環碎	242	蕭	572	己	562
收工 84	書啟	516	水	56	甩	248	說相聲	270	328	縮	296	蕭靜	572	損處	266
收成 87	書經	580	水土	547	帥	227	說書	197	111	縮頭縮	...	蘇	100	Sung	
收拾 56	書跋	469	水	134	帥領	386	說開	191	619	膊	560	蘇打	187		
收割 41	書僮	572	水文	439	衰	48	說話	22	328	鎖	51	蘇州	100	宋	366
收頭 196	書籍	304	水車	290	衰弱	261	說頭	418	328	鎖鍊	489	蘇東坡	204	松	117
受 95	淑	417	水紅	575	衰敗	48	說嘴	346	468	Sou				松柴	432
受用 204	梳	79	水師	412	衰頹	48	Si		208	Sui				送	25
受吃 180	術	199	水菸	458	率	525	四	2	328	叟	284	遂	576	送子娘	...
受屈 259	庶	375	水飯	...	摔 ¹	354	四不	474	155	搜	196	碎	16	娘	613
受氣 592	庶幾	374	水漬	147	摔打	354	四平	435	4	嗽	165	綬	579	送老	467
受罪 205	舒	180	水盡	134	摔 ³	213	四肢	百	10	瘦	75	歲	13	送迎	客
受頭 204	舒坦	180	飛	259	摔打	354	四體	512	202	瘦枯	401	歲考	487	送神	娘
受首 146	舒服	460	水龍	33	Shwan	97	四直	438	324	撒	443	歲數	212	娘	613
首 97	舒筋	741	稅	97	門	64	四書	106	517	颯	498	隨	10	送嫁	230
首飾 431	舒筋活	...	睡	624	拴	206	四書五	...	229	Su		隨口	215	送學	308
首領 97	血	472	睡覺	81	Shwang	484	四經	472	435	東	146	隨手	342	認	391
壽 143	鼠	375	說 ⁴	484	爽	86	四通	八	435	東脩	146	隨身	482	認師	564
壽桃 137	數 ⁴	79	誰	484	爽快	86	達	509	435	俗	143	隨和	85	滋	432
壽數 615	數目	262	誰知	484	爽利	460	四起	196	535	俗家	185	隨其	427	聳	180
壽數 137	數次	298	誰料	484	爽神	310	四齊	435	603	俗氣	219	隨便	81	鬆	61
壽誕 517	數 ³	67	Shun	51	爽然	323	四鄰	505	324	俗語	143	:	218	鬆口	483
壽瘦 75	數九	556	順心	199	爽當	449	司	23	307	素	136	隨後	33	鬆臭	437
獸 108	數過	523	順水推	598	爽撤	152	司務	23	191	素不相	...	:	341	Swan	
獸醫 614	數若	396	舟	469	爽霜	216	司馬懿	211	63	識	308	隨時	482		
Shu	數黃道	...	順利	469	爽霜	216	司晨	580	63	素日	346	隨趕着	482	蒜	439
東 See Su	黑	461	順直	438	霜	216	死	18	Soa	素來	184	隨從	84	算	20
叔 95	熟	18													

算命 93	大拇 指 ...	大襟 224	打掃 320	痞 227	台甫 514	單身 592	樓 430	唐欽 587
算法 282	頭 152	大臺 350	打魚 90	T'a	胎 206	單爲 472	樓 428	唐僧 230
算計 232	大約 260	大攤 443	打毬 147	他 7	胎裡紅 206	誨 473	攤 90	： 316
酸 188	大前天 330	打 15	打敗 353	塔 273	泰 173	揮 25	灘 289	倘 381
酸拉拉 495	大前日 330	打八式 354	打量 354	塔 273	泰山 173	彈 ⁴ 624	Tang	： 382
酸甜苦辣 ...	大前年 331	打心裡 472	打勝 353	過 251	泰山椅 173	擔 ¹ 180	： 180	倘或 381
辣鹹 601	大後天 330	打水 134	打喳喳 353	塌 287	泰安 276	擔事 510	當 ¹ 18	倘若 381
酸滋滋 458	大後日 330	： 353	打單身 594	塌 287	態 251	擔當 242	： 240	淌 202
酸溜溜 501	大後年 331	打火 353	打發 53	踢 49	臺 16	擔憂 180	當口 241	堂 3
酸演演 458	大家 82	打不瞧 323	打羣架 326	踢 210	臺布 190	擔險 466	當今 241	： 455
Ta	大家夥 183	打不過 ...	打鴨 579	Tai	噶 251	擔驚受 ...	當中 242	堂口 609
大 ¹ 3	大料 260	點來 569	打場 353	抬 25	怕 598	擔 86	當日 241	堂兄 177
： 513	大師傅 38	打仗 30	打算 21	大 ¹ 248	抬槓 532	： 431	當初 242	堂屋 540
大人 513	大娘 40	打包 354	打算盤 354	大夫 248	抬頭 418	： 134	當兒 241	棠 379
大人不 ...	大烟 210	打尖 353	打影子 353	大王 301	抬舉 216	擔杖 25	當官 241	湯 136
見小人 ...	大烟鬼 264	打光棍 426	打倦 353	歹 60	擡 431	膽 174	當面 241	： 340
過 350	大畧 260	打耳啞 353	打踢絆 405	代 63	： 93	膽氣 386	當家 92	湯菜 526
大上禮 ...	大清 285	打更 243	打稿 557	代書 463	檯 93	膽量 219	當家的 308	擔 283
拜 330	大處 266	打扮 353	打趣 462	代勞 445	Tan	： 219	當差 243	擔抵 284
大下禮 ...	大道 38	打把勢 354	打蹄子 370	代辦 516	Tan	T'an	當時 241	擔拖 283
拜 330	大道道 500	打坑 245	打典頭 353	待 36	丹 171	坦 180	當然 401	躺 15
大小 120	大意 568	打旱魃 531	打嘴巴 557	： 133	且 324	： 415	當然之 ...	膛 477
大丈夫 310	大量 220	打冷驚 323	打輪 549	怠 126	石 399	坦平 415	理 403	燙 79
大凡 468	大衆 82	打坐 423	打獵 354	袋 73	但 117	炭 234	當場 621	糖 252
大公無 ...	大發 443	打呵欠 354	打點 354	帶 25	： 257	貪 343	當 ⁴ 25	錫 144
私 563	大發發 500	打花花 ...	打橈 353	： 305	但 328	貪生怕 ...	當下 334	： 144
大孖兒 319	大路口 245	哨 506	打鎗 419	帶 134	但有一 ...	死 563	當天 241	Tao
大戶人 ...	大褂 471	打門 15	打雜 572	帶累 134	件 257	貪圖 429	當日 241	刀 13
大家 185	大媽 40	打哈息 354	打鞦韆 353	帶掉 220	但是 257	貪賊 343	當年 242	： 407
大方 296	大嫂 238	打架 30	打辮子 422	貨 576	但是 ...	探 120	當有作 ...	刀筆 610
大半 260	大概 260	打前失 405	打贏 465	默 86	件 257	探先 463	無 484	叨 ¹ 295
大名 15	大號 513	打前絆 405	打聽 48	跌子 229	但願 287	探花 454	當真 393	到 195
： 513	大場 208	打盹 201	打攪 252	戴 625	担 ¹ 457	探前 463	當時 242	到了兒 363
大米 56	大鼻 239	： 354	牽 370	T'ai	淡 203	探養 205	當無作 ...	到末了 364
大老爺 18	大模大 ...	打躬 354	牽拉 370	太 3	淡薄 314	探養媳 ...	有 484	到底 56
大同小 ...	樣 44	打草稿 353	答 20	： 59	蛋 75	婦 207	當意 510	： 364
異 562	大模大 ...	打爹罵 ...	答道 614	太 582	蛋白 366	毯 274	當鋪 243	到所以 ...
大車 171	樣 559	娘 563	答對 582	太太 3	蛋清 366	痰 216	當頭 186	然 396
大伯子 306	大諒 261	打閃 353	答應 146	太平 168	蛋黃 366	彈 ² 229	擋路 192	到所以 ...
大材小 ...	大樣樣 500	打拳 354	達 155	太古 338	耽 33	彈灰 229	擋路 290	然處 396
用 565	大課 540	打拳脚 343	答 320	太后 202	耽 33	彈壓 256	蕩 215	到家 396
大板子 481	大賢 340	打高興 353	答伴 389	太初 361	耽誤 33	談 156	黨 293	到處 266
大房 319	大器晚 ...	打個良 537	搭救 582	太陽 55	耽擱 231	談論 156	錯 247	到極處 396
大叔 95	成 384	打個磴 537	搭搭脚 506	太過 61	單 117	潭 530	T'ang	到臨了 364
大姐 43	大錢 10	打破 394	搭夥計 616	太歲 607	： 472	嘆 167	： 167	倒 ³ 18
大姐姐 43	大關節 ...	打破頭 ...	搭 391	台 516	單人獨 ...	歎 75	唐 58	： 244
大衫 436	目 304	櫻 163	搭 391	台下 515	馬 477	壇 225	唐突 146	倒臥 383

倒倒險 ... 討飯 17	特意 125	地下 16	底裏原 ... 題目 115	筭 28	掂算 557	天命 137
險 376	196	472	地方 5	情 285	88	天青 438
倒敗 530	討厭 25	251	底舖 210	體 58	487	天使 73
倒借 467	討饒 331	地字 333	帝 136	體己 111	485	天官 608
倒換 523	胸 609	Têng	第 114	體恤 388	564	天官賜 ...
倒運 290	淘 38	地瓜 92	： 115	體面 59	287	福 608
倒 ⁴ 67	淘氣 38	地包 409	隄 556	體量 126	44	609
： 312	掏 526	地板 216	隄防 556	體貼 81	44	33
倒反 312	掏氣 108	地脈 518	堤 210	體統 131	259	215
倒茶 356	84	地氣 518	堤 ¹ 74	Tiao	147	41
倒針 216	縉 619	地畝 229	提溜 74	刁 156	147	33
鳥道 90	船 422	地球 371	蒂 568	刁 156	67	132
： 8	船界 422	地蛋 408	蒂把 567	刁 336	115	100
430	Tai	地處 62	遞 157	刁鑽 336	Tie	94
道士 423	等 8	地處 266	滴 242	吊 70	203	18
道行 486	得 74	421	滴打 242	吊喪 203	3	332
道光 274	啞 251	574	滴溜 526	吊 3	71	247
道理 8	T'ei	8	敵 557	爹 247	247	247
道喜 202	噠 250	507	敵手 379	爹 55	51	588
道路 256	T'ei	100	敵手 379	跌 436	51	589
道臺 279	Tè	416	低 121	跌死 428	480	606
道學 449	澄 8	415	低拉 495	跌死 480	625	466
盜 111	得 ² 8	27	低處 266	貼 ¹ 439	351	543
盜賊 307	： 101	339	低頭 445	碟 473	206	206
搗 162	得不得 298	65	弟 20	碟 473	71	456
搗白 301	得手 490	574	弟兄 22	掉臉 423	T'ie	202
搗翻 162	得肋 511	171	： 38	掉臉 423	321	248
導 346	得利害 396	28	的 ¹ 10	釣 65	402	397
稻 274	得缺 367	536	： 46	貂 216	402	303
蹈 599	得時 105	118	： 92	鼠 402	431	88
禱 401	得救 304	69	的利害 396	調 ⁴ 130	51	415
禱告 402	得過且 ... 560	T'êng	的慌 503	調弄 180	279	196
禱告文 402	得勝 227	21	的 ⁴ 296	調度 579	343	409
T'ao	得意 144	511	的確 296	寫 502	343	497
叨 ¹ 624	得慌 503	459	抵 178	寫遠 502	66	497
逃 49	得罪 59	286	抵眼 178	雕 599	T'ien	501
逃走 328	得寵 480	74	底下 15	T'iao	326	500
逃命 494	德 213	355	： 341	挑 578	373	418
逃荒 294	德行 213	77	底子 519	挑 ¹ 89	77	463
逃學 49	德國 282	495	： 569	挑八股 ... 478	328	463
桃 46	T'é	209	底根兒 ... 361	挑眼 117	T'ien	75
套 72	騰 60	585	裏 361	挑換 523	99	493
： 99	騰窩 84	84	底起根 ... 361	挑選 376	172	318
套拳 556	特 125	Ti	裏 361	挑 ³ 35	219	18
套褲 439	： 472	5	底細 54	挑 ⁴ 35	16	620
討 25	特為 372	5	底裏 54	條 173	530	208
討要 466	特特 472	551	： 55	條几 28	120	376

Tsêng	自戒	163	慈	188	昨兒個	40	Tsu	醉漢	493	Ts'un	從容	295	賭	69				
	自來	361	慈悲	188	：	330		嘴	30		從根	361	賭咒	231				
曾 ¹	自來火	27	趾	485	座	28	足	75	嘴子	98	從頭	361	賭氣	188				
增	自是	133	趾脚	485	：	272	足意	233	嘴上的	...	從寬	465	賭個東	356				
增光	自便	429	雌	578	座位	28	阻	314	話	475	存	33	聽	38				
憎	自家	53	雌雄	577	做 ⁴	16	阻擋	603	嘴巴	53	存心不	...	聽明	38				
憎嫌	自從	140	賜	See Si	做法	282	作 ³	625	嘴舌	394	真	491	聽	38				
贈 ⁴	自盡	53	辭	210	做親	395	作聲	51	嘴快心	...	存項	404	叢	607				
	自然	165	辭行	483	做面子	...	卒	602	直	597	村	81	Tswan	獨				
Ts'êng	自然是	521	辭前挨	...	活	457	祖	73	嘴倖	49	村辱	466	裁	444				
曾 ²	自誇	614	後	563	做聲	52	祖上	73	嘴甜心	...	村堡	359	鑽 ⁴	245				
層	姊妹	95	辭賬	536	鑿	327	祖父	422	苦	203	Tsung	鑽頭	...	441				
：	姊妹	95			鑿鑿可	...	祖母	264	嘴甜心	...		鑄	608	獨自個	441			
層次	：	458	Tsoā		據	327	祖宗	406	苦	562	宗族譜	213	鑽 ¹	245	獨凳	543		
贈 ⁴	：	460	左	65	Ts'ou		租	199	嘴脣	112	宗族譜	270	鑲	93	鑲金	215		
贈工	姿	261	左右兩	...	Ts'ou		租錢	199	嘴頭	419	宗族譜	586	Ts'wan	鑲	110	讀 ²	196	
	姿質	262	難	329	措	342	族	228	Ts'ui		踪	578	See Tsan	攔	420	讀書	196	
	悻	579	左思右	...	措手	376	族長	229			踪跡	511	攔	420	T'u			
子	悻牛	579	想	563	撥 ³	420	做 ³	489	脛	375	踪跡	511	攔	420				
子民	滋	81	坐	13	挫	476	做聲	489	脛生	455	總	83	攔	307				
子弟	：	458	坐月	88	挫	130	挫	95	脛快	376	總之	569	Tu	土地	64			
子孫	滋生	578	坐家欺	...	撮	536			脛	621	總之言	569	See Ku	土坯	93			
子孫娘	滋味	81	客	598	撮	130	Ts'u		脛	126	總之	569	凸	470	土星	131		
娘	滋事	532	坐席	108	撮弄	420	促	60	催	174	總之	569	姤	401	土貨	375		
子粒	紫	439	坐堂	610	撮擁	372	促病	203	催逼	606	總要	285	杜	41	土墜	93		
子路	紫英	501	坐船	355	錯	10	促織	379	催稟	466	總得	285	肚 ⁴	41	土墜	93		
仔	紫烏	501	作 ⁴	28	錯過	157	粗	46	翠	180	總須	285	肚 ³	432	吐 ⁴	105		
仔細	紫够	501	作文	529	：	390	粗拉	106	：	435	總督	209	度 ⁴	199	吐 ³	453		
字	紫微	501	作官	504	錯亂	599	粗笨	328	翠花	404	縱	476	度日	372	秃	202		
字本	資	239	作保	385	Tsou		粗細	120	翠藍	435	縱然	475	度量	256	秃攏	297		
字典	：		作害	504	Tsou		粗糙	106	Tsun		縱就	475	都	83	兔	91		
字紙	此	22	作乾	187	走	18	粗蠢	328	Tsun		樓	200	都像	269	途	588		
字眼	此地	22	作飽	187	走水	332	粹	324	尊	38	Ts'ung		毒	60	徒	129		
字彙	：	169	作揖	356	走岔	378	粹然	323	：	407			毒氣	556	徒弟	283		
字據	：	334	作冤	429	走動	523	醋	129	尊姓	515	從	21	毒螫	456	吮	297		
自	此刻	334	作意	547	走道	269	簇	416	尊卑	120	從今之	...	毒藥	557	吮	297		
自大	次序	123	作暈	187	走像	376	簇新	416	尊長	543	後	340	突	146	屠	413		
自己	次序	123	作對	473	走漏	383	艇	95	尊重	287	從今以	...	突然	322	屠戶	413		
自己各	：	93	作雙	281	走獸	355	Tsui		尊嫂	515	後	341	堵	113	茶	595		
兒	伺候	93	作酸	187	奏	224		尊貴	38	從今後	341	：	407	茶毒	595			
自主	刺	352	作聲	51	做 ⁴	See Tsou		尊敬	44	從早	338	堵	355	睡	See Tsou			
自由	刺撓	352	作難	166	請	215	罪	20	尊駕	515	從先	338	堵頭	113	痲	317		
自在	差 ¹	303	作 ¹	239	驟	324	罪人	35	尊諱	515	從此看	...	啣	268	痲瘡	317		
自由自	祠	543	作死	239	驟然	323	罪名	241	遵	304	來	569	啣	273	塗 ²	624		
在	祠堂	543	昨	40	Ts'ou		罪惡	328	遵令	533	從此以	...	啣	268	圖	99		
自刎	：	100	昨日	40	：		罪愆	168	遵行	304	後	341	渡	375	圖財	592		
自各	瓷	365	昨天	40	凌	58	罪孽	248	遵守	304	從來	86	督	209	圖書	335		
自各兒	詞	118	昨日	40	凌巧	58	醉	102	：	338	：	46	圖需	137				

	Tui	Tun	凍死 274	痛快 86	瓦匠 90	玩頭 419	忘恩 204	危 248	謂 293
			動 44	痛哭 238	挖 74	玩藝 81	忘恩負 ... 598	危險 248	灘 432
兌	115	不 614	筒 244	筒 262	挖門子 288	晚 264	義 8	尾 339	濼縣 432
兌禮	520	不 321	動工 231	術 65	挖酷 264	晚上 613	在 41	： 356	徽 174
堆	170	不 321	動手 289	童 205	呱 519	晚飯 13	： 459	尾巴 339	
隊	95	不 408	動不 298	童生 242	娃 205	燒 284	： 118	味 43	Wên
確	113	不 201	動打 242	童養 44	娃 205	燒轉 284	： 471	： 357	文 100
確白	113	不 460	動身 593	童養媳 ... 614	窰 207	窰 76	： 118	味道 413	： 340
對	10	不 593	動怒 245	婦 614	襖 102	： 87	： 285	委 283	： 356
： 176	不 245	動彈 147	動靜 115	銅 502	： 572	： 572	： 327	委曲 284	文王 340
： 407	不 147	動靜 115	董 433	童 120	： 572	： 572	： 271	委屈 466	文約 408
對子	386	不 115	懂 485	童 193	： 606	： 606	： 344	威 146	文契 498
： 617	不 561	不 433	懂得 485	童 10	： 606	： 606	： 344	威武 227	文書 332
對手	223	不 570	： 351	童 10	： 443	： 443	： 143	威風 146	文章 130
對付	617	不 462	T'ung	童 10	： 443	： 443	： 555	威嚴 533	文理 283
對兒	462	不 270	T'ung	童 10	： 443	： 443	： 555	為 88	文雅 329
對面	270	不 156	T'ung	同 30	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為非 346	文舉 551
對頭	156	不 519	T'ung	： 305	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為善 346	文編 500
對頭	519	不 379	T'ung	： 361	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	379	不 385	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	385	不 358	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	358	不 113	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	113	不 191	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	191	不 121	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	121	不 291	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	291	不 563	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	563	不 87	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	87	不 498	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	498	不 563	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	563	不 134	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	134	不 130	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	130	不 542	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	542	不 575	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	575	不 87	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	87	不 542	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	542	不 235	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	235	不 597	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	597	不 157	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	157	不 70	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	70	不 48	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	48	不 191	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	191	不 121	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	121	不 291	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	291	不 563	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	563	不 87	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	87	不 498	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	498	不 563	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	563	不 134	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	134	不 130	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	130	不 542	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	542	不 575	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	575	不 87	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	87	不 542	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	542	不 235	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	235	不 597	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	597	不 157	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	157	不 70	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	70	不 48	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	48	不 191	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	191	不 121	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	121	不 291	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	291	不 563	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	563	不 87	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	87	不 498	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	498	不 563	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	563	不 134	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	134	不 130	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	130	不 542	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	542	不 575	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	575	不 87	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	87	不 542	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	542	不 235	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	235	不 597	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	597	不 157	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	157	不 70	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	70	不 48	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	48	不 191	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	191	不 121	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	121	不 291	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	291	不 563	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	563	不 87	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	87	不 498	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	498	不 563	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	563	不 134	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	134	不 130	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	130	不 542	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	542	不 575	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	575	不 87	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	87	不 542	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	542	不 235	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	235	不 597	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	597	不 157	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	157	不 70	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	70	不 48	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	48	不 191	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	191	不 121	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	121	不 291	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	291	不 563	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	563	不 87	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	87	不 498	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	498	不 563	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	563	不 134	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	134	不 130	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	130	不 542	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	542	不 575	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	575	不 87	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	87	不 542	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	542	不 235	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	235	不 597	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	597	不 157	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	157	不 70	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	70	不 48	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	48	不 191	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	191	不 121	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592
對頭	121	不 291	T'ung	： 476	Twan	外行 220	： 84	為難 553	列 592

Wou	侮	529	無計奈	...	牙	193	央求	258	Yao	延	382	眼淚	27	冶	533		
	侮慢	529	何	542	牙口	457	羊	70		延推	383	眼時下	334	耶	62		
我	7	35	無能	443	牙外的	...	羊角	300	爻	621	言	88	眼時間	334	耶蘇	63	
臥	625	44	無益	30	話	475	仰	324	吃	457	言三語	...	眼睛	30	夜	8	
臥房	571	23	無涉	無	牙狗	578	仰板	436	吃二喝	...	言四	566	眼跳	...	夜來	330	
倭	372	285	干	559	牙貓	579	仰棚	437	三	567	言而有	...	驚	597	夜裡	194	
倭僮	372	285	無覓	471	押 ¹	71	:	493	吃三喝	...	信	464	眼睜睜	456	夜飯	8	
倭僮廢	372	219	無理	無	:	172	仰臥	324	二	567	言定	276	眼精	手	頁	358	
握	369	437	無法	560	押頭	113	仰搬	324	吃喝	457	言其	427	快	598	拽 ⁴	624	
窩	224	270	無冤	無	押 ²	498	伴	363	妖	255	言明	379	眼熱	287	野	41	
窩頭	481	311	無仇	559	呀	149	伴向	363	妖巧	255	言差	...	閨	489	野食	228	
踉	277	226	無義	之	呀呀	249	洋	27	妖精	328	言錯	563	閨王	490	野外	619	
Wu	梧桐	226	財	583	軋	483	洋山	408	妖魔鬼	...	言道	621	閨君	490	野頭野	...	
	無	30	無盡	432	亞	256	洋火	27	怪	601	言傳	428	閨羅	489	膾	504	
五	2	344	無管	218	亞非利	...	洋布	67	要	5	言語	88	掩	94	野貓	91	
五服	391	366	無二	鬼	加	440	洋柿	子	463	要	420	言談	297	掩埋	383	野雞	91
五經	470	560	無干	560	無	560	洋鬼	子	396	要	90	研	358	掩藏	94	野獸	108
五露朝	...	345	無心	525	無窮	432	洋貨	375	要	283	彥	606	淹	84	掖	536	
天	424	525	無比	525	無賴	366	洋錢	143	要	16	咽 ¹	75	淹死	84	爺	3	
勿	517	344	無不	344	無緣	無	洋機	布	172	要	568	咽 ¹	624	淹沒	209	爺兒兩	...
午	8	559	無可	如	無	...	洋鎗	417	要	219	烟	44	淹濕	437	個	319	
午飯	8	542	無可	奈	無	...	洋鎗	417	要	30	烟台	551	硯	73	爺兒倆	225	
件	329	542	無可	奈	岸	559	洋筒	474	要	64	烟筒	262	硯臺	108	爺兒們	576	
件作	329	542	無	災	無	...	殃	204	咬	606	烟衝	262	菸	93	爺爺	55	
污	267	123	無	病	無	...	殃	204	咬	313	烟頭	542	菸袋	93	葉	270	
污辱	466	559	無	病	無	...	殃	204	咬	277	烟癮	542	厭	25	葉	69	
污穢	267	519	無	病	無	...	殃	204	咬	130	煙	44	厭惡	123		Yin	
巫	126	542	無	病	無	...	殃	204	咬	63	焉	445	厭棄	157			
巫婆	126	220	無	怪	無	...	殃	204	咬	340	宴	332	演	165	引	51	
:	127	344	無	非	誤	33	壓	杠子	610	205	胭	599	緣	84	引子	375	
忤	406	218	無	拘	誤	553	壓	寶	84	69	眼	21	緣	431	引見	349	
忤逆	406	...	無	所	不	...	壓	服	73	69	:	407	緣	259	引進	596	
杌	543	337	無	賴	由	473	壓	制	202	75	眼力	365	緣	259	尹	375	
杌凳	543	473	無	賴	由	473	壓	量	202	430	眼力見	...	緣	300	因	199	
吾	125	...	無	法	無	...	壓	量	520	433	兒	223	顏	170	因之	198	
吳	95	560	無	天	無	...	壓	量	520	408	眼巴巴	455	顏	170	因此	201	
武	69	...	無	毒	不	...	鴉	鴉片	386	408	眼目	173	嚴	61	因而	201	
:	340	495	無	毒	不	...	鴉	鴉片	386	408	眼目	173	嚴	61	因而	201	
武大郎	221	541	無	奈	何	541	Yai			345	眼色	173	嚴刑	588	因為	198	
武帝	137	541	無	奈	何	541	挨	See Ai	383	619	眼尖	手	嚴密	571	因着	198	
武將	380	542	無	法	可	...	挨	See Ai	383	101	快	598	嚴緊	486	印	100	
武備	571	588	無	故	...	...	涯	See Ai		102	眼見	33	嚴	307	音	5
武職	507	...	無	是	無	...	涯	See Ai		38	眼神	173	嚴	504	音信	137	
武藝	69	559	無	非	...	...	崖	See Ai		103	眼鏡	54	鹽	110	烟	152
物件	38	541	無	計	奈	...	Yang			603	眼前	118	鹽	239	烟緣	152	
物件	485	...	無	計	可	...	央	210		69	眼眉	124	鹽	60	殷	183	
:	487	542	無	計	可	...	央	210		69	眼看	33	也	30	殷勤	77	
			無	計	可	...	央	210		Yeu	眼界	508	也	30	陰功	599	

陰涼	149	瑩地	245	唐 See Yüe	有意	472	:	130	御	603	餘浮	518	遠近	120	岳母	385	
陰間	619	影	63	蔣 See Yao	有興	561	用功	526	御前	603	鬘	264	遠走高	...	唐	405	
飲	63	影本	63	瘡	有憑有	...	用勁	289	欲	185	鬘貼	264	飛	598	約	See Yoä	
飲食	63	營	55	瘡疾	188	有據	563	用度	199	敵	358	悠	155	遠離	378	悅	498
飲	378	:	407	樂 See Yüe	有頭有	...	用處	266	魚	41	與	482	寬	184	悅服	533	
淫	397	營子	523	鑰	69	尾	559	用項	202	魚肚	433	寬仇	191	越	351	越	351
淫亂	397	營生	56			佑	246	用錢	498	魚翅	259	寬屈	536	越外	518	越	518
寅	332	營務	345	Yu		酉	516	永	188	魚鼈	...	元	75	越發	350	越	350
象	13	嬰	463	又	30	油	79	永生	408	懈	601	元年	242	啲	235	藥	See Yao
象兩	575	嬰孩	463	又加上	403	油子	98	永遠	188	寓	267	元始	244	藥	224	藥	224
象錢	270	應	35	又搭上	403	油匠	386	勇	274	寓處	266	元帥	227	樂	224	樂	224
象鏢	75	應允	489	又搭着	403	油光	415	容	10	裕	264	元氣	586	樂法	284	樂	284
引醉	377	應承	202	友	46	油注	459	容易	11	遇	137	元鏢	75	樂器	224	樂	224
引誘	245	應許	36	由	65	油注	459	埔	320	遇見	137	:	76	閱	165	閱	165
引導	346	應該	49	:	218	油潤	459	埔道	320	遇險	550	元勳	362	閱歷	202	閱	202
罷	489	應當	53	由是	觀	油鹽	...	埔路	320	逾	60	元寶	140	閱邊	165	瘡	See Yoä
罷遣	593	應	129	之	569	醋	601	榮	93	喻	269	怨	54	瘡	See Yoä	瘡	See Yoä
惡揚	...	應時	449	由此	觀	幽	517	榮華	93	預	88	怨恨	157	瘡	See Yoä	瘡	See Yoä
善	563	應酬	306	之	569	幽雅	517	榮耀	103	預先	317	袁	346	瘡	See Yoä	瘡	See Yoä
緣	453	蠅	199	右	65	柚	225	墟	115	豫	88	院	16	瘡	See Yoä	瘡	See Yoä
癢	254	癩	120	有	3	悠	498	擁	245	豫備	88	院考	366	瘡	See Yoä	瘡	See Yoä
		:	247	有心	345	游	621	癩	585	愚	126	:	487	勻	181	勻	181
		Ying	386	:	472	猶	202			愚	515	原	129	勻淨	436	勻	436
迎	155	嬰粟	386	:	561	猶太	242	于	303	愚弄	127	原	360	允	489	允	489
英	75	嬰粟花	386	有名	無	...	209	玉	81	愚弟	515	原文	588	允云	351	允	351
英文	139	櫻	568	實	562	猶豫	277	玉石	93	愚笨	526	原本	360	暈	188	暈	188
英國	75	櫻桃	568	有事	359	遊	136	玉米	498	愚頑	311	原先	360	暈	196	暈	196
英雄	255	鷹	379	有始	無	...	196	迂	87	愚蠢	399	原告	129	運	162	運	162
桶	See Yung	鸚	606	有終	563	遊手	好	迂	87	與	62	原作	279	運用	517	運	517
硬	74	鸚鵡	506	有的	是	225	閒	迂滯	87	:	305	原來	360	運氣	181	運	181
硬扎	422			有條	有	...	136	羽	443	與其	595	原底	360	雲	128	雲	128
硬郎	449	Yoä		有理	560	遊街	452	羽綾	460	愈	296	原起	360	雲彩	128	雲	128
硬爭	496	岳 See Yüe		有根	有	...	245	芋	92	瑜	205	原起	...	雲張	458	雲	458
硬刺	459	約	54	稍	560	憂	101	育	335	獄	35	兒	360	熅	190	熅	190
硬綁	458	:	260	有益	無	...	128	於	60	語	88	原根	360	熅斗	190	熅	190
硬氣	346	約束	355	損	563	優	602	於是	208	餘	91	原情	284	殞	576	殞	576
硬掙	346	約會	196	有情	有	...	602	雨	33	餘外	518	原諒	286	殞命	576	殞	576
硬強	147	約瑟	149	有趣	560	軟 See Ch'iu		雨星	329	餘步	276	員	166	鬘	624	鬘	624
瑛	180	約摸	54	有滋	有	...		禹	339	餘裏	掛	園	66	韻	486	韻	486
瑩	245	約翰	115	味	560	用	5	峪	209	外	518	遠	49	岳	309	岳	309

卷 ⁴ 235	古 ¹²⁷	附 ⁷¹	啞 ¹⁵³	噍 ⁶⁰⁶	坑 ⁷⁵	壓 ⁷³	奢 ⁵⁰²	婚 ¹⁶²	宜 ⁵⁵
卷 ³ 624	台 ⁵¹⁶	昨 ⁵⁷⁴	噉 ²⁵¹	噍 ³²⁰	均 ¹⁸¹	壓 ⁸⁴	奠 ³²¹	婦 ⁴³	家 ¹³
聘 ¹⁴⁴	叮 ¹⁹⁹	和 ³⁰	An ⁶²⁴	噉 ³⁰	坏 ⁹³	壇 ²²⁵	與 ³⁹¹	婆 ¹³	宮 ⁴⁷⁰
	叱 ²⁵¹	呢 ⁴³	噉 ²⁹⁷	噉 ¹¹⁵	坤 ⁴⁴⁶	壘 ⁴⁰⁸	獎 ¹⁰⁸	婆 ⁴⁴³	客 ¹⁸
27厂	史 ³⁰⁴	味 ⁴³	噉 ⁴³⁵	噉 ³⁴⁶	坡 ¹³⁹	壘 ²⁴⁵	奉 ²⁵	婆 ⁴³	富 ⁷³
厚 ⁶⁰	叨 ²⁹⁵	哄 ²⁷	噉 ²⁶⁸	噉 ¹⁴⁴	坦 ¹⁸⁰	壘 ¹⁸		婆 ⁵⁸⁶	宜 ³¹³
原 ¹²⁹	T'ao ⁶²⁴	哀 ⁴⁹	噉 ⁴⁶⁰	噉 ²⁵¹	城 ¹⁵	壘 ³⁰⁴	38女	婆 ⁸⁶	宴 ³³²
厨 ⁵⁶	吸 ²⁷⁰	咩 ⁵⁸⁰	噉 ²⁵¹	噉 ²⁵¹	垂 ²⁰²		女 ²	婆 ⁷⁷	容 ¹⁰
厦 ³⁰⁷	吏 ⁵²⁰	咬 ⁶⁴	噉 ⁴³⁹	噉 ²⁵¹	桶 ³²⁰	33士	奴 ⁵⁸⁶	婆 ⁵⁵	害 ²³
厮 ³⁰⁷	后 ²⁰²	咽 ⁷⁵	噉 ²³¹	噉 ⁶⁹	埋 ²⁰⁹	士 ²⁵²	奶 ⁴³	婆 ²⁸⁴	宰 ³⁸
厭 ²⁵	吉 ¹⁸¹	咽 ⁶²⁴	噉 ²³⁵	噉 ²⁷³	Man ⁵⁴	壯 ¹⁶⁷	好 ³	婆 ²⁶¹	宿 ⁴¹
麗 ⁵⁶⁴	吐 ¹⁰⁵	品 ⁸⁸	噉 ⁶⁰⁶	噉 ²³⁸	堂 ³	壘 ⁶²	好 ¹³⁴	婆 ¹⁶⁶	宰 ⁵⁹²
	吐 ⁴⁵³	品 ³⁷⁵	噉 ⁴⁶⁰	噉 ³²⁵	堯 ¹¹³	壘 ¹³⁷	好 ⁴⁰	婆 ⁴⁷⁰	寄 ²⁵
	向 ⁷⁷	哈 ⁹¹	噉 ¹⁸¹	噉 ⁶¹	堵 ⁸⁷		如 ⁵⁸⁶	婆 ¹³	察 ⁹⁵
28山	各 ⁵³	哈 ³⁵⁵	噉 ²⁰³	噉 ⁵⁶	執 ¹⁷⁰		灼 ²¹⁶	婆 ⁴³	密 ⁷⁵
去 ⁸	咄 ¹³	哈 ¹⁵²	噉 ¹⁷⁸	噉 ⁶⁰²	堆 ²¹⁵	35女	奸 ²⁵²	婆 ⁹⁷	寅 ³³²
參 ²⁷⁹	名 ⁵⁶⁴	哈 ⁴³⁹	噉 ³⁵⁵	噉 ¹¹⁰	基 ⁶¹⁰	夏	妄 ³³⁶	婆 ²⁴¹	寂 ²³²
Ta'eu ³⁰³	吁 ¹⁰	喇 ¹⁵²	噉 ¹²⁸	噉 ⁸¹	培 ¹²³	夕	姪 ³⁰⁷	婆 ⁴⁶³	塞 ²⁶⁷
Shên ⁴³³	合 ⁵	哇 ¹⁵²	噉 ¹¹⁷	噉 ⁷⁵	堅 ¹⁴⁰	夕 ⁶²⁰	妖 ²⁵⁵	婆 ²⁵¹	寬 ¹⁸⁴
	吃 ³	咳 ¹⁶⁵	噉 ⁷⁵	噉 ⁷¹	場 ¹⁹⁶	夕 ¹¹	妙 ¹⁴⁴	子 ¹²	寬 ⁵⁹
	吊 ⁸	Hai ⁵⁰⁵	噉 ⁴⁵⁷	噉 ³⁰	堡 ²¹⁰	夕 ¹¹	妻 ¹⁵⁴	子 ¹¹⁷	寬 ¹¹⁷
29又	告 ¹³	咳 ²³⁵	噉 ³⁰	噉 ³⁸	堤 ²⁶⁴	夕 ⁸	妻 ⁶²⁴	子 ⁵	寬 ⁴⁶⁹
又 ³⁰	咩 ⁷¹	咳 ²⁹⁷	噉 ²⁶⁹	噉 ⁵³	堪 ²⁴⁵	夕 ⁵⁰²	姊 ⁹⁵	子 ⁵	寬 ⁴⁹⁴
义 ⁶²¹	吧 ⁹¹	咳 ⁶²¹	噉 ⁵⁶	噉 ²⁵	塔 ²⁷³	夕 ⁵³	妨 ⁴¹	子 ³	寬 ³⁸⁵
友 ⁴⁶	吕 ⁶⁰³	咳 ²⁵¹	噉 ⁵	噉 ²⁵¹	場 ⁴⁶⁷		姑 ¹³	子 ³³	寬 ⁸⁴
反 ⁶⁵	吵 ⁸¹	咳 ¹⁶⁶	噉 ⁵	噉 ⁵⁶⁹	壘 ⁷⁵	37大	姐 ⁴³	子 ¹⁰²	寬 ⁴⁸⁰
取 ²⁷	呐 ⁴⁷⁴	咳 ¹⁶³	噉 ⁵	噉 ²⁵¹	壘 ⁹⁵	大 ³	妹 ⁹⁵	子 ³³⁹	
叔 ⁹⁵	吹 ¹¹⁸	咳 ¹⁵²	噉 ⁵	噉 ⁴⁹⁸	壘 ⁶²⁴	Tai ²⁴⁸	姓 ⁸¹	子 ¹⁷¹	
受 ⁹⁵	吾 ¹²⁵	咳 ⁴⁰⁸	噉 ⁵⁶⁹	噉 ²⁰	壘 ⁴⁶	太 ³	始 ²⁴²	子 ¹³	41寸
叙 ³⁴²	呈 ¹⁵⁷	咳 ¹⁵²	噉 ²⁰	噉 ¹⁶⁵	壘 ⁶²⁴	天 ³	妾 ³³⁶	子 ³¹⁸	寸 ¹³⁹
叛 ⁵⁰⁴	吞 ²¹²	咳 ²⁵¹	噉 ¹⁰⁸	噉 ¹⁶⁵	壘 ⁴⁶	夫 ¹⁸	姪 ²⁸³	子 ⁸⁷	寺 ³²⁹
吏 ²⁸⁴	吞 ²²⁰	咳 ¹¹²	噉 ⁴⁸	噉 ²²⁰	壘 ⁵¹⁹	夫 ⁹⁰	姪 ⁴⁷⁰	子 ³	封 ⁵⁵
吏 ⁷¹	吞 ²⁵⁰	咳 ⁵⁸	噉 ⁶⁶	噉 ²²⁰	壘 ¹¹⁵	失 ¹⁰⁰	姪 ²⁶¹	子 ²⁴⁸	射 ⁴⁶⁷
叢 ⁶⁰⁷	吞 ²⁹⁶	咳 ⁶⁵	噉 ¹⁴⁰	噉 ²²⁰	壘 ¹⁰⁰	央 ¹⁴⁰	姪 ²⁷⁷	子 ²⁴⁸	將 ³²⁵
	吞 ²⁹⁶	咳 ⁶⁵	噉 ¹⁴⁰	噉 ²²⁰	壘 ¹⁴⁰	奉 ¹⁴⁹	姪 ³¹⁷	子 ¹⁵²	將 ⁵⁹
	吞 ³⁹³	咳 ⁶⁹	噉 ⁹⁹	噉 ²⁶⁸	壘 ¹⁷¹	奈 ¹⁷¹	姪 ¹⁸³	子 ¹⁴⁶	將 ²⁰⁹
	吞 ⁶¹⁹	咳 ³⁵	噉 ¹⁷⁸	噉 ³⁸⁹	壘 ¹⁹⁶	奔 ¹⁹⁶	姪 ¹⁵²	子 ⁸¹	將 ⁵¹
30口	瓜 ²⁶⁸	咳 ⁶²¹	噉 ^{32士}	噉 ²⁰⁰	壘 ²⁹⁶	奇 ¹¹⁰	姪 ⁹⁶	子 ³³	專 ¹⁸
口 ³	咕 ²⁶¹	咳 ⁶²⁵	土 ²⁵	噉 ¹⁰⁵	壘 ⁵⁷²	奇 ⁶²⁴	姪 ⁵⁵⁷	子 ³⁶⁶	專 ³⁸
可 ⁸	呵 ²²³	咳 ⁵⁶	地 ⁵	噉 ⁶²⁴	壘 ²³⁸	奏 ²²⁴	姪 ¹³	子 ²²⁰	對 ¹⁰
可 ²¹²	咱 ²⁵⁰	咳 ⁴³²	在 ⁵	噉 ¹⁴⁹	壘 ⁹⁹	奈 ³⁷⁰	姪 ⁵	子 ¹⁸	導 ³⁴⁶
司 ²³	呖 ²¹⁹	咳 ¹⁰⁶	坐 ¹³	噉 ⁷⁹	壘 ²⁴⁵	契 ²⁶⁸	姪 ²	子 ³⁰	小 ³
右 ⁶⁵	咒 ²⁰⁵	咳 ⁵⁵⁰	坊 ¹⁰²	噉 ¹⁶⁷	壘 ⁹³	Hsic ⁶²⁴	姪 ³⁰⁷	子 ²¹³	
另 ⁶⁸	呀 ¹⁴⁹			噉 ⁵⁵⁰		套	婆 ³⁶²	宗	
句 ⁹⁴	呼 ¹²⁶								
只 ¹¹⁷	命 ⁹⁰								
叭 ⁵⁵⁰									

少 ¹ 16	崇崑 546	帳幅 68	55 卅	佛律 269	恒 92	想 51	威 30	Pi 624	捉 129
少 ⁴ 65	崑 213	幅 358	弄 38	律 474	怎 85	愁 106	駭 507	拋 194	捐 25
尖 13	嶗 557	帽 16	56 弋	徇 248	怠 126	惹 102	駭 603	抵 178	拿 27
尙 184	嶗 580	幣 63	式 10	徇 291	恨 126	愚 126	駭 191	拈 181	挺 37
鈔 ¹ 348	嶗 280	幌 146	57 弓	徇 37	怒 154	感 143	駭 159	拈 190	指 51
Tsac 462	嶗 504	51 千	弓 476	後 33	恤 164	慙 168	駭 625	拈 152	拳 69
43 尤	47 川	平 63	弓 51	徒 129	恍 210	愧 187	駭 136	拈 146	掃 28
尤 32	川 546	年 3	弓 70	徐 283	恍 450	慙 382	駭 325	拈 71	掃 105
就 32	州 100	幸 35	弓 20	徠 271	悟 311	慙 382	63 戶	拈 456	接 25
44 尸	州 165	幹 38	弓 162	徠 474	恐 378	慙 264	戶 71	拈 79	掛 53
尸 621	48 工	52 么	弓 124	徠 8	恩 178	慙 124	房 3	拈 81	掛 69
尺 106	工 18	幽 517	弓 525	徠 74	悵 85	慙 48	所 110	拈 432	掛 58
尼 569	巧 58	幾 115	弓 124	徠 23	悵 35	慙 101	房 134	拈 25	掛 61
尹 375	左 65	1 139	弓 49	徠 599	悵 48	慙 123	房 277	拈 457	掛 71
尾 339	巫 126	53 广	弓 162	徠 106	悵 520	慙 428	64 手	拈 54	掛 526
尿 436	差 44	床 226	弓 124	徠 304	悵 54	慙 128	手 23	拈 61	掛 79
局 280	Ch'ai 134	序 123	弓 162	徠 303	悵 59	慙 154	才 193	拈 592	掛 520
屈 180	Ts'i 303	庇 88	弓 162	徠 213	悵 35	慙 155	扎 163	拈 61	掛 110
居 121	己 53	店 15	弓 297	徠 593	悵 8	慙 238	打 15	拈 63	掛 609
屋 65	己 18	府 16	弓 607	徠 603	悵 33	慙 255	打 163	拈 71	掛 561
屍 44	己 53	庚 105	61 心	心 18	悵 498	慙 335	打 15	拈 498	掛 526
屏 365	己 18	度 199	心 32	心 32	悵 61	慙 335	打 95	拈 71	掛 79
屠 413	己 53	Toi 425	心 55	心 55	悵 126	慙 335	打 621	拈 65	掛 520
屠 413	己 232	座 28	心 13	心 13	悵 181	慙 335	打 181	拈 35	掛 110
屠 299	己 232	康 99	心 18	心 18	悵 204	慙 335	打 68	拈 63	掛 609
屠 143	己 65	庶 375	心 60	心 60	悵 498	慙 335	打 568	拈 71	掛 561
屠 289	己 65	廊 307	心 86	心 86	悵 223	慙 335	打 95	拈 498	掛 613
45 山	50 巾	廂 64	心 146	心 146	悵 378	慙 335	打 621	拈 71	掛 94
屯 502	巾 27	廉 603	心 165	心 165	悵 489	慙 335	打 181	拈 65	掛 120
46 山	巾 41	廣 110	心 165	心 165	悵 303	慙 335	打 68	拈 35	掛 120
山 81	布 38	廟 372	心 406	心 406	悵 378	慙 335	打 568	拈 35	掛 130
出 13	希 108	廠 246	心 310	心 310	悵 489	慙 335	打 68	拈 35	掛 171
岔 168	帛 144	廢 346	心 255	心 255	悵 303	慙 335	打 568	拈 35	掛 184
岡 456	帖 95	廡 346	心 354	心 354	悵 462	慙 335	打 20	拈 35	掛 246
岳 309	帶 28	廡 70	心 352	心 352	悵 530	慙 335	打 23	拈 35	掛 420
岸 561	帥 227	廡 70	心 77	心 77	悵 174	慙 335	打 62	拈 35	掛 289
峪 209	帝 136	廡 70	心 20	心 20	悵 124	慙 335	打 62	拈 35	掛 362
島 90	師 106	廡 70	心 625	心 625	悵 95	慙 335	打 71	拈 35	掛 362
崔 442	帶 25	廡 70	心 21	心 21	悵 86	慙 335	打 72	拈 35	掛 369
崖 139	常 28	廡 70	心 10	心 10	悵 49	慙 335	打 595	拈 35	掛 383
		54 瓦	心 10	心 10	悵 123	慙 335	打 71	拈 35	掛 383
		廷 346	心 10	心 10	悵 209	慙 335	打 483	拈 35	掛 369
		延 382	心 10	心 10	悵 79	慙 335	打 87	拈 35	掛 313
		廻 328	心 10	心 10	悵 79	慙 335	打 155	拈 35	掛 313
		建 460	心 10	心 10	悵 79	慙 335	打 168	拈 35	掛 342
			心 10	心 10	悵 79	慙 335	打 321	拈 35	掛 476
			心 10	心 10	悵 79	慙 335	打 354	拈 35	掛 245
			心 10	心 10	悵 79	慙 335	打 485	拈 35	掛 436
			心 10	心 10	悵 79	慙 335	打 283	拈 35	掛 431
			心 10	心 10	悵 79	慙 335	打 210	拈 35	掛 192
			心 10	心 10	悵 79	慙 335	打 210	拈 35	掛 431

捶插	192	擦	529	攪	314	68斗	446	服	56	柚	225	櫻	568	79	段	293
搵	453	斯	191	攪	111	斗	190	期	294	枯	148	權	243	段	183	
搵	170	撫	165	攪	212	料	86	望	36	植	586	樂	118	般	53	
搵	129	撻	146	攪	90	斜	280	朝	7	棘	440	欄	120	般	439	
換	13	撻	139	攪	235	樹	595	朝	76	棺	432	76欠	110	般	10	
提	35	擗	130	攪	245	69斤	18	期	149	棠	131	欠	110	般	479	
Ti	74	摩 ¹	130	攪	245	斤	67	際	213	棒	105	次	123	般	220	
措	27	摩 ²	624	攪	245	斧	517	木	614	棧	93	欣	231	般	280	
掣	321	揀	95	攪	245	斯	46	不	23	森	67	歛	235	毋	3	
揚	69	播	422	攪	245	新	77	木	32	概	30	歛	185	毋	164	
掌	68	擗	73	攪	245	斷	46	本	133	榭	51	歛	359	每	60	
捲	71	擗	20	攪	245	70方	5	未	343	槲	12	歛	423	毒	60	
搵	386	擗	366	攪	245	方	60	末	30	桃	456	歛	54	比	11	
搵	320	擗	25	攪	245	於	209	末	97	棠	63	歛	33	比	11	
搵	540	擗	25	攪	245	施	65	末	146	業	46	歛	602	比	11	
搵	300	擗	71	攪	245	旁	232	末	349	楚	27	歛	332	比	11	
搵	283	擗	196	攪	245	族	228	末	401	樓	90	歛	349	比	11	
搵	276	擗	71	攪	245	旋	452	末	310	榮	115	歛	75	比	11	
搵	255	擗	86	攪	245	旋	625	末	273	榴	100	歛	283	毛	44	
搵	624	擗	180	攪	245	旌	255	末	157	榴	157	歛	38	毛	147	
搵	196	擗	115	攪	245	旌	255	末	157	槍	226	歛	77止	毛	352	
搵	354	擗	624	攪	245	旌	255	末	134	槓	229	歛	193	毛	274	
搵	213	擗	192	攪	245	旌	255	末	81	槓	355	歛	8	毛	274	
搵	162	擗	224	攪	245	旌	255	末	13	槓	299	歛	108	毛	274	
搵	121	擗	223	攪	245	旌	255	末	498	槓	293	歛	22	毛	274	
搵	130	擗	231	攪	245	旌	255	末	5	槓	287	歛	35	氏	386	
搵	72	擗	245	攪	245	旌	255	末	15	槓	373	歛	69	氏	283	
搵	81	擗	306	攪	245	旌	255	末	27	槓	624	歛	13	氏	283	
搵	556	擗	352	攪	245	旌	255	末	21	槓	310	歛	90	氏	283	
搵	25	擗	467	攪	245	旌	255	末	20	槓	226	歛	157	氏	283	
搵	25	擗	485	攪	245	旌	255	末	83	槓	310	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	69	擗	359	攪	245	旌	255	末	117	槓	226	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	54	擗	16	攪	245	旌	255	末	113	槓	273	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	64	擗	25	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	502	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	74	擗	27	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	170	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	87	擗	84	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	139	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	133	擗	210	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	79	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	526	擗	443	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	74	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	193	擗	216	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	97	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	190	擗	343	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	13	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	335	擗	160	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	470	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	352	擗	143	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	16	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	609	擗	134	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	95	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	258	擗	93	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	108	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	262	擗	554	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	102	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	570	擗	143	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	129	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	202	擗	420	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	147	歛	165	氏	283	
搵	199	擗	83	攪	245	旌	255	末	112	槓	147	歛	165	氏	283	

沙冲汨 ¹	157	淘凉混 ²	38	漚澆滲 ³	474	火灯 ⁴	18	燕焙 ⁵	259	牙 ⁶	193	95 玄	99 甘	104 广	癩	300	
汨 ¹	139	混 ²	46	澆 ³	483	灯 ⁴	620	焙 ⁵	229			玄 ⁶	甘 ⁷	广 ⁸	癩 ⁹	300	
汨 ¹	200	混 ²	69	滲 ³	483	灰 ⁴	25	燉 ⁵	433	93 牛	96 玉	99 甘	104 广	癩	105 癩	143	
汨 ¹	624	混 ²	174	滴 ³	328	灰 ⁴	389	漫 ⁵	79	牛 ⁶	72	甘 ⁷	146	癩 ⁸	227	癩 ⁹	102
汽 ¹	372	混 ²	417	滴 ³	242	炕 ⁴	16	燎 ⁵	574	牛 ⁶	578	甘 ⁷	43	癩 ⁸	343	癩 ⁹	343
沉 ¹	210	湔 ²	84	漫 ³	210	炒 ⁴	416	燎 ⁵	27	牛 ⁶	69	甘 ⁷	397	癩 ⁸	188	癩 ⁹	188
沉 ¹	226	湔 ²	88	漫 ³	190	炊 ⁴	67	燥 ⁵	439	牛 ⁶	171	甘 ⁷	196	癩 ⁸	5	癩 ⁹	5
沉 ¹	413	湔 ²	120	漫 ³	174	炷 ⁴	408	燥 ⁵	55	牛 ⁶	38	甘 ⁷	25	癩 ⁸	21	癩 ⁹	21
沉 ¹	162	湔 ²	432	漫 ³	167	炭 ⁴	234	燥 ⁵	233	牛 ⁶	269	甘 ⁷	624	癩 ⁸	149	癩 ⁹	149
沉 ¹	12	湔 ²	120	漫 ³	165	煨 ⁴	280	燥 ⁵	20	牛 ⁶	125	甘 ⁷	81	癩 ⁸	610	癩 ⁹	610
沉 ¹	510	湔 ²	174	漫 ³	41	炳 ⁴	173	燥 ⁵	58	牛 ⁶	579	甘 ⁷	171	癩 ⁸	199	癩 ⁹	199
沉 ¹	44	湔 ²	162	漫 ³	439	炸 ⁴	140	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	177	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	502	癩 ⁹	502
沉 ¹	75	湔 ²	624	漫 ³	48	炸 ⁴	432	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	112	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	365	癩 ⁹	365
沉 ¹	66	湔 ²	157	漫 ³	460	炮 ⁴	588	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	112	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	576	癩 ⁹	576
沉 ¹	60	湔 ²	193	漫 ³	87	烟 ⁴	44	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	621	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	296	癩 ⁹	296
沉 ¹	90	湔 ²	202	漫 ³	606	烙 ⁴	79	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	422	癩 ⁹	422
沉 ¹	60	湔 ²	203	漫 ³	439	烏 ⁴	219	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	579	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	365	癩 ⁹	365
沉 ¹	76	湔 ²	397	漫 ³	102	烈 ⁴	435	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	317	癩 ⁹	317
沉 ¹	79	湔 ²	375	漫 ³	532	烤 ⁴	366	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	86	癩 ⁹	86
沉 ¹	112	湔 ²	547	漫 ³	100	焉 ⁴	445	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	274	癩 ⁹	274
沉 ¹	18	湔 ²	324	漫 ³	530	烹 ⁴	574	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	159	癩 ⁹	159
沉 ¹	469	湔 ²	282	漫 ³	75	無 ⁴	30	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	81	癩 ⁹	81
沉 ¹	27	湔 ²	425	漫 ³	416	然 ⁴	134	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	216	癩 ⁹	216
沉 ¹	27	湔 ²	280	漫 ³	157	煮 ⁴	58	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	140	癩 ⁹	140
沉 ¹	73	湔 ²	228	漫 ³	412	焦 ⁴	146	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	188	癩 ⁹	188
沉 ¹	79	湔 ²	624	漫 ³	325	煎 ⁴	556	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	286	癩 ⁹	286
沉 ¹	129	湔 ²	228	漫 ³	412	煎 ⁴	507	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	317	癩 ⁹	317
沉 ¹	119	湔 ²	432	漫 ³	228	煎 ⁴	502	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	38	癩 ⁹	38
沉 ¹	320	湔 ²	432	漫 ³	228	煎 ⁴	502	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	75	癩 ⁹	75
沉 ¹	289	湔 ²	58	漫 ³	228	煎 ⁴	502	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	557	癩 ⁹	557
沉 ¹	277	湔 ²	593	漫 ³	219	煎 ⁴	502	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	476	癩 ⁹	476
沉 ¹	376	湔 ²	58	漫 ³	432	煎 ⁴	502	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	227	癩 ⁹	227
沉 ¹	401	湔 ²	620	漫 ³	102	煎 ⁴	190	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	446	癩 ⁹	446
沉 ¹	361	湔 ²	77	漫 ³	440	煎 ⁴	224	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	300	癩 ⁹	300
沉 ¹	273	湔 ²	81	漫 ³	582	煎 ⁴	97	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	477	癩 ⁹	477
沉 ¹	215	湔 ²	136	漫 ³	602	煎 ⁴	60	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	296	癩 ⁹	296
沉 ¹	216	湔 ²	101	漫 ³	574	煎 ⁴	177	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	238	癩 ⁹	238
沉 ¹	223	湔 ²	74	漫 ³	429	煎 ⁴	51	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	325	癩 ⁹	325
沉 ¹	226	湔 ²	624	漫 ³	348	煎 ⁴	119	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	476	癩 ⁹	476
沉 ¹	173	湔 ²	56	漫 ³	289	煎 ⁴	177	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	252	癩 ⁹	252
沉 ¹	160	湔 ²	523	漫 ³	574	煎 ⁴	18	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	60	癩 ⁹	60
沉 ¹	196	湔 ²	84	漫 ³	413	煎 ⁴	18	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	610	癩 ⁹	610
沉 ¹	79	湔 ²	216	漫 ³	412	煎 ⁴	22	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	254	癩 ⁹	254
沉 ¹	560	湔 ²	395	漫 ³	264	煎 ⁴	233	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	352	癩 ⁹	352
沉 ¹	97	湔 ²	369	漫 ³	440	煎 ⁴	264	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	585	癩 ⁹	585
沉 ¹	12	湔 ²	439	漫 ³	440	煎 ⁴	264	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	311	癩 ⁹	311
沉 ¹	23	湔 ²	440	漫 ³	440	煎 ⁴	264	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	311	癩 ⁹	311
沉 ¹	27	湔 ²	440	漫 ³	440	煎 ⁴	264	燥 ⁵	433	牛 ⁶	320	甘 ⁷	93	癩 ⁸	311	癩 ⁹	311

Handwritten notes in the right margin.

相 ⁴ 100	石 93	祭 210	稿 355	筐 599	米 56	終 67	繞 619	羞 81	Kwa 301
相 ¹ 154	石 399	祥 106	稻 274	第 115	粉 81	累 ⁴ 125	繞 ² 130	羞 ² 48	聖 129
盼 103	砒 395	票 118	穀 171	符 ³ 155	粗 46	累 ³ 624	繞 ⁴ 607	Choi 51	聘 171
留 520	研 358	視 105	蘇 63	符 ² 624	粒 273	絆 245	緣 84	羣 174	聞 79
留 201	歌 79	稟 546	積 111	笨 48	粘 131	紹 289	緊 30	義 205	聚 267
留 124	破 56	稟 95	穗 273	符 28	粒 450	紘 398	緻 46	義 339	聲 191
留 324	砌 93	禍 88	穗 267	笨 5	梁 274	紘 286	總 83	義 67	聯 30
留 35	砌 97	祿 259	穗 100	笨 599	粟 386	絕 139	緯 331	義 351	聲 38
留 378	砲 209	福 204		笨 8	粥 119	絨 170	縮 296	羣 436	聯 180
留 386	碾 123	禁 ⁴ 194	116 穴	笨 607	稗 191	絨 83	縮 314	羣 436	聲 507
留 264	碾 235	禁 ¹ 348	穴 518	笨 20	糧 92	紫 439	縮 58	124 羽	聯 261
留 502	碾 73	禮 3	穴 59	笨 90	精 60	紫 60	縮 90	羽 443	聯 261
留 21	碾 74	禮 401	穴 111	笨 170	糕 106	紫 439	縮 23	羽 331	聯 30
留 213	碾 113		穴 51	笨 74	糕 436	紫 439	縮 13	羽 259	
留 64	碾 16	114 內	穴 46	笨 72	糖 252	紫 34	縮 453	羽 425	129 聿
留 191	碾 408	禹 339	穴 146	笨 112	糞 131	紫 18	縮 553	羽 58	肆 324
留 30	碾 51	禽 143	穴 76	笨 28	糞 192	紫 372	縮 162	羽 536	肆 572
留 295	碾 501		穴 76	笨 618	糞 100	紫 579	縮 213	羽 180	
留 213	碾 351	115 禾	穴 16	笨 20	糞 92	紫 619	縮 115	羽 115	
留 209	碾 130	私 111	穴 129	笨 8	糞 200	紫 229		羽 429	130 肉
留 191	碾 395	秀 223	穴 224	笨 420	糞 200	紫 431	121 缶	羽 152	肉 58
留 363	碾 416	秀 202	穴 345	笨 149	糞 92	紫 303	缸 73	羽 77	肉 624
留 33	碾 362	秃 202	穴 502	笨 310	糞 115	紫 439	缸 232	羽 103	肋 556
留 139	碾 112	秃 436	穴 6	笨 117		紫 191	缸 277		肋 41
留 118	碾 51	秃 154	穴 129	笨 25	120 糸	紫 466	缸 624	125 老	肋 432
留 443	碾 408	秃 196	穴 96	笨 599	約 54	紫 191	缸 306	老 3	肋 603
留 378	碾 58	秋 131	穴 67	笨 225	紀 86	紫 467	缸 386	老 41	肋 457
留 102	碾 87	科 274	穴 294	笨 317	紀 405	紫 241	缸 428	老 136	肋 329
留 235	碾 296	科 199		笨 359	紀 97	紫 550	缸 188		肋 36
留 520	碾 505	租 578	117 立	笨 618	紀 106	紫 170		126 而	肋 335
留 177	碾 277	租 108	立 33	笨 235	紀 401	紫 164	缸 91	而 201	肋 86
留 378	碾 324	租 79	立 71	笨 416	紀 348	紫 25	缸 25	而 73	肋 277
	碾 51	秤 71	立 110	笨 167	紀 223	紫 483	缸 16	而 86	肋 511
110 牙	碾 136	秤 327	立 365	笨 149	紀 170	紫 16	缸 453		肋 35
矜 220	碾 209	移 119	立 286	笨 149	紀 136	紫 83	缸 110	127 未	肋 54
		稀 259	立 154	笨 307	紀 129	紫 110	缸 148	未 112	肋 64
111 失	113 示	稅 110	立 88	笨 306	紀 351	紫 184	缸 35	耕 115	肋 174
矣 467	示 466	稜 112	立 71	笨 304	紀 624	紫 191	缸 148		肋 206
知 8	示 304	稜 119	立 71	笨 361	紀 49	紫 284	缸 35	128 耳	肋 224
矩 476	示 321	稜 41		笨 84	紀 27	紫 300	缸 112	耳 30	肋 270
姓 46	示 517	稜 48	118 竹	笨 575	紀 16	紫 501		耳 62	肋 476
短 46	示 393	稜 294	竹 575	笨 28	紀 417	紫 242	123 羊	耳 33	肋 335
矮 46	示 38	稜 108	竹 321	笨 65	紀 362	紫 476	羊 70	耶 449	肋 66
矮 313	示 543	稜 343	竹 359	笨 359	紀 533	紫 533	羊 215	耶 602	肋 625
	示 73	稜 343					羊 580	耶 389	肋 5

錄要指部按

貼	51	越	351	厥 ²	624	輔	134	進	48	部	99	釜	262	鐸	348	阻	314	離	564
賀	575	超	599	踰 ⁴	229			週	123	郭	336	鈞	321	錯	247	陀	607	雞	64
費	44	趁	149	Ts'eng	276	160	辛	週	200	郭	196	鈞	69	鐵	190	附	304	離	49
貴	38	起	86	躍	69	辛	123	週	133	都	83	鈞	483	錫	87	阿 ¹	250	離	5
買	16	趙	86	躍	485	辛	507	週	159	鄉	18	鈕	69	鐵	66	阿 ³	250	離	123
賀	238	趙	69	躁	126	辛	439	週	162	鄒	296	鈞	245	鑄	246	院	16		
買	358	趙	33	躋	351	辛	48	週	576	鄒	105	鈞	197	錫	303	限	110		
資	239	趙	83	躋	592	辛	210	週	155	鄒	102	鈞	28	錫	67	陌	121	173	雨
買	212	趙	103	躋	588	辰	108	週	516			鈞	428	錫	69	陌	121	雨	33
Ku	624	趙	366	躋	229	辰	74	週	146	164	西	鈞	87	錫	112	陌	121	雨	130
賂	162					辰	128	週	593	酉	516	鈞	130	錫	100	陌	121	雨	128
賂	162	157	足	158	身	辰	339	週	137	酉	46	鈞	171	錫	245	陌	121	雨	3
賂	25	足	75	身	38	辰	74	週	60	酉	595	鈞	13	錫	245	陌	121	雨	209
賂	18	足	561	身	355	辰	128	週	8	酉	63	鈞	473	錫	327	陌	121	雨	33
賂	62	足	625	身	33	辰	339	週	49	酉	413	鈞	102	錫		陌	121	雨	382
賂	205	足	210	身	287			週	136	酉	306	鈞	130	錫		陌	121	雨	137
賂	261	足	25	身	23			週	157	酉	264	鈞	404	錫		陌	121	雨	233
賂	219	足	51	身	15			週	442	酉	188	鈞	258	錫		陌	121	雨	152
賂	56	足	530	身				週	245	酉	187	鈞	510	錫		陌	121	雨	324
賂	625	足	625	身				週	547	酉	129	鈞	15	錫		陌	121	雨	216
賂	63	足	398	身				週	205	酉	71	鈞	536	錫		陌	121	雨	460
賂	69	足	376	身	41			週	128	酉	46	鈞	3	錫		陌	121	雨	391
賂	127	足	88	身	483			週	8	酉	115	鈞	10	錫		陌	121	雨	556
賂	55	足	30	身	95			週	38	酉	470	鈞	602	錫		陌	121	雨	170
賂	18	足	21	身	435			週	49	酉	290	鈞	56	錫		陌	121	雨	94
賂	13	足	556	身	46			週	181	酉	60	鈞	66	錫		陌	121	雨	556
賂	96	足	86	身	358			週	490	酉		鈞	75	錫		陌	121	雨	181
賂	516	足	511	身	205			週	376	酉		鈞	99	錫		陌	121	雨	
賂	220	足	227	身	375			週	324	酉		鈞	321	錫		陌	121	雨	
賂	423	足	485	身	582			週	304	酉		鈞	191	錫		陌	121	雨	
賂	18	足	329	身	48			週	251	酉		鈞	346	錫		陌	121	雨	
賂	493	足	277	身	477			週	87	酉		鈞	404	錫		陌	121	雨	
賂	120	足	229	身	41			週	251	酉		鈞	483	錫		陌	121	雨	
賂	237	足	511	身	450			週	64	酉		鈞	212	錫		陌	121	雨	
賂	63	足	69	身	73			週		酉		鈞	93	錫		陌	121	雨	
		足	147	身	416			週		酉		鈞	123	錫		陌	121	雨	
155	赤	足	505	身	170			週		酉		鈞	67	錫		陌	121	雨	
赤	416	足	229	身	120			週		酉		鈞	51	錫		陌	121	雨	
救	247	足	469	身	482			週		酉		鈞	81	錫		陌	121	雨	
赫	599	足	264	身	327			週		酉		鈞	69	錫		陌	121	雨	
		足	304	身	33			週		酉		鈞	144	錫		陌	121	雨	
156	走	足	49	身	177			週		酉		鈞	113	錫		陌	121	雨	
走	18	足	599	身	134			週		酉		鈞	67	錫		陌	121	雨	
赴	108	足	49	身	25			週		酉		鈞	54	錫		陌	121	雨	
起	25	足	543	身	519			週		酉		鈞	18	錫		陌	121	雨	
枉	33	足	376	身	152			週		酉		鈞	112	錫		陌	121	雨	
		足	370	身	113			週		酉		鈞	270	錫		陌	121	雨	

鞋 63	頭 311	飄 228	饒 149	驛 90	鬚 118	鮮 624	鹵 321	202 黍	208 鼠
靴 28	頰 287	： 299	饒 41	騰 77	鬚 307	鯉 358	鹹 79	黎 405	鼠 375
鞦 339	頰 147		饒 81	騾 91	鬚 432	蝦 433	鹹 136	粘 318	
鞦 339	頰 88		饒 159	騾 69		鰲 401			209 鼻
鞦 112	頰 526	183 飛	饒 41	騾 177	191 門	鰲 392	198 鹿	203 黑	鼻 216
鞦 530	頰 51	飛 147	饒 352	騾 324	門 163	鰲 579	鹿 91	黑 38	鼻 188
178 韋	頰 404	184 食	185 首	騾 69	門 23		鹿 317	黑 134	
韋 226	頰 398	食 25	首 97	騾 307	門 97	196 鳥	鹿 540	黑 18	
韋 420	頰 13	食 471			門 181	鳥 143	鹿 113	黑 144	210 齊
	頰 48	食 5	188 骨	骨 65	194 鬼	鳥 144	鹿 452	黑 293	齊 55
179 韭	頰 273	食 63	骨 84	骨 92	鬼 95	鳥 428	鹿 317		齊 574
韭 416	頰 170	食 378	骨 60	骨 75	鬼 290	鳥 73	鹿 540	204 荷	
	頰 97	食 21	骨 75	骨 369	鬼 599	鳥 90	鹿 540	荷 248	211 齒
180 音	頰 519	食 97	187 馬	骨 58	鬼 213	鳥 379	199 麥		齒 297
音 5	頰 206	食 539	馬 64	骨 60	鬼 530	鳥 379	麥 139	205 龜	齒 226
音 486	頰 105	食 201	馬 460	骨 60	鬼 620	鳥 370	麩 505	龜 602	齏 95
音 159	頰 102	食 159	馮 120	189 高	鬼 620	鳥 197	麩 191	龜 602	齏 95
	頰 117	食 91	馮 245	高 38	鬼 620	鳥 90	200 麻	龜 580	212 龍
181 頁	頰 117	食 91	馮 112	高 38	鬼 620	鳥 73	麻 152		龍 134
頁 358	182 風	食 274	馮 174		鬼 95	鳥 174	麻 43	206 鼎	
頁 324	風 33	食 238	馮 238	190 髟	195 魚	鳥 197	麻 606	鼎 479	
頁 37	風 65	食 585	馮 300	髟 65	魚 41	鳥 606	201 黃		213 龜
頁 286	風 483	食 178	馮 579	髟 494	魚 234	鳥 379	黃 18	207 鼓	龜 270
頁 219	風 149	食 402	馮 125	髟 494	魚 413	鳥 606	黃 589	鼓 100	
頁 48	風 498	食 462	馮 160	髟 61	魚 171	197 鹵			
頁 51	風 501	食 366							

see also pag. 625

ERRATA.

The following list embraces the principal errata thus far discovered. A few typographical and other errors, which the reader will himself readily correct, have not been noted. V stands for Vocabulary, S for subject, N for notes, and C T for Chinese text.

Page	5	V	沒	moa ²	should	be	moa ⁴		188	V	火	hoā	should	be	hwoā	
"	5	V	契		"	"	噢		193	CT	擦		"	"	搽	
"	10	V	合	hwoā	"	"	hoā		213	V	聒		"	"	聒	
"	12	V	法	fa ²	"	"	fa ³		214	V	準		"	"	淮	
"	25	V	捎	sao ¹	"	"	shao		223	V	您	nén	"	"	nín	
"	33	V	存	ts'én	"	"	ts'un		230	N	寺	堂	"	"	祠堂	
"	33	V	拼	p'ing	"	"	p'in		250	S	吐		"	"	叱	
"	38 & 44	V	尊	ts'én	"	"	tsun		264	V	瑞	shui	"	"	juí	
"	43	V	什	shi	"	"	shí		291	N	炮		"	"	砲	
"	53	V	合	hwoā	"	"	hoā		303	S	透	徹	"	"	透徹	
"	54	V	吃	ch'i	"	"	ch'i		326	S	准		"	"	準	
"	55	V	信	shin	"	"	hsin		334	S	俗		"	"	嗜	
"	71	V	散	swan	"	"	san		352	CT	刺		"	"	刺	
"	71	V	字	tsi	"	"	tsi		354	S	阿	欠	"	"	阿欠	
"	76	V	河	hwoā	"	"	hoā		355	V	阿	流	"	"	hoā	
"	78	V	晒	sai	"	"	shai		362	V	指	流	"	"	輪流	
"	81	V	麻		"	"	麻		389	V	聒		"	"	聒	
"	81	V	to	exchange	"	"	to charge		440	V	柿	shi	"	"	shí	
"	99	S	釘		"	"	錠		489	V	做	tsu ⁴	"	"	tsu ³	
"	100	V	千	chien	"	"	ch'ien		541	N	酒	席	眼	前	"	酒席筵前
"	103	V	榮	yung	"	"	jung		560	S	假	仁	假	意	"	假仁假義
"	105	V	和	hwoā	"	"	hoā		589	V	稍		"	"	稍	
"	111	V	積	chí ¹	"	"	chí ^{1,2}		618	V	蚶	chi	"	"	chí	
"	112	V	般	ts'wan	"	"	ch'wan		619	V	墨	ch'ien	"	"	ch'an	
"	129	V	訛	wōā	"	"	ōā		620	V	魍	ch'i	"	"	ch'i	
"	131	V	粘	chien	"	"	chan		621	V	檜	wei	"	"	hui	
"	149	CT	眼		"	"	限		All of the above characters, which are incorrectly spelled, are indexed according to the correct spelling. In a few cases the second reading of characters has not been noted at its first appearance as was intended. A considerable number of definitions are defective, in that they do not include meanings which subsequently occur.							
"	159	V	邊		"	"	邊									
"	163	V	under	扎	omit, "Also		cha ³ "									
"	163	V	哦	wōā	should	be	ōā									
"	163	CT	苦		"	"	若									
"	164	V	闕	yun	"	"	jun									
"	164	V	值	hsu	"	"	hsü									

